Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

http://www.archive.org/details/michiganhistory03michuoft

HF
3

P
HUS
M

Michigan. Historical Commission
Michigan historical collections

# PIONEER COLLECTIONS.

---

## REPORT

OF THE

# PIONEER SOCIETY

OF THE

# STATE OF MICHIGAN,

TOGETHER WITH

REPORTS OF COUNTY, TOWN, AND DISTRICT PIONEER SOCIETIES.

VOL. III.

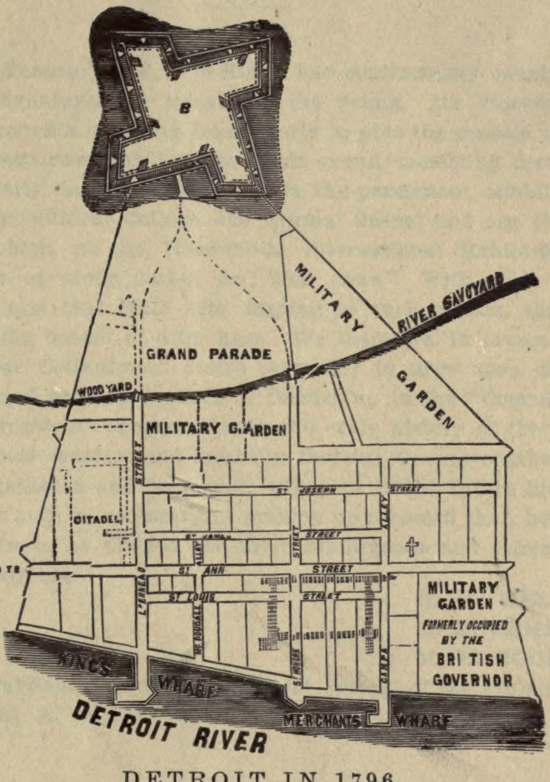
95671
19/4/09

LANSING, MICHIGAN
ROBERT SMITH PRINTING CO., STATE PRINTERS AND BINDERS
1903

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1881, by the
"PIONEER SOCIETY OF THE STATE OF MICHIGAN,"
In the office of the Librarian of Congress, at Washington, D. C.

(Reprint 1903.)

F
561
M47
v.3


B
MILITARY
RIVER SAVOYARD
GRAND PARADE
GARDEN
WOOD YARD
MILITARY GARDEN
STREET
ST JOSEPH
STREET
ALLEY
CITADEL
ST JAMES
ALLEY
STREET
GATE
ST ANN
STREET
L'ERNEAU
ST LOUIS
STREET
MC DOUGALL
S. HOUSE
CANPA
MILITARY
GARDEN
FORMERLY OCCUPIED
BY THE
BRITISH
GOVERNOR
KINGS
WHARF
MERCHANTS
WHARF
DETROIT RIVER

DETROIT IN 1796.

[See page 202.]

# PREFACE.

**Michigan, as a Territory and as a State, has continuously sought, and all the while acquired, advantages for educating the young. Its Pioneer people were ever alive to the benefits resulting from efforts to give the masses all the instruction which their resources would allow. This grand, ennobling desire, having its inception in the early day, has culminated in the permanent establishment of the University, the Agricultural College, the Normal School and our Primary School System; all of which, at the "Centennial International Exhibition" was commended by people of every nation as "Well done." With such a record, the "Pioneers" may claim that their acts, leading to such results, shall be held in remembrance for the benefit of after ages. We therefore, in presenting the third Volume of "Pioneer Collections," desire especially to urge upon our fellow citizens the necessity of continued effort in furnishing to the "Committee of Historians," facts and incidents connected with the early history of the Territory and State and the several counties and localities therein; thus strengthening the hope that material so gathered and preserved, will give to the future historian of our Peninsula, all that may be necessary in making up a record that, here in the past, has dwelt a people to be praised for their intelligence and industry, and commended for their virtues.**

**H. G. WELLS,**
**M. SHOEMAKER,**
**M. H. GOODRICH,**
***Publishing Committee Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan.***

**LANSING, July 12, A. D. 1881.**

# CONTENTS.

PAGE.

Address of President John J. Adam at annual meeting Feb. 5th, 1879....... 1
Report of Recording Secretary ........................................ 2
    Corresponding Secretary and Treasurer....................... 8
    Committee of Historians.................................... 9
The Northwest during the Revolution—C. I. Walker...................... 12
Members of Constitutional Conventions of 1835 and 1850—H. G. Wells...... 37
Mound-builders in Michigan—H. H. Riley................................ 41
Paper by O. A. Jenison, Lansing....................................... 48
Robert Stuart, Sketch of life of—C. C. Trowbridge..................... 52
    Incidents in life of—Martin Heydenburk...................... 56
    Sermon at funeral of—Dr. George Duffield.................... 61
    Lines on the death of—D. B. Duffield........................ 66
Climate of Detroit—Bela Hubbard....................................... 67
Gen. Hugh Brady, Biographical Sketch of—by himself.................... 84
    Sermon at funeral of—Dr. George Duffield.................... 87
    Lines on the death of—D. B. Duffield........................ 91
    Death of father of—Hugh Brady............................... 92
James Brady, Death of—Hugh Brady...................................... 92
John Brady, Notice of— " " ........................................... 93
Captain Samuel Brady— " " ............................................ 93
Detroit in 1796—Detroit Post and Tribune.............................. 96
Loss of the Griffin—Levi Bishop....................................... 98
Officers of Pioneer Society, 1879..................................... xi
Officers of Pioneer Society, 1880..................................... 100
Address of Pres. Michael Shoemaker at annual meeting Feb. 4th and 5th, 1880 101
Report of Recording Secretary ........................................ 106
    Corresponding Secretary .................................... 111
    Treasurer .................................................. 112
    Historians ................................................. 112
Donations to Society in 1879.......................................... 109
Governors and Judges of Michigan—J. V. Campbell....................... 114
Attorney Generals .................................................... 117
Governors of Michigan Territory—Wm. Jenney............................ 119
    —Sec. Wm. M. Evarts......................................... 121
Governors of the State................................................ 120
Territorial Judges and Attorneys...................................... 122
Territorial Delegates in Congress..................................... 122
Senators and Representatives in Congress.............................. 123
Journey from Montreal to Chicago in 1818—G. S. Hubbard................ 125
Administration of Indian Justice—G. S. Hubbard........................ 127
Law and the Legal Profession—H. G. Wells.............................. 129
Death of Zachariah Chandler, Memorial—H. G. Wells..................... 139
History and Times of Hon. John Norvell—Freeman Norvell................ 140
A Sketch of Pioneer Life—Abraham Edwards.............................. 148
    Martin Heydenburk—O. C. Comstock............................ 152

PAGE.
Indian Missions—Martin Heydenburk.......... 154
Old Church and Mission house at Mackinac—Martin Heydenburk.......... 157
Autobiography of Rev. Wm. Brockway.......... 158
The Builders of States—Henry W. Lord.......... 161
War sketch, Capture and Release—Col. M. Shoemaker.......... 166
A Michigan Geological Expedition—Bela Hubbard.......... 189
The Mound-builders in Michigan—Henry Gillman.......... 202
The Episcopal Church in Michigan—C. C. Trowbridge.......... 213
Biographical sketch of John Roberts.......... 222
History of Methodism in Detroit—Rev. J. M. Arnold.......... 225
Letter from Hon. Geo. C. Bates, Colorado.......... 244
First State Fair in Michigan—Henry Raymond.......... 245
The Upper Peninsula—Alex Campbell.......... 247
A Michigan Emigrant Song—Detroit Post and Tribune.......... 265
Members of Pioneer Society uniting in 1878, 1879.......... 266
ALLEGAN COUNTY:
- History of—Don Henderson.......... 270
- Township, History of—G. A. Morgan.......... 276
- Pine Plains—G. A. Morgan.......... 293
- Rabbit River Mounds and Circles—H. D. Post.......... 296
- An Incident of Pioneer Life—Mrs. J. V. Rogers.......... 299
- Saugatuck, Notes on—D. C. Henderson.......... 301
- Death of Judge F. J. Littlejohn—D. C. Henderson.......... 310
- Action of Kalamazoo Bar.......... 315

BAY COUNTY:
- History of—B. F. Partridge.......... 316
- Memorial Report—Judge Albert Miller.......... 339

BRANCH COUNTY:
- Early Banking in—C. D. Randall.......... 339

CALHOUN COUNTY:
- History of Battle Creek—Detroit Post and Tribune.......... 347
- Memorial Report of Charles Dickey—O. C. Comstock.......... 371

EATON COUNTY:
- Pioneer History—O. C. Comstock.......... 378
- Early days of—E. A. Foote.......... 379
- Settlement of Bellevue—E. A. Foote.......... 386
- Kalamo.......... 403
- Walton.......... 405
- Death of I. E. C. Hickok.......... 407
- Olivet College.......... 408
- Charlotte.......... 414
- Vermontville.......... 425
- Eaton Rapids.......... 427

GENESEE COUNTY:
- The City of Flint—E. H. Thompson.......... 431

HILLSDALE COUNTY:
- Memorial Report—E. O. Grosvenor.......... 468

INGHAM COUNTY:
- Memorial Report—O. M. Barnes.......... 468

IONIA COUNTY:
- City of Ionia—Detroit Post and Tribune.......... 470
- Memorial Report—H. H. Rich.......... 490

JACKSON COUNTY:

PAGE.
Meeting of State and County Societies.......................... 421
The Brave Pioneer—Mrs. N. H. Pierce.......................... 496
A Chapter of Pioneer History—Samuel Prescott.................. 503
Reminiscences in Rhyme—J. A. Robinson........................ 504
Fifty Years Ago—Henry Little................................. 509
The Long Ago—Mrs. M. W. Clapp............................... 514
One of the Early Settlers—Mrs. Lory Wilbur.................... 515

KALAMAZOO COUNTY:

The Ninth Annual Reunion of Pioneers........................ 517
Tenth " " " " ........................ 536
Biography of Mrs. D. B. Webster—Mrs. L. H. Stone............ 532
The Old Pioneer—E. Lakin Brown.............................. 542
Memorial Report—H. G. Wells................................. 543

KENT COUNTY:

The Holden Family—Mr. & Mrs. J. R. Holden.................... 544
Meeting of Old Residents' Association......................... 544
Memorial Report—Robert Hilton................................ 546

LAPEER COUNTY:

Pioneer Sketches—H. H. Hart................................. 548

LENAWEE COUNTY:

Early Settlers in—F. A. Dewey................................ 552
Memoir of Wm. N. Lyster—F. A. Dewey.......................... 557

LIVINGSTON COUNTY:

Memorial Report—R. Fowler................................... 558

OAKLAND COUNTY:

History of—Thomas J. Drake.................................. 559
Reminiscences—Hervey Parke .................................. 572
Jonathan Hubbard and Family—Diodate Hubbard.................. 593
History of Amasa Bagley—Mrs. N. G. Davis...................... 596
Memorial Report—E. S. Woodman................................ 601

SAGINAW COUNTY:

Pioneer Life—W. R. McCormick................................. 602
Memorial Report—Wm. A. Clark................................. 605
Memorial Report—C. W. Grant.................................. 607

ST. JOSEPH COUNTY:

Semi-centennial Anniversary of Settlement.................... 609
Poem—I. D. Toll.............................................. 612
Memorial Report—I. D. Toll................................... 614

SHIAWASSEE COUNTY:

Memorial Reports—B. O. Williams.............................. 616

TUSCOLA COUNTY:

Memorial Report—Wm. Johnson.................................. 623
The Champion Wolf Trap....................................... 623

VAN BUREN COUNTY:

Historical Sketch—Geo. W. Lawton............................. 625

WASHTENAW COUNTY:

Memorial Report—E. D. Lay.................................... 637

WAYNE COUNTY:

The Naming of Lake St. Clair: Second Centennial Anniversary...... 643
The Yacht Regatta............................................ 645
Historical Address—Bela Hubbard.............................. 647
Legend of L'Anse Creuse—Judge Campbell....................... 656

# AN ACT

## TO PROVIDE AN APPROPRIATION FOR THE BENEFIT OF THE PIONEER SOCIETY OF THE STATE OF MICHIGAN FOR THE YEARS 1881 AND 1882.

---

SECTION 1. *The People of the State of Michigan enact,* That there is hereby appropriated from the general fund for each of the years eighteen hundred and eighty-one and eighteen hundred and eighty-two to the Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan, the sum of five hundred dollars to be expended from time to time whenever needed for the purposes of said Society, in collecting, embodying, arranging and preserving in authentic form, a library of books, pamphlets, maps, charts, and manuscripts, papers, paintings, statuary, and other materials, illustrative of the history of Michigan, to rescue from oblivion the memory of its early pioneers, to obtain and preserve narratives of their early exploits, perils and hardy adventures; to secure facts and statements relative to the history, genius, progress or decay of our Indian tribes; to exhibit faithfully the antiquities and the past and present resources of Michigan, but no part of such annual appropriation shall ever be paid for service rendered by its officers to the society.

SEC. 2. There is hereby further appropriated from the general fund for each of the years eighteen hundred and eighty-one and eighteen hundred and eighty-two the sum of two thousand dollars or as much thereof as may be necessary for the publishing by the State printer in each of the years eighteen hundred and eighty-one and eighteen hundred and eighty-two, under the direction of the Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan, one volume of matter prepared and selected by the officers of said society, said volume in each year not to exceed seven hundred and twenty pages, and to be in type, style of printing and binding similar to the "Pioneer Collections" heretofore published by said Society; the number of copies so to be published under the direction of said pioneer society not to exceed in each year three thousand volumes.

SEC. 3. Five hundred copies of each volume to be published as heretofore in this act provided for, shall be deposited in the State Library of Michigan for exchange with the pioneer and historical societies of other States, governments and countries; a further distribution of said volumes to be made by the officers of said Pioneer Society, to each of the duly incorporated public libraries in the State of Michigan, when demanded by the proper officers of said libraries, and the balance to be placed in the hands of the State librarian to be sold at a price not less than seventy-five cents per volume, the proceeds to be deposited in the State treasury to the credit of the general fund.

SEC. 4. The money appropriated by this act may be drawn from the State treasury from time to time, on warrant of the Auditor General, based on the requisition of the proper officer of the society, subject to the requirements of law in regard to filing vouchers and accounts.

Ordered to take immediate effect.

Approved April 11th, 1881.

# OFFICERS

OF THE

## PIONEER SOCIETY OF THE STATE OF MICHIGAN.

Elected February 5th, 1879.

---

### PRESIDENT.

MICHAEL SHOEMAKER, Jackson.

### VICE PRESIDENTS.

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| J. FISK, | Allegan. | ROBERT HILTON, | Kent. |
| H. A. GOODYEAR, | Barry. | F. A. DEWEY, | Lenawee. |
| ALBERT MILLER, | Bay. | RALPH FOWLER, | Livingston. |
| D. A. WINSLOW, | Berrien. | DANIEL B. BRIGS, | Macomb. |
| H. WARNER, | Branch. | PETER WHITE, | Marquette. |
| WILLIAM R. McCALL, | Calhoun. | GOUVERNEUR MORRIS, | Monroe. |
| WILLIAM BESLEY, | Clinton. | W. DEVINE, | Montcalm. |
| H. A. SHAW, | Eaton. | H. H. HOLT, | Muskegon. |
| E. H. THOMSON, | Genesee. | A. C. BALDWIN, | Oakland. |
| J. G. RAMSDELL, | G'd Tr'v'rse. | WILLIAM M. FERRY, | Ottawa. |
| RALPH ELY, | Gratiot. | B. O. WILLIAMS, | Shiawassee. |
| E. O. GROSVENOR, | Hillsdale. | ISAAC D. TOLL, | St. Joseph. |
| D. M. McROBERTS, | Ingham. | Wm. L. WEBBER, | Saginaw. |
| HAMPTON RICH, | Ionia. | J. R. HENDRYX, | Van Buren. |
| J. B. EATON, | Jackson. | E. D. LAY, | Washtenaw. |
| H. G. WELLS, | Kalamazoo. | EDWIN JEROME, | Wayne. |

### RECORDING SECRETARY.

MRS. HARRIET A. TENNEY, Lansing.

### CORRESPONDING SECRETARY.

GEORGE H. GREENE, Lansing.

### TREASURER.

EPHRAIM LONGYEAR, Lansing.

### EXECUTIVE COMMITTEE.

M. SHOEMAKER, *ex-officio Chairman*, Jackson.
ALBERT MILLER, Bay City.
T. D. GILBERT, Grand Rapids.
F. A. DEWEY, Cambridge.

### COMMITTEE OF HISTORIANS.

J. C. HOLMES, *Chairman*, Detroit.
H. G. WELLS, Kalamazoo.
O. C. COMSTOCK, Marshall,
M. H. GOODRICH, Ann Arbor.
HARRIET A. TENNEY, Lansing.

# PIONEER SOCIETY OF MICHIGAN.

## PROCEEDINGS.

### ADDRESS OF THE PRESIDENT, HON. JOHN J. ADAM, OF TECUMSEH, FEBRUARY 5TH, 1879.

*Ladies and Gentlemen of the Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan:*

Having unexpectedly been selected a year ago as president of your society, it becomes my duty, under the constitution and by-laws, to present on this occasion an address in writing.

When I look back upon what Michigan Territory was some forty-seven years ago, or a little more, when I first landed on its shores, and compare it with the present rank of the State in population, wealth, and resources, the change seems almost incredible. At that time the territory of Michigan embraced not only what now constitutes the State, but what is now embraced in the States of Wisconsin, Iowa, Minnesota, and a large portion of the territory of Dakota, the whole comprising, by the United States census of 1830, a little over 30,000 people. Now, the State of Michigan alone contains about 1,500,000 of as intelligent and industrious people as can anywhere be found; to say nothing of the other two almost equally populous and flourishing States, and a third following close behind.

Surely, the pioneers of Michigan have not been idle. They have redeemed the land from the wild beasts of the forest and the almost equally wild and savage red man, and fitted it for the happy and peaceful homes of a thickly settled, civilized community.

I ought not to pass over without mention, the great social reunion of the State Pioneer Society, held in connection with the Lenawee County Society on the 12th of June last, at the village of Tecumseh. It was the greatest outpouring of the people at any such reunion yet held in the State. They came from all the adjoining towns by hundreds, and many from adjoining counties, at quite a distance. Judging from what could be learned as to prior gatherings, the ladies who superintended the tables had calculated to wait upon 300 or more at a time, and then reset the tables, until all were waited on. But when 3,000 or 4,000 hungry people saw a prospect of waiting for some hours for their dinner, they began to help themselves without ceremony, by passing things outside until all were fed in short meter. Still everything passed off pleasantly and harmoniously, and all returned to their homes, after a day of much enjoyment.

The enterprising proprietor of the Tecumseh Herald engaged two stenographers to report the speeches and proceedings in full, and their work was well done, except a few errors in names. But corrected copies of the paper have been sent to the committee of Historians, and are on file to appear in a volume of "Pioneer Collections."

I have collected some material to be found only in the letter-book of the Auditor General in 1848, when I last held that office, relative to the final settlement of the part-paid $5,000,000 loan bonds. Last spring H. R. Pratt (well-known for many years as the active and diligent deputy auditor) kindly furnished me with copies of some old letters on that subject, which I may on some future occasion, prepare for publication, with appropriate notes and remarks. I found also, that Mr. Pratt had written a letter, about a year ago, of which he furnished me a copy at my request, answering some charges, classing Michigan with Minnesota as in part a repudiating State. We used to be classed along with Mississippi and Arkansas in that category; but time and a proper setting forth of the facts in our case had nearly corrected all the misapprehensions of the matter in minds willing to understand the truth. To be sure, the London Times, in 1861, as a faithful reflector of British prejudices and open sympathy with the South in the late rebellion, went so far as to turn apologist for Mississippi repudiation, and to express its admiration for the "frank style" of Col. Jefferson Davis in dealing with such questions.

But the collapse of the rebellion, and the vanishing of all hopes of aiding to bring about a disruption of the union, has rather altered the tone of British journalists and politicians. Even Mr. Gladstone, the leader of the liberal party in Great Britain, in an article lately written for, and published in one of our leading reviews, takes very different ground, and expresses a very different feeling toward the United States from what he did during the civil war.

## REPORT OF THE RECORDING SECRETARY.

Office of the
"Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan."
*Lansing, February, 5th, 1879.*

Pursuant to the provision of Article 7 of the Constitution of the "Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan," I have the honor to transmit in writing, my fifth annual report as follows:

### ANNUAL MEETING 1878.

The fourth annual meeting of the society was held in Representative Hall, commencing at 7 o'clock on the evening of Wednesday, February 6th, 1878.

### OFFICERS PRESENT.

*President*—Witter J. Baxter.

*Vice Presidents*—Judge Albert Miller, H. Warner, H. A. Shaw, A. M.

Chapin, Hampton Rich, Michael Shoemaker, H. G. Wells, F. A. Dewey, B. O. Williams, Isaac D. Toll, E. D. Lay, Edwin Jerome, Daniel B. Harrington.

*Recording Secretary*—Harriet A. Tenney.

*Executive Committee*—Witter J. Baxter, *ex-officio*, Judge Albert Miller, F. A. Dewey.

*Committee of Historians*—J. C. Holmes, *Chairman*, M. H. Goodrich, O. C. Comstock, H. G. Wells, Harriet A. Tenney.

The President, Hon. Witter J. Baxter, of Jonesville, took the chair.

Prayer by the Rev. Francis B. Bangs, of Lansing.

The president then delivered his address, in which he congratulated the society on its efforts in collecting historical matter, and the publication of Vol. I. of "Michigan Pioneer Collections," so replete with valuable information.

On motion of Isaac D. Toll, a vote of thanks was tendered to the president for his very able address.

The report of the Recording Secretary was read, accepted and adopted.

The Treasurer, Hon. O. M. Barnes, being absent, his report was read by H. Crawford and referred to the Executive Committee.

The Memorial Committee, as Vice Presidents from the counties of Branch, Calhoun, Clinton, Saginaw, Shiawassee and Wayne, reported the deaths of several old pioneers, and reports were promised for the counties of Allegan, Ionia, Jackson, Kalamazoo, Kent, Lenawee, Livingston, St. Clair and St. Joseph.

The Committee of Historians through their chairman, J. C. Holmes, made their report, which was accepted.

The thanks of the society were, on motion of Dr. O. C. Comstock, tendered to W. S. George & Co. for their very generous bequest of $59.44, being the amount charged for extra labor involved in furnishing Vol. I. of Pioneer Collections with a good index.

On motion of Judge Albert Miller, a vote of thanks was tendered the Committee of Historians for the faithful performance of their duties.

On motion of H. G. Wells, the president appointed a committee of five consisting of H. G. Wells, Hampton Rich, T. G. Gilbert, Michael Shoemaker, Albert Miller, to nominate officers and committees for the ensuing year.

The committee reported the following named persons, who were unanimously elected:

For President, Hon. John J. Adam, of Tecumseh.

For Vice Presidents, one from each county, as follows: Allegan—J. Fisk; Barry—H. A. Goodyear; Bay—Judge Albert Miller; Berrien—D. A. Winslow; Branch—H. Warner; Calhoun—Col. Charles Dickey; Clinton—Wm. Besley; Eaton—H. A. Shaw; Genesee—E. H. Thomson; Grand Traverse—J. G. Ramsdell; Gratiot—Ralph Ely; Hillsdale—E. O. Grosvenor; Ingham—A. M. Chapin; Ionia—Hampton Rich; Jackson—Michael Shoemaker; Kalamazoo—H. G. Wells; Kent—Robert Hilton; Lenawee—F. A. Dewey; Livingston—Ralph Fowler; Macomb—D. B. Briggs; Marquette—Peter White; Monroe—Gouverneur Morris; Montcalm—W. Divine; Muskegon—H. H. Holt; Oakland—A. C. Baldwin; Ottawa—Wm. M. Ferry; Shiawassee—B. O. Williams; St. Clair—D. B. Harrington; St. Joseph—Issac D. Toll; Van Buren—J. R. Hendryx; Washtenaw—E. D. Lay; Wayne—Edwin Jerome.

For Recording Secretary, Harriet A. Tenney; Treasurer, E. Longyear; Corresponding Secretary, John J. Bush, all of Lansing.

For Executive Committee, John J. Adam, *ex-officio*, Judge Albert Miller, of Bay City; Bela Hubbard, of Detroit, and F. A. Dewey, of Cambridge.

For Committee of Historians, J. C. Holmes, of Detroit, *Chairman;* M. H. Goodrich, of Ann Arbor; O. C. Comstock, of Marshall; H. G. Wells, of Kalamazoo, and Harriet A. Tenney, of Lansing.

Mr. A. Harrison being called upon, recited an original poem entitled, "Our Mothers Seventy Years Ago."

A letter was read, received from Gen. Egbert Brown, of Missouri, in which he recounted many reminiscences of early times, in Lenawee county.

Col. Isaac D. Toll, of Fawn River, gave a brief sketch of the military career of John T. Brown of Mexican war fame.

Hon. H. G. Wells offered the following resolution, which was adopted:

> *Resolved*, That all papers presented and to be introduced in succeeding volumes of "Pioneer Collections of the State of Michigan," be filed with the secretary, and that the same be treated as the property of the State Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan, and not to be withdrawn except for correction and with the assent of the proper officers of the society.

On invitation from A. L. Bours, Secretary of the Building Commissioners, the pioneers arranged for a visit to the new State capitol at 7½ o'clock the following morning.

The society then, at 10 o'clock P. M., adjourned to meet at 9 o'clock the next morning.

The society met pursuant to adjournment, the President in the chair.

Reading of the Scriptures from II. Samuel, vii. 21, 22, 23, 24, and I. Chronicles, xvii. 20, 21, 22, 23, 24, and prayer by Rev. L. B. Potter, of Lansing.

A paper by Henry Bishop, of Kalamazoo, being a continuation of the "Early History of New Buffalo," was read by H. G. Wells.

Mr. Shoemaker read a paper on the "Early History of the City of Jackson."

A paper by Judge James V. Campbell, on the "Early French Settlements in Michigan," was read by J. E. Tenney.

Singing of "Auld Lang Syne" by the audience.

A paper by S. C. Coffinberry, of Constantine, on the "Early Settlement of Nottawa Sippi Prairie," was read by Witter J. Baxter.

Hon. John J. Adam read a paper on the "Early Settlement of Lenawee County."

Gen. Joseph W. Brown, of Tecumseh, who commanded the Michigan militia during the Black Hawk and Toledo wars, was called to the platform and received with the greatest enthusiasm, and related many interesting incidents connected with his official life.

The society then adjourned at 1 o'clock P. M. to meet again at 2 o'clock.

The society met pursuant to adjournment, the President in the chair.

Prayer by Rev. Wm. H. Brockway, of Albion.

O. A. Jenison, of Lansing, read a sketch of the "Early Times in Lansing," and presented the society with a large and valuable collection of newspapers, circulars, handbills, pamphlets, books, pictures, household implements, etc., the most of which have some connection with the earlier or later history of Michigan.

On motion of J. C. Holmes, a vote of thanks was tendered to Mr. Jenison for the valuable presentation made by him.

A paper by J. H. Lawrence, giving a "History of California Township," was read by H. N. Lawrence, of Lansing.

Rev. Geo. Duffield, of Lansing, read a paper on the "Recent Discovery of the long lost grave of Pere Marquette, at St. Ignace."

Hon. M. Shoemaker offered the following amendment to the constitution, which was laid over until the next annual meeting: To amend section seven, by inserting after the work "year" in the third line, "or such other time as the society may determine at an annual meeting."

A memoir of the life of Hon. A. N. Hart, prepared by his daughter, Mrs. Belle Hamilton, was read by J. E. Tenney.

A paper by B. O. Williams, of Owosso, "The Survey of a State Road from Saginaw to Mackinac," was read by J. C. Holmes.

A paper by Judge Flavius J. Littlejohn, of Allegan, "The Pioneers of Michigan,—Their Devotion to Educational Interests, Historically Illustrated," was read by W. J. Baxter.

Biographical notes and incidents in the pioneer life of Mrs. R. B. Norris, prepared by her granddaughter, Maria M. Norris, daughter of Hon. L. B. Norris, of Grand Rapids, was read by N. B. Jones, of Lansing.

The society then adjourned at about 6 o'clock P. M. to meet again at 7 o'clock the same evening.

The society met pursuant to adjournment, the President in the chair.

Prayer by President T. C. Abbot, of the Agricultural College.

The "Life and Times of Rev. Abel Bingham," missionary to the Sault Ste. Marie, prepared by his daughter, was read by Hon. T. D. Gilbert.

On motion, the Rev. Wm. H. Brockway was requested to write his recollections of his labors among the Indians of Michigan.

Ex-Governor Alpheus Felch, of Ann Arbor, read a paper on "Early Michigan Banking," in which he graphically portrayed the wild-cat scenes of 1837-8.

A paper was read by Hon. H. G. Wells, being biographical sketches of the governors of the Territory and State of Michigan; also of the judicial officers of the State who are now numbered with the dead; also alluding to the men of the first constitutional convention held in Michigan.

F. A. Dewey gave a history of the rise and progress of the Lenawee County Pioneer Society.

Hon. Geo. C. Bates, of Detroit, was then called out, and entertained the audience with reminiscences of the "By-gones" of Michigan.

About 200 of the pioneer men and women were in attendance during the sessions.

The President called each of the sessions to order with a *gavel* made from a log taken from the first school-house erected in Washtenaw county, in the town of Pittsfield, and which was presented to the society by the Washtenaw County Pioneer Society.

The business of the society being completed, the audience was dismissed after singing the doxology.

### SOCIAL REUNION.

Upon invitation of the Lenawee County Pioneer Society, the semi-annual meeting of the State Society was held at Tecumseh, on Wednesday, June 12, 1878. A large number of pioneers were in attendance; addresses were made by Levi Bishop and J. C. Holmes of Detroit, H. H. Riley of Constantine, Rev. H. O. Bancroft of Saginaw, and several others.

### OBITUARY.

We have to record the death of several members of our society during the past year: Daniel B. Harrington, Isaac Carl, Rev. T. Merrill, Col. Charles Dickey, A. M. Chapin. Memorials are expected from the Memorial Committee. Records of the deaths of many old pioneers, who were not members of the society have been received.

### COUNTY SOCIETIES.

A report has been received from the Recording Secretary of the Allegan Pioneer Society, dated January 18th. The society has an enrolled membership of 198. Seven of the members have died, leaving the present membership of the society 191. The society was organized February 16, 1876. Twenty of the members are over 70 years of age; the rest are between 40 and 70 years of age. All are residents of Allegan county for over twenty-five years.

### DONATIONS.

The donations made to the society during the past year, have been large and valuable. They have all been carefully recorded upon the record-book, and properly filed. The names of the donors, with the number of articles donated are as follows:

O. A. Jenison, Lansing:
  One hundred and five articles.
Gov. Alpheus Felch, Ann Arbor:
  Eight bank bills of the wild-cat banks of Michigan.
Mrs. Mary E. Foster, Ann Arbor:
  Four cabinet pictures of early pioneers of Washtenaw county.
Dr. H. A. Atkins, Locke:
  Fourteen articles.
Gen. J. W. Brown, Tecumseh.
  Five manuscripts relating to the laying out of the Grand river road.
Rev. George Duffield, Lansing:
  Five articles relating to the burial place of Pere Marquette.
H. A. Shaw, Eaton Rapids:
  Hatchet found in Springport, Jackson county, in 1875, near the head waters of Spring Brook.
F. A. Kingsbury, Marshall:
  A ruler made from a piece of a board placed in the branches of the oak tree, standing in the center of Mansion street, Marshall, in the year 1831. The board was used as a seat, upon which persons sat when shooting bears and wolves. The tree was cut down June 16, 1875.
Geo. W. Keyes, Olivet:
  A collection of catalogues and pamphlets relating to Olivet College.
J. Ludington, Verona:
  Copy of the Huron County News containing an account of the organization of the Huron County Pioneer Society.
Capt. Henry M. Howgate, of the U. S. Army:
  A pamphlet entitled "Polar Colonization."

DEPARTMENT OF THE INTERIOR, Washington:

Senate and House Journals of the 2d Session of the 44th, and 1st Session of the 45th Congress.

W. H. NEWTON, St. George's, Delaware:

Pamphlet. The Last Will and Testament of George Washington.

ROBERT HILTON, Grand Rapids:

Newspaper clippings containing notices of the death and funeral of Robert S. Parks.

L. ORMSBY:

Three copies of a pamphlet, being a historical lecture delivered at the semi-centennial celebration of the pioneers of Lenawee and Monroe counties, August 25, 1876.

A. J. KELLOGG:

Three bank bills.

JUDGE J. V. CAMPBELL, Detroit:

Digest of the rules of the Supreme Court of the Territory of Michigan, 1821.

WISCONSIN STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY:

Twenty-fourth annual report of the society, submitted January 2, 1878.

CHICAGO HISTORICAL SOCIETY:

Three pamphlets. Father Marquette at Mackinaw and Chicago. Biographical sketch of the late Gen. B. J. Sweet. History of Camp Douglas. Second Annual Report of the Illinois Association of the Sons of Vermont.

S. H. ROW, Lansing:

Address delivered at the 6th annual picnic of the farmers of Sharon, Washtenaw county.

DETROIT FREE PRESS COMPANY:

Copy of the Free Press, June 2, 1878,—being an octuple sheet with supplement.

WESTERN RESERVE AND NORTHERN OHIO HISTORICAL SOCIETY:

One volume of Historical Tracts, Nos. 1-36, 1870-77.

KANSAS STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY:

Three books and one newspaper.

MISCELLANEOUS:

Twenty-five newspapers containing historical articles relating to early Michigan history.

Twenty historical manuscripts.

### MEMBERSHIP.

There has been an addition of sixty-one members since the last annual meeting, making a total of four hundred and thirty names now enrolled upon the membership book of the society:

Ebenezer F. Wade, J. B. Wheeler, Wm. W. Murphy, J. Q. A. Sessions, A. B. Chipman, E. G. Fuller, Harvey Haynes, Henry E. Blackman, James R. Rockwell, Japheth Cross, Alex. Adrien, John J. Adam, C. B. Stebbins, James W. Brown, Charles T. Gorham, Cornelia M. Smith, Thomas D. Gilbert, Robert Hilton, Francis B. Bangs, David B. Hale, E. F. Blood, Harriet Row, Samuel H. Row, Nelson B. Jones, John H. Forster, J. W. Post, Josiah R. Holden, Joanna R. Holden, J. D. Reeves, George Foote, Henry Ousterhout, Peter Lowe, D. B. Briggs; S. F. Drury, H. A. Atkins, Harvey Morehouse, Mrs. Catherine Morehouse, Mrs. Chas. P. Bush, George C. Bates, Henry N. Lawrence, A. J.

Kellogg, L. G. Blanchard, Norman Bailey, John Hull, David G. Robinson, William A. Whitney, F. R. Stebbins, John E. Swick, Rev. E. N. Nichols, H. M. Russell, W. H. Montgomery, Mars Howard, Stephen H. Aldrich, Andrew Wilson, Rev. J. O. Bancroft, Charles I. Walker, Albert E. Cowles, J. P. Cowles, R. C. Kedzie, Melvin D. Champe, Laurens B. Potter, Hervey Parke.

### CONCLUSION.

The Board of State Auditors have assigned for the use and accommodation of this society two rooms in the fourth story of the new capitol. One of these will be fitted up for the audience room where the pioneers of the State may meet at any and all times. The other room will be used for a business office, and will contain the library and museum, in which will be arranged in proper order the donations that have been and will be made to the society. It is to be hoped that donations of every kind and character which have a tendency to illustrate the natural and civil history of Michigan, will be sent to your secretary. They will be duly receipted, labeled and placed in the society's museum.

Our society is yet in its infancy, but it has made commendable progress. Its growth has been steady and healthful, and it is destined, under the unflagging efforts of its managers, and the constant encouragement and zeal of its members, to become one of the most honored institutions of our State.

All of which is respectfully submitted.

HARRIET A. TENNEY,
*Recording Secretary.*

## REPORT OF THE CORRESPONDING SECRETARY.

*To the President of the State Pioneer Society of Michigan:*

I have the pleasure to report, that my duties as Corresponding Secretary for the past year have not been very arduous; having received but few communications, all of which I have responded to with promptness.

Very respectfully,

JOHN J. BUSH,
February 5, 1879. *Corresponding Secretary.*

## REPORT OF THE TREASURER FOR THE YEAR ENDING FEBRUARY 5TH, 1879.

### RECEIPTS.

| | |
|---|---|
| Cash on hand at date of last report, February 6, 1878 | $54 56 |
| Received for memberships | 181 00 |
| Received for sale of Vol. I. Pioneer Collections | 175 50 |
| Received from donations | 10 85 |
| | $421 91 |

### DISBURSEMENTS.

| | |
|---|---|
| Paid for postage | $6 55 |
| Paid for traveling and hotel expenses of Committee of Historians | 65 30 |
| Paid for traveling and hotel expenses of Executive Committee | 35 41 |
| Paid for printing | 22 50 |
| Paid express charges | 25 |
| Amount disbursed | $130 01 |
| Balance on hand | $291 90 |

The above balance of cash on hand is deposited in the State Treasury to the credit of the Recording Secretary of this society. As the law requires all papers, etc., belonging to this society to be kept at the State Library, and it being in the capitol, where is also located the State Treasury, it has been found convenient and expedient to keep the money received by the society on deposit with the State Treasurer, to be drawn as occasion may require by the Recording Secretary, who is the State Librarian. This has accordingly been done the past year, vouchers and accounts being rendered and placed on file as required by the laws of the State.

E. LONGYEAR,
*Treasurer.*

## REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE OF HISTORIANS.

***To the President and Directors of the Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan:***

Your Committee of Historians beg leave to report that they have collected, and have nearly ready for publication, an amount of material for the second volume of "Pioneer Collections," sufficient to make a book of about six hundred pages.

It has been the desire of the committee to procure pioneer history from as many of the counties in the State as possible; hoping that in the course of time the society may be able to say that it has gathered up and published in book form the pioneer history of every county and town in the State. They find that the work of gathering up and preparing this matter for publication is somewhat tedious and laborious, yet they have not shrunk from the endeavor to accomplish the work assigned them, for they know that as time passes on, their gatherings will become more and more valuable, and their labors will be more fully appreciated than they now are.

Your committee have noticed with much pleasure that County Pioneer Societies have been organized in several of the counties of the State, and that at their annual meetings many papers of great local and general historical interest have been prepared and read by pioneers themselves.

Your committee have made some effort at correspondence with the county societies, for the purpose of procuring these papers to be placed in the archives of the State society, that they may be ready for use in making up the future volumes of "Pioneer Collections"; they have met with some success in this direction, but not to the extent that is desirable; yet they think that as the

State society and its proceedings become better known, and its publications more widely distributed and read, the officers of the county societies will not need to be asked to furnish their pioneer reminiscences to the State society, but they will do it voluntarily and cheerfully; thus lessening the labors of the Committee of Historians, and furthering one of the principal objects had in view by both the State and county societies, *viz.*: to collect and place in permanent form the pioneer history of the State, written by the pioneers themselves.

Your committee think it would be beneficial to all parties, if the secretary of each county, town, and district pioneer society would notify the secretary of the State society a few days prior to the holding of their annual meetings, of the time and place where said meetings are to be held, and then to make as full a report of the proceedings as possible; the report to be accompanied by as many of the papers as can be procured, that were prepared for and read at their meetings.

When Vol. I. of the Pioneer Collections was ready for the printer, the Committee of Historians, composed of the same persons then as now, at their own risk, procured the printing of the volume, and then the society petitioned the Legislature to appropriate the sum of five hundred dollars a year for each of the years 1877 and 1878.

The appropriation was made, and applied to the payment of publishing the volume and other expenses of the society. The contract for printing and binding 1,500 copies of Vol. I. was $1,800.00.

It will now be necessary to ask for an appropriation for the years 1879 and 1880, and a committee should be appointed to prepare a petition for that purpose and present it to the Legislature, unless it is a matter that belongs to the Executive Committee to attend to; for Vol. II. cannot be printed without an appropriation from the Legislature. Although the work of the officers has been done voluntarily,—none of them receiving pay for their services—the expenses attending the collecting of material for the history, and articles for the museum, absorb something of the society's income derived from the annual dues of members, and the sale of the books.

Of Vol. I. there were printed 1,500 copies, at a cost of about one dollar and fifty cents per copy, which includes expenses of collecting material. Copies have been sold at $1.50 each. Your committee think it would be good policy to withdraw from sale one or two hundred copies for the present, as in the course of time, when the supposition will be that Vol. I. is out of print, it will be much sought for, and a few copies should be kept to supply such demand.

Among the objects of interest procured by your committee are the canopy and desk from the Senate Chamber of the old capitol. They were built for the old capitol in Detroit, the corner stone of which was laid October 22, 1823. That old capitol is still standing, and is now part of the high school building in Detroit.

When the State government, in 1847, took its departure from Detroit, and located in Lansing, these articles were taken from there and placed in what was then the new, but is now an old State-house. Your committee, thinking it their duty to secure some relic of the first and second State-houses, requested the secretary of the furnishing board to have the canopy, desk, and chair from the old Senate chamber placed in the audience room of the State Pioneer Society. In compliance with that request these articles were placed there, where they now stand not only as relics, but to be occupied by the presiding officer of the Michigan State Pioneer Society. It having been stated that either the canopy over the chair of the President of the Senate, or the one over the chair of the Speaker of the House of Representatives was brought from Virginia to Detroit, to be placed in the first capitol, and afterward moved to Lansing, the chairman of your committee addressed a note to the Hon. C. C. Trowbridge, at Detroit, asking for information on this point, and received a note in reply, saying that no part of the furniture came from Virginia or any other State. The canopies, desks, chairs, and all things of that sort were made or furnished by William Dunnell of Detroit.

We did not forget to take from the old house into the new the old basswood eagle of which George C. Bates made mention in his eloquent speech on Thursday evening, February 7, 1878, just before the close of our last annual meeting. The old bird was introduced to the meeting at that time minus one wing. Thanks to Mr. Strahan, the designer of the furnishings in the various rooms in the new capitol, the bird now appears full-winged, and in golden costume, and as good as new.

In closing this report, your committee would call your attention to the fact that the society owes its acknowledgments to the board that assigned to it the rooms we are to occupy in the capitol; one for a business room, and one as an audience room for the meetings of the society; also to Mr. Bours, their gentlemanly secretary, for his services in giving attention to the furnishing of the rooms, and to Mr. Strahan for his endeavor to have the rooms put in order for our use.

All of which is respectfully submitted.

J. C. HOLMES,
M. H. GOODRICH,
O. C. COMSTOCK,
H. G. WELLS,
HARRIET A. TENNEY.
} *Committee.*

# THE NORTHWEST DURING THE REVOLUTION.

BY HON. CHARLES I. WALKER, OF DETROIT, MICH.

**Read before the State Historical Society of Wisconsin, January 31, 1871.**

"The Northwest" has had in our history no fixed locality. It has been constantly receding from the Atlantic coast with each advancing wave of the great tide of emigration, and has in succession crossed the Alleghanies, passed beyond the great lakes, the Mississippi, the desert plains of the West and the Rocky Mountains; and its onward march has only been stayed by the waters of the Pacific.

But the Northwest of which I shall speak has a well defined locality and fixed boundaries. It comprises the region encompassed by the Ohio, the Mississippi and the great lakes, and embraces the territory now occupied by the five great States of Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Michigan and Wisconsin, with a population of over 9,000,000, and rich with the productions of human industry and human art. No other section of the Union of the same area, comprises so many advantages or is capable of sustaining so dense a population. With scenery of great and diversified beauty, a climate varied and delightful, a soil of surpassing richness and fertility, sustaining a wealth of timber that the energies of man cannot destroy for generations to come, with exhaustless mines of lead, iron, coal, copper and salt, and traversed and environed by noble rivers and great lakes, the equal of which are not to be found upon the face of the earth, it is not surprising that its growth in population and wealth is without a parallel in the history of the world.

At the commencement of the American Revolution, there was not a settlement of English origin within this whole territory, and its entire population, other than Indians, did not probably exceed 5,000.

From the time the flag of Great Britain was raised at Jamestown, in 1607, and that of France had been unfurled from the heights of Quebec the following year, for a century and a half the mighty struggle had been going on between these two great nations for the dominion of a continent. The combatants were worthy, and the prize well worth the combat. The contest was determined by the victory of Wolfe, upon the plains of Abram, on the 17th day of September, 1759; and by the treaty of Paris, of 1763, when France ceded to Great Britain her American dominions, from the Gulf of St. Lawrence to the Mississippi.

Previous to this period some of the English colonies had laid claims, and sometimes conflicting claims, to portions of the territory of which we speak, but they had in fact exercised no jurisdiction over it. The whole territory was in the occupation of France, and in her grand design of hemming in the English colonies and connecting Canada with Louisiana, she had dotted it with trading posts, missionary stations, settlements and forts.

### THE NORTHWEST IN 1763.

To understand this period of history, it is *essential* that we obtain a clear idea of the settlements and forts existing at the time of this conquest, their locality, strength and character.

Detroit was founded in 1701, and a fort called Pontchartrain erected upon the high bank of the river. This had long since gone to decay. The town proper occupied only about three acres, and was enclosed by pickets, variously stated to be from 15 to 25 feet high, and pierced by four gates defended by block-house and guns. There were, within the pickets, from 80 to 100 dwellings, all of logs, except the house of the governor or commandant, and the enclosure contained a population of about 600. The settlement extended from the fort up and down the river on both sides about eight miles; and when Major Rogers took possession for the British Government, in November, 1769, he estimated the entire population of town and settlement, at about 2,500, of which number 500 were capable of bearing arms. They were all French. Their farms were all narrow and deep, with a frontage on the river, so that the houses were near together. They were kept neatly whitewashed, and presented, especially from the water, a very picturesque appearance. The great importance of this point sprang from its position, which enabled it to command largely Indian trade and influence.

At Mackinaw, Father Marquette established a mission as early as 1671. A fort was erected on the point of the lower peninsula in 1686. There was at this time, within the pickets, about 30 families, and as many more without, numbering, perhaps, a population of about 400. This, too, was an important point with reference to the Indian trade.

Sault Ste. Mary had been visited by missionaries as early as 1641, and a permanent mission was established in 1668, but it was now a very insignificant military post, surrounded by a small cluster of French houses.

Green Bay was occupied as a missionary station in 1669. At this period it had a small stockade fort, and probably not to exceed 50 inhabitants besides soldiers and their families.

Fort St. Joseph was a small stockade near the mouth of the river St. Joseph, and, like the others, had around it a small cluster of French settlers and traders.

The same may be said of Fort Miami, (Fort Wayne).

Fort Sandusky was not a permanent post, and had no settlement around it.

### SETTLEMENTS UPON THE WABASH.

The two principal settlements on the Wabash were Vincennes—then called Fort St. Vincent, and Waw-ca-ta-non, near Lafayette. According to Croghan, there were at Vincennes in 1765 about 80 or 90 French families, and at Waw-ca-ta-non 14 families living within the fort, and there were doubtless some small intervening settlements. These settlements on the Wabash were commenced probably as early as 1710-11, and seem at one time to have been rich in agricultural productions, which found a market down the Mississippi.

### SETTLEMENTS IN ILLINOIS.

The largest settlements in the Northwest were those of Illinois, of which Kaskaskia was the oldest and the principal. In 1766 it has 65 permanent families. There were, besides, Cahokia with 45 families; St. Philip with 16 families; Prairie du Rocher with 12 families; Fort Chartres with 40 families. This fort was erected at great expense by the French in 1720, rebuilt in 1756, and was for a long time the seat of government of the country of Illinois: but this fort was undermined by the river about 1772, and was abandoned. There was also a fort at Kaskaskia, upon a rock on the other side of the river from the village. There were agricultural settlements in the vicinity of these places, and the entire white population in Illinois was probably about 3,000. There were also many slaves in the country; one farm kept 80. These were all the settlements existing in the Northwest at the treaty of Paris in 1763, and the entire white population did not exceed 10,000, and were exclusively of French origin, and of the Roman Catholic religion.

If we were to trust to contemporaneous English accounts, we should find the inhabitants not only a very worthless people, but positively unworthy. Thus, Col. George Croghan, deputy of Sir Wm. Johnson, who visited these settlements in 1765, says of the inhabitants of Vincennes, that "they are an idle, lazy people, a parcel of renegades from Canada, and are much worse than the Indians;" and of those of Detroit, "they are generally poor wretches, a lazy, idle people, depending chiefly on the savages for subsistence,"—"whose manners and customs they have entirely adopted."

That this description was applicable to many of the *voyageurs* and *coureurs de bois*, as seen about the towns, is undoubtedly true; but as a description of the inhabitants generally it is most unjust.

There were two distinct classes of these *habitans;* both, however, having the same general and national characteristics. One was the class of active, intelligent, gentlemanly traders and farmers; many of them of *respectable*, and some of *noble* birth and connections. The other class were the *voyageurs, coureurs de bois* and peasants. Here, side by side, these two classes planted their residences, and lived in perfect harmony; yet each in his own sphere—each contented with his place.

The *voyageur* and peasant indulged in no dreams of the equality of man, and ambition never embittered his heart, while the gentleman, jealous of no encroachment, was the indulgent and kind-hearted employer and patron. On the banks of these western rivers they built their simple, cheerful homes, and surrounded them with fruits and flowers. They were a light-hearted, gay people, full of vivacity and graceful hilarity; honest among themselves, generous and hospitable. Surrounded by danger, they were of undoubted courage, but when the pressure of a present peril was passed, their habitual gayety returned. No memory of the past or fear of the future was permitted to mar the happiness of the present hour. Sorrow and suffering were soon forgotten, and privations laughed at, or cheerfully endured. Simple and frugal in their habits, contented with their lot, they renewed in their forest recesses of the new world the life of the old. They were free from ambition and its cares, and without aims. While they enjoyed much personal license, they had no conception of municipal freedom and of self-government—of liberty regulated by law, originating from the will of the governed themselves. They received with equal and unquestioned submissiveness their law from the king and his subordinates, and their religion from their priests.

By a proclamation of George the Third, October 7, 1763, the government of Quebec was established for the Canadas, but this distant region was not included within its boundaries, and until the passage of the famous Quebec act, in Parliament in 1774, it was without a civil government, and exclusively under military control. Magistrates derived both their appointment and their powers solely from the military commandants, and soldiers were the only executive officers of the law. Mutual distrust and dislike existed between the people and the British officers placed over them, and this was greatly increased by the Pontiac war, in which many of the inhabitants sympathized with the savages in their attack upon the English power. The result was, that a very large emigration took place, especially frm the Illinois settlements, to the western side of the Mississippi river and to Louisiana.

The treaty of peace and cession was signed at Paris in March, 1763. On the 27th of September of the same year, Neyon de Villiers, French commandant of Illinois, dispatched couriers from Fort Chartres with a written invitation addressed to "Mr's les habitans du Detroit," cordially inviting such as chose to emigrate to St. Genevieve, Arkansas or New Orleans, and pledging his protection and assistance to such as should go.

In 1764 Laclede founded St. Louis, and persuaded thither many emigrants from Illinois, and some from Detroit. Kaskaskia, which under French rule had at one time numbered 1,500 or 2,000 inhabitants, was reduced to a population of less than 500. Detroit, which had probably numbered more than 600 inhabitants in 1763, had but about 300 at the commencement of the Revolution. The whole Detroit settlement did not then exceed 700 or 800, in the place of 2,500, as estimated by Rogers in 1760.

The emigration of original British subjects to the Canadas, after the conquest, had been very limited. In 1770 there were less than 400 Protestant men in the whole new dominion. In Detroit, in 1778, there were 30 Scotchmen, 15 Irishmen and 2 Englishmen, mostly traders, and without families. No new settlements had been formed, and I am satisfied that at the commencement of the Revolution, exclusive of officers and soldiers and their families, the entire white population of the Northwest did not exceed 5,000 souls.

By the Quebec act of 1774, the Northwest became a part of the Province of Quebec, and was brought nominally under civil government. While this act was uner discussion, Sir Guy Carleton, who was then governor of Canada, and had been since 1768, was called as a witness before the House. His examination is full of curious interest. He is asked whether Detroit and Michigan were under the government. He replies, "Detroit is not under the government; Michigan is." He was asked, "Do you look upon Illinois as a part of old Canada!" He replies, "I believe so. New Orleans was under the government of Quebec, but where the precise district ends, I really do not know;" and he confesses that he has no idea of the distance that Illinois is from Quebec.

In connection with this specimen of official ignorance, it may not be uninteresting to give a speciment of description and prediction at a later period. Detroit and its dependencies, including Wisconsin, remained in the possession of Great Britain until after Jay's treaty of 1794. In 1791, when the act dividing Quebec into Upper and Lower Canada was under discussion in Parliament, a leading merchant of Quebec, Mr. Lyneburner, was heard in opposition to the act. He contended that "Niagara was the utmost extent westward of the cultivable part of the province;" that while it was true that there was a small settlement at Detroit, and it was of great importance as a post for the Indian trade, it could never become of great importance as a settlement; that the Falls of Niagara presented a barrier to the transportation of produce, which "must greatly impede the progress of settlement and cultivation for ages to come."

### THE REVOLUTIONARY PERIOD.

Under this Quebec act Col. Henry Hamilton, formerly a captain in the 15th regiment, was appointed by Governor Carleton, in 1775, Lieut. Governor, Superintendent of Detroit and its dependencies, including the entire Northwest. He had doubtless been selected because of his capacity, energy and zeal, and with reference to the impending difficulties between the Colonies and the mother country. Henceforth, and during the entire Revolution, Detroit became the centre of British power in the Northwest. The relentless and cruel Indian warfare, that was carried on against the border settlements of Pennsylvania, Virginia and Kentucky, received its inspiration and direction from this point. The Indian power of the Northwest was at this period fearfully great. It was mainly under the control of British influence and British gold, and it was used without scruple to harrass, cripple and destroy the struggling Colonies, and in its cruel ferocity it spared neither sex, infancy or age.

In 1763, Sir Wm. Johnson, than whom there is no better authority, makes the following estimate of the number of the Indian warriors of the Northwest:

| | |
|---|---|
| Wyandotts, at Detroit and Sandusky | 450 |
| Pottawatamies, at Detroit and St. Joseph | 350 |
| Ottawas and Chippewas, at Detroit and Mackinaw | 1,350 |
| Ottawas and Chippewas, elsewhere | 4,000 |
| Sacs, Foxes and Menominees, west of Green Bay | 1,170 |
| Menominees, Kickapoos and Piankashaus, on the Wabash | 800 |
| Shawnees, Scioto Valley | 300 |
| Delawares, Muskingum Valley | 600 |
| In all | 9,020 |

This does not include the Illinois Indians, of whose numbers he gives no estimate. The use made of this power, supported by British gold and wielded by British skill, we shall have occasion to notice.

Under Governor Hamilton were various subordinates at the different stations. Thus Captain (afterwards Major) Arent Schuyler de Peyster—an honored name—a native of New York, was in command at Mackinac from 1774 until 1779, when, on Hamilton's capture, he succeeded him at Detroit. Sir De Rocheblave, who had been a Lieutenant of Marines in the French service in Illinois as early as 1760, was Governor of Kaskaskia and its dependencies; and a Mr. Abbott, an Irish civilian of Detroit, was Governor of Vincennes. Although civil government was nominally established, justice was administered very much as under the preceding military regimé. Thus Governor Hamilton acted as migistrate, and took cognizance of all civil cases under £10 York currency. An orderly sergeant acted as constable. No process was issued, but the orderly commanded the debtor to appear when a hearing was summarily had, and if the case was found against the debtor, he was ordered to pay the claim; and if he could, yet refused, he was sent to the guard-house until he did.

Judge May gives a curious instance of this summary justice:

"One Grauchin owed me a debt. I complained to Governor Hamilton, who sent for him. He came, and being asked if he had anything to say against the debt, he said no. He then ordered him to give me an old negro wench in payment, and she served me twenty-five years."

Criminal justice was amdinistered by a justice of the Governor's appointment, and a jury, which was provided for in criminal cases by the Quebec act; and the sentence of death was more than once inflicted for theft and other like offenses. A contemporary record shows what was in fact three trials before a jury at one time, and disposed of at one verdict. A Frenchman was found guilty of stealing some furs from Messrs. Abbott & Finchley; and Ann Wyley, a former slave, of stealing a purse containing six guineas, from the same firm; and the two were tried for attempting to set fire to the house of the same firm; but the jury found the proof on this point not sufficient, though as they said, "the circumstances were very much against them." Philip Dejean the justice, of whom we shall hereafter hear more, sentenced them to be hanged upon the King's domain or public common, and they were hanged accordingly.[1]

No sooner had the war commenced, than efforts were made to enlist both the whites and the Indians of the Northwest, against the Colonies. In the fall of 1775, Dr. John Conolly, of Pittsburg, after visiting General Gage at Boston, was appointed by Governor Dunmore, of Virginia, to proceed to Detroit and enlist a regiment of Canadians there and elsewhere, which was to rendezvous there, and which he was to command, and also a force of Indians; and to return to Virginia with the force thus raised, and join Governor Dunmore. He and two traveling companions were arrested in Maryland, while on their way, and his papers, carefully concealed in his saddle, revealed the plot.

The importance of Detroit to the British interest, and the desirableness of capturing this center and stronghold of British power in the Northwest, became apparent to General Washington and to Congress at an early day in the fearful struggle, and it was never for a moment lost sight of, although effective efforts for the accomplishment of this purpose were deferred from time to time from sheer necessity—the utter want of men and means. As early as April, 1776, the Committee on Indian Affairs was instructed to enquire as to the possibility of taking Detroit.

Early in this year, Captain De Peyster, commanding at Mackinaw, by his persuasions, enlisted in the British service Captain Charles De Langlade, of Green Bay, a gentleman of extensive influence among the Indians, and who had distinguished himself as a French officer in the war with Great Britain, which resulted in the conquest of Canada. He soon raised a large force of Indians from the several nations of the Northwest, and together with some Canadian volunteers, proceeded with them to the neighborhood of Montreal, there to render aid to the King's forces in attacking the rebels, and defending Lower Canada against them. These forces rendezvoused at Mackinaw, and the orders for their marching thence were issued on the day of the Declaration of Independence, July 4, 1776. Captain De Langlade is charged with the duty on the way of "annoying the rebels wherever you meet with them." This force received a most cordial reception at Montreal, where on its arrival a grand council was held, at which an ox was roasted whole, and served up to the Indians; and subsequently they rendered valuable service in the cause of the crown.

---

[1] The man was hung, but the wench was permitted to go free upon condition that she act as executioner, which she did.

The audacity of the American rebellion against the mighty power of Great Britain stung to the quick the sensitive and haughty pride of her ruling statesmen, and aroused to bitterness and unrelenting hate the narrow, obstinate mind of the King; and the subsequent Declaration of Independence produced a degree of exasperation which it is difficult for us to fully appreciate. Under the influence of these feelings, the British King and Ministry resolved (in the language of Secretary Germaine "that every means should be employed that Providence had put in his Majesty's hands for crushing the rebellion." Every possible effort was to be employed, and was employed, not only to enlist the Indians in legitimate warfare against the Colonies, but to turn loose upon peaceable settlements, upon unarmed men and helpless women and children, what Chatham called "the horrible hell-hounds of savage war." This ruthless and dastardly policy met with a cold support from Sir Guy Carleton and General Howe; but it found a ready, active, zealous supporter in Governor Hamilton, of Detroit, who, as early as September of this year, 1776, promised the ministry that he would send parties of the savages "to fall on the scattered settlers on the Ohio and its branches;" and to encourage the enforcement of this policy towards the rebels, adds: "their arrogance, disloyalty and impudence had justly drawn upon them this deplorable sort of war."

In the execution of this policy, Governor Hamilton exhibited great energy and an embittered zeal. His first effort was to enlist in the British interest, by the power of British gold, such men as could best influence the Indians, and lead them on in their work of destruction. For this purpose a large number of traders and others familiar with the Indian language and Indian character were regularly employed and paid by the Indian Department of Detroit, and among these were five men who became infamously conspicuous, and whose very names became a terror to the border settlements of Pennsylvania, Virginia and Kentucky—these were Matthew Elliott, for many years a trader among the Ohio Indians; Alexander McKee, who had been an Indian Agent; and the three brothers, Simon, George and James Girty. The father of the Girtys was a drunkard, and their mother a bawd. They had been taken prisoners while young, and adopted by the Indians, and they honored alike their parentage and their education, and united in themselves the vices of civilization and the cruel perfidy and ferocity of the savage. Simon, the most capable of the three, had been an Indian interpreter for the Americans, but, like the others, was seduced to British interests by British gold. He was a drunken, blustering ruffian, but of great force of character and unquestionable courage. Each of these men received a regular compensation from Detroit. McKee received 20 shillings sterling; the others 16 York shillings per day.

Then too, the Indians themselves were subsidized by rich and valuable presents, not only of blankets, other clothing and provisions, but of those articles so attractive to the savage—vermilion to give the proper war color, and articles of personal adornment, such as brooches, ear-rings, bracelets, etc., etc. By these and other means most of the Northwestern Indians were early secured to British interests. Through the influence of the Moravian missionaries on the Muskingum most of the Delawares remained neutral.

The results of their efforts were not seriously felt upon the border settlements until 1777. In the latter part of winter, or early in the spring of that year, Governor Hamilton sent a war hatchet, wrapped in a belt of red and white beads, to the Ohio Indians. It was accepted by the Wyandotts and Shawnees, but rejected by the Delawares. Its effect was at once apparent. On the 6th of March a large party of Indians appeared before Harrodsburgh, in Kentucky. On the 24th of April Boonsborough was attacked, and again on the 23d of May; and on the 30th of May, Logan's Fort. None of these attacks were successful, but several persons were killed, others wounded, and cattle and other property destroyed.

These stations or settlements on the border were all very much after the same pattern. A company of settlers selected farms adjacent to each other. At some convenient point they for the most part congregated their houses as in a village, and surrounded them with pickets, usually from 12 to 15 feet high; the log houses of the settlers frequently formed a part of the outer wall of the enclosure, with pickets extending from house to house, where gaps occurred. Through these pickets were gate openings, and the houses were pierced with holes to enable those within to fire upon a surrounding foe. For a space outside the forest was completely cleared away, so that an enemy could neither find a lurking place for an attack, or conceal his approach. During the day the settlers cultivated their lands around, and in times of peril, often with arms by their side. These defences, rude as they were, proved a great protection against Indians and their still ruder weapons.

The failure of these expeditions against the Kentucky settlements, gave little security to the border. Bands of marauding Indians were constantly engaged in their works of plunder and blood. On the 27th of July, Hamilton reports to Secretary Germaine that he had already sent out fifteen several parties of Indians, consisting of 289 braves, with 30 white officers and rangers, to prowl on the frontiers of Pennsylvania and Virginia. But the great effort of this year was the attack upon Fort Henry, at Wheeling, on the 1st of September, by a force of about 400 Indians, fully armed by Governor Hamilton. The effects of this siege—the gallant defence—the brave conduct of Elizabeth Zane in securing powder for the garrison, in the face of the Indian foe—the narrow escape of Major McCulloch—the severe loss— the opportune reinforcement—are all recorded in general history, and make this one of the most thrilling incidents of the border; but it does not belong to my purpose to describe such incidents in detail.

In February of 1778, the famous Kentucky partisan, Daniel Boone, was, with 27 men, taken prisoner while making salt at the Blue Licks. In March, Boone was brought to Detroit, where he received much attention from English gentlemen, and Governor Hamilton offered to ransom him of the Indians at £100, but they were greatly attached to him and refused the offer. They took him back to Chillicothe, and here, in June following, on learning of a proposed attack upon Boonesborough, he escaped, traveling 160 miles in four days, with but one meal. His wife, supposing him dead, had, with their children, gone back to North Carolina. Boonsborough was immediately prepared for defence, but the escape, the warning and the preparation, delayed the attack until September 7th, when the whole Indian force of over 400, with 11 Canadians, led by Captain Chene, of Detroit, appeared and surrounded the little post. After some delay, negotiation, and an attempt at treachery, an attack was commenced, which lasted about ten days, when the Indians, having lost thirty-seven of their number, retired. Only two of the garrison were killed.

In the early spring of this year (1778) the Moravian mission upon the Muskingum was thrown into great consternation by a letter bearing an official seal, purporting to be from Governor Hamilton, commanding them to put themselves at the head of their Indians and march against the "rebels," whom they were to attack on their farms and in their settlements, slaying them without mercy, and bringing their scalps to Detroit. They did not at the time suspect a forgery, but it was probably the work of some miscreant in the British service, plotting mischief, for it is difficult to believe that such a paper could have issued from a British officer. This letter was followed up by a visit from Elliott, McKee, and some deserters from Pittsburgh, who, by persuasions and falsehoods, sought to induce the Delawares to take up the hatchet; but the effect failed, through the wise intrepidity of the missionary Heckewelder.

In the meantime great preparations were being made by Congress for an expedition into the Indian country, and perhaps against Detroit itself, with a force of 3,000 men; but the men and munitions were both wanting. General McIntosh came to Pittsburgh in the spring with 500 troops. Soon after he built Fort McIntosh near the mouth of the Big Beaver, where in October he assembled 1,000 men, and marched to the Tuscarawas river, and erected Fort Laurens, and garrisoning it with 150 men, in command of Colonel Gibson, returned to Fort Pitt; thus leaving this garrison in the Indian country beyond the reach of succor—too weak for aggressive or even defensive warfare.

But the most notable event of this year in the west, and one of the most notable events of the war, was the conquest of Kaskaskia and the other British posts in Illinois and on the Wabash by George Rogers Clark. The circumstances attending this conquest are full of stirring and romantic interest, while the consequences flowing from it were most momentous. The events of the campaign are so fully narrated in every local and general history, that it would be inexcusable in me, to do more than state results, and that in the most general way.

Major Clark, an emigrant to Kentucky, although a man of limited culture, had the grasp of mind, and the energy of character, which fitted him for great events. Kentucky had suffered greatly from the Indians during the year 1777. Clark made up his mind that the best mode of defending Kentucky was to give employment to the enemy elsewhere. He sent spies to visit the posts upon the Wabash and in Illinois. In December, 1777, he laid open his plan of capturing these posts to Patrick Henry, the Governor of Virginia, who at once fell in with it, especially as Virginia laid claim to this western territory as far north as the 40th degree of north latitude. Clark was commissioned a Colonel in the service of Virginia, and was authorized at the expense of that State to raise a sufficient force, was furnished with £1,200 currency, and by secret instructions was directed to carry out the plan conceived by him.

On the 24th of June, 1778, he left the falls of the Ohio (Louisville) in barges, with his force of less than 200 men, and descended the Ohio to Old Fort Massac, within sixty miles of its mouth, and then marched north to Kaskaskia, which he captured by surprise on the night of July 4th, taking its commandant, Rocheblave, and its inhabitants prisoners. The other posts were taken before any opposition could be made. With great skill, and by a wise mingling of kindness and severity, he gained the good will of the French, and commanded the respect of the surrounding Indians. The then recent treaty between the Colonies and France aided greatly in his success with the French.

Governor Abbott, of Vincennes, was at that time absent in Detroit, and there were no troops stationed there. Father Gibault, of Kaskaskia, Vicar

General, etc., undertook to get the French at that point to side with the Americans, and immediately started upon his mission, which was entirely successful, and the American flag waved over the place. Waw-ca-ta-non was captured by a small force, and thus without the loss of a man, the conquest of Illinois and the Wabash settlements was complete; and, in October, Virginia organized this territory into the county of Illinois, and the next year Colonel John Todd was, at Clark's request, sent out as civil Governor.

The news of this disaster to British interests aroused Governor Hamilton to the most vigorous effort to retrieve it. It was obvious that this conquest had panic-stricken the Indians, and threatened the whole British power in the Northwest. In the spring of 1777, Colonel Morgan, at Pittsburgh, wrote to Governor Henry that there were only 66 soldiers at Detroit; but there were at this time about 500 troops there. There were four companies of the Eighth or King's regiment, commanded by Major Lernoult; two companies of Butler's Rangers, commanded by Captain Caldwell, and one of the Fourth regiment, commanded by Captain Aubey.* The British also had a small navy that commanded the lakes. There were usually several hundred Indians gathered about the fort at Detroit; but never more than twenty-five were permitted within the gates at one time, and these were unarmed. At the very time when Hamilton received the news of Clark's success, there was a large gathering of Indians there with whom he was holding negotiations. He gave them the hatchet anew, and urged them to more general and violent assaults upon the frontier, and to hold themselves in readiness to join him in proposed movements against the Americans. He sent, by some Delawares present, a menacing letter to the Council of the Delawares, calling upon them "for the last time" to take up the hatchet, and was greatly infuriated at their firm refusal, and at once ordered an expedition against them, consisting of Indians and a few soldiers, commanded by two captains, with orders to return with the scalps of both chiefs and missionaries, but the sudden death of the two officers frustrated the expectation. Hamilton immediately planned an expedition for the recovery of the Illinois, to be commanded by himself. It was composed of 30 regulars, 50 volunteers, and 400 or 500 Indians. The volunteers were subsequently paid for their services from the 17th of September, but the expedition did not leave Detroit until the 7th of October. It is evident that his first purpose was to proceed at once to Kaskaskia, where Clark's forces were stationed, for he urges Major De Peyster to send him assistance. De Peyster had also received special orders from General Haldimand, commanding at Quebec, to do all in his power to assist Hamilton in his enterprise.

In compliance with these orders, De Peyster, on the 26th of October, dispatched Captain De Langlade, and Lieutenant Gautius to arouse the Indians around Lake Michigan, assemble them at St. Joseph, and to join Hamilton with all the force they could raise, or to descend the Illinois, if that was better calculated to promote the success of Hamilton's operations. These officers are exhorted to use economy, "as the nations in general have already had many presents from his Majesty." and to exhort the warriors to "use humanity towards the prisoners," who "will be ransomed."

Hamilton was greatly delayed by storms and bad weather, and did not reach Vincennes until the 17th of December. This point, as we have seen, had yielded to the Americans without other force than the moral suasion of Father Gibault, and it was now held by Captain Helm and one American. As Helm saw this terrific force gathered about the fort, he placed a loaded cannon in the gateway and stood by it with a lighted match; and as the enemy approached, called out with a loud voice, "Halt!" Hamilton demanded a surrender. Helm replied, "No man shall enter here until I know the terms." The "honors of war" were granted, and Captain Helm with his garrison of one received the customary honors.

---

* Judge May's statements, C. I. W. It may be added, that the Captain Aubey alluded to, was probably Captain Thomas Aubrey of Sir Guy Carleton's, or the 47th British Regiment serving in America at this period. The army list of 1780 gives no other officer of that or any similar name then in the British service. L. C. Draper, Wisconsin.

Hamilton at once dismissed his Indian allies to prowl upon the frontiers or return to their homes, with the purpose in the early spring of re-assembling them, with a largely increased force both from the north and the south, and then, after re-establishing the British power in Illinois, of marching to Fort Pitt, sweeping Kentucky and Western Virginia on the way, and thus completing the conquest of the frontier. Nor did this plan seem visionary to the coolest judgment, and nothing but the genius and intrepidity of Clark frustrated it. On the 29th of January, 1779, he received the news of Hamilton's occupation of Vincennes, and the condition of his forces. His determination was at once taken. In speaking of Hamilton he says, "I knew if I did not take him, he would take me."

On the 7th of February, with a force of 176 men, partly composed of volunteers, he started for Vincennes. Forty-six of these went by water in a keel boat with some small guns, ammunition, stores, etc., and 130 marched with Clark across the country. On the 23d, Clark was before Vincennes, and on the 25th, Hamilton surrendered himself and his force as prisoners of war. This wonderful march of 240 miles through a flat country, over a soft soil, deluged by constant rains—the men wading for days through low, wet prairies, exhausted and benumbed by fatigue, fasting and cold; the intrepid bearing of the noble leader in his utterly desperate and exhausted condition; the gallant attack upon the fort; the unique correspondence between the comparatively illiterate back-woodsman and proud British officer, and the final capture of the post and the defending force, with all the stirring and romantic details, are known to every reader of history, and need not be recounted.

On the 9th of February previous, a company of about 40 men under the charge of Mr. Adhemar, a commissary, left Detroit with a large amount of supplies for Governor Hamilton. By the urgent request of Justice Dejean he was permitted to accompany the expedition, in order to obtain from Governor Hamilton his warrant or authority to justify his own conduct as magistrate, and especially as to the executions already noticed. On the 5th of March the entire expedition was captured while descending the Wabash with seven boats, and in all the letters to Governor Hamilton, Dejean is called by the captors, "Grand Judge of Detroit."

On the 7th of March, Clark dispatched Captain Williams and Lieutenant Rogers, with 25 privates, to conduct Governor Hamilton, "Grand Judge Dejean," Major Hay, Captain La Mothe and Lieutenant Scheifflein, and twenty others, as prisoners of war, to Virginia. The rest of the captured force, being principally Frenchmen, were discharged on taking the oath of neutrality.

Governor Hamilton, Dejean and La Mothe were for a while ironed and closely imprisoned in a dungeon at Williamsburg, were prohibited the use of pen, ink and paper, and from all intercourse, by order of the Council of Virginia, who, upon examining the evidence before them, found that Hamilton had been guilty of great cruelties to American prisoners at Detroit; that he had offered rewards for scalps, but none for prisoners, thus inciting the Indians to murder the defenceless, that Dejean was the willing instrument of his cruelty, and that La Mothe had himself led scalping parties, who spared neither men, women nor children. This imprisonment led to a notable correspondence between Washington and Jefferson, the Governor of Virginia and others as to whether, as prisoners of war, Hamilton and his companions were not entitled to different treatment. They were subsequently released and paroled.

Hamilton was afterwards, for one year, Governor of Canada, and was then appointed Governor of Dominica, and not long after died. While Governor of Canada he did not entirely forget his subordinates at Detroit. On the 9th of November, 1785, he issued an order that no one should disturb Matthew Elliott in the possession of a lot near the dock yard by the water side, without producing titles.

The conquest of Illinois and the subsequent capture of Hamilton constituted a turning point in the history of the Northwest. By these events, and by these alone was the northwestern boundary of the new American Union removed from the Ohio to the great lakes. Nowhere else did the Americans have a foothold in the territory comprising these great States, and except for George Rogers Clark and his victories, the Northwest would have been to-day a British Canadian Colony. Just this result was anticipated by Jefferson, who wrote to Clark expressing his interest in the proposed expedition, and predicting that, if successful, it would have an important bearing ultimately in establishing our northwestern boundary.

No sooner was Hamilton captured than Clark turned his eyes toward Detroit, but his force was quite inconsiderable, and he exclaims with mortification: "Detroit lost for want of a few men!" Previous to the reception of the news of Hamilton's capture, there was no little uneasiness in Detroit. McIntosh's expedition, so fruitless in good results, had created no little apprehension, and the letters written to Hamilton at Vincennes clearly indicate that the loyalty of the French and Indians to the British cause was distrusted, and the early return of Hamilton was strongly urged. Major Lernoult, who was in command during Hamilton's absence, commenced the erection of a strong fort, which was completed the following season, and which bore his name, until re-christened Fort Shelby in the war of 1812. The Major, in his correspondence with Hamilton, complains that, while the merchants freely aided in the work of defence, the French only did so on compulsion.

The news of the capture of Hamilton produced great consternation in Detroit among the adherents of the crown, and no little gratification to many of the French. The fort (Laurens) which had been established by General McIntosh the fall before, was besieged in January of this year, 1779, and its inmates were reduced to the greatest distress and almost to starvation. Many were killed. They were finally, after a siege of six weeks, relieved by General McIntosh, who with 700 men brought supplies. Colonel Gibson was succeeded in the command of the garrison by Major Vernon. In the summer of the same year there was another siege by a small Indian force, but by the interposition of the friendly Delawares, it was relieved, and soon after, in August, the fort was abandoned, its establishment having accomplished no good, while it had greatly irritated without overawing the Indians.

In July of this year, Colonel Bowman headed an expedition of 160 men from Kentucky, against the Shawnees at Chillicothe. After some fighting, in which nine men were killed and a few wounded, they retreated without accomplishing any decisive results. In October of this year, Major Rogers, who was in command of some keel boats and 100 men, while ascending the Ohio with supplies from New Orleans, was surprised and attacked near where Cincinnati now is, by a large Indian force. Major Rogers and 45 of his men were killed almost instantly, and only a few finally escaped. These events were well calculated to excite and encourage Indian hostilities, and unprotected families and settlements were continually suffering all the horrors of savage war. The conviction was strong, and growing stronger, that there could be no safety as long as Detroit was in possession of the British, who from that point directed and controlled the Indians and supplied them with munitions of war.

On the 12th of January of this year (1779), Washington, in a letter to a committee of Congress, discusses the importance of an expedition against Detroit. He suggests that security to the border is only to be obtained by offensive measures. On the 21st of April he writes to Colonel Brodhead, at Pittsburgh, to ascertain the best season for such an enterprise, and in November Brodhead suggests a winter expedition. Clark had again considered, during the summer, the possibility of raising a sufficient force to march upon Detroit, and had been promised 300 volunteers from Kentucky, but owing to the repulse of Bowman and other circumstances, only 30 appeared, and he was forced to abandon the enterprise.

The news of this proposed expedition reached Detroit, and to create a diversion in favor of the British, Lieutenant Bennett, of the Eighth regiment, was sent on an expedition against the Illinois settlements, by way of Chicago. On the 1st of July, Major De Peyster, at Mackinaw, issued instructions to Captain De Langlade to do his utmost to raise "the people of the Milwaukee Fork, the Indian tribe of Stinkards" (around Green Bay), "and others bordering on Lake Michigan," and with them hurry to join Mr. Bennett at Chicago, and to follow him by forced marches if he had left.

On the 30th of July, Bennett was at Chicago with 100 whites and 200 Indians, but nothing further is known of the expedition. When the failure of Clark's intended enterprise was ascertained, this was doubtless abandoned. An abortive effort was also made about this time to incite an Indian expedition against Vincennes, but it was found that the Indians in that vicinity has espoused the cause of the "Bostonians," as they called the Americans, and proposed to defend them, and nothing was done.

Major De Peyster had long sought to be transferred from Mackinaw to some other command. General Haldimand, expressing a high appreciation of his services there, transferred him to Detroit, where he was in command as early as October, 1779. He was succeeded at Mackinaw by Major St. Clair, who remained in command until the close of the war. In 1781 the British held a treaty with the Indians by which the Island of Mackinaw and Prairie du Chien were ceded by the Indians, and both points were soon after occupied by the British as military posts.

The conquest of Illinois, the utter defeat of all the magnificent plans of Hamilton, of whom the Indians had the highest opinion, and his capture had greatly lessened the prestige of the British name among the Indians, and increased that of the Americans. Savages, quite as much as civilized men, respect and believe in success, and the British officers at Detroit felt the necessity of striking some great blow to restore and retain the confidence of the Indians. Disaffection was too rapidly spreading among the French, who never loved the British, and who, since the treaty between France and the United

States, began to express in various ways their sympathy with the Colonies. Under the direction of General Haldimand, in command at Quebec, who was to furnish funds therefor, ample arrangements were to be made for the most imposing, extensive and destructive Indian expedition against the border that had ever been organized; to be accompanied and aided by Canadian volunteers, and led by British officers of the regular army. To give *eclat* to the expedition and make it irresistible, cannon were to accompany it.

Preparations of the most extensive character were commenced in the winter of 1779 and '80, and were kept up without intermission until the expedition was upon the war path the following spring. A large corps of agents and interpreters was at work among the Indians, arousing their cupidity, exciting their passions, embittering their zeal, and enlisting their energies. They were largely and freely furnished with those articles which increased their comfort, attracted their fancy, or added to their murderous efficiency.

One single mercantile firm in Detroit, "Macomb, Edgar & Macomb," charged to the Indian Department from December 29, 1779, to May 16, 1780, for goods furnished thereto, 42,989£ 8s 8½d sterling, or about $215,000; and 12,185£ 15s 6d for provisions, which account was paid by Major De Peyster by draft on General Haldimand.

The first charge on this account is for

| | £ | *s.* | *d.* |
|---|---|---|---|
| 3,972 blankets | 2,625 | 5 | 4 |

The second:

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| 750 pounds vermillion | 750 | 0 | 0 |

Other items of the account may not be without interest:

MUNITIONS OF WAR.

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| 4,574 | blankets | 9,381 | 6 | 0 |
| 14,975 | pounds ball, lead and shot | 1,123 | 2 | 6 |
| 11,925 | flints | .... | .. | .. |
| 8,000 | pounds powder | 2,000 | 0 | 0 |
| 476 | dozen scalping knives | 428 | 8 | 0 |
| 204 | dozen red-haft knives | 183 | 12 | 0 |
| 41½ | dozen other knives | 37 | 7 | 0 |
| 188 | tomahawks | 119 | 0 | 0 |
| 3,363 | pounds of brass and copper kettles | 1,198 | 13 | 4 |
| 6,894½ | pounds tobacco, 10s | 2,502 | 9 | 0 |

ORNAMENTAL SUPPLIES.

| | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| 1,206 | pounds vermilion | 1,206 | 0 | 0 |
| 21,063 | yards tinsel lace | 456 | 16 | 0 |
| 301 | dozen looking glasses | 424 | 10 | 0 |
| 120 | gross Morris bells | 120 | 0 | 0 |
| 8,811 | silver buckles | 3,343 | 3 | 3 |
| 8,200 | ear bobs | 1,640 | 0 | 0 |
| 36 | stone necklaces | 6 | 6 | 0 |
| 280 | pounds beads | 49 | 0 | 0 |
| 522 | gross brass rings | 77 | 11 | 4 |
| 142 | wristbands, 7s | 49 | 14 | 0 |
| 135 | arm bands, 30s | 212 | 10 | 0 |

| | £ | s. | d. |
|---|---|---|---|
| 147 gorgets, 25s | 183 | 15 | 0 |
| 229 ear wheels, 12s | 137 | 8 | 0 |
| 36 watch chains for the ears, 60s. per doz | 9 | 0 | 0 |
| 59 hair pipes, 10s | 29 | 10 | 0 |
| 15 hair plates, 29s | 18 | 15 | 0 |
| 51 large double crosses, 16s | 40 | 16 | 0 |
| 13 Christs, (silver crosses?) 14s | 9 | 2 | 0 |
| 151 pieces flowered broad ribon, 30s | 226 | 0 | 0 |
| 129 laced hats, 20s | 129 | 0 | 0 |
| 6 yards scarlet cloth, 40s | 12 | 0 | 0 |

Besides these items furnished at Detroit, goods were distributed to the Indians in their own country by emissaries, who used every artifice to arouse them to take up the hatchet:

| | £ | s. | d. |
|---|---|---|---|
| Thus, Charles Beaubien furnished goods to Indians at Miami Town | 1,603 | 8 | 0 |
| Matthew Elliott, in Indian country | 47 | 6 | 0 |
| Captain Mc Kee, " " " | 835 | 5 | 6 |
| George Girty " " " | 75 | 17 | 0 |

The latter was also furnished with a gun, three horses, a saddle and bridle, for the Indian country, doubtless to aid him in subsidizing the Indians to British interests. At Detroit there were usually at this time several hundred Indians gathered around the fort; and these were doubtless largely fed at the public expense, and occasionally some were received within the pickets, and there entertained. Thus bills like these are found:

| | £ | s. | d. |
|---|---|---|---|
| Fontenoy Dequindre—lodging, etc., Indians | 11 | 0 | 0 |
| Charles Guion, " " " | 13 | 0 | 0 |
| Pierre Drouillard, " " " | 95 | 2 | 6 |
| Andrews & Meldrum " " Wabash Indians | 11 | 0 | 0 |

On one occasion two Indian chiefs, a Shawnee and a Miami, are furnished with horses. It cannot be wondered at, that such efforts and such largesses as these, skillfully addressed to the strongest passions of the savage character, enlisted them so generally in the British interests. If the inhabitants of the border had any inkling of the prodigious efforts which were thus making to hurl upon them a force at once so murderous and so overwhelming, they must have looked forward with dread and foreboding to the coming season.

But in the meantime, mirth and gayety reigned and held high festival at Detroit. Without were the congregated Indians sporting their ornaments and gay attire, indulging in savage games and dances, making day and night hideous with coarse and noisy hilarity. The population of the town had very largely increased since the commencement of the war. Besides those connected with the military and naval service, there were a large number of government employés, and the large expenditure of public money had drawn together many enterprising traders. Some of these were men of mark: John Askin, the grandfather of Mr. Brush, James Abbott, the brothers Alexander and Wm. Macomb, Wm. Edgar, a partner of these men, the firm of Andrews & Meldrum and Thos. Williams were among the number. Dr. George Christian Anthon, a man of considerable eminence, was then a surgeon in the army here. He twice married here, first a Navarre and then a Jadot. Some of his children were born here, and two of them obtained eminence in New York, Rev. Dr. Henry Anthon, a learned divine, and John Anthon, a lawyer.

There was no Protestant minister. Justices of the Peace performed marriage ceremonies and attended funerals, and sometimes baptized the children. The only Catholic priest was Father Semple, a kind-hearted and excellent man, but too old to preach.

The most of the population were, of course, French. Many of these were intelligent, cultivated and agreeable, and mingled upon terms of perfect social equality with the officers of the army and navy here congregated and their families. Altogether, officers, traders and French families, they were too few to be divided into classes, and they formed but one social circle, shut out for a long winter from all intercourse with the rest of the world, dependent upon themselves, secure from the actual presence of the war which prevailed elsewhere, gave themselves up to social pleasures with a joyous zeal. Dancing assemblies were held usually every week, or in the language of Captain Grant, in a letter of an earlier date, "we hop and bob every Monday night at the Council House." The ladies dressed richly and always in silks. Silk petticoats, costing from 3£ 12s to 5£ are frequently charged to officers and citizens in merchants' accounts. I find two pairs of silk slippers charged to Major De Peyster at 26s 8d each. The gentlemen wore silk hose and the short breeches of the time. Silk hose are charged at 33s to 36s per pair.

In other respects these dancing assemblies were most expensive. The caterer, and perhaps the landlord on these occasions was Wm. Forsyth, and the amount of liquors charged to him is quite startling. His dancing bills for this winter, 1780, were 566£ 6s 2d. The following are some of the dancing bills of individuals:

| | £ | *s.* | *d.* |
|---|---|---|---|
| Duperon Baby | 20 | 12 | 7 |
| Jacques Campau | 20 | 12 | 7 |
| Antoine Adhemar | 17 | 19 | 11 |
| Gregor McGregor | 17 | 19 | 11 |

The following paid 14£ 19s 11d each: Major De Peyster, Captains Grant and Burnett, Lieutenants MacDougal and Banbury, Ensigns Fray and Thomas Finchley, Thomas Williams, Isadore Chene, and George Lyons, while others paid as low as 11£ 11s 3d.

Dinner parties were also frequent, at which choice wines were freely drank. Prices are indicated by the following charges:

| | £ | *s.* | *d.* |
|---|---|---|---|
| Pork, per bbl | 10 | 0 | 0 |
| Flour, per bbl. of 166 lbs | 8 | 6 | 0 |
| Indian corn, per bu | 0 | 32 | 0 |
| Rum, per gal | 0 | 30 | 0 |
| Vinegar, per gal | 0 | 16 | 0 |
| Green tea, per lb | 0 | 20 | 0 |
| Coffee, per lb | 0 | 5 | 0 |
| Chocolate, per lb | 0 | 7 | 0 |
| Castile soap, per lb | 0 | 5 | 0 |
| Cinnamon, per lb | 0 | 40 | 0 |
| Nutmegs, per lb | 0 | 40 | 0 |

| | £ | s. | d. |
|---|---|---|---|
| Cloves, per oz | 0 | 4 | 0 |
| Salt, per keg | 4 | 0 | 0 |
| Candles, per lb | 0 | 3 | 6 |
| Snuff, per lb | 0 | 12 | 0 |

In one instance a slave is charged at £100.

A somewhat unique currency or measure of values prevailed among those who traded with the Indians, viz.: "bucks" and "does" meaning buckskins and doeskins, instead of pounds and dollars. Thus Colonel Gibson, commanding at Forrt Laurens, acknowledges himself indebted to "Captain Johnny" for pork furnished the garrison, "seven bucks and one doe."

I find a contemporaneous charge to George Girty, as follows:

| | *Bucks.* |
|---|---|
| To salt, at Shawny towns | 4 |
| To 116 lbs. flour | 14 |
| To one bag with do | 2 |
| Tobacco | 3 |
| | 23 |

A "buck" was equivalent to about $1.

The expedition for which such ample preparations were made, was organized in the spring of 1780. An attempt was made to get up a volunteer force to accompany the Indians. For this purpose a popular and influential Frenchman, Louis Chabert de Joncaire, was commissioned as captain, and an Englishman, afterwards a leading and influential merchant, Jonathan Scheifflein, as lieutenant. These with two sergeants and a corporal, all Frenchmen, undertook to organize a company. Twenty-five men, of whom 21 bore French names, did volunteer, but no more. Then follows in the record a list of 32 names, under the significant heading "ordered to go." Of these, all but four are French names. And under the same heading, follow the names of 23, all French but one, who were "ordered to go" with Captain Chene. This irregular force thus consisted of 80 privates and six officers.

The Indians who joined the expedition are variously estimated from 500 to 1,000. Whether any regular soldiers accompanied it, I have not been able to ascertain; but it is probable that there were at least sufficient to man the six small cannon that were to make the attacks against the stockades of the frontiers irresistible. The expedition was under the command of Captain Bird, of the Eighth or King's regiment. When it left Detroit, I do not know, but the militia force was completely organized by the 24th of March, from which day they were paid—privates receiving four shillings per day. It doubtless passed up the Maumee, or Miami of the lakes, and crossed to the head waters of the Great Miami, which it descended in canoes. I find twenty-two pirogues or canoes charged to the Indian Department at this time, two of which were delivered to Captain Bird while on the way.

The expedition aimed its first and only blow at two small stations on the Licking river. It must have moved very slowly. It appeared before Ruddell's Station (Harrison county), on a branch of the Licking river, a small settlement of the previous year, on the 23d of June. It had been twelve days marching from the Ohio, some forty or fifty miles distant. The inhabitants were taken by surprise; resistance was hopeless, and they surrendered. One man and two women were killed; the rest became Indian rather than British prisoners. The settlement was plundered, families were separated, and the inhabitants laden like pack-horses with their own effects; and those who sank under their burdens were mercilessly tomahawked.

A similar scene took place at Martin's Station, a few miles above. These successes, small as they were, sharpened the Indian appetite for murder and pillage, and they urged Captain Bird to attack the older and more important settlements; but he refused, and precipitately retired with his whole force. Thus ingloriously ended the expedition from which so much had been anticipated. Two small stations had been captured and some prisoners taken. It is believed that Captain Bird found himself unable to control the treacherous cruelty of the Indians, and that his course was dictated by the noblest feelings of humanity. Most of the captives were brought to Detroit, where the expedition arrived early in August, probably on the 4th, as the militia were paid to that time.

This expedition aroused the Kentuckians to retaliation, and on the first of August, nearly 1,000 men under General Clark, gathered at the site of Cincinnati, and marched into the Indian country on Mad river, where, after a battle with the Indians, they burned their villages and destroyed their crops, thus greatly crippling their resources and power of mischief. The loss of the invaders was seventeen men. These were the principal events of this year, 1780, but it is interesting to note the constant reference to the great importance of capturing Detroit.

On the 10th of February, Governor Jefferson writes to Washington, suggesting an expedition against Detroit, to be commanded by Clark, rather than Brodhead. On the 11th of February, Brodhead writes to Washington, informing him of the new fort at Detroit and its situation, great strength, and that its garrison is 450 regulars. On the 24th of April, the same officer writes that the expedition against Detroit must be given up, unless Clark's troops can be united with his. On the 30th of May he writes that the contradictory statements as to the garrison at Detroit had determined him to send Captain Brady with five whites and two Delaware Indians to Sandusky, to take a British prisoner, and that he had promised to other Delaware warriors fifty hard dollars worth of goods for one British soldier. He hopes for success, and if an intelligent prisoner is obtained, he proposes to grant him some indulgence for intelligence. On the 25th of August, he writes that the British treat the French at Detroit with great severity, and the latter are ready to welcome American troops.

On the 25th of September, Governor Jefferson writes that the exposed state of the Virginia frontier makes it necessary to keep from 500 to 800 men on duty, to defend them against northern Indians, acting under the influence of the British post at Detroit. He suggests an expedition against Detroit under Clark, at the general expense, estimating its cost at $2,000,000. On the 15th of December, he writes that they have reason to expect that the ensuing spring a force of 2,000 British and Indians will descend upon the border, and that Virginia has determined to undertake the destruction of Detroit, and asks the loan of arms and munitions of war for the expedition. On the 19th of December, Washington writes to Colonel Brodhead, at Pittsburgh, to furnish the required arms and munitions, and to aid the expedition of Colonel Clark to the extent of his power. He states that the inability of the continent to undertake the reduction of Detroit "has imposed the task upon the State of Virginia."

The invasion of Virginia in 1781, by the British under Cornwallis, prevented that State from furnishing the proposed aid to this expedition; still Clark made a great effort to secure the necessary force. He visited Fort Pitt in May of this year, and not getting all the aid in men that he had expected, he writes to Washington on the 26th of that month, soliciting orders for such aid. He says, "the Indian war is now more general than ever, and any attempt to appease them except by the sword will be fruitless." He predicts fatal consequences to the whole frontier should the expedition fail. But, like many another well planned expedition for the cause of the Colonies, it did fail for want of means and men.

Clark attempted to rendezvous a force at the mouth of the Licking, which, when organized, was to ascend the Miami, but instead of gathering 2,000 men, as he hoped, only 750 came, "and the buffalo meat was all rotten." A force of over 100 men, coming to his aid from Western Pennsylvania, was waylaid and nearly exterminated. To the great chagrin of Clark, the expedition was abandoned.

General Irvine, then in command at Pittsburgh, writes to General Washington on the 2d day of December, 1781, announcing the failure of the expedition, and predicts the most disastrous results. The Indians and perhaps the British from Detroit, will fall on the country with double fury. Fort Pitt is indefensible, and the inhabitants on the frontier talk of flying east of the mountain. He says, Clark "is apprehensive of a visit from Detroit," in Kentucky; and that the Indians are so numerous there, "that all the inhabitants have been obliged to keep close in forts." He believes "if Detroit was demolished," it would give "at least temporary ease to this country."

On the 7th of February, 1782, he writes, that it would take 2,000 men and three months' time to reduce Detroit, and that August is the best time for the expedition. He estimates the garrison to consist of 300 regulars, from 700 to 1,000 militia (Canadians) and that 1,000 Indians could be assembled in ten days' time.

This was the last of all the projects for the taking of Detroit. The long deferred hope of the capture of this nest, where were hatched all the projects for carrying devastation and murder to our borders, and from whence these projects received their support, made the settlers of the border sick at heart, and led to cold-blooded, cowardly acts of murderous revenge, which have left a dark and indelible stain upon our annals, that we may not read without indignant and burning shame. I allude to the Moravian massacre.

### THE MORAVIAN INDIANS

I have already adverted to the fact that, for the most part, the Delawares, through the influence of the Moravian missionaries on the Muskingum and its branches, remained neutral. These missions were established by the famous David Zeisberger in 1772, and afterwards there were associated with him the scarcely less famous Heckewelder and other co-laborers.

They had met with remarkable success among the Delawares—a most intelligent tribe—and had gathered around them some four or five hundred converts, including some powerful chiefs, and were rapidly introducing amongst them the custims and habits of civilized life, and especially were they becoming successful cultivators of the soil. On the breaking out of the Revolution, their settled policy was one of peace and neutrality. This policy, as well as their location, exposed them to the suspicions of both of the contending parties.

They were on the shortest and best route for the northern Indians to the Virginia border, and from necessity, as well as by the force of Indian customs, they treated these Indians with hospitality. On the other hand, they persuaded many an Indian band to abandon some murderous design, and warned the frontier settlers of many another. The fierce passions of the hour made no allowance for this apparently contradictory conduct, and they were looked upon with undisguised jealousy from both sides. That infamous trio of British emissaries, McKee, Elliott and Simon Girty, were especially inimical to the missionaries. More than once had the last named of them planned the murder of Zeisberger, but his plans seemed frustrated by a divine interposition. In April, 1781, Colonel Brodhead, in command at Pittsburgh, organized an expedition of about 300 men and marched to the Tus-ca-ra-was, and attacked some pagan Delawares, who had espoused the British cause, and succeeded in killing 15 and taking 20 prisoners. He treated the missionaries and their converts with kindness. This excited the suspicion and the ire of those in British interests, and it was determined that the mission should be destroyed. Early in August a large company of Indians, led by Elliott, and accompanied by six other white men, appeared at one of the missions, bearing the British flag. After many days of attempted negotiation, and of menace, it was determined to remove the missionaries to Detroit. They were seized by force, and on the 11th of September, they with their families, and the whole body of Christian Indians, left their plundered homes, and on the 1st of October reached Sandusky river. The story of these meek, brave, noble men; their cruel treatment by Girty; their compulsory march on foot to Detroit through the horrors of the Black Swamp, leaving their families and converts; their arrival, and manly bearing at Detroit, tattered, weary, hungry and friendless as they were; their reception and courteous treatment by the commandant, Major De Peyster; the permission to return to Sandusky; their sufferings there from cold and famine, in the midst of unfriendly Indians inspired by Girty, form one of the most thrilling narratives of our Revolutionary history.

In the course of the winter, so intense was the famine, that about 150 of the Christian Indians were permitted to return to the Tus-ca-ra-was to gather the corn left there the fall before, and they were there the March following.

In February of this year, 1782, a party of Indians from the region of Sandusky penetrated the settlements of Western Pennsylvania, and committed their customary depredations. The family of one Wallace fell beneath their murderous stroke, under circumstances well calculated to arouse the most intense feeling, and a deep thirst for revenge. Suspicion, though without cause, rested upon the Moravian Indians. An expedition was at once organized of about 90 men, mainly from the settlements of the Monongahela, of which Colonel Williamson was commander.

They marched to the Moravian towns early in March, where they found a portion of the Christian Indians who had been sent back from Sandusky, dwelling in peace and unsuspecting security. They received Williamson's party as friends, treated them with hospitality, and cheerfully delivered to them their arms. They were then driven together, bound and thrust into some huts. It was then voted that the whole body, men, women and children, should be put to death. The details of the cold-blooded butchery which followed, are too horrid for repetition. Twenty-nine men, twenty-seven women and thirty children, twelve of whom were babes, were thus shamefully murdered. The victims died like Christian martyrs, praising God.

This atrocious slaughter fills us with such horror and indignation, that it is difficult for us to conceive the state of mind which led to it. But we should remember, that for years, the border had suffered all the terrible murderous atrocities of an Indian war; that the settlers did not, and could not, fully distinguish between the perpetrators of these deeds of blood, and those innocent of them; that with them an Indian was but an Indian, and that the passion for revenge had been roused to deepest fury.

This expedition gave birth to another and a much more formidable one, organized with a like intent—to spare no Indian, friend or foe. Four hundred and eighty men, well mounted and armed, rendezvoused at the Mingo Bottom of the Ohio, above Wheeling, on the 25th of May, 1782, and Colonel Crawford was elected commander. They reached Sandusky river, June 6th. On the 7th the Indians gave them battle without decisive results, but the savages were evidently gathering a large force, and on the 9th a retreat was ordered. Colonel Crawford, and several others, got separated from the main force, and were taken prisoners. Several of them were tomahawked, but to Crawford, in retaliation for the Moravian massacre, was reserved the doom of death at the stake, aggravated for three hours by the more than devilish ingenuity of his savage tormentors, and the derisive taunts of Simon Girty. Thus ended this disastrous campaign, commenced in cruelty and crime.

While these terrible events had been transpiring by the intrigues of Simon Girty, the Moravians had again been ordered to Detroit, which they reached April 15th. They were treated with great kindness by Major De Peyster, who informed them, however, that owing to the complaint of the Half-King, the Wyandott chief, they could not remain at Sandusky. They then concluded to establish their mission on what was then the Huron river of the north (now the Clinton), near Mount Clemens, where they remained for some years.

On this occasion Zeisberger preached the gospel at Detroit. The only Roman Catholic priest, Father Semple, was an old man, who at that time never preached. The protestants had no minister nor service of any kind. Justices of the peace attended their weddings and funerals, and sometimes baptized their children.

A somewhat notable character, the famous Mohawk Indian chief, Captain Brant, was probably in Detroit in the spring of this year, as eight gallons of "best port" are there charged to him, at 32s per gallon.

The capture of Cornwallis at Yorktown, in October, 1781, was virtually a triumph of the American Revolution, and although the final treaty of peace was not signed until 1783, the war had practically ceased except upon the frontier. In the beginning of August, 1782, Sir Guy Carleton wrote to General Washington that negotiations for peace had commenced at Paris, and that the independence of the United States would be conceded as a preliminary step. But in the same month a most formidable force of Northern Indians, led by Simon Girty and McKee, invaded Kentucky. On the 16th of August they appeared at Bryan's Station, invested it for two days, when they retired, after the loss of thirty warriors.

The Kentuckians, aroused by this invasion, gathered in small force; and then followed, on the 19th, the short and disastrous battle of the Blue Licks, in which, out of about 180 men, 60 were killed and seven taken prisoners; among the killed was Colonel Todd, the civil Governor of the Illinois country.

To avenge this disaster, Clark assembled about 1,000 mounted riflemen, and invaded the Indian towns of Ohio; but the alarm had been given, and he found them empty of inhabitants. The villages were fired, and the cornfields laid waste. Seven prisoners were taken and ten of the enemy killed, and two white captives re-taken.

The last event of this border war was the investment of Fort Henry, at Wheeling, by a force of 350 Indians under George Girty, and a company of Queen's rangers, commanded by Captain Pratt. An attempt was made to storm the fort, but by the aid of a small cannon, it was repulsed. On the second day of the seige, Captain Williamson with 70 mounted men, came to the relief of the little garrison, and the Indians quickly disappeared. A portion of them appeared before Rice's Fort, some fourteen miles distant, but they were repulsed by its garrison of six men, with a loss of four warriors.

This is the last effort of Indian hostility which we have to notice.

Peace was not formally proclaimed until April, 1783, but a state of quietude had existed for months before. By the terms of the treaty, the Northwest, although never completely conquered by American arms, became a part of the American Union. Detroit and its dependencies continued to be occupied by the British until July, 1796, when for the first time this *whole* Northwest came under the dominion of the American flag.

Of its progress, of its great wealth and unprecedented growth, both in population and all the elements of a Christian civilization, I have spoken. It has no grim, war-worn battlements, telling us, in their mute and expressive language, of an iron age—an iron race—long since passed away. It has no ruined temples and columns—no broken statues—no exhumed cities left as monuments of a civilization which no longer exists. Its greatness is in the future, yet clear to those who look through the vista of coming years with an intelligent and steady gaze.

But even here we have a *past*, and one of no small interest—a past that reaches back beyond the clearly defined regions of fact, into the dim and shadowy regions of romance. We have the history of the gay and happy Frenchman leaving his storied, native land—its vine-clad hills and sunny valleys, and with a passive heroism, that defies every danger, and endures every trial, here cheerfully—nay, joyously—struggling with nature in her obscurest, wildest depths, and meeting upon his own ground, and around his own campfires, the still wilder savage; *here* planting the footsteps of an advancing civilization, and in the midst of every peril and every privation, creating an Arcadia of simple happiness amid the green prairies and the sombre forests that lined the banks of our noble lakes and beautiful rivers.

The author, who with a genial spirit and an artist's eye, looking through the dim transparency of the past, shall reproduce to us a true and lively picture of the first century of the French occupation of the Northwest, will deserve and receive the warmest gratitude.

*Then* comes in our history the stirring events connected with the conquest of Canada by Great Britain—the surrender of the Northwest to the conquering power—the conspiracy of Pontiac—the siege of Detroit—the capture or abandonment of other posts so graphically described by Parkman; and finally the American Revolution, some of the incidents of which I have sought to trace.

Nor is our later history without its absorbing interest. During the war of 1812, the Northwest was the scene of stirring and tragic events; and when armed rebellion raised its bloody hands against the Union, the Northwest poured forth its hardy sons in one generous, mighty and continuous stream, and where there was danger to be met, suffering to be endured, or glory to be won, they were among the foremost. Stalwart blows they dealt, and their blood has enriched, and their bones whitened, every battle-field.

Nor in the glorious victories of peace does it stand second to any portion of our common country. It becomes us in the spirit of filial devotion, to *know* and to *record* this history—to gather up even the minute threads thereof, and to weave them with a bright and natural coloring into one beautiful, harmonious whole.

### LIST OF OFFICERS, INSPECTORS, SMITHS, ETC., IN THE INDIAN DEPARTMENT AT DETROIT, OCTOBER 24TH, 1779:

**(From Mss. Michigan Historical Society. These names are as in the original, but no doubt many of them are incorrectly spelled.)**

Duperon Baby,
Alexander McKee,
Isadore Chesne,
Charles Braubin.
(Each under pay at ten shilling sterling per day.)
Matthew Elliott,
Simon Girthy,
James Girthy,
Piere Drouillard,
William Tucker,
Robert Surphlit,
Fontenoy Dequender,
(Each sixteen shillings, York currency, per day.)
Nicholas Loraine.
(Ten shillings, York Currency.)
Jeancaire Chabert.
(Eight shillings, York currency, and ten shillings sterling from 24th March.)
Claud Lubute,
Henry Baby,
Francis Diel,
Duplessis,
La Seuexe,
Gregor McGregor,
Sampson Fleming,
Charles Gouin,
Thomas McCarty,
24th June—
Francis L'Coellie,
D. Duquinder.
(Each eight shillings, York, per day.)
John Mackay.
(Four shillings, York.)

### LIST OF VOLUNTEERS, ETC., ON THE EXPEDITION OF CAPTAIN BIRD, WITH THEIR PAY FROM 24TH MARCH TO 24TH MAY, 1780:

Captain Chabert, sixty-one days, at ten shillings, sterling, per day; Lieutenant Jonathan Scheiffelin, eight shillings, York currency; Anton Charon and Francis Babant, Sergeants, each six shillings, York; Joseph Carrie, Corporal, five shillings, York; and the following privates, each four shillings, York currency:

Louis Somlers,
F's Trudelle,
Antoine Truttie,
Claude Richard,
Bazil Moran,
Jean Mary Plante,
Jean Marie Marion,
Pierre Tessier,
Pierre Loson,
Andrew Bertiaume,
Joseph Lapont,
Guillaume Mallet,
J. B. Baazau,
John Jones,
Edward Shehe,
John Flurry,

Francois Tessier,
Antoine Martell,
Joseph Longuiel,
Joseph Laliberte,
William Greg.
John Stockwell,
Joseph Reagh,
John Murray,
James Tussy,

### "ORDERED TO GO"—EACH FOUR SHILLINGS, YORK, PER DAY:

Jean Marie Le Cerp,
Jacques Chartier,
Amable Jitter,
Joseph Bergeron,
Paul Lasaline,
Bonavanture Lariviere,
Pierre Demerk,
Jacques Prudhomme,
Pierre Labutte,
J. B. Labady,
Louis Desaunier,
J. B. Lajeunesse,
Pierre St. Louis,
J. B. Ledaux,
Charleboy,
J. B. Peltier,
Francois Bylair,
Etienne Tramblay,
Caleb Reynolds,
J. B. Tavuan,
Jacques Loson,
Joseph Cote,
Charles Campau,
Amable St. Etienne,
Benja. Chapu,
Pierre Misee,
Louis Moine,
Simon Bergeron,
Joseph Drouilliart,
Alex'r Johnson,
Julien Labutte,
J. B. Tramblay.

The amount paid to the above was £823 18s 8d.

### THE FOLLOWING PERSONS WERE "ORDERED TO GO" WITH CAPTAIN CHENE:

Joseph Blay, Joseph Degagne, Charles Leblanc, Pierre Robert, and James McPhee, eight shillings each, York currency; and the following each four shillings, York:

Pierre Miney,
Charles Roseau,
Simon Yax,
Michel Tramblay,
Chrisostome St. Louis,
Ignace Billette,
J. B. Mouinerel,
Joseph Grimard,
Andre Viger,
Andre Maw,
Etienne Lebeau,
Jean B. Lajeunesse,
Francois Prudhomme,
J. P. Yax,
J. B. Labady, Jr.,
Jacques Chauvin,
Pierre Clenchette, Cl'k,
J. B. Ledue.

The total pay of the above, added to Captain Chabert's company, amounted to 1,165£ 10s 8½d.

### PAY-ROLL OF VOLUNTEERS WITH CAPTAIN BIRD, FROM MAY 25TH TO AUGUST 4TH, 1780—72 DAYS.

Louis Jeancaire Chabert, Captain, ten shillings, sterling, per day; Jonathan Shiffling, Lieutenant, eight shillings; Baubautt Chanon, Wm. Gregg and James McAphie, Sergeants, six shillings; Joseph Carrier, Joseph Trouillier and Joseph Rough, Corporals, five shillings; and the following privates at four shillings each:

Francis Trudell,
Guilliame Mellet,
Babt. Brazau,
Claud Richard,
Bazil Moran,
Jean Marie Plant,
Antoine Trottier,
John Fleury,
Pierre Lazon,
Andre Berthiaume,
Joseph Laforest,
Joseph Longite,
Edward Shehe,
John Stockwell,
John Johnes,
John Murry,
James Tressey,
Jean Marie Marion,
Pierre Tizier,
Francis Tizier,
Antoine Martelle.
Joseph Laliberty,
J. B. Labadee,
J. M. L'Lerf,
Joseph Bergeron,
Bonaventure Larivier,
Jacque Prudhomme,
Pierre Laluette,
Louis Dezonier,
Etienne Tromble,
J. B. Faverau,
Jacque Lozen,
Benjamin Chapue,
Pierre Mizie,
Louis Morran,
Bapt. Laduke,
Touissant Charleboy,
Bapt. Piltier,
Julian Labute,
Jean B. Tramble June,
Alex. Johnson,

Daniel Whaler, from the 25th May to 20th June, 27 days; Joseph Guilbeaux, from 25th May to 1st July, 38 days; Henry Aunger, from 25th May to 18th June, 25 days; John Rix, from 25th May to 23d June, 30 days; Roger Welsh, do., 30 days; Caleb Reynolds and Pierre Chinchett, volunteers, each 72 days, four shillings per day; Captain Morran, one lieutenant, one sergeant, and forty men, for 21 days on survey, with provisions for Captain Bird's party. Captain Morran's pay-roll amounting to 199£ 10s, and the total of this pay-roll, including Morran's, 1,079£ 12s 3¼d.

# A SKETCH OF THE MEMBERS OF THE CONSTITUTIONAL CONVENTIONS OF 1835 AND 1850.

BY JUDGE HEZEKIAH G. WELLS, OF KALAMAZOO.

Read February 5th, 1879.

Mr. President, Ladies and Gentlemen:—In the month of May, A. D. 1835, a body of men, in number eighty-four, met in the old capitol building at Detroit, for the purpose of preparing a Constitution for a proposd new State. The power delegated to these men came from the people of the then Territory of Michigan, who had held their election pursuant to law in the preceding month of April. Within and without this State, all of these men have gone to their graves, except eight; and of this number, two only are present here to-night, your honored President, and he who now addresses you. We were of the youngest members of the convention, elected, possibly, for the mere purpose of contrast, for in the assemblage were men with whitened locks and large experience in life; men of almost every avocation were there; the largest proportion of the farming class; mechanics, millers, and editors; also clergymen without any of the sensational about them, lovers of the truth as drawn from the plain precepts of the Bible; some of the medical profession, all of the old school, big dose men, for seemingly the infinitesimal doses were not then in vogue. In our assemblage we had another class of men, whom I had almost forgotten, patient, quiet workers for other people's interests, modest men; I mean of course the lawyers. Such was the composition of the convention, the largest proportion of them eminently practical men; they were trying to work out the problem in a new country as pioneers, how to live; and this by observing the axiom, "earn your money before you spend it;" earn it by industry, earn it honestly.

The President of the convention possessed a quick, active mind, had been a delegate in Congress, of good stock, had several brothers, all distinguished, one located in the early history of Territorial Michigan at Mackinaw, known widely to the Indians from Detroit river to the Mississippi, a fair man and successful trader; another went to his death by a musket ball in a fight at St. Louis under the "code of honor" as termed at the South; and the third, able as a financier; Nicholas Biddle as president of the United States Bank was known in all the cities and commercial centres of Europe and America. When John Biddle, in the convention as its presiding officer, laid down a principle of parliamentary law and practice, it staid laid down, for he was generally right, and always firm and positive.

There was another man in that convention, whose peer in one respect I never met in Michigan. Ross Wilkins, for sparkling intellectual brilliancy, stood alone. Whoever heard one of Judge Wilkins' charges to the Grand Jury in the District Court of the United States at Detroit, although he might have forgotten last Sunday's sermon, every word of it, would never forget the manner of the judge, on the matter of the charge.

Wayne county had on its list of delegates, General John R. Williams, possessed of remarkable social qualities, a gentleman who always enlisted your esteem in behalf of himself, and when you parted with him you thought better of yourself, because he seemingly recognized your good qualities.

William Woodbridge, also of Wayne county,—few persons in Michigan but that knew of the kind qualities and great ability of this learned lawyer. Other delegates from Wayne county were men of note, and in various ways.

It will be remembered that Detroit was well towards the west in the early day, and then it was the practice of the people of that city to accord to themselves the highest type of civilization; outsiders, many of them, made the same estimate. Remember I am speaking of the past. If the present generation in that beautiful town, located on a river filled with white fish, and having much beauty of water surface, are modest people, that is much to their credit.

It was said of Captain John Clark, of St. Clair county, that he was never forgotten by any one who had ever known him. General Andrew Jackson recognized Captain John Clark as a good man, of good ability. His sterling qualities in this respect were known and recognized by people in all the walks of life, and by none more so, than those in low estate. In positions of public trust his name was only another name for integrity.

John S. Barry made his first entry in public life in that convention, and afterwards distinguished himself for several terms as one of the economical Governors of Michigan; such was the estimate in which he was held, that there may be some old men in this State who would rather vote for Barry dead or alive than for any other man; they had faith in him because he always wanted the State Treasurer to examine both sides of a voucher before a dollar was taken from the treasury. His views as to a Governor's salary differed from those expressed by leading men to-day; he knew that one thousand dollars could be divided into ten parts, and that two-tenths could be set apart for house rent, five-tenths for current expenses, and that three-tenths would be left for the savings bank; he would tell you, wait for better times before you replenish the family wardrobe. A Governor's house at Lansing! Yes, he would have said, rather buy the Governor a pair of Percheron horses and a strong wagon, and let him drive out of the State and stay there. The Governor's ideas of economy were peculiar; they were extreme; they would not have been tolerated ten years ago, and yet, the stringency of the times for three years past puts our minds in the same channel. If, however, we condemn the Governor's ideas of economy, let us give him credit for fair intelligence. When he replied to a member of the Legislature who complained of the acoustic qualities of the old Hall of the House of Representatives by suggesting, that he "talk slow, always talk good common sense, and talk little."

There were other men in the Constitutional Convention of 1835, who have gone from among us, who ought to be kindly remembered by the pioneers, but time prevents further notice of individuals. In the votes and discussions of the convention no particular feeling was exhibited, although we were divided politically, seventy-four Democrats and ten Whigs. This Constitution remained in force until 1st of January, A. D. 1851, when the present Constitution was adopted, which had been prepared by a convention assembled at Lansing, June 3, 1850, holding its sessions to August 15, 1850.

This second Constitutional Convention consisted of one hundred members, eighty Democrats and twenty Whigs: all of the latter under the order of the presiding officer went to the tail end of the several committees, not a chairmanship to one of them, although somebody thought, if it was not said, that the Whigs brought more of brains into the convention than in the proportion of twenty to eighty. I do not mention this with the intent to disparage the presiding officer, Judge Daniel Goodwin, for in all other matters he performed his duties with fidelity and ability. Of the members of this convention many are dead, after having left a record which entitles them to the grateful recollection of the people of our State: Charles W. Whipple, a courteous gentleman who for many years filled well his position of Circuit and Supreme Judge; Nathan Pierce, oftentimes a member of the Legislature, from Washtenaw and Calhoun counties, a heavy, slow moving man, who emigrated to Michigan from some region of country where the people thought more of a good stock of sound common sense than they did of a high degree of educational polish. His neighbors and those who knew him best would have had him here as a legislator, in the new Capitol, if he had lived; they believed him to be an honest man, with a large capacity to get at the merits or demerits of proposed legislation. He was a great economist and delighted in limited public expenditure and low taxation.

Samuel Clark, of Kalamazoo county, made the first move in the convention for the establishment of the Agricultural College, in presenting the following resolution:

> "*Resolved*, That the Committee on Education be instructed to inquire into the expediency of providing for the establishment of an Agricultural School and Model Farm connected therewith."

He was a lawyer of eminence, a member of Congress from the State of New York and afterwards from Michigan, and well known for his social qualities and generous hospitality.

Joseph R. Williams, of St. Joseph county, an active member of the Committee on Education, who, with his associate on the committee, John D. Pierce, did very much toward the advancement of Michigan in popular education. Article XIII., in the Constitution of 1850, entitled "Education," is liberal in all of its povisions; it cares for every child in the State by its primary schools: as a result of its provisions, there is no necessity to go beyond Michigan for opportunities of the highest mental culture. Has this Article of our Constitution, any defects? Yes, it fails to make it imperative on the Legislature to provide for first class advantages for the education of women; and failing to make it imperative, the Legislature hesitates and doubts the propriety. Will the better opportunity for women, in an educational way, improve women's opportunity for honorable and profitable employment? Yes, and I could cite many instances to sustain my assertion, when the liberality and means of the parent has enabled the daughter to acquire an education fitting her for a business position. I name one: an unmarried lady holds the position of Pension Agent in Chicago, for the State of Illinois. She had first-class opportunities for obtaining a finished business education. During the year

1878 she disbursed two million, two hundred and fifty-eight thousand, eight hundred and five dollars and forty-two cents to eighteen thousand two hundred and seventy-two pensioners, and the proper department at Washington certified that her accounts were correct. With like opportunities to qualify, more than 1,000 women in Michigan would exhibit like qualifications.

I have digressed somewhat from my text, but that is the privilege of preachers, and possibly, pioneers. I note further of the members of the convention of 1850: Rix Robinson, of Kent county; he was a resident trader in both Kent and Kalamazoo counties some years before any other white settlers. His judgment in matters of business was greatly relied upon by those who knew him, and great was the regret of the Indian when he was compelled to leave the valley of the Grand river, that he should lose the kindly offices of Rix Robinson in whom he had unbounded confidence.

Alexander R. Tiffany, a member of this convention from Lenawee county, prepared and published a book for the enlightenment of justices of the peace; his labor on Tiffany's Justice's Guide put ideas on the subject of the law in the heads of justices of the peace in Michigan that never would have found lodgment there unless he had written the book. He was a sound lawyer and most estimable man.

William Norman McLeod (a well rounded Scotch name) represented in the convention the county of Mackinac. He had been in his early day a Presbyterian clergyman, but in moving along the path of life he came to a point where there were two paths, and by accident or otherwise, he took the path which diverged from the right line. He quit the ministry, or the ministry quit him, he never told me which. Strange man, he was the most brilliant man of the one hundred men of that convention. It seemed as though he had read all of the best books and some of the worst; his memory was wonderful, and he had stored his knowledge with so much of system that he had it for use whenever required. While with us in the convention he was a useful member. In parliamentary practice he was always able to give the correct rule, and whenever required, the reason on which this rule was founded; in sarcasm and invective his adversary generally preferred not to encounter him more than once. In his social talks, in his efforts at the bar, in his discussions in convention and in the Legislature he always commanded the attention of his auditors, because his ideas were distinct and well formed, and his language remarkable for its clearness. Poor Mac! He was kind-hearted and a good fellow, but a bad friend to himself. If he had only held the power to put and hold an iron hand on the monster that overpowered him, he might have been with us now; and if so, he would have held this audience silent, and you would have carried his eloquent words to your homes as words of wisdom.

The 29th year since the convention of 1850 has been reached; and although the law-making power has given two opportunities to the people to set aside the Constitution under which we are now living, yet the people seem to think that it is a safe rule to let well enough alone. They say, we want the old and not the new. Let us praise their action as a compliment to the pioneer.

# THE MOUND BUILDERS AND THEIR WORK IN MICHIGAN.

BY HENRY H. RILEY, OF CONSTANTINE.

Read February 5th, 1879.

History taught me to believe that Christopher Columbus discovered America; that he was the first white man who set a foot or raised a flag on its soil. Beyond him, the depths of the past were crowded with generations of Indians. I did not try to know just how they originated, how long they had existed, or how many millions of them had lived and died; but the Indian was the only link in my mind between Columbus and Adam; and all the tribes and nations of red men, who had so long roamed over the wild wastes of the western wilderness were regarded as a kind of military force, set on foot by the Almighty to hold the country until civilization should take possession and subdue it.

I once thought it heresy to doubt the geographical books and schools of the day. Our fathers had lived and died in the faith of what was written about our history—and why should not I also?

As I grew older and my credulity sobered down into facts, and strange shafts of light began to flash around and illuminate the world, theories began to dissolve and my opinions swerved the other way, and like the swinging pendulum, too far at first and beyond the centre; and at last I found myself becoming a skeptic on the subject of the history of man and his origin. I felt that we had been moving among doubts and shadows, and I am not yet restored to faith on this subject.

My belief in the existence of the so-called mound builders of our continent increases from year to year. There is a witchery about the subject that inflames the imagination and warps the judgment. I never look upon the remains of a people which stand so silently and so solemnly around us—*what* people I do not know—without feeling myself stretching away into the past, with my head in a whirl, and my brain exhausting itself among the phantoms of antiquity. The mound builders seem to belong to a race who finished up their work on earth before the real life-work of men and nations began, and who just left their monuments behind them when they passed away, to puzzle us with curious investigations and strange questions never perhaps to be answered.

It may not be out of place for me to stir the dust of the mound builder—to wonder and speculate, as many persons have done and are doing, over their remains, and if possible, clothe their dry bones with flesh and breathe life into the old carcass once more. The mound builders have built their fortifications and erected their monuments on our principal rivers, particularly the Ohio and Mississippi, and their tributaries. They look down solemnly upon the civilization of to-day, pointing backwards to oblivion;—not a word—not a sign—nothing to betray their origin—nothing to wring from them the terrible secret of a great people long vanished from the earth.

There is a mound at Grave creek, in West Virginia, seventy-five feet high and a thousand feet at the base; one at Miamisburg, Ohio, sixty-eight feet high and eight hundred feet at the base; the great truncated pyramid at Cahokia, Illinois, seven hundred feet long and five hundred wide; and in Ohio alone, ten thousand mounds are found and fifteen hundred ramparts and inclosures. These wonderful works of past generations of men extend along the rivers throughout the Southern States, and away up in the northwestern part of our continent, marking the existence and departure of a great people who have left nothing behind them to tell us from whence they came or whither they went.

The inclosures referred to are protected by heavy embankments, formed of earth and stone, with buttresses and gateways, and they are a most interesting subject of study. Inside, they are laid out into squares, circles, parallelograms into figures of serpents, birds, and beasts; others in mathematical lines, and they exhibit a good deal of art. An enclosure in Adams county, Ohio, contains a huge *relievo,* in the shape of a serpent, a thousand feet in length, in graceful curves, the mouth wide open in the act of swallowing an egg-like figure, the tail coiled. In Wisconsin, Iowa, Missouri and on the upper lakes, many inclosures are found in the form of animals, birds, serpents and men; but the mound builder has left no track in New England.

It is curious to know, however, that he seems to be actuated by the same motives and governed by the same passions that his successors have been in locating their cities. He saw, as we have since seen, the commercial value of such points as St. Louis and Cincinnati. He probably had trade and speculation in his eye. Agriculture and commerce were evidently important considerations in his calculations. He appropriated rich valleys, like the Scioto, for life and business. His works were not all a mere labor of defense—his occupation not merely that of a soldier, as has been supposed by some writers who have exploded the twilight that covers their remains.

The works of art which these mounds contain perplex and instruct us. We examine them, theorize over them, solve the mystery to-day, upset our theory to-morrow, believe and disbelieve, and finally retreat into darkness again, and almost fancy we hear a chuckle from the old mound builder at our disappointment and distress.

Ornaments and implements made of copper, silver, obsidian, porphyry and green stone, finely wrought, are found. There are copper and stone axes, chisels, knives and bracelets, pendants and beads, toys of bone and mica, elegant patterns of pottery, all showing a people not deficient in art and mechanical ingenuity, and found in a style and finish beyond anything furnished by the modern tribes of Indians on our continent, within our knowledge.

Porphyry is a hard material to work and required a hard tool to cut it. Did the mound builder know how to temper his copper tool as the Egyptian did? Obsidian is a volcanic product used by the Mexicans and Peruvians for arrows and instruments, and has not been found north of the mountains of Cerre Gordo, in Mexico,* which indicates a communication and reciprocity between people wide apart—between that mysterious nation, whoever they were, who erected those wonderful buildings in Central America ages ago,—who built Palenque, Copan and Uxmal, raised up so many strange monuments, now buried in a wilderness, and gave the key of their history to oblivion and vanished from the earth.

The mound builder was an early pioneer in Michigan; he was the first miner in the Upper Peninsula; how he worked, whether as a member of a joint stock company on a per centage, or every man for himself, we do not know; but he went deep down into the copper ore, and dug, and raised, and probably transported vast amounts of it, but just how or where we cannot say, but as we shall see, some of the ore found its way into the mounds on the Mississippi and Ohio.

Specimens of Lake Superior copper have been discovered in the mounds, and the chain of evidence by which this is determined is the fact that the copper so found, or some of it, has little globules or slivers of silver attached to it, which, it is said, distinguishes no other copper in the world. The silver found in other ore is throughout the whole, and brought out only by fire.

The ancient mining at Isle Royal, near the northern line of Lake Superior has excited amazement. The island is about fifty miles long, from five to nine in breadth, with a ragged, rocky shore, and cut up into deep gorges and is covered with a growth of timber. The pits are from ten to thirty feet in diameter, from twenty to sixty feet in depth, and are scattered throughout the island. They follow the richest veins of ore with great knowledge and skill in the art of mining. They were connected underground, and drains are cut to carry off the water; there is one deep cut in the rock, covered its entire length by timbers that are now decayed, and the whole is a mass of rotten wood. At McCargoe's Cove there are nearly two miles of pits very closely connected; quantities of stone hammers and mauls, weighing from ten to thirty pounds, have been found, some broken from use and some in good condition; copper chisels, knives and arrow-heads have been discovered. The copper tools seemed to be hardened by fire. It is difficult to determine their original workmanship owing to corrosion, but there is evidence going to show that they were originally polished and of good workmanship.

The working out the ore was no doubt by heating and pouring on water—very slow and tedious, and yet it is said that although two hundred men with their rude way of mining could not accomplish any more work than two skilled miners can at the present day; and that at one point alone, on Isle Royal, the amount of labor performed exceeds that done on one of the oldest mines on the south shore, which has been operated with a large force for more than twenty years.

When were these pits opened? By whom? Who can tell? Forests have grown up and fallen and mouldered over them, and great trees, three hundred and four hundred years old, stand around them to-day, counting so much, and only so much time for us in our efforts to fix the age of these mines.

---

* Colonel P. W. Norris, Superintendent of the Yellowstone National Park, in his report to the Secretary of the Interior, for the year 1879, says: "I this year traced the mountain of obsidian or volcanic glass from where I discovered it last year, at Beaver Lake, to a branch of the Gibbon, below the Lake of the Woods, a distance of some eight miles, proving that it is there the true divide of the waters of the Missouri and the Yellowstone, and also a vast weapon and implement quarry for the ancient hermit sheep-eaters."—Ed.

How and where was the ore removed? Why and for what purpose was so much of it consumed? Where did the provisions come from to support the laborers in their work? There are no bones of mound builders found there—no evidence of commerce—no remains of vessels, or wharves, or houses—and yet vast amounts of copper have been taken out, not only there, but throughout portions of the Upper Peninsula, the work of men who must have been fed, and to some extent clothed, and whose treasure was no doubt exported to the central and southern portions of our continent.

Mounds have been discovered on the borders of the Detroit river, at the head of the St. Clair, on the Black river, the Rouge, on the Grand river and at the foot of Lake Huron, and in many other portions of the State. Those at the head of the St. Clair are said to be very remarkable, and were discovered by Mr. Gillman in 1872. They are not as gigantic as some of the others herein described, and were once regarded as of Indian origin.*

The mound builder was an early pioneer. The banks and streams upon which he built declare this to be true. Their channels have been cut deeper since he laid out his grounds by their sides and erected his cities thereon. Terraces have been evidently formed below his work since he passed away; for it may still be seen where the same stream has destroyed a portion of his inclosures higher up where they now stand.

Skulls are found at the bottom, showing that mounds were raised over them and that the body was not afterward buried in them, although the subsequent burial remains of Indians are found nearer the top, and almost always there is the evidence of an altar having been erected, upon which the body was laid and consumed by fire, the rites and ceremonies over some great chieftain, perhaps, who is now forever forgotten.

It is through these skulls, more than in any other way, that physiologists have been able to determine that the mound builders, whoever they were, were not Indians; the shape and outlines of the head being different and indicating an entirely different race of people. We frequently hear of the discovery of the skeletons of a gigantic race, and we are therefore the more puzzled to know to what race the mound builders belonged, for although we are called a new country, comparatively speaking, we may be the very oldest.

A few years ago an article appeared in the Toronto Telegraph stating that in the township of Cayuga in the Grand river, on the farm of Daniel Fredenburg, five or six feet below the surface, were found two hundred skeletons nearly perfect, a string of beads around the neck of each, stone pipes in the jaws of several of them, and many stone axes and skinners scattered around in the dirt. The skeletons were gigantic, some of them measuring nine feet, and few of them less than seven. Some of the thigh bones were six inches longer than any now known. The farm had been cultivated a century and was originally covered with a growth of pine. There was evidence from the crushed bones that a battle had been fought and these were some of the slain. Decayed houses had been found near this spot before, and there were indications that the region had at some time been inhabited. Were these the remains of Indians or some other race? Who and what filled this ghastly pit?

Is there any clue to the people who built these mounds? Can we find any track running back into the past, leading us to any foundation upon which we can stand? Is there any evidence to the point which may be regarded as reliable, or is everything about them forever buried? Perhaps we may grope our way amid mists and shadows to some purpose; and if we cannot demonstrate our position we can start the reader by strange suggestions and plausible theories.

---

* Mr. Henry Gillman read an interesting paper before the Detroit Scientific Association on this subject, from which some of the facts about Isle Royal are taken.

When Cortez captured Mexico in 1620, little was known by him of the wonders of Central America. He found a wilderness around him filled with architecture which has since been to some extent explored. The Aztecs were then in power and had built a city of magnitude and even splendor. They had their laws and their literature. Books were then in existence, but how old we do not know, in which we are satisfied were to be found records of races of men that will be found nowhere else. But the books not being Catholic, Cortez destroyed them or intended to do so. Fires were kindled, volumes consumed and the world thereby saved from the heresy they contained. Bishop Zyumarraga especially made one great conflagration of them. But there was found, here and there, a curious sly old Spanish ecclesiastic, who understood their value, who quietly hid a few away at the peril of his soul for the good of mankind, and thus here and there one was preserved in this way and some were not found.

Can we here show any connection between a pre-historic race, of any kind, who built the mounds, dug out the copper on Lake Superior, and who once held dominion in our State?

Before answering this question, let me look into some of the theories on the subject, promulgated by different persons, and found in "Baldwin's Ancient America." and "Foster's Pre-Historic Races."

1st. "*The Lost Tribes*, 'The Mound Builders,' were the descendants of the lost tribes of Israel. The Spanish monks supported this theory, and also Lord Kinsborough. It is said the ten tribes left Palestine, crossed Behring Straits, and finally established themselves, about seven hundred years before Christ, on this continent. There is little to support the claim. Identity of language even fails and antiquarians generally have abandoned that field of study."

2d. "*The Malay Theory.* In prehistoric times the Malays were a great people and ruled a great empire. This empire was described by travelers six hundred years before the first voyage to India by the Cape of Good Hope. It had ships, and its islands were so numerous that the fastest vessel, it was said, 'was unable to go round them in two years.' Its metropolis was in the Island of Java, where the ruins still show great architectural beauty, and even splendor. Wallace says, 'they surpass those of Central America, and even India.' The remains of a city called Modjo-pahit are very wonderful. The ships of the Malays, it is supposed, sailed as far as Central America, and the old books already referred to, as well as the traditions of the Aztecs, say that centuries before, they were visited by a foreign people who came in ships. But Baldwin says, 'the theory does not hold out, as there is nothing Malayan in either the antiquities or speech of the early Americans.' "

3d. "*The Phœnician Theory* was also very popular. Those maritime rovers, who spread their sails in the face of the Greek philosophers (who despised commerce), planted colonies on the shores of the Mediterranean, and were supposed to have explored that 'extensive ocean, so much talked about by the people of their day,' and to have visited that 'great Saturnian continent,' which in some way had been brought to their notice, and in the existence of which they fully believed. The Phœnicians were bold navigators, and may have sailed up and down our great rivers when the kings of Egypt were building the pyramids; but it has always been possible to track them and their works by their language, and there is not a Phœnician letter or word to be found or a monument in Central America, or a sign or symbol remaining there which points in any way to that nation as its origin."

4th. "*The Atlantic Theory.* One of the most romantic and yet probable theories is the 'Atlantic' theory. There is just enough mist hanging over it to render it bewitching, and to stimulate the explorer into a wild enthusiasm. This attributes the civilization of ancient America to the Atlantides or Atlantic race who once occupied the lost 'Island of Atlantis.' It is supposed, and there is very much tradition and history to be found among the older nations of the earth to confirm the supposition, that this continet of ours once extended from New Granada to Central America and Mexico in a long peninsula partly across the Atlantic, and was a part of what is now known as the Canary, Maderia, and Western Islands, and on beyond these islands was still a large tract of fertile country. It is supposed that the whole was sunk by earthquakes, and that the West Indies and other islands were mountains whose peaks were never submerged, and are still out of water, and stand as monuments of the destruction around them."

"There is a considerable evidence to be found corroborating this theory, wild and poetical as it seems. The old Central American books allude to the tradition of a catastrophe of this kind, and it was maintained among the Central Americans when Cortez first overran the country. One of their festivals, celebrated in the north Izcalli, commemorated this terrible destruction. The tradition declares the continent was once extended as stated, and was destroyed by a succession of frightful convulsions. To use the language of this tradition: 'The land was shaken by frightful earthquakes, and the waters of the sea combined with volcanic fires to overwhelm and engulf it.' Most of the inhabitants were destroyed, some escaped in ships, and some fled to the mountains."

"This history of Atlantis is also found in the annals of Egypt. It is stated in Plutarch's 'Life of Solon, that while in Egypt, he conferred with the priests of Psenophis, Sonchis, Heliopolis and Sais, and learned from them the story of Atlantis.' Plato makes a record of it; speaks of a great army which came across the Atlantic sea, and invaded Europe and Asia; speaks of the Island of Atlantis; that 'three kings reigned there with great and marvelous power;' says 'their power at one time extended into Lybia and into Europe as far as Tyrrhenum.' Afterwards, says Plato, 'in one day and one fatal night, there came mighty earthquakes and inundations which engulfed that warlike people. Atlantis disappeared beneath the sea, and then that sea became inaccessible, so that navigation on it ceased on account of the quantity of mud which the engulfed islands left in its place.' It is supposed that Atlantis was destroyed before Athens became a city, and therefore it is only as groping amid shadows, but still not without a considerable evidence, traditionary and otherwise, tending to establish this strange and startling theory."

"And so it is suggested that the survivors of this catastrophe fled inland, planted themselves upon the isthmus now known as Central America; that they were distinguished in arts and sciences, that they built mighty works there, and that they are the mound builders whose remains are strewn far and wide up and down our streams and valleys."

I will now return to the first proposition. Can we connect the mound builders with any people within the historic period? We must be confined to the ancient records in Mexico and tradition, to furnish us light on the subject.

Torquemada, Boturini, Clavigero, Abbe Brasseur de Bourbourg, among the Spanish, and Prescott, Squier, Catherwood and Stevens, among the American explorers, may be consulted with profit. The old records are of great value. One having made extracts from another when the language was better understood, what is now beyond the reach of the scholar has been thus preserved for our use.

These records show that the very earliest people in Mexico were called Colhuas, the next Nahuas or Toltecs, the next Aztecs. They, the Aztecs, were found in possession of the country in 1520, as has been stated, when Cortez invaded and captured their capital. The Colhuas reach back to a time beyond computation, and the Toltecs, who succeeded them, to a period nine hundred and fifty-five years before Christ. The Abbe Brasseur, says he has a *certain* date in their language as old as that. It is certain also, that the Aztecs had held possession of Mexico only about three hundred years before the invasion by Cortez. They came from the northwestern or southwestern portion of our continent, and the adobé houses of their forefathers may be found to-day in ruins scattered through the valleys in those regions.

But who were the Toltecs, their predecessors? It is claimed that they were a people identical with the mound builders. These ancient records declare that an empire once existed in the northeast, known as Huehue Tlapalan, and that owing to insurrection or an invasion they were driven away, and finally, after many years came to Mexico and conquered the country of the Colhuas, it may be. Huehue, means old, it is said—Old Tlaplan—to distinguish it from three other places of the same name, founded by them on their way to and in Mexico. One company settled near the Tampico river. It was conducted by twenty chiefs and they were followed by a large number of people. Torquemada says, that an old record describes this people as of fine appearance, intelligent, industrious and orderly, and skilled in working metals and stones.

Another record informs us that the emigration of the Toltecs was forced—that they were assailed by the Chichimecs, who were savages, and under one great leader a terrible struggle ensued, lasting thirteen years, and the Toltecs, being no longer able to hold out, abandoned their country to escape destruction—that two chiefs led the march until they finally reached a region near the sea named Tlapalan Conco, where they remained several years. They emigrated again and reached Mexico, where they built a town called Tallanzinco, and later the city of Tullan, which became their seat of government.

It will be remembered that a portion of the country was held by a people called Tlascalans, when Cortez came on with his army, who were hostile to the Aztecs, and he formed an alliance with them and they were of great service to him in his conquest. Stevens thinks they belonged to a dismembered part of the Tolcan empire. The Colhuas, the records say, "came from the east in ships."

As we have said, the older ruins exhibit the greatest skill, and there is evidence in these ruins of a higher civilization before the Toltec dominion; that is, according to the Abbe Brasseur, prior to nine hundred and fifty-five years before Christ. The present condition and decay of the ruins show their age, and the greater their age the more elaborate, skillful and beautiful is the work. And yet the picture writing on the Aztec monuments furnishes the scholar with no key to interpret the inscriptions on the temples and monuments of Palenque and Capan.

The Colhuas, then, came from the east in ships—the Toltecs from the northeastern, and the Aztecs from the northwestern or southwestern portion of our continent. The first from an early civilization, the last two from a semi-barbarian land, with no history of their own for our instruction, and who survive mostly in tradition, in their monuments and in the records of a succeeding and different race more highly cultivated.

These nations have scattered their temples, monuments, statuary and inscriptions over Mexico, and with the exception of the work of the Aztecs, their work and records have thus far defied the explorer, mocked the inquisitive, and they have held their secrets with an assurance and success that is discouraging to the antiquarian and scholar.

The mounds built by the Toltecs, if they were the builders, are found from Michigan to Mexico, particularly on the Ohio and Mississippi rivers. They were erected for devotional, sacrificial, defensive and monumental purposes. And the same mound may be found to-day in Mexico, evidently the work of the same people or their descendants. If the art is higher in its construction, the form and design seem to be the same.

Is it too much to say, then, that the Toltecs were the people who left their remains in our northern peninsula and on Isle Royal—who dug out the copper there—who built our mounds, and who were, as the ancient records say, driven out by a savage people, called Chichimecs, and who in turn, conquered the Colhuas in Mexico, adopted their high civilization and built the cities scattered over that country, which have excited the wonder of travelers and historians?

It is time to bring this article to a close. I regret that after so much speculation around which thick clouds rest, after such an effort to resurrect the buried remains of the past, after listening to the echoes which faintly die away as the explorer of these mounds turns his ear to catch their significance, after peering into the skulls and handling the implements of this strange people, I have afforded so little information to my reader. Strange that time, omnipotent as it is, can utterly destroy the history of a nation—turn its language into a mysterious collection of characters which may never be read; its monuments into puzzles to perplex antiquarians, so that not one reliable link between the present and its past can be found to determine from whence its people came and whither they went.

## PAPER BY O. A. JENISON, LANSING.

**Read February 5th, 1879.**

*Officers and Members of the Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan:*

Ladies and Gentlemen:—In making this, my second annual bow to your society, I congratulate you on its now permanent organization, and assure you that I take great pleasure in being able to add my mite which helps to swell the great, interesting, and valuable collection of relics and historical facts pertaining to our State; and on this occasion, present you with the following articles, viz.:

*First,* An ambrotype of the old Lansing House, erected by Henry Jipson. This picture was taken expressly for me in 1857, from the cupola of the old capitol, and there is not, nor ever was, its like in existence. In front of the main entrance on Washington avenue can be seen the old time honored sign-post; as we cast our eyes to the right, a small building with a wooden awning in front can be seen, which at that time was used and occupied as the great stage office between Lansing and Jackson; the next building to the right was used in part as the Lansing postoffice; and still further to the right is the Edgar House as it appeared in those days; at the left of the Lansing House, barns, sheds, etc., can be plainly seen. (The Lansing House was destroyed by fire on Sunday night, June 2, 1861.) One peculiar feature of this interesting picture is the fact that it was taken on a bright, sun-shining afternoon, and not a human being or animal of any name or nature was seen upon the streets. Such was Lansing in 1857. In making this declaration, I assure you that we old settlers who fought the mosquitoes and entertained the Indians, now rejoice in the present growth, prosperity, and beautiful appearance of our city.

*Second,* I have to present you with one of the first posters ever issued from the printing press in Lansing. My friend John J. Adam will undoubtedly recognize it as an official document, showing the necessity of the times. When the First Presbyterian Church was erected in this city, doors were attached to all the pews, and after serving their purpose for a few years, they were finally discarded; and from one of these doors was made the frame which now surrounds the document in question; two backs are attached to the frame, the inside one being manufactured from a clapboard taken from the first printing office erected in Lansing, and the outside one from a clapboard taken from one of the first dwelling houses erected in Lansing; the glass is one of the original full size 8x10 taken from the front window of the first dry goods store in Lansing, owned by Bush & Thomas.

*Third,* I present you with a piece of iron punched from one of the plates of the original Monitor, built at Freeport, opposite New York, under the supervision of and commanded by Commander Worden; this was presented to me by J. T. Whiting, Esq., of Detroit, who saw it punched and secured it at the time.

*Fourth,* I present you with a full set of posters put out by the Central Michigan Agricultural Society from 1866 to 1878, both inclusive; and I venture to say that another similar set cannot be produced in the country, as I am well informed that the officers of the society never have taken the trouble to save them.

*Fifth,* I present you with another scrap-book as a companion to the one presented to you by me one year ago. This book contains the charter of two different temperance societies that once had an existence in this city, and by the precept and example of its members restrained many a man from continuing in the downward path, and for a while fought manfully for the right; but adverse winds finally drove them to the beach and their frail bark was stranded—let their charters be preserved and their names remembered for their many good deeds. It also contains a list of all the voters of Lansing for 1875-6-7-8. The Governor's Thanksgiving Proclamation for the four last years. A stage ticket from Lansing to Jackson, by Dan Hibbard's line of stages. A bill of goods, probably the first ever brought to Lansing, the owner living in the back part of his store and selling from a small room in front. Also the original draft of the First Presbyterian Church of this city. A rough draft of this city in 1849, showing the location of all the important buildings at that time; but aside from the four corners of Michigan and Washington avenues, and thence south to the Lansing House, our draughtsman says, "woods, forests, woods." In this book are also many bills of the early wildcat banks of Michigan, the original yeas and nays or vote of the Legislature of this State which placed Mr. Christiancy in the United States Senate. The Lansing Republican for 1875-6-7-8 containing a lengthy notice of the meetings of this society for those years, and hundreds of bills, posters, programmes, etc., put out by our business men and different city societies.

*Finally,* I present you with an ambrotype likeness of the old Indian Chief Okemos, in doing which, I wish to say that I know it to be genuine; it is not a copy, neither does it come to you second-handed. Okemos sat for this very picture, to my certain knowledge, in 1857, and it has never been out of my possession from that day to this.

Within the last year, since having concluded to present you with this likeness, I have thought it not inappropriate to compile and rewrite a few incidents in his life, in the undertaking of which I was not unmindful of the fact that sketches of his life had already been written by much abler biographers than myself, and to them I am somewhat indebted for portions of the life and character of this noted Indian Chief; but the principal part of this biography I obtained from gentlemen who were personally acquainted with him, could speak the Indian tongue, and who traded and bought furs of the tribe for many years. The date of the birth of Okemos is shrouded in mystery, but our researches disclose the fact that he was born at or near Knaggs Station, on the Shiawassee river, where the Port Huron and Lansing Railroad now crosses said river.

I wish to say right here, that in writing up the biography of this man, I have carefully read his history as portrayed by Campbell in his Political History of Michigan, Tuttle's History of Michigan, F. J. Littlejohn's Legends of "Michigan and the old Northwest," together with many newspaper accounts of his heroism and bravery.

From all this information I might have lengthened this article to an almost unlimited extent, but have chosen rather to give such facts as I have been able to obtain, and although some portions of my remarks may not be new, still they throw new light on an old story. The great event in the life of Okemos was his battle at Sandusky, in regard to which I think I have secured facts that were never before committed to paper.

Okemos, at the time of his death, was said to be a centenarian, but a century contains a number of years that but few out of the many are permitted to see. In a sketch of his life given in the Lansing Republican under date of April 6, 1871, it is said that he *probably* took the war path in 1791; this is the earliest account I find of him in any written history. Judge Littlejohn in his Legends of "Michigan and the old Northwest" introduces him to the reader in 1803, and expressly says, "In our data, local delineations, and topographical outlines, the reader may trust to our general accuracy."

The battle of Sandusky, in which Okemos took such an active part, was the great event of his life, and this it was that gave him his chieftainship and caused him to be revered by his tribe; for a detailed description of that memorable and bloody fight, I am indebted to B. O. Williams, Esq., of Owosso, who for many years was an Indian trader, spoke the Indian language and received the story direct from the lips of the old chief. In relating the story, Okemos says, "Myself and cousin Man-a-to-corb-way with sixteen other braves enlisted under the British flag, formed a scouting or war party, and leaving the upper Raisin made our rendezvous at Sandusky, where, one morning while lying in ambush near a road lately cut for the passage of the American army and supply wagons, we observed twenty cavalrymen approaching us. Our ambush was located on a slight ridge with brush directly in our front. We immediately decided to attack the Americans although outnumbered by two, concluding that we could effectually cripple them at the first fire, which followed by a dash with the tomahawk would accomplish our design; accordingly we waited until they had approached so near that we could count the buttons on their coats, when firing commenced at close quarters." The cavalrymen with drawn sabres immediately charged upon Okemos and his followers, and then commenced the bloodiest and most decisive battle in which Okemos was ever engaged. In fact, from all that I can learn, it was his last battle. Okemos says that he and his cousin fought side by side through this conflict, and their experience was about the same throughout the engagement; each one firing from two to three times while dodging from one cover to another. But to return to the beginning of the fight. In less than ten minutes after the first fire of the Indians, the sound of a bugle was heard, and casting their eyes in the direction of the sound they saw the road and woods filled with cavalry, in describing which, Okemos says, "The plumes on their hats looked like a flock of thousands of pigeons just hovering for a flight."

The small party of Indians were immediately surrounded and cut down to a man; not one escaped the sabres of this dashing charge, and all were left for dead on the field. Okemos and his cousin each had their skulls cloven and their bodies gashed in a fearful manner; and as a finale, in order to be sure that life was extinct upon leaving the field, the cavalrymen would lean forward from their horses and with their sabres pierce the chests of the Indians, even into their lungs; thus they were left prostrate upon their backs, entirely unconscious from the first heavy blows that crushed through their skulls. The last that Okemos remembered was after emptying one saddle and springing toward another with clubbed rifle raised in the act of striking, his head felt as if being pierced with a red hot iron, and he went down from a heavy sabre cut. All knowledge ceased from this time until many moons afterward, when he found himself being nursed by squaws of their friends, who with others had found them some two or three days after the battle.

The squaws thought all were dead, but upon being moved signs of life were discovered in Okemos and his cousin, who were at once taken on litters to a place of safety, and by careful and untiring nursing finally restored to partial health. The cousin always remained a cripple, his sufferings having induced chronic rheumatism which distorted the joints of his hands and feet. The iron constitution with which Okemos was endowed by nature restored him to comparative health; but he never took an active part in another battle, this last one having satisfied him that "white man was a heap powerful," and shortly afterward he solicited Colonel Godfroy to intercede with General Cass, and he, with other chiefs, executed a treaty with the Americans which was faithfully adhered to the remainder of their days.

Okemos did not obtain his chieftainship by hereditary descent, but this honor was conferred upon him after having passed through the battle just described—for his bravery and endurance his tribe considered him a favorite of the Great Spirit who had preserved his life through such a terrible and trying ordeal.

The next we hear of Okemos, he had settled with his tribe on the banks of the Shiawassee, near the place of his birth, where for many years, up to 1837-8, he was engaged in the peaceful avocation of hunting, fishing, and trading with the white men. About this time the small-pox broke out in his tribe, which, together with the influx of white settlers, destroyed their hunting grounds and scattered the bands.

The plaintive, soft notes of the wooing young hunter's flute, made of red alder wood, and the sound of the tom-tom at council fires and village feasts was heard no more along the banks of our inland streams; for years before, the tomahawk had been effectually buried, and upon the final breaking up and scattering of the bands, Okemos became a mendicant, and many a hearty meal has the old man received from the old settlers of Lansing with a grateful heart. In his palmy days, I should think his greatest height never exceeded five feet four inches; he was lithe, wiry, active, intelligent, and possessed of undoubted bravery; he was not however, an eloquent speaker, either in council or private conversation, always mumbling his words and speaking with some hesitation. Previous to the breaking up of his band in 1837-8, his usual dress consisted of a blanket coat with belt, steel pipe hatchet or tomahawk, and heavy long English hunting or scalping knife stuck in his belt in front with large bone handle prominent outside the sheath, his face painted with vermilion, on his cheeks and forehead and over his eyes, a shawl wound around his head turban fashion, together with the leggins usually worn by Indians, completed his outfit, which during his lifetime he never discarded.

None of his biographers have ever attempted to fix the date of his birth, contenting themselves with the general conviction that he was an hundred years old. In this respect I most respectfully beg leave to differ from them, for the following reasons, viz.: Physically endowed with a strong constitution, naturally brave and impetuous, and inured to the hardships of an Indian life, we are led to believe that he took the war path early in life, and his first introduction to our notice is in 1791. I reason from this, that he was born about the year 1775, in which case, he lived about eighty-three years; again, the old settlers of Lansing well remember that up to the latest period of his having been seen on our streets, his step was short, quick, and elastic, to a degree that is seldom enjoyed by men of that age. He died at his wigwam a few miles from this city, and was buried December 5, 1858, at Shimnicon, an Indian settlement in Ionia county; his coffin was rude in the extreme, and in it were placed a pipe, tobacco, hunting knife, bird's wings, provisions, etc. He surrendered his chieftainship a few years previous to his death to his son John, but he never forgot that he was Okemos, once the chief of a powerful tribe of the Chippewas, and nephew of Pontiac.

# SKETCH OF THE LIFE OF HON. ROBERT STUART.

Robert Stuart, son of John and Mary Buchanan Stuart, was born at Callander, Perthshire, Scotland, in 1785.

I have copied the following interesting and graphic letter of Hon. Charles C. Trowbridge to Hon. B. O. Williams, dated March 23, 1880. Mr. Williams sought information from Mr. Trowbridge of his reccollections of Robert Stuart, knowing, as he said,.there is no man living so well fitted to give reliable facts in the history of David and Robert Stuart, who stand out in such bold relief in the pioneer history of Michigan.

This letter that I have copied for publication in Vol. III. "Pioneer Collections," together with other papers relating to the life of Robert Stuart, now on file in the Archives of the State Pioneer Society, will do something towards reviving the fading remembrances of his great deeds and great virtues.

Marshall, Mich., December 1, 1880.

O. C. COMSTOCK, M. D.

### COPY OF MR. TROWBRIDGE'S LETTER.

I do not recollect to have seen anything beyond the ephemeral notices of the daily press, at the time of the decease of Mr. Stuart and Governor Cass, yet, if we could rescue these, we might find them quite worthy of being repeated and embalmed in the collections of our State Pioneer Society. I knew both of these gentlemen intimately, and take great pleasure in responding to your inquiries.

I first met Mr. Robert Stuart at the Astor Fur Company's headquarters at Mackinac (or as we used to write it in those days, Michilimackinac), in the summer of 1820, when, as attaché to the suite of Governor Cass, I accompanied him in his great canoe voyage around Lakes Huron and Superior, to the head of the Mississippi and down that river to Prairie du Chien, and from the Prairie up the Wisconsin, down the Fox, around Lake Michigan via Chicago to Mackinac and thence home.

You will recollect that this voyage of four thousand five hundred miles was authorized by the War Department (Mr. Calhoun then being Secretary of War), at the suggestion of Governor Cass, in order to carry the United States flag through the Indian country, and thus give the natives a palpable notion of the intent of the great father of the Kitcha-mo-ko-man nation to possess and govern the same, as against their first great father the Wamet-a-goshe (the French monarch) or their other and best loved, because their most generous, the Sage-enaster (the English King), whom they had so faithfully served during the then recent war between England and the United States.

I presume Governor Cass was moved to make this suggestion to Mr. Calhoun by the representations of Robert Stuart and Ramsey Crooks, who were the administrators of Mr. Astor's power on the great lakes. The Stuart, uncle and nephew, were very uncommon men. David, the uncle, had been a hardy adventurer along the coast of Labrador, and in 1810 he and his nephew Robert were found in New York. Whether Mr. Astor had sent for them to take part in his grand scheme of securing the fur trade of the Pacific Coast about the mouth of Columbia river and its tributaries, or whether they had heard of his plans and had proposed themselves for service, I know not, nor do I know whether the fact could now be ascertained, nor is it material. There they were, and in 1810 they entered into an agreement to become *proprietares,* as Mons. Franchera calls them, together with John Jacob Astor, Alexander McKay, Duncan McDonald and Jas. Lewis, and to go to the mouth of the Columbia river and embark in the fur trade on the Pacific Coast and its rivers. Among the clerks, of whom there were eleven, were Russel Farnham, of Vermont; W. W. Mathews, of England; Gabriel Franchere, of Montreal; and Wm. Wallace, of New York. I knew all these men, saw them often at Mackinaw, and heard their after-dinner stories. The Stuarts and other proprietors, with the eleven clerks, nineteen officers and sailors, thirteen Canadian *voyageurs* for canoe work, and five mechanics, in all fifty-one persons, sailed in the ship Tonquin from New York, September 6, 1810, for the mouth of the Columbia river, and the expedition was broken up in 1814, after the establishment of several large trading posts on the Columbia and its tributaries.

The war between England and the United States compelled Mr. Astor to sell his outfit to the Northwest Fur Co., a British institution, and the inventories which were to form the basis of an adjustment of accounts, were made in quadruple. One copy was placed in charge of Mr. Benjamin Clapp, who had come around in a vessel from New York, and was bound for Canton, China. Mr. Clapp reached New York in two years. One copy was given to Farnham, who went up the coast, crossed Behring Straits, traveled through Kamtschatka with a dog train, arrived in St. Petersburg safely, and thence made his way to London and New York in two years. The third copy was given to Franchere, who remained at the post until the Northwest Fur Co.'s furs were sent in, and returned with the agent by way of the Saskatchawan and Lake Winnepec and the Ottawa river route to Montreal and thence to New York in two years; and the fourth was taken by Robert Stuart, who returned across the country, after having suffered indescribable hardships and "the loss of all things." He arrived in about two years. This is a remarkable story, and it has the merit of freshness. I have heard it from the lips of the parties concerned.

Mr. Astor having been foiled on the Pacific, turned his attention to the development of the trade on the lakes, the Mississippi and the Missouri. You knew Mackinac in the days of the power of the trade. Robert Stuart was then an imperious man. Before he started from New York in 1810, he was privately married to a Brooklyn lass, who had stolen his heart. The marriage, which took place in one of the churches of that city, was not divulged until Mr. Stuart's return from the Pacific. I dare say you knew Mrs. Stuart. She was a brave, gifted woman who was loved by her husband with a devotion beautiful to behold, until his death.

In 1835-6, Mr. Stuart bought land and built a house in Detroit, and in that year or early in 1836, he brought his family to this city, which was thereafter their home. Uncle David, who was old and feeble, accompanied his nephew, from whom and from Mrs. Stuart, he received the kindest attention as long as he lived. Mr. Robert Stuart used to take pleasure in recounting anecdotes of Uncle David, during their sojourn on the Pacific. The old gentleman was one of those intrepid souls who are born without fear.

When the party first went to the Columbia, the Indians were restive; and when Uncle David and Robert were ascending the river to establish an outpost, they were warned that a body of hostile Indians had assembled just above the Dalles to intercept them. They encamped below the Dalles and extinguished their fires, expecting a rencounter next morning. Uncle David was the last watch of the night. His time would expire at day break. At that time Robert discovered that Uncle David was not in camp. It was still dark. They tracked him cautiously to the Indian camp, where they found the warriors all asleep in a circle with their feet toward the central fire, and Uncle David sitting quietly in their midst, smoking his pipe, waiting for his enemies to awake. When they did so, he apologized for coming without leave, and very soon they were warm friends. I have said that Mr. Robert Stuart was very imperious. So he was. He at one time knocked down an *engagé* with an ebony rule because he came, half drunk, too near his desk. But a change came over him. Through the instrumentality of the late Rev. Wm. M. Ferry, father of our distinguished senator, he was led to look deep into the mysteries of revelation, and after due deliberation he took service on the Lord's side. John Agnew, a good natured, roystering ferryman, collector of the port, was much attached to Mr. and Mrs. Stuart. He watched Mr. Stuart's conduct very closely after his declared conversion, and when he saw an employé drop a package of furs into the lake, and heard Mr. Stuart tell him in a comparatively subdued tone, to fish it out, instead of knocking him from the little wharf into the lake, he turned about and said, "no doubt Robert Stuart is a converted man." When Mr. Stuart came to Detroit to reside, he and his family at once assumed a conspicuous place. In all matters relating to religious development they were in the front rank. He took office as a director in the old bank of Michigan, became treasurer of the State in the troublous days when the wild-cat banking system was inaugurated upon the principle that nothing but land was worth considering as a sure source of redemption for the notes issued, and when, after flooding the State with two millions of promises to pay, the Supreme Court toppled the whole overboard by declaring the Banking Act unconstitutional and all bargains made under it absolutely void.

In 1848 Mr. Stuart went to Chicago in behalf of the eastern holders of Illinois Canal bonds, and there while attending to his duties took cold, and died suddenly while sitting in his chair, October 29th of that year, universally regretted by the whole community. I have often spoken of an interview which took place at my house, between Mr. Stuart, General Henry Whiting, of the army, and my brother, S. V. R. Towbridge. They were conversing about death. All wished it might be God's will that they might die suddenly. After Mr. Stuart's death, General Whiting was at St. Louis with Mrs. Whiting. He wrote me that they were on their way to make my family a promised visit. They were packing their trunks when General Whiting fell dead. His remains were brought to Detroit and laid in our beautiful Elmwood, and his wife made her visit as a widow. My brother had been riding out with an old friend. They returned to dinner. My brother took a book and laid down upon a sofa to read. He fell into a slumber from which he never awoke. Mr. Stuart left five children—three sons and two daughters, all deceased.

It would be a work of supererogation to attempt to add to the charm of Mr. Trowbridge's letter, and no such thing will be undertaken by me. I may say however, that there are some exceedingly interesting incidents recorded by Washington Irving in his "Astoria," too valuable to pass by in this connection. The vessel engaged by Mr. Astor to convey stores for the American Fur Co., as before mentioned, came to a tragic end in June following her arrival at the mouth of the Columbia river. The Tonquin being on a trading expedition, anchored in the harbor of Neweetee, Vancouvers Island. Soon the ship was boarded by a large number of Indians, and an attempt to trade made by her brusk commander. The wily Indians asked exorbitant prices for their furs, and exhausted the patience of the captain, who cleared the deck in a summary way. The Indians retired to their canoes in a great rage. The day following, with well concealed anger and apparently unarmed, they came to trade, and when a large number was on shipboard, they ran upon the captain and his men, nearly all of whom were killed outright. Lewis, the ship's clerk, the only surviving officer, being badly, if not fatally wounded, decoyed a still larger number of Indians on board, then fired the powder magazine, thus wrecking vengeance upon his enemies, who were killed in great numbers, together with himself, and the loss of the ship.

Robert Stuart was detailed with a small party of men to carry supplies to David Stuart who had established a trading post on the Oakinagon river. Upon reaching a place then known as the Long Narrows, they were surrounded by a large party of thievish Indians, who robbed and wounded, and indeed killed some of the party; Mr. Stuart escaping personal injury, though in great peril and foremost in the fight. On the 29th of June 1812, Robert Stuart and four men started on the perilous journey across the mountains, to carry dispatches to Mr. Astor. Within a few days thereafter, their most valuable hunter became insane and had to be sent back. They continued their journey however, among hostile Indians, by turns starving, then feasting, suffering from cold and uncertainty of their route, until they pitched their camp for the winter on some supposed tributary of the Missouri. This was on the 2d of November. At this place they erected a very comfortable lodge and furnished themselves with abundant supplies of meat, vainly imagining that they could safely rest from their toil and uncertainty until the opening of spring. But on the 13th of December they were compelled to break camp, and again to face the winds and storms and Indians of that inhospitable latitude. With almost indescribable suffering they wandered on until about the 1st of January, 1813; when a halt was ordered, and they set about constructing a winter camp, and which proved to be a favorable location as regards all creature comforts, and especially safe from the cruel depredation of Indians. Meeting an Otto Indian some 140 miles from the Missouri, they learned of the existance of war between England and the United States, which had existed in fact more than a year. About this time the party met two white men, Indian traders from St. Louis, who confirmed the war news received of the Indian. One of the traders furnished Mr. Stuart and party with a skin canoe, in which they started on the 16th of April for the land of civilization. They made a short but delightful stay at Fort Osage, then in command of Lieutenant Brownson. On the 30th of the month, in good health and spirits, they reached the city of St. Louis. Throughout this long, winter journey, Mr. Stuart exhibited the most courageous, and at the same time the most kind and considerate traits of character, which endeared him to his companions in toil, suffering, and dangers.

## INCIDENTS IN THE LIFE OF ROBERT STUART.

BY MARTIN HEYDENBURK, NOW OF MARSHALL, MICH.

In another paper presented to the State Pioneer Society I gave a sketch of the Mackinaw Mission, superintended by the late Rev. William Ferry, father of U. S. Senator T. W. Ferry. Any history of that mission would be incomplete without reference to Robert Stuart and the fur trade.

Mr. Stuart was the general agent of the American Fur Company's interest in all this region, and his intimate relation with John Jacob Astor gave him a wide influence, and that influence was always used in every good cause. Mr. Stuart was from the first, a warm friend and liberal supporter of the Mackinac Mission. He was a wise counselor, and in times of difficulty and doubt we never sought his aid in vain. After the mission closed, and the fur trade was transferred to another place, Mr. Stuart retired to private life. He removed to Detroit and invested largely there and in other places in real estate. His personal interests occupied most of his time, but he never lost sight of his duties to God, or his obligations to his fellow men. His influence was largely felt at home, through the new settlements, and afterwards in Chicago. He did much to shape the moral, social and political status of our new and coming State.

Mr. Stuart left his home in Scotland when he was quite young, but he had received a good common school education before he left. He went to Canada and studied the French language with a Catholic priest, and then went to New York and joined an expedition fitted out by John Jacob Astor to establish a trading post on the Pacific Coast. They started in the year 1810. They doubled Cape Horn and sailed up the Pacific Coast to the mouth of the Columbia river; there the captain landed the company destined for that place and then proceeded northward to Nootka Sound on a trading expedition. A difficulty arose between the captain and the natives which resulted in the massacre of the crew and the blowing up of the ship. As writing a history of that expedition is no part of my present purpose, I omit the details. The Indians from that region brought the account of the disaster to the company at the Columbia. This company named this post Astoria; they then built a fort and mounted a regular guard for their protection, but soon found that they were left without the means of support, or chance of escape. After some deliberation they determined to send five or six of their number across the country to New York to report. They were fully equipped for their hazardous journey. Each man had his horse or pony to ride, and another for a pack horse to carry provisions; also some goods to trade with the natives for provisions when their supply should be exhausted. Young Stuart was appointed leader of this perilous expedition.

When all was ready they started up the Columbia river. Nothing of special note occurred till they began to ascend the mountain. There they found a tribe of Indians who were very savage in their appearance, but put on friendly airs and used flattering words to deceive. The chief said to Mr. Stuart, it was always their custom when chiefs met to change horses in token of friendship. He had a poor little pony and Stuart a large elegant horse. Stuart told him that was not the custom of white men. He took hold of Stuart's bridle to take his horse by force; Stuart ordered his men to level their rifles at him. He turned away with a laugh and said he was only in fun. They started on, but the Indians could frequently be seen on the distant heights watching their course and their progress. After the third day they saw no more of them and supposed they had ceased to follow them, but they kept a strong guard till the seventh night, when they became so much exhausted that they spanceled their horses and set one man to watch, and the rest lay down to sleep. When all was quiet the man on the watch heard a well-known whistle that all the horses in the country would follow. He gave the alarm, but before they could reach the horses the Indians had cut their fetters and were running them off at full speed. The next morning they were seen posted on the overlooking mountains watching to see what they would do with their goods. They made up a pack for each man and then burned the rest and started on foot to make the rest of their perilous journey.

They wandered a long time in the mountains, but finally reached the plains on this side. But even that afforded them but little relief. They came upon a sandy desert where they traveled six days without finding any water or any living thing; neither beast nor bird, tree nor plant was anywhere visible. They became so near famished that the stronger had to help the weaker. Many interesting incidents occurred that might be related, but as this is not intended as a history of that expedition, I only mention what is necessary to show the training Mr. Stuart had to fit him for the position he was afterward to fill. They started in the spring or early summer and reached St. Louis in midwinter, and from thence they made their way to New York the best way they could.

When Mr. Stuart arrived in New York and made his report the war of 1812 was raging, and the further prosecution of that enterprise was abandoned. Mr. Stuart was then appointed general agent for the American Fur Company. He was married to Miss Catherine Sullivan and was soon established at Mackinac, which became the seat and centre of the fur trade for all the northwest, from Canada to the Rocky Mountains. These facts were gathered from a statement by Mr. Stuart, condensed from his journal and delivered before the lyceum connected with my school for an evening entertainment.

The first thing after Mr. Stuart arrived at Mackinac was to map out the entire Indian country with the location of every tribe and band, and the boundaries were defined with almost as much definiteness as could be done with compass and chain. Trading posts were established at every important point with a pricipal trader to manage each centre, and out-stations well manned to head off the French trader who was already in the field.

When Mr. Ferry arrived at Mackinac in 1822, he found the company's arrangements complete and their business at high tide. He was cordially invited to make Mr. Stuart's house his home, with the promise and with the assurance of all the assistance his position and influence could render in this most difficult undertaking. Missionary work had no sooner commenced than bitter opposition was manifested against it. There was a lawyer there who was ready to oppose every step of progress. He had the ability and all the bitterness of Bob Ingersoll, and all the subtleness of the prince of darkness; and he headed a gang of lewd fellows of the baser sort who were always ready to do his bidding. He could always find laws in the statute book that he could torture into compliance with any scheme he chose to set on foot, and always find tools enough to carry these schemes into effect. When the mission commenced he used every device to hinder or stop it. Sometimes by raising evil reports, sometimes by enticing children away, and sometimes by some legal process. Mr. Stuart was always ready with counsel and influence to thwart his malicious designs and usually they recoiled upon his own head. There were a number of acts passed by the legislative council to protect missionaries and their property, and to enable missionary societies to hold or retake their mission children when enticed away, and to punish those enticing or harboring them. These laws were all made to meet and counteract interruptions set on foot by this man Bailey, and helped on by those under his control. These laws would be hardly intelligible if these facts and circumstances were unknown. These laws were all secured to the mission by the personal efforts and influence of Mr. Stuart. His position gave him a knowledge of the whole country, and all the men of influence in all the northwest; and his business relations gave him an influence almost unbounded. If your case was just you need only to secure his aid in order to succeed.

The laws relative to public flogging were very convenient for this class of men. They could carry any point they wished by their use and make them suit any case they wished to carry. I incidentally referred to these laws in my former paper, but they need a more extended notice. I was incidentally brought in contact with the subject. One of our mission boys was drawn into some irregularity by one who should have been in better business. They were arrested, convicted, and sentenced to be publicly flogged. My boy was so young that it was at my option whether the punishment should be by a public officer or by my own hands in private. I chose the latter. The other party was stripped and flogged in the public street, and the "cat" was officially sent to me to be used on my boy. It was a horrid instrument of torture. It had a wooden handle about two feet long, highly ornamented with six lashes with iron hooks like cat's claws ingeniously twisted in to make it effective. I threw the horrid thing aside, but had to substitute the switch to answer the demands of the law. There was one other instance in which I came in contact with the same subject. A trader wanted a gang of men to man his boat for a trading voyage around the lake, but was short one man. We had a hired man who had previously had some talk of going, but all was left indefinite. That indefinite talk was construed into an engagement, and a refusal was a crime punishable at the whipping post. The man asked me what he should do; I told him to refuse positively. He said they would whip him. I told him I would stand between him and the "cat," and if they touched him it would be the dearest flogging they ever undertook. I never heard anything more about flogging.

In all these trying scenes Mr. Stuart stood by us unflinchingly, but up to this time the basis of all his acts was worldly policy, natural benevolence, or a high sense of honor. He had never made the will of God the controlling principle of his life, nor the law of God the rule of his actions. He needed one other qualification to fit him for the position he was afterwards to fill.

In 1829 or 1830 there was a deep religious awakening. Men were brought face to face with conscience, with God and the future world. He and many others were brought to see their own unfitness to meet a Holy God. He struggled hard and long to resist. Sometimes he would try to shake it off; sometimes to think it a delusion, and sometimes to postpone it to a future time. But all to no purpose; conscience upbraided, the law thundered, and a life misspent stood before him in fearful array. He was out of harmony with himself, with God, and the universe. He did not want to yield, but was afraid longer to resist. He sat up till late at night, and then went to his room and told his wife he had resolved to begin a new life. When this resolution was made he felt that he had entered upon a new state of existence. He came into harmony with himself and all the world around him. The glory of the upper world seemed to flash upon him with all its splendor. In simplicity and humility he was like a little child; but in resisting sin and all kinds of wickedness he was a giant. Here began the moral power by which he accomplished so much in Detroit and through all the new settlements of this State and in Chicago, to hold intemperance in check and to correct many of the abuses and evils of society. Whisky was one of the pricipal articles of exchange in the fur trade. Before his conversion, Mr. Stuart had joined the temperance society and was trying to do something to suppress the evil. But after this change his conscience troubled him. He felt that it was inconsistent for a temperance man and Christian to send whisky by the barrel to the Indians. The company would put this branch of the trade into other hands and relieve him; but then the evil would be increased four-fold. His best friends persuaded him to hold his position, even if he was reproached, and lessen the evil he could not cure. He finally consented, but not till he had obtained the opinion and advice of the most eminent men in the country.

Another trying point in his experience was the Sabbath question. After his conversion every hour of that day was to him sacred time; and for weeks after he had no interruption. But when the boats began to come in loaded with fur, there was danger that they might encounter storms and be lost. It had become the law of that trade, if the trader could get his boat to the wharf and anything happened to it after that, the loss fell on the company; but if the boat did not touch the wharf the trader lost it. One Sabbath as they returned from church a messenger came and reported that the Mississippi boats would be in about three o'clock. The wind was blowing strong from the east and the waves were rolling in from Lake Huron, and everything looked threatening. Mr. Stuart walked the house and groaned. If he should unload the boat it would be a violation of holy time; if he did not unload it and it was lost, it would be a betrayal of trust reposed in him. Either way the cause of religion would suffer. After a little time his wife looked up to him and said, playfully: Bobbie, how much do you think you are worth? He said, perhaps $20,000. How much is that load of fur worth? Perhaps $5,000 or $6,000. Well, then, I would stop groaning, and if the boat comes in, tell them to tie her up, and if she goes to pieces pay the company, and tell them you would rather do that than violate the Sabbath. The boat came in. He said tie her up and let her stay till morning. He went to bed and slept till twelve o'clock and then called the men, and before light all was safely stored away. These are little things, but they show the principle that governed him in all his after life; and also the difference between Christian principle and the principle that governs the world.

In 1835 Astor closed out their business at Mackinac and Mr. Stuart removed to Detroit and invested largely in real estate there and elsewhere, which occupied most of his time! but he was identified with the temperance reform and other moral and social improvements, and his voice was always heard and influence felt where any good was to be accomplished or evil opposed. He was appointed State Treasurer by Governor Woodbridge in 1841 on account of his financial skill, to correct some abuses under a former administration; and he would have held many other positions of honor and trust if his private interests and personal matters had given him the time. Not long after he closed his public duties as State Treasurer, he was called to Chicago to attend to some important public business which occupied him till the time of his death, which came suddenly and in a peculiar manner. He was apparently in perfect health. In the evening a few friends called in and the conversation was cheerful and animated. Some allusion was made to a death that had occurred, and then to death in general, and to the manner of dying. One said he would like to go this way and another that way. Some one asked how he would like to go out of this world? He said, "as Elijah did." At a reasonable time the company left, and Mrs. Stuart retired and left him sitting in his chair. After a time she called to him and asked if he was not coming to bed? He did not answer. She got up and found him sitting as she had left him, but lifeless. His spirit had gone to its reward. Thus closed on the 29th of October, 1848, in the full vigor of a noble manhood, a life full of high and noble purposes, and left a faithful wife who had stood by him in all the difficult and trying scenes through which they passed, prompting him when he hesitated, and encouraging him when his zeal seemed to abate. She long survived him to carry out many of his benevolent designs and purposes. Their house was always open to ministers and for all benevolent purposes. She told me about the last time I saw her in Detroit, that her house would always be my home when in Detroit, and that my chair and plate would be unoccupied till I came.

After Mr. Stuart's death she was frequently called to pass through deep waters, and it seemed often, that another wave would engulf her; but she stood like a rock in the storm. The rolling flood only carried away the rubbish and made her Christian graces shine the brighter. The great want of the present age is more of such men and women. Their benevolence, their sterling integrity and their high Christian principles make them an ornament to any society, and a blessing to the community.

## EXTRACTS FROM A FUNERAL DISCOURSE ON THE OCCASION OF THE DEATH OF ROBERT STUART, ESQ.

### BY REV. GEORGE DUFFIELD, D. D.,

**Pastor of the First Presbyterian Church of Detroit, of which church Mr. Stuart was a ruling elder. Delivered November 12, 1848.**

Mr. Robert Stuart was the son of upright parents, who dwelt in Perthshire in the north of Scotland, where in 1784 he was born, with whom he spent his minority, and was educated according to the usages of the Presbyterian Church in its doctrinal belief and in a religious regard for the Sabbath, a reverence for the Sacred Scriptures as the word of God, and a respect for the ministry of that word as a divine ordinance. It is worthy of particular attention, that in the earlier period of her history, long before his heart was subdued by the love of Christ these three things operated as habits of action, and threw an influence around him which followed him into the wilderness, and forsook him not throughout all the scenes of an eventful life. Although at that time an unconverted man, such was the influence of his early education and his conviction of the wisdom and necessity of the Sabbath, that during his journey from the Pacific to the Atlantic, he invariably rested on that sacred day, nor suffered his company to do else. And he has often been heard to say when commending the Sabbath, "That mainly owing to that circumstance did he attribute his rapid and successful transit, in twelve months, from the mouth of the river Oregon to the city of New York.

At the age of twenty-two, being minded to leave his parental abode for the East Indies, at the request of our worthy and venerable friend and brother, his uncle, Mr. David Stuart, then an agent of the Northwest Company in Lower Canada, he came to Montreal; but finding that ere his arrival his respected relative had gone to the coast of Labrador, he followed the counsel he had left for him, and became associated with his friends in connection with the same company; and under the tutorage of a Roman Catholic priest made himself master of the French language, the better to qualify himself for the commercial life to which he had devoted himself.

Subsequently he entered the office of the Attorney General of the province, and continued in Canada till Mr. John Jacob Astor, having formed the design of establishing trading posts along the Missouri and Columbia rivers, and especially, of planting a colonial establishment at the mouth of the latter, and of extending similar posts along the Pacific Coast, organized "The Pacific Fur Company," when Mr. Stuart, with his uncle as partner of the firm, sailed in September, 1810; and having doubled Cape Horn and touched at the Sandwich Islands, reached the place of destination, and aided in laying the foundation of a city in the remote Northwest, which has since become connected with the public history, and well known to the people of the United States; the perils and disasters of which enterprise have been recorded by the pen of our honored and gifted countryman, the author of "Astoria."

We refer to but one circumstance in this period of his life; and that, because it affords an illustration of the kind and watchful care of the providence of that God of whom he then was ignorant, but whose designs of mercy guarded him; and because it subsequently afforded to his own grateful conviction of its truth, the verification in himself of that wonderful restraining grace which He extends, as he did to Ephraim, to those whom He intends to subdue to Himself. "I taught Ephriam also to go, taking them by their arms but they knew not that I healed them." Hos. xi. 3.

Soon after their arrival at Astoria, it was arranged that the "Tonquin," the vessel that carried them out, should coast towards the north, and having traded for peltry at the different harbors, touch at Astoria on her return home in the autumn. Mr. Stuart was to form one of the company on board, and had his baggage already on the quay to embark, when some difference having occurred between him and the captain, he ordered it back to the factory, refused to sail with him, and gave place to another. She sailed on the 5th of June, 1811, with a company of twenty-three, including crew, and in a few days arrived at Vancouver's Island, and anchored in the harbor of Neweetee. Through the petulance and obstinacy of the captain, the wrath of the savages, who came to trade with them, was quickly and powerfully excited. He had neglected the instructions given on the subject of admitting them on board, and though warned by the interpreter and besought by the partner, who had taken Mr. Stuart's place, to weigh anchor and speedily to sail from the place, he replied by pointing to his guns. The result was, that the Indians in large numbers, having been admitted on deck, having carried on a deceitful trade, till they had all armed themselves with knives thus purchased; and having distributed themselves conveniently, at a signal given, uttered the savage yell, and rushed, each one upon his marked victim. A bloody engagement followed, till the savages withdrew from the ship leaving but five of the company alive, who had retreated and fortified themselves in the cabin. Four of these left the ship in the life-boat, but falling into the hands of the savages suffered a protracted and torturing death. One wounded man alone remained on the vessel meditating revenge. The savages returned the next day in immense numbers for pillage, when the only survivor of the company seizing his opportunity and setting fire to the magazine, blew up himself and ship and Indians with a tremendous explosion. The providence of God, who foresees all things, preserved Mr. Stuart, when he knew it not, from perishing with this unfortunate crew.

The loss of this vessel and other causes, rendered it necessary for the Colony to send an expedition by land, which was confieded to him, who started with six others, and having through a dreary and painful journey traversed the vast howling wilderness amid perils and privations surpassing the wildest scenes of romance arrived in twelve months thereafter in the city of New York. The war with Great Britain at that time existing, and the blocade of that city and of the whole Atlantic Coast, frustrated the enterprise at Astoria and threw Mr. Stuart into different scenes.

Having been united in marriage with our beloved sister, who now mourns her irreparable loss, and having formed new business relations, he removed in 1817 to the island of Mackinac; where, for eighteen years he engaged in conducting the commercial enterprise of the American Fur Company, then prosecuting an extensive trade with the Aborigines of our forests, from the lakes to the Rocky Mountains.

The firmness of his natural disposition, which had not been mellowed by the grace of God; his sternness, decision, and energy; and the degraded character of the Indians and *voyageurs* and *coureurs de bois*, with whom he was constantly brought in contact; and withal his native sense of justice, honor, and integrity, rendered him efficient and invaluable as a business man, and gave him a name and influence that commanded general respect and awe. Of the religion which has its seat in the heart, and commences in the regeneration of the man, he had no experimental knowledge. As a lofty man of the world he cared not to seek it, but rather disdained it; regarding it either as a proof of weakness of character, or as the merest enthusiasm. Nevertheless, educated as he had been, in the forms and doctrines of the church of Scotland, he honored and valued the ordinances and rites of Christian worship, as preserved and practiced in their simplicity by his ancestors and countrymen. His religion, however, like that of multitudes, if not of most who have never been renewed in heart by the Spirit of God, and who live after the fashion and manners of the world, was wholly ritual. Its elements were external morality, doctrinal orthodoxy, prevalent convictions of the truth of Christianity as a system of valuable ethics, historical faith, demonstrations of respect for its institutions and consistent professors, and conformity to its general ritual.

There were, however, at that time on the island no religious persons or institutions of the Protestant character, which only he had been wont to respect. But like Manoah, who valued the ordinances of divine worship, and sought to have a man of God "to teach (him) what to do unto the child that should be born," he procured, through the aid of the United Foreign Missionary Society, a minister of the Dutch Reformed Church, to labor as teacher of the youth and preacher of the gospel, among a population reckless and wild, and wholly devoid of the fear of God in their hearts. After the example of the great woman of Shunem, who said to her husband concerning Elisha, "I perceive that this is an holy man of God, which passeth by us continually, let us make I pray thee, a little chamber on the wall, and let us set for him there a bed, and a table, and a stool, and a candlestick, and it shall be when he cometh to us he shall turn in hither."—II. Kings, iv. 9, 10. He took the minister of Christ to his own house, and welcomed him in it as one of his household. But being a man of the world, and devoted to business, strongly characterized by the bold and lofty spirit of the Highlander, and familiar with the gorgeous scenes of the hospitable tables of "the mighty northwesters," who, in the feudal state of Fort William, imitated the old feasts in the Highland castles, the minister of God was denied all other influence than what was conceded to him on the Sabbath, on which day only of the seven, was he allowed to gather the family for domestic worship. The wisdom, prudence, and fidelity of this man of God, quietly and conscientiously discharging his duty, without ostentatious intermeddling and sanctimonious dictation, gradually made its impression. Mr. Stuart became the friend and advocate of temperance and every measure of reform, especially for the welfare of the Indian tribes, and cheerfully assumed much of the labor incident to the subsequent establishment of the Mackinac Mission, under the care of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, after the United Foreign Missionary Society relinquished its stations to them. How much his services in these respects was prized, may be inferred from the honor conferred upon him by the Dutch Reformed Church for the kindness he had shown to their missionary.

God blessed the labors of his missionary servant, and in process of time poured out his spirit upon the mission. The humbler class were first converted, the men of lofty mien stood aloof, and fortified themselves against the power of the truth. For a time Mr. Stuart was of their number. But the stout hearts, in the progress of that gracious work, began to relent; and, what deserves particular notice, the men that like him, had welcomed the minister of God, and rallied to his support, and who in like respect both honored God and His ordinance, although at first ignorant of divine grace, were themselves honored by being made partakers of His grace, and their families being preserved, while those that rejected and despised the minister of God and his preaching, were left unblessed, and their families, becoming the victims of dissipation, were scattered.

During the season of special divine influence in 1828, with which that missionary station was favored, the spirit of God gave power to His preached gospel and convinced Mr. Stuart of "sin and righteousness and judgment." He felt that something more than ritual holiness was needed in order to become a true Christian. It was a fearful struggle, which, as in the moments of Christian communion he has related to me, then commenced between the pride of his natural heart and an awakened and guilty conscience. He saw the enmity of his heart against God, and was overwhelmed by the view of his inward, deep and total depravity. He felt that he had all his life abused the mercy of God and been rebellious against Him. He owned the justice of that sentence of God's righteous law, which condemned him to eternal death. He saw that he had no plea to make but that of guilt, that his life had been wholly selfish, uninfluenced by any supreme regard for the honor and glory of God, and that he lay at the feet of his adorable sovereignty helpless, hopeless, ruined forever, if God, for Christ's sake, did not extend mercy to him. The offers of that mercy through Jesus Christ, though once so mortifying and humiliating to his pride, he gratefully accepted. The truth and spirit of God prevailed, and the lion became a lamb. Prostrate at the feet of Jesus Christ, he renounced his selfishness and sin; and, in the deep flowings of repentance, cordially accepting pardoning mercy through His atoning blood, he consecrated himself to God for time and eternity, to be his servant to serve him faithfully, whatever others might think, or say, or do. Thenceforth the cause of God became the object of his highest attachment. The labor of his hands, the contributions of his purse, were ever ready to advance its interests. The worship of God he established in his house; and the Sabbath was wholly devoted to the interests of religion, in his own soul and in his family, in the Sunday school and in the church. Although exposed to the influence of much worldly company, and thrown of necessity into the society of the gay, and the lovers of wine and strong drink, he became the decided, zealous and consistent advocate of temperance, practicing and urging total abstinence from all intoxicating drinks. The poor, neglected and desolate Indians awakened his sympathies. They were amazed at the change they saw, and thenceforth honored and loved him as a father.

The zealous friend and advocate of liberty, he felt keenly the oppression practiced on the slave, and ever took especial delight in teaching and helping in every way the poor fugitives that fled for freedom. And while opposed to all partisan, unconstitutional, and factious methods to rid the country of the awful curse of slavery, he firmly and warmly testified against the evils and sins of this wretched system of oppression. He was ever ready to give counsel to those that were in distress, whatever their grade and condition in life. His charity extended beyond the communion of his own church. His heart and hand were ever open to aid and encourage those whom he believed to be embarked in a good cause.

In 1835 he removed to Detroit, and in 1837 was elected and installed ruling elder in the church. You have known his going out and coming in; and his history among you need not to be detailed. The circumstances of his decease were as strongly marked as were the great outlines of his life. He was translated without having been made to taste the pains of death. After a week of especial enjoyment in domestic and religious scenes, and without the least apprehension of disease approaching, he retired, on Saturday night, to rest at a late hour. Sleep not invading his frame, and restlessness coming on, he rose on the morning of the Sabbath very early, and seated himself in his chair before the fire. Shortly after, his afflicted widow waking, rose and approached him. Supposing him to be asleep, she sought to rouse him, but it was the sleep of death. "Blessed are the pure in heart." The hour of his blessedness had come, and he ceased to be with us.

With us! We wrong thee by the earthly thought;
  Could our fond gaze but follow where thou art,
Well might the glories of this world seem naught,
  To the one promise given the pure in heart.

Yet wert thou blest e'en here—oh! ever blest
  In thine own sunny thoughts and tranquil faith;
The silent joy that still o'erflowed thy breast;
  Needed but guarding from all change by death.

* * * * * * * *

Farewell! thy life hath left surviving love
  A wealth of records and "sweet feelings given,"
From sorrow's heart the faintness to remove,
  By whispers breathing "less of earth than heaven."

Thus rests thy spirit still on those with whom
  Thy step the path of joyous duty trod,
Bidding them make an altar of thy tomb,
  Where chastened thought may offer praise to God.

---

God called him home,
And he, of whom I speak, stood up alone,
And in his firm fidelity wrought on
Until his master called him.

Oh, is it not a noble thing to die
As dies the Christian with his armor on?
What is the hero's clarion, though its blast
Ring with the mastery of a world, to this?
What are the searching victories of mind—
The love of vanished ages? What are all
The trumpetings of proud humanity
  To the short history of him who made
His sepulchre beside the King of Kings?

## LINES ON THE DEATH OF ROBERT STUART, ESQ.

Hush'd be each note of gladness!
Let sorrow have her way—
For manly hearts are swelling
With bitter grief to-day.

A righteous man has fall'n
While yet in mellow years,
And overwhelmed with sadness,
A city mourns in tears.

The poor man, still lamenting
That he should now survive
The hand, whose constant bounty
Enabled him to live.

The trembling sons of bondage
Who lurk round freedom's shore,*
In bitter strains complaining,
Their steadfast friend deplore.

The virtuous man, hard struggling
With life's afflictive woes,
Now falls despairing in his path,
And yields him to his foes.

And the man of timid faith,
Who by his counsel stood:
Sinks down in stormy waters,
By fatal doubt subdued—

For every drooping spirit
He had some word of cheer;
And the head was gladly lifted,
His soothing voice to hear.

Like summer rill, his bounty
A quiet pathway found;
And, though unseen by many,
Shed blessings all around.

Nature endowed him nobly;
But grace in holier plan,
Retouched with heavenly colors,
The glories of the man.

The virtues all united,
Here ever shone the same;
And now—a cherished memory
Embalms his honored name!

Then hush each note of gladness;
Let sorrow have her way—
For manly hearts are swelling
With bitter grief to-day.

DETROIT, NOV. 6, 1848. D. B. DUFFIELD.

---

* The Fugitive Slave Law was then in force, and slaves were escaping to Canada through Detroit.

# THE CLIMATE OF DETROIT.

BY BELA HUBBARD, ESQ., OF DETROIT.

**Read before the Detroit Scientific Association, October, 1874.**

Within a few years the science of meteorology has made great progress under organized corps of observers. It is fair to state that while I make use of all the resources within my reach, in the preparation of this paper, its conclusions are based mainly upon independent observations, drawn from my records of the last thirty-nine years. Little of merit as these may claim, compared with the more strict deductions of the scientist, they may, like the observations of almost any lover of nature, serve to set facts in some new light, or new combination, and thus have a practical value.

That the immense bodies of water known as the Great Lakes affect the climate of this region is well known; but the nature and extent of their influence are yet but little familiar to the popular mind. Indeed, with all the advance in the science of weather, the data for scientific determinations have been and still are very scanty.

## TEMPERATURE.

The controlling element in all climates is temperature. The direction and strength of winds, and the amount of moisture descending in rain, mist and snow, are sources of modification, or results, rather than chief causes. Though the temperature of any locality depends mainly upon the general astronomical causes, felt all around the globe, it is also known that local causes have a very considerable share in the production of climate. Thus, the seasons on this continent differ greatly from those of the same latitudes in Europe, being hotter in summer and colder in winter. Our spring and autumn also differ from theirs in duration, and in other characteristics.

General facts like these, I assume without going into the wide field of explanation. They and their causes are familiar to you.

I shall also assume, as well known, the fact, that isothermal lines, or lines drawn through places of equal temperature over the United States, by no means conform to the latitude, but are deflected north or south by local causes, and that among these the great lakes have a prominent importance.

The winter isothermal lines are deflected northerly, and the summer lines southerly, in approaching these bodies of water. In other words, their vicinity is warmer in winter and cooler in summer than places in the same parallel removed from them, except in the immediate vicinity of the ocean.

### SUMMER AND WINTER ISOTHERMAL LINES.

These general facts I shall endeavor to render more clear by means of a chart. [This chart is not furnished for insertion in this volume.] Instead of the usual method of delineating the isotherms in a regular series of degrees of temperature, I have taken only the means, in summer and in winter, of certain places specially important to my purpose, and carry the isotherms of these degrees across the region of the lakes, from the Atlantic to the Mississippi. For instance, Detroit has a mean summer temperature of 67° and a mean winter temperature of 26°.

You will notice the summer isothermal of 67°, drawn in red, commencing at the sea coast at Cape Cod. It passes a few miles up the coast and thence inland to a lower latitude in central Massachusetts. From thence it rises rather suddenly into and along the valley of Lake Champlain, almost to Montreal. Here it divides, passing southerly. One branch between Albany and Utica is carried into the high lands of Pennsylvania, whence it rises again toward Buffalo, and west through Lake Erie. The other follows Montreal river and south shore of Lake Ontario and north shore of Lake Erie, uniting with the former at Detroit From here it bears northerly into the Peninsula almost 2° of latitude, until, feeling the cool waters of Lake Michigan, it loops suddenly down toward Chicago. Curving thence upward along the western coast, it leaves the lake at a point some miles north of Milwaukee, but at a lower point than on the eastern coast. Its course is now rapidly northward, until it reaches the parallel of 46°, in longitude 95°, a little north and west of St. Paul.

From the parallel of 42° on the Atlantic it has passed through 4° of latitude, or about 280 miles, in its approach to the western plains. Over these, passing westward, it rises to a much higher parallel.

The cooling effect of the lakes upon the summer heats is here strikingly shown. Detroit has a lower mean summer temperature than Montreal and Quebec, although the latter is nearly 5° further north.

St. Paul is hotter than Chicago, 3° south.

The isothermal of the mean winter temperature of Detroit exhibits equal aberrations. Commencing at the sea coast about latitude 43°, and coursing first south and then up the Hudson to Albany, it is thence pressed rapidly to the south and along the Alleghanies, down to the parallel of 40°. Thence it sweeps northerly to Buffalo, whence it passes west across Lake Erie, loops up into Lake Huron, down to Detroit, and thence rapidly southwest into Indiana. It thence again loops upward and far into Lake Michigan, sweeping the easterly coast. Turning sharply thence to Chicago it trends rapidly to the southwest, and strikes the Missouri at about the parallel of 40°.

From its lowest depression, at this point, to its highest at the lakes, it has passed through 4° of latitude, showing admirably the warming influence of the lakes upon the winter cold of this zone.

Let us now take a more northerly point and follow the isotherms of Sault Ste. Marie and Marquette, which have each a summer mean of 62° and a winter of 18°.

You see by the chart how the line of 62° bends south from its high latitude, north of Quebec, well down into Lake Huron, and that passing thence into Lake Superior it trends still more rapidly to the north. Between the meridians of 70° and 95° it has ranged through 5° of latitude, or 350 miles.

The winter mean of 18° shows still more complicated irregularities, though not so wide a divergence. It has its most southerly deflections in Massachusetts and Minnesota, about latitude 44°, and its most northerly at the coast of Lake Superior, in latitude 47°, a range of 3°.

Take now some points south of Michigan, say the city of New York, which has a summer mean of 72°, and a winter of 31°.

The isotherm of 72° follows down the Alleghanies as far south as the parallel of 38°; thence bears rapidly northwest to Dubuque, ranging through nearly 5° of latitude. You cannot fail to observe how it loops up into the peninsula of Michigan as far north as Detroit, but bears away from the near vicinity of the lakes, where the summer means are cooler by 4° or 5°.

The winter isotherm of 32°, commencing at the sea coast near New York, flanks the Alleghanies through several degrees of latitude, southerly, thence curves upwards towards the lakes as far north as Columbus, Ohio, and thence again bends southerly, until it strikes the Missouri, west of, and about the latitude of St. Louis, a range of less than 3°. Both these isotherms are too distant to be as much affected by the lakes as those first noticed.

These few observations perhaps sufficiently illustrate, though they by no means show all the divergences and irregularities to which many of the isothermals of this latitude are subject.

### THE LAKE REGION A PLATEAU.

Our locality, though so greatly modified in several aspects of its climate by the presence of the great lakes, falls within the general system which prevails throughout the temperate zone on this continent.

It will be remembered that the lakes do not occupy valleys, as many suppose, nor do they fill gorges among mountains. On the contrary, there are no very elevated lands on or near their borders, but the region is rather a vast plain than a valley. The plans of ascent from their surfaces are very moderate; the levels which separate the streams that discharge into the lakes from those which discharge into the Atlantic or Gulf of Mexico being broad and low, rather plateaus than hills.

Were these bodies of water dry land, of the same elevation, there would exist no conditions tending to deflect the isothermal lines from their regular curves from the great plains to the Atlantic. But so large a surface of water —warmer in winter and cooler in summer than the land—does very sensibly affect the temperature of the atmosphere which passes over them, and as temperature is the governing element of climate, the character of the seasons is essentially modified through their influence. The effect is to equalize the temperature over a considerable area, and to soften the extremes.

### EFFECT OF THE LAKES UPON THE TEMPERATURE.

This modification of the climate may be made further apparent, by a comparison of the *mean range of temperature of the months*, for a series of years, at different posts of observation in this latitude.

Thus, while the mean temperature of the year does not vary greatly for the lake borders and places 500 miles distant, east and west, on the same parallel, the temperature at the latter falls to a lower mean in winter, or rises to a higher one in summer, or both. The mean of the year at Detroit and through New York and New England, on the same parallel, 47° to 48°, differs only about 1°; but the mean range, that is, the increase from February, when the rising scale begins, until it commences to decline, in July, is at Albany and Amherst 4.5° greater; the means raising from a range of 43° during that period at Detroit, to 47.5° at the other places.

Westward, this feature is still more conspicuous. At Battle Creek, due west from Detroit, and about equi-distant from Lakes Erie and Michigan, we find a mean range 10° greater than in Detroit; the mean of the year being only a little more than 1° higher. At Dubuque the difference is 12°. At St. Paul (2° of latitude further north) it is 16°. The mean of the year being at Dubuque 2° higher, and at St. Paul 3° lower than here, while the winter at Dubuque is 4° colder, and the summer 4.5° warmer than Detroit.

The mean temperature of December and January at Detroit is quite uniformly the same, and varies but little from the general winter mean of 27°. At the other places named, on the lowest parallel, the lowest mean is not reached until some time in January; but the temperature begins to rise from that month onward, and merges more rapidly into the heats of summer.

The difference between the means of January and March at Detroit is 8°. At other places east, in the same latitude, it is 9° to 10°. The same difference is found at Battle Creek; scarcely less at Chicago; while at Dubuque it rises to 15°, and at St. Paul to 18°.

Equally marked is the rapid increase of temperature from March to May. At Detroit the advance does not exceed 20°. At Utica, Albany and Amherst it exceeds 24°. A like increase obtains at Battle Creek and Chicago, and at Dubuque and St. Paul it reaches 27°.

The maximum summer heat is attained in July, in this latitude, the mean of the months being about 2° above the summer mean at Detroit and eastward, and about 3° at places westward.

Thence the decline into autumn is very gradual until September, the temperature of August corresponding nearly with the means of summer throughout, and that of September ranging from 6° to 8° below.

From September the decline is more rapid, but regular to October, which represents the means of the autumn quite closely.

The decline from the means of summer to those of autumn varies from 18° to 20°, being a difference of about 2° only for the different places named on this parallel. But the decline from autumn to winter, which is but 20° at Lake Erie, ranges to 24° at the interior stations east and to 30° at Dubuque, and at Battle Creek to 27°.

### EFFECT OF THE LAKES.

These results show the effect of the lakes: *First,* In a modification of the extremes, causing a difference of several degrees in the means of both summer and winter near their borders.

*Second,* In a prolongation of spring on the lake borders. Here the temperature of April represents nearly the mean of spring. At Battle Creek, April is about 4° above the means of spring, and at Dubuque April has nearly reached the mean of May at Detroit.

*Third,* In a prolongation of autumn or more gradual descent into winter. In December places on this parallel in New York, Massachusetts and Central Michigan have reached the winter mean of Detroit, but still want 2° or 3° of their own winter mean. Dubuque in December has reached a point 2° lower than the winter mean of Detroit.

*Fourth,* In a modification of single extremes. The maximum, noted by me in thirty years' observation, at and near Detroit, is 94°, the minimum, 18°. Very rarely does the mercury fall below 10° in any winter, the above extreme of 18° having occurred only twice during the period.

During the same period in central New York and Massachusetts the maximum has reached above 100° and the minimum 34°; the Detroit minimum of 18° having occurred on an average once in every two winters.

Such severe extremes are often sudden and very temporary, and afford little indication of the general character of the seasons. Nevertheless, they are an important element in our estimate, and often attest the capability, or otherwise, of any given climate for the growing of the more tender plants.

### WESTERLY WINDS AS MODIFYING CAUSES.

These favorable modifications of the prevailing climate of this region are still more strongly impressed upon the eastern than the western borders of the lakes, in consequence of the prevailing westerly winds, which distribute over the land the more equable temperature of the water.

The mean of summer at Grand Haven is 2° lower, and that of winter 3° higher than at Milwaukee. The summer temperature is also carried farther on into the autumn, and the winter mean falls a month later.

Still more marked is the situation in regard to single extremes. It is claimed that the thermometer never falls below 16°, as an extreme mean at any point on the eastern shore of Lake Michigan (Prof. Winchell), even as far north as Traverse Bay, a latitude in which elsewhere, both east and west, the temperature has at periods of extreme cold fallen as low as 40°.

The wonderful advantages possessed by this favored coast of our peninsula are fast procuring for it an envied celebrity. It is destined to become the most noted fruit region of the United States, having all the advantages of the climate of the Ohio, Missouri and California without their drawbacks.

It will be seen that Detroit, though so favorably affected by the vicinity of the lakes, cannot claim all the extraordinary benefits they confer in so high a degree, and why the palm is borne from her by the locations on Lake Michigan and by the southern coast and the islands of Lake Erie.

That delicate foreigner, the peach, is with us liable to loss of the crop by May frosts, and even the tree itself often suffers from the winter extremes; but no such mishaps occur on the western coast of the peninsula. The native grape frequently suffers here, both in fruit and vine, but the crop almost never fails upon the islands in Lake Erie. These have a climate peculiarly favorable, both from the retarded spring and the prolonged autumn of their locality. In these respects they contrast most favorably with the much more southerly climates where the grape is cultivated.

An evidence of this came under my observation in the spring of 1860. Being at Lexington, Kentucky, on the night of the 25th of April, I was desirous to visit the most promising vineyard in that neighborhood, the vines of which were set full in fruit. The morning brought a black frost, and when I visited the yard not a bunch was found unspared; the whole crop was destroyed. Returning north, I reached Lake Erie on the 1st of May. There a winter temperature still reigned, and not a bud had put forth. In due time the island vines set fruit and produced an abundant crop.

### COMPARATIVE CHARACTER OF THE SEASONS AS AFFECTED BY THE LAKES.

The character of our seasons as shown by these comparisons of temperature may be stated thus, in general terms:

The winter of Detroit is warmer than that of places in the same latitude in central New York, Massachusetts and Michigan, by at least 2°, and is 4.5° warmer than the mean 500 miles west.

Spring has nearly the same mean temperature as the central positions mentioned, but is 4° colder than the latter, and the increase from March to May is more gradual.

Summer is cooler than on the parallel east by 1° to 2°, than central Michigan by 3°, and the more westerly positions by 4.5°.

Autumn is cooler by 1° than the points east; by 2° than central Michigan, and by 4° than the westerly posts; and the decline of heat is less rapid through the autumn months.

### PREVAILING WINDS.

The prevailing winds of this locality are in winter west, or those directions into which west enters. They vary from southwest to northwest, are often north and northwest, but seldom east or southeast.

In the spring east and northeast winds prevail nearly half the time. They vary from east to west and northeast to south, but seldom northwest. In some of the spring months, usually March or April, east and northeast winds are the prevailing ones. In others westerly.

In summer southwest winds prevail, varying from south to west. East and west winds are frequent, but very few northwest or southeast.

In autumn westerly winds are prevalent, varying to southwest and south, but a westerly direction enters into two-thirds of the winds of this season.

Taking the yearly average, probably two-thirds of the winds are southwest, west and northwest.

Light showers or falls of snow come with westerly winds, as also the summer thunder-storms, but the long rains and snow storms are attended by an easterly wind. The severe and cold wind storms, however, are from the west, and it is from this direction that the winds come with greatest force, and we receive the storms that are so destructive to vessels on the lakes. This prevalence of surface winds from the west is only a necessary result of that majestic atmospheric current, which, in this temperate zone, is ever silently but unceasingly sweeping round the globe.

### RAINFALL.

As the amount of precipitation of moisture, in the form of rain and snow, depends upon the vicinity of large water surfaces, it would naturally be supposed that the climate of Michigan should be a moist one. But the contrary is the case. In fact, the peninsula climate is exceedingly dry, if we consider the total amount of rainfall. The cause will be apparent when we consider the source from which our rains come, and the relation that subsists between the rainfall and the temperature.

The Gulf of Mexico undoubtedly furnishes the great source of supply to the atmosphere east of the plains. The vapor-laden trade winds, coming from the warm tropic seas carry their volumes of moisture over the Gulf States, where large quantities are precipitated. As it is borne further inland this supply meets the great current of southwesterly winds and is carried north and east, with a constantly diminishing amount of precipitation. From the gulf coast, where it is greatest, to the lakes, the rainfall has gradually diminished from the large mean annual amount of sixty inches to twenty-eight inches.

This result would probably be quite uniform were there no diversities of surface to cause local differences.

The same effect is visible, to a less extent, along the Atlantic Coast, where the easterly winds contribute to the supply.

To a still less extent this effect is apparent in the vicinity of the lakes.

The total rainfall is two to four inches greater in the interior of the peninsula than on the immediate borders.

The law which prevails in Europe, of an excess of precipitation upon the mountain summits and elevated plains, does not hold generally in the United States, where rather a contrary law obtains. The high plateaus—even the elevated chain of the Alleghanies—have less of both summer and annual precipitation than the lower lands on either side. Our peninsula, which is a plateau not exceeding 1,000 feet above the ocean, is no excption to the rule.

This phenomenon is doubtless due to the lower temperature of the higher lands, during the season of greatest precipitation, and shows that general rather than local causes govern the rainfall throughout the whole country. The cooler summer atmosphere which we have seen to be the effect of the near vicinity of the lakes, contributes to this result, and will explain in part, no doubt, the comparative dryness of the Michigan climate.

### OUR RAINS NON-PERIODIC.

With the exception of the gulf coast this portion of the United States belongs to the great area of equally distributed rains, one that has no defined rainy seasons.

We have, consequently, no periodic rains, although the periods of most abundant rains are looked for quite regularly in the summer and the early autumn months. It is usual to expect the "equinoctial storm," as it is called —a rainy period of several days—about the end of September; but even this is quite uncertain, both as to its duration and even its occurrence.

During the heat of summer our rains occasionally assume a character suited to the tropical vehemence of the temperature, and pour down with great profusion, though their duration is short.

A peculiar phenomenon of the rain storms in this locality is that they occur so frequently under the cool shades of the night, preceded and followed by cloudless days.

Although the amount of rainfall is so small in this district, I think it will be found, were the records sufficiently extended, that the number of days on which some rain or snow falls is as great as in more southerly districts, where the annual amount is twofold.

### ATMOSPHERIC HUMIDITY, AS AFFECTED BY THE LAKES.

That our atmosphere is little, if at all, affected by the diffuse evaporation from the surrounding water surfaces is evident from its great clearness, the intense azure of its sky, and the brilliancy of its moonlight and star canopy.

The region of the lakes is noted also for its beautiful sunsets. In this, as well as in the transparency of its atmosphere, it excels the Eastern States, and more than rivals far-famed Southern Europe. Talk of the blue skies of Italy!

We have more clear firmament, and of a deeper depth of blue, in one month than Italy in half the year.

To exhibit clearly our relation to the surrounding territory would require charts of the isohyetal lines. In the absence of these, a brief statement may serve to convey a proximate idea.

### THE RAINFALL AS CONTROLLED BY THE SEASONS.

In broad terms, the area of eight to nine inches spring rainfall includes the whole Michigan peninsula. The central and western portions have nearly one inch more than the eastern, and at Mackinaw and St. Mary's the total has diminished to about five inches.

The area of nine to ten inches, summer rainfall, includes all the lakes and Lower Canada. There is but little variation throughout the peninsula; nine inches representing fairly the eastern side, and ten inches the central and western.

The autumn rainfall has about the same general average, but diminishes to about eight and one-half inches at the north, or to the same mean as Wisconsin.

The average winter precipitation is about five inches; somewhat less on the east side of the State, and about one and one-half inches more in the interior and west.

The total annual precipitation is thirty to thirty-one inches on the east side, increasing south and west to thirty-four inches, and diminishing to twenty-five inches at Mackinaw. The average for the whole peninsula is thirty-three inches.

### OTHER LOCALITIES COMPARED.

Comparing these means with those which obtain at a small remove we find that a summer rainfall of from ten to twelve inches (or two to three inches in excess of Detroit) crowds closely up Lakes Michigan, Erie and Ontario, and sweeps over the lower half of Wisconsin, and as far north and west at St. Paul.

The winter precipitation increases rapidly as we advance south from Lake Erie, being fully seven inches through the north part of Ohio and Indiana (or more than two inches above the mean of Michigan), and increases to eleven inches at Cincinnati.

Proceeding south from Michigan the total annual precipitation increases at the rate of about three inches for every degree of latitude to the Ohio river, where it is forty-eight inches, or fifteen inches more than the mean of Michigan.

At 95° longitude the mean annual precipitation is about the same as at Detroit. But thence westward the diminution is rapid, and at the meridian of 100° it is scarcely more than half that amount.

From the lakes to the Atlantic we find a gradual increase from an annual mean of thirty-two inches to forty-four inches.

Thus, notwithstanding our insular position, the climate of this region proves to be the dryest in the United States east of the head-waters of the Mississippi. But the rains are very equally distributed, through all but the winter months, which have only one-sixth of the entire precipitation. Crops, therefore, seldom suffer from the want of moisture, even in the dry periods.

South of the Ohio the winters have one-third of the whole precipitation—equal to that of the summer.

### MONTHLY FLUCTUATIONS.

Having considered the character of the seasons and our relation to neighboring parts of the continent, as regards the average measures of precipitation, let us notice and compare the monthly fluctuations.

At Detroit the smallest quantities fall in the months of December and February; the mean of thirty-eight years being 1.3 and 1.4 inches, respectively, and that of the three winter months being 1.7 inches.

From February to June appears a gradual increase, largest for March and April, when it rises to 2.9, the mean of the spring being 2.8 inches.

In June, which is the month of largest precipitation, there is an increase to 3.9 inches, the mean of the summer being 3.10. From June there is a falling off during the remaining summer months.

The mean for September rises to 3.3 inches, that of the autumn being 2.4, and falls again through the remainder of the year.

These results show a tendency to two minima, in December and February, and to two maxima, in June and September.

The June freshet is looked for quite uniformly, and with more certainty than the floods which attend the melting of the snow in the spring, although the latter often exceed in temporary height and violence.

### COMPARISON OF MINIMUM AND MAXIMUM PERIODS.

A table of the average precipitation for the seasons and months, for different places, from the Gulf to the coast of New England, exhibits very considerable contrasts. It would be interesting to examine them if we had the time.

For my present purpose I will advert to the fact only, that there exists a general tendency to minima of precipitation about the middle or end of winter, and of maxima about midsummer.

Grouping the results, it may be stated that on or near the coast of New England the tendency is to one minimum in February of about three inches, and three maxima in May, four inches, August and November 4.5 to four inches.

Through central New York one minimum, February, of 1.4 inches, and one maximum, June or July, 3.5 inches.

In the lake region, west of Lake Erie, one minimum in February of 1.4 inches, and one maximum, in June, 3.5 inches.

In the Ohio Valley one minimum, January and February, of three inches, and one maximum about June, 4.5 inches.

On the Gulf coast two minima, April 1.7 inches, and November, three inches, and one maximum in July, eight to twelve inches.

The minimum of February at Detroit is less than one-twentieth, and the maximum of June nearly one-eighth of the whole average annual rainfall. In other words, the mean of February is 1.1 inches below the average mean of the months; that of June is one inch above the average mean.

### MONTHLY PRECIPITATION FOR THE UNITED STATES.

On this diagram is shown the annual precipitation running through the mean of the several months, at representative stations within the group referred to, including also the upper Mississippi. These few curved lines represent very closely, and as far as may be done from so few data, the rainfall through the year, over the whole United States, east of the great plains.

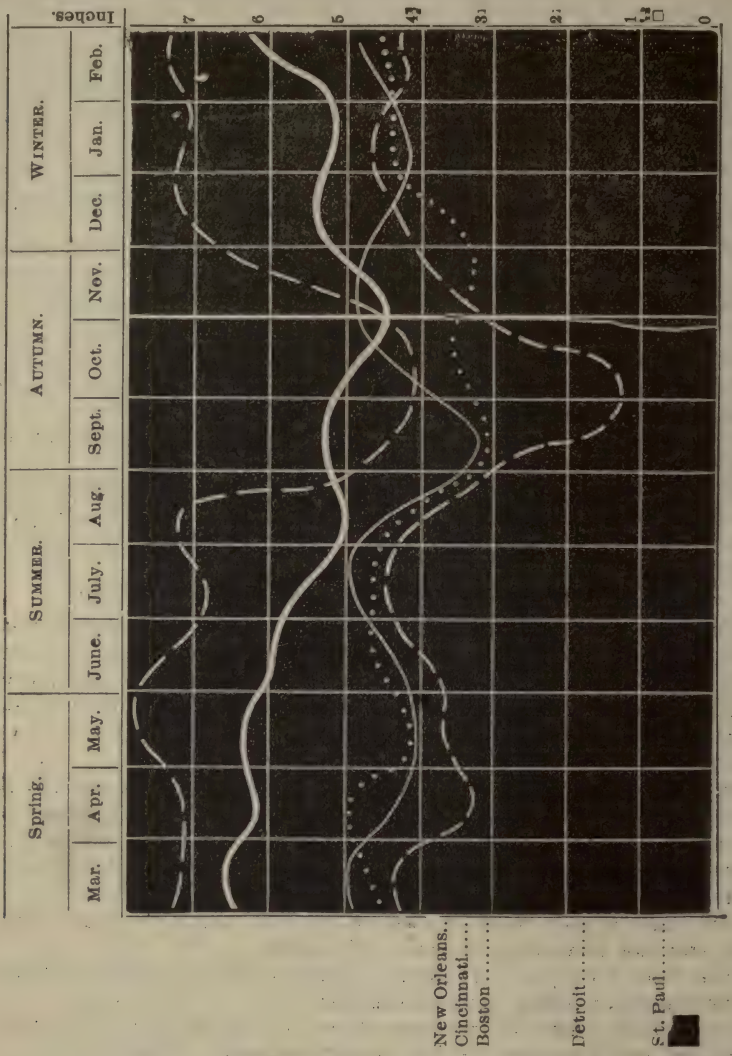


DIAGRAM OF MONTHLY PRECIPITATION FOR THE UNITED STATES.

## POPULAR AND SCIENTIFIC OPINIONS COMPARED.

The remark is frequently made that our climate is undergoing a permanent change. Many think it is becoming dryer, which is by some attributed to the destruction of the forests; according to others it is becoming permanently colder also.

These popular opinions suggest a very interesting inquiry. For the present it may be a sufficient answer that the statistics of the rainfall, as well as those of the temperature, do not verify such conclusions.

Throughout this region, from the Atlantic to the Mississippi, north of the Ohio, the fluctuations, both annual and for a series of years, are very great, and they show a tendency to an irregular grouping of years in which the rainfall is in excess, and of those in which it is in diminution of the mean. This is governed by no known or apparent law, and though in the main there is a general agreement throughout the region, yet considerable and remarkable differences occur, even at points not widely separated.

Diagrams for all this region indicate an *average* increase of the rainfall from about 1840 until about 1862, and this fact contradicts the prevalent opinion of increasing dryness. Since that period a general decrease is observable in this region. This was the case until 1873, from which year until now a large increase is apparent, December 1880.

Within this first series of years occurs one period of greatly diminished rainfall, common to the diagram for New England, New York, Southern Michigan and Ohio, viz., from 1835 to 1845, averaging 10 to 15 per cent below the mean for each district, and one period of increased rainfall, viz., from 1848 to 1862, which averages 10 to 20 per cent above the mean.

Successive years, however, frequently show great irregularity in the amounts, sometimes falling from 20 to 30 per cent above the mean in the place to as much below, within a period of two or three years, breaking in so violently upon the averages as to render any generalization very difficult.

For the sake of comparison I select from each of the districts named three years of greatest and of least rainfall, and bring them together, exhibiting the percentage which each attains above and below the yearly mean of the district.

A TABLE OF PERCENTAGES OF RAINFALL IN MAXIMUM AND MINIMUM YEARS.

| | Years of Greatest Maximum. | | | Per Cent. Above Mean | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| New England Coast | 1841 | 1850 | 1868 | 15 | 23 | 21 |
| New York | 1842 | 1850 | 1857 | 12 | 17 | 20 |
| Southern Michigan | 1849 | 1855 | 1861 | 13 | 30? | 26 |
| Ohio | 1847 | 1855 | 1858 | 16 | 16 | 26 |

| | Years of Greatest Minimum. | | | Per Cent. Below Mean. | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| New England Coast | 1837 | 1849 | 1856 | 15 | 12 | 12 |
| New York | 1844 | 1856 | 1861 | 15 | 13 | 16 |
| Southern Michigan | 1845 | 1850 | 1865 | 26 | 16 | 28 |
| Ohio | 1838 | 1853 | 1856 | 23 | 16 | 28 |

A comparison of these maxima and minima serves to show how extremely local are the causes of the differences; how small is the correspondence between the locations for the same years, while it does not indicate any decided differences in the variability in the different districts.

The range at Detroit (between the highest maximum and lowest minimum) is fully 55 per cent of the annual mean, which does not differ greatly from that of the other districts, though in excess of the eastern ones, but at St. Paul the range is much greater. There the mean of the year is only twenty-five inches, while the range in nineteen years' observation is from forty-one to eighteen inches, or over 100 per cent.

### ANNUAL FLUCTUATIONS IN THE RAINFALL.

The accompanying diagram will exhibit at a glance the annual fluctuations in the rainfall at Detroit since 1834. Each column represents a year, and the amount in inches is shown by the figures at the side. The curved line is an attempt at a generalization of the several means. These data are here brought down to the present time, December, 1880. The diagram makes very apparent two groups of dry years, since the high water of 1837, viz.: 1837 to 1846, inclusive (ten years), and 1863 to 1872, inclusive (ten years); and two of wet, viz.: 1847 to 1862, inclusive (sixteen years), and 1873 to the present year (1880), which exhibits the largest downpour of the whole series, 50+ inches. The divergencies of excessive years, both wet and dry, are very great; the range nearly equals the annual mean, 31+ inches.

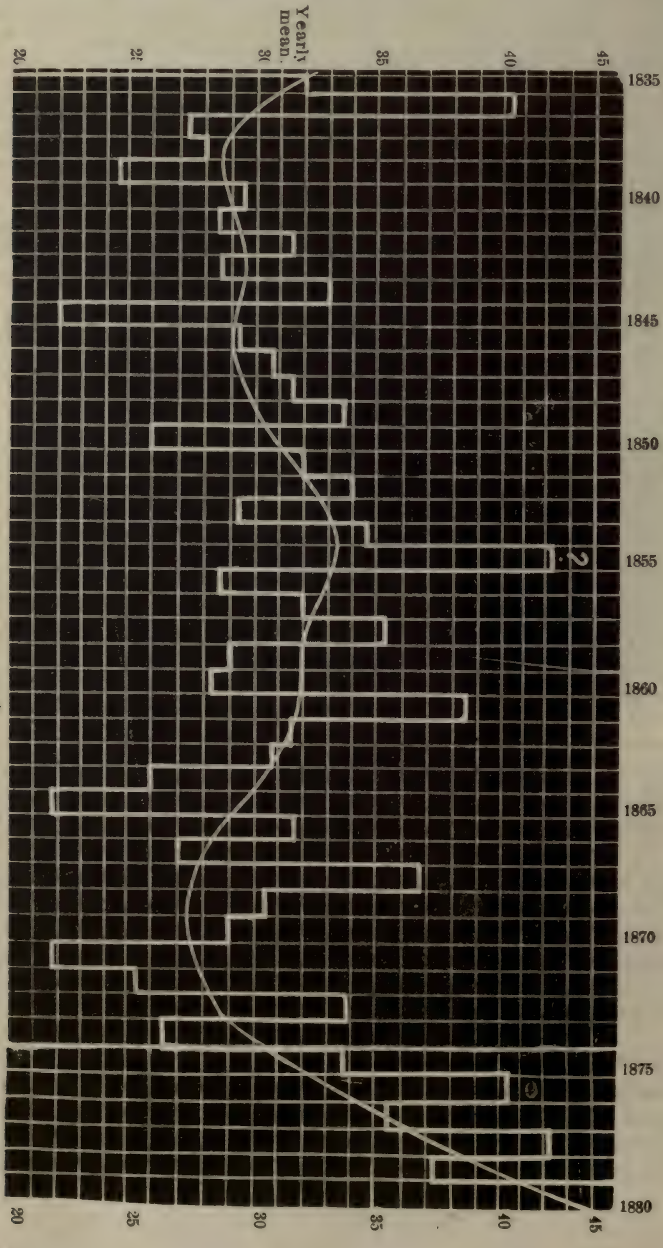


TABLE OF ANNUAL FLUCTUATIONS IN THE RAINFALL, 1835 TO 1880.

Could a diagram be constructed for the whole region embraced by the drainage into the lakes there can be no doubt that a proper correspondence would appear between the rainfall and their periods of high and low water, succeeding series of wet and dry years.

### FREEDOM OF OUR LOCALITY FROM FLOODS AND DEEP SNOWS.

To the facts we have been considering, and which have relation to our situation relative to the great sources of supply, as well as to the plateau character of the country, is due our comparative exemption from destructive flooding rains and deep snows. Neither the lakes nor the peninsula streams overflow their banks, causing such devastations as are common in the States east and south of us. And in winter railroad trains are seldom blocked by snow, as frequently happens in this latitude elsewhere.

The same cause which frees this locality from the inconveniences of deep snow also deprives us in many winters of sufficient snow for the ordinary winter sledding. The increased temperature, due to the extensive and open water surfaces around us, causes the snow to melt almost as it falls, so that it seldom lasts long as a covering to the soil. The lower atmosphere, at such times, gathers increased humidity, which occasions a sensible chill that is more uncomfortable in its effect than a steady cold below the freezing point.

Yet it is a noticeable fact that fogs are rare with us, at any season.

Our deepest snow and of longest continuance usually occurs in February, which is the month of greatest cold.

### DROUGHTS.

The droughts which prevail often disastrously in autumn throughout Michigan are not peculiar to this district, although the less quantity of rain at that season that falls over the country east and south no doubt contributes to this result.

The still dryer climate west of Lake Michigan, extending with increased severity to the great plains, exhibits this phenomenon in vastly enhanced proportions.

Yet to the same cause is due that peculiar and delightful phenomenon—the Indian summer—which is comparatively little known to the Atlantic States, but which constitutes so pleasing a feature in the lake region.

### GENERAL CHARACTER OF THE SEASONS—WINTER.

In a general survey of our seasons the winters at Detroit may, as a rule, be classed as "mild and open."

My notes show nearly two-thirds of the winters for the last thirty-eight years to be of this character. This kind of winters may be thus described. A temperature seldom below 0, and frequently above the freezing point; an average temperature 1° above the winter mean of 27°; a few weeks at most—often a few days only—of snow sufficient to make sleighing; many cloudless days, though the cloudy ones are in excess; constant alternations of frosty nights and days, with warm and damp or rainy ones, yet with a large number of days of clear, bracing atmosphere, when the thermometer falls below freezing at night, and rises a little above it by day; prevailing west and southwest winds, an occasional storm that leaves its mantle of snow followed almost immediately, or within a few days at most, by the prevailing openness.

As a rule, only the "cold" winters are snowy ones—winters whose temperature is 1° or 2° below the mean—when it continues to freeze for several days successively. At such periods the local influences are overborne by the general causes which prevail in this latitude, and the cold storms, with their freight of heavy snows, sweep over and involve our district in the prevailing frigidity. At such times the ground freezes hard, if bare, to the depth of two or three feet. Streams are frozen over,—our broad river included—and no longer lend their influence to soften the temperature. Winter gathers strength by its own progress, and forgets its ordinary relaxations.

### SPRING.

Of the advance of spring-time my notebooks furnish a few items which may serve for useful comparison with other localities.

The first of the forest trees to be animated by the genial breath are the poplar, willow, elm and maple. These are in flower from April 1 to 20, the average for the two latter being April 7. The earliest period on my records is in 1845, March 11.

Wild flowers make their appearance about 10th of April to 1st of May.

Those cultivated fruits, peach and cherry, come into bloom about a month later than the forest maple and elm—20th of April to middle of May—the average being May 8. Pear and apple follow, 1st to 20th of May; average about May 12.

The forests now begin to show a green tint, but the perfection of the leaf is not attained until late in June.

### SUMMER AND WINTER EXTREMES.

We have seen how much the heats of summer are moderated by our situation. Yet, notwithstanding, our climate, like that of the whole temperate zone, is one of fierce extremes, indeed at times most fitfully *in*temperate, and making us acquainted, under the same sky, with the winter of the Arctic regions and the summer of the tropics. There are days in our short summers that fairly belong to the equator, which blaze and quiver with sunshine like a furnace, and when vegetable growth may actually be measured in its hourly increase.

There are days in our rigorous winters when the frosted air cuts like a knife; when storm so follows storm, in all the grandeur of the season, that for a time the landscape is obliterated, every familiar object buried out of sight beneath the congealed and hoary breath of the storm god.

> "No cloud above, no earth below,
> A universe of sky and snow."

But neither heated nor frozen "terms" ordinarily last many days at a time. Changes are sudden and violent, from one extreme of temperature to the opposite.

"Dry" seasons are often accompanied by flooding rains. Frosts follow a period of hot days; and they have been known to occur—though very rarely, as in 1859—in every month of the year.

### AUTUMN.

Between the spring and the autumn of our climate there is a striking contrast. For while the spring of the English poets, so familiar to our early literature—breathing balm, and leading by slow graduations into summer—scarcely exists here, (where often winter lingers into May, and spring leaps at a bound into the arms of summer, or cheats us with successive storm, cold and wet,) the autumn time is the most enjoyable of the year, and is in grateful contrast to the dull, wet season of Europe.

As a rule, our first two autumn months are pleasant, cool and dry, and sometimes this agreeable weather is protracted into the first month of the winter. But this season, too, is changeable, and nearly one-fourth of the years on my calendar are classed as mild and wet or wet and cold.

### WEATHER PREDICATES.

This great and constantly recurring irregularity of the seasons gives disappointment to those who seek to form predictions of the weather, based upon the observations of previous years.

My own notes are so general in character that they meet ill the strict demands of science. Yet some of the conclusions drawn from them may be worthy of record.

Winters which, in popular language, are called "mild and open," are ordinarily succeeded by "warm and early" springs, the proportion to those which are "cold and late" being about two to one.

Cold and snowy winters are certain to be followed by cold and backward springs. To this law my records show no exception.

Warm and pleasant summers, if succeeded by dry and pleasant autumns, are followed, as a rule (not without exceptions), by mild and open winters.

Cold summers and autumns are ordinarily succeeded by cold winters, the exceptions being as about one to two.

Warm and early springs are, as a rule, followed by warm and pleasant summers, the proportion of such to cold and wet summers being nearly four to one.

Cold and late springs, it may be expected, will be followed by cold or wet summers, but they are almost as frequently succeeded by warm and dry.

Though there is an approach to some measure of regularity in the character of the seasons for a succession or group of years, no certain law is apparent, but a warm or cold, a wet or a dry year is likely to be succeeded by one or more of like character before the character is reversed.

Upon the whole, notwithstanding the great range of climatic phenomena, and the extreme diversity of certain seasons and years, the observations of even the last thirty-nine years—short as is that period for scientific deductions—show our climate to be constant and uniform, returning always to the average standard of heat and moisture.

Popular opinion pronounces some extraordinary extreme to be "unprecedented" within the memory of that very unreliable character, "the oldest inhabitant." But science, from whose stern decrees there is no appeal, declares it to be but local and temporary, and part of those ever recurring features, which, in the cycle of the years, only furnish proof of the stability and uniformity of nature.

### THE ARTIFICIAL AND THE NATURAL DIVISIONS OF OUR YEAR.

In the natural divisions of the seasons another contrast appears between our climate and that of Europe, which, though less marked in the vicinity of the lakes, is yet a noted difference throughout the temperate zones of America.

The divisions of the calendar year appear much more arbitrary as applied to our circumstances, and show that they were meant for another hemisphere.

In attempting a classification better suited to our climate, if we define "winter" as the period of hard frosts and completely dormant vegetation, that season will embrace not merely a fourth part, but nearly half of the entire year, or from November to the middle of April inclusive, five and a half months.

If we call "spring" the period between the flowering of the earliest trees and shrubs or the first opening buds and the full development of the leaves, that season will have its average beginning about the middle of April and its end the middle of June, two months.

The reign of "summer," the season of the full perfection of vegetable growth, holds from the middle of June to the middle of September, three months.

"Autumn," the season of the ripening of the fruits of the earth and the gradual decadence of vegetable life, lasts from the middle of September to November, one and a half months.

In the more genial atmosphere of the lakes, as I have already noted, the autumnal season is often much more protracted, and cheats the colder months of a portion of their supremacy. The bland airs of the Indian summer help to prolong the illusion; but it is only an interloper, and, in general, by November the hard frosts have set in, and

"Winter comes to rule the varied year."

## CONCLUSION.

I cannot close these remarks without adverting to the substantial advantages which our climate possesses, especially that of the lake region, over most others on the globe.

If it is often excessive in its extremes, it has not the great daily range which in arid climates is so severely felt, causing a benumbing coldness to the nights after the oppressive heat of the day.

If we have sometimes droughts, to the injury of the crops, we have not those periodic seasons of completely dry weather, when no rain falls for many weeks, or even months; when vegetation can be sustained only by irrigation, and the atmosphere is charged with dust, features that so greatly detract from the excellences of California.

And if occasional drenching rains flood the growing crops, they bring, at rare intervals, to our doors only slight intimations of these deluges which deform the winters and the rainy seasons of the South and the Pacific Coast, or which, in the hill countries, often fill the valleys with the debris of ruined homes.

If severe gales sometimes cause destruction among our lake craft, and even, though rarely, uproot our orchards, no tornado ever visits upon us its terrific fury, and our locality is remarkably free from the sudden and fierce storms, which are an incident even close to our borders.

The disagreeable features are but exceptions to the general rule, of moderate but sufficient rains for all needs, equally distributed throughout the year; a summer temperature, which rapidly quickens into active life the hibernating earth, and in its fervors gives to our zone some of the productive power of the tropics, enabling it to bring to perfection the bountiful maize and other tropical plants, and especially those various and valuable fruits, that attain their perfection only in our clime—the apple, pear, cherry, peach, plum and grape.

"Whatever fruits in different climes are found,
That proudly rise or humbly seek the ground;
Whatever blooms in torrid tracts appear,
Whose bright succession decks the varied year;
Whatever sweets salute the northern sky,
With vernal lives that blossom but to die;
These here disporting own the kindred soil."

It must be acknowledged that our climate, like that of this continent generally, is a very trying one to the average American constitution. Its dryness and its frequent and excessive changes seem to sap from the body that juiciness of the blood which, under the moist and equable skies of England, blooms into ruddy complexions and swells into plump outlines.

Perhaps the climate is not alone responsible for the evil. Much is attributable to our mode of life; the incessant application to business, in the haste to be rich; or too much of indoor life and want of proper exercise in the open air. Our boys cannot be said to be pale and sickly, and they brave the weather in all its rudeness.

Though the climate of Detroit partakes of the general character, it does so to a modified degree. I believe it is admitted that our locality is remarkable for its healthfulness and freedom from endemic diseases. I put the question to our professional and well-informed President, whether Detroit is not even abominably healthy?

Nature is full of compensations. The perpetual summer of torrid climes is enervating to mind and body. Even in our southern States, agriculture, the basis of wealth, must be carried on by an inferior race.

Do the people who have been brought up in a clime where summer is eternal appreciate in their full measure those gifts of bountiful nature, whose enjoyment is not enhanced by their occasional loss? Does the never-ending succession of flowers and fruits compensate for the absence of the "seasons," the return of spring, summer and autumn, after the dearth of winter, for that period of biting cold and storm without, and blazing hearths within?

"——King of intimate delights,
Fireside enjoyments, home-born happiness,"

enhancing even by its bitter contrast the enjoyableness and bloom of summer.

Where but in such a clime as ours, marked so emphatically by the revolutions of the seasons, with their cold and heat, and all their pleasing variety and change,

"Forever charming, and forever new,"

do the arts flourish best and man attain his highest perfection?

# GENERAL HUGH BRADY.

### A BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH OF GENERAL HUGH BRADY, BY HIMSELF.

I was born on the 29th day of July, 1768, at the Standing Stone, in Huntington county, Pennsylvania, and was the fifth son (they had six sons and four daughters) of John and Mary Brady. My brothers all lived to be men, in every sense of the term; and at a period when the qualities of men were put to the most severe and enduring tests. While I was yet a child, my father moved onto the west branch of the Susquehanna river, and pitched his tent about eight miles above the town of Northumberland. At this time (as well as in later periods) titles to wild lands could be obtained by erecting a log house and by girdling a few trees, by way of improvement, or cultivation. In this way, my father, John Brady, took up a vast quantity of land; and had he not fallen in the war of 1776, would have been one of the greatest land-holders in the State. But, owing to the dishonesty and mismanagement of those connected with him, his family received but little benefit from his exertions. Soon after the commencement of the war of 1776, he was appointed a captain in the twelfh Pennsylvania Regiment, and in a few weeks, having recruited his company, he joined the army with which he remained until after the battle of the Brandywine.

At this time, the Indians had become very troublesome in the settlements on the Susquehanna—so much so, that application was made to General Washington for regular troops to protect the frontier. Not being in a condition to spare any troops at that moment, he ordered home Captain John Brady, Captain Boone, and Lieutenants John and Samuel Dougherty, to use their influence in inducing the people to sustain themselves until he could afford them other relief. And nobly did they execute his design. All that brave and experienced men could do was done by them, even to sacrificing their lives in the defence of their country; for in less than two years from that date, Captains Brady and Boone, and Lieutenant Samuel Dougherty, had fallen by the hands of the savages. Ten months before the death of Captain John Brady, his son James had fallen (in 1778) by the Indians. Another son, Samuel, was then an officer in the U. S. army. John was then at home in charge of the family and in his 16th year.

After the fall of Captain Brady, my mother removed with her family to her father's place in Cumberland county, Pennsylvania, where she arrived in May, 1779, and where she remained till October of that year. She then removed to Buffalo Valley, about twenty miles below our former residence, and settled on one of our own farms. We found the tenant had left our portion of the hay and grain, which was a most fortunate circumstance. The winter following (1779 and '80) was a very severe one, and the depth of snow interdicted all traveling. Neighbors were few and the settlement scattered—so that the winter was solitary and dreary to a most painful degree. But while the depth of the snow kept us confined at home it had also the effect to protect us from the inroads of the savages. But with the opening of the spring the Indians returned, and killed some people not very remote from our residence. This induced Mrs. Brady to take shelter with some ten or twelve families on the west branch, about three miles from our home. Pickets were placed around the houses, and the old men, women, and children, remained within during the day; while all who could work and carry arms returned to their farms for the purpose of raising something to subsist upon. Many a day have I walked by the side of my brother John while he was plowing, and carried my rifle in one hand and a forked stick in the other to clear the plowshare.

Sometimes my mother would go with us to prepare our dinner. This was contrary to our wishes; but she said that while she shared the dangers that surrounded us, she was more contented than when left at the fort. Thus we continued till the end of the war, when peace—happy peace—again invited the people to return to their homes.

In 1783 our mother was taken from us. In 1784 my brother John married, and soon after my eldest sister followed his example. All the children younger than myself lived with them. I went to the western country with my brother, Captain Samuel Brady. He had been recently disbanded, and had married a Miss Swearingen, in Washington county, Pennsylvania. He took me to his house at that place, and I made it my home until 1792, when I was appointed an ensign in General Wayne's army. Previous to this, my brother had moved into Ohio county, Virginia, and settled a short distance above Charlestown. At that day the Indians were continually committing depredations along the frontier. West of the Ohio, the settlements were very sparse, and the people from the east side went frequently in pursuit of parties of marauding Indians who visited the neighborhood. I joined with several in purusit of Indians, but only met them once in action. This was, I think, on the 22d of May, 1791, Our spies in front had discovered a trail of Indians about eight miles up Indian cross-cut, making for the settlements. The next morning, ten citizens were met by Lieutenant Buskirk with twelve State Rangers, at the old Mingo Town, and from there we went in pursuit. After following their trail till nearly sunset, we were fied on by the enemy who lay concealed in a thicket. Lieutenant Buskirk was killed and three men were wounded. After a fight of about ten minutes, the Indians retreated, leaving one gun on the ground and much blood on the bushes. We pursued them till dark but did not overtake them. The next day we returned to the field with a large party, and about one hundred yards up the stream which had divided the combatants we found twenty-two Indian packs, showing that our party of twenty-two men had fought the same number of Indians. It was afterward ascertained that eight of them died of wounds received, before they reached their towns. I had a fair shot at the bare back of one of them. I do not know whether I hit him or not. He did not fall; and I think I was somewhat excited.

On the 5th of March following, 1792, I was appointed an ensign in a rifle company commanded by Captain John Crawford, a soldier of 1776. Wm. Clarke, of Kentucky, was the First Lieutenant. I reported to my captain, and was put on the recruiting service. But as the pay of a soldier was only three dollars per month, I met with little success. Our clothing was also indifferent and the people generally adverse to enlisting. They did not consider regular soldiers exactly the thing to fight Indians. I then joined the headquarters of the army, at Legionville—the spot where Harmony now stands, twenty miles below Pittsburgh. The first duty I performed was on Christmas day, 1792, when I commanded a picket guard. The officer of the day, Major Mills, saw at guard-mounting that I was green, and when he visited my guard at twelve o'clock, he took much pains to instruct me. He also let me know at what hour at night the Grand Rounds would visit me. I had Baron Steuben's Tactics, and a good old sergeant, and was pretty well prepared to receive the rounds when they approached.

The major complimented me and remained with me for some time. His treatment had the effect to inspire me with that confidence which is indispensable in a young officer, to enable him to perform any duty in a suitable manner. I then thought Steuben had nothing with which I was not familiar, and the confidence it gave me has unquestionably been of service to me up to the present day. The history and movements of that army are before the world; but its sufferings and privations are only known to those who shared them, of which I had my full proportion. Our campaign in Canada during the war of 1812, was by no means interesting, and its privations, etc., were the subject of much discussion. Compared with the campaign of General Wayne, it was all sunshine. At its close, I was left under the command of Colonel Hamtramck, at Fort Wayne. The force consisted of Captain Porter's company of artillery, Captains Kingsbury's, Grattan's, and Reed's companies of infantry; and Captain Preston's company of riflemen, to which I was attached.

During that winter, 1794-5, we lived very poorly. Our beef came to us on the hoof, and poor, and we had little or nothing to fatten them with. Having no salt to cure it, it was slaughtered and hung up under a shed, where by exposure it became perfectly weatherbeaten, and as tough as an old hide. Of course it made a miserable soup. At the same time our men received but half rations of flour, and were working like beavers, to complete our quarters. Thus we lived until about the middle of February, when a brigade of pack-horses arrived loaded with flour and salt, and with them came a drove of hogs. From this time forward, we considered ourselves as living on the "fat of the land." An early spring followed, and with it came ducks, geese, and trout, to improve our living; and the Indians, soon after, came in with their flags to sue for peace; and our time passed away pleasantly. The treaty was opened at Greenville, on the 4th of July, 1795, on which day I arrived at that place. I had been ordered there as a witness in the case of Captain Preston, who was tried for disobeying orders of Colonel Hamtramck. The court sentenced him to be reprimanded, and the general laid it on pretty heavy.

I remained at headquarters till the treaty was concluded, and then returned to Fort Wayne. I received many letters from my brothers urging me to resign. I had not seen them for ten years. Those letters held out the idea that they would make my fortune. That (and a desire to return to the land of my early habits, and to see my brothers and sisters, who had grown from children to be men and women, and most of them married) decided me to leave the service. I resigned my commission and left Fort Wayne on the 20th of November, 1795, and passed the next winter in Lexington, Kentucky. About the first of March following, I rode through to Limestone (Maysville). I there got into a quartermaster's boat, and in about three weeks landed at Wheeling, Virginia. I spent a few days with the widow of my brother Samuel, who had died on the Christmas previous. I then purchased a horse and reached home about the 20th of July. I went first to Captain William Gray's, my brother-in-law. My sister, Mrs. Gray, came to the door, and as I inquired for Mr. Gray, she put on rather an important look and replied: "I presume you will find him at the store," and turned into the parlor. I was about turning on my heel, when I heard steps in the entry, and turning round I saw my sister Hannah. She immediately raised her hands and exclaimed, "My brother Hugh!" and flew into my arms. This was not a little surprising, as when she saw me last, she could not have been more than eight years old. She knew me by my resemblance to my twin sister Jane. I found my connections all living happily and moving at the head of society. I passed a happy three or four months with them, when I became weary of an idle life and began to look for my promised fortune; but, up to this day, have never been able to find it. I remained out of business until the winter of 1798 and '99, when I was appointed a captain in Adams' army, and in less than two years was disbanded. My brother William, who had been most urgent for me to resign, now requested me to assist him to improve some wild lands he owned on the Mahoning river about fifty miles from Pittsburgh. We commenced this settlement in the spring of 1802, and that summer built a grist-mill and a saw-mill. All our breadstuffs had to be carried about thirty miles on horseback. Meat I procured with my rifle, deer being plenty, and I could kill them without much loss of time from other business.

I married in 1805, and took my wife to our place in 1806, where Sarah and Preston were born. During the time we were there, we were happy and had a plenty of such things as the country afforded. All being on an equality as regarded our resources, were not annoyed by the insolence of wealth; still I saw that my fortune could not be made there, and in 1810 I returned with my family to Northumberland and got along as well as I could until 1812, when the war again called me into service; since which time the Government has provided for me. I have returned her some service, and with my brother officers have kept my shoulder to the wheel. This was no more than our duty to a country which supports us, and of which we are justly proud.

Thus I have given a sketch of my life, containing nothing unusual or strange among those of my day and generation. But what a wonderful generation it has been—the most wonderful of any since the days of our Savior!

## EXTRACTS FROM A FUNERAL DISCOURSE.

BY REV. GEORGE DUFFIELD.

**On the 18th of April, 1851, at the interment of the remains of the late Hugh Brady, Brevet Major General, of the United States Army.**

**II. Samuel, Chapter xiv, 14th verse.—"For we must die, and are as water spilt on the ground, which cannot be gathered up again. Neither does God respect persons; yet doth He devise means that His banished be not expelled from Him."**

Another, and a veteran hero has fallen! Death has numbered with his victims the gallant soldier, the honorable citizen, the lofty minded patriot. We gather round his mortal remains to deplore our loss. Both in his social relations—as the affectionate father, the warm-hearted friend, the kind and pleasant neighbor, and the generous helper of the needy and distressed; and in his public—as the ornament and pride of our city, the boast and delight of the army, his country's treasure, and a bright jewel in her fame—we have much in this loss to mourn. Tears become us when we approach the tomb, especially when we convey "the mighty man and man of war" to the house appointed for all living.

It was near the cemetery of Bethlehem, where two sorrowing sisters went to weep over the grave of a brother beloved, the blessed Redeemer met them, and mingling his tears with theirs, preached that memorable discourse in which He spake words of consolation and of hope to their afflicted hearts. We would follow this divine precedent; and here, assembled to weep by the bier of one so deeply, universally, and justly beloved, would extract from the text a few thoughts appropriate to the scene, and prefatory to a short sketch of his history and character.

* * * * * * *

The thought, that the warm and generous heart, which once glowed with such gallant zeal and love for his country's honor, had felt the pulsations of a still more vigorous affection for the Friend and Savior of sinners, sweetly comforts us on this sad occasion, and sheds a richer perfume around the name and memory of General Hugh Brady, than all the laurels which were ever wreathed or blossomed on his manly brow. Modest, humble, and adverse from seeking his own praise, his spirit would be grieved should it have cognizance of any unfounded or extravagant attempt at panegyric. Yet would we do violence to our own and your feelings alike, beloved hearers, should we refrain, wholly, from some tribute to his personal and social worth.

His life and history form one of the few remaining links that connect the present generation—now dwelling at ease, in the enjoyment of the liberty, prosperity, and greatness of our glorious confederacy—with the olden times that tried men's souls.

The greatest portion of his extended life was spent upon the borders of our wide and rapidly spreading country. Familiar with Indian warfare and perils from his very infancy, when called into his country's service he had been schooled and trained for courageous deeds.

* * * * * * *

His gallant behavior on the field of battle, both at Bridgewater and Lundy's Lane, the wounds he received and the manner in which a kind providence preserved his life, are too well known to need comment. His history since that war is public property. His name stands indelibly recorded in the annals of his country's fame. With his vigilance and untiring energy, and the wisdom he displayed in preventing the outbursts of wild and ruinous excitement, to some extent proving contagious among many of our own citizens, during the disturbance in Canada in 1837-8, we are all familiar. Every one will bear testimony, as well to his respects for the rights and liberties of his fellow-citizens, as to the fidelity and success with which he executed the trust reposed in him by the Government of his country. With scarcely any supply of regular troops—sustained and aided mainly by the gallant and faithful band that bore his honored name, whose remaining members here this day appear among the chief mourners—he watched and guarded this frontier so efficiently in that perplexing period, that he not only obtained the gratitude and praise of our citizens, but the plaudit of the chief commanding officer, General Scott, who, after his visit to this State, reported to the President that all had been here quieted. We leave to others a fuller sketch of his pursuit of the Indian chief, his removal of the Indians from this State, and of his military life in general, and close with a few remarks touching his character.

Naturally, he was a man of noble soul, who could not brook a mean and dishonorable action. Sincere and honest himself, he held in utter contempt everything like duplicity and falsehood. Never lavish or flattering in his professions of regard and friendship for others, he was ever prompt in his sympathies, and firm in his attachments. A truer heart ne'er beat in motal breast. The happiness of others ever gave him delight. Devoid of envy or ambition that would sacrifice whatever stood in the way of self-aggrandizement, he made not complaint if even less deserving attained to what was his due. He took peculiar delight in the circle of his friends, and cherished for all the liveliest affection. His private notes breathe the most benignant regards, and the yearnings of the fondest heart for his children, and his children's children. In their griefs, he fully shared when called, as he was frequently, to mourn with them the loss of early blossoms, nipped by the severe frosts of death.

He was the ardent friend of his brethren in military service; nor could he endure the least reproach against the army, which he loved with almost a father's affection. The soldier's claims he never despised; nor did he ever exalt or press them to the injury and injustice of a fellow-citizen.

His sense of justice was exceedingly strong; and none would be more sure to forfeit his esteem, than they whose selfishness would dictate injury or wrong to others.

His personal influence was on the side of good morals. He was the ardent lover of his country, and of his country's flag. Although warmly attached to his native State, yet were his local attachments all merged in his more devoted affection for the glorious union of these free United States. Nor did anything more quickly rouse him, or more deeply wound him, than what tended to rend the bonds of this noble confederacy. He was the friend of what he thought tended to promote the public good.

He was respected by the aged and loved by the young. His heart had not in the least been rendered callous by age to the society and enjoyments of youth. Simple in his manners—hating all hypocrisy, and the false parade of fashionable regard—he was never indifferent to the social delight of familiar converse with old and young of either sex.

For female worth, and especially unpretending and consistent female piety, he entertained the highest regard. Soldier as he was, he ever acknowledged and felt the charms of female excellence. Great had been its influence in the formation of his own character, and we doubt not, in moulding his eternal destiny.

The partner of his bosom was in every respect worthy of him; and the bright radiance of her pure, humble, and uniform piety, which made her house the sphere of its loveliest and most attractive influence, so commended the grace of our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, and so illustrated its power, as to banish all skepticism from his mind, as to the reality and value of evangelical religion. Long and truly did his widowed heart mourn her loss; and, again and again, as he saw developed in his daughters, the piety of the mother, and witnessed their happy and triumphant exits from this vain and fleeting world, he felt his heart upward drawn, and impressed with a sense of the sweetness and value, the importance and necessity of an interest in Jesus Christ.

Deprived of the benefit of a preached gospel by reason of his utter inability to hear a public speaker, the ordinary public means of grace were unavailing to him; yet did he, religiously, and with as much pleasure as punctiliousness liberally contribute to the support of religion. Shut out from the house of God, of late years he made the Bible more especially his study, and conscientiously devoted the Sabbath to its perusal. "Is it not remarkable,"writes he, near the close of his life, after recounting the history of his brothers for the benefit of his children, "that I, who was considered the most feeble of all, should outlive all my brothers, after having been exposed to more dangers and vicissitudes than any, except Samuel? Is it not a proof, that there is from the beginning, 'a day appointed for man to die?' It is said, 'The race is not to the swift, nor the battle to the strong; but safety is of the Lord.' That is my belief."

That providence he recognized, not only in his own personal history, but in that of others, and especially of his country; and most of all, in that of Washington, of whim he was ever a passionate admirer, and to whom he has borne such a strong and religious testimony, that we cannot deny ourselves the pleasure of extracting it from his diary, being illustrative of his own character, as true of the merited object of his admiration.

"Washington! It matters not by whom, how, or where, that name is pronounced; provided it refers to the man, it has a most astonishing effect on me. My heart melts; my eyes fill; and I am thankful that I am one of the generation in which he took so conspicuous a part! Such a generation as his the world has not witnessed since the days of our Savior. No doubt but that he was a chosen instrument in the hands of God to loosen the bonds of them that were bound, and to give liberty to the sons of men. In studying his character, and reviewing the great things he did, and after reading Spark's life of him, I have come to the conclusion that there never was given to any one, so much wisdom as he had throughout his life. It strikes me that he was finished from above. At the time he was in need he not only led the army but the congress, and the whole country. And one of the best evidences that could be produced, that the Almighty was at all times by his side, is that the minds of men, both public and private, of high and low degree, were obedient to his call and advice."

It was General Brady's study of the Bible that made him such a believer in the providence of God. And it is a matter of thankfulness from all his friends, that we have good reason to hope the study of that blessed book had led him to a still higher knowledge and belief. He had not been a stranger to the thought of his own death, nor had he, as we received the assurance from his own lips, left the matter of his own soul's salvation to a dying hour. Although stunned and terribly injured by the fatal and violent fall from his vehicle, and weakened by great loss of blood, he survived long enough to converse freely with his children and friends. His first wish, expressed to his son, when returning to consciousness, was to die. But he lived to profess in the bosom of his family, his utter destitution of all confidence in himself; his renunciation of his own righteousness and good deeds; and his confident trust in the merits and mediation, the blood and righteousness of Jesus Christ—"the only name given under heaven, among men, whereby we must be saved."

The promises of God's word, on which he rested, were "too plain," he said, "to be mistaken," and they were the foundation of his hope. "His time," he believed, "had come" and he was "ready to go." Nor did he breathe a murmur, or display at any time the least impatience; but calmly and quietly breathed his soul out into the hands of God.

And now—lay his sword on his breast—that time-honored sword, whose scabbard, all bruised and battered by many a bullet on the field of battle, oft warded off the stroke of death. Yes—

Lay (that) sword on his breast! There's no spot on its blade,
In whose cankering breath his bright laurels will fade!
'Twas the first to lead on at humanity's call—
It was stayed with sweet mercy, when "glory" was all!
As calm in the council, as gallant in war,
He fought for his country, and not its "hurrah!"
In the path of the hero, with pity, he trod—
Let him pass, with his (hope) to the presence of God.

* * * * * * * *

For the stars on our banner, grown suddenly dim,
Let us weep in our darkness—but weep not for him.

## LINES ON THE DEATH OF BREVET MAJOR GENERAL HUGH BRADY.

BY D. BETHUNE DUFFIELD, OF DETROIT.

A woe is on the Nation's soul,
And soldier hearts are sad and sore,
As through the land the tidings roll—
"Our gallant Brady is no more!"

Upon his strong and noble frame,
The hand of Time had gently pressed,
And vigorous Youth still seemed enthroned,
In all her pride, upon his breast.

Through twice a score of weary years,
His sword hung ever on his thigh;
And down to life's last tranquil hour,
He never passed a duty by.

In the red battle's fiercest blaze,
He bravely bathed his conquering blade,
And, fearless, dashed against the foe,
While war's fierce hail around him played.

His virtues, shining clear and bright,
Have long adorned his honored life,
And all his private walks and ways,
With generous deeds, were ever rife.

The eyes of all who knew the Man,
Read virtue in his very name;
And 'neath his bold and scorching glance,
Dishonor hid her head in shame.

* * * * * *

**But fife, nor drum, no more shall wake**
**The Warrior from his dreamless sleep;**
**Life's battle fought—the victory won—**
**His feet now press Fame's highest steep.**

**Then kindly wrap the Nation's Flag**
**Around the Hero's honored clay—**
**Fit shroud for Soldier such as he,**
**Who knew no joy, save in its ray!**

**And manly eyes may weep to-day,**
**As sinks the patriot to his rest;**
***The Nation held no truer heart***
***Than that which beat in* BRADY'S *breast.***

**DETROIT, April 15, 1851.**

## DEATH OF THE FATHER OF GENERAL HUGH BRADY.

My father was killed on the 11th of April, 1779, not more than half a mile from his own house. He had left that morning at the head of a party of men, to move in a family that had wintered at their farm about ten miles from my father's place. Having seen no sign of Indians, my father stopped at Wallis' Fort, and let the party go on with the family. He was the only person mounted, and intended soon to overtake the party; but unfortunately for him, his family and the settlement, he overtook a man who had fallen behind, and remained with him till the Indians shot him dead. The man escaped by mounting my father's horse, after he had fallen. It is a remarkable fact that this man, Peter Smith, was in the field where my brother was killed; and afterwards his own family was mostly destroyed by Indians and he escaped. After the war he settled in the Genesee country and became a wealthy man. Some men are born to luck.

**NOTE.—It is worthy of notice, that, although General Brady frequently sought, but was ever unsuccessful in finding the spot where his father was interred, one of his surviving daughters, Mrs. Backus, wife of Major Backus, was providentially made acquainted with the spot, during a visit last summer to the place of her grandfather's residence. An old revolutionary soldier who was with the father of General Brady when he fell, and had known and marked the place of his interment, a short time before her visit, had, on his death-bed, requested to be buried beside his old captain, and designated the spot. His request was granted; and there lie together, in the woods, the captain and the private of his company, in a place where the inhabitants of the neighborhood intend, it is said, to erect an appropriate monument.**

## AN ACCOUNT OF THE DEATH OF JAMES BRADY.

### BY GENERAL HUGH BRADY.

I have already stated that my brother James fell by the Indians, in 1778. It was in this manner: With ten or twelve others he went to help a neighbor harvest his wheat, about ten miles from the nearest station. On entering the field they placed a sentinel at the most exposed point, and their arms convenient to their work. They had worked but a short time when the sentinel gave an alarm. They all ran to their arms; but it proved to be a false alarm. After reprimanding the sentinel for his unsoldierly conduct, they returned to their work; but they had not long been reaping, when they heard the report of a rifle, and their sentinel was killed. Without noticing the conduct of others, my brother ran to his rifle, and as he stooped to pick it up he received a shot which broke his arm. This caused him to fall forwards, and before he could recover, a stout Indian was upon him—tomahawked him—scalped him—and left him for dead. After the Indians left the field, my brother recovered, and went to the house, where he found the rest of the reapers, who had run from the field without their arms and without making any attempt to defend or rescue him. They sent James to his parents, at Sunbury, forty miles from the spot where he received his wound, which was on Saturday. He lived until the Thursday following, retained his senses, and related what is stated above.

James Brady was a remarkable man. Nature had done much for him. His person was fine. He lacked but a quarter of an inch of six feet, and his mind was as well finished as his person. I have ever placed him by the side of Jonathan, son of Saul, for beauty of person and nobleness of soul, and like him he fell by the hands of the Philistines.

## NOTICE OF JOHN BRADY, BROTHER OF GEN. HUGH BRADY.

My brother John, in his 15th year, was in the battle of Brandywine, and was wounded. On the retreat he would have been captured, had not his colonel taken him up behind him.

John had gone to the army with my father, in order to take home the horses ridden out, and was directed by my father to return. But John heard from Ensign Boyd, that a battle was to be fought soon. He therefore remained to see the fun; and when my father took command of his company, on the morning of the battle, he found John in the ranks with a big rifle by his side. My father was wounded in the battle; Ensign Boyd was killed; and John received a wound during the retreat.

As one good turn deserves another, two of my brothers, many years after, married two of the colonel's daughters.

## NOTICE OF CAPTAIN SAMUEL BRADY.

Captain Samuel Brady entered the army as a volunteer when he was nineteen years of age and joined General Washington in Boston. A year after, he was appointed a lieutenant and returned home to recruit. He did not remain long. He belonged to Captain John Doyle's company, Hand's regiment, Wayne's brigade, and was with him at the surprise of Paoli, and most of the affairs in which that gallant general was engaged. In 1779, his regiment, the 9th Pennsylvania, was ordered to Pittsburgh. It was then commanded by Colonel Brodhead. Soon after, my brother heard of his brother's death, and he waited with impatience for an opportunity to avenge it on the Indians.

Nor was the opportunity long delayed. The Indians had attacked a family, and killed all of it except a boy aged twelve and his sister ten. These were taken prisoners, and their father was absent from home at the time it occurred.

The place was thirty miles east of Pittsburgh, and it so happened, Samuel was out in that direction; and hearing of it he started in pursuit having with him a friendly Indian, very useful as a guide. The second evening of the pursuit the party stopped on the top of a high hill and the Indian guide pointed with his wiping stick to the foot of the hill and said, "The Red Bank runs there!" The men sat down while the captain consulted with the Indian about his future movements. Suddenly the Indian sprang to his feet and said he smelt fire; and soon after, they saw the smoke curling above the trees on the opposite side of the Red Bank.

The Indian said, "They will sleep by that fire to-night." And I will awaken them in a voice of thunder in the morning, replied the captain. The Indian also said, "After they smoke and eat, and the sun has gone to sleep, they will give the scalp halloo."

With breathless impatience the party watched the setting of the sun, and as its light disappeared from the tops of the trees in the east, they heard seven distinct scalp halloos with the usual whoop between each. After it was over, Cole, the Indian, observed, "There are fourteen warriors and they have five scalps and two prisoners." The night being clear and the weather mild, the captain remained in his position till near morning, when he forded the stream above the Indians and posted his men, to await the crack of his rifle, as the signal of attack. As day broke an Indian rose up and stirred the fire. The signal was given. The Indian, standing, pitched into the fire. The attack continued; and resulted in eight of the warriors being deprived of the pleasure of ever again giving the scalp halloo. When the captain got to the fire he found the children much alarmed. After quieting their fears, the boy asked for the captain's tomahawk, and commenced cutting off the head of the Indian that fell in the fire, observing that this was the leader of the party and the man that killed and scalped his mother. The boy was permitted to finish the job he had commenced.

Three easy days' march brought the captain back to Pittsburgh. The father of the children was sent for to receive his lost ones. He showed much affection on meeting his children, and thanked the captain for having restored them; and then asked the captain what had become of his "big basin." It appeared that the Indians had carried off or destroyed, a big basin, from which Henry and his numerous family ate their sour-krout. The honest Dutchman thought there could be no impropriety in asking for it of the man who had the best chance to know.

In 1804, the writer met Henry (the boy) at a friend's house in Greensburgh, Pa. Henry had stopped with a wagon before the door, and had a barrel of cider for my friend, who, pointing to me said, "This gentleman is a brother of Captain Brady, who took you from the Indians." Henry was assisting to remove the cider, and he gave me a side look for a moment, and then continued his work. I felt hurt at the coldness he showed towards the brother of a man who had risked his life to rescue him from death or bondage, and to avenge the murder of his family. My friend informed me that Henry owned the farm from which he was captured, and was as rich as any farmer in the county. I thought, then, if his circumstances were as easy as his manners, he probably had at home in the old family chest as many dollars as would fill his father's big basin.

At the request of his colonel, Captain Brady visited the Sandusky towns at the head of four or five men, and lay concealed over ten days—so that he could see all their movements. It was a time for horse-racing among the Indians, and men, women, children and dogs, were all in attendance. A gray horse was the winner until the evening of the second day, when they compelled him to carry two riders, when he was finally beaten. The Indians then retired from the field. That evening, Captain Brady took two squaws prisoners and started for home. On the second day of their journey they were overtaken by a frightful thunder-storm which destroyed their provisions and most of their powder, having but three or four loads of good powder left in a priming horn. The stormy weather continued several days. After it cleared away, the captain, just before night, went ahead of his party hoping to kill some game, as they were without provisions. The party was then traveling on an Indian trail. He had not gone far when he met a party of Indians returning from the settlements with a woman and child prisoners. The captain shot the leader of the party, rescued the woman, and endeavored to obtain the child, that was strapped to the back of the Indian he had shot. But he had not time to do so, as the Indians had ascertained that he was alone, and had returned to their leader. He was therefore compelled to fall back, and he took the woman with him. His men seeing the Indians, and supposing the captain was killed, made their way to the nearest fort, and let the squaw run away. The other squaw had escaped during the great thunder-storm. The next day he met a party coming from Fort McIntosh to bury him, his men having reported him killed. A few days after, he returned with a party to the battle-ground and found the dead Indian.

In 1835, the writer met at the town of Detroit a son of the boy that was strapped to the back of the Indian. He informed me that after Wayne's treaty his father was delivered up at Pittsburgh by the Indians. When the land west of the Ohio came into market, his father bought the lot on which the affair took place, and built his house, as near as he could ascertain, on the spot where the Indian fell, and lived there till eighteen months prior to our conversation, when he was killed by a falling tree. His name was Stupps, and he was a fine looking man. I remember his grandmother's name was Jane Stupps; and I have often heard my brother relate the above story.

On the Beaver river is a place known as Brady's Bend, where he had a hard fight and killed many of the enemy, with small loss on his own side. His enterprising disposition and his skill in stratagems, in which he equaled any Indian, enabled him to do more towards protecting the frontier than all his regiment besides. Indeed, he was looked upon by the whole country as their surest protector; and all the recompense he ever received was in a reward of $500—being offered by Governor McKain for his person, for having, in 1791, killed a party of Indians on Brady's Run, thirty miles below Pittsburgh. He surrendered himself for trial, and was honorably acquitted—he having proved to the satisfaction of the court and jury, that these Indians had killed a family on the head of Wheeling creek, Ohio county, Va. That, on receiving notice of the murder, he suspected those Indians had come out of Pennsylvania. He therefore crossed the Ohio at the mouth of the Wheeling, and by steering west, came on the trail and pursued it to where he attacked them.

When General Wayne arrived at Pittsburgh in 1792, he sent for Captain Brady, who lived in Ohio county, Va., and gave him command of all the spies then in the employ of the government, amounting to sixty or seventy men.

The captain so disposed of them that not a depredation was committed on the frontier. On the contrary, three or four times the Indians were surprised in their own country, thirty or forty miles in advance of the white settlements. His plan of carrying the war into the Indian country put a stop to all murders on that frontier. He continued in command of these rangers until the period of his death, which occurred on Christmas day, 1795, at his house, about two miles west of West Liberty, Va., in the 39th year of his age. His disease was pleurisy. He left a widow and two sons.

Never was a man more devoted to his country, and few—very few—have rendered more important services, if we consider the nature of the service, and the part performed by him personally. He was 5 feet 11¾ inches in height, with a perfect form. He was rather light—his weight exceeding, at no time, 168 pounds. As I have said before, there were six brothers, viz.: Samuel, James, John, William P., Hugh, and Robert. There was but half an inch difference in our heights. John was 6 feet and 1 inch, and I was the shortest of them all. Is it not remarkable, that I, who was considered the most feeble of them all, should outlive all my brothers, after having been exposed to more dangers and vicissitudes than any, except Samuel? Is it not a proof that there is, from the beginning, "a day appointed for a man to die?" It is said, "The race is not to the swift, or the battle to the strong; but safety is of the Lord." That has ever been my belief.

# DETROIT IN 1796.

From the Detroit Advertiser and Tribune of September 11th, 1871.

We publish a wood cut showing the town of Detroit as it existed in 1796, or seventy-five years ago.* It speaks volumes of the vast progress which this city, in common with the whole Northwest, has made within three-quarters of a century. The sketch from which this cut was prepared was originally drafted from an old map of the city by Thomas Smith, a surveyor well known here in times past, and it was engraved for Ralph C. Smith, Esq., the well known land dealer of this city. It represents the town as originally laid out by the old French settlers, and the growth which it had attained up to the date of the drawing. It was then hardly more than a frontier post, though it was well known throughout the country from being one of the oldest French settlements.

The town then extended from the river front back across the present Larned street, and from what is now known as Griswold street to the present Cass street, while north of the buildings lay the fort, as depicted in the cut. On the sides a strong work of palisades defended the town, and there were several gates at which access could be gained to the interior, four being the number usually named. The river Savoyard ran across the future city, crossing what is now Woodward avenue, somewhere near the line of Congress street. It was always an insignificant stream and was easily dried up and filled in.

---

*See frontispiece.

The line of the river then did not at all correspond to the line of the Detroit now. The southern edge of the present city is all made ground, and in 1796 the river washed up as far as the present block between Atwater and Woodbridge streets, and Woodbridge street prolonged to the west would have ended in the water before Cass street was reached. The streets of that time do not correspond exactly to the line of any of our present streets, though the highway designated as St. Ann and that called St. Louis were not far away from the present Larned street and Jefferson avenue. It will be seen that much of the space in the back part of the town was devoted to the uses of the garrison, which was the main feature of the town, as the military gardens and parade grounds shown upon the sketch indicate. The bulk of the business was done near the river, and between Griswold and Wayne streets, as they exist now. The population was very small, though the statistics of that period are not full enough nor of sufficient reliability to furnish any very accurate knowledge concerning this matter.

The town was surrounded at a very short distance away with a wood of hickory, oak and other forest trees, which frequently swarmed with Indians and in which an Indian encampment was almost always to be found.

On June 11, 1805, a fire broke out in Detroit, which destroyed the entire city, with the exception of two buildings, and in 1807 a new plan of the place was determined on by the Governor, William Hull, and the judges, Augustus B. Woodward and James Witherell. They laid out a central park, a fraction of which is now known as the Grand Circus, and proposed to have streets radiate from this toward the river. They established three circles of streets, entirely surrounding the Circus and prolonged Washington avenue until it struck the present Jefferson avenue, and another open square being provided for at the intersection. Monroe avenue was also prolonged until it reached the same point. A part of this scheme was carried out, as witness the semi-circles about the Circus, Washington, Macomb, Madison and Miami avenues and Monroe and Michigan. The latter street was designed to be 200 feet in width, the same as Washington and Madison, but it was speedily shorn of its fair proportions and somewhat early became a quasi business street.

By 1850 the city had assumed substantially its present appearance, the uselessness of the governor and judges' system having become evident. It was retained only so far as it had actually been followed and streets established upon it. In all other respects it was abandoned. The tendency to-day, not only here, but throughout the country, is towards streets running at right angles and others are voted nuisances both for business and residence purposes.

The old map, which is published in connection with this article, represents the germ of Detroit of to-day, and yet its date is that of a year within the lifetime of many of our citizens. We turn from the Detroit of "Seventy-five Years Ago" to the Detroit of "Seventy Years Hereafter." It is safe to say that the child is now living in our city who in 1946 will look upon a cut of Detroit, plan of 1871, with as much surprise as we of to-day glance at the map of what it was three-quarters of a century ago.

# LOSS OF THE GRIFFIN.

1679–1879.

BY LEVI BISHOP.

**Read at the annual meeting of the State Pioneer Society at Lansing, Mich., Feb. 5th, 1879.**

**NOTE.—In the year 1679, LaSalle made his voyage to the west by way of the lakes. At Niagara he built a brig which he named the Griffin, in which he sailed for Mackinaw. There he sent the vessel back for supplies, but she was never heard of after. In the following composition an aged Indian chief is supposed to be standing on Duck Island, in Lake Huron, and that he sees the brig driven to destruction in a storm, by Michabou, the great Manitou of the lakes. The rocks, caves and groves of Mackinaw were the home, the palace, and the capital of this Manitou. The chief did not, of course, live to relate the loss of the Griffin, but in his supposed language, as here given, I have endeavored to exhibit the spirit of the Indian Mythology, as felt and expressed in Michigan, two hundred years ago.**

The Manitou is angry. Fierce he raves.
His heaving breath—that whirlwind roar.
The mighty waves he piles on mountain waves;
He hurls them to this rocky shore.

But what can thus his dreadful anger raise?
What sends him howling far and wide?
Great Michabou, thy name we ever praise,
But let thy fearful rage subside!

Behold him on the raging tempest sweep,
The spirit god of high renown;
The monsters flee, beneath the rolling deep;
Creation trembles at his frown.

See now he mounts the black and threatening cloud,
Swift arrows flashing from his eyes;
Hear now his voice, in crashing thunder loud,
Big tears are dropping from the skies.

Perhaps he would some goblin spirit chase,
From his proud home at Mackinaw;
Perhaps a Manitou of rival race,
Would bold invade his righteous law.

But what is that I see upon the foam,
That seems to labor as for life?
Small fleeting clouds, on poles, appear to roam,
And sink and rise amid the strife.

Yea, more; I there behold, or so they seem,
Of my own race the active form;
Despair and woe in human faces gleam.
Can men there struggle with the storm?

Yes, men and fate are moving hand in hand;
  No friend can reach them from the shore;
The Manitou forbids the distant land;
  He strikes. They now are seen no more.

And will the evening star's resplendent beams
  Invite the stranger souls to rest?
And will their spirits rise to Land of Dreams,
  That future home in distant West?

The voice of Michabou no more is loud,
  He now displays the victor smile;
His painted bow he hangs on yonder cloud,
  His arrows now may rest awhile.

And back he quiet sweeps to Mackinaw,
  His fatal vengeance fully told;
No sailing Imp will now contemn his law,
  Nor Manitou however bold.

His anger past, serene reaction comes;
  The sky and lake are calm again;
The hunters now may reach their distant homes,
  But Michabou alone will reign.

# OFFICERS

OF THE

## PIONEER SOCIETY OF THE STATE OF MICHIGAN

ELECTED FEBRUARY 5TH, 1880.

### PRESIDENT.

**HON. HEZEKIAH G. WELLS,** . . . . KALAMAZOO.

### VICE PRESIDENTS.

| | |
|---|---|
| ——— ——— | Allegan. |
| DAVID G. ROBINSON | Barry. |
| WILLIAM CHAMBERLAIN | Berrien. |
| ALBERT MILLER | Bay. |
| HARVEY HAYNES | Branch. |
| EDWARD C. COX | Calhoun. |
| RANDOLPH STRICKLAND | Clinton. |
| JOSIAH W. BEGOLE | Genesee. |
| J. G. RAMSDELL | Gd. Trav. |
| RALPH ELY | Gratiot. |
| E. O. GROSNEVOR | Hillsdale. |
| O. M. BARNES | Ingham. |
| HAMPTON RICH | Ionia. |
| HENRY H. BINGHAM | Jackson. |
| HENRY BISHOP | Kala'azoo. |
| ROBERT HILTON | Kent. |
| FRANCIS A. DEWEY | Lenawee. |
| RALPH C. FOWLER | Livingston. |
| DANIEL B. BRIGGS | Macomb. |
| PETER WHITE | Marquette. |
| JOSEPH M. STERLING | Monroe. |
| W. DIVINE | Montcalm. |
| H. H. HOLT | Muskegon. |
| PETER DOW | Oakland. |
| O. K. WHITE | Oceana. |
| HENRY PENNOYER | Ottawa. |
| CHARLES W. GRANT | Saginaw. |
| E. F. WADE | Shiawasee. |
| WILLIAM T. MITCHELL | St. Clair. |
| ISAAC D. TOLL | St. Joseph. |
| TOWNSEND NORTH | Tuscola. |
| ALEXANDER B. COPLEY | Van Buren. |
| EZRA D. LAY | Washte'w. |
| EDWIN JEROME | Wayne. |

### RECORDING SECRETARY.

MRS. HARRIET A. TENNEY.................................LANSING.

### CORRESPONDING SECRETARY.

GEORGE H. GREENE.................................LANSING.

### TREASURER.

EPHRAIM LONGYEAR.................................LANSING.

### EXECUTIVE COMMITTEE.

HON. HEZEKIAH G. WELLS, *ex-officio Chairman*...............KALAMAZOO.
ALBERT MILLER.................................BAY CITY.
F. A. DEWEY.................................TECUMSEH.
T. D. GILBERT.................................GRAND RAPIDS.

### COMMITTEE OF HISTORIANS.

J. C. HOLMES, *Chairman*.................................DETROIT.
M. H. GOODRICH.................................ANN ARBOR.
M. SHOEMAKER.................................JACKSON.
O. C. COMSTOCK.................................MARSHALL.
HARRIET A. TENNEY.................................LANSING.

# ANNUAL MEETING.

## HELD AT LANSING, FEBRUARY 4TH AND 5TH, 1880.

## ADDRESS OF THE PRESIDENT, HON. MICHAEL SHOEMAKER.

***Ladies and Gentlemen of the State Pioneer Society of Michigan:***

At this, the recurrence of our annual meeting, we should be thankful to that kind Providence, which has permitted so many of our members to avail themselves of this opportunity for that interchange of friendly greeting, and for cultivating and improving those personal and social relations which are so dear to the heart of every pioneer; but which the repose (so pleasant to us in our declining years), if not the infirmities of age, prevent many from enjoying as they would wish, except upon this and kindred occasions.

These, though secondary, are important ends attained by our annual meetings, and those of our auxiliary county societies; but the primary object of our association is the consideration of the papers submitted to us, in which are embodied the history of the settlement of the State, and of pioneer life, as given in detail by those who were actors, as well as witnesses, of that which they relate.

The actual pioneers, the first settlers in the older counties, are rapidly passing away, and with them we are losing much that is of interest to pioneer life, and of history which it is important to preserve for the use of the future historian of the State. The pioneers of whom I speak represent two generations of men, and two eras in the history of Michigan; while, at the same time many of these same men have been actors in all, and of all, that has made the State what it now is. They have seen it emerge from a vast wilderness, as some who first came thought it to be, and said, "fit only to be inhabited by muskrat and Indians." Governor Tiffin, of Ohio, when Surveyor General of the United States reported the lands in Michigan as being so worthless that they would not pay the cost of survey.

The face of much of the country was not of a promising character, and it required of those intending to make a home in Michigan, stout hearts to pass without feelings of discouragement and dismay the low, wet lands between Toledo and Adrian, and between Detroit and Ypsilanti. The sand-hills and marshes of the interior presented an uninviting appearance to the hardy farmers from New York and New England who were accustomed to smooth, solid meadows, and a heavy soil.

This picture was not without its pleasant contrast. The beautiful oak openings, and virgin prairies with which portions of the State were interspersed were not only pleasant to look upon, but gave promise of such fertility that they were speedily appropriated by those fortunate pioneers who were first to discover them.

To the usual hardships and privations of pioneer life were added the more trying ones of sickness and death. The all pervading fever and ague was for many years more dreaded, and more of an obstacle to the improvement of the country than all other causes combined. But all these discouraging circumstances were not only encountered, but overcome.

Those low, wet lands are now converted into teeming fields and extensive gardens; the sand-hills and plains into farms, easily tilled, and uniformly productive; and Michigan has long since ceased to be a by-word or reproach in the mouth of the inhabitants of neighboring States.

It is not only pertinent, but important, that we should contrast Michigan as it then was, with the State as it now is; for if there is a remarkable change, one greater than in other new States, and we find that this result is to be attributed to the character of the pioneers of Michigan, then who so much as this society, is interested in gathering and preserving the history which will verify so important a state of facts?

It was the first generation which planted the germ from which has grown all that the present generation possesses and enjoys. It is from the result of their action, and their wisdom, that the present great prosperity of the State has sprung, and to realize the extent and importance of the obligation of the State to these early pioneers we need only to consider and comprehend what Michigan is to-day, with her economical form of government; her well preserved school fund; her all pervading but much abused system of common schools; her normal school and colleges; her noble university; her system of public institutions for all classes of unfortunates, more comprehensive and complete than those of most other States or Nations; and last, but more important than all, the fact that our State has to-day a population decidedly more energetic, better educated, and as enterprising as that of any existing government.

This is claiming an enviable position for our adopted State, but I make the assertion that Michigan now has a more intelligent population than any other State in this, or any other country, after having well weighed its significance, and as one susceptible of the clearest proof. It is not an opinion formed to-day, or this year, but one I have carefully considered, and long held.

If it is wholly or measurably true that Michigan occupies a position so proud, there must have been substantial causes to have produced a result so desirable. These are to be found in the intellectual, moral, and physical constitution of those who founded the State; in those noble pioneers who in their wisdom, and by their industry and perseverance laid its foundations so deep and so broad that the noble superstructure has grown to its present grand proportions, as certainly, and as naturally, as the grain of her great staple, wheat, springs from the seed which the husbandman, confident in the laws of nature, plants in mother earth. As it is an immutable law of nature that like produces like, so also is it that the first permanent population of any State or country stamp its character and its future so indelibly that for all time their influence guides and governs its course, and not only impresses itself upon, but decides its history.

There is no truth in history more clearly established than that the future of a State or nation is decided by the character of its founders. In Lower Canada, notwithstanding the long rule of the English, we find the impress made by the first settlers is so indelible that the form of its institutions, the tone of its society, and the nature of its development, has been decided by the French *habitans.* The Scotch and English have done the same for Upper

Canada. Mexico and South America will ever labor under the disadvantages arising from the conquest of those countries by the Spanish and Portuguese. The old world presents more striking, because longer existing proofs of the soundness of this proposition; of which Ireland, Brittany, and the Basque Provinces in Spain, are striking examples.

The organization of the government of Michigan, and the development which has followed, are not only the natural, but the inevitable results of the liberal and comprehensive nature of the people who were first to locate upon its soil, and take into their hands the shaping of its destiny. All the best elements of the civilization of New York and New England were represented by these men, and served to form the germ from which our State has sprung. When we review our brief history and recall to our minds who were the framers of our constitution, and who for many years guided and directed their course, we will more clearly understand the causes which have elevated it to the high and honorable place it occupies among states and nations, for every attribute in which its citizens can take pride.

The names of these men are worthy of more than a passing reference. Among them were: General Lewis Cass, Stevens T. Mason, Augustus B. Woodward, John Norvell, William Woodbridge, John Biddle, William A. Fletcher, Elon Farnsworth, Solomon Sibley, Benjamin B. Kercheval, John R. Williams, George Morell, Daniel Goodwin, Augustus S. Porter, Benjamin F. H. Witherell, Jonathan Shearer, and Charles C. Trowbridge, of Wayne county; Edward Mundy and James Kingsley, of Washtenaw county; Ross Wilkins and John J. Adam, of Lenawee county; Alpheus Felch, Warner Wing, Charles Noble, and Austin E. Wing, of Monroe county; Randolph Manning, O. D. Richardson, and James B. Hunt, of Oakland county; Henry R. Schoolcraft, of Chippewa county; Albert Miller, of the Saginaw Valley; John Stockton and Robert P. Eldridge, of Macomb county; Lucius Lyon, Charles E. Stuart, Edwin H. Lothrop, Epaphroditus Ransom, and Hezekiah G. Wells, of Kalamazoo county; Isaac E. Crary, John D. Pierce, and Oliver C. Comstock, of Calhoun county; Kinsley S. Bingham, of Livingston county; John S. Barry, of St. Joseph county; Charles W. Whipple, Calvin Britain, and Thomas Fitzgerald, of Berrien county; and George Redfield, of Cass county.

Although the population of Michigan has increased from 212,267 in 1840, to over 1,500,000 in 1880, yet it is doubtful if in all this great number of the present population there can be named as many men of distinguished talent, of as great force of character, of men of as great mark in their several callings as were living in the State the first ten years after it was admitted into the Union.

It was these men, and their compeers, who shaped the destiny of the State; it was they who decided what should be its future. They originated all, and established most of the great institutions which are the evidence of the advanced civilization of the State, and of which we are so justly proud. They created our common schools, and provided for the preservation of the school fund; they founded our university; they mapped out and commenced our railroad system. In brief, they constructed and carried into effect all the machinery of State, and most of the schemes of private enterprise, which the present generation are improving and extending, and of which it is enjoying the benefits. With little thought of self they were building school-houses and churches; making improvements of various and all kinds, and establishing the institutions of the State on so sure, and so sound a basis, that there have been but slight changes in its organic law since it was framed and established by these pioneers, and their cotemporaries.

As a single though signal proof of the high standing of Michigan among her sister States I give an extract from a paper read before the Social Science Congress at Saratoga: "Mr. Porter adds figures to prove that the taxes in New England States, New York, New Jersey, and Pennsylvania, average $10.09 per head; while in Michigan, Indiana, Illinois, Wisconsin, Minnesota, Missouri, Kansas, and Nebraska, the taxes average $6.89 per capita. Massachusetts, the oldest and best governed State in the Union, pays a tax of $17.10 per inhabitant; and Vermont the lowest, $6.50. Illinois, of the western States, furnishes the highest tax, $8.50; and *Michigan the lowest, $4.57.*"

Here we have Michigan standing in the midst of her sister States, and leading them all, in this, the most conclusive evidence as to which is "the best governed State." With this showing, that the taxes in Massachusetts are higher per capita than those of any other of the States named, and those of Michigan the lowest, the statement that Massachusetts is "the best governed State in the Union" cannot be allowed to pass unchallenged.

Most of the men to whom we are indebted for having done their duty so wisely and so well have passed away; but the fruits of their labor, the result of their intelligence, the benefit of their high moral tone, the works of their noble lives, remain with us an ever present proof of the high character, the great integrity, the untiring industry, the indomitable perseverance of these, the fathers of the State.

It is not only those named who are worthy of our admiration and gratitude. They are but the type of the great body of hardy pioneers whose stout hearts, strong hands, and clear, sensible, honest heads not only encountered and overcame the hardships and privations of pioneer life, but who at the same time as citizens and voters, laid the foundation upon which the goodly superstructure of our State is built.

These men have left to their descendants of the present generation the benefit of their example, and to this society their memory and the duty of preserving their history.

It is our duty, as it should be our greatest pleasure, to gather and preserve the history of all the men who were first and foremost in the settlement of the State. Narratives of the lives of those who made Michigan their home previous to 1840 should be collected and placed in our archives and published, so far as of public interest, in the "Pioneer Collections."

Something has already been done in the two volumes already published by this society, and the papers in its archives, towards preserving from oblivion the history of the pioneers of Michigan, but more, vastly more, remains to be accomplished; and to this end the efforts of this society should be directed with a zeal and earnestness that should know no abatement until the end is attained.

That this result may be obtained, the aid of the legislature of the State should be invoked to a greater extent than heretofore, and State pride, if no higher motive, should be appealed to, in order to induce a liberality commensurate with the importance of the end which can be accomplished.

The sale of the "Collections" is desirable, and should be made a leading aim of this society, but the publication of its volumes is much more essential, for their importance will be better understood, and their value increased with the lapse of time.

The State of New York has employed learned and competent men to search the archives of the Old World for material for the "Documentary History" of that State, at a great expense, most of which might have been avoided, had a small outlay been made in the early times, to collect and preserve the cotemporaneous history and the biography of the then eminent men—the men whose lives made the history of their times. The most trivial papers which have been preserved have been deemed of sufficient importance to justify their publication in this "Documentary History."

It would certainly not only be wise, but also an economical proceeding for the State of Michigan to avail itself of the greater and more correct knowledge now extant and attainable, to secure the history of the settlement of the State. No plea of false economy should be permitted to stand in the way of procuring and preserving such an authentic history of its early times as can at this time and not at any period much later, be obtained. If the opportunity is allowed to pass, the State will undoubtedly hereafter, at a much greater expense, attempt to remedy the evil, and then, at best, will be obliged to depend upon sources of information which must make all such history to a great extent apocryphal.

This society is no suppliant for alms; on the contrary it intends in the future, as in the past, to perform the labor, which is great, of collecting and preserving the material from which a truthful history of the State can be compiled, and the extent to which it will do this will only be measured by the means at its command.

The labor involved in this undertaking will be performed by the members of this society, and should the State give its aid for five times the amount it has heretofore granted, it will not then have contributed more than a tithe of the amount it would have to expend to accomplish the work performed without compensation by this society.

The second volume of the "Pioneer Collections" is now published, and offered to the public at a price less than the cost of publication. It should be placed in every public library in the State, and every pioneer, and all interested in pioneer life, or the early history of the State, should avail themselves of the present opportunity for its purchase. There are also copies of volume one for sale by the recording secretary. It will become more desirable as time passes, for any library, to have on its shelves all the volumes of the "Pioneer Collections" that are or may be published, and by making the purchase of the volumes now for sale, two desirable objects are accomplished: first, the purchaser has books that ought to be in every household, and again the sale enables the society to extend its efforts in procuring and publishing other historical matter.

I cannot close this address without calling the attention of the society to the invaluable services of the chairman of the Committee of Historians, Professor J. C. Holmes, of Detroit. Professor Holmes has not only been indefatigable in procuring historical matter from all parts of the State, to be prepared and presented at the meetings of the society, but he has personally examined and corrected the proof of the second volume of "Pioneer Collections," its index, and table of contents. He has done all this without further compensation than that derived from love for the cause, and the satisfaction arising from having forwarded its aims and ends. The value of the services of Professor Holmes, so freely given, cannot be overestimated.

The duties of the Recording Secretary, Mrs. Harriet A. Tenney, of the Treasurer, Ephriam Longyear, and of the Corresponding Secretary, George H. Greene, have been performed in a perfectly satisfactory manner; and their reports will give full details of the transactions of the society.

One of the most pleasing features connected with the organization of this society is the summer meetings held with, and on the invitation of County Pioneer Societies. Heretofore these meetings have been held in connection with the society of which the President, for the time being, of this society has been a member. These meetings have been eminently successful and satisfactory. It is very desirable that they be continued, and that the members of the State Society attend, if it is possible for them to do so. Certainly none will regret the time spent in attending the meetings if they should be a source of as much enjoyment in the future, as they have been in the past. Those who met with the Pioneers of the County Societies at Bay City, at Marshall, at Ann Arbor, at Tecumseh, or at Jackson, will not soon, if ever, forget the cordial greetings, the pleasant intercourse, and the intellectual as well as personal entertainment, which served to make those reunions sources of such unalloyed pleasure.

---

## REPORT OF THE RECORDING SECRETARY.

Office of the
"Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan."
*Lansing, February 4th, 1880.*

In accordance with the provisions of the Constitution of the "Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan," I herewith present my sixth annual report as follows:

### ANNUAL MEETING, 1879.

The sixth annual meeting of the society was held in Representative Hall (new capitol), commencing at 2 o'clock Wednesday, February 5th.

### OFFICERS PRESENT.

*President*—John J. Adam.

*Vice Presidents*—Wm. Besley, E. H. Thomson, Col. M. Shoemaker, H. G. Wells, R. Hilton, F. A. Dewey, B. O. Williams, E. D. Lay, E. Jerome.

*Recording Secretary*—Harriet A. Tenney.

*Corresponding Secretary*—John J. Bush.

*Treasurer*—E. Longyear.

*Executive Committee*—John J. Adam, *ex-officio*, F. A. Dewey.

*Committee of Historians*—J. C. Holmes, *Chairman*, M. H. Goodrich, O. C. Comstock, H. G. Wells, Harriet A. Tenney.

The President, John J. Adam, took the chair. The exercises of the afternoon were opened with prayer by Rev. H. M. Joy. The president delivered a short address and congratulated the pioneers upon the continued interest of the members of the society.

The reports of the Recording and Corresponding Secretaries, the Treasurer and the Committee of Historians, were read, and on motion of Mr. Baxter were accepted and placed on file.

The reports of the Memorial Committee being then called for, Dr. O. C. Comstock presented a memorial of Deacon A. Lewis, of Homer, and of Col. Charles Dickey, of Marshall. A fine tribute was also paid to the memory of Col. C. Dickey by H. G. Wells.

F. A. Dewey presented a memorial on the death of Rev. Wm. N. Lyster.

The death of Daniel B. Harrington, Vice President of the society for St. Clair county, and of A. M. Chapin, Vice President for Ingham county, was reported by the Secretary. A memorial paper on the death of Mr. Chapin was promised by O. M. Barnes.

E. D. Lay, of Washtenaw, and Edwin Jerome, of Wayne counties, presented memorials of the death of many old pioneers in their respective counties.

W. J. Baxter offered the following resolution, which was adopted:

*Resolved,* That the Vice Presidents in preparing memorials be requested to include not only members of this society, but also of all early settlers who have made a valuable historical record in their respective counties.

Prof. A. Bradish, of Detroit, then read a paper on the life and death of Douglass Houghton, the first geologist of Michigan.

On motion of H. G. Wells, the president appointed a committee of three, consisting of H. G. Wells, E. D. Lay and R. Hilton, to nominate officers for the ensuing year.

Mr. Levi Bishop not being present, a poem entitled the "Loss of the Griffin," prepared by him for this meeting was read by Mr. E. Longyear; another paper entitled "Energy of Character of the Pioneers," also prepared by Mr. Bishop, was not read for want of time.

Mr. O. A. Jenison read an interesting historical paper and presented many valuable curiosities relating to the history of Michigan.

Mr. Baxter offered the following resolution, which was adopted:

*Resolved,* That the curiosities and valuable relics donated to this society by Mr. O. A. Jenison, be gladly received and placed in the museum of the society; and that the thanks of the society be and they are hereby given to Mr. Jenison for this gift.

*Resolved,* That this society is unanimous and earnest in the expression of the hope that the life of so valuable a collector of curiosities and relics may be prolonged for many years, and that his energy and enthusiasm in this direction may never fail.

Mr. Baxter also offered the following, which was adopted:

*Resolved,* That the thanks of this society are hereby extended to Prof. A. Bradish, for his valuable and very interesting paper on the life and services of Douglass Houghton, and that he be requested to furnish a copy for publication with the proceedings of the society.

The society then adjourned to meet again at 7 o'clock in the evening.

The society met pursuant to adjournment, the president in the chair. The exercises were opened with reading of the Scripture and prayer by Rev. Mr. Franklin.

Historical papers were presented as follows:

The Mound Builders, by H. H. Riley, was read by W. J. Baxter.

Echoes of the Past, by Mrs. Mary E. Foster.

Sketches of the Members of the Constitutional Conventions of 1835 and 1850, by H. G. Wells.

Two papers, Early Banking in Branch County, by C. D. Randall; and A Sketch of the Early History of Van Buren County, No. 1, by Geo. W. Lawton, were placed on file without reading.

The following proposed amendment to the constitution of the society was offered by Mr. Shoemaker:

Amend Article VII. by inserting after the word "year" in third line, the words, "or such other time as the society may determine at an annual meeting," and was laid upon the table in accordance with the provisions of Article IX. of the constitution.

Dr. O. C. Comstock offered the following, which was adopted:

WHEREAS, *The Honorable the House of Representatives*, Did by resolution offer to the State Pioneer Society the use of Representative Hall for the use of said society for its annual meeting;

*Resolved*, That the society entertain a grateful sense of its courtesy and beg respectfully to present their thanks herewith.

*Resolved*, That a copy of this preamble and resolution be forwarded to the Speaker of the House, by the secretary of this society.

The committee on nomination of officers reported as follows, all of whom were unanimously elected:

President, Col. M. Shoemaker, Jackson.

Recording Secretary, Harriet A. Tenney, Lansing.

Corresponding Secretary, Geo. H. Greene, Lansing.

Treasurer, E. Longyear, Lansing.

Executive Committee, Col. M. Shoemaker, *ex-officio;* Albert Miller, Bay City; T. D. Gilbert, Grand Rapids; F. A. Dewey, Cambridge.

Committee of Historians, J. C. Holmes, Detroit; M. H. Goodrich, Ann Arbor; O. C. Comstock, Marshall; H. G. Wells, Kalamazoo; Harriet A. Tenney, Lansing.

Vice Presidents, one from each county, as follows: Allegan—Joseph Fisk; Barry—H. A. Goodyear; Bay—Judge Albert Miller; Berrien—D. A. Winslow; Branch—H. Warner; Calhoun—Wm. R. McCall; Clinton—Wm. Besley; Eaton—H. A. Shaw; Genesee—E. H. Thomson; Grand Traverse—J. G. Ramsdell; Gratiot—Ralph Ely; Hillsdale—E. O. Grosvenor; Houghton—E. J. Hulburt; Ingham—Minos McRoberts; Ionia—Hampton Rich; Jackson—Jerome B. Eaton; Kalamazoo—H. G. Wells; Kent—Robert Hilton; Lenawee—F. A. Dewey; Livingston—Ralph Fowler; Macomb—D. B. Briggs; Marquette—Peter White; Monroe—Gouverneur Morris; Montcalm—W. Divine; Muskegon—H. H. Holt; Oakland—A. C. Baldwin; Oceana—O. K. White; Ottawa—Wm. M. Ferry; Saginaw—Wm. L. Webber; Shiawassee—B. O. Williams; St. Joseph—Isaac D. Toll; Tuscola—T. North; Van Buren—J. R. Hendryx; Washtenaw—Ezra D. Lay; Wayne—Edwin Jerome.

There was a good attendance of pioneers at the meeting. The exercises of the evening were enlivened with singing by a volunteer choir of some of Lansing's best singers, led by W. L. Smith.

The business of the society being completed, the pioneers, aided by the choir, sang Auld Lang Syne, and the benediction being pronounced by Rev. L. B. Potter, the audience dispersed.

### SOCIAL REUNION.

The semi-annual meeting of the State Society was held June 18, 1879, at Jackson, by invitation of the Jackson County Pioneer Society. The attendance was large and the meeting one of unusual interest.

### OBITUARY.

A resolution was passed by the Executive Committee two years ago, directing the Corresponding Secretary to take charge of all the records of the death of all pioneers of the State, whether members of the society or not, and all such records received by the Recording Secretary during the past year have been handed to Mr. Greene.

### COUNTY SOCIETIES.

No report has been received from any county society during the past year.

### DONATIONS.

The donations made during the year have been large and valuable, a list of which is given as follows:

HON. A. C. BALDWIN, Pontiac:
Copy of the Pontiac Bill Poster of February 26, 1879, containing an historical article.

A. L. BOURS, Lansing:
Pamphlet copy of the proceedings at the dedication of the new capitol of Michigan.

PRESIDENT T. C. ABBOT, Agricultural College:
A set of the catalogues of the Agricultural College.

REV. GEORGE DUFFIELD, Lansing:
Twenty pamphlet copies of a Thanksgiving sermon, entitled "The New Capitol."

DANIEL S. DURRIE, Madison, Wisconsin:
Index to American pedigrees.

DR. O. C. COMSTOCK, Marshall:
Copies of the Commerical Expounder, Marshall, June 12 and 19, 1879; and of the Marshall Statesman of April 10, 1879.

ALLEN GOODRICH, Washington City:
Map of the United States and Territories, 1877, compiled from official surveys of the General Land Office, under direction of Hon. J. A. Williamsón, Commissioner; also a copy of the Government Centennial Memorial, of 1876, entitled "The Administrators of the United States Government at the beginning of the 2nd Century," Washington, July 4, 1876.

PROF. J. C. HOLMES, Detroit:
A collection of papers relating to the death of Hon. Z. Chandler. Transactions of the Michigan Agricultural Society for the years 1849 to 1858, inclusive, except for 1852, 9 volumes; also 18 pamphlets.
Copy of the Detroit Post and Tribune of July 6, 1879.

DON. C. HENDERSON, Allegan:
A collection of manuscript letters and papers containing historical matter used by Mr. Henderson in compiling the Legislative Manual of 1879.

HON. GEO. W. LAWTON, Lawton:
Historical Sketch, No. 2, of Van Buren County.

ADJ'T GEN. JNO. ROBERTSON:
Two copies of "The Flags of Michigan."

REV. STEPHEN D. PEET, Clinton, Wisconsin:
Copies of the American Antiquarian, Vol. I., Nos. 2 and 4, 1879, and Vol. II. No. 2, 1879.

J. C. WHEELER, Corunna:
A frog taken out of the Corunna Coal Mines, September 30, 1877, 80 feet below the surface of the earth and back in the mine 150 feet.

B. O. Williams, Owosso:
An Indian war club used by a Chippewa chief at the river Raisin massacre.
Hon. Albert Williams, Ionia:
Copy of the Representative Men of Michigan.
Hon. H. G. Wells, Kalamazoo:
Copies of the Kalamazoo Evening Telegraph, July 12 and August 15, 1879.
Robert Hilton, Grand Rapids:
Copy of the Daily Morning Democrat, February 8, 1879.
Col. M. Shoemaker, Jackson:
Copies of Jackson Weekly Patriot, of June 25, 1879, and of the Jackson Weekly Citizen, July 22, 1879.
O. A. Jenison, Lansing:
An ambrotype of the old Lansing House.
A copy of the first poster ever issued from the printing press in Lansing. The frame and glass have also an historical interest.
A piece of iron from one of the plates of the original Monitor.
A full set of posters put out by the Central Michigan Agricultural Society from 1866 to 1879, both inclusive.
A large folio scrap-book, No. 2, filled with papers of great historical value.
An ambrotype likeness of the Old Indian Chief Okemos.
Chicago Historical Society:
Pamphlet copy of the proceedings of the society November 19, 1868.
Pamphlet copy of an address entitled "Father Marquette at Mackinaw and Chicago," by H. H. Hurlburt.
Kansas State Historical Society:
First Biennial Report, January 26, 1879—pamphlet.
Delaware Historical Society:
One historical pamphlet.
Michigan University:
A collection of the catalogues of the University from 1860 to 1878-9, both years inclusive—20 pamphlets.
Old Colony Historical Society, Taunton, Mass.:
Copy of the collections of the society for 1879, one pamphlet.
Oneida Historical Society, Utica, N. Y.:
Three historical pamphlets.
Wayne County Pioneer Society:
A file of the United States War Department Weather Maps; also a large and valuable collection of historical manuscripts, books, pamphlets and newspapers.
Department of the Interior, Washington:
Senate and House Journals, 3d Session 45th Congress, and 1st Session 46th Congress,—4 volumes.
Miscellaneous:
Copy of the Legislative Manual, 1879.
Copy of the Transactions of the Michigan Agricultural Society for 1852.
Copy of the Hartford Day Spring, Van Buren county, April 5, 1879.
Copy of the Detroit Evening News, August 12, 1879.

### MEMBERSHIP.

There has been an addition of thirty-six members since the last annual meeting, making a total of four hundred and sixty-six names enrolled upon the membership book of the society. The actual present membership is much less, as many of the pioneers have died since joining the society.

The following is the list of new members: Levi Loomis, Roger Haviland, Josiah L. Hawes, Noys L. Avery, Wm. D. Thompson, E. H. Whitney, Don C. Henderson, Wright L. Coffinberry, Eugene Laible, Jane Olds, W. F. Jenison, E. S. Woodman, John Ball, J. B. Eaton, J. W. Begole, Abiah Angell, Fanny L. Avery, Harriet A. Begole, A. L. Davis, F. S. Clarke, G. B. Slocum, H. H. Allen, Henry Pennoyer, C. D. Randall, R. S. Varnum, Henry H. North, Mrs. Almira North, James Shearer, Alex. Chapoton, Henry W. Lord, Wm. T. Mitchell, Oka Town, O. D. Goodrich, Wm. Winegar, D. A. McMartin, Maria T. McMartin.

All of which is respectfully submitted.

HARRIET A. TENNEY,
*Recording Secretary State Pioneer Society.*

---

## REPORT OF THE CORRESPONDING SECRETARY.

*Lansing, February 4, 1880.*

*To the Officers and Members of the State Pioneer Society:*

I herewith submit the file of letters and communications received during the year ending this day, all of which have been promptly answered or acknowledged, and none relate to any matters which need to come before this meeting, except such as relate to memorials.

We have now a membership of about four hundred and fifty, scattered promiscuously over the State, and from so large a number there must be more or less changing of residences or removals by death, and in order that we might obtain a corrected list of all such changes, I prepared a list of members of several counties having the greater number of members and sent to the vice presidents of these counties, requesting them to give present P. O. address, and in case of any deaths to give date and place of such death; the most of whom responded promptly. A few however have not yet done so.

At a joint meeting of the Committee of Historians and Executive Committee, January 5th last, they instructed me, in sending notices of this meeting, to request the vice presidents from each county to prepare and bring, or send, a writtten memorial of any pioneers in their counties, whether members of this society or not, who had died during the year. I accordingly did so, and have received several such lists which will be presented at the proper time during this meeting.

I would recommend that the vice presidents (who constitute the memorial committee) make it a point whenever a pioneer of their county dies, whether a member of this society or not, to obtain all the facts they can, relative to his settlement in the State, history while here, date of death and age at time of death, and report the same to the Corresponding Secretary, or bring it to be read at the annual meeting; this plan will enable them to give a more extended report than to wait until just before the meeting before preparing this memorial report.

All of which is respectfully submitted.

GEORGE H. GREENE,
*Corresponding Secretary.*

## REPORT OF THE TREASURER

### OF THE STATE PIONEER SOCIETY OF THE STATE OF MICHIGAN, AT THE ANNUAL MEETING FEBRUARY 4, 1880.

***E. Longyear, Treasurer, in account with the Society:***

RECEIPTS.

| | |
|---|---|
| To Amount on hand at last report | $291 90 |
| " " received for fees | 102 00 |
| " " " " sale of Pioneer Collections | 75 25 |
| " " " from donations, etc | 2 25 |
| " " " State appropriation, act 34 of 1879 | 500 00 |
| | $971 40 |

DISBURSEMENTS.

| | |
|---|---|
| By Expenses for Committee of Historians | $155 10 |
| " " " Executive Committee | 95 67 |
| " Paid postage | 11 75 |
| " " express | 60 |
| " " pioneer picture | 1 00 |
| " " printing notices, etc | 16 90 |
| " " " on 2d vol. Pioneer Collections | 554 60 |
| " " use of organ | 2 00 |
| " Cash on hand, deposited in State treasury | 133 78 |
| | $971 40 |

E. LONGYEAR, *Treasurer.*
*Per* GEO. H. GREENE.

## REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE OF HISTORIANS.

Your Committee of Historians, in pursuance of their duty as such committee, have copied from the records, the proceedings of the society for the years 1877 and 1878, and added thereto such pioneer history of counties and towns as they were able to collect, and now present to you this material in permanent form as Vol. II. of the "Pioneer Collections."

All of this material was carefully revised in the endeavor to have it as correct as possible.

Your committee gave a great deal of time and labor in the preparation of the manuscript for this volume. and a great deal more than would have been necessary had the writers of some of the articles been more careful to write plainly and spell names correctly. In some of the articles, where a name occurred more than once, it was spelled in as many different ways as it was mentioned; and in some cases your committee was puzzled to know which was the correct way. Undoubtedly some errors of this kind will be found in the book. As we are making, collecting, and preserving history, it is very desirable that all articles prepared to be read before this association, or to be placed in the archives or the volumes of the society should be very carefully prepared, particularly as to dates and names, and correctly and legibly written. Notwithstanding the lateness of the hour at which the last form of the book was printed, the bookbinder assured us on Monday morning last that he would deliver one hundred copies here in season for this meeting, so that persons wishing to purchase will have an opportunity to do so. At a joint meeting of the Executive Committee and the Committee of Historians held a short time since, it was decided to sell Vol. I. and Vol. II. at $1.25 each. Vol. I. contains 560 pages; Vol. II. contains 680 pages.

At the close of this meeting there will be nearly enough material on hand for another volume of about 600 pages. It is the intention of the society to continue the publication of these volumes until the early history of every county, city, town, and village in the State has been gathered up and published. In order to accomplish this, it would be well if persons in every town would interest themselves in collecting the pioneer history of his town, put it in good shape and send it to the Recording Secretary of the State Pioneer Society. The County Pioneer Societies have it in their power to assist in this work by reporting their proceedings to the secretary, and transmitting their gatherings of pioneer history so that all this material may be available in preparing future volumes of Pioneer Collections. The society has rooms in the capitol where all collections of the society can be safely kept, and all papers and articles systematically arranged by counties, so that they can be turned to at any moment as they may be wanted for reference or publication.

Your committee would suggest that all persons present who are willing to volunteer their services to collect and transmit to the State society as much of the pioneer history of their town or county as possible for them to do, will, before the close of this meeting, leave their address with the secretary.

All of which is respecfully submitted.

J. C. HOLMES,
O. C. COMSTOCK,
M. H. GOODRICH,
H. G. WELLS,
HARRIET A. TENNEY.

# GOVERNORS AND JUDGES OF MICHIGAN.*

## FROM THE FIRST CLAIM OF JURISDICTION BY FRANCE† UNDER FRENCH DOMINION.

1. Samuel de Champlain, appointed in 1612.
2. Marc Antoine de Bras-de-fer de Chasteaufort, 1635.
3. Charles Huault de Montmagny, 1636.
4. Louis D'Aillebout de Coulonge, 1648.
5. Jean de Lauson, 1651.
6. Charles de Lauson-Charny, 1656.
7. The Chevalier Louis D'Ailleboust de Coulonge, 1657.
8. Pierre de Voyer, Viscount D'Argenson, 1658.
9. Pierre du Bois, Baron D'Avangour, 1661.
10. The Chevalier Augustin de Saffray-Mésy, 1663.
11. Alexandre de Prouville, Marquis de Tracy (Viceroy), 1663.
12. The Chevalier Daniel de Remy de Courcelles, 1665.
13. Louis de Buade, Count de Palluan et de Frontenac, 1672.
14. Le Fevre Antoine de la Barre, 1682.
15. Jacques René de Brisay, Marquis de Denonville, 1685.
16. Counte de Frontenac (same as 13), 1689.
17. The Chevalier Louis Hector de Callières, 1699.
18. Philippe de Rigaud, Marquis de Vaudreuil, 1703.
19. Charles Le Moyne, Baron de Longueuil, 1725.
20. Charles, Marquis de Beauharnois, 1726.
21. Rolland Michel Barrin, Count de la Galissonniere, 1747.
22. Jacques Pierre de Taffanel, Marquis de la Jonquiere, 1749.
23. Charles Le Moyne, Baron de Longueuil, 1752.
24. Le Marquis de Duquesne de Menneville, 1752.
25. Pierre Francois, Marquis de Vaudreuil-Cavagnal, 1755.

### BRITISH GOVERNORS-GENERAL OF CANADA.

Gen. Sir James Murray, 1763.
Gen. Sir Guy Carleton, 1768.

---

*This paper was prepared by Judge James V. Campbell for Don C. Henderson, to be inserted in the Legislative Manual for 1879, and donated by Mr. Henderson to the Pioneer Society to be inserted in Vol. III. of the "Pioneer Collections."

†In the discussions concerning the date of French possession it was claimed by the French government that the discovery was made by Champlain. Formal possession was first asserted by De Lusson, many years later.

Gen. Sir Frederick Haldimand, 1777.
Gen. Sir Guy Carleton, Lord Dorchester, 1786.
Henry Hamilton, Lieut. Gov. (acting), 1784.
Henry Hope, Lieut. Gov., 1785.

### GOVERNOR OF UPPER CANADA.

Gen. John Graves Simcoe, 1792.

### TERRITORIAL GOVERNORS.

Gen. Arthur St. Clair, (N. W. Territory) 1787.
Gen. William Henry Harrison, (Indiana) 1800.
Gen. William Hull, (Michigan) 1805.
Gen. Lewis Cass, (Michigan) 1813.
Gen. George B. Porter, (Michigan) 1832.

### SECRETARIES ACTING AS GOVERNORS.

Gen. John T. Mason, 1831.
Stevens Thomson Mason, 1831-1834.
John S. Horner, 1835.

**Note.—From the organization of the State in November 1835 to July 4, 1836, the Territory of Michigan continued in separate existence, embracing the Upper Peninsula, Wisconsin, Minnesota, Iowa, and other unorganized country. Wisconsin was organized July 4, 1836.**

### CHANCELLORS.

Elon Farnsworth, July, 1836 to 1842, when he resigned.
Randolph Manning, 1842 to 1846, when he resigned.
Elon Farnsworth, 1846 to March, 1847, when court abolished.

### SUPREME COURT JUDGES UNDER CONSTITUTION OF 1835.

Wm. A. Fletcher, Chief Justice, July, 1836 to 1842—resigned.

George Morell, Associate, from July, 1836 to 1842; Chief Justice *vice* Fletcher, to July 18, 1843.

Epaphroditus Ransom, Associate Justice, July, 1836 to July, 1843; Chief Justice, July, 1843 to January 1, 1848.

Charles W. Whipple, Associate Justice, 1838; Chief Justice, March, 1848 to January 1, 1852.

Alpheus Felch, Associate Justice, July, 1842; re-appointed July 18, 1843. Resigned November, 1845.

Daniel Goodwin, Associate Justice, July 18, 1843, to 1846—resigned.

Warner Wing, Associate Justice, November, 1845 to January 1, 1852, *vice* Felch.

George Miles, Associate Justice, October 1846 to 1850, *vice* Goodwin—died, 1850.

Sanford M. Green, Associate Justice, March 2, 1848, to January 1, 1852.

Edward Mundy, (additional) Associate Justice, April 3, 1848, to October 1851—deceased.

Abner Pratt, Associate Justice, 1850 to January 1, 1852, *vice* Miles, deceased.

George Martin, Associate Justice, October, 1851 to January 1, 1852, *vice* Mundy, deceased.

### CONSTITUTION OF 1850.

Circuit Judges holding Supreme Court, January 1, 1852 to January 1, 1858: (John S. Goodrich, elected April 1851, died before his term of office would have begun.)

Warner Wing, resigned 1856.
George Martin.
Sanford M. Green, resigned 1857.
Joseph T. Copeland.
Samuel T. Douglass, resigned 1857.
David Johnson, resigned 1857.
Abner Pratt, resigned 1857.
Charles W. Whipple, died October, 1855.
Nathaniel Baron, October, 1855, *vice* Whipple.
E. H. C. Wilson, November, 1856, *vice* Wing.
Benjamin F. H. Witherell, May, 1857, *vice* Douglass.
Benjamin F. Graves, May, 1857, *vice* Pratt.
Josiah Turner, May, 1857, *vice* Green.
Edwin Lawrence, May, 1857, *vice* Johnson.

### PRESENT SUPREME COURT, ORGANIZED JANUARY 1, 1858.

George Martin (re-elected April, 1859), to December, 1867—died.
Randolph Manning, (re-elected April, 1861),—died 1864.
Isaac P. Christiancy, (re-elected April, 1865 and 1873)—resigned Jan., 1875.
James V. Campbell, (re-elected April, 1863, 1871 and 1879).
Thomas M. Cooley, (*vice* Manning), 1864, re-elected April, 1869 and 1877.
Benjamin F. Graves, 1868 (re-elected 1875), *vice* Martin.
Isaac Marston, April, 1875, *vice* Christiancy (re-elected 1881).

### CHIEF JUSTICES.

Wm. A. Fletcher, 1837-1842, appointed July 18, 1836.
George Morell, 1842, July, 1843, appointed April 1, 1842.
Epaphroditus Ransom, July, 1843 to January, 1848; term commenced July 18, 1843.
Charles W. Whipple, January, 1848 to January, 1852; appointed March 2, 1848, to hold until April 16, 1853.
Warner Wing, 1852-1854.
S. M. Green, 1854-1856.
Abner Pratt, 1856-1857.
George Martin, 1858-1866—died December 15, 1867.
T. M. Cooley, 1868-1870, 1876-1878.
J. V. Campbell, 1870-1872, 1878-1880.
Isaac P. Christiancy, 1872-1874.
B. F. Graves, 1874-1876.

### ASSOCIATE JUSTICES.

Randolph Manning, 1858-1864.
T. M. Cooley, 1864 ——.
Isaac P. Christiancy, 1858-1875.
Isaac Marston, 1875 ——.

### ATTORNEY GENERALS—STATE.

Daniel LeRoy, 1836-1837.
Peter Morey, 1837-1841.
Zephaniah Platt, 1841-1843.
Elon Farnsworth, 1843-1845.
Henry N. Walker, 1845-1847.
Edward Mundy, 1847-1849.
G. V. N. Lothrop, 1849-1851.
Wm. Hale, 1851-1855.
J. M. Howard, 1855-1861.
Charles Upson, 1861-1863.
Albert Williams, 1863-1867.
Wm. L. Stoughton, 1867-1869.
Dwight S. May, 1869-1873.
Byron D. Ball, 1873 to April 1, 1874.
Isaac Marston from April 1, 1874, to January 1, 1875.
Andrew J. Smith, 1875-1877.
Otto Kirchner, 1877-1881.

## ANOTHER LIST OF MICHIGAN GOVERNORS.

The following history of the early French and British Governors of Canada, to which Michigan was then attached, was prepared by Mr. W. Leslie Thom for the Detroit Evening News, and appeared in that paper January 20, 1879.

Mr. Thom is an expert in Canadian history, and shows great research in the preparation of this list:

### LIST OF GOVERNORS UNDER FRENCH DOMINATION.

1. Jean Francois de la Roque, Chevalier, Seigneur de Roberval, Lieutenant and Governor for Francis I. of France. —— A. D. 1540.
2. Troilus de Mesgouats, Marquis de la Roche and Kœttermoal, Vicomte de Trevarez, Lieutenant-General and Governor for Henry IV. of France, 1598.
3. Captain Chauvin de.
4. Commander de Chaste, Eyouard de.
5. Pierre de Guast, Sieur de Monts.

### VICE-ROYALTY, FROM 1612 TO 1627.

6. Charles de Bourbon, Comte de Soissons.
7. Henry II. de Bourbon, Prince of Condé.
8. Ponce de Lausiere Cardaillac de Themines, 1616.

It was Themines, who, in his capacity of Marshal of France, arrested the Prince de Condé in the Louvre.

9. Henry II. de Bourbon, Prince of Condé, (re-established).
10. The Marshal, Duc de Montmorency, 1620.
11. Henry de Levy, Duc de Ventadour, 1624.

12. Le Duc D'Ampville.

Some authorities add Cardinal Richelieu and the Duc de Breze.

### THE FEUDAL COMPANY OF THE HUNDRED ASSOCIATES.

13. Samuel de Champlain, Governor.

14. Marc-Antoine de Bras de Fer, Sieur de Chasteaufort, 1635.

15. Charles Huault de Montmagny, Knight of St. John of Jerusalem, Onodthio of the savage tribes, Governor for the company and Lieutenant-General for the King.

16. Louis D'Ailleboust de Coulonge.

17. Jean de Lauson, Chevalier, member of the conseil d'Etat and consell prive, 1651.

18. Charles de Lauson, Knight, Seigneur de Charny, grand master of waters and forests.

M. de Charny, after a brief term, returned to France and entered the priesthood. He became canon and secretary to Mgr de Laval de Montmorency, first bishop of Quebec.

19. Pierre de Voyer, Vicomte D'Argenson, 1657.

20. Louis D'Aillebout de Coulonge, restored.

21. Pierre Dubois, Baron D'Avaugour.

D'Avaugour was killed in 1663 defending Fort de Serin against the Grand Vizier Achmet Koprogli.

### GRAND SENESCHALS OF NEW FRANCE.

22. Messire Jean de Lauson, Chevalier, 1640.

23. Charles Joseph de Lauson, Seigneur of Cote Lauson, 1661. (A minor, succeeding his father by right of *survie.*)

### ROYAL GOVERNMENT.

24. Augustin de Saffray, Sieur de Mesy, 1663.

25. Sieur Jacques Leneuf de la Poterie.

26. Alexandre de Prouville, Marquis de Tracy, Lieutenant-General of the King in both Americas (1663), and Daniel de Remy, Seigneur de Courcelle, Governor and Lieutenant-General, 1665.

27. Louis de Buade, Chevallier, Comte de Paluan, 1672.

28. Sieur Le Fevre de la Barre, 1682.

29. Jacques Rene de Brisay, Marquis de Denonville, 1685.

30. Louis de Buade, Comte de Frontenac, 1689.

31. Louis Hector, Chevalier de Calliere, 1698.

32. Phillippe de Rigaud, Marquis de Vaudreuil, 1703.

33. M. de Ramezay, from 1714 to 1716, in the absence of Vaudreuil.

34. Charles Le Moyne, Baron de Longueuil I., Commandant-General from the death of Vaudreuil till the arrival of

35. Charles Marquis de Beauharnois, 1726.

36. Michel Rolland Barrin, Comte de Galissonniere, 1747.

This is the naval commander who gained over Admiral Byng the battle of Port Mahon, who was shot as a punishment for his defeat, and, as the French said, "Pour encourager les autres."

37. Jacques de Taffanel, Marquis de la Jonquiere.

De la Jonquiere was defeated by Admiral Anson in the naval action off Cape Finisterre. Being taken prisoner by Anson, he said to the latter, referring to two captured French vessels, "You have vanquished the Invincible and La Gloire follows you."

38. Charles Le Moyne, Baron de Longueuil II., from the death of De la Jonquiere till the arrival of

39. Le Marquis Duquesne de Menneville, 1752.

40. Baron de Longueuil III., from the departure of Duquesne till the arrival of

41. Pierre Francois Marquis de Vaudreuil—Cavagnal, 1755.

Under Vaudreuil Canada and New France passed into the hands of Great Britain. The news of the subjugation was received very coolly by the court of Louis XV.; shoulders were shrugged, and courtiers, echoing the King's mistress, said that, after all, it was nothing much to lose "a few arpents of snow."

### UNDER ENGLISH DOMINATION.

42. Sir Jeffrey Amherst, Captain-General, 1760.

43. Major-General James Murray, 1763, (President).

44. Paulus Æmilius Irving (President), 1767.

45. Brigadier-General Guy Carleton.

46. Henry T. Cramahe (President), 1770.

47. Major-General Guy Carleton, Captain-General, 1774. For a while in the absence of Carleton, Col. Hamilton administered the government, and subsequently Brigadier Hope.

48. Sir Frederick Haldimand, 1778.

49. Lord Dorchester (Carleton).

50. Major-General Alfred Clark, 1791-3.

51. Sir Robert Prescott, 1795.

52. Sir Robert Shore Milnes, 1795.

53. Lord Dorchester, 1798.

## GOVERNORS OF MICHIGAN TERRITORY.*

William Hull, came to Michigan in June, 1805; was appointed Governor of Territory January 11, 1805, 1808 and 1811, and remained in office until superseded by Lewis Cass. No other civil Governor intervened between his surrender of Detroit, August 16, 1812, and the time when Lewis Cass became Governor. Governor Hull's last term would have expired in 1814.

Lewis Cass, appointed October 29, 1813, resigned July 21, 1831; resignation took effect August 1, 1831.

John T. Mason, appointed Secretary of Territory, May 20, 1830; qualified and entered on the duties of the office July 21, 1830; was acting Governor from April 4, 1831, at which time Lewis Cass left the seat of Government, until May 27, 1831, when Governor Cass returned.

---

*This paper was prepared by Hon. William Jenney, Secretary of State, for Don. C. Henderson, to be inserted in the Legislative Manual for 1879, and donated by Mr. Henderson to the Pioneer Society of Michigan, to be inserted in Vol. III. of the "Pioneer Collections."

George B. Porter, appointed Governor August 6, 1831; qualified September 17, 1831; died July 6 or 7, 1834.

Stevens T. Mason, appointed Secretary of Territory July 12, 1831, by the President during the recess of Congress; qualified July 25, 1831. When resignation of Lewis Cass took effect, August 1, 1831, he assumed the duties of the office of Governor, and continued to act until September 17, 1831, when Geo. B. Porter qualified. October 30, 1831, Governor Porter left the seat of government and Mason acted from that date until June 11, 1832, when Governor Porter returned. He was (again appointed) confirmed by the Senate May 23, 1833; Governor left seat of government and returned July 14, 1833; Secretary of Territory June 21, 1832, and qualified July 26, 1832. August 13, 1833, Governor Porter left seat of government and returned August 28, 1833. September 5, 1833, Governor Porter again left the seat of government and returned December 14, 1833, and Mason acted as Governor during his absence. February 1, 1834, left, and returned February 7, 1834. He again assumed the duties of the office of Governor upon the death of Governor Porter, July 6, 1834.

John S. Horner, appointed Secretary of Territory September 8, 1835, and entered on the duties of the office of secretary and acting Governor September 20, 1835. The Territory of Wisconsin was organized July 4, 1836, and Governor Horner appointed Secretary of that Territory, which had been part of Michigan.

## GOVERNORS OF THE STATE OF MICHIGAN.

Stevens T. Mason declared Governor by the legislature in joint convention November 3, 1835; took the oath of office on same day—during the absence of the Governor, Edward Mundy, the Lieutenant-Governor was acting Governor. Elected again in 1837, and took office January 1, 1838.

William Woodbridge, took the oath of office January 7, 1840, which was filed on same day. Having been on the 3d day of February, 1841, elected U. S. Senator, he resigned the office of Governor on the 23d of same month.

James Wright Gordon, Lieutenant-Governor, assumed the duties of the office of Governor February 24, 1841.

John S. Barry, entered on the duties of the office of Governor January 3, 1842; his first act found in Executive Journal, is dated January 11th.

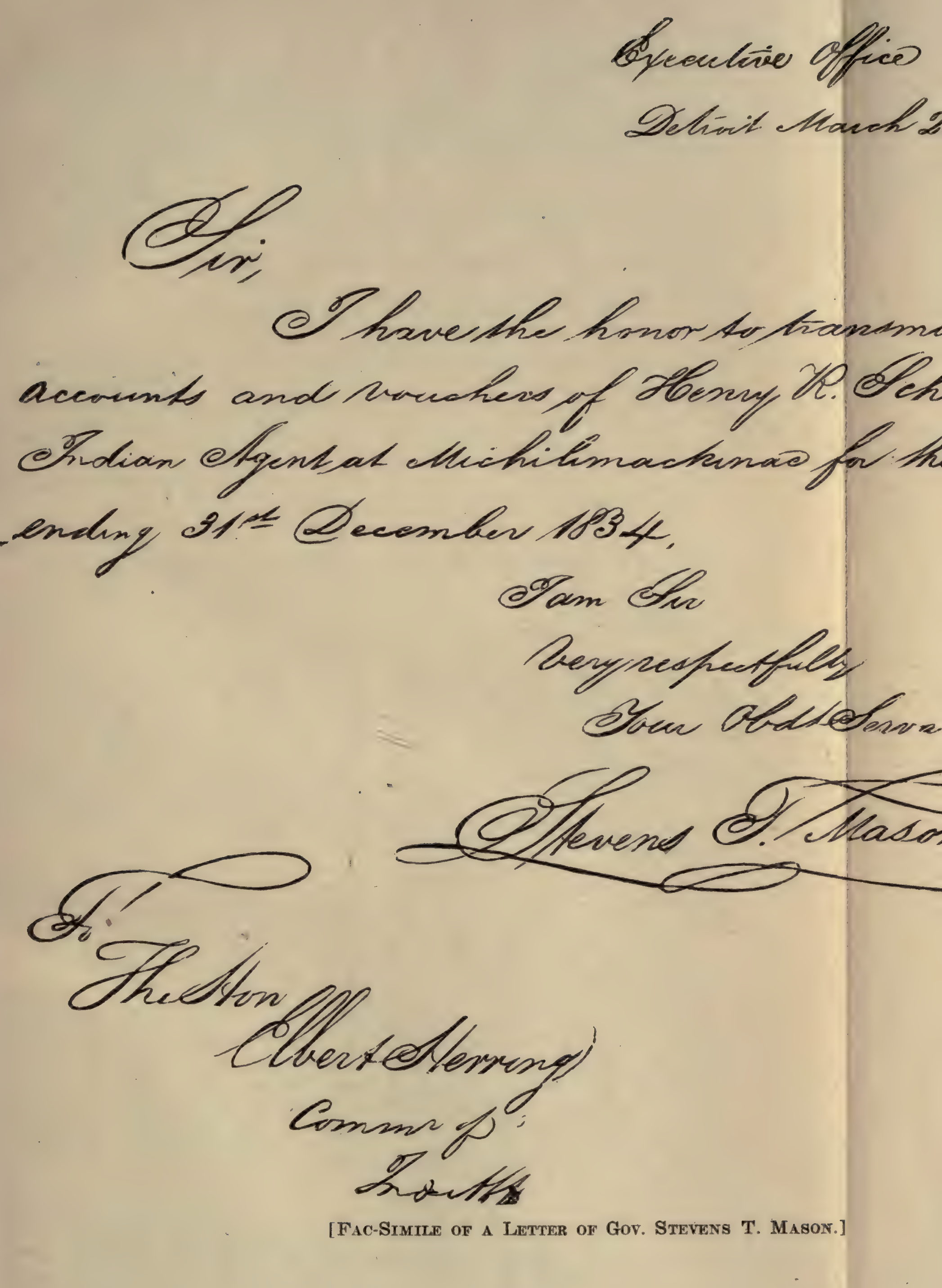
Alpheus Felch, entered on the duties of the office of Governor early in January, 1846; elected U. S. Senator February 2, 1847, and resigned the office of Governor March 3, 1847.

William L. Greenly, Lieutenant-Governor, assumed the duties of the office of Governor March 4, 1847.

Epaphroditus Ransom, entered on the duties of the office of Governor January 3, 1848; resignation of the office of Chief Justice received same day.

John S. Barry, entered on the duties of the office of Governor January 7, 1850.

Robert McClelland, elected in November, 1851, for one year; entered on the duties of the office January 1st, and served during the year 1852. Elected again in November, 1852, for two years, and served until March 7, 1853, when



Executive Office
Detroit March 2

Sir,

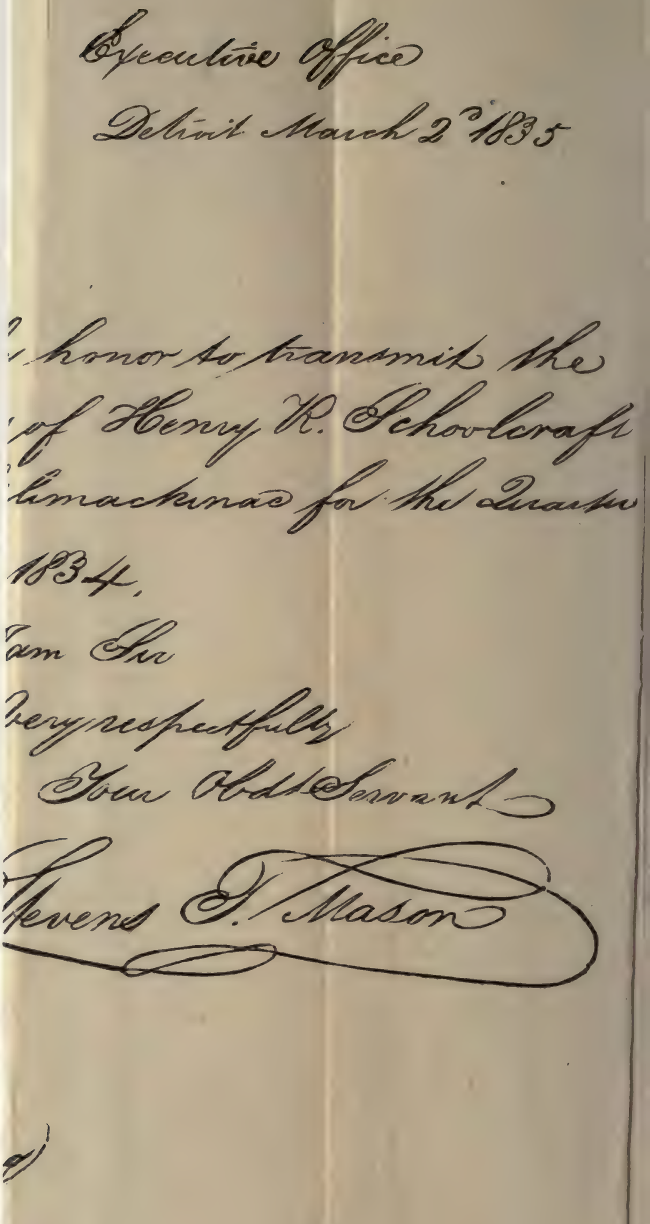
I have the honor to transm
accounts and vouchers of Henry R. Sch
Indian Agent at Michilimackinac for th
ending 31st December 1834.

I am Sir
very respectfully
Your Obdt Serva

Stevens T. Maso

To
The Hon
Elbert Herring
Commr of
Indn Affs

[FAC-SIMILE OF A LETTER OF GOV. STEVENS T. MASON.]



Executive Office
Detroit March 2d 1835

honor to transmit the
of Henry R. Schoolcraft
limackinac for the Quarte
1834.
am Sir
ery respectfully
Your Obdt Servant
Stevens T. Mason

d)

ER OF GOV. STEVENS T. MASON.]

he resigned for the purpose, it is said, of accepting the appointment as Secretary of the Interior.

Andrew Parsons, Lieutenant-Governor, entered on the duties of the office of Governor March 8, 1853, and continued to act until January 1, 1855.

Kinsley S. Bingham, entered on the duties of the office of Governor January 1, 1855.

Moses Wisner, entered on the duties of the office of Governor January 1, 1859.

Austin Blair, entered on the duties of the office of Governor January 1, 1861.

Henry H. Crapo, entered on the duties of the office of Governor January 3, 1865.

Henry P. Baldwin, entered on the duties of the office of Governor January 1, 1869.

John J. Bagley, entered on the duties of the office of Governor January 1, 1873.

Charles M. Croswell, entered on the duties of the office of Governor January 1, 1877.

## SECRETARY EVARTS' LIST OF TERRITORIAL OFFICERS.

Department of State,
*Washington, 31 January, 1879.*

*Hon. T. W. Ferry, U. S. Senate:*

Sir,—I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 25th inst. addressed to the Secretary of the Interior, and by him referred to the department, requesting to be furnished with a list of the Territorial officers of Michigan, for Mr. D. C. Henderson, of Lansing, who is preparing a Manual for the use of the Michigan Legislature. In reply, I enclose herewith, a list of the officers named in your letter, together with the dates of appointment, except attorneys-general and clerks of the courts, there being no record of such officers. The department is unable to furnish the term of service of the officers named in the enclosed list.

I am, sir, your obedient servant,

WM. M. EVARTS.

### GOVERNORS.

1. William Hull, appointed 1st March, 1805.
2. William Hull, appointed 1st April, 1808.
3. William Hull, appointed 12th January, 1811.
4. Lewis Cass, appointed 29th October, 1813.
5. Lewis Cass, appointed 21st January, 1817.
6. Lewis Cass, appointed 24th January, 1820.
7. Lewis Cass, appointed 20th December, 1822.
8. Lewis Cass, appointed 22d December, 1825.
9. Lewis Cass, appointed 24th December, 1828.
10. George B. Porter, appointed 6th August, 1831.
11. Henry D. Gilpin, appointed 5th November, 1834.

### SECRETARIES.

Stanley Griswold, appointed 1st March, 1805.
Reuben Atwater, appointed 18th March, 1808.
Reuben Atwater, appointed 31st December, 1811.

William Woodbridge, appointed 5th October, 1814.
William Woodbridge, appointed 25th August, 1818.
William Woodbridge, appointed 27th November, 1822.
William Woodbridge, appointed 26th May, 1824.
William Woodbridge, appointed 12th January, 1827.
James Witherell, appointed 15th January, 1828.
John T. Mason, appointed 20th May, 1830.
Stevens T. Mason, appointed 12th July, 1831.
Charles Shaler, appointed 29th August, 1835.
John S. Horner, appointed 8th September, 1835.

### JUDGES.

Frederick Bates, appointed 3d March, 1805.
Samuel Huntington, appointed 1st March, 1805. (Did not serve.)
William Sprigg, appointed 28th June, 1805. (Did not serve.)
Augustus B. Woodward, appointed 2d March, 1805.
John Griffin, appointed 29th March, 1806.
Return Jonathan Meigs, Jr., appointed 2d April, 1807. (Did not serve.)
John Coburn, appointed 2d March, 1807. (Did not serve.)
James Witherell, appointed by Jefferson, 23d April, 1808.
James Witherell, appointed by Monroe, 21st January, 1824.
James D. Doty, appointed by Monroe, 17th February, 1823.
James D. Doty, appointed by Adams, 9th January, 1828.
John Hunt, appointed by Monroe, 21st January, 1824.
Solomon Sibley, appointed by Monroe, 21st January, 1824.
Henry Chipman, appointed by Adams, 18th July, 1827.
William Woodbridge, appointed by Adams, 15th January, 1828.
Solomon Sibley, appointed by Adams, 15th January, 1828.
Solomon Sibley, appointed by Jackson, 27th January, 1832.
Solomon Sibley, appointed by Jackson, 26th February, 1836.
David Irvin, appointed by Jackson, 26th April, 1832.
David Irvin, appointed by Jackson, 26th February, 1836.
George Morell, appointed by Jackson, 26th April, 1832.
George Morell, appointed by Jackson, 26th February, 1836.
Ross Wilkins, appointed by Jackson, 26th April, 1832.
Ross Wilkins, appointed by Jackson, 26th February, 1836.

### ATTORNEYS.

Solomon Sibley, appointed 21st August, 1815.
Andrew G. Whitney, appointed 21st January, 1824.
Daniel LeRoy, appointed 22d December, 1826.
Daniel LeRoy, appointed 15th February, 1831.
Daniel Goodwin, appointed 28th May, 1834.

## MICHIGAN CONGRESSMEN.

This list of congressmen was taken, mainly, from the Detroit Post and Tribune.

### TERRITORIAL DELEGATES.

Sixteenth Congress—Wm. Woodbridge took his seat December 10, 1819;

resigned in 1820; Solomon Sibley took his seat November 20, 1820, in place of Woodbridge, resigned.

Seventeenth—Solomon Sibley.

Eighteenth—Gabriel Richard, elected 1823.

Nineteenth and Twentieth—Austin E. Wing, elected in 1827.

Twenty-First—John Biddle.

Twenty-Second—Austin E. Wing.

Twenty-Third—Lucius Lyon.

Twenty-Fourth—George W. Jones, elected in 1835; was delegate till Michigan became a State, with his residence in Wisconsin, then a portion of the Territory of Michigan.

### UNITED STATES SENATORS FROM MICHIGAN—TERMS OF SERVICE.

Lucius Lyon, 1836-1840.
John Norvell, 1836-1841.
Augustus S. Porter, 1840-1845.
William Woodbridge, 1841-1847.
[1]Lewis Cass, 1845-1848.
[2]Thomas Fitzgerald, 1848-1849.
Lewis Cass, 1849-1857.
Alpheus Felch, 1847-1853.
Charles E. Stuart, 1853-1859.
Zachariah Chandler, 1857-1875.
[3]Kingsley S. Bingham, 1859-1861.
Jacob M. Howard, 1862-1871.
[4]Thomas W. Ferry, 1871-1883.
[5]Isaac P. Christiancy, 1875-1881.
[6]Zachariah Chandler, 1879——.
[7]Henry P. Baldwin, 1879-1881.

### MICHIGAN REPRESENTATIVES IN CONGRESS.

Isaac E. Crary, 1836-1841.
Jacob M. Howard, 1841-1843.
Lucius Lyon, 1843-1845.
Robert McClelland, 1843-1847.
James B. Hunt, 1843-1847.
John S. Chipman, 1845-1847.
Robert McClelland, 1847-1849.
Edward Bradley, 1847.
Kinsley S. Bingham, 1847-1849.
[8]Charles E. Stuart, 1847-1849.
Kinsley S. Bingham, 1849-1851.
Alexander W. Buel, 1849-1851.
William Sprague, 1849-1851.
James L. Conger, 1851-1853.
Charles E. Stuart, 1851-1853.

---

[1] Resigned May 29, 1848.

[2] To fill vacancy of Lewis Cass.

[3] Died October 5, 1861.

[4] President *pro tempore* of the U. S. Senate from March 9, 1871, and acting Vice President from the death of Vice President Wilson, November 22, 1875, to March 4, 1877.

[5] Resigned February 10, 1879—appointed Minister to Peru.

[6] To fill unexpired term of Judge Christiancy,—died November 1, 1879.

[7] Appointed by Governor Croswell, November 17, 1879, vice Christiancy, resigned.

[8] Elected in 1847 to fill the vacancy of Edward Bradley, deceased, who never qualified.

Ebenezer J. Penniman, 1851-1853.
Samuel Clark, 1853-1855.
David A. Noble, 1853-1855.
Hester L. Stevens, 1853-1855.
David Stuart, 1853-1855.
George W. Peck, 1855-1857.
Wm. A. Howard, 1855-1859.
Henry Waldron, 1855-1861.
David S. Walbridge, 1855-1859.
Dewitt C. Leach, 1857-1861.
[9]George B. Cooper, 1859-1860.
[10]Wm. A. Howard, 1860-1861.
Francis W. Kellogg, 1859-1865.
Bradley F. Granger, 1861-1863.
Fernando C. Beaman, 1861-1871.
Rowland E. Trowbridge, 1861-1863.
Charles Upson, 1863-1869.
John W. Longyear, 1863-1867.
Augustus C. Baldwin, 1863-1865.
John F. Driggs, 1863-1869.
Rowland E. Trowbridge, 1865-1869.
Thomas W. Ferry, 1865-1871.
Austin Blair, 1867-1873.
William L. Stoughton, 1869-1873.
Omer D. Conger, 1869-1881.
Randolph Strickland, 1869-1871.
Jabez G. Sutherland, 1871-1873.
Henry Waldron, 1871-1877.
Moses W. Field, 1873-1875.
George Willard, 1873-1877.
Julius C. Burrows, 1873-1875.
Wilder D. Foster, 1873.
Josiah W. Begole, 1873-1875.
Nathan B. Bradley, 1873-1877.
Jay A. Hubbell, 1873-1881.
[11]Wm. B. Williams, 1874-1877.
[12]Alpheus S. Williams, 1875-1878.
George H. Durand, 1875-1877.
Allen Potter, 1875-1877.
Edwin Willits, 1877-1881.
Jonas H. McGowan, 1877-1881.
Edwin W. Keightley, 1877-1879.
John W. Stone, 1877-1881.
Mark S. Brewer, 1877-1881.
Charles C. Ellsworth, 1877-1879.
John S. Newberry, 1879-1881.
Julius C. Burrows, 1879-1881.
Roswell G. Horr, 1879-1881.

---

[9] Lost his seat in election contest with Wm. A. Howard.
[10] Gained his seat May 15, 1860.
[11] Elected in 1873 to fill vacancy by death of Wilder D. Foster.
[12] Died December 1878.

# JOURNEY OF GURDON S. HUBBARD.

## NOW OF CHICAGO, FROM MONTREAL TO MACKINAC AND CHICAGO IN 1818.

**Read before the State Pioneer Society, February 4, 1880.**

I was born at Windsor, Vermont, August 22, 1802. I first saw the Island of Mackinac on the 4th day of July, 1818, then the headquarters of the American Fur Company, under the management of Ramsay Crook and Robert Stuart.

In March, 1818, I engaged at Montreal as a clerk to the American Fur Company for the term of five years, on a salary of $120.00 per annum. We left Lachine on the 13th of May, in twelve Canadian Batteaux and ascended the St. Lawrence river to Lake Ontario, sailed along its coast to Toronto, at that time called York, then we made a portage of eighteen miles to Lake Simcoe, coasting it to its southern part, then making another portage into Nottawassaga river. Our boat and effects were drawn to Lake Simcoe on wheels over what was called Young street; it was a fair road. We took two yoke of cattle in our Batteaux, with the aid of which we made the portage from Lake Simcoe through a low, marshy country, without a road, being hauled over the ground by the men and oxen, consuming about ten days of wretchedness in a swamp and tormented by mosquitoes and gnats.

We descended Nottawassaga river to Georgian Bay, coasting thence to Mackinac. This island was then in its gayest season. All the traders attached to the American Fur Company were assembled there, having brought in their furs, and were preparing to receive their outfits to depart again to their several trading-posts.

The resident population of this island was about 500, principally Canadian, French, and half-breeds; their occupation was fishing and trading with the Indians; with few exceptions they were poor and improvident. There was a garrison composed of about three companies.

After spending two months on the island, I was detailed to the Illinois brigade of traders, under the command of Antoine des Champs, a highly educated gentleman who had been more than forty years an Indian trader on the Mississippi, Illinois, and Ohio rivers.

Our brigade of traders left Mackinaw in September, coasting the eastern shore of Lake Michigan to Chicago; there we found Fort Dearborn garrisoned by United States troops. John Kinzie and A. Ouilmett were the only white inhabitants at that period in Chicago and northern Illinois. Here, three miles up the south branch, our boats were unloaded, our merchandise was carried to the Des Plains river on the mens' backs, and the empty boats were hauled through a ditch that was almost dry, to Mud Lake, half way, then through a like ditch into the Des Plains (in high water this is good navigation), there reloading, we descended the Des Plains river, having to partially unload our boats and carry the goods on our backs over shallow places and passing the boats over by means of rollers under them until reaching the Illinois river, where, at different points, our trading posts were located sixty or seventy miles apart. In the spring following we returned by the same route; the rivers being full, we had no portage to make, passing the ditches and Mud Lake under full head.

Near the head of Marquette river in the fall of 1818, I saw what was said to be the original cross of red cedar which marked the spot where Marquette was buried; it was about three feet above the ground and leaning over; our voyagers held it in veneration and were in the practice of resetting it when necessary. For several years after, I saw the cross as I passed the place. The voyagers had a tradition, which the most of them believed, that when Marquette camped there in May, 1665, he was very sick. Knowing that he was about to die he called his men around him, bidding them farewell, and instructing them to bury him at a place he designated, north of their camping place, for, said he, this place will be the bed of the river, for it will change its outlet. This did take place. After burying him they were to go back of a certain sand hill where they would see two elks feeding, one of which they should kill, and which would give them sufficient food to reach St. Ignace Mission House; that, following his instructions they found the elks and killed one (for they were out of provisions), to last them for food till they arrived at the mission.

On our way to Mackinaw in the spring of 1819, Mr. Des Champs hearing that the Indians on the eastern coast of Lake Michigan would hold a feast for the dead at the mouth of Grand River at the full of the May moon, determined to be present at the ceremonies.

This feast consisted: first in clearing away the ground around the graves, putting them in perfect order, erecting slender poles at the head of each grave, at the tops of which were attached strips of white cloth for streamers. At the head of each grave a small place was staked off in which food was placed for the souls of the dead; all except the young children blackened their faces and fasted two days, eating nothing nor engaging in any amusement, spending their time in silence, or lamentations for the loss of their friends. At the expiration of two days of mourning, their faces were washed and painted, and dressing in their best attire and decorations, they commenced feasting, entertainments and visits, wishing their relatives to share with them the good things they had prepared, they placed in the enclosures, at the head of the graves, dishes of food. This feast is followed by their celebrated game of ball which is intensely exciting; even the dogs become exhilarated and add to the commotion by barking, racing, etc.

To witness this grand dance and to see and form the acquaintance of the Indians, we went and camped there. There was another act that we did not know of at the time, but which proved so intensely thrilling that probably not one of our company ever forgot it, an account of which I will hand you.

From the time I left Mackinac in the autumn of 1818 till my return in the following spring, I did not meet with a white man except at Chicago and just above the mouth of the St. Joseph river where there was a trader. Between the mouth of the Illinois river and Mackinac all was a wild country inhabited by Indians only.

The Indian name of Chicago was Cheecaqua, meaning "strong." The place is first known to geography as the "Fort Chechagou." Cheecaqua was also the Indian name of a kind of wild onion found on the shore of the lake in old times.

# INCIDENTS IN THE ADMINISTRATION OF INDIAN JUSTICE.

BY GURDON S. HUBBARD, OF CHICAGO.

Read February 5, 1880.

On the Manistee river of Lake Michigan lived an Indian chief who had a large family, one of the sons being notoriously wicked, and when intoxicated very provoking and quarrelsome. This Indian, in a drunken quarrel was killed by a Canada Indian who had married a girl belonging to the Manistee band of Ottawa Indians, and living with them. He was a fair hunter, and a good trapper, but very poor. His family at this time consisted of a wife and three or four children. Not having any means to satisfy the chief for the loss of his son, and knowing that his own life must pay the penalty, he proposed to his wife that he should surrender himself. To this she was opposed, and would not consent. He could have saved his life by abandoning his family and fleeing to his own tribe in Canada; but in that event one of his wife's brothers would be liable to be taken in his stead. There was no time to be lost, the burial of the dead was about to take place, that being over he would be sought after, and if found, put to death. Taking his wife's brother into consultation it was decided that he should depart secretly and go to the head waters of the Muskegon river in a secluded part of the country, and winter there, trapping fine furs, hoping to gain enough to satisfy the chief and family for the loss of their relative; giving to this brother a particular description of his hiding place and where he could be found when through the trapping season, with the promise of secrecy. Gathering what he could of traps and amunition, he with his family, departed at nightfall and made his way to his place of destination, with the understanding that if the chief, after search, should demand revenge of his wife's family he should be notified, when he would return and surrender himself.

The old chief and his son in council knowing that the slayer had no means of paying for the deceased, determined to kill him. After making diligent search, gaining no information of his whereabouts, they concluded he had fled with his family to his own tribe and relations in Canada. Finally they concluded to slay one of his wife's brothers, and so announced. The brothers had a consultation, and the younger, who knew where his brother-in-law was to be found, said, "go to the chief and tell him I have gone to seek the man. If I find him I will bring him; in default, I, being single, will give myself in his stead." He started on his long and difficult journey in the winter season, and on snow shoes. He was a stranger to the country, with no land marks to direct him, except in general. After a long search he found the family.

The winter had been one of unusually deep snow, the spring brought great floods of water inundating the country; he had been unsuccessful in his hunt, and had almost starved. The bears, in consequence of deep snow, had not left their dens, the martin and small game from the same cause could not get about, and all hope of saving his life by payment was abandoned. The young man returned in a small canoe and reported to the chief that he had found his brother-in-law who would return in the May moon and deliver himself up; this satisfied the chief. One evening it was announced in our camp that on the morrow an Indian would deliver himself up.

Early in the morning the chief made preparations; the place selected was in a valley surrounded by sand hills on which we traders and the Indians assembled. The chief and his family were in the valley where all who were on the hills had a full view of them and the surroundings. It was a beautiful May morning, soon after sunrise we heard the monotonous beating of the Indian drum, and the voice of the Indian singing his death song; emerging from the lake beach he came in sight, his wife and children following in single file. He came near the chief, still singing, and laid down his drum, his wife and children seated themselves, then, in a clear voice he said: "I in a drunken moment stabbed your son, provoked to it by his calling me an old woman and coward; I escaped to the marshes at the head of the Muskegon, hoping the Great Spirit would care for me and give me a good hunt that I might pay you for your lost son. I was not successful; here is the knife that killed your son, I desire to be killed by it, it is all I have to offer except my wife and children. I am done."

The chief took the knife and handed it to his oldest son saying, "kill him." The son took the knife, approached the culprit, put his hand upon his shoulder, made one or two motions to stab, and then drove the knife to the handle into his breast. Not a word was heard from the assembled Indians or the whites; not a sound but the songs of the birds; every eye was upon the noble Indian who stood without emotion looking upon his executioner. He received the blow calmly, nor did he shrink when it was given. For a few seconds he stood erect, the blood at every breath spirting from the wound, then his knees began to quiver, his eyes and face to lose expression, he fell upon the sand.

All this time his wife and children sat motionless, gazing upon the husband and father, without a murmer or a sigh, till life was extinct; then throwing themselves upon his dead body, they gave way to such grief and lamentations as brought tears to the eyes of many, myself included. Turning to Mr. Des Champs I saw that he also was deeply affected. I said to him "why did you not save that noble man? A few blankets, shirts, and clothes would have satisfied them." "Oh! my boy," he said, "we should have done so, it was very wrong in us; what a scene we have passed through!"

Still the mother and children were hanging to the body in intense grief; for fifteen or twenty minutes the chief and his family sat motionless, evidently feeling regret, when he rose and approaching the body, said in a trembling voice, "woman, stop weeping! your husband was a brave man, and like a brave he was not afraid to die in satisfaction for the life of my son, as the rules of our nation demand. We adopt you and your children to be in the place of my son; our lodges are open to you; live with us, we will treat you like our sons and daughters, you shall have our protection and love." "Gwy-uck" (that is right) was heard from many as the chief ended.

I subsequently saw this mother and her children in their lodges.

# LAW AND THE LEGAL PROFESSION.

BY JUDGE H. G. WELLS, OF KALAMAZOO COUNTY, MICH.

In the history of any portion of our country there is a manifest propriety in giving place to the members of the legal profession. No one will deny but that it has had among its members, wherever civilization has advanced, a large proportion of active, well balanced minds, men who have given shape and force to good government and who were the instrumentalities in laying broad and deep the foundations for the welfare of their fellow men. Law is based on what is true and right; the object of evidence is to find the truth,and without the legal profession, no other body of men, now or heretofore existing, would in all probability, have given to the world such a complete and systematic set of rules of evidence as now exist, by which truth is to be reached and determined. The doctrines and rules of evidence have been laid down in plain and perspicuous language by an American, who has no superior as a law writer. Simon Greenleaf as a professor in the law school of Harvard, at Cambridge, Massachusetts, has given fame to that institution and has gained for himself position as a law writer, in the English as well as American courts. Evidence according to this practically educated lawyer, in legal acceptation, includes all the means by which any alleged matter of fact, the truth of which is submitted to investigation, is established or disproved; without the aid of the legal profession, doubt and uncertainty would have still clouded the moral atmosphere and mental philosophy would yet be indulging in obstructions that held fast the minds of men before America was discovered. The responsibility of the lawyer, in every community is recognized because,as Professor Greenleaf expresses it, "his profession leads him to explore the mazes of falsehood, to detect its artifices, to pierce its thickest veils, to follow and expose its sophistries, to compare the statements of its different witnesses with severity,to discover truth and separate it from error." Our fellow men are well aware of this; and probably they act upon this knowledge more generally and with a more profound repose, than we are in the habit of considering. The influence too, of the legal profession upon the community is unquestionably great; conversant as it daily is with all classes and grades of men, in their domestic and social relations and in all the affairs of life, from the cradle to the grave.

I need not further attempt an argument to demonstrate the necessity of holding in fair respect and giving prominence to the bar, as a body of men who have greatly aided in sustaining virtuous conduct, in condemning vice, and in making the world better. Without passing from our own country, whose history is compassed bv a little more than a century, names might be mentioned that would be recognized as the highest type of ability wherever moral excellence or mental greatness is recognized: Chief Justice John Marshal, Chief Justice Roger B. Taney, and Justice Joseph Story, of the Supreme Court of the United States, may be named as the pillars on which the judicial structure of our country rests; others may imitate, but none surpass them, in originality of thought, power of argument, or clearness of expression. As practicing lawyers distinguished in argument to their fellow men under our jury system, the country has furnished a legion, possibly a score of this number, above the others, in the ability that enabled them to master the whole science of law and the possible greater ability to impart their learning to others. What is necessary in the education of the lawyer? First, a sound constitution; for what, as another has said, is a lawyer worth to his client or how can he assist the court, if his digestion is impaired, or his activity of mind or body controlled by excesses: a sound mind and a diseased body, the latter always a hindrance to the former. The cup that intoxicates is not the only enemy to advancement, in training the mind of the lawyer to accuracy of thought, the ability to demonstrate and the power to control the minds of others; there are other vices, fatal always to advancement. Close application, intense study, actual labor, to learn, and to learn well and accurately, are always the essentials in reaching eminence at the bar. Much may be learned by the scholar of to-day, in reading the biographies of those who have been distinguished as advocates: if the daily work of Luther Martin of Maryland, John Sergeant of Philadelphia, William Wirt of Baltimore, and Rufus Choate of Boston, could be carefully estimated and studied, the law student would learn that constant, never ending labor is the price to be paid for eminence at the bar. Not one of these great lawyers reached high positions at a single bound; close careful study through a series of years; work, and much of it, gave to each that power to reason and the appropriate language and line of thought with which they swayed the minds of courts and juries.

A distinguished member of the bar in Philadelphia, thus writes of Charles Cotesworth Pinkney, a Baltimore lawyer, who spent some years in England as a commissioner under Jay's treaty: "That he attained the highest place in the eye of the profession ever reached by any lawyer in the United States." Chief Justice Taney, thus speaks of Pinkney, "He came to every case fully prepared with his argument and authorities arranged; and no temptation could induce him to speak in a case, great or small, unless he had time to prepare for it; and he argued each one as carefully as if his reputation depended upon that speech. I have heard almost all the great advocates of the United States, both of the past and present generation, but I have seen none equal to Pinkney." This brief outline of a great advocate by as distinguished a jurist as Chief Justice Taney, is well worth the contemplation and study of any one who desires to hold good position at the bar.

I add another name to the list of distinguished advocates already mentioned:

Reverdy Johnson, of Baltimore. I quote the language of Judge William A. Porter, of Pennsylvania: "When Great Britain paid to the United States the fifteen and a half millions of dollars awarded at Geneva, Congress created a court of five judges taken from as many different States in the Union for hearing and deciding upon the claims to the fund. This court sat in Washington for two years and a half and entered judgments in 2,068 cases, amounting to $9,316,120.25. It was an arduous work, but it had one great attraction—that of bringing together in one court room leading lawyers from all our seaboard cities, Portland, New Bedford, Boston, New York, Philadelphia, Baltimore, New Orleans, and San Francisco; it has seldom, if ever, happened in the history of the country, that so many lawyers were convened from so many different parts of the Union. Some of the claims involved legal points of sufficient interest to stimulate their advocates to the highest professional exertions. It was specially instructive to observe from hour to hour the different styles of speaking: they ranged from the extreme of coldness to the most ardent oratory, and I must admit, that contrary to all my preconceived theories, it was difficult to tell, when both styles of speaking were displayed in the same case by men of real ability, which told most on the result. One of the ablest arguments was delivered by Mr. Johnson, in opposition to that of Mr. J. A. J. Cresswell, from the same State, who ably represented the United States. Mr. Johnson was then approaching his eightieth year. The sight of one of his eyes had been impaired by an accident, and that of the other by long protracted study. His health appeared to be extremely vigorous. He stood erect, and although rather under the middle size, his presence was very commanding. He spoke without notes; occasionally his son-in-law, and colleague, read from books and documents, passages which the speaker indicated. The whole speech was bold, strong and manly; every word seemed to fall naturally into its proper place. The facts were arranged in their most natural order, and stated with admirable clearness. The authorities cited were all pertinent to the question. The citations from the proceedings at Geneva were all direct to the question before the court. The delivery was marked by an energy and earnestness more commonly found in the speeches of younger men. Mr. Johnson lost his case, but he lost none of his reputation. This was one of his last efforts. Not long afterwards, while attending the Supreme Court at Annapolis he died suddenly, from the effects of a fall. Thus went out one of the great lights of the American bar."

It is not my province on this occasion to speak especially of the distinguished men who have held judicial position in the District, Supreme, or Chancery Court, under Territorial and State rule here in Michigan and who are now dead: Judges Woodward, Witherell, Sibley, Morell, Wilkins, Fletcher, Ransom, Whipple, Wing, Miles, Mundy, Pratt, Martin, Farnsworth, Manning, Bacon, and Longyear; all of these men were suited for their respective positions, and it might with truth be inscribed on a monument to their memories, that each had the first quality of a judge—integrity of character; they were learned in the law, and had diligence and application to fill well the position assigned them.

I pass to the lawyers of the county of Kalamazoo, and note among the pioneers of the profession, Lyman I. Daniels, Jeremiah Humphrey, John Hascall, Elisha Belcher, and Cyrus Lovell. Lyman I. Daniels emigrated at the age of twenty-five years from Otsego county, New York, and after a delay of a few weeks in Detroit, ventured west in the fall of 1831 and located in Schoolcraft, the then more important point in the county of Kalamazoo. Prairie Ronde, in the center of which this village is located, contained at that time, more than one-third of the population of the county; its people had pioneered into the new country and were possessed of limited means and the demand for the services of able advocates, wise counselors and men learned in the law was not as great as at the present day; few contracts had been made and little resort to the courts for their violation; criminal accusations were limited, and the services of the grand jury were frequently compassed in finding a single indictment for the sale of whisky to the Indians, which if tried had its ordinary result in a verdict of not guilty. The pioneer lawyers having then but limited professional business, found occupation to some extent, in examing the lands of the country and recommending to eastern capitalists, particular localities for investment. Mr. Daniels devoted much time to this business, and his judgment gave profit to many who were fortunate in obtaining his services. The old records of the court terms in Kalamazoo county, during Territorial days and the first years of the State government, exhibit that he had a fair share of practice: in presenting questions of law to the court, he always exhibited careful research and received respectful attention, and his arguments to the jury were often very strong, persuading "the twelve men good and true," that his client personified injured innocence, and was entitled to a favorable verdict. In 1832, an alarm prevailed throughout the county of Kalamazoo, during what was called the "Black Hawk War;" troops were raised and a commission was issued, as Lieutenant Colonel, to Mr. Daniels; he accompanied his regiment in the short march that it made to the west, and thus secured for himself the military title of colonel, by which he was ever afterwards known. Colonel Daniels was called on business to Cassville, Wisconsin, where he died in A. D. 1838.

Jeremiah Humphrey located at Schoolcraft in the year 1832, removing from Connecticut; during all his residence in the county of Kalamazoo, unlike all other of his professional brethren, he did not speculate in land, he made no horse trades, but devoted himself to the law, and with his professional brethren acquired much of reputation as a critically accurate lawyer, well skilled in all the elementary principles of the law and familiar, by a careful examination, with cases adjudicated in the courts. His memory was singularly retentive as to volume and page and title of cases and points ruled in the reports; and his professional brethren were often glad to obtain for him a retainer, as associate counsel, and thus avail themselves of his more extensive and careful reading. He removed west to the State of Iowa and died in A. D. 1849.

John Hascall, born in Connecticut, resided some years in Genesee county, New York, where he devoted himself to the practice of law, serving as a soldier in the war of 1812, and participating in several of its battles. In 1830 he came to Kalamazoo county and settled on what was subsequently known as Genesee Prairie; in his earlier life he was an active politician, widely known in western New York in the years 1826 and 1828, during the anti-masonic excitement, receiving political position from his demonstrations through the press against masonry. His success as a lawyer in Genesee county, New York, until he ventured into political life was marked. In Michigan he gave a limited attention to the practice of law, devoting much time to the process of harvesting and threshing grain by machinery. It is claimed by those who had the opportunity to observe, that with him, originated the machine invention of cutting grain, which has given to the prairies of the west the ability to supply the world with bread. John Hascall died at Kalamazoo in A. D. 1853. A wide circle of acquaintances testified that he possessed the qualities of integrity and useful ability.

Hon. Cyrus Lovell, born in Windham county, Vermont, emigrated to Michigan and settled in the village of Kalamazoo in A. D. 1832, building in that year, as his place of residence, the first frame dwelling house; this building was located near the corner of South and Church streets, on the lot now occupied as a place of residence by Joseph Perrin, Esq. While a resident of Kalamazoo he held the offices of supervisor, justice of the peace, and prosecuting attorney. He was a soldier in the "Black Hawk War," and for his services a grateful government rewarded him with 160 acres of bounty land. As a lawyer he had been well instructed and always maintained in the estimate of the court and his professional brethren a character for ability. In 1836 he removed to Ionia, Michigan, and has been honored by the people of that county with an election as a member of the Constitutional Convention of 1850, that presented to the people the constitution under which we are now living. In the discussions of that convention he took an active part and always enlisted the attention of his associates. If his counsel had been listened to and acted upon it would have freed the people from some very obnoxious provisions in that instrument. Mr. Lovell was subsequently, twice elected a member of the House of Representatives in the State Legislature, and during one session was elected Speaker, and served with credit to himself and with the approbation of his fellow members. He has also held the office of Receiver of the United States Land office at Ionia, and now in his 75th year has a vigorous, active mind, and expresses opinions upon important legal questions, with a perspicuity and clearness that would be creditable to a much younger man.

Elisha Belcher emigrated to Michigan from Ohio, locating at Ann Arbor in 1826 and thence removing to Ionia. He was employed in some of the limited number of cases that were prosecuted among the early settlers of that sparsely populated portion of the Territory. Mr. Belcher's primary education and his knowledge of law were acquired in the evenings after the toil of the day in field or shop was past. His industry was proverbial, and in his younger days he had acquired a fair knowledge of all farm employment and had also fitted himself for many kinds of mechanical labor. All these qualifications made him a very useful man in the neighborhood of his residence. He came to Kalamazoo in A. D. 1834, and soon was recognized as one of the leading lawyers of western Michigan. His plain unostentatious appearance, his sympathy with any of his neighbors in trouble or misfortune gave him a strong hold on the affections of all the old settlers; each one seemed to recognize him as a member of his own family, and his counsel and advice was sought for in many matters outside of his profession. He was peculiar in his efforts at the bar; his address always exhibited respect for the court and his plain way of talk and apparently sincere manner, gave him power with the jury. His practical knowledge of all employment in newly settled portions of the west often gave him an advantage in his cases at the bar over the opposing attorney. His facility in describing minute details, in every day matters, enabled him to reach the comprehension of ordinary minds, and by this he held power with the jury. His addresses were without oratorical effort; they were talks, but he made his audience believe as he professed to believe. Mr. Belcher, in manner, mind, and peculiar ways as a lawyer and in form and face as a man, may have had his peer and like or duplicate in some other part of the world, but never in western Michigan. He removed to Otsego, Allegan county, Michigan, and there soon acquired his old time influence as in Kalamazoo. He died A. D. 1852. If he had faults, they went to the grave with his remains and are to be forgotten. All through his life he had an overflow of kindness for those who were about him. When his character was assailed, his was the disposition to forget and forgive.

Joseph Miller, born in Litchfield county, Connecticut, October 29, A. D. 1779, a graduate of Williams College, a practicing lawyer at Winsted, Connecticut, until A. D. 1834, when he removed with his family to Richland, Kalamazoo county, Michigan. He appeared in court A. D. 1835, at Kalamazoo, Judge William A. Fletcher presiding, and on motion, was admitted to the bar, but never resumed his practice in the west. He died at Richland, June 29, 1864, at the advanced age of 85 years. In his long life in the State of his nativity and in his chosen home in the west, he was held in high esteem by all who knew him.

James Miller, son of Joseph Miller, was admitted to the bar in Kalamazoo and for a short time was in practice in the county, but subsequently removed to Grand Rapids, where for many years he sustained himself as a leading member of the bar and a useful citizen. He died in the latter part of the year 1879.

Joseph Miller, Jr., was born at Winsted, Conn.; December 13, A. D. 1816, completed his literary education at the academy of that place and commenced his law reading in the office of his father at Winsted in 1833, and completed his course and was admitted to the bar at Kalamazoo in 1837. For many years he was associated in his law practice with Hon. Charles E. Stuart, and subsequently with I. D. Burns, Esq. He held the office of prosecuting attorney for the county of Kalamazoo several years, and subsequently during the administration of President Buchanan was appointed United States District Attorney for the District of Michigan, which office he discharged the duties of until some time after the incoming of President Lincoln's administration. Mr. Miller's reputation as a well educated lawyer extended over a large portion of Michigan; his marked capacity for the careful preparation of all the cases he appeared in, was recognized by the courts and his professional brethren. When he cited an authority from an elementary work or the reports, it was almost invariably in point and sustained the position for which it was cited. In his arguments to court and jury he had the power of condensation, and yet his brief speeches were very effective. In the public offices which he held, no fault was found in his action; it was a fearless and able discharge of duty. A host of people now living in Kalamazoo and adjoining counties can testify that he never encouraged litigation; his intervention was for peace and friendly adjustment whenever it was practicable. He died at Kalamazoo April 9, A. D. 1864, aged 48 years. On the day of his funeral, the buildings of the village were draped in mourning, all business was suspended, and the sorrowing multitude in the procession attested that a good man had gone down to his grave.

Hon. Samuel Clark was born in Cayuga county, New York, January, A. D. 1800. His earlier years were spent on a farm. He graduated at Hamilton College, New York, and pursued his law reading at the office of Judge Hulburt of Auburn, and commenced practice as a lawyer at Waterloo, New York, in A. D. 1828, and so continued with an increasing business until A. D. 1833, when he was elected a representative from the 25th Congressional District of the State of New York, serving one term. He resumed and continued his practice of the law at Waterloo until A. D. 1842, when he removed to Kalamazoo. In his new home in Michigan he soon took good rank in the profession and was recognized as one of the leading lawyers of the State. He was elected a member of the Constitutional Convention of Michigan in 1850, and was prominent in the discussions upon the more important topics in that body. He favored by a strong argument the establishment of an independent supreme court, releasing its judges from circuit court duties. He was elected a member of the House of Representatives in Congress in A. D. 1853, serving one term, and was recognized as one of the leaders of the Michigan delegation. The pioneers in western Michigan have a well defined recollection of Mr. Clark's ability as a lawyer, his generous hospitality at his own home, and his valuable services to his country in every public position that he held. He died at Kalamazoo, October 2, A. D. 1870, aged 70 years.

Hon. Epaphroditus Ransom was born in Hampshire county, Massachusetts, in 1799, and moved with his father's family in his early childhood, to Windham county, Vermont. Was educated at Chester Academy, Windham county, Vermont, an institution which has furnished educational advantages to many leading men in Michigan, among them Governor Barry, Chancellor Farnsworth, both well known by reputation to all the people of our State, and Mitchell Hinsdill, and Isaac W. Willard, who will be remembered by people of Kalamazoo county for many years to come. Mr. Ransom was educated, professionally, in the law school at Northampton, Massachusetts, his law preceptor before attending this school being Peter R. Taft of Townsend, Vermont, father of Alphonso Taft of Cincinnati, late Attorney General of the United States. He graduated at the law school in 1825, was successful in practice at Townsend, Vermont, until 1834, when he removed to Kalamazoo, Michigan. While a resident of Vermont he was twice elected a member of the Legislature. On the 19th of November, 1834, he was admitted to the bar at Kalamazoo, and soon afterwards was associated with Hon. Charles E. Stuart in an extensive law practice. He was appointed one of the Judges of the Supreme Court of Michigan in 1836, and subsequently Chief Justice in 1843, and remained in this position until 1848. In 1847 he was elected Governor of the State of Michigan, which office he held for two years from 1st January, 1848. He was a member of the House of Representatives in the Legislature of Michigan for 1853. Governor Ransom was a man of commanding presence; in height, over six feet; in weight, exceeding two hundred pounds; massive head, with a voice of power. As a judge, when off the bench, it was his pride to mingle with the people and lead them into talks about their farm and mechanical employments, and he carefully noted the details of their experience and made effort to profit by it. He delighted in agriculture, and his home for many years was a well cultivated farm with pleasant surroundings, forming now a part of the village of Kalamazoo. His herds of improved cattle and carefully bred flocks of sheep, won for him among the farmers and the mass of people accustomed to manual labor, a popularity rarely attained by any other public man in Michigan. A change came; he sold his comfortable farm home at a time of great business depression; invested his means in banking and other enterprises, all of which proved disastrous. His resources had vanished, but his energy of character was yet with him. He removed to the Territory of Kansas, and there received the appointment of receiver of public moneys in the United States land office, and was encouraged to believe that he could still restore his broken fortunes. His bright future was all destroyed by his death, which occurred at Fort Scott, November 9, 1859. His remains were brought back to Michigan and repose in "Mountain Home Cemetery," at Kalamazoo. I repeat, again, no man ever held a stronger hold on the affections of the people in western Michigan than Epaphroditus Ransom.

Walter Clark came to Kalamazoo from the State of New York in 1836, a graduate of Union College, under the especial pupilage of Dr. Knott, its president. Admitted to the bar at Kalamazoo 2d May, 1837. During most of his practice was associated with Hon. N. A. Balch. Died at Kalamazoo, January, 1842; remarkable for his scholarship and literary acquirements; a very active and successful business man.

Mitchell Hinsdill came to Kalamazoo from Vermont, and was admitted to the bar November 19, 1834, and officiated as prosecuting attorney for Kalamazoo county in 1835; was elected and served as judge of probate from 1836 to 1844, sustaining himself officially, and in the profession with great credit. In his later years he devoted his time to farming and had the reputation of being one of the most skillful cultivators of the soil in Kalamazoo county. He died in 1854.

Zephaniah Platt was admitted to the bar and commenced practice at Kalamazoo, 1st November, 1836. In his former practice in the State of New York he had sustained himself as an able lawyer, especially in chancery practice, and he lost none of his reputation during his residence in Michigan. He returned to New York City and there and in Washington City prosecuted a successful business in this profession for many years.

Horace Mower, born in Vermont; a graduate of Dartmouth College; read law with I. Tracy at Woodstock, Windsor county, Vermont; emigrated to Michigan and was admitted to the bar at Kalamazoo, November, 1838. He served one term as a member of the House of Representatives in the Legislature of Michigan in 1847; was subsequently appointed judge of the court in the Territory of New Mexico, serving two years. Judge Mower, during his practice in Kalamazoo, and while holding his official position in New Mexico, acquired and held the reputation of being a critically accurate lawyer with all his professional brethren. His fine collegiate attainments gave him notice wherever he was known in Michigan, and his polished address made him a very effective speaker in his efforts with the court and jury. He died at Kalamazoo, December 11, 1860, while yet a young man, and there are many persons in Kalamazoo and the adjoining counties, who remember with regret, when his brilliant prospects were cut off by an untimely death.

Volney Hascall, born February 2, 1820, in Genesee county, New York, came with his father's family to Kalamazoo in 1830, and was educated at the branch of the University, then located at that place, and became a finished scholar in Latin, English literature, and mathematics; read law with Elisha Belcher, and was admitted to practice in 1843; mastered the art of printing in all its branches; became an editor, and in this vocation had no superior in Michigan. He edited a paper for the benefit of the people and not to serve his own private purposes. He visited Europe several times, and in his talks about his travels always held the attention of his auditors. He served as a member of the Constitutional Convention from Kalamazoo county in 1850. He held the position of register of the United States land office for western Michigan during the administration of President Buchanan. He died at Kalamazoo, in 1878, and his acquaintances remember him as an honest man and useful citizen.

Walter O. Balch, born at Kalamazoo, April 9, 1843; educated in common schools; graduated in law department of University of Michigan; was admitted to the bar in 1866; was associated with his father, Hon. N. A. Balch, in practice at Kalamazoo; but failing health compelled him to withdraw from the more active duties of the profession. He died December, 1875. His kind and courteous manners and his remarkable acquirements in a literary point of view, gave him the friendship and admiration of a wide circle of acquaintances.

David B. Webster, born in Chittenden county, Vermont, received an academical education; admitted to the bar at Essex, Chittenden county; in practice at Montpelier; thence removed to Kalamazoo, Michigan, in 1836, and was associated in practice with Hon. Charles E. Stuart. He served a term as prosecuting attorney and was elected in 1845 as judge of probate for the county of Kalamazoo, serving four years. He was appointed during the administration of President Taylor, receiver of public moneys in the United States land office for the western district of Michigan, and served three years. He died May 8, 1860, at Kalamazoo. Judge Webster was a genial, pleasant man; discharging official duties faithfully and well, and holding the confidence of his fellow citizens.

Hon. Marsh Giddings came to Richland, Kalamazoo county, Michigan, with his father's family in 1830, from the State of Connecticut. His advantages for education were confined mainly to the common schools of the Territory and State as they existed during his minority. Read law with Judge Mitchell Hinsdill at Richland. After his admission to the bar at Kalamazoo in 1841, he was associated in practice with General Dwight May for several years. He was elected a representative in the Legislature of Michigan for the year 1849, and subsequently elected judge of probate for the county of Kalamazoo, serving from 1861 to 1868, inclusive. Judge Giddings was also elected and served in the Constitutional Convention of Michigan, which held its sessions at Lansing in 1867. He was appointed by President Grant, Governor of the Territory of New Mexico, and served in that capacity until his death, which occurred at Santa Fe in the month of September, 1875. His remains were brought to Michigan and repose in "Mountain Home Cemetery" at Kalamazoo. As a jury lawyer, Judge Giddings was eminently successful. As judge of probate he satisfied the people of his county, tenderly caring for the interests of the widow, the orphan, and those who were measurably without a protector. At Washington it stands on record that the affairs of New Mexico were administered during the term of Governor Giddings' service with ability and for the best interests of the people of that Territory.

General Dwight May, born September 8, 1822, in Berkshire county, Massachusetts; in June, 1834, removed with his father's family to Michigan. By teaching and farm labor, he prepared for college and entered an advanced class at the University of Michigan in September, 1846, and graduated in 1849. Read law with Lothrop & Duffield at Detroit, and was admitted to the bar July, 1850. Commenced practice at Battle Creek in 1850; removed to Kalamazoo in 1852, and was there associated in practice with Hon. Marsh Giddings. While a resident of the village of Kalamazoo he was elected one of its trustees, twice its president, several times superintendent of its schools. In 1866 he was elected Lieutenant Governor of Michigan; in 1868, Attorney General, holding the office two terms. In April, 1861, his war record commenced in his election as Captain of Company I, 2d Regiment Michigan Infantry; with this regiment under an order of the War Department, he reached Washington in June, 1861, and participated in the battle of Bull Run. In December, 1861, he resigned his position in the army, resumed and closed up his law business at Kalamazoo.

October 8, 1862, he was commissioned Lieutenant Colonel of the 12th Michigan Infantry, and in June, 1865, he was promoted as Colonel of same regiment, and with his regiment was mustered out of service February 15, 1866. Brevetted Brigadier General, October, 1865, for meritorious services during the war of the rebellion. General Dwight May, for years a sufferer from disease contracted in camp life, died January 28, 1880, and his remains were placed in "Mountain Home Cemetery," Kalamazoo, on last Saturday, a bleak and gloomy day. A long line of his masonic brethren were in his funeral procession, judges of the supreme court and members of the bar of Kalamazoo and adjoining counties, were present out of respect for one whose learning and legal character they recognized and admired. Many of his old command in the army came from far and near to honor the dead soldier. The citizens of the town and county, young and old, were present to testify that death had stricken down one who had lived among them and had not lived in vain. All agreed, in sad look and word, that a man useful and patriotic in life had left for all time his sorrowing family and friends.

Of the legal men of Kalamazoo county I have spoken of the dead, with a single exception. Two of the pioneer lawyers of the county are yet with us, well advanced in years, and it is proper that I should name them as preëminent in ability and so recognized by all their old associates in the profession: Hon Nathaniel A. Balch and Hon. Charles E. Stuart.

Hon. Nathaniel A. Balch, born in Vermont in 1808, reaching his 72d year last month. He read law, medicine, and some theology, in his native State; was principal of Bennington Academy, Vt. He came to Kalamazoo in 1837. He has been a college professor of mathematics. If you wish to find a more accomplished Greek and Latin scholar, don't look for him among the priests, lawyers, or medics of Kalamazoo county, for you can't find him. He is filled with acquired knowledge, and he has worked like a Saginaw saw mill to get it. He has been the prosecuting attorney of the counties of Barry and Kalamazoo, and during his service he put bad men and rogues to a vast deal of trouble. He was an able member of the Senate of Michigan in 1847, and to the utter disgust of the good people of Detroit, he exerted all his power to move the capital of the State from the commercial metropolis and set it down here in the woods. He is a master in argument, and the opponent at the bar who has attempted to push him off the bridge has often found himself in the water. He is now president of the bar association in Kalamazoo county, and commands the respect and friendship of his associates for his learning and great excellence of character.

Hon. Charles E. Stuart, born in Columbia county, New York, in 1810, emigrated to Michigan in 1835, and commenced as a lawyer the same year in Kalamazoo, obtaining a law business within a brief time greater than any other lawyer in western Michigan. The court records in Kalamazoo and adjoining counties show his name in connection with almost all the important cases during 1836 and the fifteen succeeding years. He was elected a member of the House of Representatives for 1842, in the Legislature of Michigan. For two terms a member of the House of Representatives in Congress, and for six years a member of the United States Senate. During his last term of service in the House of Representatives in Congress he moved and made a persistent effort and accomplished the passage of the law making a landed appropriation for the construction of the Sault Ste. Marie Canal, a work that has added more to the wealth of Michigan than any other law that was ever enacted. An associate member of the United States Senate, himself greatly distinguished, once said "That Mr. Stuart was the ablest presiding officer of a deliberative assembly he had ever known; that his rulings on questions of parliamentary law and practice were rarely at fault." Always at the bar and in every political position he has held, he has evidenced ability. Now in his 71st year, his mind is vigorous and active. His fluent conversational ability and remarkable memory enables him to entertain you with rich stores of valuable facts and abundance of anecdotes of men who have come within his knowledge.

## DEATH OF HON. ZACHARIAH CHANDLER.

MEMORIAL PAPER PREPARED BY JUDGE H. G. WELLS, OF KALAMAZOO, MICH.

**Died—At Chicago, November 1, A. D. 1879, Hon. Zachariah Chandler of Detroit, Michigan, in the 66th year of his age.**

Senator Zachariah Chandler was born in Bedford, New Hampshire, December 10, 1813; he received an academical education; was bred a merchant; mayor of the city of Detroit in 1851; defeated as a candidate for Governor of Michigan in 1852; elected Senator in Congress from Michigan, succeeding Senator Cass, taking his seat in the Thirty-fifth Congress, and serving, with a short intermission, until the time of his death, nearly nineteen years. During his senatorial career, he served with marked ability as chairman of the committee on commerce, and on committees on the District of Columbia, revolutionary claims, mines and mining, and on the special committee on the conduct of the war. In October, 1875, during the administration of President Grant, he was appointed Secretary of the Interior, a position which he filled to the satisfaction of the entire country. He was faithful to every trust reposed in him, public or private, with energy, industry, and a full determination to accomplish his purpose, without corrupt appliances. All these were his characteristics in a marked degree. He was not a frequent speaker in the United States Senate, but his every effort in that body was marked as a talk that commended itself to the people: eminently practical and pertinent to the subject under discussion. No shadow of doubt was ever cast over what he said. He had a boldness and honesty of purpose which gave him the command of language that was never misunderstood. One of his later efforts in the Senate, in which he made allusion to remarks eulogistic of Jefferson Davis, the head of the proposed confederate government, will continue in all time, to be read and known as a model of forensic eloquence. No successful reply was ever made to this speech; its historical truth could not be controverted. Senators who disliked what Senator Chandler then said, "nursed their wrath to keep it warm;" they sat in silence and took such damage as truth opposed to falsehood will ever give. In this remarkable effort, condemning the motives and the acts of the man who proposed the overthrow of our government, plain words were used, but they came with a power recognized and approved by the people of Michigan, and in accord with the best public sentiment all over the United States.

As the death of Senator Chandler was announced throughout the land, courts, legislative bodies and public assemblages were adjourned; grief rested upon a stricken nation. The press throughout the entire country gave evidence that the people mourned at the death of one who was fearless in the performance of public duties, and who never had been charged with corruption in any public trust. Michigan holds within her borders the ashes of many great and good men, but not one who, in the sphere assigned to him, better filled the demands of his country, than Zachariah Chandler.

# THE HISTORY AND TIMES OF THE HON. JOHN NORVELL.

## AS CONNECTED WITH THE CITY OF DETROIT, AND THE STATE OF MICHIGAN.

PREPARED BY HIS SON, COL. FREEMAN NORVELL, OF DETROIT.

**Read at the annual meeting of the Michigan State Pioneer Society, February 4, 1880.**

In a record of the services to the city and State of his adoption, of one who chiefly rendered those services in a political official capacity, his history and times become more or less involved with theirs and make the record much more diffuse than biographical. The subject and its title were dictated by your honored president, and I accept the labor with the natural gratification of a son, who, in examining the record after a generation and a half in time, is proud of it, and who, in the generation since his father's death, has not heard or read one word that has lessened the profound respect for him that was felt at that period.

John Norvell was born in Garrard county, near Danville, Kentucky, on the 21st day of December, 1789. His father, Lipsocomb Norvell, was a Virginian and served during the war of the Revolution as an officer with distinction. His services appear to have been recognized by the United States, in a pension which he certainly lived to draw till over 90 years of age. John Norvell was his eighth child.

On departing from the paternal roof he first went to Danville, Kentucky, and subsequently to Baltimore, Md. It was in Danville, in 1804, that he received a letter—now in my possession—from Thomas Jefferson, giving him some opinions and advice in relation to preparations as to a course of life. From it I infer that Mr. Norvell had expressed some preference for journalism and politics, as the gist of Mr. Jefferson's advice is to learn a trade which would make him independent, acquire a profession which would insure a support, and then resort to journalism or politics, or both, to the extent that he found them congenial and practical. He also offered a great deal of advice in relation to journalism, which in its then condition, he stigmatized a good deal as Benjamin F. Butler did sixty-five years afterward in the House of Representatives of the United States. It is evident that all of the newspapers of that day did not see through Jefferson's spectacles and that he regarded all such as not worthy to be read (although he evidently read them), and their editors as base political prostitutes.

In fact, I am certainly brought to the belief from that letter that Thomas Jefferson belonged to the noble army of martyrs, who think they could run a newspaper altogether better than the proprietors who are most interested in its reputation and success. But Mr. Jefferson was a great man and gave good advice. Under it Mr. Norvell moved to Baltimore and learned the trade of printer. He at the same time studied law. He was admitted to the bar there, but became a journalist and politician. He was a friend and correspondent of James Madison, giving him warm support in the columns of his paper and on the stump, and earnestly sustaining his war measures in the so-called war of 1812. He served in the battle of Bladensburg, and soon after the close of the war, about 1816, he went to Philadelphia and became a leading editor of the democratic organ in that city. He resided there sixteen years, and married first a daughter of Spencer Cone, a celebrated Baptist minister, by whom he had three sons. He subsequently married Isabella Hotchkiss, by whom he had ten children. With her he moved in 1832 to Detroit, and fitted as she was by nature and education to be the helpmate of any man in any sphere of life, it is not strange that her memory in Detroit among its oldest people should remain fresh and lovely as it was when as the wife of a leading official of the State she led society and dispensed a warm hearted and genial hospitality, while evincing a devoted and religious sympathy for the poor and sick.

In May, 1832, Mr. Norvell arrived with his family—a wife, one daughter and three sons—in Detroit, having the appointment of postmaster for that city, from President Jackson, as successor to James Abbott. He came to the State and city after a wide and intimate acquaintance and correspondence with the leading statesmen and politicians of his time. These embraced the presidents from Jefferson to Jackson; and even after that time, he continued it, so that I have now valuable letters from all of them down to the times of General Taylor. It is not singular therefore, under all these circumstances, that he should have immediately identified himself in his new sphere of action, with the politics, politicians and local interests of the Territory.

In arriving in Detroit forty-eight years ago, he was by no means a pioneer.

Many others from the east had settled there years before. But he was an early emigrant, and was soon intimate and identified with the most respected natives and pioneers that then survived. Governor George B. Porter was the Governor of the Territory, having succeeded General Cass in 1831; John Thompson Mason was the secretary of the Territory; William Woodbridge was the chief justice; James Abbott postmaster; Andrew Mack collector of the port; and Stevens T. Mason secretary to the governor. The chief political questions pending, were the threatened Indian complications, the difficulty in regard to a boundary line between Ohio and Michigan, the contemplated organization of a State government, and the early admission of Michigan into the Union of States. The Indian question, so far as Michigan is concerned, was settled and ended, for ever, shortly afterward. An expedition was ordered under General Brown, to move toward Chicago, which military demonstration against the noted chief "Black Hawk" terminated hostilities and gave the name to the war. The Ohio boundary question was however more complicated and difficult of settlement, involving great interests and political questions, and was rendered still more difficult of solution through the selfish interests of a great enterprise for those days, known as the Wabash and Erie Canal, which involved in its promotion and speculations most that were wealthy and influential in Ohio, including its governor and many of the members of its legislature.

There was also some doubt as to whether Michigan contained the necessary 60,000 population. The census of 1830 only showing about 30,000, while by the ordinance of 1787 the larger number was necessary to authorize a State constitution. In addition to all this the cholera in 1832 cast gloom and depression in the centres of population; and its recurrence in 1834, and the death of Governor Porter, left the Territory without a governor, no other being after him appointed; Secretary Stevens T. Mason acting as such, till the admission of the State in 1837. It was at this time, 1834, that Ohio took higher and bolder ground on the question of jurisdiction over the disputed territory between Ohio and Michigan. It had passed a joint resolution in its legislature that it ill became a million of free men to submit to the demands of those so much weaker than they were; and Governor Lucas actually marched with 10,000 militia to take possession and protect some Ohio surveyors in running a boundary line. But an opposing Michigan force under Governor Mason and General Joseph W. Brown, marched to resist them. They never met. Governor Lucas and his buckeyes got the news in time and dispersed. The Toledo war in a military sense was over, the fight was peacefully to be renewed on the question of the admission of the State into the Union. Acting under the opinion of Benjamin F. Butler, Attorney General of the United States, as to the duty of General Jackson as President, Ashbury Dickens, Secretary of State of the United States, informed Governor Lucas and his Ohio advisers that Michigan was a Territory under the jurisdiction of the United States, and that General Jackson would and could protect the Territory and execute the laws of the United States against any agression.

An additional incentive to an early admission of Michigan into the Union was undoubtedly the desire to participate in the pending distribution of the surplus revenue of the federal government among the several States, and unless Michigan was a State it could not do so. An act was therefore passed in January, 1835, in the legislative council calling a convention to meet in May, of that year, to form a State government and constitution "for all of that territory that lies north of an east and west line drawn from the southern bend of Lake Michigan till it intersects Lake Ere, and lies east of a line from said southerly bend drawn north through the middle of said lake to its northern extremity, and thence due north to the north boundary of the United States." On the 11th day of May the convention met in Detroit, seventy-three delegates being present. In the meantime, on the recommendation of Stevens T. Mason, acting Governor, a territorial census had been taken developing a population of over 80,000 within those boundaries. Major John Biddle, of Detroit, was chosen president of the convention. Charles W. Whipple and Marshall J. Bacon, secretaries. The convention in apportioning the duties assigned to Mr. Norvell the chairmanship of the committees on elective franchise, on the Ohio controversy, on printing the records, on prohibition of slavery, on approval of the acts of the executive and legislative council, in relation to the disputed boundary, on expediency of daily prayer, and on the committee on the change from territorial to State government. He was, in addition to these, a member of the committee on accounts and expenditures, and of the committee to revise and examine whether there were to be found defects or omissions in the constitution previous to its adoption. These various duties and his well known confidential and influential relations with the acting governor, who had not at that time attained the legal age of manhood, gave Mr. Norvell great influence in the convention and in the subsequent management found necessary to settle the Ohio matter and secure the recognition of the Territory as a State. The records of the convention show how well he performed his part, and that the most important and far-reaching of the provisions of the first constitution of the State were the resuls of his careful revision and supervision.

The Ohio controversy was the most important subject before the convention, because it involved the whole question of the admission of Michigan as a State. Ohio, Indiana, and Illinois, would certainly oppose it in congress, supported by their friends and influence, unless some settlement could be arrived at. Ohio and Indiana were a little uneasy as to the legality of their northern boundary, and desired some recognition of the power of congress to establish the same. They were disposed to use the emergency for this purpose, and taking the entire matter into consideration, there was a complication that must be unraveled and made right and satisfactory to all concerned, or Michigan would have to wait. It was to this that Mr. Norvell devoted himself with characteristic astuteness and energy; and the comprehensive view taken by him of it fully manifest in an address to the people of the United States, called an appeal—and which was drawn up by him under the order of convention.

Ohio, in 1802, demanded admission into the Union, asking that, if the east and west boundary line from the southerly bend of Lake Michigan (which by the ordinance of 1787 and subsequently in 1805, was declared the dividing line between the three States south of it, and the Territory north of it,) should extend so far south that it would intersect Lake Erie east of the Maumee river then, and *in that case*, with the assent of the congress of the United States, the north boundary of Ohio should be established by a direct line running from the southern extremity of Lake Michigan to the north cape of the Maumee river. The State of Ohio was admitted, but the congressional committee unanimously reported in the bill for that admission, that the provision in its application, in relation to the rectificaton or changes in the boundary line, was contingent upon facts not established or known, and it had not therefore been taken in consideration. Subsequently in 1805, two years after the admission of Ohio, an act of congress was passed to divide the Territory, and in it the southern boundary of Michigan was again expressly declared to be a line drawn due east from the southerly extreme of Lake Michigan until it shall intersect Lake Erie.

Such was the boundary, and the jurisdiction of Michigan extended to it for twenty-seven or more years, without protest or interference from Ohio, except an occasional request to congress to establish that of Ohio in accordance with the contingent provision included in the constitution under which admission was asked for by that State. This request, fully recognized that congress was the power to make the change, and it particularly was an acknowledgment that a change of boundary was necessary to embrace Maumee bay within its jurisdiction. Congress paid little attention to these requests except to provide for a survey of the established boundary line. But Ohio gradually changed its position, and began to claim that the act for the admission of Ohio fixed the boundary under which it was admitted, and that it therefore had jurisdiction over the disputed tract, and it sent surveyors to run its line. It grew more bold, and in 1833 its legislature passed a law, or declaration, stating that "as a proper degree of self respect demands that Ohio should firmly maintain her rights, and promptly resist encroachments upon her territory, jurisdiction, or privileges, let them come from what quarter they may; so does it require that she should not tamely submit to innovations on either by those who have neither the right nor the power to disturb her in the quiet enjoyment of her constitutional sovereignty. It ill becomes a million of free men to humbly petition year after year for what justly belongs to them, and is completely within their control."

These were brave words to intimidate the 60,000 inhabitants of Michigan. They were instigated by a stock company called the Cincinnati Company, which was engaged in projecting the Wabash and Erie Canal, and who thought they saw immense gains in a town site on the north of the Maumee river, and in the use of the rapids of that creek for water-power. The town site gave the name to the difficulty, and the "Toledo" controversy or the "Toledo war" is what it was ever afterward known as. Ohio prepared to take possession; Michigan sent troops to resist; no blood was shed; the Ohio forces fled before ours got sight of them, and Michigan continued her jurisdiction for the time. Referring to this attempt of Ohio, Mr. Norvell in the appeal says: "The convention of the Territory of Michigan, assembled for the purpose of forming a constitution preparatory to its application for admission into the Union are constrained by the occurrence of recent circumstances on its southern borders, and by the threatening prospect of their renewal, to address their fellow citizens throughout the Union on a subject far more interesting to the confederacy, in its principles and tendency, than it is to our constituents from any practical results to them that can be apprehended. It is important indeed, to Michigan, as a political community, that her territorial extent and jurisdiction should not be reduced. But it is still more important to every citizen of the republic that a portion of our territory should not be forcibly wrested from us by a powerful neighbor who assumes at the same time to be party, judge and executioner.

"The experience of history has shown that ambition is not the infirmity of monarchies alone, but that it frequently operates with decisive energy in republics. What security have the smaller States of this Union for their political rights or even political existence, if the principle is attempted, that each member of the confederacy may at any time advance pretentions to the territory of another and proceed to its forcible possession? What security would there be for State governments themselves? It is not difficult to see that they would fall in succession, one after another, and finally be absorbed by one. We must be blind indeed, to all the lessons of experience if we doubt where this state of things would lead to."

Mr. Norvell not only denied the right or power of Ohio in what was being attempted, but denied also that congress without Michigan's consent could change the compact of 1787. He claimed that congress had not power, otherwise to act upon the subject; because the ordinance of 1787 and the act establishing the Territory of Michigan prescribed its boundaries, and that these acts committed in express terms the national faith, and placed the matter beyond the reach of the federal legislature. If it was claimed that congress might construe the acts, it had done so repeatedly. The parties presenting themselves were Ohio and Michigan. The latter had possession and jurisdiction, the former sought it through congress. The refusal of congress to concur in the views of Ohio was a practical decision against her application. Non-interference with Michigan was a declaration that her boundaries could not be changed without her consent. He claimed distinctly, that it was the duty of the president of the United States to order out a competent force to support the law, should Ohio persist in her violent measures. He stated his firm conviction that the president would not shrink from the performance of that duty; but he looked at a contest of that kind as most deplorable and to be avoided if possible by compromise or arbitration.

The entire address or appeal was a mignificent effort of statesmanship, conservatism and dignity, to the end that all might be accomplished for Michigan that was most desirable then and for the future. It led to practical results. The desire of Michigan was to be admitted into the Union, to be represented in congress by two senators and a member, to have its controversy with Ohio ended, and its jurisdiction determined without resort to civil war. It wanted its share of the anticipated distribution among the States of the surplus revenue in the federal treasury, as a means for internal improvements and for the development of its resources. Its convention ordered the election of a governor and legislature. The first legislature elected John Norvell and Lucius Lyon as its United States Senators. That first State election chose Isaac E. Crary as its member of congress, and in 1836 these men, armed with the new constitution of the State, which was republican in form, and from a territory containing more than the necessary 60,000 inhabitants, asked of the president the proclamation he was under the circumstances authorized to issue, declaring Michigan a State on an equal footing with the original States in the Union. The President referred the matter to congress. His Secretary of State, Ashbury Dickens, and his Attorney General, Benjamin F. Butler, had both advised him, and admonished Ohio, of his duty in case Ohio did not cease from territorial aggression; but he thought he saw a way out of the difficulty. If Michigan would give up Toledo and receive other territory instead, and be admitted as a State, it would close the controversy in accordance with correct principles,—that is, with the consent of the parties to the compact of 1787.

Congress agreed thereupon to admit Michigan into the Union as soon as a convention, called for the purpose, should accept a large portion of the upper peninsula, and yield that portion of its southern territory that was asked for by Ohio. This was done in 1837, somewhat irregularly, but, as the event has proved, most wisely; and Michigan was declared a State.

In September, 1836, a convention was called at Ann Arbor which rejected the condition, or new boundary proposed, on the ground that it was beyond the power of congress to change what had been contracted for by the compact of 1787, and confirmed by the constitution of the United States in the clause providing that all engagements entered into before the adoption of the constitution should be as valid against the United States under the constitution as they were under the articles of confederation.

Many however that agreed that this was the right of the matter, differed as to the expediency of the rejection. With these Mr. Norvell was in sympathy, strongly as he had advocated and set forth the right of Michigan to the disputed territory he by no means considered it a waiver of that right to entertain a proposition to sell it or exchange it for a due or proper equivalent. He thought that congress had the right to make such a proposition, but not to make it a condition of admission, the only conditions for which, were presented in the ordinance of 1787, viz.: a constitution republican in form, and 60,000 inhabitants when the constitution was formed. But he was also in strong sympathy with those who saw in the proposition or condition itself, an actual admission that Michigan had right on its side and must be remunerated, and must have the option of refusing to part with her rights. For this he was willing to obscure the slight element of *force* involved, and to candidly investigate the question as a bargain. All of which resulted in the assembling of a part of the delegates in December, 1836, in Detroit, who accepted the conditions on the ground of expediency alone. It was desirable to be admitted as a State. It was desirable to end the controversy with our neighbors. It was desirable to secure the benefits of union, and the division of the surplus revenues of the United States. Lanman, in his history, thus broadly states the motives, and I adopt them as those generally believed in at that time; although the light of subsequent history, development and experience has shown much higher wisdom and more comprehensive statesmanship in that action than the historian of 1838 was capable of understanding or foreseeing.

A curious coincidence in this controversy is that it was in congress probably the first time that the principle of not going behind the returns or receiving testimony "*aliunde*" was officially proclaimed. The irregularity in the acceptance of the conditions imposed by congress upon which Michigan was to be admitted, was the fact that the convention, called for that express purpose, declined it and adjourned; but subsequently some of its members met in Detroit and concluded it ought to be accepted. They therefore accepted it, and the signatures of the governor and secretary of State, and the great seal of Michigan attested the acceptance. This was all well known in congress, and was on one side, notably by John C. Calhoun, held as invalid, fraudulent and wrong. On the other side, led by Thomas H. Benton, it was held that congress could not go behind the signatures of the governor and the great seal of the State. These attested the acceptance and could not be questioned. This view was practically adopted by congress, and thus Michigan was admitted as a State under a somewhat similar ruling that forty years afterwards in the presidential count gave Rutherford B. Hayes the Presidency of the republic.

It is to be regretted that the history of those days with their interest for Michigan people, and their excitement should thus be but epitomized. They would most instructively fill up a very much larger space than I am allowed. The documents in my possession to sustain and elaborate what I have thus briefly brought before the society would of themselves make a volume. To prove my impartiality I could cite Ohio senators and statesmen as coinciding with Michigan in its claims. I could show up the history of the Cincinnati company in its control over the Ohio legislature through its then considered tremendous enterprise, the Wabash and Erie Canal. I could prove that Cleveland, Sandusky, Ashtabula, and other ports in Lake Erie belonging without question or dispute to Ohio, were treated as utterly insignificant compared with the great future of Toledo. I could describe the reluctance of Michigan to part with it for the paltry wastes of Lake Superior, and show the depression of Detroit at being about so soon to be eclipsed by so near a neighbor; and comparing those doubts and fears with practical results after forty-five years of experience and development, could then ask you who witness them, whether the Michigan men of 1834, '35, '36 and '37, did not lay their foundation wisely and well. But I have not the time, and we do not wish to laugh at Toledo or the Wabash Canal, or the Cincinnati company.

The subjects most interesting to Detroit and Michigan which came up during Mr. Norvell's senatorial career, were the financial panic of '37, and the propositions for modifying or ameliorating the condition of affairs growing out of it, and the so-called patriot war. On the former question Mr. Norvell went for the most radical measures. He believed that paper was paper and not coin, and that promises to pay were but promises. He believed the precious metals the only proper or competent standard of values, and would overcome the objections to them as weighty and bulky, by representatives of them which could anywhere and everywhere in the country be converted on demand into coin. He advocated a bankrupt act temporary in its life but intended to relieve from their liability the victims of the convulsion who would honestly give up all they had toward paying their creditors, and relying upon this for present relief, and upon specie payments for permanent cure, he believed that the convulsion would be attended with the least loss possible. These measures were adopted and they proved all that was expected of them, the bankrupt act had but a short life, but specie payments was not again suspended until 1862.

The Canadian insurrection known as the Patriot war, had in many of its features the warm sympathy of Mr. Norvell, but this did not divert his mind from the international duty of our government. While he would have liked to see Canada freed and her people given a voice in the character of their own government, he did not believe that our country should be made a base of operations or supplies, so long as it was at peace with England.

Mr. Norvell's term of office as United States Senator expired in 1842, when he was succeded by Augustus S. Porter, Governor William Woodbridge having succeeded Lucius Lyon two years previously. Mr. Norvell then resumed the practice of law in Detroit, and was subsequently elected to the State Legislature. In 1845, after the inauguration of Mr. Polk as President, he was appointed United States District Attorney for Michigan, Hon. Ross Wilkins being the United States Judge, Austin E. Wing United States Marshal, John Winder Clerk of the Court, and John S. Bagg Postmaster, in Detroit. During most of that administration the Mexican war overshadowed everything. Mr. Norvell was a warm advocate of annexation, and three of his sons served in the war with Mexico. He was succeeded as United States District Attorney on the accession of Zachary Taylor to the Presidency in 1849, by George C. Bates, and he died in 1850 at his home in Hamtramck, near Detroit.

It thus is seen, that in almost eighteen years of the history of Michigan, both in the Federal and State government, except the late attempt at rebellion, and in their relations to each other, Mr. Norvell took a prominent and influential part. He was a far better thinker and writer than he was speaker in any oratorical sense, but in argument and conversation he was particularly strong and convincing. During those eighteen years his house was the resort of all who were most distinguished in law, politics, and statesmanship. That he was wise as a counselor, and had the highest interests of the State and of his party in view during his entire career, is evident in the results. But none can tell how laboriously these and other public duties were performed, or what their recognized tendency in his day were, except those who have access to his correspondence. The original of many most important ideas and public documents, distinguishing in history the names of others may be found among his papers.

I can not close this history without sincere thanks to those in the Pioneer Society who have given opportunity to place on record this epitome of John Norvell's connection with Michigan. He served in its most important official positions; the records of conventions, congress, the legislature, and the courts, may show the fact, but do not and cannot show the labor and industry involved. Those who knew him well have nearly all departed. Those who remember him in their youth are now our old men. I am only aware of three of his associates in the Territorial Constitutional Convention now alive. The three surviving members of the convention of 1835 known to me in this State are the Hon. Robert McClelland of Detroit, Hon. John J. Adam of Tecumseh, and the Hon. Hezekiah G. Wells of Kalamazoo. These can personally testify to his ability and usefulness.

---

# A SKETCH OF PIONEER LIFE.

BY MAJOR ABRAHAM EDWARDS, OF KALAMAZOO.

Read before the State Pioneer Society, February 5, 1880.

*To Col. M. Shoemaker, President of the State Pioneer Society:*

SIR,—I send you herewith, a copy of a letter received by me from Major Abraham Edwards, dated Kalamazoo, May 27, 1851.

Very respectfully,
MRS. E. M. S. STEWART.

MICHIGAN CENTRE, February 3, 1880.

In the month of August, 1828, I left Detroit with my wife and ten children to seek a home in the western part of Michigan. We commenced our line of travel with three covered wagons which screened the family and our baggage from the weather and also made comfortable sleeping places for our teamsters.

We traveled on what was then called the Chicago trail (Indian path) after we left Ypsilanti.

We left Detroit prepared to camp out every night, with provisions, cooking utensils, and a canvas house. The first night from Detroit we slept at Ten Eyck's tavern, at Dearborn; the second night at Sheldon's; and the third night two miles west of Ypsilanti, where for the first time we used our tent and cooked our own meals. From this encampment we left the settlements, except a few scattered squatters on the public lands and Indian trading establishments few and far between, and did not meet a white face for eighteen days, the time spent in traveling from our first encampment to Beardsley's prairie, now called Edwardsburg. Here, on the margin of a beautiful lake and in view of the prairie, finding a log cabin vacant, that had been built by some adventurer and afterward abandoned, we took up our abode and I assure you the first night's rest in that cabin, after that long and tedious journey over an almost trackless wilderness was one of the most agreeable in my life. The next morning a wagon was got up to ride out and show the children the prairie. It was then one vast flower garden, and the astonished children were constantly exclaiming as we passed along, oh! how charming, what beautiful flowers!

I will now return to our first camp ground and endeavor to give you, from that place to Niles, some idea of the settlements and state of the country on the Chicago road at that time, August, 1828. The country, as I have before stated, was almost a trackless wilderness, very few wagons having ever passed over it. The Indian trial therefore had to be our guide, as it was very difficult to keep the road track. There was no settlement from our first encampment until we reached Allen's, on Sandy creek, five miles west of where Jonesville now stands, a distance from Ypsilanti of about sixty miles. With Allen were one or two other families, all of whom had removed from the eastern part of the State, then Territory of Michigan.

From Allen's to where the village of Coldwater is now situated, and near the old Indian trading post of the Godfroy's, then in charge of Mr. Beaubien, is about twenty miles. A large Indian settlement occupied the whole of Coldwater prairie. About two miles from this Indian village we came to Coldwater river; on the high banks of the river was another trading establishment in charge of a Frenchman from Monroe. These traders furnished the Indians with blankets and other articles of clothing, and it is presumed they also sold them whisky; as we found many of them intoxicated and very troublesome. The Indians paid for these goods in furs, dressed skins, etc., always having the worst of the bargain. The Indians who then lived at Coldwater, or rather those left of them, are now living west of the State of Missouri on lands set apart for them by the general government. About ten miles from Coldwater we came to a small prairie on which a man resided who had preceded us by a few months, whose name was Bronson. It was where the village of Bronson now stands.

From Bronson we traveled thirteen miles to Sturgis' prairie, named after the only man then residing on it, who had been there a few months. We had a great deal of difficulty in getting our teams over Hog river and marsh. On the south side of the river, after finding dry ground, we encamped for the night. The rain poured down on us all night; that, with the howlings of a camp of drunken Indians, made our night's rest one of the most unpleasant we had on the road. This camp was three miles west of Bronson's prairie. From Sturgis' prairie (now Sherman) to Pigeon prairie, is twelve miles. Three families were living on Pigeon prairie, Cutler on the north side, Winchell on the west side, and another family on the east. Part of this prairie was in a state of nature, and never looked more beautiful, coated over as it was with a covering of grass and beautiful flowers.

From Pigeon prairie to the crossing of the St. Joseph river (now Mottville) is six miles, from Mottville to Beardsley's prairie (now Edwardsburg) is seventeen miles. This is a beautiful prairie and very productive with good cultivation; indeed this is true of all the prairies in Michigan. Edwardsburg on the edge of the prairie as you enter it from the east; on your right, near the village, is a beautiful lake of clear water called Pleasant lake by some and Diamond lake by others. It is well stored with fish, has a fine sandy beach, and covers about fifty acres of land. I knew of fortyfive pan-fish taken with a hook and line from the lake in thirty minutes. We found three families residing on the prairie, and we made the fourth. Mr. Ezra Beardsley was the first settler; his cabin was placed near the margin of the lake, on a beautiful rise of ground, commanding a good view of the lake and prairie. Edwardsburg was laid out into village lots by Alexander A. Edwards in the year 1829, when the village took its present name.

Twelve miles west of Edwardsburg is now the village of Niles. In 1828, Mr. Taylor and one or two others were the only residents of the place. In 1829, the village was laid out by Mr. Wallingford, and by him named Niles in honor of the veteran editor of a periodical published at Baltimore for many years. Niles is situated on the east bank of the St. Joseph river, is a beautiful village and numbers its thousands of inhabitants, with a rich farming country for many miles around it. At this time, 1851, from Niles to Ypsilanti, one hundred and fifty miles on the direct traveled road, is one continuation of farms interspersed with many thriving villages; among them may be named Edwardsburg, Pigeon, Sherman, Bronson, Coldwater, and Jonesville.

In 1828, all the country west of the principal meridian was, by an act of the legislative council divided into county limits, and Cass and St. Joseph counties organized, and county officers appointed. Seven of the counties were named after the then president, vice president, and heads of departments under the general government. In 1830, Kalamazoo county was organized, and Calhoun, Barry, Eaton, and all the country west of the meridian line and north of Kalamazoo were attached to Kalamazoo county for judicial purposes.

During the winter of 1829 the first postoffices were established west of the meridian, one at Niles and the other at Edwardsburg. Samuel Wallingford was appointed postmaster at Niles, and T. A. H. Edwards at Edwardsburg. Previous to the establishment of these offices the nearest postoffice to this section of country was the one at Fort Wayne and the office at Tecumseh. I have known letters sent from Washington via Fort Wayne, addressed to individuals at Edwardsburg, to be fifty days on the road.

The legislative council, by an act passed July 30, 1830, organized the county of Jackson into a township under the name of Jacksonopolis; it was attached to Washtenaw county for judicial purposes. The county seats for the following counties were established in 1830 and 1831: Cass, St. Joseph, Kalamazoo, Calhoun, and I believe Jackson. In 1834, Kalamazoo, the county seat, contained probably a dozen dwellings and numbered about one hundred inhabitants; the population now, 1851, is over three thousand. The town occupies the site of an ancient Indian village, bounded on the east by the Kalamazoo and Portage rivers. A beautiful little stream of water called Arcadia runs through the town, a large number of the native trees are standing along the streets; indeed, Kalamazoo is one of the most beautiful towns in the State. The county is well settled with emigrants from New York and Vermont. The farming interests can vie, in point of beauty and fertility, with any county in the State.

During the winter of 1831, an act was passed by congress to remove the land office located at Monroe to the Western District of Michigan, and the president was authorized to locate the office. It was accordingly located at White Pigeon, and the first public land sale took place on the 6th of June, 1831, by proclamation of the president, and under the direction of Abraham Edwards, register, and T. C. Sheldon, receiver. This was the commencement of the great sale of public lands in western Michigan. Previous to this sale, all were squatters, except a few who had purchased at a public sale held at Monroe in June, 1829, along the southern border of the State. On the first day of May, 1834, the land office was removed from White Pigeon to the village of Kalamazoo, where it still remains. In the years 1834, 1835, 1836 and 1837, the sales of public lands at this office amounted to about three million dollars, nearly two millions being in 1836. Eighty-seven thousand dollars worth was sold in a single day in 1836. From the first day of May, 1834, may be considered the starting point of all the settlements in western Michigan; and from that period to the present time, this country, then a wilderness, has been by the labor of man, converted into beautiful farms, towns and villages. Travel either east or west, north or south, new improvements are constantly in view.

As I have before stated, when we left Detroit for the west in 1828, I had a wife and ten children; two of them died during our residence in Kalamazoo, a son and daughter, two were married during our residence at White Pigeon, one previously while at Edwardsburg, and four at our present residence, and one in Detroit. Four of our children and their families are now living in Kalamazoo, and one unmarried; one in Detroit, two with families in Wisconsin, and one with a family in Minnesota. Our grandchildren now number about fifty, so you will learn that the growth of our family has kept pace with the growth of the country.

# BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH OF MARTIN HEYDENBURK.

BY DR. O. C. COMSTOCK, OF MARSHALL.

Read February 5, 1880.

Martin Hydenburk was the second son of John and Hannah Heydenburk, and was born at Hempstead, Long Island, State of New York, September 19, 1798. The father of Martin was seized by the German authorities for the British service against her North American Colonies, in the war of the revolution. This German contingent was known as the Hessian troops. At the close of the war, when the time had arrived for the return to Germany of as many of these troops as had survived the terrible strife, John Heydenburk deserted, and continued in this country thereafter, and was always the implacable enemy of both Germany and Great Britain. Great Britain paid the German government ten pounds a head for all the missing Hessians at the final muster.

The family emigrated from Long Island to Spencer, Columbia county, in 1802. In 1816, Martin went to Skaneateles, Onondaga county, New York, where he continued to reside, and where he acquired his education, and from whence he was appointed school teacher to the Mission at Mackinac, Michigan Territory, in 1824. After three years' service he returned to Skaneateles after the girl he left behind him, to wit: Miss Huldah W. Warner, to whom he was married and immediately thereafter returned to Mackinac and to his cherished work among the Indians. Here he remained six years longer, making the full period of nine years.

This school was under the patronage of the American Board of Commissions for Foreign Missions. The superintendent of this mission was Rev. William M. Ferry, the honored father of Senator Ferry. The remuneration of Mr. Heydenburk for these nine years of faithful labor and sacrifice was his selection of the second-hand clothing that was sent to the mission by its generous friends, and as many potatoes as he and the Indian boys could raise, and as many delicious whitefish as they could catch. Beyond this, he received and expected nothing from man. He did however, enjoy the approbation of his own conscience, and rested in joyful hope that his labor was not in vain in the Lord. In his boyhood he indentured himself to a carpenter, which trade he learned, and which was of much service to the mission at Mackinac, as he built the church and finished off the schoolhouse while the school was in progress.

In 1833, he stopped at White Pigeon on his way to Chicago, which was the place of his destination. He left at Mackinaw his wife and two children and the grave of one child. From thence he directed his wife and little ones to proceed by schooner to the mouth of the St. Joseph river, Michigan Territory, and then find her way up that river to Niles, where she had some Mackinac acquaintances. Ascertaining that the fleetest and only mode of traveling on the river was a three weeks' voyage in a long narrow boat, poled up stream amidst mosquitoes and the malaria of a sluggish river in the month of July, she wisely availed herself of the rare occurrence that offered of some men with a team who were about to penetrate the wilderness towards Niles, and who consented to give her conveyance. In due time she joined her husband at White Pigeon. The following three years Mr. Heydenburk was employed as a carpenter, working on a Presbyterian Church at White Pigeon, at Kalamazoo and at Gull Prairie. He also built the receiver's office at Kalamazoo. In 1834 he moved to the village of Kalamazoo, then containing but two or three hundred inhabitants. At this place he built a dwelling house for himself, sixteen by twenty-four feet, one and a half stories high. His family then consisted of nine persons. For several years thereafter, in consequence of the tide of emigration setting strongly through Kalamazoo, then the seat of the land office, their house was nightly thronged with eager land-lookers, to whom hospitality was due, and to whom it was cheerfully given, although very often much to the discomfort of the family.

By his trade, which was very remunerative in those days, and by the observance of strict economy, Mr. Heydenburk had saved fifty dollars which he wisely invested in land, two hundred acres, now within the corporate limits of the beautiful village of Kalamazoo.

In 1867, Mrs. Heydenburk, who had been for more than fifty years the invaluable helpmeet and sharer of all the trials and privations of her own and her husband's missionary life, died in the triumphs of that gospel she had so long commended by her example and instructions.

Mr. Heydenburk is now married to Mrs. Lucy Whittlesy Chisholm, the widow of the late Peter Chisholm, who was one of the earliest settlers of the now city of Marshall. Mr. Heydenburk united with the Presbyterian Church in Skaneateles, New York, in 1820. At the present time he is a useful and exemplary member of the Presbyterian Church in the city of Marshall. His long life has been devoted to God and the good of his fellow man. When he left farming in 1864 he seemed to take a new start in his zeal and effort in the cause of Sabbath-school and Bible class work. The late Calvin Clark and he were kindred spirits and co-workers in these grand auxiliaries of church work. One has gone to his reward, and the other only waits for his reunion with his friend.

# INDIAN MISSIONS.

BY MARTIN HEYDENBURK, OF MARSHALL.

Read February 5, 1880.

*To the Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan:*

Many interesting papers have been written and read before your society at previous meetings, giving valuable historic facts, and discussing men and measures that have contributed to make Michigan what it is.

Protestant Indian Missions have contributed their share, but I do not remember to have seen any notice of this work in any of the papers presented. Having been identified with this department for some time, and with the religious interests of Michigan for more than fifty years, I thought it would not be out of place to give a short outline of what has been done by this agency and those who had the work in charge.

These missions and missionaries did much to change the social customs of the people in localities where settlements were commenced, and to overturn the semi-barbarous legal codes and practices that then prevailed. Up to that period the general sentiment was, that "might made right." Contracts were enforced by the use of the whipping-post. If a man of "higher caste" declared that a common laborer had promised to serve him and refused to meet his engagement, he was taken out in the public street, stripped, and flogged into compliance; but this soon faded away before the remonstrances of the missionaries, and the better influences they brought to bear upon legal practice and common justice. Many other practices prevailed that were equally unjust and absurd.

Detroit and Mackinac were the only places of much note in the State when I came to Michigan, and the few families of any pretensions in either of those places, were so identified with, and influenced by the missionaries, that a controlling influence, and a high social and moral code was soon established, and from these places many of the new settlements took their type.

In giving the history of these missions and those who managed them, and the societies that sustained them, I do not pretend that all the dates are historically accurate or that my statements embrace all the missionary work in the State, or all the influences that helped to mould society, or give character to it; I only speak of what I know.

There were two stations sustained by the Baptists; one at Grand river, and the Cary mission at St. Joseph. As I know but little of them I will pass them without comment. Aside from these, the first, "Protestant Indian Mission" in the State was established at Fort Gratiot, in 1822. Dr. Andrew Yates, of Union College, visited Michigan about the year 1820, and on his return home organized a society in the region of Albany, N. Y., called the "Northern Missionary Society," and sent John S. Hudson and wife, and Miss Eunice Osmer to open a mission at the foot of Lake Huron. They embarked at Buffalo late in the autumn on the "Walk-in-the-water," the first steamer that floated on the lakes, and the boat was wrecked the first night out, near Buffalo. They then bought a team and went by land through the wilderness of Canada, which took them till late in the winter before they reached their destination. This mission continued about two years, and was then transferred to the Mackinac mission which was established in 1823.

In 1822, the Rev. William M. Ferry was sent to explore this region; and he was deeply affected by the moral degradation that prevailed. The next year he was commissioned by the United Foreign Missionary Society of New York, and came with his wife and Miss Betsey McFarland, and commenced a mission for the "Indians of the Northwest" at Mackinac. This location was not intended to be permanent, but simply a boarding school to educate Indian children for teachers and interpreters for future work of missions in the interior. This location was chosen because it was the seat and center of the fur trade of all the northwest. It was not owned or occupied by any one tribe, but it was mutual ground on which all the tribes met as friends twice a year when they went to the British trading-posts to receive their annual presents for services rendered that government in the war of 1812. This mission was transferred to the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions in 1826. This mission had in it children from almost every tribe in the northwest, and their friends always visited them on their annual excursions, and thus gained some knowledge of civilized life. I joined the mission in 1824 as a teacher, and had the control of the educational department, both in the mission and the town. I spent nine years at Mackinac, and had from seventy to one hundred boarding scholars, and from thirty to fifty day scholars from town.

The mission was in operation about twelve years. In that time not less than five hundred children of Indian blood and habits had received a good common school education. They were trained in habits of industry, in cultivating the soil, and many of them learned trades which they have practiced successfully since. When they finished their education they returned to their friends and were widely separated, but judging from the few that I have since been able to keep track of, they have turned out as well, and been as successful as the same number of white children would have been under more favorable circumstances.

The Mackinac mission was successful as far as it went, but it did not fully meet the hopes and expectations of its friends. Before the experiment had been fully tested the lands of Michigan were wanted for settlement and the Indians had no rights that could stand in the way. There was a pretense of a "treaty" but probably not one Indian in a thousand consented to it, or knew anything about it; but it was sufficient to take them by force and march them off to the western wilderness; and that ended the possibility of carrying out the plans and designs of the mission.

When the Mackinac mission closed, a number of families and individuals that composed it, went to different places and tried to continue the work, but the tribes were broken up and the constant interruption they met with soon discouraged them and but little has been done since. There were many whom I have not mentioned that were engaged in this work who deserve honorable mention, but my object is simply to bring the subject to notice as a part of the early history of Michigan.

When there was nothing more for the missionaries to do in that capacity many of them settled as citizens and exerted their influence in favor of morality and good order, and did much to elevate and adorn society. All will appreciate the valuable services of the Ferry family at Grand Haven; those services would probably never have been rendered in Michigan if the mission work had not called them here; the same might be said of others to a very large extent.

Another result of the mission work here has been to shed a ray of light on the Indian question. That question is now forcing itself on the American people as never before. While there was a vast wilderness unoccupied we could drive the Indians back, and by the aid of the army hold them in check, but that day has gone by, and now the question comes, what shall we do? shall we conquer and subdue them? That process has been going on for a long time, and it has proved very expensive and unsatisfactory, and frequently disastrous. Some say exterminate them; but this nation is not yet prepared to stand up before the world as murderers of the original inhabitants and owners of this great country, simply because they will not peaceably surrender their rights to us. Conquest and extermination will be found a very difficult problem to solve. What then can be done with them? Can they be civilized and made citizens? Our experience proves that they are as susceptible of improvement as any other people, if proper instrumentalities are employed; but it requires favorable circumstances and influences to accompany the efforts. We found the Indian children as apt to learn as any other children, and habits of industry were secured by the same means by which they are secured in others; they must be trained up in those habits until reached and made permanent.

Whisky is the bane of the red man, but it is easier for him to abstain from the use of it after a life of intemperance, than it is for a white man who is addicted to the same habit. I have known old Indians who were converted after a long life of dissipation; they left their cups without any apparent struggle; they had fewer barriers to break over to become drunkards, and reform is less difficult when they resolve to leave it off; but with all these facts before us the question, what shall we do with the Indians, still remains. I do not pretend to be wise above other men, but from my experience and observation I would venture to say, deal with them as individuals and not as nations; make each one responsible for his own acts; treat them like children, kindly and justly, but firmly. Distribute to them what is necessary to sustain life until they can get their living by their own efforts, but clothe the hand that feeds them with ever present power to enforce obedience. Settle them on fertile lands easy of cultivation, and furnish them with facilities for their work and teach them how to cultivate the soil. Do not ask them to leave the chase until you can furnish them a substitute better adapted to their condition, and guard them as far as possible from change or influences adverse to their condition and future prosperity.

# THE OLD CHURCH AND MISSION HOUSE AT MACKINAC.

BY MARTIN HEYDENBURK, OF MARSHALL.

*Marshall, Mich., October 5, 1880.*

*Prof. J. C. Holmes:*

Dear Sir,—In answer to your inquiry with regard to my work on the church and the Mission House at Mackinac, I make the following statement:

In the year 1824, I was sent to Mackinac as a teacher in the mission school at that place. The school was kept at first in the court-house; the next season we contracted with Detroit parties to erect the building that is now known as the "Old Mission House" which is now precisely as it was originally, except the center which at first was but one and a half stories high, and is now two stories. The contractors put up the frame and inclosed it, but for some cause they went away and left it unfinished. I was relieved from school duties to go to work on the unfinished building and put it into a condition to be occupied. I finished the upper part of the east wing with a moveable partition so as to be occupied on week days for the school, and on the Sabbath as a chapel. The rest of the house was finished as circumstances permitted and necessity required.

Thomas White Ferry was born in the southwest corner of the west wing of that house in the spring of 1826. This was the first birth in the new mission house. Much of the wood-work of the house was finished by my own hands, working mornings and evenings and other odd hours, when not teaching.

In the winter of 1830 there was an extensive revival of religion, and the people wanted to build a tabernacle, but no one was found competent to make out and prepare a bill of timber. I was again relieved from my school and sent across the straits, nine miles south, to the main land. It was rather rough to leave a warm school-room and bed to go out and lie on the snow at night with the thermometer at zero; but in three weeks' time we had all the timber hewed, fifty pieces flattened to be made into scantling and joist by the whip-saw, and three hundred saw logs hauled out of the woods to the shore ready to be moved home or to the saw mill when the ice should prove favorable. A few weeks afterward a heavy rain flooded the snow upon the ice and then froze. Michael Dousman had a saw-mill about two miles from our logs and we soon had them there; but the timber and flatted logs still remained. On the eleventh day of April, with the thermometer at zero, and the wind blowing strong from the east, all the horses and French trains on the island started at daylight for the timber; we crossed safely, loaded up and started for home; when about half way across the straits we were met by messengers and guides who told us that the ice which was two feet thick had become porous and we could not cross the channel. We left our loads on Round Island, then put ropes on the necks of the horses and started across the treacherous channel. If a horse fell through we would pull on the rope and choke him till he would float and then we would get him out and go on. We all got home safe.

The next season we employed men to build the church; but when the frame was up and partly enclosed, and the last vessel of the season was about to sail for Detroit, the men made some exorbitant demands, supposing we must comply or leave the building in that condition through the winter. I was consulted and I said let them go. On the 28th of October, 1831, I again left the school-room, this time for the top of the steeple, and before winter we had the building inclosed, and on the 4th of March, 1832, it was completed and dedicated. The school was then moved to the basement of the church. In 1878 I visited Mackinac and found the church as I had left it forty-seven years before, except the pulpit had given place to a less rough stage for theatrical entertainments.

Nine years' confinement in a school-room for an average of twelve hours a day, and five and a half days in a week, and forty-eight weeks in each year, began to tell severely on my slender constitution, and made it necessary for me to seek some more active employment. I left the mission intending to go to Chicago, which was just emerging from an Indian trading-post into the light of civilization; but I changed my plan and stopped at White Pigeon; and by working from four o'clock in the morning till nine in the evening, I made money enough the first year to pay for our bread and butter and a cow and enter and pay for 120 acres of land. The next year I entered 40 acres more and bought other 40 acres at twelve dollars an acre, all of which I paid for within the two following years. My wife did the housework and washed for the cabinet maker, and bought bedstead, table, chairs and crockery the first year, and clothing and carpets the next year; then we began to live like other folks. We built a house on our land and moved into it in 1840, and continued there twenty-four years. I plowed the land and while the team was resting I dug out the grubs. I raised wheat, threshed it with horses, hauled it to St. Joseph and sold it for twenty-nine cents per bushel. When I went on my farm it was a wilderness; when I left it in 1864, it was in a high state of cultivation, with choice stock and good buildings; but I was 66 years old and had worked regularly sixty years. Since that time I have been standing on the bank of the river waiting for orders to pass over; but to keep from rusting out I have visited all parts of our county and other places to do what I could in encouraging Sabbath-school work and other moral and religious influences, and now I feel thankful that I am still able to assist in the good work and to see that my work has not been in vain.

# AUTOBIOGRAPHY OF REV. WILLIAM H. BROCKWAY OF ALBION.

**Read before the Michigan State Pioneer Society, February 4, 1880.**

At its session in Lansing in 1878, the Michigan Pioneer Society, by its vote, invited the Rev. W. H. Brockway, at his convenience, to write some account of his connection with the Indians and Indian Missions of Michigan. This he purposes to do as soon as practicable, and preliminary thereto he will now communicate some facts in connection with his own early personal history.

The State of Vermont as it appears on the map of the Union, is small compared with some of its younger sisters, but it may be said of it, as has been said of another locality, that if it were flattened down and rolled out to a level plain, it would make a more pretentious show in latitude and longitude than it does in its present condition of mountains, hills and valleys. Just at the foot of its grand old Green mountain, not far from the banks of the rushing, tumbling Lamoile river, as it makes its way from its mountain springs towards the beautiful Lake Champlain, there in Morristown, county of Orleans (now Lamoile county), W. H. Brockway was born—February 24, 1813. According to the best of his recollection he spent the first year of his life in having the whooping cough and measles, and learning to walk at the age of eight months, and was constantly in the dairy business for the same period of time; after which, he changed somewhat both his diet and manner of living. At the age of four years he is believed to have learned his letters, and although his opportunities for education were at this time quite limited, at the age of six he had learned to read and spell words of three or four syllables. Being naturally of a restless turn of mind, when seven years old, being of the same opinion as that subsequently expressed by Mr. Douglass, "that Vermont was a good State to be born in, and a good State to emigrate from," he in company with the other members of his father's numerous family concluded to go west.

In the month of February, 1820, with three double sleighs, they traveled down the Lamoile valley and across Lake Champlain by way of Cumberland Head, and through the noted Chataguay woods to the then wilderness of the extreme northern New York. Here in the township of Westville were spent several additional years of his childhood and youth in aiding to clear up a new and heavily timbered farm and learning the trade of a blacksmith. He afterwards spent three or four years in the adjoining town of Malone, working on farms or at his trade by the month during the summer season, attending when he could, the district schools in the winter. At the age of eighteen, having no property and no one to whom he could look for pecuniary aid, he determined single-handed and alone, to seek for such fortune and fame as might fall within his reach by emigrating to what was then considered the very outside verge and ragged edge of civilization. Three days on foot with his little pack on his back, weary and footsore, brought him to the St. Lawrence river at Ogdensburg. From there he took passage on a small sail vessel for the mouth of the Genesee river, passing through that beautiful river archipelago to the Thousand Islands. A week brought him to the Genesee river, and five or six miles above at the city of Rochester, which was then a very small town, where he embarked on the "raging canal." Two days of this old time canal navigation brought him to Buffalo, then a town of not more than three or four thousand people. Lake navigation by means of steamboats was then in its very infancy. He engaged passage to Detroit on the little old tub of a steamboat called the William Penn. She had no cabins above her main deck and very poor accommodations for passengers in every respect. She could make about four miles an hour on a smooth sea and in fair weather, but in case of a head wind would be compelled to find shelter in the nearest harbor in the opposite direction; but by great energy and perseverance, on the part of the captain and crew, at the end of six days we were permitted to walk the plank from the deck of the Penn to the mud bank of our landing place just below what is now the foot of Woodard avenue, Detroit. This was on Sabbath morning, September, 1831.

Being the Sabbath, he inquired for and sought out the church of his choice.

Far out of the common he found a small unfinished brick edifice in which the services of the day had already commenced. This was at that time the only tenable place of worship in the Territory of Michigan belonging to the Methodist Episcopal Church. There had been, previous to this, a small log church or meeting house near the banks of the river Rouge, seven miles from Detroit, but this had already gone into disuse, and as he saw it the next day it was fast going to decay. His first day's walk out of Detroit brought him to Torbert's tavern, one of the best hostleries of the times, and occupying the exact spot now occupied by the Wayne county poor-house. The second day, by a forced march, brought him to the little hamlet now the city of Ann Arbor. He spent his first winter on the site of the present prosperous village of Dexter, and worked at his trade of blacksmithing for and with ex-Judge A. D. Crane. A large proportion of his work was shoeing oxen in the open air, without any shelter whatever, even in the depth of winter, Brockway making the most of the shoes and nails during the long winter evenings, and they jointly nailing them on the next day, Crane always taking the fore feet and Brockway the hind feet, frequently doing as many as six pairs in a day. There was a third individual who worked in this shop during that winter, whose name was Barnes. He was a man of middle age, but without much culture of the schools. A man had fallen from the upper story of the mill, and had fractured his skull upon the tire of a wagon wheel. The doctor had to perform upon him the operation of trepanning his skull. One of the neighbors, inquiring of Mr. Barnes in regard to the condition of the injured man, was told by him that the doctor had amputated his head and that he was in a fair way to a perfect cure. The residents of Dexter were, at that time, Judge Dexter, Doctor Nichols, Doctor Brigham, Mr. Kingsley the miller, Nelson H. Wing, Mr. Barnes, Judge Crane and Mr. Brockway. It is believed that Judge Crane and Mr. Brockway are the only survivors of these pioneers of that village, though the writer is not sure in regard to Mr. Wing. Mr. B. procured the first preaching of any kind which was had in the village of Dexter. This was in the then residence of Judge Dexter, the present old red house adjoining the depot in that village.

A society of ten was organized, of which Mr. Brockway was a member and the first leader, and this was the first church organization of any kind in that village. He also taught the first school in this village. Here also he was licensed to preach by the late Rev. James Gilruth, then presiding elder of the Michigan District of the Ohio Conference, and at the same time he was recommended to the same conference for admission into the traveling connection, by which he was received, and from which he received his first appointment in the regular ministry. This was in the year 1833, he being at the time twenty years of age.

Should he communicate anything further in regard to his subsequent history and labor, it will be left for another paper or papers.

# THE BUILDERS OF STATES.

BY HENRY W. LORD, OF DETROIT.

Read February 4, 1880.

America presents to the observation of mankind the only conspicuous and continuous process by one people of the building of States. Rome, even, is not an exception but within very narrow limits. She conquered States, simply subjugated them, planting little therein except the standards of her eagles; or, like Greece before her, sowing for seed the dragon's teeth, that she might reap in harvest the armed soldier and march him onward to other fields of triumph, until her generals wept that there were no more worlds to conquer.

Insects have built islands, and are building more, and on them States may ultimately take their places. In the course of time, for aught we know, the coral reefs and islands may blend into continents; and unions of States, by builders of States, be reared upon them, rivaling or excelling the United States of our day, which by that time may have lived out their many days, each day, let us hope, as a thousand years.

Aside from our own country, so far as history discloses, there has been in the past nothing like the building of States at all comparable, scarcely even analogous, to the work in which you have been engrossed, from strong-handed youth to white-bearded age, men of Michigan here assembled.

As the consideration takes us to the foundation of politics, such politics as ours, the science of government, where the people make the laws or choose those who legislate; and to the foundation of empire, such an one as ours, where the owners of the State govern the State, and that by universal consent, let us for a few moments contemplate such a primeval work as you have been engaged in, the building of a State.

We will assume that in groups or single pairs you, with your wives whom you had persuaded to accompany you into the wilderness, settled some forty or fifty years ago in the interior of the territory.

Wherever it was, and whether afterwards known as part of Oakland or Washtenaw or Kalamazoo is not material. You were at first almost alone. Your several cabins in each neighborhood were separated by distances of a mile or more, and each of you was the supreme governor of his own conduct and that of his household.

The first interests you had in common with other men were probably confined to a footpath between your several locations. By the time that had become a trail over which a sled with oxen might be driven, the neigborhood had increased by the accession of a few other families,and began to be called a settlement. Children also accumulated, and were coming of school age. You began to think of their education, and then of roads by which you might transact business with each other and with more distant communities. Then commenced your first political concern, and your first transactions for the general welfare were discussed by the firesides of each other, involving the project of a school-house, and a road and a bridge.

The scene is vividly before your eyes now, even before we can draw more than a single line of the picture. These necessities involved school officers and road masters, and as soon as a few years had passed, you had a supervisor and indulged in the luxury of a justice of the peace and a constable, with fortunately as to the two latter but very little use for them. By this time, and progressing concurrently with yours, there was another settlement springing up, perhaps across the river. You began to find that you had with its people some common interests and business that required to be regulated by rules of order binding on each community, and as the process of occupation went on rapidly it was not long before there were a dozen such settlements within a day's walk, and they respectively took on the names of townships and aspired to organize as a county.

Then as it would be inconvenient for each man to keep in mind fully the title and descriptions of his lands, and be able to give clear statements in case of sale, or obtain clear information in case of purchase, you concluded to have at mutual expense a register of land titles, and as your several justices of the peace could not well do business except each in his immediate vicinity, or possibly may not have had learning or ability to deal with the more complex questions that might arise in a larger district, you decided to have a county court. This implied a county judge, and a sheriff, and a clerk. You will have agreed to pay in money, to defray the expenses of all this, and therefore a county treasurer was needed, and as by that time some will have died possessed of property, a judge of probate was necessary; and if any serious fights or accidents occurred, at raisings or otherwise, a coroner had to be, as he has been ever since, added at the tail of the ticket, when elections were about to take place.

When you had proceeded so far, it is altogether probable that political parties were formed among you, involving political preferences and dividing political opinion; the germination of political platforms could have been discerned, and you kept yourselves warm in part in discussing them, with decided expression and growing emphasis.

It will also have appeared that just such a series of settlements, the atomic particles of which States are made, were at the same time crystallizing into counties in all parts of the surrounding territory.

For mutual advantage it was then proposed to combine the whole, and erect the State. Then political rights and duties were greatly extended, for political duties always run with political rights among the free builders of States.

A constitution had to be considered and adopted, a governor proposed and elected, the magistracy developed into the supreme court, a legislature was chosen from the counties to deliberate on the interests of them all, and the political edifice we call a State was complete.

Ultimately was erected this magnificent dome beneath which we are assembled, which, while it bends over us, also points upward and onward to that still better country on the borders of which our steps are delayed but a little, and into which the majority of our associate builders have already entered.

While in the older countries this process of the building of States has been so slow that the traces of its progress are but barely legible on the pages of history, and in a measure in formation analogous to the growth of the coral islands referred to, it has been your distinguished privilege, within your own individual lives and since the beginning of your sturdy manhood, to have built up the State from its very foundations in the forests where you first folded your blankets and lighted your fires.

Excepting as your fathers did so in the East, and your sons by your example are now doing the same thing in the West, nothing approaching the transaction in rapidity, in magnificence and grandeur has ever occurred to illustrate the endurance and enlightened enterprise of men on earth.

As the settlements have organized into towns, towns gathered into counties, and counties aggregated into States, so in the American Republic the grand progressive achievement reaches its culmination, and like lights in the firmament in their greatest altitude, a bright constellation known as the Union of States unfolds its banner of stars to the admiration of mankind.

Happily, yea happily in this country the people who govern it also occupy it, and are the owners as well as the builders of the State.

When we shall have seen the several great conventions of the respective political parties gathered in council, as we shall within the year in Michigan, we shall have seen the owners and builders of the State met to deliberate upon the government of the State, and to designate those who shall be intrusted with the administration of the laws.

We have seen in older countries vast assemblies of men, filling halls as large as any we have in America, and called together to consider some political interest and yet there would not be a man among the people then present who was the owner of a foot of land. They had comparatively little influence in public affairs; they were not of the governing class.

The owners of the land govern the State in those countries as well as ours, and as they do in all countries. In all, whether they are few or many, they constitute the governing class. If the owners of the land live on the land, as most of them do, at least for a part of the year in England (though it is difficult for a man to live on a whole county), and if they are liberal and kind to their tenants, as most of them are, the resulting damage to the real tillers of the soil, the masses of the farmers, is in some degree alleviated or ameliorated; but if, as in Ireland, the owners and governors of the land are in large measure absentees, who deal with their tenants through agents, the system in a dense population with but limited area at best, will tend to distress, such as now taxes our sympathies in that misdirected country. To the man who loves his mother soil, who offers his honest labor, and appeals to her for succor and for bread, it seems to us a cruel thing to propose emigration and exile as the only available remedy. Proprietorship in the elements may be carried to excess. If, for instance, ownership of the air and the water over extensive districts might by possibility be conferred by patent upon privileged men, and they were empowered to place—we will say meters—upon all others within those districts in order to measure and tax accordingly, the amount of air inhaled or water drank, and this should cause distress, it would appear that an enlightened statesmanship should think of other remedies before emigration should be recommended.

It was held by the ancient philosophers, and has entered into modern phraseology, independent of science, that the elements are four—earth, air, fire and water; and to all these it has been asserted and denied that men have inalienable rights.

Exclusive proprietorship in fire, air, and water has never been maintained but in very exceptional circumstances. Nor could it be without proving destructive to mankind.

There are some of the older countries where ownership in the other element, earth, should be limited as to extent when found to be destructive of the people who are native to it.

Here, though every one is permitted to hold as much or as little of the soil as he may choose, according to his means, there has been as yet no disposition on the part of the rich to monopolize any portion so considerable as to interfere in the least with any one who desires to own his habitation.

Though the land governs the State, as it always does, yet it is never inquired in this country whether the candidate for public honors has his investments in that or any other way.

The Governor of Michigan, for instance, will not be asked as to the quantity of his land; it is sufficient that the owners of the land, and therefore of the State, have ordained its Constitution, enacted its laws, and have placed him in one of the chambers of this Capitol, and imposed an oath upon him to conform his administration in all respects to obligations so established.

Let us now look for a moment at the development of political power that has been, beginning with the first settlement, concurrent with the growth of population and extent of habitation.

We have already seen how the first intimation of a common interest called for united action in regard to roads and schools, and here arises the first indication of a body politic. This grows from a neighborhood to the government of a town, by which time political affairs, committed to political agents, will consist of a combination of fireside and houshold interests, relative to which the parties agree, for convenience, to act in common through their chosen deputies; each man having renounced his right to deal with these matters for himself alone, and stipulated, at least by implication, to be bound by a majority of voices in town council.

Thus we have the town meetings, the nearest approach to a pure democracy; the town meeting, the underlying force and real support of our great fabric of American liberty.

The men who establish equal rights in the country town make themselves acquainted with those rights, and knowing them, dare maintain, may be safely intrusted after that with the affairs of the county, the State and the Republic.

This primitive movement may be regarded as the first little filament or thread of political power emanating from the people. Next we see it established in the county, and there it consists of twenty or more of these single threads from the towns, twisted into a line, holding the twenty or more townships to a common object, and representing the combined strength of the organization.

In this the several towns have renounced the right to manage a portion of their affairs for themselves, and have agreed that they shall be conducted together for the general good by certain agents in common for the county.

Then, again, the several counties, in a way analagous to the two former operations, aggregate to a State, and, as in Michigan, the seventy or eighty twisted lines from the counties, each combining twenty or more threads from the towns, are inlaid together, and we have a strength of cordage representing the State, which, with thirty-seven others from sister States developed and progressive in the same way, are finally woven into a massive cable of many hundred fold, its component threads and filaments reaching back to towns, settlements and homes by which the national ship of State swings securely to her moorings, thus safely anchored, whatever floods may rise or storms may beat upon her.

Of such towns, such counties, such States and such a nation, you, my venerable friends, are among the builders—an honor that has been conferred on no other generations of men.

The great transaction in which you have been engaged can never occur again on this continent, unless at some very remote period almost beyond comprehension. We are apt to speak of our little works and ways, and of the names and deeds of those we honor as if with their records and tablets they were desined to stand forever. And on the Fourth of July we advert to them as established to last until the latest generations. It is well, however, now and then, to consider that time may be very long, and that imagination even can fix for it no end, as it can form no conception of its beginning. Time, like distance, has no boundary in any direction within the measure of our apprehension or of our arithmetic. There may be time, therefore, for all conceivable changes on the earth's surface. And so, if ever there can be again on this continent such builders of States from the woods as you have been, it cannot be until after the plunging rivers that you have imprisoned and made to grind in your mills shall have been again set free and all sails on your lakes be forever furled and forgotten—until after your marble busts and monuments of granite shall have crumbled and mingled with the elements—all your houses and habitations, towns and cities, all shall have dissolved into dust, and gone back into chaos and old night, whence the poets tell us all things have emanated—until after the forest that has bowed down to you shall rise again from its ashes and overspread the land, and the century-living crow shall again, as before, have grown old amid its branches.

# WAR SKETCH BY COL. SHOEMAKER.

### NARRATIVE OF THE CAPTURE OF COLONEL MICHAEL SHOEMAKER OF THE THIRTEENTH REGIMENT OF MICHIGAN VOLUNTEER INFANTRY, NEAR TYREE SPRINGS, IN TENNESSEE; HIS JOURNEY TO RICHMOND, VIRGINIA; HIS CONFINEMENT AND EXPERIENCE IN LIBBY PRISON; HIS EXCHANGE AND RETURN BY THE WAY OF FORTRESS MONROE AND ANNAPOLIS.

## PREFACE.

This sketch, with the one relative to the battle of Murfreesboro, published in Vol. II. "Pioneer Collections," and others, were written several years since, and soon after the war. They were never intended for publication, but I thought that after I had passed away it would be a source of gratification to my children to know some of the particulars of my army life. This will account for some descriptive passages, and the relation of some trivial events which would perhaps be omitted if these papers were written at this time. On reviewing the narratives I decided to leave them substantially as they were written, and I will here say that the statements made as of my own knowledge are strictly true, as I believe are all others that I have related in these papers.

MICHAEL SHOEMAKER.

On Sunday morning September 7, 1862, I arrived, with my regiment, at Nashville, Tennessee, from Stevenson, Alabama. Our march the whole distance had been a forced one. Since the 27th of August, I had every night slept in the clothes I had worn during the day, and had drawn off my boots but twice. In consequence of injuries I had received, my legs from my knees down, and my ankles, had swelled so as to entirely fill my large military boots. My limbs were very painful, and at Tullahoma, by the kindness of Major Fox, of the Mechanics and Engineers, in granting me the use of his tent, I was enabled to draw my boots for the first time in several days.

I was advised by Dr. Alexandêr Ewing, surgeon of my regiment, that it was absolutely necessary, for some time and until I had entirely recovered my health, that I should cease to ride on horseback, and have absolute and perfect rest. He informed me that if I continued on duty in my then state, the erysipelas, which the condition of my limbs indicated, would in a short time be of such a nature as to oblige me to retire entirely from the service. So decided was Surgeon Ewing as to my necessity for immediate relief that, in his kindness, he took it upon himself, personally, to call on General Buell, then commanding the Army of the Cumberland. He explained to General Buell my situation; applied for leave of absence for me, which was at once granted, and he returned to me with the necessary papers all properly executed.

The railroad track just north of Nashville had been, some little time previous, torn up by confederate guerrillas, and I left that city in a stage-coach at 6 P. M. of Sunday, the day of my arrival, for Franklin, Kentucky, expecting to take the cars at that place for Louisville and home.

The stage-coach was filled with passengers, among whom were Lieutenant W. H. Pease, of the First Ohio Battery, and a Mr. Tibbs, who had formerly been a quartermaster in the confederate service. Sometime during the night, and when quite a distance from Nashville, we passed in the road an abandoned stage-coach, which had evidently been captured by the guerrillas, and which was to us evidence not to be doubted that they were then prowling in our immediate vicinity. There was much discussion as to the propriety of proceeding further. We had been assured at Nashville that there was no danger of an attack, the federal army being on the several routes leading north from Nashville, and we concluded to let matters take their course, particularly as the driver had kept his horses moving onward, and seemed to have no fear of the result. I am now convinced that stage proprietors and drivers were acting in collusion with the guerrillas.

### CAPTURE.

A short distance south of Tyree Springs our coach was surrounded by a strong body of armed men, mounted and dressed in citizens' clothes, who demanded an immediate and unconditional surrender. One gun was fired by our assailants, but no one was hurt. Their display of force was such as to make resistance out of the question, and we were obliged to submit to being made prisoners, which we did with a very bad grace. We were escorted to Tyree Springs, where we were detained for some time, and where, as nearly as they could, the Confederate officers ascertained who their prisoners were. I was dressed in my uniform, over which I wore a linen duster, but I found they did not need to remove that to find out my name and rank in the army. Some of the passengers were only too willing to give them all the information in their power, and from them they learned at once who were Federal officers, their names and rank.

The party by whom we were captured were all or nearly all guerillas, living in the immediate vicinity. They were men who would not join the Confederate or any other army, but were o fthat class whose habits and character led them to join readily in any raid which promised plunder without any particular degree of danger. Their sympathies were undoubtedly in favor of the Confederate cause, and they acted under the authority of officers claiming to be acting under commissions from the Confederate authorities. They numbered nearly or quite one hundred men, all mounted, and commanded by an officer called Major Scott; there was also a Captain Kirkpatrick, and Captain Griffin.

After remaining an hour or more at Tyree Springs, we were all ordered to take our places in the coach, which with two others which had been previously captured, proceeded north on the main road a short distance, and then struck off to the east on a road which appeared to be but little traveled. We rode in this direction all the remainder of the night, and well towards noon on Monday, when the cavalcade came to a halt or stand, as our captors were then, very evidently, from the nature and appearance of the country we were in, so remote from any line of travel as to be secure from interruption by a regular force of either the Federal or Confederate armies. The leaders now proceeded to search the baggage. Our keys were demanded, our trunks opened and luggage examined; and everything they could find which the officers pronounced to be "contraband of war," was confiscated, not to the Southern Confederacy, but to, and for, their own uses and purposes. After a long consultation all the prisoners except Lieutenant Pease, Mr. Tibbs and myself, were liberated. Among them were several ladies, wives of Federal officers, and of loyal Kentucky officials, but they kept their captors ignorant of their names and station so far as possible. The coaches and horses were also released and allowed to return with the passengers they had decided not to hold as prisoners. From what I saw here I became satisfied that the drivers, if not those higher in authority, had all the time, and before we left Nashville, a perfect understanding with the leaders of the guerillas. We three were then notified that we must continue our journey on horseback, or rather on the back of mules. My trunk and baggage, except what had been confiscated, and what I had on my back, was placed in charge of Captain Kirkpatrick, who promised to forward it to my home, but I have never seen nor heard of it. I had a very elegant silk sash. This I saw flourishing around the waist of Major Scott during all the time I was in his charge; and in like manner my pistols and all of my equipments were unceremoniously appropriated to their own use by these men who called themselves officers in the Confederate service.

### THE MARCH, SINGLE FILE, THROUGH WOODS AND BY-ROADS.

When the word was given to start I found assigned to me a black mule, one of the worst looking, and one of the hardest riding brutes it has ever been my fortune to see or have anything to do with. It must be borne in mind that my opportunities for seeing and judging mules had been exceptional, as all the transportation of all the armies in the west, and I had seen them all before Corinth, was drawn by mules. The impression made upon me by that brute in a steady ride of twelve hours will never be effaced.

The party was now reduced to about twenty, all told, and whenever the width of our road or track would permit, I was honored with an armed guard riding on each side of my mule, but most of the time we traveled single file, as our route lay along by-ways and through forests, with sometimes a foot path, but most of the time without any track at all. Our guides were frequently changed, and were evidently instructed to avoid all settlements, and to keep clear, as much as possible, of all observation. We traveled but short distances on what could be called roads, and at all road crossings, and before we crossed the railroad, we were brought to a standstill out of the sight of the crossing, until our escort had ascertained by a careful examination, that the road was clear, and they would not be subject to molestation. At all such places absolute silence was enjoined. These precautions were considered necessary to enable them to avoid the army of the Cumberland under General Buell, which was that day marching through this country on its return to Kentucky to counteract the effect of, and endeavor to repel the invasion of that State which was then being undertaken by the Confederate army of General Bragg. I must have crossed the road on which my regiment was marching very near the time when they were passing, its members ignorant of the fact, and without thought that I was a prisoner and so near them.

While on our travels we were joined by several persons who were on their way to join the forces of General Bragg, one of whom was Lieutenant Colonel Ben. Anderson, who rode beside me some distance, and talked and acted as though he was desirous to do all in his power to relieve our situation from any unnecessary annoyance. On learning, in the course of our conversation, that I had no change of clothing, he very kindly offered to supply me with some linen, but, as I was expecting to be soon released on parole, I declined to accept this generous offer. After crossing the railroad and some time in the night, we stopped in Hartsville at a public house, for supper.

### CHANGE OF CONVEYANCE.

All that afternoon and evening I had suffered from the very severe pain in my legs caused by riding that black mule. They had swelled so as to fill the large tops of my military boots, and the prickly sensation was as though ten thousand needles were being stuck into them. When we dismounted I could with difficulty stand upon my feet; I informed Major Scott of my condition, that I could not ride that mule any further, and then requested him to procure for me some other mode of conveyance. He made me no reply, but proceeded with his command to get their supper. I could not eat anything, as the almost intolerable pain I was suffering had taken away all desire for food. I looked around and found a spot where I could lie down on the floor, with the prospect of being undisturbed until we were called upon to resume our march; then drew my boots and stretched myself out to get what rest I could. On drawing my boots I found my legs of a purple hue, and never before or since have I suffered such pain as during my brief sojourn at this place.

After an hour or more Major Scott gave the order to mount, but I did not move. He came to me, and I explained to him more explicitly my condition, and concluded by saying that I could not again get into the saddle. Major Scott said that he was very sorry that I was suffering such pain, but that there was no help for it and mount I must. To this I replied that there was no must about it; that up to this time, when we were traveling in cattle paths and on by-roads, I had recognized the necessity for riding that black mule, and had made no complaint, though suffering great torment; but now that the necessity for traveling in that manner had ceased, that we were in a village, on a main traveled road, in a place where conveyances could be procured without difficulty, it was, I thought, inhuman to ask me to get into a saddle. I asked him to look at my legs, and said to him that I would have made no objections to again riding that black mule if I supposed I could possibly endure the pain arising from so doing; but I was satisfied that I could not, and must therefore decline to make the effort, and I should now leave it for him to take such course as he thought proper. He left me, and soon returned, saying that he had procured a spring wagon in which I could ride. With difficulty I drew on my boots, got into the carriage, and we proceeded to Dixon's Springs, arriving there about two o'clock in the morning and remaining until after breakfast.

### LIEUTENANT COLONEL BEN. ANDERSON.

I am decidedly of the opinion that the kindly interference of Colonel Anderson, who accompanied us as far as Dixon's, had great, if not decisive, influence in inducing Major Scott to get a carriage and relieve me from further torture. Overcome with fatigue, for I had slept none and had but little rest since leaving Nashville, I slept heavily at Dixon's, and it was late in the morning when I was aroused. Colonel Anderson had gone from the place while I was asleep, but he had left for me several articles of clothing, and I had no option but to accept them, which I did with a feeling of gratitude for his kindness to me, who was but yesterday not only an absolute stranger, but an officer in that Federal army which all in the south regarded with the strongest feelings of aversion. This same gentleman, Colonel Anderson, was afterwards taken prisoner, and placed on trial before a court martial at Cincinnati for conspiring to aid the escape of prisoners confined at Chicago. He was also charged with cruelty to prisoners in his charge while acting as an officer of the Confederate army. His counsel wrote to me from Cincinnati, calling my attention to the manner in which I had been treated by Colonel Anderson, and asking me to give my testimony to refute the charge of cruelty, which I did most cheerfully, stating the kindness he had shown me, and that he had treated not only myself, but, so far as I had any knowledge, all other prisoners, humanely. I was informed that Colonel Anderson committed suicide while a prisoner, and before his trial was concluded.

### GENERAL BRAXTON BRAGG AND GENERAL W. J. HARDEE.

At Dixon's Springs I saw Colonel Wheeler, a cavalry officer, who during the war attained, as a general officer, considerable prominence in the Confederate service. Here our mode of conveyance was again changed, and Lieutenant Pease, Mr. Tibbs, and myself were placed in a lumber wagon, drawn by a pair of mules, and started under guard for Carthage, near which General Bragg had established his headquarters. We crossed to the south side of the Cumberland River, and were taken to the quarters of General Bragg, where his tents were pitched in a beautiful grove on the river's bank. We were halted outside the line of guards, and our presence reported.

General Hardee came to the wagon, in which we were still seated, and courteously invited Lieutenant Pease and myself to accompany him to headquarters. Mr. Tibbs spoke to General Hardee, and they were evidently personally known to each other. General Hardee repulsed him very sternly, saying "You villain, how dare you speak to me?" Mr. Tibbs, as I subsequently learned, was afterwards tried by court martial, under the Confederate authority, for desertion and other offenses, and condemned to death, but was saved by the energetic and determined action in his favor by Andrew Johnson, then military governor of Tennessee, who threatened retaliation if the sentence of Mr. Tibbs was carried into effect. Governor Johnson claimed that Mr. Tibbs was now in the service of the Federal Government, and had only abandoned the Confederate cause after their forces had been driven out of that part of Tennessee west of the Cumberland Mountains. Mr. Tibbs had in fact been deserted by the Confederates, rather than being a deserter from them, and had taken service when he was free to do so, under the old flag, he having always been in sympathy with the cause which it represented, though forced for a time to act contrary to his convictions. The Confederate authorities knew Governor Johnson well, and that he would be as good as his word. They therefore suspended the sentence of Mr. Tibbs, and after a long correspondence, and much negotiation, he was released.

We accompanied General Hardee, and were by him introduced to General Bragg, who received us cordially. My books and papers had all been taken from my trunk, brought long with us, and were turned over to the officers of his staff for examination. It was now near the middle of the afternoon. After some conversation General Bragg asked me if we had been to dinner. I informed him we had not. He immediately ordered his servant to get us a lunch, and in a short time we were invited to his table where I partook of one of the best meals, I then thought, that I had ever sat down to; for, aside from its being of itself worthy of commendation, it was seasoned with kindness, and the removal of much of the doubt as to my future, which had oppressed me since my capture. Broiled chicken was the pricipal dish of the repast. After dinner I was introduced to Colonels Baird and Garner who were of the military family of Generals Bragg and Hardee, and members of the staff, and from them I received the letters of my wife, which had been taken with my other papers. General Bragg now asked me what I wanted to do; that is, what disposition did I, as a prisoner of war, wish him to make of me. I answered that I would like to be released on parole. He said he would be glad to oblige me, but could not consistently comply with my request, as he was then advancing into Kentucky, and he could not allow me to pass out of his lines in that direction. He then informed me that he would send me, on my parole, with an escort as a safeguard, to Knoxville, and from there I might go to Memphis or Richmond, as I pleased. The Confederate authorities, he said, were now sending Federal officers home on parole from Memphis, but he would advise me to go to Richmond, as, in his opinion, I would be released sooner there than at Memphis. I decided to act as he suggested, and Lieutenant Pease and myself gave our parole to report to General McGowan at Knoxville. General Bragg then informed me that he would send with us the same conveyance in which we had come from Dixon's Springs, and an escort consisting of Lieutenant Krum of Alabama, and three of his body guard, mounted. We now bade adieu to General Bragg, General Hardee, and the members of their staff, who all very kindly expressed the hope that we would have a pleasant journey and be released soon after our arrival at Richmond. I cannot sufficiently express my surprise and gratification at the considerate, kind, and I might almost say, distinguished manner in which I was treated by all at the headquarters of General Bragg. Had I been the commanding officer of the army of the Cumberland, instead of simply a colonel of volunteers, they could not have shown me more attention, or have treated me with more consideration. All this was so different from the usage I had expected when I found myself a prisoner that I could not but reflect long and seriously for some adequate cause; not for being treated with humanity, for as much as that I expected, but for receiving attention greater than my rank in the army would have entitled me to at the hands of the Confederate commanders. I could think of no special reasons to influence them in my favor, and can conceive of none but this: there was among my books and papers taken to their headquarters a Masonic Monitor which I had in my trunk. In this book was entered my Masonic rank, giving the years I had served as Master of Michigan Lodge No. 50 of F. & A. Masons, as High Priest of Jackson Chapter No. 3, Royal Arch Masons, and as Grand High Priest of the Grand Chapter R. A. M. of the State of Michigan. I do not know that this book was taken from my trunk, or that it was seen by

General Bragg or his officers. If it was, there was no intimation given to me that they had any such knowledge, or that any one of them knew that I was a member of the Masonic fraternity. I did not then and do not now know that either Generals Bragg or Hardee are Masons; but whatever may have been the reasons that prompted their action, I shall ever hold them in grateful remembrance for the kindness and hospitality with which they treated me while at their tents on the banks of the Cumberland.

### THE CONFEDERATE ARMY.

Soon after leaving the headquarters of the Confederate army, we traveled six miles, passing through two or more brigades of its soldiers, and long trains of transportation wagons. The day, Tuesday, September 9, 1862, was warm and pleasant. The country, after leaving the Cumberland river was quite mountainous. We made twenty-one miles from Dixon's Springs, and stopped for the night in the midst of the moving Confederate army. On Wednesday we rode to within six miles of Sparta. I suffered more or less all day from the pain and swelling in my legs. We saw during the day great numbers of the army of General Bragg, all marching north, and confident of "the friendly reception they would meet with" in Kentucky. There was, evidently, with all, not only a hope, but an expectation, that the people of that State would rise en masse in their favor.

The country through which we passed to-day was quite rough; the hills might perhaps truthfully be called mountains. The face of the country and the appearance of the improvements were not such as to commend it to the traveler as of much value for agricultural purposes. On Thursday we drove into Sparta, and stopped to get our wagon repaired. Here the inhabitants were feeling very jubilant over the anticipated success of the Confederate cause, which was to follow from the expedition of General Bragg into Kentucky, and as they confidently believed, to Louisville and the Ohio river. General Buell, with the Federal army was, as they thought and said, flying before their forces, and there was nothing that could prevent the success of their arms. There were many who still believed that one southern soldier was able to contend successfully with from three to five of the northern army, or in that proportion, though that conceit had been tolerably well whipped out of the more intelligent and better informed of them at Shiloh, and at the various encounters since that battle. Many of them now said that they had more respect for western men because they made braver and better soldiers than the Yankees, as they called all east of Ohio; but all appeared to be over-confident, and to underrate the magnitude of the task before them.

I was an observant listener to all the opinions advanced,—and everybody, owing to the presence of the army, was talking of the war—but said nothing myself when I could avoid doing so. When pressed for my views, I said that I had no doubt but they would be disappointed, and their cause weakened by the movement of General Bragg into Kentucky. That their army would receive no such welcome as they expected, and the result would be a failure to accomplish any of the ends for which it was undertaken. I was frequently asked what was the feeling in the loyal States, or as they stated it, in the North, about the continuance and result of the war. To this I replied that the people of the northern states would never consent to a peace until the Union was completely and definitely restored and re-established. I was invariably courteously treated, and many seemed desirous to know the feelings and opinions of northern, and particularly of western men; and as I never said a word about the war unless particularly asked to do so, I never had reason to complain of the manner in which my opinions were received. They appeared to respect me the more because of my fearlessness in expressing my opinions, when I did so at their request, and I certainly had no disposition to advance them when I could well avoid doing so.

### THE CUMBERLAND MOUNTAINS.

In the afternoon we left Sparta and ascended the Cumberland mountains. The ascent on the road we traveled was very precipitous, but after reaching the summit the table lands were quite level and extended for miles, presenting a pleasant prospect, with an atmosphere as clear and balmy as any I ever inhaled. We made our first halt on the mountains at the house of a Mr. Scott, who was not only an ardent, but a rabid secessionist. He entertained us to his satisfaction, if not our own, all the time we had the pleasure of his company, with his views and opinions of the war, the North, the South, about all of which he displayed the most profound ignorance. From Scott's we rode to the Widow Simpson's, seven and a half miles east of Sparta, where we stayed all night. I suffered quite severely during the day in riding over the rough roads, from the pain in my limbs.

We continued our journey on Friday and passed over the table lands of east Tennessee, a beautiful, healthy, productive country, but sparsely populated. Here the peach, the grape, the apple, and most other fruits, large and small, can be raised in any quantities, and all arrive at perfect maturity. This region is also favorable to the growth of wheat, corn, and most other grains. With an intelligent and industrious population this part of Tennessee would soon compare favorably with any country I have ever visited. It is a section of our country, I think, peculiarly favored by nature, and when slavery and its attendant evils shall have passed away, the great advantages it enjoys must secure for it a high degree of prosperity. As it then was, it appeared to be, and was, the next thing to being poverty-stricken. This could, I think, be attributed solely to the institution of slavery, which pressed upon it with a power which crushed out not only its intelligence and its industry, but also its humanity. We made twenty miles to Crossville, where we took dinner. The air this morning was keen and bracing, more like fall than before, and quite cool. The leisurely manner in which we traveled, and the pure mountain atmosphere was having a most favorable effect upon my system, and from this time forward I improved rapidly, having thereafter but little pain or swelling of my limbs. In the afternoon we rode eighteen miles, and until eight o'clock in the evening, when we arrived at Baskett's, and were within eight miles of the Tennessee river. On Saturday, the 13th of September, we traveled thirty-two miles. The day was very warm, and as our lumber wagon had neither springs, nor cushions for the seats, the ride was not so comfortable as it had been up to this day. The roads were very rough, and much of the distance over rocks, or quite stony. We passed down the mountain in the forenoon, and, like the ascent near Sparta, we found it very steep, almost precipitous—too much so to make it pleasant riding in an old lumber wagon drawn by a pair of gaunt mules. I feared at times that the wagon would run over, or tumble over, the mules, but we made the descent in safety. The country between the ascent and the descent is mostly table land, quite level, and must, some day, be among the most prosperous, as it is one of the most favored regions in the United States. The soil is good; the climate is favorable for all the fruits and grains of the temperate zone, and is one of the most salubrious in the world. The climate, the soil, the price of farming lands, and the face of the country are all such as to make it one of the most desirable agricultural districts in the United States. It will, in time, undoubtedly be the home of an industrious, thriving, and intelligent people, and that is exactly the reverse of the character of its present inhabitants.

In my travels through this favored region I found that apple and peach brandy were among its most important and most favored products. It was of domestic manufacture, is made on most of the plantations, and could be found in the cellars of most of the planters in Tennessee. This brandy, when new, is the most fiery and intoxicating liquor made, but when four, five, or more years old, is said to become very smooth and pleasant without losing any of its strength.

Our route took us across Waldron's peak, and we this day crossed the Clinch river, a large and beautiful stream over which we were transported on a ferry boat. I now recall the fact that since I had crossed the Ohio river I had not seen a road bridge across a stream in Kentucky, Tennessee, Mississippi, or Alabama. All the streams that are not fordable are crossed by means of ferry boats.

We arrived at Kingston near noon, and dined there. In the afternoon we rode to Lackey's, twenty-four miles from Knoxville. The scenery of the route traveled the 13th was most beautiful, and I enjoyed it beyond measure. This feeling was intensified by the closing of the day with one of the most brilliant sunsets I have ever seen. I, thus far, had enjoyed my trip from the Cumberland river and across the Cumberland mountains, very much. I had found the atmosphere pleasant, health inspiring, and invigorating, and would advise those seeking health by travel to make, in September, the trip from Sparta to Knoxville. Roses were in full bloom, and could be seen from almost every point on the road, and I found peaches and all other fruits in perfection on the whole route.

In the evening I expressed a desire to smoke, and Mr. Lackey presented me with a home-made pipe, such as were most commonly used in all these regions, made from a root with a stem of cane. This I have kept as a memorial of my passage through those lands. It is as primitive as the people among whom it was made.

## KNOXVILLE.

We left Lackey's on the morning of Sunday, the 14th of September, and drove into Knoxville for dinner, arriving there about one P. M. I inquired which was the best hotel and was told "Bell's Tavern." I requested my escort to leave us there and they did so. We here parted with Lieutenant Krum of Alabama. I shall ever hold him in grateful remembrance for his uniform kindness and courtesy, and for his ready and cheerful compliance with every expressed wish of mine, while in command of our escort, extending in time from Tuesday to Sunday noon, and in distance from the headquarters of General Bragg, on the Cumberland River near Carthage, to Knoxville. To the intelligent kindness of Lieutenant Krum is to be ascribed the fact that the trip was pleasant, not over fatiguing, and more like a pleasure trip than a procession of prisoners. This was the more remarkable, and made more of an impression upon me, because I knew the sentiments and feelings entertained by most southern men towards the Federal troops, whom they regarded as invaders, seeking to deprive them of their rights, and who were destroying or appropriating their property. From what I had heard of the manner in which Federal officers and soldiers, who were prisoners, were abused by the Confederate authorities and officers, I had good reason to expect treatment much less agreeable, to say the least of it, than that which I received. Lieutenant Krum and his men were an escort and safeguard for us, rather than a guard over us, for they governed their actions by our wishes. If I wished to ride on horseback for a change, one of them was always ready to let me have his horse and take my place in the wagon. They traveled fast or slow as we wished; stopped for dinner when we requested them to do so, and made the day's journey of such length as was most agreeable to us. When either of us wanted to smoke, a pipe and tobacco was at once proffered. Every possible attention was paid not only to our wants, but also to our wishes, and we never had an unpleasant word from any one of them.

We found Bell's Tavern filled with Confederate officers. We were given a good room, and after washing and making ourselves as presentable as our very limited wardrobes would permit, we went down to dinner, which we found to be very good and well served. After dinner we went across the street to the headquarters of General McGowan, who received and treated us courteously and kindly. After some conversation with me relative to the course we wished to pursue, he said he would take our parole to report in Richmond, Virginia, to General Winder, and would give us transportation to enable us to leave on Monday morning, and go there on the railroad. He then requested us to step with him into another room where he introduced us to his Assistant Adjutant General, Captain W. D. Maclay, who was directed to make out and give to us the necessary papers. While in the office of the Assistant Adjutant General I engaged him in conversation, and in the course of it he spoke of being a resident of Florida. I said to him that I had relatives living in that State. He asked me in what part. I replied in Appalachicola. He smiled and asked me their names. I informed him that I had living there an uncle named Matthew Myers, and cousins Robert Myers, Mrs. Charles Ellis, Mrs. Austin, and their families. He then said that he was from Appalachicola, that he not only knew my relatives, but that they were his nearest and dearest friends. Captain Maclay at once became very friendly, and interested himself in my behalf, paying me every possible personal attention, and advising me as to the best course to pursue while a prisoner.

### TREATMENT BY CONFEDERATE OFFICERS.

On my return to Bell's Tavern a surgeon of the Confederate army invited me into his room, and asked me if I had any objection to talk with him about the war. I answered him that I had none, and would give him frankly my views and opinions, if he wished me to do so. He replied that he did, that up to this time he had had no opportunity of conversing with a Federal officer, and that he was particularly desirous of knowing the feeling of the people in the Northwest. I had a long and interesting conversation with him on the war and its probable result. The surgeon (I regret that I did not enter his name in my diary, and that I have forgotten it) was confident in the belief that the Confederates could and would establish themselves as an independent nation. I said to him that the sentiment in Michigan, and generally in the West, was practically unanimous that the Union, and the whole Union, must and should be preserved; that the North had but just awakened to the magnitude of the contest, and was only beginning to manifest its strength and resources, while the South was already exhibiting weakness, and was suffering from the enormous prices its people were already obliged to pay not only for the luxuries but also for the necessaries of life. This discussion was carried on over a bottle of brandy which the surgeon said cost forty dollars, and to this I alluded in support of my opinions. During the entire discussion my friend the surgeon listened most attentively to all I had to say, and was more desirous to hear my opinions than to express his own. He was as affable and courteous as he could have been had we been serving in the same cause. There was not a look, gesture, or word during the entire interview that was in the slightest degree objectionable or offensive, and we parted with the most kindly feelings towards each other.

After tea we were in front of Bell's Tavern, smoking our cigars on the piazza, which was full of Confederate officers, who were talking and laughing as is usual with young men in high spirits. Their conversation was generally on some matter connected with the war, and presently one of them at some distance from us said something about the "damned Yankees." Instantly he was informed by an officer near him that there were Federal officers present, who were prisoners of war, and from that time there was not an offensive word spoken in our hearing during our sojourn in Knoxville.

It affords me the greatest pleasure to place on record the gentlemanly manner in which I was uniformly treated by the officers of the Confederate army with whom I came in contact while a prisoner of war, because so much has been said and written about the unkind and generally cruel manner in which Federal prisoners were treated by all belonging to the Confederate army. I have no doubt but that our officers and soldiers were greatly and unnecessarily abused at Andersonville and other southern prisons. I know they were so treated at Richmond, but I think there are those who have been prisoners who on their return have been disposed to appear in the light of martyrs, and have somewhat exaggerated the account of their sufferings and the manner in which they were treated.

For myself I am pleased to be able to say that during the entire time I was a prisoner I received nothing but courtesy and kindness at their hands. There was to this no single exception. My situation, wherever I happened to be, was made as comfortable as circumstances would permit. I regard it as a duty that I owe to those at whose hands I received such honorable treatment, and also to humanity, as well as the truth of history, that I should place on record one instance where a prisoner was treated by the Confederates of all ranks with a care and kindness which do credit to our common nature. I not only hope but have every reason to believe that my experience was not entirely exceptional. Lieutenant Pease who was with me was treated in the same manner as myself. From my greater age, and higher rank, I was the party always addressed, and from that came to speak for both.

### ON TO RICHMOND.

After breakfast on Monday, the 15th, we went again to the office of General McGowan, where we saw the General, Colonel Blake, and Captain Maclay. We now executed our parole papers, and received free railroad passes to Richmond.

We now paid our bill at "Bell's Tavern" ($2.50 each), and at 11 A. M.

Captain Maclay accompanied us to the cars. He advised us to go to the Exchange Hotel in Richmond, and informed us that the office of the adjutant-general was on the same street. We left Knoxville without guard or escort of any kind, and traveled as unmolested and with the same freedom as other passengers. We were known as Federal officers, prisoners of war. We took supper at a station called Caldwell, and rode all night, getting our breakfast at Wytheville. On Tuesday the 16th we passed through three tunnels, and, for the most part, a mountainous country. The mountain scenery was grand and beautiful, and in many places such as to receive my most ardent admiration. We dined at a station on the road, and arrived at Lynchburg at 5 P. M., where we crossed the New River. I had to-day while riding in the cars a long conversation with General ———, formerly a member of Congress from Alabama, and now commanding a legion in the Confederate army. He introduced himself to me, said he understood I was a Federal officer, a prisoner of war, from the Northwest, and added that if I had no objection he would like to talk to me about the war, the opinion, sentiment, or feeling of the people of the North, and more particularly of the Northwest. I replied that I had no objection to the interchange of views, and was willing to give him any information in my power. General ———, and all others I talked with, were very desirous to know what were the sentiments of the people of the Northwest. They all certainly had expected sympathy at least, if not material aid from that part of the country, and most of them expressed themselves as having expected either active assistance or such pacific opposition as would embarass Federal action; in other words, what General Scott would call "a fire in the rear." Most of them expressed surprise and disappointment, and some perhaps were incredulous when I assured them that the people west of the Alleghanies, and north of the Ohio, were practically a unit in their determination to preserve the Union in its integrity. I assured General ——— that New England was not more unanimous and by no means as determined that there should be no dissolution of the Union than was the Northwest. He, as all others with whom I conversed, had evidently more respect for, and dread of encountering the western than the eastern troops, and had built great hopes upon a diversion in their favor from the determined opposition which they supposed existed with a large portion of the western people to the war. It must be recollected that this was in September, 1862, when General Bragg was apparently marching triumphantly through Kentucky, and before the South could know the unanimity of the war sentiment in the loyal States; of the herculean efforts which were even then being put forth, and which were to add hundreds of thousands of men to the Federal armies already in the field. I also ventured the opinion that General Bragg would find himself as much mistaken, and be as certainly disappointed in Kentucky, in any general rising of the people in his favor, or in receiving any material aid, or addition to his forces, as he with whom I was conversing was in respect to the opinions of the people north of the Ohio.

At Lynchburg I said to Lieutenant Pease that upon reflection I had concluded that we need be in no haste in getting to Richmond, as it was uncertain what "reception we should meet with," and what disposition would be made of us. I therefore proposed to him that we should leave the cars, stop for the night where we were, get a good night's rest if we could, and "resume our travels" in the morning. He asked me if I thought we could do so without molestation. I answered that I had no doubt of it, judging from our experience thus far since we had been prisoners. Lieutenant Pease assented to the proposition, and said it would be a great relief to him to get a good night's rest, as we had then been two days and one night on very uncomfortable cars. We accordingly left the cars and went to the "Piedmont House," where we had supper, beds, and breakfast, as would any other guests, paid our bill ($2.50 each), and left in the morning without a question being asked as to our right to do so, or being in any manner molested, although all who saw us knew we were officers of the Federal army. I was in full uniform; that, and nothing more, constituting at this time my earthly possessions. Neither of us had bag or baggage.

### RICHMOND.

We took the cars on the morning of Wednesday, the 17th, at Lynchburg for Richmond, where we arrived at 4 P. M., and proceeded to the Exchange Hotel, where we registered our names, and engaged rooms. After washing, brushing, and getting our tea, we walked over to the office of the adjutant-general, where we saw and reported to General John H. Winder, who after examining our papers, took us into another apartment and introduced us to General Cooper, adjutant-general of the Confederate army, and who before the rebellion and for a long time preceding, had been adjutant-general of the army of the United States. General Cooper received us very kindly, and I was strongly impressed by his manner and the words he used in addressing us after the formalities of an introduction. Said he, "I can only say I am sorry to see you here; that expresses it all." The manner and bearing of General Cooper appeared to me to be very much depressed, and the meaning which he seemed to attach to his words were of much greater scope, I thought, than that conveyed by the words themselves. The regret he expressed at seeing us prisoners seemed to be directed more to the cause, than to the fact, and I could not but conclude that General Cooper, more than any other man I had seen in the South, realized the magnitude of the contest, the evil results which would befall the States which had favored secession if it should fail, and that he was not sanguine of the success of the Confederate cause. Neither the prospect nor the retrospect were, in my opinion, pleasant subjects of reflection to him. After our return to the office of General Winder we gave him our parole to report morning and noon at his office, and were then allowed full liberty.

We returned to the Exchange feeling that we had been remarkably well treated for prisoners of war. I was well satisfied to retire early to my room, to take to my bed and endeavor to sleep off the fatigue, care, and anxiety which had accompanied me to the Capital of the Southern Confederacy. If I ever regarded a comfortable room and a good bed as great luxuries, it was my first night in Richmond. On the morning of Thursday, September 18, 1862, we reported to General Winder, after which we strolled around the city, visited the Capitol, rambled through the grounds on which it is situated, and devoted some time to examining the statuary and other objects of interest. The Capitol, or State House, is a large and stately building, with a handsome portico of Ionic columns, situated in the center of a park of about eight acres in extent, on an elevated plain on the summit of Stockor Hill, and from its elevated situation is the most conspicuous object in the city. In the principal hall of the Capitol is Houdon's celebrated statue of Washington, in marble, taken from life, and it is said to be as correct a representation of "The Father of his

Country" as any extant. There is, in the same hall a marble bust of Lafayette. In the park which surrounds the Capitol stands the monument, one of the most interesting objects of its kind in the United States. It is an elaborate structure, forty-two feet high, and on its top stands a colossal equestrian statue of Gen. Washington, in bronze, twenty-five feet high, and is adorned with the statues of Thomas Jefferson and Patrick Henry, by Crawford. The original design was that the statues of four other eminent Virginians should be placed on the four vacant spaces on the monument, provided for their reception. The City Hall, which stands at an angle of the Capitol square, is built in the Doric style, and is an elegant building. Many of the finest residences in the city are in this vicinity. We spent the entire forenoon wandering about the city, examining and admiring all objects of interest we could find, and only returned to our hotel in time for dinner.

### LIBBY PRISON.

Immediately after dinner we reported to General Winder, who informed us that the Secretary of War had said to him that there was too much knowledge to be obtained in Richmond of military affairs to admit of Federal officers being allowed the liberty of the city on parole, and that he should be obliged to place us under some little restraint. I answered that we were prisoners, and of course subject to his orders; that we felt under great obligations for the kindness he had thus far shown us, and hoped he would treat us as favorably as he possibly could under his instructions. He called an officer and ordered him to take us to Captain Turner, and to say to him, as from General Winder "that he wished him (Captain Turner) to make us as comfortable as he could." From the lenient manner in which we had been treated, and the "childlike and bland" manner of General Winder when he said that he must "place us under some little restraint," I formed a favorable opinion of the "restraint" under which we were to be placed. I had not the faintest idea of where we were to be taken, and the shadow of the terrible Libby Prison, of whose horrors we had already heard so much, never once crossed my mind. The officer went with us to our hotel, where we paid our bill ($5 each for just one day), and then after traversing several streets, we came to a large brick warehouse on the river bank, and were taken into one of the rooms, where we were introduced to Captain Turner and Libby Prison, in which we were duly incarcerated, much to my astonishment and chagrin. When the officer who came with us delivered his message to Captain Turner, I noticed particularly that he gave him the order of General Winder in the language that he had received it, "that General Winder wished him to make us as comfortable as he could." Captain Turner gave us in charge of an officer who conducted us to the lower room of the tobacco warehouse, lowest down the river, and there left us. This room was on a level with the street in front; in the rear it was one story above the street, which lay between the prison and the river, and on this street the basement story below us opened. There was one door in front, well guarded, none in the rear, and an open staircase, also guarded, leading to the rooms above, but no opening to the basement below. The apartment in which we were confined was about one hundred feet deep, and thirty or thirty-five feet wide. It was entirely destitute of furniture except a wooden bench about five feet long and a foot wide, without back or sides. There was one fire place in which was kept sufficient fire to cook such of our rations as needed that preparation.

We found this room tenanted by eleven officers, who had been in confinement for several months. I have the names as given me, of Lieutenant Parker, twenty-first Massachusetts Volunteer Infantry, from Worcester; Lieutenant Clark, twenty-first Massachusetts Volunteer Infantry; Captain Schortz, Lieutenants Wehn, Zimmerman, Bonsal, Morley, McAteer, Konigsburg, Lang, and Chase, all of the twelfth Pennsylvania Cavalry. The latter were mostly Germans and Jews. Most of the occupants were lying on the floor, some with and some without blankets. Their principal, and for that matter, only occupation,—it could not be called amusement,—appeared to be card-playing. The little bench was constantly occupied, as affording more relief to their weary bodies than any other situation. The choice was standing, lying on the floor, or sitting on this bench. Our arrival was quite an event with them; they gathered around us, displaying a laudable degree of curiosity and interest in our history, so that we soon became well acquainted. They inquired into all the particulars of our capture, and related the story of their own, and also of their prison experience, which did not impress me as favoring the conclusions I had drawn relative to my own treatment, from my intercourse with General Winder. Neither Lieutenant Pease or myself had a blanket,—none were furnished to any prisoners by the Confederate authorities, and without one we could not rest on the floor with any degree of comfort. Our chance for a seat on the bench was but slight, and for myself I think I never was so weary as after two hours in Libby Prison, and on my feet most if not all of the time. Our opportunities for locomotion were quite limited, as we were not allowed to approach the windows either in front or rear. Those in the rear overlooked the street and the river, which were the scene of a good deal of activity, and therefore of some interest to persons situated as we were. Soon after coming into the room, as I was walking back and forth, "chewing the cud of sweet and bitter recollections," I approached one of these windows, when I was warned by my fellow prisoners of the danger of being seen at a window by the guard below, and informed that they had fired at prisoners seen looking out of those above. I did not care to be shot while confined like a rat in a trap, and I thereafter gave the windows a wide berth.

I now began to revolve in my own mind whether by some means I could not improve my situation, which was becoming decidedly irksome and uncomfortable. I inquired of the other prisoners if they had made any effort to procure the means to make themselves more comfortable, and found they had not, but had made themselves as contented as possible, as they believed that they were now more favored, as I think they were, than any other of the inmates in the numerous apartments of the prison. Libby Prison was three stories high above the basement, and had at least six "suite of rooms," making eighteen in all. The rooms were, as I understood, all full, and many of them crowded with prisoners. In some of them the occupants were overrun with vermin, of which they could not possibly rid themselves for the want of any proper conveniences. All this and more other prisoners were suffering, while they, my fellow prisoners, had room and to spare, and that which was cleanly. But "all this did not satisfy me," and without informing my companions of my intentions I determined to make an effort to make my prison life, which I had no reason to suppose would be a brief one, more endurable than it now promised to be.

### PRISON LIFE AND CAPTAIN TURNER.

We were on the first floor, all the rooms above us were occupied, and that with greater numbers than in our own. Orderlies were passing and repassing quite frequently, for all the various purposes connected with the prison. I now began to scrutinize them closely, and presently seeing one that I thought had in him a full share of the milk of human kindness, I accosted him, asking him if he was going to Captain Turner's office; he replied that he was. I then asked him if he would deliver to Captain Turner a message from me; he replied that he would. I then said to him, will you please present the compliments of Colonel Shoemaker to Captain Turner and say to him that he (Shoemaker) would be pleased to see him as soon as he can make it convenient to call. The orderly answered very politely that he would deliver my message. Had a shell exploded in our prison my fellow captives could not have evinced more astonishment then they did at what they deemed my audacity when they heard the message I gave the orderly, but by the time he had passed into the street this was succeeded by mirth at my verdancy in sending so foolish a message. The idea of asking Captain Turner to visit me appeared to them so ridiculous that they could not refrain from making all manner of jokes at my expense, chaffing me, saying they had no doubt but he would drop all other business, and come and see what I wanted. They amused each other by making all kinds of ridiculous surmises. In the prison the life was very monotonous, and any new subject for thought or conversation was eagerly siezed upon as affording a desirable change, and the most was made of it. These poor fellows had, until our arrival, nothing to relieve the tedium of their lives. Since their incarceration one day had been the same as the other, consequently when they found me disposed to travel so far out of the beaten path, and that too in such a foolish manner, they for the time being were quite pleased with the idea that I would probably by my original manner of proceeding afford them considerable amusement, and break somewhat the monotony of their existence. I was not in the least degree ruffled by their merriment, or turned from the course I had determined to pursue. I was not as much disturbed by their nonsense, as by the fact that an hour passed without seeing or hearing from Captain Turner. In the meantime my suffering from being on my feet, in so confined a place, or from lying on the floor, constantly increased. I made up my mind "it would never do to give it up so," and resolved to make another effort. I accordingly addressed myself to another orderly, and ascertained that he was going to the office of Captain Turner. I requested him to deliver the same message given the former one, which he promised me he would do. If my fellow prisoners were surprised to hear me send a second message, after all the sport they had made of the first, they were simply astounded when, soon after the second messenger had left the room, Captain Turner walked in and inquired for Colonel Shoemaker. I introduced myself to him in as pleasant and affable a manner as I could assume. I then asked him if he recollected the message sent to him by General Winder when we were brought to the prison. He said he did not. I reminded him that it was "that he should make us as comfortable as he could." I then laughingly and in the most agreeable manner I could command, added, "Captain, there are not many conveniences for making myself comfortable here, are there?" at the same time waving my hand toward the different parts of the room. He smiled and replied "he thought not." I then said, as earnestly as I could, "Captain Turner, I do not intend to be unreasonable; I am a prisoner, under your charge, and shall submit without a murmur to whatever belongs to my situation, but I know that in a city like Richmond you have all the means and facilities necessary to supply an army under any circumstances." I added, "I think the message of General Winder justifies me in asking you to furnish me with something that would enable me to exist here without unnecessary suffering, and to be more comfortable than I could be as now situated, without overcoat or blanket." I said, "Captain, you must have under your control thousands of bunks and straw ticks, something that I could sit on and lie upon, and if you will furnish me with some resting place of this kind to relieve my weary limbs, I will feel under great obligations to you. Captain Turner immediately replied "that he could and would comply with my request." I then called up Lieutenant Pease and introduced him, saying that "he came in with me, was included in the message of General Winder, and I hoped he would send in the same things for him that he did for myself," to all of which he readily assented. None of my fellow prisoners knew for what purpose I had requested Captain Turner to come and see me, for while I was determined to make the effort, yet, from all I had heard of the treatment of Federal officers in Libby Prison, I had grave doubts as to my success, and even now my fellow captives said I had seen and heard the last of Captain Turner. They evidently considered it arrant folly for me to look for or expect any act of kindness at his hands, and made themselves quite jolly over my request, some of them saying he would probably send me a feather bed, another that it would be a hair mattress, and they discussed the kind of bedstead which would most probably be sent with the bed.

All this afforded them amusement, and I could not myself occasionally help laughing at some of their grotesque ideas; but presently in marched four stalwart "contrabands," two of them each with a clean burlaps tick filled with nice clean straw, and each of the others with a common board bunk, the size of the ticks. All this was rough, but "I liked it." The "Fifteenth Amendments" inquired for Colonel Shoemaker, and reported their burdens to be for my companion and myself. While this was being done my fellow prisoners looked on in silent amazement, and could hardly believe the evidence of their senses. I asked them how long they had been in prison, and learned that all had been there for weeks, and some, I think, for months. I then inquired if they had ever attempted to procure any alleviation of their condition, and they frankly admitted they had not; they had never even thought of doing so, as they had no idea that the least possible benefit would result from anything they could do, or that any attention would be paid to any request they might make. As for Lieutenant Pease and myself, we were now quite contented; we had a lounging, resting, and sleeping place, and I had now a better bed to sleep on than I had occupied at any time while with my regiment. It was evening when our beds were brought in, and I think I never had a sweeter or sounder night's rest than my first night in the celebrated and much dreaded Libby Prison.

On Friday I said to the other officers that, if they would make the effort, I was satisfied that Captain Turner would treat them as he had Lieutenant Pease and myself; that he had thousands of those bunks, and could supply them with but little trouble. I said to them that I thought he would not make a difference in the treatment of prisoners in the same apartment, if they would ask to be placed on the same footing, and I assured them that I would give them all the assistance in my power to enable them to succeed. We then accosted orderly after orderly until we succeeded in getting a message to Captain Turner, who came to us, when we all joined in the request that he would extend the same favor to each other officer that he had so kindly to Lieutenant Pease and myself, and the result was that before night each prisoner was furnished with a bunk and straw tick.

From being considered exceedingly foolish, I was now regarded as being extremely wise. There is "nothing succeeds like success." Had my efforts failed my standing with my fellow prisoners would have been very low in their estimation; as it was, they looked upon me as almost more than human. In such manner is the judgment of men influenced and governed.

I on this day saw Dr. Woolen, Assistant Surgeon of the thirty-seventh Indiana Volunteer Infantry, who requested me, if I could do so, to communicate his situation to his brother, W. W. Woolen, Attorney at Law, Indianapolis, Indiana. I also saw Dr. August Hermon, of the twenty-ninth New York Volunteer Infantry. They were on the second floor, immediately over our heads, but there was a sentry on the stairs to prevent prisoners from passing from one room to the other, and unless the sentinel was very good natured no conversation was allowed.

### PRISON FARE.

For rations we were furnished with excellent bread, and very good soup. Of the other articles of food I have but little knowledge, as I did not eat any of them. The prison authorities did not provide any table furniture, and as we had only what we had brought in with us the supply was very limited. We had in all, two or three tin cups and several pocket knives, all of which were used as common property, and with these were obliged to be content. As the soup was served in pails we took turns with our tin cups, from which each man drank his supply until all were served. We could and did buy some extras. I paid fifty cents for half a pound of butter, the same for fourteen apples, and twenty-five cents a quart for potatoes. Watermelons were sold for from $2.50 to $5.00. Coffee $2.50 a pound. Of these I did not buy. My appetite was not a craving one. I think the fact that I was a prisoner did not tend to sharpen it, or keep it in a natural state. Of the prison fare I used only the bread and soup. The bread was of the best quality, and plenty of it. I toasted it at our fire-place, and with the butter I bought I quite satisfied my appetite with soup and buttered toast. I inquired the price of flour, and found it to be $35.00 a barrel in Richmond, and $50.00 in Atlanta. A coat that five years before could be bought for $8.00, was now worth $75.00, and all other articles in proportion.

On Saturday we were much elated, having been informed that all the officers in this apartment were to be taken to Aiken's Landing during the day and at once exchanged. We were soon after ordered to "pack up," which was very short work for some, and no work at all for most of us, as the baggage of the former consisted of a single blanket, and that of the latter was all on our backs. In consequence of some change in the arrangements we were ordered to "unpack," and informed that we would not leave until the next day. I now made another effort to see the prisoners from Michigan who were in other parts of the prison, particularly some with whom I was acquainted, in order that I might carry for them any message they might wish to send to their friends, but I was unsuccessful. Captain Turner, of whom I made the request, refused to allow me to have any communication with them. There was at this time confined in Libby Prison the officers of the army of General Pope, taken during his command of the army of the Potomac, among whom was Colonel William D. Wilkins, assistant adjutant-general, of Detroit, and several others with whom I was well acquainted. I understood that they were treated with much greater rigor, and severity, than any other prisoners, because of the intense bitter feeling entertained by all Confederates for General Pope, and all his command. I was informed by those who had seen them that their sufferings were as intolerable as they were unnecessary; that they were not allowed the necessaries, and were so situated that they could not provide for the decencies of life; that they were covered and overrun with vermin from which, so crowded were the rooms in which they were confined, they could not rid themselves; and that their treatment generally was not only severe, but that it was barbarous. I have no doubt but all this and more was true, and my own experience in Libby Prison, though very brief, and more favorable than that of any other prisoner in the Confederacy I ever saw or heard of, was enough to satisfy me that I did not want any more of it. It had been long enough to become monotonous, and to satisfy me that it would soon become tedious and difficult to bear.

### EXCHANGED--FREE.

On Sunday, the 21st of September, 1862, at 10 A. M., all the officers in the prison apartment in which I was confined, and none others, left Libby Prison, and Richmond, for Aiken's Landing. We were taken there in stage coaches and hacks of various kinds, each officer having the privilege of riding, and of paying his own fare, or of going on foot. When we arrived at Aiken's Landing we found there Lieutenant Colonel Ludlow, our Commissioner for the exchange of prisoners, who with Commissioner Ould, on the part of the Confederate authorities, was engaged in arranging the details of exchange. Colonel Ludlow sent for me, and informed me that all the officers and enlisted men then at the Landing were exchanged; that of the officers exchanged I was the highest in rank; that his engagements with the Confederate Commissioner, Mr. Ould, would prevent his return to Fortress Monroe in the steamer with the prisoners exchanged, and that he should place the exchanged officers and men, three hundred and sixteen in number, in my charge. He instructed me to take them on board the Steamer Canonicus, then lying at the wharf, where I would find rations and clothing which I was to issue to those exchanged in my discretion, as their several wants might require, that I was to report to General Dix at Fortress Monroe, and await his order. I also understood Colonel Ludlow that we were the first officers exchanged, and liberated at the time of exchange. There had been many released on parole, and afterwards exchanged, but we were the first actually exchanged.

### THE STEAMER CANONICUS.

I was introduced to the Captain of the steamer, who installed me in a first-class state-room,which had all the modern improvements, and refreshments on the side-board or in the locker. I found the boat loaded with rations, stores, and all kinds of clothing for the use and benefit of the liberated soldiers. Most of the stores, and all of the clothing were, I think, furnished by the Christian Commission. I organized my staff; that is to say, I detailed officers to attend to the issuing of the rations, and others to ascertain who were in want of clothing, others to see that they were supplied, while I exercised a wholesome supervision over the whole proceeding. We were enabled to make many a poor fellow comfortable, and happy. Most of the enlisted men were convalescents, in poor health, unfit for duty, needing good care and nourishing food; many of them were almost destitute of clothing, and all were in need of some articles to make them in any degree comfortable. It was a touching sight to see the expression of thankfulness and satisfaction on the countenances and in the manners of these poor fellows when they were made cleanly, decently clothed, supplied with one good hearty meal, and to hear of hopes renewed of many who had, while in prison and suffering from sickness or wounds, almost given up in despair.

Those connected with the Christian Commission, and all others through whose agency these much needed supplies were procured, would have felt more than repaid for anything they had done could they have seen and heard the grateful tears and words which were shed and said by these feeble men as their wants were relieved, and they were made comfortable with a sufficient supply of both food and clothing. But what most of all appeared to be uppermost in the thoughts of the poor fellows that they were once more free, and that they should return to their friends and their homes. No medicine could have operated so beneficially upon them as did the hope that now sprang up in their breasts.

As soon as all were on board we steamed down the river with our distinctive flag, as exchange steamer, floating in the breeze, until night-fall, when the anchor was cast overboard, and we remained stationary until morning. The steamer could not in safety continue her course in the night as her neutral character would not then be apparent. If she had done so the Confederates would have fired upon her from the batteries which they had erected at various points, and which completely commanded the river.

### REFLECTIONS.

When the duties of the day were over, and in the privacy of my commodious and handsomely furnished state room, feeling that I was once more a free man, I could not but review and reflect upon my adventures since leaving Nashville, and while in the hands of the Confederates. Two weeks ago this night I was taken prisoner near Tyree Springs, Tennessee, since which time I had rode on the back of a mule and in a wagon to the headquarters of General Bragg, on the banks of the Cumberland river, near Carthage, where I had an interview with Generals Bragg and Hardee; thence by wagon to Sparta, Crossville, Waldron's peak, Clinch river, and Kingston, to Knoxville; from Knoxville to Richmond by railroad, leaving Knoxville on Monday, at 11 A. M., and arriving at Richmond on Wednesday at 4 P. M., making in all eleven hundred miles since leaving Nashville. I had been in Libby Prison from Thursday to Sunday, and was now exchanged and on my way home, and to my regiment. This all had been gone through with in two weeks, and in thinking it over, and particularly the favorable termination of my captivity, I was satisfied in my own mind that the knowledge I had gained in my journey through a country as interesting as that I had passed over, and the experience I had derived from my intercourse with Confederates, and my short confinement in Libby Prison, more than compensated me for anything I had suffered. I looked back with some wonder and considerable self gratulation upon the favorable treatment I had so uniformly received while a prisoner, at the hands of the Confederates, but more than all, and above all, that I was not only free, but exchanged, and at liberty to rejoin my regiment. I shall always look back upon the two weeks as among the most interesting and valuable in my army life.

On Monday morning the Canonicus resumed her course down the river. When we arrived at that point where the authority of the Federal government was in the ascendant, we saw the gunboat Genesee stationed in the river acting as a sentinel on outpost duty. At Newport News we saw the iron-clad gunboat Galena, and between there and Fortress Monroe, and lying in the roads immediately around the latter, were over one hundred steamers and vessels, the whole combined to make a very animated and pleasing picture.

### THE MONITOR.

We also saw the iron-clad floating turret battery "Monitor," which on the 9th of March encountered so successfully the Confederate iron-clad ram Merrimac (called by them the Virginia). There is no doubt but the Merrimac was so crippled in the engagement as to render her comparatively useless, as she was never after placed in service, and that certainly would have been the case had the ram been as efficient as when, on the 8th of March she came in all her terrible might and power, and destroyed such large, powerful, and heavily armed ships as the Cumberland and the Congress, striking the former and sending her to the bottom with as much apparent ease as though she had been a cockle shell, and with almost the same rapidity sinking the latter with her guns, with a fearful loss of life in both; and so invulnerable was this iron-clad ram to all the guns and projectiles heretofore in use in naval warfare, that all this was accomplished without injury to herself. Had not the little "Monitor" so opportunely arrived, there is no estimating the damage the Merrimac might, and without doubt would, have inflicted on the shipping, commerce, and cities of the loyal States, for there was no other vessel in our navy,—in fact, not all of them combined—could have offered her any successful resistance.

The Monitor, but for her turret and pilot house, would hardly be discernible, as her main deck is but eighteen inches above the water, and is so plated with iron as to be proof against the heaviest ordnance. The pilot house rises but three feet above the level of the deck. The tower or turret is round, is in the center of the vessel, is nine feet high and twenty feet in diameter, and is of iron nearly a foot in thickness. The turret is armed with two very heavy guns, and so constructed as to revolve, bringing the guns to bear on any point. The battle between the Monitor and the Merrimac lasted five hours; the turret of the Monitor was struck, without receiving the slightest damage, more than twenty times by balls propelled with the same tremendous force as had sent them through and through the frigate Congress the day previous. The Merrimac attempted to sink the Monitor as she had the Cumberland, and struck her with her ram with all the momentum and force that her powerful engines could bring to bear, but the Monitor was proof against the terrible shock, and emerged from this trial of her power of resistance without having been in any manner injured, or her fighting qualities impaired. Mr. Ericsson, her inventor and builder, believed the Monitor to be absolutely invulnerable, and the result of this engagement would tend to confirm that belief.

While we may say that the arrival of the Monitor, at the precise time when it was so absolutely necessary to check or terminate the career of the Merrimac, was providential, we should not forget to give to the Navy Department, to Gideon J. Welles, its efficient head, and to the President, their just meed of praise for having by their efforts procured the only vessel by which the destructive race of the Merrimac was so soon terminated. But most of all I think, is credit due to Captain John L. Worden and his brave crew, who ventured from New York in a vessel of such novel construction, and such untried powers that even its sea-going qualities were a matter of conjecture; and it was perhaps as much a subject of doubt as to the ability of the vessel to contend with the sea and reach Fortress Monroe, as of the power of resistance and destruction it would display when called upon to encounter the enemy. I know of no more heroic action than that of Captain Worden and his crew in braving, under such circumstances, as they did without hesitation, both the perils of the deep and of battle with a foe which had proven herself as formidable as had the Merrimac in her encounter with the Cumberland and Congress. These men, by their fearless conduct on the sea and in battle, have laid their country under an everlasting debt of gratitude.

We were witnesses of the effect of the destructive course of the Merrimac, for there, but a short distance from us, projecting from the water and plainly to be seen from where our steamer was lying at anchor, were the tops of the masts and portions of the sails, all set as they were, of the ships of war Cumberland and Congress, still marking the place where they went down before their terrible, and to them irresistible, foe. It would have been a source of much gratification if the Monitor could have arrived a few hours sooner, and have saved those noble vessels, and the brave men whose lives were sacrificed in them.

### FORTRESS MONROE AND ANNAPOLIS.

Our arrival having been reported to General Dix, I received the following order:

HEADQUARTERS SEVENTH ARMY CORPS,
*Fort Monroe, Sept. 22, 1862.*

*Colonel Shoemaker, 13th Regiment Michigan Volunteers:*

**COLONEL,—You will proceed to Annapolis, with the officers and men placed under your charge at Aikins Landing, and report them to the commanding officer at that post. By command of MAJOR GENERAL DIX.**

**THOS. H. LUDLOW,**
***Lieut. Col. and Inspector General, 7th Army Corps.***

The officers and men were now all transferred to the steamer Commodore, for the trip to Annapolis. We steamed away from Fortress Monroe Monday evening, and Tuesday morning found ourselves at the wharf at Annapolis.

I reported to General Thomas, adjutant-general of the armies of the United States, who was there. He received me very kindly, and on inquiry, learning that I was nearly out of money, gave me an order for the two months' pay then due me. I at once obtained the money on the order of Major P. R. Dodge, a paymaster then in Annapolis. I also met Colonel Stanton, who was either an officer on the staff of General Thomas or connected with the pay department.

After drawing my pay, as I was on the street with Lieutenant Pease, I proposed that as we were at the headquarters of the oyster trade we should go into a restaurant and have a dish. We did so, and were not disappointed either as to their quality or the satisfaction derived from eating them. I had not seen an oyster since leaving Jackson, and my recollection is that I thought those at Annapolis were the finest and best I had ever tasted. With our oysters we had a glass of ale, then a cigar. When I called for the bill, and was told it was but twenty-five cents each, I could hardly believe the evidence of my senses. I had so long been accustomed to Confederate prices that I found it difficult to realize that even at the home of the oyster it was possible to furnish such a repast for so small an amount of money.

I called by appointment on General Thomas; he ordered the steamer to Baltimore, and directed me to continue in command of the exchanged officers and soldiers until we arrived there. He extended my leave of absence thirty days (it was originally thirty days),and gave me the necessary papers so that I could draw transportation in joining my regiment. He now inquired very particularly about the treatment of prisoners at Richmond, and was very indignant when he heard of the manner in which those of General Pope's command were abused, and of the threats which were made of considering them highway robbers, and not entitled to be considered prisoners of war. General Thomas declared that no more prisoners should be exchanged until the Confederate authorities would consent to release or exchange all from General Pope's army. I have reason to believe that my representations had some effect, for all these prisoners were soon after exchanged. After a somewhat extended interview I left General Thomas and rejoined Lieutenant Pease.

On our way to the boat, the taste of those oysters still lingering in our mouths we decided that we preferred them to the fare on the Commodore, and went into the restaurant and ordered a second dish. We finished them at our leisure, drank our ale, smoked our cigars. We then started for the steamboat, which to our consternation we found had left the dock, and was at some distance in the bay, steaming away towards Baltimore. In the crowded state of the boat the Captain supposed we were on board, and started somewhat sooner than we thought he would. Fortunately we found another steamboat about to leave for Baltimore, on which were officers and men who had been taken prisoners at Harper's Ferry on the 15th of September, and released on parole, or under an agreement that they should not serve against the Confedracy until exchanged, and were being sent to Minnesota and the Northwest until they could again take their place in the armies in the South. We went on board this boat unquestioned, and mingled with those who rightfully belonged there. Here the good fortune which had attended me from the time of my capture did not desert me, for this steamboat was a faster boat than the Commodore, and we arrived in Baltimore enough in advance to enable me to be on the wharf when the latter arrived. I immediately went on board and found that our absence had not been noticed, and thus it was that we went from Annapolis to Baltimore on one boat without any person on it knowing that we did not belong there, while on our own it was not known that we were absent.

After making the proper reports, and being discharged from further duty in connection with the Commodore and the exchanged prisoners, I went into the town and bought a shirt, some collars, a cravat, and pair of drawers, so that I could change my underclothing, which I had not been able to do since leaving Nashville. I then went to a hotel, took tea, changed my clothing, and at 7 P. M. left by railroad for New York, where I arrived at 8 A. M. on Wednesday, September 24, 1862, and took quarters at the Astor House. I replenished my wardrobe during the day, and left on a sleeping car on the night train on the Central Railroad, arriving at home (Jackson, Michigan,) at 1:30 A. M. on Friday.

Soon after my return my infant son, Michael Shoemaker, who was born on the 15th of June while I was at Tuscumbia, in Alabama, and whom I had never seen until I came home, was taken sick, and died on the 9th of October. I left Jackson on the 27th of October and joined my regiment at Glasgow, Ky., on the 1st day of November, 1862.

# A MICHIGAN GEOLOGICAL EXPEDITION IN 1837:

BY BELA HUBBARD, ESQ., OF DETROIT.

Read before the Wayne County Pioneer Society, February 5th, 1872.

*Gentlemen of the Pioneer Society:*

A recent paper read before this Society by William Jennison, Esq., giving an interesting description of the Saginaw valley, as seen by him in 1850, suggests some incidents of an expedition into the same valley, in which the writer of this had a share, thirteen years before. At the request of your importunate President, I have undertaken to jot down some of my reminiscences of that journey. These, if they have no other interest, may serve to show the progress of enterprise and settlement in that region, and bring into contrast its feeble beginning and privations of the past, with its present abounding prosperity.

In 1837, the State of Michigan, then in the first year of its young but vigorous existence, organized a State Geological Survey; but the scanty appropriation sufficed only to enable its projector to accomplish, during that year, a limited reconnoissance. This extended, nevertheless, to some degree, into the almost unexplored portion of the Lower Peninsula.

Salt springs were known to exist, particularly in the vicinity of Grand and Saginaw rivers, and the few facts known of the rocks which constituted most of the coast lines, and made occasional outcrops in the interior, were sufficient to indicate the probability of the existence of coal and gypsum. It was required by the act that an examination and report upon the salt springs should be made at the end of the first season.

It is my intention to relate some of the incidents of a trip—or short campaign, if I may so term it,—made in the fall of 1837, for the purpose of an examination of these springs, and such other geological discoveries as might be made in the country traversed by those great natural highways, the streams tributary to the Saginaw. The party consisted of four individuals: Dr. Houghton, the State Geologist,and three assistants—Mr. C. C. Douglass, the writer, —and a dog. The latter was no inconsequential member of the corps, and had, like the rest, his appointed duties to perform. Dash was his name; indicative also of his nature.

This was before the day of railroads, although the young State had already projected its magnificent scheme of internal improvements, and for a considerable part of our contemplated route there were no highways but the streams. Our plan was to reach, by private conveyance, some point on the Shiawassee river, whence we could embark in a canoe and descend to the Saginaw. Loading into a wagon at Detroit our few traps, which consisted of a tent, provisions, an ax and a gun, in the afternoon of September 13, 1837, we proceeded as far as Royal Oak, where we encamped by the roadside in the independent mode common to immigrants of that period. To the writer the situation had the charm which youth always finds in novelty. I will not detain you with incidents, and will only mention the few villages through which we passed. Prominent among these was Pontiac. The first settler, Mr. Williams, came to this place in 1817 or 1818 with an exploring party, among whom was Governor Cass. This whole region was then supposed to be an interminable morass, and so wild and dangerous was this expedition thought to be that the party, before setting forth, took leave of their friends with all the solemnity befitting so grave an occasion. At the time of my visit Pontiac was a pretty, business-like place. It had been settled thirteen years, but had just received an act of incorporation by the legislature. It has always retained its bustling character, while growing rapidly from a thriving hamlet into a beautiful and well-built city.

The surrounding country seemed to our eyes far enough removed from the gloomy morass which wild imaginations had depicted it twenty years before. It appeared to me the most beautiful the sun ever shone upon. It was of the character then beginning to be classed as "openings," characterized by a gravelly soil, and a sparse growth of oaks and hickories. I speak in the past tense, because, though the rural beauty of the country is still unrivaled, little remains of the original character of the openings. This is a result partly of the progress of civilization, and partly of the thick growth of small timber that has covered all the uncultivated portions since the annual fires have ceased, which kept down the underbrush.

Elevated 400 feet above Detroit river, broken into hills and knobs, which rise frequently 100 feet and more above the surrounding surface, with intervening vales and hollows forming basins and lakes of the clearest water, in the midst of a park of nature's sole forming, inimitable by the hand of art, this lake region of Michigan deserves its celebrity.

But at the period I allude to no straight-fenced roads shut in the highway, and travelers might wind at will through the superb natural park, trampling down only the flowers that in many places created glowing parterres, catching many a bright reflection from the limpid lakes, and sometimes stealing distant sight of a herd of deer scarcely more wild than the peaceful landscape over which they roamed. Climbing a tree on one of the most elevated knobs, I had a view over probably the whole of Oakland county; seven lakes lay at my feet; on the north and west undulations like heavy swells of the sea, and on the east a level plain stretching to the horizon like an ocean's verge.

Byron, in the southeast corner of Shiawassee county, was the termination of our wagon journey. The name had long occupied a prominent place on all the old maps of Michigan—at that time a decade was antiquity—and held out to the new-comer the promise of a large and thriving village. The reality was disappointing. It possessed, all told, but a mill and two houses. Fentonville, though of more recent origin, had outgrown it, and boasted a tavern, a store, and several frame tenements.

At Byron we exchanged our wagon for a canoe, and commenced a descent of Shiawassee river. From Byron to Owosso, about twenty miles direct (but many more by the course of the stream), our way lay mostly through lands more heavily timbered, but varied with openings and occasion plains. Through this part of the country roads had been opened, and settlements had made rapid progress.

We were now to make our way by the aid of the current, but this meant not all plain sailing nor luxurious enjoyment. The river was interrupted by numerous rapids, of difficult if not dangerous navigation, and over these shallows we had to drag the canoe. As this necessitated getting into the water, we were provided with water-tight boots that turned up to the thighs.

At the approach of night a favorable landing was selected, and a new division of labor took place. While one cleared the spot and pitched the tent, another cut wood for the fire, and a third prepared the evening meal. Your humble servant, being installed into the ancient and honorable dignity of cook, had this duty to perform. Any one who has sweetened his food with the sauce of hunger knows how little culinary art is requisite to satisfy famishing guests. Indeed, a piece of fat pork fried upon a stick over the camp fire, after hours of labor in the wilderness, is a morsel sweeter than any which the pampered epicure knows. To this standard dish our one gun enabled us to add such small game as we chose to take the trouble to obtain.

But my position involved also a duty which might be supposed of less easy accomplishment, viz.: the cleaning of the dishes. Fortunately, I was permitted to make free of the assistance of the fourth member of our family. Dash, being properly educated to this service, was not allowed his own dinner until he had thoroughly and impartially scoured our tin plates and sauce-pan; in which duty I must do him the justice to say, he proved a skillful adept. Indeed, after long experience, I am prepared to recommend dog's tongue as more effectual than any dish-cloth, with all the aids of hot water and soap. After this process, a simple rinsing in the clear water of the river constituted all the additional operation that the most fastidious could demand.

Several years had passed since the extinguishment of the Indian title to the lands of the Chippewas, who had claimed this part of the peninsula. But many and extensive reservations lined the Shiawassee and other of the tributaries of the Saginaw, and the natives had as yet felt too little of that fatal spell, which falls upon them with the very beginning of the white settlements, to have abandoned much of their old habits.

As we followed down the stream memorials of the present and recent Indian occupation were frequent. Sometimes we passed huts, constructed of poles, and thatched bark; but only a few women and children were visible. At one place on the bank were ten graves, over which a sort of tomb had been erected, built of logs. Trails were frequent, and on one of these we came upon a tree containing an Indian symbolic epistle. There were figures of men and horses, but we were unable to decipher the meaning. At another place was a cache, a pit for hiding provisions. Many of the Indian clearings stretched for several continuous miles, and many acres bordering the river were covered with the luxuriant maize, the chief cultivated food of the natives. These plantations receive the name of villages, because they are resorted to by the tribes at the periods of cultivation and harvest. But, in fact, these people had no fixed habitations, but wandered like the Arabs—their eastern cousins—from place to place, in patriarchial bands, finding such sustenance as the woods and waters afforded, and pursuing the occupation of trapping and barter with the Indian traders. At this time also they were much scattered by the small-pox, a disease recently introduced by the whites, and which had proved very fatal to the aboriginal inhabitants of this part of Michigan.

Indian trading-houses were a frequent feature, that served to connect the wildness of savage life with the incoming civilization. Five miles above Shiawasseetown was a small Indian village, upon what was known as Knagg's reservation, and at a short distance was the house of a trader—Beaubien. Williams, the first settler, came here six years before (1831 and opened a trading store, as an agent of that extensive enterprise—the American Fur Company. A frame house had since been erected, and a few acres cleared,—the small beginning of one of those invasions of the Saxon upon the savage, which, in an incredibly short period, will leave the latter not even his grave. Shiawasseetown, at this time, contained a dozen log cabins and as many frames unfinished. One of these was of quite a superior construction, and indicative of the era of speculation through which the country had passed. It was three stories in height and designed for a hotel. The whole village was under mortgage and was advertised to be sold at public vendue.

Corunna, the county seat, we found to consist of one log house, situated upon the bank of the river, and occupied by a Mr. Davis, who a year before, and soon after the organization of the county, had made an entry here. A steam-mill was in process of erection. About twenty acres of land had been cleared and planted, and never did crystal stream have a more fertile soil. Three miles below was "located" the village of Owosso, already a thriving settlement, containing a dozen log buildings, one frame one and a saw-mill. With the exception of a few scattered settlers upon the plains south of the line of the present Detroit & Milwaukee railway, such constituted the entire white population of Shiawassee county.

In the early part of the season, during the progress of the geological survey, beds of bituminous coal had been discovered in the bank of Grand river, in Ingham and Eaton counties, and the rocks met with through the central part of Shiawassee—belonging to the "coal measures"—gave hope of finding an outcrop here. Prospecting was accordingly commenced by us at Corunna, but, with the slender means at command, did not prove successful. Yet sufficient was determined from the character and dip of the rocks and other indications, to warrant a recommendation to the settlers to continue the investigation. The result was the finding of coal at Corunna soon after, which, though not of a very remunerative thickness, has been used to a considerable extent ever since. And more recently a much better portion of the bed has been opened, which is said to promise valuable results.

I will add that the year's explorations determined the boundaries of the southerly half of the coal basin of Michigan. Its extent to the north yet remains a problem, to be solved by the hardy pioneers and explorers who, for a few years past, have been to work so determinedly to bring into the markets of the world that rich and important portion of our State.

A mile below Owosso we passed the last of the white clearings, and made our night's encampment within Big Rock Reservation, twelve miles below that village and twenty from Saginaw.

We were now entered upon the wild and primeval forest, extending in a solitude unbroken by any human sight or sound, except the cabin of the natives and the hut of the Indian trader, to the shores of the Upper Lakes. For the first time I was startled in my slumbers by the "wolf's long howl," mingled with the hooting of an owl. Hitherto we had encountered at every few miles the cabin of some adventurous pioneer, for whom the forest had no terrors, but now we were alone with Nature. We could appreciate, in its full extent, the solitude, the boundlessness, the sublimity of this earliest of earth's offspring —the grand, old, untutored forest.

He who has only traversed woodlands, where at every few miles he meets a road leading to civilized belongings, knows little of the sense of awe inspired by a forest solitude that has never echoed to the woodman's ax, and where every footstep conducts only into regions more mysterious and unknown.

The woods of this part of Michigan comprised a very mingled growth. Oaks, not gnarled and spreading, as in more open lands, but at once massive and tall, and of centuries' age; the elm, the most graceful and majestic of trees of any land; the tulip, or whitewood, magnificent in size and height above even the Titans of the forest; the broad and green-leaved linden; the clean-bodied beech; the saccharine maples, so superb in the autumnal dresses—dyed like Joseph's coat, of many colors; the giant sycamore, ghost-like with its white, naked limbs—these are the common habitants of the forest; with other kinds, each possessing its peculiar grace, and a use and beauty almost unknown in other lands. We had reached, too, the latitude of the evergreens, which from hence, northward, to the farthest limits, became a distinguishing feature of the Michigan forests, imparting to them a more wonderful variety and majesty. Many a towering pine, 150 feet in height, now began to lift its head above its fellow-inhabiters, green through youth and age, through verdure and frosts. In many places the desert gloom was deepened by the dense and sombre shade of hemlocks, which bent their graceful spray to the earth, and almost shut out the light of day.

We took the measure of a white oak that stood at the border of the timbered land and the openings, which I here note as worthy of record. It was 35 feet in circumference,—nearly twelve feet diameter. A very respectable tree to be found out of California.

No kind of travel can be imagined more romantically charming than that of floating down the current of one of these large and rapid streams that water this portion of Michigan, piercing the heart of the trackless wilderness. The trees along the banks, instead of forming upright walls, exhibiting the naked trunks of the tall woodland monarchs, throw out thick branches to the sunlight, and bend gracefully to the water, as if to form a screen to the forest depths. Wild fowl were easily approached at almost every bend, affording an ample supply of fresh food, without the fatigue of hunting, and at night the camp is made beneath the leafy arches and lulled by the murmur of the stream or the roar of the wind in the pine tops.

Descending now a wider stream, with a smooth and gentle current, we passed successively the mouths of these long feeders to the greater stream—the Flint, the Cass, and the Tittabawassee—and on the 23d of September were opposite Saginaw City.

The last few miles had presented to our view the first irreclaimable marsh we had seen, and here there was plenty of it. The "city" occupied what seemed to be the only considerable elevation for many miles, being about thirty feet above the river.

The paper read to you in December by Mr. Jennison gave so full and minute a history of the settlement of the Saginaw Valley that I avoid repetition. I will only refresh your recollection by stating that the general government erected a fort here in 1820, and at the same time was established a center of Indian trade by the American Fur Company. The country had been visited by General Cass the year previous, and a treaty effected with the native chiefs, by which the lands of the Chippeway were ceded to the United States.

The oldest settlement for farming purposes was made about 1829, and the present site of Saginaw City laid out in 1835. This was just before the height of that mad fever of speculation into which so many plunged wildly, and which built in the wilderness many prospective cities, most of them existing only in the privileged future or on paper plats. Saginaw was one of the few that had good foundation for its celebrity; though as yet there had been little realization of its dreams of future greatness.

My notes record that the city comprised nearly fifty frame houses, four stores,—one a handsome dry goods and grocery store, on a large scale,—two warehouses and others in progress, a small church, two steam saw-mills, and in process of erection a large edifice to be called the "Webster House." This already made a sightly appearance, being 60x80 feet. All were of wood. The stockades of the fort still remained. They were some ten feet in height and surrounded about an acre. I believe that the abandonment of this fortress was occasioned by sickness among the troops in 1824, three-fourths of the garrison being ill at once of the fevers of the country. I can add but few to the list of names, illustrious in the Saginaw annals, already given you, but I met there, and I well remember, the Littles—Norman and William P.; Hiram Miller and James Frasier, Judge Riggs, Mr. Watson and Mr. Lyon;—men to whose energy and practical wisdom the valley owes so large a share of its prosperity. It has been stated that the mill known as Emerson's was erected in 1834. I have no recollection of any mill on the east side at the date I record, and the distinguished individual whose name it bears was, at that time, still delighting the happy citizens of Detroit by his *curt* and vehement eloquence. If three mills existed at Saginaw in the fall of 1837, they were certainly the only ones (with one exception) upon that river, as the "city" was the only settlement, if we except a few solitary cabins.

Where now the busy and populous cities of East Saginaw, Bay City, Wenona, and Portsmouth,—numbering their many thousands,—stretch almost into a continuous village, for twenty miles below, where the clangor of a hundred mills mingles with the puff of steamers and the scream of the locomotive, and a scene of industry, enterprise, and thrift is exhibited which few spots on this earth can rival, was at the period of my visit a solitude, resonant only with the grand, still voices of nature. Beyond the settlement, immediately about the "city" extended the untrimmed forest, as vast and almost as undisturbed as when to the eyes of De Tocqueville it was a "real desert."

Having advanced so far with my narrative, I ought, perhaps, in the manner of story-tellers,—though mine is no fiction,—to give a description of the personal appearance of my personages. Though nearly a generation has passed since the death of Dr. Houghton, no doubt most of those here present will remember the peculiar characteristics of one not easily forgotten;—his diminutive stature,—his keen blue eye,—his quick, active motions—the strong sense and energy of his words, when dealing with matters of science, and his indomitable perseverance in carrying out his designs. They will remember too, his love of fun, and his hilarious manner of telling a comic story. Of such he had a large fund, and a happy way of using, preserving a grave countenance until he got through, and then joining in the laugh with a peculiar cachinnation, so contagious as to be alone sufficient to set every one in a roar. He was no carpet knight of science, and on his geological excursions never flinched from hard work and exposure. On these occasions he usually wore a suit of gray, the coat having large side-pockets, and hanging loosely upon his small frame. The hands and feet were very small, but the latter were encased in boots that came almost to his thighs. His shocking bad hat was broad-brimmed and slouched, and his whole appearance was that of a battered, weather-worn back-woodsman.

I remember meeting him a few years later, when his scientific mind and energetic body had unraveled the mysteries of the mineral region of Lake Superior, and when the new fame of that region had called hosts of scientists to those yet wild shores. He had just landed at Eagle river, fresh from one of his rough expeditions, and was immediately hailed and surrounded by men known over the whole land for their scientific learning, to whose figures and bearing his own presented a striking contrast. Yet these men bowed to his superior knowledge—sagacity, I might term it—and one of them frankly said, in my hearing, that "the little, rough-looking doctor carried more true knowledge in his cranium than all the big heads put together."

I am the more reminded of the personal appearance of our party by an incident which occurred on the occasion of our return to Saginaw from a similar expedition in the following spring. We happened to be there at the time of the marriage of a sister of Mr. Little, and were among the *distinguished* guests invited to the wedding. Now, it chanced that one of the corps—I will not say who—had, with false economy, donned for the expedition a suit of old clothes, which proved to be unequal to the rough usage imposed upon them. When we reached Saginaw he was literally in tatters. A hole garnished each elbow, another became visible when either arm was raised. I have already alluded to the uncouth boots we wore. They were worn outside the pantaloons, and when not on river service the wide tops were turned down from the knee. The soles had uncommon width—the rule which regulated surveyors' boots being that these should project so far beyond the uppers that a mouse might run round on them. As the other members of the corps were in little better condition—none of us having a wedding garment—we would gladly have tendered our regrets, but the persuasive words of our host were not to be withstood. When I say that we went, I shall only add that, although an apparition so unusual among a company of well-dressed ladies and gentlemen might well have occasioned remark, the good sense and true politeness of our host and his guests saved us from mortification and left no cause to repent the venture.

As I have undertaken to describe the personnel of our party, I must not omit some further mention of its fourth member. Dash was of Spanish blood, and fond of the water. In the supply of our larder he performed the service of bringing to our boat the wild fowl that we occasionally shot, and which were abundant in these waters. Nature had furnished him with capacious paws, and no game could escape when once within their grip. He had a habit of coming upon game with his mouth wide open. On one occasion, seeing what he supposed to be a bird floating, he swam toward it, with mouth stretched as usual, and making a grab, his jaws came together, with a sudden and loud snap, over a piece of *foam*. Never was dog more puzzled. He looked about with an air of great amazement, and returned very sheepishly to be drawn into the boat. I will relate another anecdote, as showing how he improved in his scientific education. On a future occasion, being sent out for a wounded "diver," and not comprehending the resource of that active and sharp-witted fowl, on the dog's near approach the duck suddenly dived out of sight. Dash was in evident bewilderment, and unable to account for the sudden disappearance. But he was not a dog to be discouraged by so difficult a problem, and after the trick had been several times repeated a glimmer of the true state of the case entered his canine brain. This accomplished, he was equal to the emergency; for when diver again went down Dash followed, and both were for some time out of sight. But the dog came up victor, with the bird in his mouth.

As it was in our plan to inspect the salt springs on the Tittabawassee, we had forwarded to Saginaw from Detroit supplies of biscuit, relying upon the country for our pork. But none was to be had, and we were compelled to resume our journey as destitute of that important item as were the poor inhabitants themselves, who, with a large stock of merchandise, and the great name of city were awaiting the arrival of a schooner to obtain the common necessaries of life. It was to be hoped they were better off for intellectual food, for the place supported a public journal.

Having obtained an order for a more suitable canoe and a guide, we bade temporary adieu to Saginaw (September 25th), but were forced by a heavy rain to seek shelter at the house of a Mr. Gardner, a short distance above, where fortunately we procured a few pounds of pork. Here at evening a few neighbors dropped in, and we consumed the time pleasantly in tales of hunting adventures and fearful Indian murders!

The next day found us at a village of the Chippewas, sixteen miles from Saginaw. It consisted of a few lodges, mostly deserted. These differed from the wigwams I had elsewhere seen, being built larger, of strong poles, covered and also lined with bark, and of dimensions sufficient to accommodate, after the native fashion, a family of ten to twenty persons.

Several fields of maize, of about twenty acres each, constituted the cultivation. They were plowed and planted with regularity, and showed a good degree of agricultural advancement.

That dire disease, the small-pox, next to "fire-water," the most fatal gift of the whites, had made cruel havoc among this band, and nearly annihilated it. It was said that out of 500 or 600 not more than one-third were left.

We had secured for interpreter and guide a half-breed named Pierre Gruet, who spoke fluently the French, English, and Indian languages, and being desirous to obtain a canoe belonging to the chief, I went with the interpreter, late in the evening, to his lodge. This old chief bore the name of Ba-mos-ceya —"Dried in the sun." We sat with him an hour, though he and his family had gone to rest some time before. He seemed glad of the interruption, for the desolation of his band had made the old man lonely. Two of his three wives had died, and his lodge, about sixteen feet square, was occupied by him with his remaining wife and a large family of children.

He sat upon the bed in his blanket, naked to the waist, and talked with much energy on the subject nearest to his heart, for we did not interrupt him. He told how a strong disease had attacked the little band, until one by one they dropped away, and dying families left their dead unburied or covered with sand upon the beach. What greatly increased their distress was the refusal of the Government agents to assist them. Through fear of the disease they deserted the sufferers in their utmost want, when wholly unable to hunt, withholding the supplies so much needed, and that were due them by treaties, thus permitting the band to perish of sickness and starvation. To the shame of humanity this charge was too true.

At the forks of the Tittabawassee and Pine rivers we found several log cabins, one of which had been occupied as a trading post. They were inhabited by half-breeds. A Frenchman, with his Indian wives, occupied the trading-house. I saw there a young grand-daughter of old Ba-mos-ceya—a beautiful half-breed, with brilliant black eyes. Some of the girls of these Chippewa reserves had regular features that even among white beauties would be esteemed handsome. Altogether they were a fine-looking tribe. In general—notwithstanding the pleasing poetic fictions of poets and painters—it is rare to find much beauty of feature among the Indian women; though the men have often lithe, manly figures.

It was still common enough to find, along the shores of the great lakes and rivers, which had been so long the highways of these lawless rangers—the coureurs-de-bois—during the flourishing period of the fur trade, the cabin of a Canadian, who, with his Indian wife, or wives, and a troop of half-breed children, had completely adopted the native habits. He lived a half vagabond life, depending upon fishing and trapping, and sometimes finding employment as a voyageur.

A fair specimen of this class was our guide, Pierre Gruet. Of mixed French and Indian blood, it was hard to tell of which character he most partook. Equally at home in the Canadian cabin and the Indian wigwam, he seemed to be acquainted with every individual of either race that we met, and had a world of talk to unburden himself of whenever we passed a lodge or met a canoe. French joviality was in him united with savage willfulness. Well enough when confined to his profession of guide and interpreter; as a worker one American was worth a dozen of him.

Opposite these forks of the river had been "located" the village of Midland; but it was a village without inhabitants.

Ascending Salt river, we completed such examination of the springs as the heavy rains of the season permitted. The year following the State commenced boring for a salt well near this point, but after a season's labor, with favorable results, the many discouragements attending the work caused its abandonment. Not the least of these was the necessity of sending to Detroit, with long delays and great expense, for everything needed, even for the repairs of the augers. It was not until many years afterward, and when along these vast water-courses populous towns had sprung up, that the conclusions of science were brought to a full practical test by the establishment of salt wells on the Saginaw; with what success you are all familiar.

I will only say, that in strength and purity the salt of the Saginaw Valley is fully equal to the celebrated article so extensively made in Central New York; that it can be more cheaply manufactured; and, with the increasing facilities for market, is destined to be a very important part of the wealth of Michigan. Already Saginaw furnishes a supply one-half as large as the famous Onondaga.

We had now penetrated into the wilderness many miles beyond the most remote of the settlements of the Anglo-Saxon. Wild game was very abundant but we had not the time nor means to pursue it. Besides deer, we had often seen along the shore tracks of the elk, and sometimes of the moose, an animal almost extinct. Occasionally an otter raised his head above the water, or plunged into it from the bank. We found fresh marks of the labors of the beaver, that most interesting creature, once existing hereabouts in immense numbers, and now quite hunted to the death. We had shot a snow owl, and driven an eagle from his eyrie, and had been regaled with bear's meat, furnished us by the Indians.

How lovely to our unaccustomed eyes did nature appear in these solitudes. The first frosts had fallen, and tinged the maples with yellow, orange, and crimson; the beech was beginning to assume its russet coat, and the hickories their brilliant yellow, gleaming in the soft autumn sun like towers of gold! The river banks, densely wooded, and overrun by the scarlet ivy, were truly magnificent. In strong contrast with these brilliant colors of the autumn was the dark green—almost black in the shadow of the thick woodland—of the hemlock and fir, amid which shone the white bark of the silver birch; and above all reared the verdant heads of many a lofty pine.

As yet no lumberman's ax had sought to desecrate these glorious shades, nor the speculator to count the dollars that lay hid in the hearts of these mighty pines. But marvelous changes were in the not distant future. The traffic in lumber, in the region watered by the Saginaw and its tributaries, which had hardly its beginning a decade after the period I am describing, has in our day reached dimensions of which the wildest brain could not then have dreamed.

The main river, for twenty miles from the city of Saginaw to its mouth, is lined with mills. Mainly from this source of wealth numerous cities have sprung into vigorous existence, and 500,000,000 feet of lumber are sent annually by water and rail, south, east, and west, thousands of miles. Michigan pine is in demand, even within the sound of the lumber woods of Maine and Pennsylvania.

I recently visited Midland; not as before, by the slow progress of a little boat, propelled by hands, but in the magnificent cars of the Flint & Pere Marquette Railway, transported by the wings of steam. Where in 1837 was laid the wilderness city of Midland—a site without an inhabitant, and approachable only by the river—now stands the busy, prosperous county seat. A railway connects it with Saginaw, and is rapidly leaving its iron-shod feet far beyond, and joining hands with those vigorous pioneers on our western coasts, that are rapidly pushing on to the Straits of Mackinac. A street of shops, hotels, and other buildings, parallel with the river, forms the center of a town which covers, scatteringly, a mile square, with its churches, mills, and comfortable homes.

I passed forty miles further on to the northwest. The scene was a revelation. We are accustomed to regard the railroad as a creation that follows in the wake of man's progress. Here it is the pioneer, the precurser of civilization. It has pierced the heart of the hitherto unbroken wilderness; cutting for itself a narrow path, where on either side tall pines and other trees rise into a straight and lofty wall, admitting no prospect, except the narrow line of light that diminishes to a thread in the distance. No time has been allowed for clearings and the ordinary attendants of cultivation; these are all to follow. But sawmills have sprung up along its magic path, and line the road so thickly that, for nearly the whole distance, I might count an average of two mills to every mile; and all this accomplished within little more than a year.

Having accomplished our river explorations, we prepared for an expedition attended with some danger at that late season. This was a coasting voyage, from Saginaw to Port Huron, performed in the canoe which had been procured at the Chippewa reservation. It was a "dug-out" of wood, thirty feet long, but so narrow that, seated in the line of the center, we could use a paddle on either side. In this puny craft we were to undertake, in the middle of October, a lake journey of 150 miles.

We descended the Saginaw, which then exhibited few evidences of its coming greatness. East Saginaw had no existence. The village of Carrolton had been platted, four miles below Saginaw City, and consisted of a two-story log house, used years lang syne as a trading post. Portsmouth contained a steam mill, four log cabins and two board shanties, lying just above high water mark. Lower Saginaw—now Bay City—occupied somewhat higher ground, and boasted a pretty frame office used as a chapel, and two or more log huts. It was an infant of one year. In preparation was the frame of a hotel, which, in accordance with the usual custom of the flush times—already sadly gone—was large enough to accommodate half the county.

I must here mention a fact which I have never seen alluded to, viz., that we found at several places along the river, and sparingly on the Tittabawassee, apple trees. They produced agreeable fruit, and some were apparently of a century's growth. I will not speculate upon their origin; whether the seeds were brought here in the fruit and accidentally planted by the *coureurs de bois* from the French orchards of Canada, or whether they have a date still more remote. It is curious to note that some of the earliest travelers allude to orchards, then in profuse bearing, upon islands in the Detroit river. I leave the problem to the antiquary.

Emerging into the bay we encountered, at the Kawkawlin river, the last trace of civilized footsteps which we were to see for many days. It was a camp of United States surveyors, the Rousseaus, where we were entertained for the night with all the hospitality that it is common to find among those who dwell beyond the pale of "good society." Unfortunately for our appreciation of these good fellows, it subsequently appeared that the returns of these surveyors were so made up and false that entire townships had to be resurveyed by the Government. Corruption in places of public trust is not alone of modern origin.

Memorials of the native inhabitants were still frequent. Upon a swelling knoll over-looking the bay, in the midst of a tract of country from which all the timber had been burned, was a spot which seemed to have been dedicated to the evil Manitou. Here an altar was erected composed of two large stones several feet in height, with a flat top and broad base. About it were smaller stones which were covered with propitiatory offerings—bits of tobacco, pieces of tin, flints, and such articles of little value to the owner as with religious philosophy he dedicates to his Manitou. The place had witnessed, doubtless, many an Indian powwow.

In the interest of the scientific object of our tour I will here observe, that near Au Gres river we discerned, beneath the clear waters of the bay, a bed of gypsum. Subsequently an outcrop of this mineral was found on the neighboring land, and has been long quarried with profit.

Some islands lay several miles from shore, upon our approach to which immense numbers of gulls, that had here their secure retreat and breeding places, wheeled about us, uttering loud cries. The young ones were easily caught, and we found a few eggs. Here also sport of an unusual kind awaited us. In the waves that broke among the boulders along the shore sturgeon were gamboling. So intent were they upon their play, and so ignorant of man's superior cunning, that, springing in among them, after a vigorous tussle we threw one ashore, with no other aid than our hands. It stocked our larder for several days with its variety of meat—fish, fowl, and Albany beef.

Of our further voyaging, until we rounded Point aux Barques, I have nothing to note beyond the usual adventures and delays that attend mariners in so perilous a craft, upon the treacherous waves of Saginaw Bay. The toils of the day were compensated bv the sweetest of slumbers, when, having supped on pork and hard bread, wrapped each in his blanket, we fell asleep beneath the soft influence of the Pleiades.

At the point alluded to the coast is iron-bound, affording no harbor, and being thickly wooded with evergreens its aspect was forbidding and gloomy. Add to this that the waves are incessantly lashing the rocks, which receive the whole fury of the sea, whether the wind be from the lake on the right, or the broad bay on the left. This action of the waters has caused channels to be worn through large masses of the friable sandstone, which, tumbling into the lake, form small islets.

In doubling the cape the voyager is struck with the singular appearance of two projecting masses, detached from the main, and covered with timber. They bear close resemblance to the bows of vessels, with the hulls exposed down to the keel. The bowsprit and sides are nearly perfect. They are about fifty feet in the beam, and sixteen to twenty feet in height. Nature seems often to delight in such mimicry of the works of man. The name which was bestowed by the French, at an early day, continues still significant of the mimic resemblance—Point aux Barques.

Near White Rock, on the Lake Huron coast, fifty miles from its outlet, at the boundary of the then surveyed portion of Sanilac county, we found a settler—the first we had met since leaving the Saginaw river. Mr. Allen had been here three months, and, with five hands, was erecting a saw mill on a dashing little brook that had nearly swamped us in entering. He had no neighbor, but the mistress of the house informed us they had been all summer in expectation and promise of the settlement, at White Rock City, of two hundred families. The annals of this place constitute one of those chapters of romance of which the records of 1835 and 1836 are so replete. Before the rage of real estate speculation was at its height, and all through that wild fever we had known of "White Rock City." Maps, executed in the highest style of the typographical art—displayed in hotel bar rooms and other places, where congregated the thousand seekers after the fortune that courted the happy possessor of valuable lots and water privileges,—had announced its unrivaled situation and advantages. They depicted the magnificent harbor, at the mouth of a large stream, into which steamboats were entering. Saw-mills were converting the forests into houses. Around the public square clustered a court house, churches, and other public buildings, not omitting the inevitable bank, and the air of prosperity which pervaded the place was evident at a glance. Auctioneers had sounded its praises, and struck off its lots at fabulous prices to eager buyers. None of the rising cities for which Michigan had become famous had so wide a celebrity, and distributed stock so liberally. And now we were to see, with our own eyes, this western marvel, or at least its ruins. A large white boulder in the lake marked the entrance and gave name to this modern Karnac. We found the entering river—it hardly admitted our log canoe. Harbor there was none. Churches, houses, mills, people—all were a myth. A thick wilderness covered the whole site. Even those traces of advancing civilization—the surveyor's marks—were wanting. Excepting Mr. Allen, it was forty miles to the nearest inhabitant. Where the public square had been depicted stood several large beech trees. On one of these we carved the names of our party, who were thus registered, for the benefit of future visitors, as the first guests of White Rock Hotel.

It may serve more fully to show the adventurous character of our expedition if I close this narrative by some detail of our last day's experience—perhaps not a very unusual one in canoe navigation. It may serve, too, to illustrate the risks incurred by our daring chief; sometimes too rashly, and, alas! once too often! On the night of October 11th, we encamped twenty-two miles from Fort Gratiot, and congratulated ourselves on the near conclusion of our journey. For this there was reason, as our provisions were gone and the weather was stormy. Here a hard wind detained us a day, and the morning succeeding showed the waters risen several feet, and rolling in huge breakers. To proceed by water seemed impossible, but there was no traveled road to Black river, and our provisions were exhausted. For several days we had been on rations, and our poor canine friend, who at the outset could not eat duck meat, was glad to swallow a wing—feathers and all. A council of war decided to trust once more to the boisterous waves, which our frail craft had hitherto borne us over in safety. Raising the boat upon rollers, we packed in tent and bags,—the latter now heavy with specimens,—so arranged as to make three partitions, established Dash in his place, while the rest took each his position. Thus appointed, we ran rapidly out into the water, leaped aboard and pulled from the land. The launch was neatly effected, but danger was ahead. Encountering the breakers, we at once shipped a sea, which completely filled the foremost division. This was occupied by the doctor, who cried, "We are swamped!" But a pail stood ready to each hand. The doctor bailed, while the others pulled stoutly at their paddles, and we were soon beyond the breakers. Return was now impossible. The thermometer was at freezing point, and we received a ducking from many a white cap that chilled us to the marrow. Our little boat was a morsel for the waves, and when one of those huge swells—the three sisters, as sailors call them—lifted us up, we seemed hurrying inevitably to the shore, and when it receded its crest concealed everything but the sky and the watery horizon. We could not raise sail without danger of running under, and many a wave crest must be beaten back with our paddles, and our pails were seldom idle. But "the longest day will have an end," and after five hours' endurance, wet, exhausted, and hungry, we landed at the lighthouse. Thence we descended to Black river, two miles below, where the village of Port Huron was in the second year of its infancy. From here a steamboat conveyed us to Detroit. Thus ended our adventurous journey "by flood and fell."

I have only to add, that if my long-drawn gossip has contributed to your entertainment, or given any clearer impression of the Michigan of thirty-four years ago, it will not have proved altogether idle.

# THE MOUND-BUILDERS IN MICHIGAN.

BY HENRY GILLMAN, OF DETROIT.

**Read before the Detroit Scientific Association in 1874.**

Throughout the region of the Great Lakes abundant evidence, often of the most interesting character, of the presence in bygone ages of that peculiar race known as the mound-builders, is constantly being brought to light. And our own State of Michigan, from the low monotonous shores of Lake Erie to the rocky cliffs of Lake Superior, has contributed, in many directions, some of the most remarkable relics and monuments of a people whose cranial affinities and evidently advanced civilization totally separate them from the North American Indian, and ally them to the ancient race of men who inhabited Brazil in the remote past.

Along the Detroit and Rouge rivers those monuments, in the shape of the well-known mounds, were at one time not infrequent; but in numerous instances, and even within our present city limits, they have been destroyed, often without their true character being recognized, and thus large amounts of valuable relics have fallen into ignorant hands, and have finally been forever lost. Even those works which remain are fast disappearing before the march of modern improvement.

Indian tradition says that these mounds along our river were built in ancient times by a people of whom they (the Indians) know nothing, and for whom they have no name; that the mounds were occupied by the Tuetle Indians, and subsequently by the Wyandottes, but were constructed long before their time. These facts were ascertained by me in the course of some investigations which I made several years ago, and at that time I further learned that the Tuetle Indians had been absorbed by the Six Nations, and if any survive it is there they must be looked for.

In this connection it is proper to state that I have lately been informed, through the instrumentality of Prof. Henry, of the Smithsonian Institution, of the result of some inquiries made at my suggestion in regard to the name Tuetle. The conclusion arrived at is that the word Tuetle is probably a corruption of Tutelo, a tribe "admitted as a younger member of the confederacy of the Six Nations, about the middle of the last century;" and that the Tuteloes "are believed to have migrated from Virginia northward, to lands assigned them on the Susquehanna by the Six Nations; but very little is known of their early history and migrations." An interesting paper on the Tuteloes was read by the Rev. J. Anderson, before the American Philological Association, in July, 1871. Reporting Mr. H. Hale's discoveries, this assigns the Tuteloes to the Dakotan and not the Iroquois stock, and gives an account of Mr. Hale's visit to Nikungha, the last survivor of the tribe of the Tuteloes, and who has since died at the age of 106 years.

The establishment of the identity of the Tuetles with the Tuteloes, and their residence on these mounds and along the Detroit river, is not only an interesting addition to our local history, but is of special value in view of its tending to sustain Mr. Hale's opinion (opposed to the conclusions of others regarding the Dakotan migration) that "in former times the whole of what is now the central portion of the United States, from the Mississippi nearly to the Atlantic, was occupied by Dakotan tribes, who have been cut up and gradually exterminated by the intrusive and more energetic Algonquins and Iroquois."

The relics exhumed from the mounds consist of stone implements, such as axes, chisels, scrapers, arrow-heads, spear-points and knives, fragments of pottery of a great variety of pattern, including the favorite corn pattern so frequently seen in such connection, from the Northern Lakes to the Gulf of Mexico; and the bones of man, generally much decayed, and exhibiting other indications of antiquity. From the fragments of burned bones and charcoal found, it would appear that in the earlier interments cremation was practised.

The tibiæ present, in an extreme degree, the peculiar flattening or compression pertaining to platycnemic men. In the fourth annual report of the Peabody Museum of Archæology and Ethnology, attention is called to this, some of the relics which I collected here having been donated to the museum by the Hon. Robert C. Winthrop, to whom I had presented them. The curator, Prof. Wyman, says: "Of the tibiæ of forty individuals from the mounds of Kentucky, one-third presented this flattening to the extent that the transverse did not exceed 0.60 of the fore and aft diameter. The most extreme case was from the mound on the River Rogue, in Michigan, in which the transverse was only 0.48. In the most marked case mentioned by Broca, viz.: In the old man from the Cro-Magnon (France), it was, as deduced from his figures, 0.60." Prof. Wyman draws attention to certain resemblances in this bone to the same bone in the ape, adding: "In some of the tibiæ the amount of flattening surpasses that of the gorilla and chimpanzee, in each of which we found the short 0.67 of the long diameter, while in the tibiæ from Michigan it was only 0.48."

Subsequent to this (in 1870), I discovered in adjacent mounds several instances in which the compression of the tibiæ was developed to even a greater extreme. Two remarkable cases of this peculiarity were afforded by tibiæ taken by me from a mound on the Detroit river. In one of these unique specimens the transverse diameter of the shaft is 0.42, and in the other 0.40 of the antero-posterior diameter, exceeding, I believe, any platycnemism which has been observed before or since in any part of the world. In communicating these facts to the American Naturalist, not long afterwards, I claimed that the last mentioned case "may be considered as the flattest tibia on record." (See American Naturalist, October, 1871). Both of these bones are strongly marked with the saber-like curvature, also a characteristic of the chimpanzee, as are likewise many others of the tibiæ from the vicinity. The majority of the tibiæ present the flattening, which is an exception to the facts as noted in other sections of the United States, where it is supposed to pertain to "only about one-third of all the individuals observed." In fact it is an exception to find a tibiæ from our mounds along the Detroit destitute of this peculiarity; and where one is found it is generally of later burial and consequently of less ancient origin.

A few years ago the greater part of the large circular mound in the vicinity of Fort Wayne was removed and most important results were obtained. Eleven human skeletons were exhumed; a large number of burial vases; stone implements in great variety and of superior workmanship, consisting chiefly of axes, fleshers, spear-points, arrow heads, chisels, drillers and sinkers, pipes; a peculiar implement of unknown use, formed of an antler, with duplicate perforations at its thickest end; and two articles manufactured from copper,—one the remains of a necklace, formed of a number of beads strung on a two-stranded cord, a few fragments of which remained sufficiently preserved to satisfy me that it was made from vegetable fiber, probably from the basswood (*Tilia Americana*, L.); the other article of copper consisted of a needle, or borer, several inches in length, quadrangular at the base, and well-wrought. One of the skulls is remarkable for it diminutive size, though adult, its capacity being only 56 cubic inches, or less than 76 per cent of that of the average Indian cranium, which is given as 84 cubic inches by Morton & Meigs, the minimum observed by them being 69 cubic inches. The measurement by Morton of 155 Peruvian crania gives 75 cubic inches for the average bulk of the brain (no greater than that of the Hottentot or New Hollander), the maximum being 101 cubic inches, while the minimum sinks to 58, the smallest in a series of 641 measured crania; and yet you will perceive this is exceeded in diminutiveness by this crania from the Detroit river. The average volume of the brain in the Mexican is 79 cubic inches, while in a series of measurements of 24 crania from the Kentucky mounds it is found to be 84. The Teutonic crania gives the average of 92 cubic inches. Thus it is seen that while the great volume of the brain is indicative of power of some sort, the opposite is not always to be regarded as proof of a degraded condition. In short, quality may here, as in other instances, compensate for deficiency in quantity. So we find the cranium of the Peruvian, who possessed a high degree of civilization and refinement, equaled in capacity by that of the New Hollander or Hottentot, while it is exceeded by that of the degraded, brutal North American Indian to the extent of nine cubic inches. Still the crania of the mound-builders, it must be acknowledged, present characteristics which, in the language of Foster, "indicate a low intellectual organization, little removed from that of the idiot." And this skull from the Detroit river mound must be placed in the same category. Prof. Wyman, in the sixth annual report of the Peabody Museum, in referring to this skull, goes on to say: "In ordinary skulls the ridges of the temporal muscles on the two sides of the head are separated by a space of from three to four inches, seldom less than two, while in the Detroit mound skull this space measures only three-quarters of an inch; and in this respect it presents the same conditions as the skull of a chimpanzee." It is interesting to remember that "the flattest tibiæ on record," already referred to, were taken by me from this mound; and all the tibiæ had more or less sabre-like curvature associated with the platycnemism.

It remains for me in this connection to call attention to the fact that the perforation of the humerus is another remarkable characteristic which I have observed to pertain to those platycnemic men of our region. I refer to the communication of the two fossæ situated at the lower end of the humerus. This is of great interest, as this peculiarity is most frequently met with in the Negro race; it has also been observed in the Indian, and, though not always present, is quite general in the apes, while it is very seldom seen in the white races.

One of the most remarkable and extensive series of tumuli which are known to exist in this part of the lake region it was my good fortune to discover in the year 1872. I refer to the mounds situated at the head of the St. Clair river, and at the foot of Lake Huron. They extend in continuous succession for about one mile and one-half northward, as I have satisfactorily determined. Strange to say, those who lived in their immediate vicinity knew nothing of their character. A paper which I wrote on the subject, embodying the principal facts, subsequently formed a part of the sixth annual report of the Peabody Museum of Archæology and Ethnology, and was afterward copied into several of the leading periodicals of the country, including the American Journal of Science. The general publicity thus given the discoveries precludes the necessity of more than a passing notice here. The numerous mounds, with few exceptions, are of similar character, having been largely used for burial purposes. One of them presented some features distinctive of the "refuse heaps" of our Atlantic coast, and of the north of Europe, a wide area at one end being covered with a solid crust of black ashes from eighteen inches to two feet thick, containing the bones of various animals used for food, broken pottery, and stone implements. The relics from the burial mounds, in addition to those usually found, consisted of an extraordinarily large number of broken stone hammers of the rudest kind, a plate of mica five by four inches, and two necklaces, one made of small bones, mostly cervical vertebræ, stained a beautiful green color resembling enamel, the other composed of the teeth of the moose, finely perforated at the roots, alternating with well-wrought beads of copper, and the bones of birds stained green as in the first instance. In the mound containing the last mentioned ornaments several interments had been made, and the decayed stump of a scarlet oak (*Quercus cocinea*, Wang.) two feet in diameter surmounted the summit, the roots spreading above the contents in all directions. All the tibiæ noticed by me exhibited the compression characterizing platycnemic men. In dwelling on this circumstance, in connection with my previous discoveries in the same direction, I made the remark, "I cannot but believe, from what I have seen that future investigation will extend the area in which this type of bone is predominant to the entire region of the Great Lakes, if not of the Great West; or, in other words, that at least our northern mound-builders will be found to have possessed this trait in the degree and to the extent denoted;" which prediction recent discoveries in Wisconsin and Iowa would seem in a fair way of fulfilling.

On the west bank of the Black river, a tributary of the St. Clair, is a burial mound, which contributed some unusual features. A road having been cut through the easterly slope of this mound, the consequent excavation revealed a large number of human bones, pottery, stone implements and other relics. Stone lance or spear heads of great length were taken out, two of them being each over a foot long, and one sixteen inches in length. But the most interesting feature of this repository of relics was a grave, the interior of which was described to me as being lined with pottery similar to that of which the vases, pots, etc., are formed. This was so peculiar a circumstance, no other instance of the kind having come to my knowledge, that, at first, I considered the statement highly improbable. But I availed myself of an opportunity of visiting the locality, not long after, to make a special examination. Though the construction of the road through the mound had destroyed most of the original features, and scattered a multitude of valuable remains, further excavation revealed a considerable quantity of fragments of the pottery above referred to as having been said to have lined the grave. This certainly appeared to confirm the statement. I found this pottery to be of rather a coarser description than usual, and marked abundantly with the cord pattern, known to be of such frequent employment, but in this instance made with a large cord or small rope. The side so ornamented was invariably concave, while the other side was convex, and unsmoothed, different from any other specimens I have seen elsewhere. So rough and unfinished was the unornamented side that it had every appearance of having been pressed upon the ground while yet plastic, and sand, and even gravel, adhering to it, confirmed this impression. After having viewed the evidences I had no longer any great difficulty in receiving the statements previously made. My chief informant was perfectly uneducated in such matters, and even attributed the peculiar formation lining the sides of the grave to the coagulation and final hardening of blood, accounting for its presence in such large quantities by presuming a battle to have been fought in the vicinity. The few fragments of human bones, which, on this occasion were exhumed with the pottery, were in the last stages of decay.

Time will not permit me to speak of a number of other mounds which have come under my observation. A remarkable series of those works occurs at Beaver harbor, on Beaver island, in Lake Michigan. A very limited and hurried examination which I made of the group in 1871, sufficiently satisfied me as to their ancient origin. They appeared to be of the same character as the mounds on the Detroit river and those at the foot of Lake Huron. They were probably largely used for purposes of sepulture. From the success attending my brief labors it would appear that the more valued relics of the mound-builders have been here deposited in unusual abundance. Highly wrought stone implements, many of them being of uncommonly skillful workmanship, are frequently encountered. They are formed of a great variety of stone, such as diorite, or greenstone, sienite, shale and chert, many of them being finely polished. One of the handsomest stone axes I ever saw was taken out at this place. It is made from sienite, a favorite material for this implement, and the handicraft displayed in its construction is of the highest order.

I shall close with a short account of the recent discoveries of

### ANCIENT MINING AT ISLE ROYALE, LAKE SUPERIOR.

In the year 1872 some of the most remarkable of the ancient works yet encountered were brought to light by a party of explorers on Isle Royale. Some idea of their extent may be arrived at from the statement of a gentleman well known in mining interests, who is at present engaged in developing the mineral resources of the place, and who calculated that, at one point alone, on three sections of land toward the north side of the island, the amount of labor performed by those ancient workmen far exceeds that of one of our oldest copper mines on the south shore of Lake Superior, a mine which has now been constantly worked with a large force for over twenty years. This may well appear almost incredible when we take into account the disadvantages under which these primitive miners must have labored, and all the advantages comprehended by our present civilization, including the various improvements in mining appliances and the vast resources of modern science.

Isle Royale is situated about fifty miles from the south shore of Lake Superior, and from fifteen to twenty miles from its north shore, and lies off Ontario, Canada, to which geographically it would seemingly belong; or one might suppose that belonging to the United States, it pertained to Minnesota rather than to Michigan. Consequently, the mistake of supposing it to belong to Canada is frequently made. The island is nearly fifty miles in length, varying from five to nine in breadth, having, in most parts of the coast line, an exceedingly ragged, rocky shore, abounding in deep inlets and small harbors or coves. A large number of islands and rocky inlets lie off the main island, particularly in a northeast and southwest direction—the line of its greatest axis—to which direction the rocky elevations of the island, in some places rising more than 700 feet above the level of Lake Superior, correspond in a remarkable degree. Nearly the entire of the island is covered with a growth of timber, more or less dense, consisting of the species usually composing our northern forest.

The works, generally pits of from ten to thirty feet in diameter, and from twenty to sixty feet in depth, are found scattered throughout the island, wherever examined being sunk through the few feet of superincumbent drift, where it exists, into the amygdaloid copper-bearing rock. They invariably are on the richest veins; and the intelligence displayed in the tracing and following of the veins when interrupted, etc., has elicited the astonishment of all who have witnessed it—no mistakes having apparently been made in this respect. These excavations are connected underground, drains being cut in the rock to carry off the water. Stopes 100 feet in length are found. A drain sixty feet long presented some interesting features; having been cut through the surface drift into the rock, it had evidently been covered for its entire length by timbers felled and laid across. When opened, the timbers had mostly decayed, and the center portions had sunk into the cavity, filling it for nearly its entire length with the rotted wood.

At a deep inlet known as McCargoe's Cove, on the north side of the island, excavations such as are described extend in almost a continuous line for more than two miles, in most instances the pits being so close together as barely to permit their convenient working. Even the rocky islets off the coast have not escaped the observation of those ancient miners, and where bearing veins of copper are generally worked. The stone hammers, or mauls, weighing from ten to even thirty pounds, the chief tool with which the labor was performed, have been found by cart-loads. They are either perfect or are broken from use, and the fragments of large numbers of them are found intermingled with the *debris* on the edge of the pits, or at their bottom. These mauls are occasionally found grooved for the affixture of the handle, but are oftener without this adaptation. Tools made of copper, and consisting principally of chisels and knives, have been taken from such of the pits as have been explored. Arrow-heads of copper have also been picked up, both in the vicinity of the pits and scattered over the island, at the surface, as if lost in the chase. The tools, though injured from oxidation, appear to have been of fair workmanship, and were evidently hardened, apparently through the agency of fire. With the exception of the stone hammers, no other tools formed of stone have been observed. A large portion of a wooden utensil, shaped like a bowl, was taken from the *debris*, charcoal, etc., at the bottom of a pit. This vessel has possibly been used in bailing water from the excavation. It must originally have been about three feet in diameter, and from its appearance something of the rude character of the tool employed in shaping it could be gathered. The fragment was not of uniform thickness throughout; the wood having been more easily removed when working in certain directions, *e. g.*, when cutting with the grain, the vessel was thinner in those portions.

Having seen the remark that the copper tools of the ancient miners are of rough and not polished exterior, inferences being drawn therefrom as to their rude construction, I wish to say that, having examined a large number of those tools, I believe this roughness to have been caused mostly by corrosion. In many cases this is quite palpable, the original surface being apparent in places, and evidently confirming the fact that at least the external faces of the tool were originally approximately smooth, if not polished.

Excellent arguments have been advanced by Mr. Foster to prove that the mound-builders understood the art of fusing copper, and that, at least, some of their copper tools were made by being cast or moulded. From the method pursued by this people in mining, in which the agency of fire bore so prominent a part, it would seem improbable they could have long remained ignorant of the fusibility of the metal; yet in most cases the evidence appears conclusive that the rudely-fashioned tool was simply wrought by being beaten into the desired form, often in the roughest manner. It is possible the two classes of tools here referred to may mark two distinct eras in the history of this manufacture, and that the moulded tool designates an advance from the primitive method of hammering the metal into shape. Some of the copper heads taken from the "mounds" in Michigan display a wonderful degree of neatness in the manipulation of the metal, the junction of the bead being in many cases almost imperceptible; yet the agency of fire was here evidently not employed.

The pits which have been examined, by being cleaned out, invariably had on top a large deposit, mostly of vegetable matter, the accumulations of many a fall of the leaf, beneath which lay a thick bed of charcoal and mud mingled with fragments of copper-bearing rock. Besides this, they were partly filled with water. The removal of the contents was consequently very dirty work. The method of mining pursued by those people was evidently, on turning back the overlying drift, to heat the rock through the aid of fire; then, when by the application of water the rock was sufficiently disintegrated, to attack and separate it with their great stone mauls. What a slow, wearisome process! Even with a large force constantly engaged in this labor, it must have taken a long series of years to accomplish the work exhibited; and, if those people withdrew during the lengthy winter season, as has been supposed, it would more than double the period required. An experienced mining captain computed that two hundred of those men, with their rude methods, could barely be equivalent to two of our skilled miners. Though no exact estimate can now be made as to the length of time occupied in the prosecution of those extensive works, more or less interrupted as they undoubtedly must have been, yet it does not seem too much to estimate hundreds of years for their accomplishment.

As to the time which has elapsed since the mines have ceased to be worked by this by-gone race, a more definite approximation can be reached. Various careful estimates have placed this period from seven hundred to eight hundred years. I cannot but conclude that since the last work was done on those pits, several generations of trees have arisen and disappeared. The remains of trees older by hundreds of years than the oldest of our present timber are found in and on the sides of the pits. The present growth of forest covers, unbroken, those excavations and the *debris* surrounding them; all the timber now growing on them being of the same character as that covering the adjacent land, and which is now in process of supplanting by what is known as our "second growth." The late General Harrison, President of the United States, acknowledged to have been remarkably skilled in woodcraft as well as in warfare, in his notes on the Ohio mounds, has made some valuable and suggestive remarks on the relation observed by the different species of forest growth. Lyell, in his "Antiquity of Man," quotes the passage with further and approving remarks. As at Isle Royale, therefore, the species of the present forest covers equally the excavations and the adjoining land, no difference being observable in the growth, we may form some slight conception of the period which must have elapsed before, through the regular rotation, the present condition of things was brought to pass. Trees, from two to four feet in diameter, are now growing in the pits, on their sides, and on the tumuli formed of the excavated *debris* which surround them. In one case, the partially decayed stump of a red oak (probably *Quercus coccinea,* Linn.) was found on the tumulus at the edge of a pit. This tree had not been blown down, but had grown and decayed where the stump stood. A large proportion of the rotted wood surrounded it, only the red, interior portion of the stump remained sound. A careful enumeration of the annual rings composing this red, undecayed center of the tree, gave as the result the number of 384. If to this be added 200 rings, as representing the decayed outer portion of the stump, and not considered an overestimate., we have 584 years as the period of its growth. To this will have to be added the number of years which a tree with the durability of the wood of this species takes to reach the stage of decay here exhibited; and some years may also be allowed for the time which may have elapsed before it commenced growing on its peculiar site. So that the placing this period at from 700 to 800 years, as already given, may not be far from the truth. But it must be remembered that this does not prevent the period of the desertion of the works being placed back at twice or even three times that distance. In other words it only proves that the pits had not been worked within the time mentioned. On removing this stump the *debris* underlying it was found to consist of the usual angular fragments of copper-bearing rock, thrown out from the adjoining pit, and with which were intermingled a large number of stone hammers, some perfect, others fractured from use, and more interesting still, a knife, made of copper. Pine-trees (*Pinus strobus*) of the present forest, in which 380 annual rings have been counted, have frequently been cut on the tumuli.

From another pit, beneath a third deposit of vegetable matter, the remains of the skeleton of a deer were exhumed. The bones were so decayed, however, that they crumbled to pieces, and it was only through the undecayed portions of an antler that the animal was recognized. It had evidently fallen into the pit long after it had been deserted, and, unable to escape, had perished. Another interesting relic consists of a sheet-like piece of copper, which had apparently been exposed to the action of fire and then been partially hammered into a shape approximating to a bowl-like utensil. This, too, exhibits the character of the copper generally sought by those men. It is manifest from the working of the veins, that those miners followed the deposits of sheet-like copper, which varied from a quarter of an inch to an inch in thickness, rejecting as unmanageable the fragments of rock which contained even large-sized nuggets of the metal. The latter are found in large quantities in the rubbish forming the tumuli at the mouths of the pits, as well as in the excavations themselves, where, mingled with considerable amounts of charcoal, they seemingly had been pushed behind those miners as they advanced in the exploration of the vein, the walls of which were generally left unbroken.

At an indentation of the coast on the south side of the island, where a stream about forty feet in width had cut a channel through the rocks and formed quite a fall of water, was discovered what is taken to be the site of the town, or the habitations of these people. It occupies an elevated slope, giving an extensive view of Lake Superior and overlooking the intervening point of land which makes the little bay an excellent harbor. The remains consist of a series of shallow excavations, generally about four feet in depth, and occupying the successive terraces of the slope. Some of these pits are circular, others are quadrangular, and they vary from ten to thirty feet in diameter. Indications suggest that timber or bark was used in their construction, the soil being thrown up around them to a sufficient height. But time did not permit a satisfactory examination of this interesting localitv, which, with other points on the island, it is hoped will afford, on a thorough exploration, many valuable facts connected with the life of this remarkable people. They doubtless shipped the copper, the object of their toil, to the south shore of Lake Superior, the wonderful metal finding its way thence to other parts of the country, as is testified by the articles of copper found in the burial-places of the mound-builders. This point, therefore, was well selected as a town site. The good landing, the admirable harbor, the abundant stream and fall of water, the sheltered and yet commanding hillside, which enabled them to watch the return and departure of their copper-laden flotillas, were all strong recommendations even to those semi-savage inhabitants.

Singular to say, up to this time the bones of man have not been met with on the island. Some contend that, during so long a lapse of time, they have completely disappeared through decay. But this conclusion will hardly be accepted as satisfactory. It is difficult to believe but that, of a population so crowded as is implied by the extensive excavations on Isle Royale, some must have died during even the periodic occupation of the island, and have been buried there; and it is to be hoped that the explorations in process of being made will result in the discovery of human remains. These will doubtless identify this people with the mound-builders, whose monuments are so widely distributed through our country. The conformation of the bones of this race, and especially the cranium, as has been already remarked, widely separate them from the North American Indian, and ally them rather with the ancient inhabitants of Brazil; the skull being orthocephalic, *i. e.*, occupies a position between the Indian cranium, which is brachycephalic, and the Teutonic, which is dolicocephalic. Their characteristics suggest a people, who, though not of any great intellectual development, are yet capable of patient endeavor, and the unremitting toil which is devoted to the amelioration of life through the improvement of its surroundings, and are not devoid of an ambition which, however humble, places them above the Indian in the scale of humanity.

It is also remarkable that the discoveries of the remains at the settlements on the south shore of Lake Superior have never included human bones—so far as I am aware—but have been confined chiefly to excavations, copper tools, and stone hammers. It is possible those men may have had some superstitious belief which led to the removal of their dead to their burial mounds further south.

Of the excavations on the small islands lying off Isle Royale, an interesting example was discovered by me on the rocky islet which, for the purpose of distinguishing it, I have named, from its general outline, Triangle Island, it being hitherto unnamed on any of the maps. This island lies off the southwest end of Isle Royale, and is a sandstone rock with very little soil on any part of it, and only a few small trees or brushes at one end. The sides of the island rise abruptly, and there is no landing for even small boats, except for a short space on the northeast side, and also in a cleft-like indentation on the south side. This last mentioned landing has much the appearance of its natural conditions having been improved by artificial means; a gradual slope, sixty feet in length, by about twenty feet wide, leads down to the lake, the rock being generally smooth throughout. Small boats could easily be hauled out here, particularly with the aid of timbers laid for the purpose. Near this, and all along it, wherever are indications of copper mines, are the circular pits of the ancient miners. Though of small size, from two to five feet in diameter, and about as many feet deep, they are remarkably distinct. At this place the rock is mostly as level as the floor of a room, and the well-like pits are immediately perceived to be the work of human agency. Though careful search was made, no relics were met with other than the angular fragments of the rock broken off by the usual methods pursued by those rude miners. The fragments occasionally contained copper.

One of the smaller pits, a little over two feet in diameter and nearly two feet deep, had a large slab of rock covering its mouth. It required two men to remove this. We found this pit more than half full of the angular fragments above alluded to, but though emptied of its contents nothing further was encountered, to our disappointment, as from indications we hoped to find this the repository of some valuable relics. Had any tools or other utensils been deposited here, as a place of safety, they had long since disappeared; probably decaying through the lapse of ages. From appearances, and the isolated character of the island, I am inclined to think that mine were the first hands to rest on those objects since the departure of the primitive workmen.

At two places, at each end of the circular pits, the copper veins in the wall-like cliff had been attacked and partly excavated. The rock is discolored as if from the action of fire, and at the base of the more central point the sandstone is considerably hollowed. All those works exhibit the same roughish surface, totally unlike that produced by the action of water.

Immediately at the inner end of the southern landing, already described, is a marked depression, occupying nearly the center of the island, and presenting some indications of artificial origin. But about thirty-five feet northwestward of the head of the landing occurs a more remarkable excavation. This is of rectangular form, twenty-five feet long by twenty feet wide. It is filled with water, as are most of the pits. It may not be uninteresting to state in this connection that I found the rare fern *Botrychium lunaria* (Swartz) flourishing, and rather abundant on the exposed rock of this island. It grows in tufts of *Potentilla tridentata* (Ait.), grass, and other dwarfed plants.

The discoveries on Isle Royale throw a new light on the character of the mound-builders, giving us a totally different conception of them, and dignifying them with something of the prowess and spirit of adventure which we associate with the higher races of man. The copper, the object of the mining, to be available, must, in all probability, have been conveyed in vessels, great or small, across a stormy and treacherous sea, whose dangers are formidable to us now, being dreaded by even our largest craft, and often proving their destruction. Leaving their homes, these men dared to face the unknown—to brave the hardships and perils of the deep and of the wilderness, actuated by an ambition which we, to-day, would not be ashamed to acknowledge.

In contemplating the facts involved, many questions are naturally suggested. How did this people become aware of those mineral deposits at so isolated a point? How did these men become present in such large numbers as is implied by the extent of the works discovered? What was the character of their vessels or sailing craft, if such were employed? How did so great a population support life in such circumscribed limits while still carryng on their mining operations? Did they make a permanent settlement, their families abiding with them, or were they simply migratory, visiting the island and returning as occasion offered? Did any or all of them remain throughout the severe northern winter, or was the work prosecuted during the summer months only? These are questions not easily answered.

It is evident that such extensive operations as are here described required a system and an organization of no mean order for those days. The vast extent, and the method of their labors, would seem to imply that they were of no desultory or intermittent character. The island probably abounded in game. The deer, caribou, bear, and smaller mammals, were doubtless not scarce, while the waters were alive with many varieties of fish, thus affording food in considerable quantity. The caribou, long extinct here, gives evidence of his former presence in the horns which are sometimes found; and I have now in my possession two interesting relics—the larger portions of the antlers of this animal, much decayed and gnawed by rodents—which were picked up at two separate points on the island. However, we have hitherto supposed that the mound-builders were essentially an agricultural people, largely dependent on cereals for subsistance. If grain food was used by them, as is probable, it was, most likely, transported to the island, in sufficient supply, from a more southern latitude. The so-called "Garden Beds," covering so wide an area of the St. Joseph river and Grand river valleys, Michigan, as well as similar grounds of other places, demonstrate the agricultural habits of the ancient people of this region. The remains of these cultivated fields also afford a clue as to the source of the chief part of the supplies required for the mining adventures in the northern country.

The question will not fail to suggest itself: Were these vast operations accomplished through slave labor? That a conquered people were kept at this isolated place by their victors, and in this thraldom obliged to work the copper mines, is an opinion, however, which cannot be received without further confirmation. That a central government, situated at the south, ruled with patriarchial if not autocratic sway over the entire region, from Mexico to Lake Superior, many circumstances more than hint at. If the ancient miners were not identical with the mound-builders, that commercial transactions, at least, existed between them, the constant finding in the burial places of the latter of ornaments and utensils made of Lake Superior copper would warrant. The apparent similarity of their characteristics and habits is further testimony in this direction.

Standing on the rocky eminences of the island, and looking down on the surrounding features, in presence of the remarkable disclosures here detailed, it was not difficult for the imagination to repeople the solitudes once more with those primitive men. The past rises and recreates itself. Again they swarm along the rocky beaches with those ragged shores, even then torn with the storms of thousands of winters; landing on the precipitous islets, baptized in the silvery spray of Lake Superior, the rude boats or vessels pass to and fro in busy traffic; some, disappearing in the distance, are bound with their valued freight for the main land far to the south; the half-naked savages, begrimed from their toil, delve in the slowly-deepening pits, which lie scattered along the pleasant indentations of the coast, or by the banks of the beautiful lakes of the interior; the voice of an unknown language falls upon the air with a strange rhythm; the overhanging cliffs echo and resound with the clang of their stone hammers; the forest falls beneath the blows of their rude axes; the curling smoke rises from their excavations or their dwellings, softly ascending to the same blue Heaven which still bends over all with its eternal benediction.

# HISTORY OF THE EPISCOPAL CHURCH IN MICHIGAN.

BY HON. C. C. TROWBRIDGE, OF DETROIT.

*The Hon. Hezekiah G. Wells, Member of the Historical Committee of the State Pioneer Society of Michigan:*

You request me to prepare a sketch of the history of the Protestant Episcopal church in the State, to be incorporated with other documents in your next printed volume. Brief accounts have already been written, covering some of the most important facts, the last being modestly styled a compilation, and brought down to 1836. Mine will be in part borrowed from both, and will be more discursive, avoiding details which would be of no interest to the general reader, but which are garnered in the archives of the church for the information of those more immediately interested, and supplementing many facts not heretofore put in print.

There is no account extant of any provision for religious worship upon the change of flag from the French to the British after the war of 1760, although there is evidence that Doctor Anthon was married in 1770* or thereabouts, by an English chaplain, and that General Wayne brought with him a chaplain in 1796, when taking possession of Detroit. The garrisons in the last century, at Detroit, Mackinac, Kalkaskia, and Vincennes were very small. The commanding office frequently performed the office of baptism, celebrated the rites of matrimony, and solemnized the burial service. Among well known instances, we have, in the "Outlines of the Political History of Michigan," by the Hon. Judge Campbell, an account of the marriage, by Major DePeyster, commandant at Detroit, of Thomas Williams, the father of the late General John R. Williams, to Miss Cecile Campau, on the 7th of May, 1781, and the baptism of John Kirby, a well known citizen of Grosse Pointe in later years, by the commanding officer at Mackinac. Towards the close of the eighteenth century, the "Venerable Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts" sent out to Sandwich, on the Canada shore, opposite Detroit, the Rev. Richard Pollard. This godly man came occasionally to the American side in the performance of clerical functions, and this is believed to be the earliest introduction of Episcopal services. Mr. Pollard died early in the present century. Up to the breaking out of the war of 1812-15 with Great Britain, intermitted efforts were made by the few church people living in Detroit, to keep up public worship by means of lay reading. This indicates a certain amount of religious feeling, but if tradition, which brings us this fact, is to be believed, not much can be said for the tone of piety of that day; for it is related of a worthy government official, whose descendants still linger among us, that having devoutly discharged his duties as lay reader, he concluded the morning service by announcing the next approaching fox-hunt. In like manner, as late as the year 1825, Theophilus Mettez, commonly called Fon Fon Mettez, after performing the office of acolyte, disappeared from the chancel of St. Anne's R. C. church, and was found in citizen's apparel at the corner of the edifice, giving out the notices of auctions and other secular events for the week ensuing.

---

*Dr. George Christian Anthon was married to Mariana Navarre, at Detroit, August 13, 1770, by Chaplain Turrin of the 53d regiment.

The Methodist society, always the pioneer, was the first Protestant denomination in the field of Michigan. The Rev. Dr. Bangs was in Detroit in 1804. Their circuit riders appeared as early as 1809, if not before, for in that year a log church was built by that body on the River Rouge. In 1817, the Rev. John Montieth of the Presbyterian church, came as a missionary from that denomination. He immediately began to promote a cohesion of the Protestant element in the city. In a population of one thousand, two-thirds of whom were French Romanists, the number attaching themselves to Mr. Montieth was small, but the missionary was courageous and wise. The Governor of the territory and the three Judges of the Supreme Court were the title holders, under act of Congress, of the public domain within the city. There was a lot of land on the east side of Woodward avenue in the city of Detroit, between Larned and Congress streets, which, under British authority, before the new city was laid out, had been designated and set apart as a cemetery. It was called "the English burying ground," and was devoted to the use of the Protestants. Mr. Monteith and his friends procured from the Governor and Judges, who were by appointment of Congress the legislature, an act incorporating these friends and himself under the name of "The First Protestant Society of the city of Detroit," and then they applied to the same Governor and Judges, now sitting as a "Land Board" [how convenient], for a grant of this cemetery ground for church purposes. The Methodists, Presbyterians, and Episcopalians composed this infant band of religionists, and a very harmonious body it was. In the year 1819 they had become formidable enough to undertake the erection of a small wooden church, standing on posts, and in every respect cheap and mean in appearance, but with some changes it was made to last fifteen years, when it gave place to an imposing edifice of brick.

Mr. Monteith resigned in 1821, the society being in his debt for clerical services in the sum of seven hundred dollars—a large amount as money was rated in those days. He might have sued the corporation and taken their English burying ground and meeting-house, but such a thought never entered his guileless heart. He meekly accepted what they tendered him, namely, "shin plasters." This was a sort of currency whose history we trace back to the "western territory, north of Ohio," not indeed enjoined by Dane's ordinance of 1787, but not, like slavery, prohibited by it. It was a convenient method, resorted to by impecunious individuals and churches, largely used by Rev. Father Richard in building St. Anne's. One of the bills issued to Mr. Monteith lies before me. The residue of the seven hundred dollars was handed over a few years ago by his agent to the treasurer of the First Protestant Society for safe keeping. It reads as follows:

> Due the bearer one dollar; receivable for debts due the First Protestant Society, and payable at the treasury of the same.
> Dolls. 1.00.
> Detroit, March 15, 1821.
>
> JAMES ABBOTT,
> JOHN P. SHELDON,
> B. STEAD,
> JOHN J. DEMING,
> LEM'L SHATTUCK,
> *Trustees of the First Protestant Church.*

Mr. Monteith not only accepted this mode of payment, but he actually assisted in preparing the due-bills, filling the date with his own pen. These gentlemen were men of the highest respectability. The first and third were churchmen,—the others Presbyterians. Why the Methodist brethren were not sent down to posterity in their company does not appear. These due-bills have never been paid, in whole or in part. The creditor has gone to that blest place where all debts have been forgiven. The question of denominational responsibility has never been discussed. It is a matter which cannot be looked back upon with complacency.

In 1822 the Methodist society felt strong enough to withdraw and complete a separate organization. They purchased a lot of land on the corner of Congress street and Woodward avenue, and erected thereon their first house of worship in the city. The Episcopalians remained in the corporation until the month of July, 1824. In the meantime, in the summer of 1821, the Rev. Alanson Welton, an Episcopal clergyman from western New York, arrived and was employed to preach. He was an able man, a pupil of Bishop Hobart, but before he had time to make an impression on his flock death claimed him for his own, and after a service of three months his mortal remains were deposited in the English burying-ground.

Bishop Hobart, whose far-seeing eye noted the course of the "star of empire," was instrumental in procuring the appointment by the Church Missionary Society, of the Rev. Richard F. Cadle, a young presbyter from the Theological Seminary. He was learned, pious, meek, modest, conciliating and diffident. But he immediately took hold of the sympathies of the feeble band of churchmen. In his first report to the Missionary Society, in July, 1824, he stated that he had reached Detroit from New York after twelve days' travel,—being the time usually required; that he found three or four communicants, and about forty persons inclined towards the church. There stood, at that time, a small edifice of stone, one story high, on the corner of Jefferson avenue and Randolph street. It was built by the general government for an Indian Council House, and was so used; and for want of any other public edifice it was occupied by the Supreme court, the County court, the trustees of the city, by lyceums and people's gatherings of all sorts. It was a filthy place. The interior was arranged with rude desks and benches for judges, lawyers, juries, witnesses, prisoners, and spectators. Its capacity might be two hundred when well packed. Governor Cass, the Superintendent of Indian affairs, gave permission to the church people to occupy this house on Sundays, for which purpose it was prepared, with besom and bucket, on Saturday nights. And here was the germ of that body which has grown and multiplied, to the care of souls and the glory of God, sending the influences which had come from the

Atlantic, on, on, till they reached the quiet ocean of the west. Mr. Cadle continued to occupy the council house, with occasional interruptions for repairs, until the erection of a church edifice as hereinafter stated. In his December report of 1824, his little flock of three communicants had increased to nine. In November of that year the parish of St. Paul's church was organized, and Mr. Cadle was chosen rector, with a salary of one hundred and fifty dollars, which was supplemented by a like amount from the missionary board. In 1826 the number of worshipers had grown to sixty, and the communicants to twenty. In 1827 the council house had become too small for the increased congregation, or it had got to be insufferably filthy, or the necessity of a place of worship exclusively their own, or perhaps all three of these motives, induced the parishoners to resolve to build an inexpensive chapel. This was the more necessary, as a Sunday-school had been opened, with three teachers and twenty pupils: Please stick a pin here. The vestry applied to the First Protestant Society for a share of the English burying-ground which had been owned by them in common, and after some negotiation, a portion of the lot, sixty feet in front on Woodward avenue, with the use in common with themselves of thirty feet for light and air, was duly conveyed. Further consultation induced the vestry to undertake the erection of a more pretentious edifice, and to ask aid from the eastern churches. A building, forty feet by sixty, of brick, was after much tribulation completed, at a cost of four thousand five hundred dollars, a large part of which was borne by the senior warden, Hon. Henry M. Campbell, father of the distinguished judge of that family, and by the late Hon. James Abbott and Major John Biddle. It was a very unsightly thing, as ugly as it could be, but in the year 1834, under the supervision of the late Judge Elliott, by means of buttresses, balustrades, and addition of thirty feet to its length, and by galleries supported by tri-form columns, and a handsome tower, it was metamorphosed into a very sightly church.

Bishop Hobart, who was in regular communication with the Rev. Mr. Cadle, came out in 1827 and laid the corner stone, at the same time confirming a large class of candidates. In the following year he came again and consecrated the completed structure. Henceforth the history of the church in the sparsely settled territory, if related in detail, would be only the repetition of missionary journeys to the scattered members, and of missionary sacrifices, such as are not known in these days of railroads and telegraphs. In these details the general public would feel little interest. Up to the day when the church was organized into a diocese, the following parishes were incorporated:

St. Andrew's, Ann Arbor, in 1824, by the Rev. Mr. Cadle.
St. John's, Troy, in 1829, by the same.
St. Luke's, Ypsilanti, in 1830, by the Rev. Silas C. Freeman.
Trinity, Monroe, in 1831, by the Rev. Richard Bury.
St. Peter's, Tecumseh, in 1832, by the Rev. Silas C. Freeman.

On the 10th of September, 1832, delegates assembled at Detroit, from Detroit, Monroe, Dexter, Ypsilanti, Tecumseh, and Troy, and proceeded to organize a diocese in the territory of Michigan, which territory then extended to the Mississippi river from the Canada boundary line, and in accordance with the constitution and canons of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States of America they adopted a constitution and canons for the new diocese. The Rev. Richard Bury, rector of St. Paul's, Detroit, whose valuable life was long spared to see the fruit of his labors, was one of the leaders in this movement. He was elected a clerical delegate to the General Convention of that year, and was instrumental in obtaining the favorable action of that body upon the application for admission into the brotherhood of dioceses. A standing committee, which in the Episcopal church is the ecclestiastical head of the diocese when there is no bishop, and a council of advice to that functionary when in office, was elected; the Rev. Mr. Bury, Rev. Silas C. Freeman, and Rev. John O'Brien being the clerical members, and Messrs. Henry Whiting, Elon Farnsworth, Henry M. Campbell, Charles C. Trowbridge, and Seneca Allen the lay members. Mr. Trowbridge, the only survivor, has been re-elected every year.

In the following year, pursuant to church law, the diocese resolved to place itself under the spiritual jurisdiction of the Right Rev. Charles P. McIlvane, D. D., Bishop of Ohio, and in May, 1834, that prelate visited Detroit, Tecumseh, and Monroe, "confirming the churches." He was prevented by illness from proceeding to Green Bay as he had intended. He presided at the annual convention held at Monroe, and in his able address strongly urged the diocese to proceed to the choice of a bishop without delay. Accordingly, at the convention held at Tecumseh in the following year, 1835, the Rev. Henry I. Whitehouse, D. D., rector of St. Luke's church, Rochester, was elected by a unanimous vote. Contrary to the hope and expectation of the diocese, Doctor Whitehouse decided not to accept. At his election the diocese contained only six presbyters, being the minimum required for an election. One of these withdrew soon after the election, and the churchmen were left in a quandry. Happily the General Convention met that year, and a remedial act was obtained, in the form of a canon, authorizing the House of Bishops in such emergency to elect a bishop. The diocese of Michigan hastened to avail itself of this canon. Correspondence was opened with the venerable Bishop White, the presiding bishop, and with Bishops Doane of New Jersey, Onderdonk of Pennsylvania, and Obey of Tennessee, who all strove to remove the obstacles which naturally arose under the first application of the canon, and through whose kind instrumentality full effect was given to it. It was understood that in the feeble condition of the diocese the only source of revenue for the support of the bishop would be the rectorship of St. Paul's, Detroit, the other parishes being little more than missionary stations; and it was intimated that the House of Bishops would favorably regard any preference the diocese might entertain for a properly qualified person, thus giving the virtual power of free election. The result was that on the 7th of July, 1836, the Rev. Samuel A. McCoskry, D. D., rector of St. Peter's church, Philadelphia, was consecrated bishop, by Right Rev. Bishops Doane, Onderdonk of New York, and Kemper, missionary bishop. The election of Bishop McCoskry was the last official act of Bishop White. His increasing infirmities prevented him from participating in the consecration of the young bishop, and soon after that event he was called to his reward in heaven.

It will be remembered by the survivors of that period that an unusual inflation in business matters pervaded the country. A wild and unregulated rage of speculation seized upon the wisest and coolest among the leading men in different States, drawing into its vortex every trade and profession. Politicians of the highest grade, merchants, lawyers, doctors, farmers, bankers, and even divines, were bitten with the thirst for wealth. New England and New York seemed to think that unless great energy was manifested, the whole public domain in the great west, together with the harbors on the great lakes, and the creeks where harbors might be scooped out, and the favorable points for cities on the large rivers, would elude their grasp; and so it was a common thing to see sober-minded persons who had retired from the active drudgery of life, entering the arena, and squabbling for the possession of territory which proved the ruin of many thousands.

Such was the condition of things when the bishop arrived to take possession of his see. He came among a people who, to use one of Major Jack Downing's sayings, "had swapped coats" until they counted themselves rich enough to ensure a glorious future for the church in Michigan, but whose *chateau en espagne* were all made of paper, and proved too soon to be sadly evanescent. He came to a parish whose revenues were derived solely from the annual subscriptions of its members, and were destined to be crippled by any financial adversity. But it was all *coleur de rose* in 1836. The bishop arrived in September of that year,bringing with him his wife and daughter and two missionaries, the Rev. Samuel Marks and the Rev. Henry F. Whiteside; and with one of the members of the standing committee, who was also a warden of St. Paul's he made the tour of that portion of his diocese lying in the southern part of the lower peninsula, the only part then populated, riding in a wagon, and visiting Ypsilanti, Ann Arbor, Dexter, Jackson, Albion, Marshall, Kalamazoo, Allegan, Paw Paw, Constantine, White Pigeon, Edwardsburg, Niles, Jonesville, Tecumseh, Adrian, and Monroe, traveling about five hundred miles, over horrid roads, passing several weeks, preaching every day or evening, in the small school-houses, reading prayers by the light of a tallow dip sometimes held by a village magnate. It was strange, exciting, and to the eye of faith promising, but alas, illusory.

Good Bishop Hobart, in his address at the laying of the corner stone of St. Paul's, in 1827, had predicted that "the territory would ere long exchange its forests for cultivated fields, the solitude of its wilds for the bustle of busy towns and the hymns of temples in which would be celebrated the praises of the Most High." Only nine years had elapsed, and the prediction seemed about to be fulfilled. Liberal men were devising liberal things. An Episcopal fund was begun, founded upon the profits of certain adventures which in good faith had been conveyed to it, only to vanish, like other projects, into thin air. The bishop met his convention on his return from this prospecting tour, and mutual gratulations were exchanged.

But this auspicious inauguration was destined to meet a sudden and disastrous check. The year 1837 opened with ominous signs of a financial revulsion. The people had gone on blindly, and from the Mississippi to the Atlantic had involved themselves in inextricable meshes of moneyed obligations, which they were utterly unable to meet. One failure created another, and business men toppled over like a row of falling bricks. On the 10th of May specie payments were suspended in New York, and as soon as the news could be carried by couriers,—for we had no telegraph then,—suspension followed in every town in the United States, and a state of pecuniary distress supervened, and continued until 1844, such in degree as was never before known in this country, never has been known since that day, and probably will never occur again. Of course the church felt the shock. The difficulty of sustaining the few ministers became so great that much apprehension was caused by the probability that they would have to resign their cures. But they were a noble band, and they remained at their posts with a courage and devotion worthy of record. It was nearly ten years, however, before any considerable addition was made to the number of the clergy. Meantime, all the church enterprises languished. A well-meant effort to establish a diocesan paper failed. The Episcopal fund, estimated in 1838 at eight thousand dollars, came to nought. Later on, a charter was obtained, through the untiring assiduity of the Rev. Francis H. Cuming, D. D., for a church college, to be called St. Marks, and to be located at Grand Rapids. In 1850 the institution was opened, under the presidency of the Rev. Charles C. Taylor, and one hundred and ninety pupils were in attendance; but the effort was in advance of the needs and ability of the church, and was necessarily abandoned. Some years subsequent to this an effort was made to establish a church school at Jackson, another at Marshall, and still another at Fenton, at which latter place two handsome edifices were erected, one for boys, called Latimer Hall, and the other for girls, called Ridley Hall. This last effort has a *quasi* endorsement by the bishop and the convention of the diocese, but the convention refused to commit the church to the enterprise, and after much zealous effort on the part of the projector, the Rev. Osgood E. Fuller, that also, so far as the church was concerned, came to grief.

We come now to the division of the diocese. When the convention of 1874 met in St. Mark's church, Grand Rapids, there were seventy-nine clergymen canonically resident, and there were ninety parishes in union with the convention, eight having been previously disbanded. Two of the ninety were on Lake Superior, namely: St. Paul's, Marquette, organized in 1856, and St. John's, Negaunee, organized in 1870. At the preceding convention of 1873, the subject of the division of the diocese was brought forward by delegates from the western part of the State, and discussed, and at this convention of 1874 the division was agreed upon by the following resolution:

> **"*Resolved*, That the counties of Branch, St. Joseph, Cass, Berrien, Van Buren, Kalamazoo, Calhoun, Eaton, Barry, Allegan, Kent, Ionia, Montcalm, Muskegon, Oceana, Newaygo, Mecosta, Isabella, Clare, Osceola, Lake, Mason, Manistee, Wexford, Missaukee, Kalkaska, Grand Traverse, Benzie, Leelanaw, Antrim, Emmet, and Charlevoix be and the same are set apart and erected into a new diocese (the assent of the bishop and general convention being given) by the name of ——————, and the remainder of the counties in the lower peninsula, not above designated, with the island of Mackinac and the upper peninsula, shall constitute the present diocese of Michigan. And that the general convention be respectfully requested to grant the request of this convention to such division, when the constitution and canons relative to such cases are complied with."**

The bishop signified his assent to this resolution, and the division was so far perfected, leaving in the diocese of Michigan fifty-two clergymen canonically resident, and in the diocese of Western Michigan, as it was designated, twenty-seven. The act was consummated in St. Mark's church, Grand Rapids, on the 2d of December, 1874, and on the 24th of February, 1875, the Rev. George de Normandie Gillespie, D. D., rector of St. Andrew's church, Ann Arbor, was consecrated in the same church bishop of the diocese, Bishop McCoskry being the consecrator, assisted by the Right Rev. Joseph C. Talbot, bishop of Indiana, the Right Rev. Charles F. Robertson, bishop of Missouri, the Right Rev. William A. Bissell, bishop of Vermont, the Right Rev. Abram H. Littlejohn, bishop of Long Island, the Right Rev. Benjamin N. Paddock, bishop of Massachusetts, and the Right Rev. Edward R. Welles, bishop of Wisconsin.

Henceforward the history of the church in the State will be that of two dioceses, one in heart, separate in organism. Let us revert to the old diocese and complete our remarks in respect to it.

The subject of diocesan missions engaged the attention of the diocesan authorities at an early day. So great was the demand upon the general domestic and foreign missionary board for aid to the rapidly expanding States of the west and south, as well as in parts of the east, that their grant to Michigan was utterly inadequate to meet its pressing necessities, and it became apparent that the principle of self-dependance must govern if the infant church would fulfill its destiny. Tentative efforts at diocesan missionary organization were made, but for causes already recited, nothing important was done until 1850, when a missionary committee was appointed at the annual convention, and the wholesome custom of taking annual pledges from parishes and individuals was inaugurated. Under this system the collections for diocesan missions from

| | |
|---|---|
| 1851 to 1874 inclusive, the year of the division, amounted to | $64,103.82 |
| From 1874 to 1880, inclusive | 13,759.98 |
| For domestic and foreign missions, 1857 to 1874 | 37,157.84 |
| For domestic and foreign missions, 1875 to 1880, inclusive | 10,236.23 |
| In the diocese of Western Michigan the collections for diocesan missions 1875 to 1880, inclusive | 10,050.10 |
| And for domestic and foreign missions | 5,327.34 |
| Making a total of | $140,635.31 |

In the diocese of Michigan, from the year 1861, since which date only the collections in the parishes have been tabulated in the annual reports, so as to make the information on this point accessible, to the year 1880 inclusive, the contributions for church building, aid to feeble churches, alms for the poor, help to aged and infirm clergymen, St. Luke's Hospital, and Church Home, Society for the increase of the Ministry, Indian and Freedmen's missions, excluding missions and parish expenses, were $1,868,010.27; in the diocese of Western Michigan, 1874-80, $52,883.25; making a total of $1,920,893.52. This sum does not include the sums collected for the same objects prior to 1861.

The clergy in the diocese of Michigan in 1880 were sixty, in the diocese of Western Michigan thirty, total ninety. There were twenty-five lay readers in the diocese of Michigan, and nine in the diocese of Western Michigan; total thirty-four. The communicants in the former number 7,164, in the latter 3,068; total 10,232. The number of souls in the former is 18,349, in the latter 7,359; total 25,708, attending the services of the church. The Sunday-schools in the former have teachers and officers 859, scholars 7,066; in the latter, teachers and officers 295, scholars 2,209; total, teachers and scholars, 10,429. The value of church property in the former is $997,166.30; in the latter, $269,452.00. The total number of sittings in the former is 19,522, about one-half of which are free; in the latter 8,836, of which 5,746 are free. The salary of the clergymen in fifteen parishes of the former is $1,000 or over, in nine of which they are $1,500 or over, in five $2,400 or over; in five they are $800 to $900; three parishes pay $600 or over; twelve pay $500 or less. In the diocese of Western Michigan the salaries will average much the same.

There are completed edifices at sixty-three points in the old diocese, with appended chapels to several of them, and four churches and one chapel are in process of erection. In Western Michigan there are thirty-six church edifices, including two chapels attached to parish churches, in twenty-nine of which there is no rental of sittings, in four all are rented, in three a few are free; one church is in process of erection. There are twenty-three rectories in the old diocese, and seven in the new one.

The Episcopal fund in the diocese of Michigan is $32,000 in revenue securities, and $20,000 in the bishop's house. In Western the bishop's fund is $18,609.41, of which $3,136.25 is unproductive. The revenue from these

# ERRATA.

**[In consequence of a mistake in copying the sketch of the Episcopal church in Michigan from the rough draft of the original, one sheet, covering the period between 1875 and 1881, dropped out; and the proof not having been read by the writer the omission was not discovered in time for correction. This page is therefore added in order to bring into brief review the essential facts of that interval.]**

The impetus given to church work by the indefatigable labors of the clergy was felt in the gradual but considerable growth in numbers. The communicants increased one-third, the Sunday-schools four-tenths.

In the month of March, 1878, the Right Rev. Bishop McCoskry tendered to the presiding bishop his resignation of jurisdiction as bishop of Michigan. This was followed in May of the same year by his relinquishment of the office of bishop of the church, and he was deposed. On the 7th of June, 1879, the Rev. Samuel Smith Harris, D. D., LL. D., Rector of St. James' church, Chicago, was unanimously elected bishop of the diocese. Great rejoicing ensued upon the promulgation of the fact that this eminent servant of God had consented to abandon the comforts of parish life among a people between whom and himself there was a mutual attachment that promised a life-long connection, in order to take upon himself the arduous duties of the Episcopate in a wide, and in large part, unsettled field, filling up rapidly with a foreign population, among whom, happily, he has found a goodly portion who are attached to this household of faith. The result is justifying the fondest hopes of his people. All over the diocese his abundant labors are producing fruit. New churches and chapels have been consecrated, and others are being erected; from the older parishes the stigma of church debt has been removed; everything betokens thorough work. The appreciation of his people was strikingly manifested since the foregoing article was written, by their subscription to increase the Episcopal fund from $32,000, as stated in that article, to $86,500, besides the Episcopal residence, valued at $20,000. Three years were allotted to the committee in which to obtain this increase. It was perfected in six weeks.

*November, 1881.*

funds is supplemented by annual assessments upon the parishes to make up the yearly expenses of the diocese.

Annual collections are made for the fund for the relief of aged and infirm clergymen, and the widows of deceased clergymen. This fund in the old diocese is now $7,000, and is constantly increasing. In Western Michigan the fund is $1,410, with $757 awaiting investment.

The only diocesan institution now in being in the diocese of Michigan is the "Church Association of Michigan," a corporation organized to supply a long-felt necessity in the church. It is composed of the leading laymen of the different parishes of the diocese. Its object is to take, hold, and execute eleemosynary trusts of every kind, titles to land for church sites, bequests of pious individuals, and whatsoever pertains to such an office. It was formed with the aid of some of the best legal minds of the State, and has already received several grants of land and has been nominated trustee in several wills. It has been instrumental in building several churches and chapels, and has been made the custodian of conditional gifts of money in aid of new churches and rectories. Its agency has been sought for the relief of embarrassed churches. It is commended to the attention of persons desirous to devote to charitable uses some portion of the wealth which God has given them. It acts from love to souls. No salary or fees are paid to any of its officers.

St. Luke's Hospital and Church Home, Detroit, although not a diocesan institution, ought not to be overlooked in a sketch of the church history. It is supported by the parishes in Detroit. Its present capacity is sufficient for forty patients and infirm old people, but large additions are contemplated in the near future. It owns ten acres of ground between Fort street and the Detroit river, and commands a view of twenty miles of that noble strait. A chapel on the grounds, in memory of Mrs. Catherine W. S. Trowbridge, was consecrated on the 27th of February, 1881, her birthday.

Summing up the facts here briefly related, and looking back to July, 1824, when the meek Cadle gave the bread of life to three or four communicants; to the little flock of forty hearers, some of whom probably were curious to know "what this babbler would say;" to the dirty little Indian council house; to the salary of $150; to 1827, and the Sunday-school of three teachers and twenty pupils; ought not the members of this branch of Christ's earthly kingdom to bow with humble gratitude, and to show forth their thankfulness by renewed efforts to extend that kingdom?

I am quite aware, my dear Mr. Wells, that there is material for a much larger and a much more able sketch of the church's history in Michigan, but *faute de mieux* you will please accept this offering to your pioneer history with the kind regards of your old friend.

# BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH OF JOHN ROBERTS, ESQ., OF DETROIT.

Read before the Wayne County Pioneer Society, March 9th, 1872.

Mr. Roberts was born in Wales in the year 1798. His father's name was also John. His mother's maiden name was Mary Jones. He had a grand-uncle who was for thirty-six years in the British army, and who was in the army that "swore terribly in Flanders." This uncle was never sick but six days in his life, and he lived to the age of 102 years. When Mr. Roberts was four years old his father emigrated to Philadelphia, and the next year to Utica, New York, where he died several years after.

In the year 1820 John came up Lake Erie, bound for Detroit, on the steamboat Walk-in-the-Water, that being the first steamboat that ever navigated these waters. Professor Morse, the subsequent inventor of the telegraph, was on board the boat with his aged father. The father was the author of Morse's Geography, then a common school book, and in the course of the voyage Mr. Roberts overheard him make the remark that he had written a geography about this western country, and he was now going out to see it. The parties put up at Uncle Ben. Woodworth's Hotel. The duel between Fisher and Farley had then recently taken place at Sandwich, and was the cause of much excitement and the subject of much conversation. Mr. Roberts, at dinner table, having expressed himself as opposed to dueling upon principle, Professor Morse remarked, rather tartly, that he wished, in that case, to have no controversy with him (Mr. Roberts).

In 1820 Detroit had about 1,000 inhabitants, most of whom were French. The remnants of the old pickets which formerly surrounded the town as its protection were then visible in many places. The old Fort Shelby, which had been surrendered by General Hull eight years before, was then standing on the corner of the present Fort and Congress streets. Out beyond it were the barracks, and still beyond was the parade ground. The ground containing the fort, having about forty acres, was called the military reservation, and was afterward donated to the city by act of Congress. It was then surrounded by a ditch, moat, and pickets. The present Fort Wayne was not yet constructed; and old Fort Nonsense, as it was called, being a circular inclosure of earth for the accommodation of an out-post or picket guard, was standing between the present Henry and Sibley streets, a few rods west of Woodward avenue. General Macomb, who lived in what was then called the governor's house, and which was afterwards Wales' Hotel, on the site of the present Biddle House, was then military commandant of this department. General Cass was governor and William Woodbridge was secretary of the territory. Governor Cass lived in what was afterward known as the Cass House, near the present corner of Jefferson avenue and First street. Messrs. Woodward, Griffin, and Witherell were then the judges of the territory.

Soon after Mr. Roberts arrived in Detroit he engaged in the manufacturing business, to which a few years later he added the mercantile, and he continued in these occupations till he finally retired from active business, about twenty years ago.

About the year 1820 Mr. Harvey Williams, who is now living in or near Saginaw county, had a blacksmith shop on the corner of Woodward and Michigan Grand avenues, where the Russel House is now situated. His dwelling-house stood on the same lot, easterly of his shop. Early one morning Mr. Williams heard a noise out in his pig-pen. He got up, and looking out saw a full-grown wild wolf carrying away one of his pigs. As the pigs were quite small, he concluded that one would not make a sufficient breakfast for the wolf, and that he would soon be back for another. He accordingly loaded his rifle and "laid in wait" for his return. Sure enough, his wolfship soon returned for the balance of his breakfast, when Williams, taking deliberate aim, laid him low in the midst of his iniquities. A live wolf, alive and free, would be a strange visitor in that locality at the present day, as to some extent it was then.

An anecdote is related of Governor Cass and Dr. Chamberlin which tends to show the high tone of feeling that prevailed here in the olden times. The doctor had published an article in a newspaper reflecting on the administration of the governor, which was quite displeasing to him, and he undertook to call the doctor to an account for it. The doctor refused to explain or apologize, and remarked to the governor that he seldom expressed an opinion, but when he did express one there was grandeur in it.

About the time Mr. Roberts came here Messrs. Mack & Conant, of Detroit, built at Pontiac the first flouring-mill that was erected in Oakland county. When the mill was finished it was deemed appropriate that its completion should, as an important event, be commemorated by a public celebration. A delegation accordingly went out from Detroit, among whom were Colonel Mack, General Cass, Judge O'Keefe, Dr. Chamberlin, and several others. They had eating, and drinking and speaking at the celebration, and what was denominated generally a gay old time. Judge O'Keefe, seeing there was to be a time, undertook to escape, and went and hid himself in a hay-mow. Search was at once made for him, and, he being discovered, a committee was organized to try him for the misdemeanor. Colonel Mack, dressed up as an Indian chief, was made presiding judge. O'Keefe was quite alarmed, believing in the excitement of the occasion that he was actually to be tried by a band of Indians. He was tried, found guilty and properly sentenced in the discretion of the court. Mr. Roberts either was not informed or does not remember what the sentence was, but it was, no doubt, such as the crime merited, and it was doubtless speedily executed. Trials now being in order, each man present was put into the hopper, as it was called, and run through the mill to see what the product would be. To the great amusement of the party some came out as bran, some as shorts, and some as common flour. General Cass, being properly ground out, was declared to be superfine. On the way home the jollification still continued, and on arriving near Royal Oak, the party stopped at the shanty of a Frenchman, who was also pretty much under the influence of liquor. The party urged him to drink, and on his refusal they put him on trial, found him guilty and sentenced him to be hung. They accordingly tied a rope around his neck, fastened the other end to the shafts of a cart, got on to the back end and tipped up the cart so that the man was taken off from his feet and actually left hanging for several minutes. On being let down he appeared to be dead, to the great alarm of those who had done execution on him. Dr. Chamberlin, as the attending physician on the occasion, declared that he was dead, but as the body soon came to life he claimed that it was through the great professional skill that the man's life had been saved and his persecutors relieved from a serious criminal prosecution. Such were some of the olden times.

Kish-kaw-ko was a celebrated Indian chief of the Saginaw country. Some one of his band had done some offensive act for which he was brought up before the chief and a jury somewhere near Saginaw for trial. The offense was said to be capital, and the trial was for life. Kish-kaw-ko presided at the trial, and the testimony being introduced in due form, the jury found the prisoner not guilty. The chief inquired of the foreman of the jury why they had acquitted the accused. The foreman answered that it was because he was not guilty according to their law. The prisoner was then sitting surrounded by the jury and covered with a blanket so that he could not see what was going on. This being the usual mode of proceeding, Kish-kaw-ko quietly arose, took his tomahawk from under his blanket and drove it down into the head of the prisoner, killing him instantly, and saying at the same time with savage energy, "The law is changed." This vent took place about the time Mr. Roberts arrived in Detroit. A few years after this Kish-kaw-ko and a son of his were both tried by an American court in Detroit for the murder of another Indian here. They were both convicted and sentenced to be hung; but they had agreed between themselves that they would die by means of poison, and would not be hung. The poison was obtained in the prison and the old chief kept his word, took the poison and died. The young man's courage failed him, and he did not take the poison. He broke jail and escaped, soon after which a pardon came from the president, J. Q. Adams, and thus ended the whole matter.

In the presidential campaign of 1828, when General Jackson was elected over Mr. Adams, there were only three Democrats in Detroit. They increased, however, very fast when it became known that Jackson was, or was to be, the president. It was very easy to see how the cat was jumping. There were then two newspapers published in Detroit, one the Gazette, published by Sheldon & Reed, and the other the Michigan Herald, published by the late Judge Chipman. These had been both Adams papers, but it was said that they had run a sharp race to see which would get over first when it was known that Jackson was elected. The Gazette succeeded and became a democratic paper, while the other, as a matter of policy, remained an opposition journal.

Mr. Roberts was in Detroit in the time of the cholera, both in 1832 and 1834. On the first occasion he was alderman of the city, at which time the Hon. A. D. Frazer was City Recorder. Mr. Roberts well remembered the alarm, excitement, and deaths which were on every hand. Mrs. Witherell, wife of the late Judge B. F. H. Witherell, and sister of Mrs. Oliver M. Hyde, was the first victim of the cholera here. It was first brought to this city by passengers on board the steamer Henry Clay. The ravages of that terrible scourge here have been so often described that they need not here be detailed. The disease was then new, and remedies were unknown even among the most skillful physicians. Deaths were fearfully sudden and fearfully numerous.

In the early days of Michigan, when the Indians were in the neighborhood and this place was a small frontier town, the military arm was a subject of no small importance. There was accordingly a full organization of the militia of the territory, and for several years Mr. Roberts occupied the position of Lieutenant Colonel of the First Regiment. He received several military commissions from Governor Cass, and continued in command until about the time the State was admitted into the Union.

In 1838 a great fire swept over that part of the city situated between Woodward avenue, Woodbridge street, Randolph street, and the river. Mr. Roberts had his business establishment in this district, and all his property, except real estate, was destroyed. His creditors would gladly have compromised at fifty cents on the dollar but he only asked for a reasonable time in which to pay, which was granted, and he paid the whole with interest. There is a trait of heroism in many characters which displays itself elsewhere than on fields of battle.

Mr. Roberts has now for many years led a retired life, in easy circumstances. His residence in Detroit covers a period of nearly fifty-two years. He has seen the town grow up from 1,000 to nearly 100,000 inhabitants. He has seen it spread and expand from a few blocks to many square miles in extent. He has maintained a firmness and integrity of purpose and character which have always secured for him and now secure for him, in the evening of his days, the respect and esteem of all who know him.

Mr. Roberts died April 13, 1881, nine years after this sketch was written.

## A SKETCH OF THE HISTORY OF METHODISM IN DETROIT.

### A METHODIST JUBILEE IN DETROIT ON THANKSGIVING DAY, NOVEMBER 25, 1880.

PREPARED BY REV. J. M. ARNOLD, OF DETROIT.

Thanksgiving day brought the long anticipated jubilee of Detroit Methodism. It had been arranged in May, 1880, when the alliance determined upon finishing their enterprise of paying off the debt upon all the city churches this year, that it be completed before Thanksgiving day, and that a grand general jubilee service should be held in commemoration of the event on that day. On the Sabbath previous David Preston, the treasurer, announced that but $300 remained to be raised, and at 4:30 Wednesday afternoon the last $130 was contributed. Thursday opened auspiciously; at the hour 10:30 A. M. the church was well filled and the congregation was served with a beautiful souvenir containing the programme, a schedule of the original debt, and the names of the officers and members of the alliance.

Willing hands had done work prompted by cheerful hearts, and the church was tastefully decorated. The columns and railings were festooned with long lines of evergreen. On each side the platform were suspended the national colors. Along the front of the choir gallery was nicely wrought in letters of evergreen, "Praise God from whom all blessings flow." The platform, pulpit and gallery were decorated with plants and flowers, and in front of the pulpit was a beautiful floral banner bearing the terse and suggestive legend:

UNION.

SUCCESS.

*On May 2, 1879, the Methodist Episcopal Churches of Detroit were $35,500 in debt, as shown by the following statement. To-day, through the blessing of God, and the efforts of His people under the direction of the M. E. S. S. Alliance, the debts are all paid:*

| CHURCHES. | Debt. | Membership. |
|---|---|---|
| Tabernacle | $12,000 | 230 |
| Simpson | 8,500 | 337 |
| Central | 8,000 | 779 |
| Jefferson Avenue | 3,700 | 236 |
| Fort Street | 2,200 | 122 |
| Sixteenth Street | 1,100 | 100 |

### PROGRAMME.

Organ Voluntary, .......... J. H. Thomas
Voluntary, .......... Choir

### READING RESPONSIVELY.

98th and 100th Psalms, .......... Rev. W. W. Washburne
Prayer .......... Rev. G. W. Lowe
Singing, .......... Choir and Congregatoin

### READING GOVERNOR'S PROCLAMATION,

Rev. Wm. Dawe.

### PRESENTATION OF CANCELLED OBLIGATIONS TO TRUSTEES,

D. Preston.

Historical address, .......... J. M. Arnold, D. D.

### ADDRESSES BY

Rev. C. T. Allen,
Rev. W. X. Ninde, D. D.,
T. C. Owen, Esq.,
Rev. J. H. Bayliss, D. D.,
Rev. W. H. Poole,
W. W. Washburne.

*Prayer. Doxology. Benediction.*

### DECORATIONS.

At the appointed hour, Horace Hitchcock, Esq., president of the alliance, took the chair, and in a few remarks embodying the history of the formation of the alliance, and of the great work it had undertaken in paying the crushing debt upon churches, congratulated the audience upon the consummation of the work to be commemorated in the special services of the day, and the organist and choir then led off in a fine voluntary. A responsive service embracing Psalms xcviii and c, was then led by Rev. W. W. Washburne, P. E., of Detroit district, after which Rev. G. W. Lowe, of Fort street church, offered a most feeling prayer. After the hymn, "From all that dwell beneath the skies," etc., had been sung, Rev. William Dawe, pastor of Tabernacle church, read the governor's thanksgiving proclamation. A collection was then taken for the city charities, embracing "The Protestant Orphan Asylum," "Home of the Friendless," "Foundling's Home," "Industrial School," and "Working Women's Home." The collection amounted to about $130. The special alliance services were introduced by calling up the boards of trustees of the several churches, in order to make to them a formal presentation of the cancelled mortgages and obligations constituting the church debt of the city. It was an impressive sight to contemplate. There stood Mr. John Owen, for fifty-eight years a member of the church, and others, varying from forty years of membership, to young men, upon whom time had yet left no vestige of its blight. The presentation was made by Mr. Preston, in his characteristic style, which, abating its prolixity, cannot be improved upon. He detailed the exigency which led the churches to undertake this work, and the want of faith which existed in all but a few hearts at the outset. The first money paid in was by a poor man, who gave two dollars. The next was by Mr. J. Toynton, who came in and said he would not subscribe, and gave $100.

We cannot follow him through the detail of the subscriptions, but his account of the effort made to raise the last $2,600 was decidedly interesting. Invitations were sent to several hundred persons to meet at the chapel of the Central for a collation. No intimation was given of the object of the meeting, but it leaked out, and did not help the attendance. The ladies were embraced in the invitation, and a caterer was engaged to provide a good repast. About 150 came, and after reporting the state of our alliance fund, by persevering effort $1,600 more was secured from the same persons who had before contributed. A meeting was afterwards called at Mr. John Owen's office, where $700 was contributed by seven persons. Mr. Preston had still $330 to raise, but the man who paid the first $100 came to his relief with another hundred. Three men he chanced to meet on the street, made up another $100. Mr. Preston then called again at C. R. Mabley's store, and "spoke his piece" in the presence of the proprietor and Mr. Joseph Hudson, and although they had both given several times, they without a moment's hesitation took the balance, and he went home happy. Thus at 4:30 on Wednesday afternoon he was released from a burden that had pressed upon him for more than a year. Here he was interrupted by Dr. Bayliss, who stated that the Second Congregational Church of the city were enjoying a jubilee service at their church, having just completed paying their mortgage debt of $27,000, which had been all pledged during the week. Dr. Bayliss then read a congratulatory message to them, which was on motion adopted by the whole audience, by a rising vote, as follows:

DETROIT, *November 25, 1880.*

**The pastors, officers and members of the Central, Tabernacle, Simpson, Jefferson avenue, Fort street, and Sixteenth street Methodist Episcopal churches, assembled**

with thanksgiving and praise to God for our great deliverance from the bondage of debt, to the Second Congregational church of Detroit, Greeting:

The aggregate debt of the Methodist Episcopal churches was $35,500. It is paid and the obligations are cancelled and discharged. Knowing that the great burden of $27,500 recently resting upon you, almost crushing out life and hope, has with wonderful labor and perseverance been provided for during the present week, we therefore send you greeting and congratulations, and pray that the blessing of God may rest upon you, upon all who have aided in this great deliverance, and upon all the church of God.

Mr. Preston afterwards proceeded to deliver the several mortgages one by one to the boards of trustees. He was heartily cheered at different times during his speech, which occupied over half an hour.

A RESPONSE

from the Second Congregational church was received and read as follows:

THANKSGIVING DAY, *November 25, 1880.*

*To the Methodist Episcopal churches of the city, greeting:*

DEAR BRETHREN—Your congratulations are received, and we devoutly thank Almighty God for all the blessings He has seen fit to bestow on your churches as well as our own.

Although our church debt is not yet cancelled, still it is fully provided for, and will soon be among the things of the past.

May we not reasonably hope that the payment of our church debts is but a grand advance along the line of our church activities, and that ere long God will pour out for us spiritual blessings in a more marked degree.

In conclusion, we most heartily congratulate you upon this joyous occasion for thanksgiving.

By order of the board of trustees.

G. S. WORMER,
*President.*

Rev. J. M. Arnold then occupied eighteen minutes in reading the following historical sketch of the Methodist Episcopal church in the city, which he had compiled for the occasion:

## METHODISM IN DETROIT.

The Moravian missionaries who spent the winter of 1780 in Detroit were its earliest Protestant pioneers. The Rev. Daniel Freeman, a Methodist preacher from Canada, came in the spring of 1804 and preached a few times. In the same year the Rev. David Bacon,* a Congregationalist missionary to the Indians at Mackinaw, stopped here and preached. At the session of the New York conference in July, 1804, the Rev. Nathan Bangs was appointed to a circuit in western Canada and came to Detroit and preached, but he soon became disheartened and left, and the Rev. Wm. Case of Canada was appointed here in 1809 and preached regularly. In 1810 the Rev. N. Holmes was appointed, and at the ensuing conference reported seven members. Detroit then contained a population of 770. In 1811 two ministers were appointed, one from Canada, and one from the Western conference, which then embraced the Mississippi valley as far south as Tennessee. During the war of 1812-15 there is no record of our work here, but a note in the Detroit Gazette of April 2, 1818, over the signature of Robert Abbott, one of the trustees, states that "the first Protestant church in Michigan was erected on the River Rouge, March 31, 1818, by a society of Methodists, which had been established in 1810, and through the mercies of God had remained inflexible through the storms of war and other trials, and by the Divine blessing was still in a prosperous way." This note was found by Mr. Silas Farmer "by a careful search through more than 20,000 old newspapers," and should settle the controversy as to the priority of the Methodist church in this city. The old church on the Rouge embraced also the members resident in the city.

---

* David Bacon preached in Detroit in 1802. His illustrious son, Leonard Bacon, was born in Detroit.

From 1815 to 1820 Detroit belonged to the Genesee conference, from which it was regularly supplied. The first Presbyterian missionary came in 1816, and immediately organized a "society" embracing all Protestants, and this was in 1818 organized into a church, but still a "union church," which it remained until 1825, when, under the Rev. Noah M. Wells, the first Presbyterian church was organized.

St. Paul's Episcopal church was organized in August, 1824. The First Baptist church was organized October 20, 1827. Thus our church antedates by six years any other Protestant organization, and by 15 years any other denominational church.

In 1820 Detroit was transferred to New Lebanon district, Ohio conference, and returned twenty members, a part of our membership having been absorbed by the union church.

In 1821, 130 members were reported, but this number embraced also the surrounding country, or Detroit circuit. March 21, 1822, the society was incorporated as the "First society of the Methodist Episcopal church of Detroit," and this organization is still perpetuated in the Central church. The oldest surviving member of our church in the city, Brother Owen, united November 2, 1823, being then fourteen years of age. Roxanna Farmer joined in 1826. No others now living date back of 1830. Mrs. Clay, Mrs. Shaw, Mrs. Howland, Mrs. Chaffee, Robert Fox, and some others range from 1833 to 1836. Mrs. Mary A. Palmer, who died March 19, 1874, was a member when she married and settled here in 1821. Hon. James Burns united in 1838.

In 1824 two lots were secured at the corner of State and Farrar streets and a church commenced, but its location was distant from the centre of population, and though occupied for several years, it was never completed or dedicated It is still standing and is now occupied by Dr. Kiefer. In 1830 we had seventy-eight members in the city and 673 in the State. Detroit then contained 2,222 inhabitants. In 1832 a lot was secured at the corner of Congress street and Woodward avenue, and a church occupying the present site of C. K. Gunn's store was dedicated July 13, 1834. In 1840, when the city contained 9,102 inhabitants, we had 241 members. In 1843, when our church had 320 members, a call was made for volunteers to plant a new church, and a new society was formed, which after occupying the United States court-house and city hall for about two years, erected a church at the corner of Congress and Randolph streets, which was dedicated July 25, 1846. This organization was maintained for about twenty years, under the name of the Congress street church, and at its last report in 1863, before it was merged in the Central, had 186 members. The Woodward avenue church, now St. Andrew's hall, was erected in 1849, and dedicated June 2, 1850, and the building which had been occupied by the First church was then removed to the corner of Lafayette and Fourth streets, and the society known for twenty-six years as the Lafayette street church was organized. In the fall of 1851 we reported 454 members and 116 probationers, the Lafayette street reporting seventy-nine members and fifteen probationers. The "city mission" was organized in that year, and as a result the Walnut street church, corner of Walnut and Seventh streets, was built. It was dedicated June 15, 1856, and at that conference, in connection with Lee chapel, reported forty-two members. This organization existed till 1869, or about nineteen years.

The Congress street church was burned July 18, 1863, and the society, after worshiping for several months in public halls, decided to build, and purchased the lots where the Central is located. The Woodward avenue or First church was at the same time contemplating the purchase of lots on Washington avenue as a new site, and in the summer of 1864 the two societies were reunited, and commenced the erection of the Central church. The chapel was dedicated September 21, 1865, and the congregation, with two pastors, was divided between that and the old church on Woodward avenue until the completion of this church. The Central was dedicated November 17, 1867, and cost $162,000. Its completion marked an important era in our position as a church in this city and in the state.

The Simpson church, which superseded the Walnut street, was commenced under the auspices of an organization known as the Sunday-school and Missionary Society of the Methodist church in Detroit, but it was carried to completion by the devoted labors of David Preston. It cost $42,000, and was dedicated free of debt (as was then supposed) July 24, 1870.

The Sixteenth street church grew out of a mission school. The initiatory steps toward its erection were taken in the Simpson board in 1870, but the Chicago fire, which occurred just as its subscription was being raised, hindered its progress, and left a large proportion of the $11,000 which it cost to be raised on the day of dedication, which was July 28, 1872.

The Tabernacle church, which was first called Trinity, was commenced in 1872, and the chapel was dedicated October 20, 1873. The church was dedicated September 13, 1874, costing entire $48,200, upon which a deficiency remained of $22,000.

The Fort street church was organized from the Tabernacle, February 22, 1874. Its nucleus was two Sabbath-schools, one of which had been maintained for several years at the German church on LaSalle avenue. It was dedicated October 15, 1871, and cost $7,500, of which $2,200 remained as a debt.

The Jefferson avenue church was organized December 30, 1866. It received $4,000 as the avails of the old French mission on Rivard street, and cost entire about $18,000. It was dedicated free of debt December 23, 1866. It was subsequently enlarged and improved at a cost of $3,700.

The German Morning Mission Sunday-school, organized by the Woodward avenue church about 1855, was in 1870 transferred to the corner of Clinton and Hastings streets, and suitable buildings erected at a cost of $7,000, and regular services have since been maintained there. Time will not permit to speak of the Woodward avenue mission, the Grand river mission, and other missionary enterprises. The church at Grand Trunk Junction, erected in 1874, was afterwards removed in 1876, and a society formed. Though outside the city limits and not embraced in the alliance, they have shown the common impulse and a few weeks since cleared off their remaining debt.

Thus in ten years, from 1864 to 1874, our church property in the city was advanced from about $30,000 to nearly $300,000. This rapid extension drew upon our members severely. At each successive dedication a few men of means pressed to the front and breasted the wave, while others contributed smaller sums according to their means. But a debt of $45,500 still remained. In 1878 the Tabernacle made a desperate effort, and by the aid of the Central, raised $10,000 on their indebtedness, leaving the aggregate debt of the city $35,500.

The alliance was organized July 15, 1878. Its object was to secure a closer affiliation of our churches, English and German, and to stimulate mission work in the city. The executive committee of the alliance found that all the churches, except the Central, were so burdened with debt that no advance seemed possible, and at a meeting held in the Tabernacle in February, 1879, it was proposed that the alliance should undertake to lift the church debt of the city by pooling it, and asking the Central church to share it with the others. The possibility of this turned upon the decision of the official board of the Central. To the memorable praise of their liberality they unanimously consented to the plan, and agreed to assume about two-fifths of the whole, though their own debt was less than one quarter. It was decided to raise the debt in three equal annual installments. The German churches then withdrew from the alliance, and the others raised $12,000 the first year.

As the zeal was already flagging and a large amount of interest was accumulating, the alliance resolved to raise the whole balance of $24,000 in six months, or by Thanksgiving day, 1880. David Preston for a time opposed this scheme, but finally yielded his consent, and by his untiring efforts made its accomplishment possible. Each church was asked to name the highest sum they could reach, and the Sixteenth street assumed as their full quota $400, the Fort street $1,100, the Jefferson avenue $3,700, (their entire debt) the Simpson $5,500, the Tabernacle $8,000, which with the $14,000 pledged by the Central left but $3,000 deficiency. It was assumed that this could be raised by special effort at the last, as the keystone of the whole, and all the churches proceeded to their work. The Tabernacle raised and paid theirs by July 1st. The churches have all met their proportion. At a meeting called at the Central chapel November 16th, it was announced that but $2,600 was required to complete the arrangement, and $1,600 was immediately pledged. At a subsequent meeting of a few brethren $700 of the remaining $1,000 was subscribed, and finally the last dollar has been reached.

The plan adopted by the alliance has been widely noticed by the press of all denominations, and commended as an unexampled exhibition of Christian fraternity. The churches which have been thus aided have occasion of gratitude which will not be forgotten while this generation survives. It may not be generally known that the members of the Central church had already contributed not less than $60,000 towards the erection of the other churches embraced in the alliance, so that really they have invested over $75,000 in other Methodist churches in the city, besides the large amount annually contributed to necessitous cases elsewhere.

This is an auspicious day for Detroit Methodism and will mark an era in its history. In 1860 we had 539 members in the city; in 1870, 1,050; and now have, including probationers, 1,900, and with the German and colored Methodists we number about 2,400. It is a matter of increased thankfulness that a sister church, the Second Congregationalist, shares with us the joy of to-day.

It is the popular impression that the alliance was formed for the purpose of paying the church debt, but we hope to demonstrate that this was but an incidental and temporary undertaking, and that it will hereafter exercise a wide and beneficent mission in the extension of our church work in the city.

It is to be regretted that Dr. W. X. Ninde, who had consented to be present and speak upon the occasion, was unavoidably detained. The other speakers upon the programme felt the constraint which the limited time at their disposal imposed upon them.

Rev. C. T. Allen did not incline to rejoice in the work of the alliance so much as a point attained, as a point of departure for the future. He sketched rather humorously the city appointments at the ensuing conference, and introduced a new one not now existing, which he named the Preston church, and which he located somewhere on the Cass or Brush farm, as far up as Harper Hospital, and to the founding of which he offered to contribute ten dollars a month till completed. This was a bold suggestion, but it was received with great favor by the audience.

T. C. Owen was introduced as the man who had the honor of suggesting to the alliance the project of paying the church debt. But he most respectfully declined this distinction, and awarded it to Mr. Reuben Robinson of the Tabernacle church.

Rev. Dr. Bayliss began his address by assuring the audience that he was always short. He congratulated himself on being for the first time in many years the pastor of a church which had a steeple, and—no debt. His two former pastorates had each fulfilled one particular of this beatitude, but were wanting in the other. While he regarded the liquidation of our debt as a great blessing, the higher good to which he hoped it might contribute, was the extension of our work in the city; and to this end he ardently desired that a baptism of power might come upon the church, and that these freed churches might resound with the music of a genuine revival of religion.

The service closed before 1 P.M., having lasted nearly two hours and a half.

### MR. DAVID PRESTON TOLD HOW IT WAS DONE.

In order that other churches and groups of churches which have been in bondage "lo, these many years" may be set at liberty and be glad with us on next thanksgiving day (1881), I will state some of the leading features and some of the details and incidents in our work here. The thought of liquidating the debts of these six churches through "the Detroit M. E. church and Sunday-school alliance" was first suggested by a member of the Tabernacle church. This church was the most heavily burdened with debt of them all, and while looking around and above for some mode of deliverance, this alliance plan was strongly impressed upon their minds. They said if our small membership of 230 could pay an average of $25 per member for two successive years, our large debt of $12,000 would all be wiped out; but we cannot possibly do this in our poverty. But we believe that we could pay our current expenses, and $10 or more per member towards the debt, and if we can do it, we know that all the other churches could do as well. And if they all will do it then all of our churches would be entirely free from debt within two years; so they made up the short problem. The members of the churches were added together and the aggregate number was about 1,800. The debts were thus added and found to aggregate $35,500. If one member can pay $10 in one year 1,800 can pay $18,000, and if 1,800 will pay $18,000 in one year, in two years they will pay $36,000. The Central church has a membership of some 800, and a debt of $8,000. All of these 800 persons had sufficient knowledge of addition and multiplication to know that in solving this problem we should have nothing financially to gain, but should lose some over $8,000, yet for our brethren's sake the Central, by a unanimous vote of their official board joined hands with their weaker or more heavily incumbered brethren, on this basis. From March 17, 1879, for about three months a noon prayer-meeting from twelve to one, was held in the parlor of the Central church to invoke the blessing of God upon us in organizing and carrying forward this good work. These meetings were small, usually ranging from ten to twenty persons, with one or more representatives from each church. In these meetings we asked for strength, for health, for wisdom, for patience and prosperity, for perseverance, for faith in God, that this work should be accomplished in His own good time, and in his own way. And now at the close of this journey, and the completion of this work, as we look back over all the months and weeks and days since it was organized we can truthfully say that Jesus, the Great Captain, has led us "all the way."

The first money paid into the alliance was paid May 1, 1879, when a good brother handed me two dollars, and said, "This is all I can do now, but I hope to do more before the work is completed." I made this first entry with red ink —the date, the name, the amount—and before I closed the book I said to myself, this is a small beginning and it will require almost 18,000 times this sum to finish the work, but I believe in my heart that the work will be completed and the whole amount raised within the specified time.

Four days later (on May 5th) the first addition was made to the two dollars, when a brother handed me an even $100 in greenbacks. Then I said again, it is coming, surely coming; not all in hundreds, nor fifties, nor twenty-fives, nor tens, but in pennies, in half-dimes, in dimes, in quarters and halves, and so on, in sums ranging from one cent to $1,000. Thus the work began, and it moved steadily forward. On the 25th of November, 1879, after seven months' work, we had paid in, all told, but $3,549.12, only about one-tenth of the whole amount. At the end of the first year we had gathered in a little less than $12,000.

It was then proposed by some member of the Tabernacle church that we shorten the time for the completion of this work from July 1, 1881, to November 25, 1880. At first this proposition seemed too bold, and did not receive much favor, but within two or three weeks the tide turned in favor of the short route (November 25, 1880) and this plan was unanimously adopted by all the churches, and work on this line vigorously commenced. Good work was accomplished in May and June, but in July and August little was done. In September the work was again commenced in earnest and carried forward to completion.

On the 15th of November, 1880, after each one of the six churches had done all that it seemed possible for them to do, we were still about $2,700 short. I said I do not know from where, nor from whom this is coming; but I believe it will come. On Tuesday evening, November 16, 125 or thereabouts of our friends from the different churches were gathered by invitation at the Central chapel. There was not any one present that night who did not feel that they had given all they could and all they ought to give for the work. But they sang together "Oh for a thousand tongues to sing," "What a friend we have in Jesus," "All hail the power of Jesus' name," etc. Then they kneeled and prayed together, then came a short experience meeting. They talked together and wept together over this work which seemed so near, and yet possibly so far from completion. Then the books were opened for further subscription, and in a short time $1,600 of the balance had been pledged, in sums ranging from $5 to $100. Then came a sumptuous repast, and with it a pleasant and interesting social gathering in groups around the table. All were unanimous in saying that this was one of the very best love feasts they had ever attended. That feeling abides with them to-day and will abide with them forever.

How about the balance of $1,100? Another meeting was held November 19th, at the office of Hon. John Owen, at 4:30 P. M. But six were present. These six took $650 additional stock, leaving a balance of $450. How will this last amount be obtained? I said I do not know; but it will come within the specified time. On the 20th $100 came, on the 22d $100, on the 23d $125, and at 4 P. M., on the 24th, the last $130 was given very cheerfully and pleasantly by two business men. And at 4:15 I wrote in my book again with red ink, November 24, 1880, 4:15 P. M., "It is finished."

In conclusion, I will say that this $35,500 was contributed not by the few but by the many. I think that more than 3,000 men, women and children in these churches and Sunday-schools contributed something for this object. There is scarcely a member in the church, or a child in the Sunday-school, who did not unite with this army and help the work forward. The largest amount given by any one person was $1,500. But four persons gave as high as $1,000. Aside from these four, not more than eight or ten gave as high as $500. So that much the greater part of the whole sum came from the masses, in sums of $300, $200, $100, and smaller sums. On the 8th of November a good lady, in quite moderate circumstances, paid $600 in one payment, which was a grand and noble offering. When the third and fourth call was made in one of these churches for additional offerings, one good brother said he had $50 which he had saved for a new overcoat. He gave it all and said he would do without the coat this winter.

The pastor of the Tabernacle said he did not believe there was a man, woman, or child in the whole church or Sunday-school who had not done their whole duty. I do not think that more than $500 of this whole sum has been contributed outside of our own church and congregation.

I have already said too much. I will break short off, by hoping and praying that many clusters of churches in sister cities, east, west, north, and south, will, during the present year, go and do likewise, and that on the next thanksgiving day they will all be glad, glad, glad.

At a meeting of the official board of the Simpson M. E. church, held on Monday evening, November 29th, the following was unanimously adopted:

*Resolved*, **That we, as members and officers of the Simpson M. E. church, have great reason for rejoicing and giving thanks to God for our delivery from the burden of the heavy debt under which we have so long labored and struggled; and realizing that our delivery has been by the blessing of God accomplished by the earnest work of the Detroit M. E. church and Sunday-school alliance, therefore be it**

*Resolved*, **That the thanks of the Simpson M. E. church be and are hereby tendered to the alliance in general, and particularly to our Brother J. N. M. McCune, "who has borne the heat and burden of the day," and to whom, for his patient self-sacrificing and untiring devotion to the work, success in raising our quota of the aggregate debt is so largely due.**

## THE ALLIANCE.

In June, 1878, on a Sabbath evening, two members of our church met at the close of service, and the conversation turned upon methods of church work. One of them was a pastor who had spent almost three years of devoted effort in organizing his own church, and enlisting them as far as possible in visiting every family in the precincts of his pastorate. A large measure of success had crowned his labors, many souls having been brought to Christ. The want of unity of effort among the churches was felt to be a serious hindrance to the progress of Methodism. While each church was absorbed in its own special field, large districts in the city were neglected. The smaller churches in the suburbs could do little more than look after their own interests, and for this they had a small corps of laborers. The Central church embraced almost one-half of our membership in the city, and fully half of the surplus talent available for Sunday-school and missionary work outside, and a large proportion of the means available for such objects. It was deeply felt that some general organization was needed which should unify the officiary and the laborers of all our churches and enable them to concentrate their efforts upon the most eligible localities. It had more than once transpired in the history of our churches in the city that local interest had resulted in planting a church or Sunday-school where it did not best serve the cause,—a mistake it was afterwards impossible to rectify. The conception of the alliance flashed upon their minds, and upon consultation with the presiding elder, Rev. J. M. Fuller, it was decided to call a meeting to consider the feasibility of organizing some general society which should embrace and operate all our missionary interests in the city. A call was sent out over the signature of the presiding elder, inviting a large number of our members from all the churches to meet at the Central for this object. The suggestion was favorably received, and a committee consisting of J. M. Arnold, J. M. Fuller and Horace Hitchcock was appointed to draft a plan of organization and to report at a subsequent meeting. That meeting was held at the Central church and embraced all the official members of our church in the city, very few failing to respond. Such an assemblage had never before been gathered in Detroit.

Seventy-five men from all ranks of business and professional life, many of whom though somewhat acquainted did not even know each other as Methodists, when thus assembled served to impress each other with the conviction that they ought to do something in advancing Methodism and evangelizing the waste places in the city, and that if they acted in unison they could do a great work. They adopted a form of organization which has been maintained and has held its stated meetings since. It had not proceeded far, when the incubus of debt which had remained from the great extension of our church accommodations in 1864-1874 was encountered. Like Zerubbaal they said, "What art thou, O great mountain? the mountain shall become a plain;" and they unitedly set about the work. The result is seen in the event commemorated on thanksgiving day, and we trust this is but the beginning of our alliance work.

### LIST OF DETROIT APPOINTMENTS.

The following Conspectus shows the name of every preacher of the M. E. church that has been appointed to the English speaking churches in this city, with the date of their pastorate.

*First Church.*

| | |
|---|---|
| 1804 | Nathan Bangs. |
| 1809 | William Case. |
| 1810 | Ninian Holmes.<br>(7 members). |
| 1811 | Ninian Holmes.<br>Silas Hopkins, (30 members). |
| 1812 | George W. Densmore.<br>He did not come on account of the war. |
| 1813-14 | War. The war for three years. |
| 1815-16 | Joseph Hickox.<br>(7 members). |
| 1817 | Gideon Laning. |
| 1818 | Alpheus Davis. |
| 1819 | Truman Dixon. |
| 1820 | John P. Kent. |
| 1821 | Platt B. Morey.<br>Died. Supplied by John P. Kent. |
| 1822 | Alfred Bronson. |
| 1822 | Samuel Baker. |
| 1823 | Elias Pattee.<br>Billings O. Plympton. |
| 1824 | Elias Pattee. |

| | |
|---|---|
| 1815-16 | Isaac C. Hunter. |
| 1825 | Wm. Simmons. |
| 1826-7 | Zarah H. Coston. |
| 1828-9 | Arza Brown. |
| 1830 | Alvan Billings. |
| 1831-2 | Henry Colclazer. |
| 1833-4 | Elijah Crane. |
| 1835 | William Herr. |
| 1836-7 | Edward Thompson. |
| 1838 | Jonathan E. Chaplain. |
| 1839-40 | Henry Colclazer. |
| 1841 | Andrew M. Fitch. |
| 1842 | James S. Harrison. |
| 1843 | James S. Harrison. |
| | Jonathan Blanchard. |

### *Woodward Avenue.*

| | |
|---|---|
| 1844 | James V. Watson. |
| 1845-6 | John A. Baughman. |
| 1847 | O. Mason. |
| 1848-9 | Samuel D. Simonds. |
| 1850-1 | Elijah H. Pilcher. |
| 1852-3 | Wellington H. Collins. |
| 1854-5 | A. D. Wilbor. |
| 1856-7 | F. A. Blades. |
| 1858 | S. Clements, Jr. |
| 1859-60 | S. Reed. |
| 1861-2 | John M. Arnold. |
| 1863-4 | James M. Buckley. |

### *Congress Street.*

| | |
|---|---|
| 1844-5 | R. R. Richards. |
| 1846 | James F. Davidson. |
| 1847-8 | Harrison Morgan. |
| 1849-50 | George Taylor. |
| 1851 | John Russell. |
| 1852 | C. C. Olds. |
| 1853 | W. Mahon. |
| 1854-5 | M. Hickey. |
| 1855-7 | A. J. Eldred. |
| 1858-9 | F. A. Blades. |
| 1860 | F. W. May. |
| 1861-2 | O. Sanborn. |
| 1863 | James S. Smart. |

### *Central Church.*

| | |
|---|---|
| 1865 | J. M. Buckley. |
| | J. H. McCarty. |
| 1866 | J. H. McCarty. |
| | Lewis R. Fiske. |
| 1867-8 | Lewis R. Fiske. |
| 1869 | B. F. Cocker. |
| | D. D. Buck. |
| | J. M. Arnold. |
| | G. G. Lyon. |
| 1870-2 | W. X. Ninde. |
| 1873-4 | L. R. Fiske. |
| | J. B. Atchinson. |
| 1875 | L. R. Fiske. |
| 1876-8 | W. X. Ninde. |
| 1879-80 | J. H. Bayliss. |

### *Lafayette Street.*

| | |
|---|---|
| 1849 | Joseph S. Perry. |
| 1850 | Lorenzo D. Price. |
| 1851 | George Taylor. |
| 1852-3 | M. Hickey. |
| 1854-5 | W. H. Perrine. |
| 1856-7 | James F. Davidson. |
| 1858 | Robert Bird. |
| 1859-60 | D. C. Jacokes. |
| 1861 | S. Reed. |
| 1862-4 | J. C. Wortley. |
| 1865-6 | O. Whitmore. |
| 1867-9 | Elisha E. Caster. |
| 1870-2 | J. McEldowney. |

### *Trinity.*

| | |
|---|---|
| 1873 | W. X. Ninde. |
| 1874 | William H. Pearce. |

### *Tabernacle.*

| | |
|---|---|
| 1875 | W. H. Pearce. |
| 1876 | L. R. Fiske. |
| 1877-9 | C. T. Allen. |
| 1880 | William Dawe. |

*City Mission.—Seventh Street.*

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1852 | Riley C. Crawford. | 1860 | John Levington. |
| 1853 | Richard McConnell. | 1861-2 | Jason W. Kellogg. |
| 1854 | Joseph W. Holt. | 1863 | John M. Arnold. |
| 1855 | John A. Baughman. | 1864 | H. N. Brown. |
| 1856 | M. Hickey. | 1865 | S. P. Warner. |
| 1857 | John Levington. | 1866 | M. Hickey. |
| 1858 | John A. Baughman. | 1867 | Squire E. Warren. |
| 1859 | Arthur Edwards, Jr. | 1868 | W. J. Campbell. |

*Simpson.*

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1869-70 | T. J. Joslyn. | 1875-7 | W. W. Washburn. |
| 1871 | William H. Shier. | 1878 | David Caller. |
| 1872-4 | Thomas Stalker. | 1879-80 | William H. Poole. |

*Jefferson Avenue.*

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1866 | M. Hickey. | 1875 | Jas. M. Fuller. |
| 1867-9 | Alfred F. Bourns. | 1876 | Elijah H. Pilcher. |
| 1870-2 | E. E. Caster. | 1877-9 | R. S. Pardington. |
| 1873-4 | A. R. Bartlett. | 1880 | C. T. Allen. |

*Sixteenth Street.*

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1872 | H. W. Brown. | 1877 | John Russel. |
| 1873-4 | L. P. Davis. | 1878 | J. C. Higgins. |
| 1875 | Squire E. Warren. | 1879-80 | L. E. Lennox. |
| 1876 | L. H. Dean. | | |

*Fort Street.*

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1874-6 | R. S. Pardington. | 1880 | G. W. Lowe. |
| 1877-8 | W. Q. Burnett. | | |

The following are the Presiding Elders who have served upon the Detroit district since the introduction of Methodism in the city:

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1804 | Samuel Choate. | 1836-7 | Wm. Herr. |
| 1809 | Joseph Sawyer. | 1838-39-40-41 | Geo. Smith. |
| 1810-11-12 | Henry Ryan. | 1842-3 | E. H. Pilcher. |
| 1815 | Wm. Case. | 1844-5-6-7 | Elijah Crane. |
| 1816-17-18-19 | Henry Ryan. | 1848-49-50-51 | James Shaw. |
| 1820 | James B. Finley. | 1852-3 | John A. Baughman. |
| 1821 | John Strange. | 1854-5-6-7 | Wellington H. Collins. |
| 1822 | James B. Finley. | 1858-9 | James F. Davidson. |
| 1823 | John Strange. | 1860-61-62-63 | M. Hickey. |
| 1824 | James B. Finley. | 1864-65-66-67 | S. Clements, Jr. |
| 1825 | Wm. Simmons. | 1868-9-70-1 | F. A. Blades. |
| 1826-7-8 | Z. H. Coston. | 1872-3-4-5 | Elijah H. Pilcher. |
| 1829-30-31 | Curtis Goddard. | 1876-7-8-9 | Jas. M. Fuller. |
| 1832-33-34-35 | James Gilruth. | 1880 | W. W. Washburn. |

### OUR CITY MINISTRY.

The Conspectus of the ministry engaged in our work in this city is calculated to awaken many interesting reminiscences. Of the earlier names much might be said. Nathan Bangs, who first visited Detroit as a pioneer of our church, is an honored and venerable name in our history. Rev. Wm. Case is better known in Canada than in the States, but he is identified with the history of Methodism in America. He came to Detroit and preached as late as 1854. Doctor, afterwards Bishop Thompson is pleasantly recollected by our older members. John A. Baughman filled a large place in the early history of our church in the city and State. As a popular orator he undoubtedly excelled any other of our ministry. W. H. Collins as pastor and presiding elder left a deep impress upon the church. Rev. J. V. Watson, though afterwards greatly honored and valued for his eloquence and ability in the pulpit and in journalism, does not seem to have made any remarkable impression upon the city, except as an eccentric speaker. Many of those who served as pastors during the last thirty years are now deceased. Of the living it does not become us to speak in a commendatory way. Many of the older men now in connection with the sister conferences have spent a portion of the prime of their days and usefulness here. Of those who joined the Michigan conference, Brothers Eldred, Olds, Perrine, and others are still effective. Of those who belong to the Detroit conference, the majority are still effective, but many are on the superannuated list.

But this list, while one or two ministers, such as the venerable Alfred Bronson, spans over half a century, and while one layman has been connected with the church fifty-eight years, really represents almost three generations from 1820 to the present. Who can conjecture what the history of the church shall develop in the next half century?

The Conspectus of Detroit Methodism, and the historical paper read before the Detroit alliance, Thanksgiving day, must suffice for that long period in which the city of Detroit represented all there was of Methodism in the State, viz., from 1804 to 1826. At the session of the Ohio conference, held at Columbus, October 12, 1825, a district was organized in Michigan as follows. We give the report of members for the year succeeding, in order that they shall correspond with the appointments. That is, the members represent the close of the year. We retain also the earlier form of names of places:

Detroit district, William Simmons, P. E.

| | No. Members. |
|---|---|
| Detroit city—William Simmons | 70 |
| Detroit circuit—John A. Baughman | 290 |
| Wyandotte Indian mission—James B. Finley | 250 |

### 1826-27.

Detroit district—Z. Coston, P. E.

| | |
|---|---|
| Detroit city—Z. Coston | 70 |
| Detroit circuit—John James | 226 |
| Monroe—John A. Baughman | 157 |
| St. Clair mission—James F. Donahoe | 20 |

### 1827-28.

Detroit district—Zarah H. Coston, P. E.

| | |
|---|---|
| Detroit city—Zarah H. Coston | 65 |
| Detroit circuit—William Reynolds, John Janes | 230 |
| Monroe—George W. Walker, James Armstrong | 250 |

### 1828-29.

Detroit district—Z. Coston, P. E. and Superintendent St. Clair mission.

| | No. Members. |
|---|---|
| Detroit city—Arza Brown | 75 |
| Oakland—William T. Snow | 246 |
| Huron—Benjamin Cooper | 161 |
| Monroe—George W. Walker | 86 |
| Defiance, Ohio—To be supplied | 56 |
| St. Clair mission—Elias Pattee | 49 |

### 1829-30.

Detroit district—Curtis Goddard, P. E. and superintendent of Defiance, St. Mary's, St. Clair and St. Joseph missions.

| | |
|---|---|
| Detroit—Arza Brown | 56 |
| Oakland—William T. Snow | 234 |
| Huron—Leonard B. Gurley | 250 |
| Monroe—Jacob Hill | 106 |
| St. Clair mission—Samuel A. Latta | 95 |
| St. Joseph mission—Erastus Felton | 76 |

Zarah H. Coston transferred and stationed at Pittsburg.

### 1830-31.

Detroit district—C. Goddard, P. E.

| | |
|---|---|
| Detroit—Alvan Billings | 66 |
| Oakland—Arza Brown, W. Sprague | 308 |
| Ann Arbor—H. Colclazer, E. H. Pilcher | 373 |
| Monroe—James W. Finley | 135 |
| St. Clair mission—Benjamin Cooper | 74 |
| St. Joseph mission—L. B. Gurley, Erastus Felton | 220 |

### 1831-32.

Detroit district—C. Goddard, P. E.

| | |
|---|---|
| Detroit—Henry Colclazer | 101 |
| Oakland—Bradford Frazee, Thomas Wiley | 481 |
| Tecumseh—E. H. Pelcher, E. S. Gavit | 330 |
| Monroe—James W. Finley | 137 |
| Ypsilanti—A. Billings, Benjamin Allen | 424 |
| St. Joseph mission—Benjamin Cooper, William Sprague | 100 |
| Kalamazoo mission—Erastus Felton | 30 |
| St. Clair mission—Leonard Hill, Elias Pattee superintendent | 76 |

In this year the minutes show that of the money distributed among conference claimants, about $6,000 was from the book concern, or $400 each to the conferences which raised such a fund.

### 1832-33.

Detroit district—J. Gilruth, P. E.

| | |
|---|---|
| Detroit—H. Colclazer, E. Pattee superintendent | 114 |
| Mount Clemens—L. Hill, R. Cheney | 402 |
| Farmington—M. Swift | 200 |
| Ypsilanti—A. Billings, A. B. Elliott | 486 |
| Ann Arbor—W. M. Sullivan, L. D. Whitney | 248 |
| Tecumseh—James F. Davidson, T. Wiley | 310 |

| | No. Members. |
|---|---|
| Monroe—E. H. Pilcher, E. C. Gavit | 243 |
| St. Clair mission—E. S. Gavit | 77 |
| Saginaw mission—B. Frazee | 9 |
| Calhoun mission—A. Dixon | 93 |

### 1833.

| | |
|---|---|
| Detroit district—James Gilruth, P. E. | |
| Detroit—Elijah Crane | 121 |
| Monroe—E. H. Pilcher, W. Sprague | 309 |
| Mt. Clemens—L. Hill, W. M. Sullivan | 331 |
| Farmington—J. F. Davidson, J. Kinnear | 411 |
| Ypsilanti—M. Swift, R. Lawrence | 645 |
| Ann Arbor—H. Colclazer, A. B. Elliott | 327 |
| Tecumseh—B. Frazee, D. McGregor | 343 |
| St. Clair mission—L. D. Whitney | 84 |
| Calhoun—Thomas Wiley | 86 |
| Huron mission—W. H. Brockway | 135 |

### 1834.

| | |
|---|---|
| Detroit district—J. Gilruth, P. E. | |
| Detroit—E. Crane | 131 |
| Tecumseh—T. Wiley | 440 |
| Ann Arbor—H. Colclazer, H. Gearing | 415 |
| Farmington—E. H. Pilcher, F. A. Seaborn | 448 |
| Mt. Clemens—L. D. Whitney | 357 |
| Ypsilanti—W. H. Brockway | 645 |
| Plymouth mission—M. Swift, L. Davis | 411 |
| St. Clair—A. B. Elliott | 105 |
| Calhoun Mission—J. F. Davidson, R. Lawrence | 236 |

### 1835.

| | |
|---|---|
| Ann Arbor district—H. Colclazer, P. E. | |
| Ann Arbor—T. Wiley | 137 |
| Thomas Wiley died during the year at the age of 30 years. | |
| Tecumseh—J. F. Davidson, W. Jackson | 483 |
| Saline—W. M. Sullivan, L. Smith | 428 |
| Monroe—R. Triggs, M. G. Perkizer | 296 |
| Calhoun mission—E. H. Pilcher, F. A. Seaborn | 280 |
| Coldwater mission—R. Lawrence | 259 |
| Grand River mission—O. Monnett | 27 |
| Detroit district—J. Gilruth, P. E. | |
| Detroit—W. Herr | 159 |
| St. Clair—H. Gering | 129 |
| Mt. Clemens—L. D. Whitney, L. Chatfield | 401 |
| Farmington—W. Sprague, L. Davis | 375 |
| Plymouth—E. Crane, O. Mitchell | 476 |
| Ypsilanti—A. B. Elliott | 270 |
| Saginaw mission—W. H. Brockway | 10 |
| Huron mission—A. Buckles, E. Pattee superintendent | 128 |

Lapeer mission, organized during the year, reported 186 members.

### 1836.

The Michigan conference, organized this year, embraced three districts in Ohio. We give only the appointments in Michigan:

| | No. Members. |
|---|---|
| Detroit district—W. Herr, P. E. | |
| Detroit—Edward Thompson | 184 |
| Ypsilanti and Huron missions—W. H. Brockway, Charles Babcock | 187 |
| Plymouth—William Sprague, David Burns | 486 |
| Farmington—L. D. Whitney, Mark Delany | 419 |
| Romeo—A. B. Elliott, L. Chatfield | 545 |
| Mt. Clemens—Hiran Gearing | 159 |
| St. Clair—R. Triggs | 98 |
| Lapeer mission—Philip Wareham | 11 |
| Saginaw mission—O. F. North | 193 |
| Livingston mission—W. Jackson | |
| Ann Arbor district—H. Colclazer, P. E. | |
| Ann Arbor—Peter Sharp | 181 |
| Dexter | 262 |
| Monroe—J. F. Davidson | 112 |
| Saline—Richard Lawrence, Allen Staples | 420 |
| Tecumseh—W. M. Sullivan, J. H. Pitzell | 492 |
| Coldwater—Peter Sabin, Lewis Smith | 92 |
| Calhoun—Elijah Crane (Marshall) | 223 |
| Spring Arbor—John Kinnear, M. G. Perkiser | 476 |
| Marshall | 223 |
| Bean Creek mission—L. Davis | 527 |
| Grand River mission—F. A. Seaborn | 68 |
| Adrian appears in the report with | 164 |

### 1837.

Michigan conference. The appointments were as follows, viz.:

Detroit district—William Herr, P. E.
Detroit—Edward Thompson.
Ypsilanti—Wesley J. Wells.
Dearbornville and Huron missions—W. H. Brockway.
Plymouth—William Sprague, O. F. North.
Farmington—Larman Chatfield.
Romeo—D. Burns, Robert Ridgeway.
Mt. Clemens—A. B. Elliot.
St. Clair—Robert Triggs.
Sault Ste. Marie and Kewawenon missions—D. M. Chandler.
Ann Arbor district—H. Colclazer, P. E.
Ann Arbor—E. H. Pilcher.
Monroe—J. F. Davidson.
Dundee—James Shaw.
Saline—R. Lawrence, Lewis Smith.
Tecumseh—Peter Sharp, R. R. Richards.
Adrian—J. H. Pitezel.
Bean Creek mission—J. Scotford, A. Staples.
Coldwater—Peter Sabin, L. Davis.
Marshall—Elijah Crane.

Spring Arbor—J. Kinnear.
Flint River district—Samuel P. Shaw, P. E.
Flint River mission—Luther D. Whitney.
Saginaw mission—Charles Babcock.
Lapeer—F. Britain.
Livingston—To be supplied.
Dexter—G. W. Breckenridge.
Shiawassee—W. Jackson, I. Bennett.
Clinton mission—A. Fleming.
Grand River mission—O. Mitchell.

## 1838.

| | No. Members. |
|---|---|
| Detroit district—George Smith, P. E. | |
| Detroit—Jonathan E. Chaplin | 180 |
| Pontiac—Josiah Brakeman | 202 |
| Farmington—Leonard Hill | 307 |
| Oakland—John Cosart | 275 |
| Lapeer mission—Oren Mitchell | 136 |
| Flint River mission—L. D. Whitney | 185 |
| Saginaw mission—Jonathan Hudson | 16 |
| Romeo—James Shaw, R. R. Richards | 764 |
| Mt. Clemens—Richard Lawrence | 242 |
| Palmer—Alanson Fleming | 78 |
| Port Huron mission—Miles Sanford | 20 |
| Ann Arbor district—H. Colclazer, P. E. | |
| Ann Arbor—Elijah Crane | 129 |
| Ypsilanti—J. H. Pitezell | 144 |
| Plymouth—John Kinnear, Adam Minnis | 582 |
| Northville and Plymouth—J. A. Kellam | 216 |
| Livingston—Flavel Britain | 193 |
| Dexter—Oliver Burgess | 304 |
| Saline—A. B. Elliott, L. Davis | |
| Tecumseh—William Sprague, George King | 500 |
| Adrian—E. Thomas | 175 |
| Sault Ste. Marie and Kewaweenon—W. H. Brockway | 65 |
| Marshall district—E. H. Pilcher, P. E. | |
| Marshall—A. Billings, Allen Staples | 386 |
| Coldwater—J. F. Davidson, Levi Warriner | 411 |
| Jonesville—Peter Sabin, G. C. Brown | 456 |
| Spring Arbor—G. W. Breckenridge, T. S. Jackway | 556 |
| Ingham mission—W. Jackson | 120 |
| Clinton mission—R. L. Blowers | 104 |
| Shiawassee mission—Isaac Bennett | 188 |
| Lyons—L. Chatfield | 46 |
| Flint River district | |
| Flint River mission | 149 |
| Grand Rapids mission—J. H. Frazee | 55 |

Total for the State, 6,968.

1839.

| | No. Members. |
|---|---|
| Detroit district—George Smith, P. E. | |
| Detroit—Henry Colclazer | 240 |
| Pontiac—Miles Sanford, Resin Sapp | 353 |
| Farmington—James Shaw, H. W. Ransom | 321 |
| Oakland—John Cosart | 364 |
| Lapeer mission—Ebenezer Steele | 222 |
| Flint mission—Larmon Chatfield, Samuel Whitwam | 232 |
| Romeo—L. D. Whitney, Joseph Reese | 551 |
| Utica—Josiah Brakeman | 193 |
| Mt. Clemens—J. Hudson, D. McGregor | 230 |
| Palmer mission—Salmon Steele | 178 |
| Ann Arbor district—A. Billings, P. E. | |
| Ann Arbor—Elijah Crane | 120 |
| Ypsilanti—David Burns | 155 |
| Plymouth—Robert Triggs, A. Fleming | 523 |
| Northville and Plymouth—J. H. Pitezell | 130 |
| Livingston—O. M. Goodale, G. W. Brown | 358 |
| Shiawassee mission—Flavel Britain | 392 |
| Dexter—Adam Minnis, J. K. Gillett | 222 |
| Saline—Geo. Bradley, Urias Hoyt | 622 |
| Tecumseh—William Sprague, John Sharpe | 475 |
| Adrian—J. A. Kellam | 160 |
| Marshall district—E. H. Pilcher, P. E. | |
| Marshall—Benjamin Sabin | 182 |
| Battle Creek—J. F. Davidson, W. Jackson | 321 |
| Coldwater—Roswell Parker, J. Jones | 438 |
| Jonesville—John Scotford, Peter Sabin | 466 |
| Spring Arbor—G. W. Breckenridge, R. L. Blowers | 439 |
| Jackson—L. Davis, T. S. Jackway | 330 |
| Ingham mission—Isaac Bennett | 195 |
| Lyons mission—Z. C. Brown, Levi Warriner | 237 |
| Grand Rapids mission—R. R. Richards, Allen Staples | 151 |
| Indian mission—W. H. Brockway, superintendent | 33 |
| Sault Ste. Marie—W. H. Brockway, George King | 43 |

During this year the Michigan Conference was still extended into Ohio, but in the next year it was so constituted as to embrace only the State of Michigan. At this conference it was ordered that in case the conference should be divided, the next session should be held at Marshall, Mich. During the year one entire new district was formed, called the Michigan district, as follows:

| | |
|---|---|
| Niles—James S. Harrison, S. S. Williams | 250 |
| Edwardsburg— —— —— | 100 |
| White Pigeon— —— —— | 200 |
| Centreville— —— —— | 238 |
| Kalamazoo—E. Kellogg, J. Colclazer | 310 |
| Berrien mission— —— —— | 150 |
| Paw Paw mission— —— —— | 80 |
| Allugun— —— —— | 52 |

Part of these points had been embraced in the Indiana conference, Laporte district.

# LETTER FROM THE HON. GEORGE C. BATES.

LEADVILLE, COLORADO, *January 31, 1880.*

*To Colonel M. Shoemaker, President of the State Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan:*

MY GOOD FRIENDS:—Allow me, from my beautiful mountain home, two miles high above Lansing, and from the headquarters of the "sons of Michigan," for Colorado, to congratulate you on your annual meeting of our old "band of brothers," and express my regret that I could not join you there; or rather, that you could not hold your festival here. A native born son of Michigan acts as my amanuensis, and nearly three thousand native and adopted sons of Michigan come here to talk about the "old folks at home," while directly over my table hangs the photographic picture of our delightful reunion in February, 1878, on the steps of the old capitol at Lansing; and as I point out to these young Wolverines the stalwart form of General Joseph Brown, of Tecumseh, the tall and straight figure of Judge Hezekiah G. Wells, of Kalamazoo, and the sturdy, big-headed democratic son of Plymouth, Jonathan Shearer, and relate the history of Michigan from 1833 onward, tears mingle with our memories and sadness unites with our State pride, at the past, present, and future of our own beautiful peninsula.

How strange it is, that among the early pioneers of Michigan, some of us who saw Ann Arbor as a mere hamlet, Coldwater, with but a single log cabin, Hillsdale before it was born, Adrian with its half-dozen clustered dwellings, and Detroit with only three thousand inhabitants, should now look down away here in the center of the old "American desert," upon a city only eighteen months old, with a population of 35,000 people, producing monthly more than a million and a half of bars of silver, with four daily papers, four banks, whose annual deposits for the last year have exceeded $20,000,000; with churches of all denominations, schools high and low, and from 5,000 to 10,000 teams constantly employed in furnishing us supplies; with 200 drinking saloons, 150 gambling houses, 100 bagnios, 150 lawyers, two court calendars numbering 1500 cases; with streets full of happy children, superb sleighing since the 1st of December, and every comfort and encouragement that society can give; with two as fine theatres as Detroit can produce, and with an energy that would make the old fogies of Detroit rub their eyes, like Rip Van Winkle after his twenty years' sleep in the Highlands; and all this overlooked and aided by 3,000 noble sons of Michigan.

Only think, my old gray-haired brethren, that since I first met General Joseph Brown, Stillman Blanchard, Judge Hoag, and Judge Ross Wilkins, around the hickory fire of Jesse Button, at Tecumseh, on the 21st day of March, 1834, up to the present time, over 20,000,000 of pioneers have swept on westward, across the great lakes, over the prairies of Illinois and Iowa, spanned the Mississippi, crossed the Missouri, and stopped only on the shores of the Pacific and the beautiful waters of Puget Sound, and all this as a pioneer. It is Michigan, and from Michigan, memory now speaks out before me. One of our largest mercantile establishments here is of Michigan, and its owner, in the corner of this block, is a native of Tecumseh; and bringing here enterprise, industry and energy, he has accumulated wealth; while an Irish adopted citizen, an old Detroit policeman, is the alderman of this ward in the common council, and the prospective mayor of Leadville, the eighth wonder of the world, a city whose growth and existence is more marvelous than the pyramids of Egypt or the temple of Solomon.

Within twelve months from this letter I will be able to get into a Pullman car, the train of which shall be filled with bars of gold and silver bullion, and reach Detroit from Leadville in much less time than it took me in 1834 to go from Detroit to Chicago; and I can look around to-day over a city and its surroundings that contains more people than did Buffalo, Cleveland, Detroit, Chicago and St. Louis, in May, 1834, and in going home will pass through a region whose products are greater to-day than were those of the whole union at that period of time. But enough; my heart is too full, my memories too accurate to go further, and I can only say, God bless you all, and after life's fitful dream is over, and we sleep in death, may it be said of us all, that we were true to our country, and the whole of it, to Michigan from the beginning to the end, and that we have lived and died as became the hardy pioneers of one the noblest and brightest States of our Union.

Yours, GEORGE C. BATES.

## THE FIRST STATE FAIR OF MICHIGAN.

### WHO THE EXHIBITORS WERE, AND WHAT THEY GOT FOR THEIR PAINS. PRICES OF GRAIN IN THE DAYS OF THE PIONEERS.

**From the Detroit Post and Tribune of August 9, 1879.**

Your issues of the 4th and 5th insts. contain allusions to a State agricultural and horticultural exhibition held at the village of Ann Arbor in 1839, and you seem to have doubts as to such exhibition being held. Let me come to the rescue, from entire oblivion, of that illustrious institution, particularly as I had the honor of being one of its members, and perhaps the only one now living, and then nearly the only live one.

As stated in your article, an advertisement was published in one or more Detroit papers and some other papers in the State, saying that on the 1st of

October, 1839 (an official announcement), there would be a State fair held at Ann Arbor. At that time I owned a farm on Grosse Isle, which farm was later known as the Fox place, and was trying to introduce blooded stock, sheep and cattle, from a Holderness bull and some Leicestershire sheep of both sexes, imported by George Hentig, then of Grosse Isle. I had succeeded in raising some very fair specimens of half-bloods, and was naturally desirous of contending for the premiums offered by this State institution. I therefore gathered up about twenty head of my best animals, both cattle and sheep, and on the appointed day put in an appearance, I cannot say on the fair grounds, for there were no grounds designated as such. No preparation whatever had been made, no officers of the institution could be found, and not half-a-dozen citizens there had heard that such a fair was to be held.

Well, I was bound after driving my stock thirty miles to have a show, and found a centrally located vacant lot, put on my stock and commenced holding the State fair, and soon drew quite a respectable crowd. About 1 P. M. a farmer from Plymouth,—a very nice man I found him to be,—put in an appearance with specimens of cheese and butter, and that constituted the exhibition of the agricultural and horticultural fair of the State of Michigan for the year 1839.

So Mr. Tibbits and myself walked off with all the awards of premiums, or rather were entitled to those offered by the institution, consisting of silver sets, silver goblets, silver cups, spoons, etc., etc. But where, O where were they? Echo has not yet answered.

Well, on returning home from the State show I addressed the president of the society, the Hon. John Biddle, then residing in Detroit, asking what was loose, and why no officials of the association appeared at Ann Arbor. He very politely and regretfully informed me that the whole thing had entirely escaped his memory until the "day after the fair."

I ought to state that quite a number of the good people of the town and village gathered around and voted thanks to the exhibitors, and I have to this day felt proud of that State fair.

The paper of 1843, alluding to low prices, quoted wheat at sixty cents per bushel. The writer sold the best quality of white wheat that year for fifty cents. I remember in 1829 I commenced housekeeping in Detroit. My first barrel of flour cost $2.50. I also remember about 1835 the late frosts cut off nearly the whole crop of wheat throughout the State. The winter following was the most snowy and severe I have known in a residence of fifty years in the State. Fodder for stock became so scarce that many had to feed the grain they actually needed for the family, consequently our supply of flour had to be brought from Ohio. Our circulating medium (wildcat) was in such bad repute our traders and commercial men could not use it in Ohio, and therefore it required a large pile of Michigan wildcat to buy a little Ohio flour. I recollect one morning going in search of flour. Just as I reached the store of Shadrach Gillett, a steamer had arrived from Sandusky with five barrels of flour for him, and I considered myself in luck when I obtained one of them for $13 (choice wildcat at that). Ten years later wheat sold in Michigan for fifty cents, and Ohio corn juice could be bought at 15 cents per gallon, but wildcat and wildcat bankers had had their day.

This same farce will be reënacted when the fiat money men get into power in this government, if they ever do.

HENRY RAYMOND.

Bay City, August 6, 1879.

# THE UPPER PENINSULA.

---

## AN ADDRESS ON THE CLIMATE, SOIL, RESOURCES, DEVELOPMENT, COMMERCE AND FUTURE OF THE UPPER PENINSULA OF MICHIGAN.

---

BY ALEX CAMPBELL, OF MARQUETTE.

---

**Delivered in Representative Hall, at Lansing, February 6, 1861.**

Less than twenty-four years ago the upper peninsula became a part of the State of Michigan. At that time it was considered a comparatively worthless territory, its geographical position being unfavorable to agriculture, its climate frigid and unfriendly to all the pursuits we had come to regard as necessary in the settlement of a State.

The man who would have predicted the development that has followed—the opening of such exhaustless wealth—the existence of flourishing villages—the seats of future cities—and its already large commerce, would have been called a foolish dreamer.

But far back of the date we name, there was a man—the far-seeing sage and philosopher, Dr. Franklin—when, as the American Minister in Paris, he was fixing the boundary line between the United States and Great Britain, saw something of the importance of this country in the future. At that time he had access to the journals and charts of a corps of French engineers that had sloops and were exploring Lake Superior when Quebec fell to the British, "from which charts," he tells us, he "drew the line through Lake Superior, to include the most and best of the copper to the United States," and, says he, "the time will come when drawing that line would be considered the greatest service he ever rendered his country."*

If, then, when the general government transferred the upper peninsula to Michigan, there were none to regard it as an important acquisition, we rejoice that there was, quite a half century before, a man—a true friend to his country—who, in the discharge of his duties, had the industry to find and the sagacity to secure a territory the development of this hour proves to have been a great service—not to say the greatest he ever rendered his country.

In order that the people of Michigan may know more of this very important part of the State, which for the last few years has been attracting general attention, I will endeavor to bring more fully before the public mind its climate, soil, resources, commerce, and future.

---

*See Whitney and Foster's report of the Copper Regions.

The general impression everywhere seems to be that the climate of the Lake Superior country is frigid and severe beyond endurance—that for sufficient reasons it may be tolerated, but is nevertheless a sort of affliction. This feeling prevails especially in regard to its winters. How often I am asked, "How do you manage to keep warm there in the winter—I should think you would freeze to death." This utterance expresses the common notion of the frigidness of the country, but is it the experience of its people? It is true that the mean temperature of that climate is a few degrees lower* than in the latitude of Detroit or Chicago; it is also true that its snowy season is some longer and its snows some deeper, but such is the pureness, dryness and vitality of the atmosphere, that it is truly an elixir. Such is the bracing and life-giving power of the summer air, that it has become more than a Saratoga for the jaded business man and the invalid, and in almost every instance those who have thus sought recuperation and life have been rapturous in their praises of its invigorating influences. Such of course do not spend their winters there, their vocation being elsewhere, or the winter air too powerful for the consumptive, unless in its incipient stages. But among its most valued citizens are hundreds who owe their lives to the recuperating agencies of the climate, and the experience of all is that the winters are the pleasantest part of the year. The vitality and life it imparts are a positive luxury. They know nothing of the debility, the sallow-feebleness, feverish colds and barking coughs of the damp, depressing, changing climates of the lower latitudes. Animal and intellectual vigor, vivacity and a full flow of healthful spirit is their blest heritage. And what is existence without health? What are days and years without physical life? Indeed, the full possession of these, the country and climate that will secure the most perfect development of physical being, must ever be the home of the greatest human happiness, and because the inhabitants of this peninsula possess these blessings in an eminent degree, their universal testimony is, "If I only spend one-half of the year on the lake, I shall choose the winter." No happier or healthier people exist; their whole being gushing with a full tide of life, and neither the climate nor the winter's air will ever prove an objection to making the country a home, the practical pursuits of life being remunerative.

This peninsula has become a very important part of our State. It embraces an area of 16,237 square miles—territory sufficient for a State—the coast of which is washed with the waters of Lakes Michigan, Huron, the St. Mary's river and Lake Superior; in all a coast border of nearly 1,000 miles and enriched with some of the finest natural harbors in the world, as Bay de Noquette, Mackinaw, Detour, Whiskey Bay, Grand Island and L'Anse. In this respect the country is favored with peculiar natural advantages for the productiveness of its commerce, which is destined to assume a magnitude the most credulous are not now willing to admit. I would not, however, be understood as saying that the commerce of this peninsula does not now, or will not hereafter, need other improvements to facilitate and render secure the property and lives of its citizens; for these are now in constant hazard at the different business centres, for the want of such improvements.

The great interest, and that which gives primary and principal importance to the country, are its mineral deposits. But because these—the copper and the iron—thus far have given it such prominence, we must not conclude that it is barren of all other advantages.

---

*The average for the year is 7° lower.

A very important branch of business, and which, with the proper protection, will long continue a profitable and increasing field of industry, are the fisheries that now exist, or will hereafter be established. I see from the report of the superintendent of the Sault canal, that in 1859 there passed through it 4,359 barrels of fish. The year just closed, the amount was 4,051 barrels, and if the amount consumed on the lake were added, the aggregate products would not be less than 6,000 barrels. The northern part of Lake Huron, the Straits of Mackinaw, the northern part of Lake Michigan, the St. Mary's river, and most of the south shore of Lake Superior, all border upon, and so far as the fisheries are concerned, belong to this peninsula, and abound with the finest fresh water fish in the world, known as the white fish and Mackinaw trout. But, if the State would preserve these fisheries, and make them a permanent benefit, the legislature will enact a stringent prohibitory law against "pound fishing," for if this mode is continued, it will in a few years depopulate to a good extent these bays and lakes, keep the market glutted and depreciate their value. Seine and net fishing are the only modes that should be legalized as a branch of industry—as this would be remunerative and will protect the fisheries against premature exhaustion, and render healthy the commerce of this very important article.

Nor is this peninsula without advantages as an agricultural region. It is true, it is not, and never will be, so well adapted to this branch of industry as Illinois or lower Michigan; but in many respects, and in soil especially, it is as far ahead of a large portion of New England, as Illinois is ahead of it. There the country along the lake shores,—and that is only what visitors to that country see,—is not the most inviting to the farmer. Here are the mineral deposits. Very generally this part of the country is uneven, rocky, and mountainous. In going from Marquette by railroad to the iron mountains, the locomotive, the first thirteen miles, carries you up an elevation of 850 feet above the level of the lake, and at some points you will pass cliffs of rock piled up in small mountains. What is known as the copper or trap range, running from Keweenaw point to the Montreal river, the face of the country is more uneven, in places rising from 500 to 1,200 feet above the level of the lake; frequently presenting bold, stair-like cliffs, affording many scenes of wild, picturesque beauty.

But along these ranges, even, there is much good soil, where farming is now, or may be, carried on with success. The past year, Messrs. Anthony & White raised, on the Minnesota farm, belonging to the great Minnesota mine, 10,848 bushels of potatoes, 2,100 bushels of turnips, 150 tons of hay, and 100 tons of oats. Other parties raised, besides, 3,000 bushels of potatoes and turnips. Call the potatoes worth 50 cents per bushel; the turnips 40 cents; the hay $20 per ton, and the oats $40,—the crop of Messrs. A. &. W. was worth $1,300,—a result produced upon but few farms anywhere, with the same labor.

The "Lake Superior Miner," of December 29, 1860, says: "The hay and oat crop of Ontonagon county was not less than 700 tons, and the product of potatoes and turnips was certainly 25,000, and may hav reached 30,000 bushels." Other counties and mines have done as well, especially Houghton, Marquette, and Chippewa; but I have not the product at hand. At Marquette, the iron region, all who have engaged in farming reap good crops of hay, oats, potatoes, turnips, etc., in a ready market, at good prices and good pay; for until this branch of industry produces an excess of these staples, they will bring 25 per cent more in that market than the same articles do below. Within the last two years quite a settlement of farmers has been formed a few miles south of Marquette, on the Chockalay river, and already they are reaping better returns than thosuands of new settlers, of the same age, in more salubrious latitudes. In this locality there is a large tract of very desirable country, the soil being a rich loam, the timber large-sized maple, mostly, the face of the land comparatively even, with small streams of living springs of the best water on almost every quarter section. Rare advantages exist here for successful farming for those who will improve them,—this land being for the most part subject to private entry or preëmption,—a perpetual market near for all that can be produced. There is desirable land in this locality, sufficient for a large colony.

But other considerations that conduce to make farming a success in this country, besides the robust health enjoyed, fitting the farmer for his toil, is that he finds everywhere a ready cash market for all the wood he can furnish at a price not below $1.50 per cord. At Marquette the blast furnaces and railroad make a market for great quantities. Along the copper range, the mining companies consume large amounts in running their engines and burning the copper rock; so that while the pioneer farmer of lower Michigan and Indiana had to roll the huge logs into piles and burn them, in order to get the land ready for a crop, in the upper peninsula he shares the double prosperity of a crop of hay, oats, and potatoes in the summer and a crop of wood, if he chooses, at equally good prices, in the winter. In addition, there is no better country in America for the manufacture of maple sugar. Every farmer may have an orchard of ten or twenty acres of fine trees. The snow usually is deep and remains in the woods until April, while the warm sun of March produces an abundant flow of "sap." If maple sugar can be made with success and profit anywhere, it can here, and yet, strange to record, it is not made as yet except a little by the Indians.

Wheat, the great staple of the cereals, can be profitably produced in this climate. It has not yet been cultivated to any considerable extent, for the reason that there are no facilities for manufacturing it; but Messrs. Sales & Cash, at Ontonagon, and persons at other points, who, as a matter of experiment, have grown it, in every case have, in quantity and quality, succeeded beyond their expectations. I know that the snows of that latitude are often deep, but they are dry and light. The rains of November farther south are snow there, and the snow that then falls before the earth is frozen remains until the following April, protecting the wheat all winter with a covering under which it is secure form the ice and wind often so destructive in milder latitudes.

Nor is this all. If you will visit the farm of Mr. Cash, near Ontonagon, on the bank of that river, in the month of July, you will find in his garden as fine strawberries, currants, and other garden luxuries as you ever saw; and in his orchard the cherry, the plum, and the young apple mature or maturing.

But the best farming lands are south of the mineral deposits. From the base of these ranges to the State line is a very large territory, now almost an unbroken wilderness, with a surface comparatively level, a rich, productive soil, and good timber, where farming on a large scale may be inaugurated with success, the products always finding a ready market at the mines and the commercial towns on the lake. But this region will remain unoccupied for a long, long time, unless some efficient provision is made to open into and through it good highways, securing ingress and egress to those who will occupy and improve the lands,—a consideration the State cannot look to with too much care.

Farming, doubtless, never will be the principal pursuit of the people of this peninsula, yet this branch of industry is being inaugurated, and may with great profit increase with the rapid development that exists of the mineral interests, and though the length of the winters may militate against raising stock to profit, and the shortness of the season render the corn crop uncertain, yet wheat, rye, barley, oats, hay, beans, peas, and potatoes,—the staples of life, —together with most garden luxuries, as currants, peas, radishes, cucumbers, strawberries, raspberries, and the hardier fruits of the orchard, as the apple, cherry, plum, and pear, will be raised in abundance, and some of them in great perfection. It is astonishing how rapidly and to what size some vegetables grow in that climate. Should I tell all I have seen of these products, they would be regarded, I fear, as "fish stories." I will relate one sight. I saw at Marquette, in October last, a Norfolk turnip raised by D. Bishop, one and a half miles from town, that weighed twenty pounds.

Thus much for the agricultural resources and advantages of this country. I have perhaps occupied more time with this part of the subject than will be read with interest, but it is so generally misunderstood that I could not say less, and give the public mind any correct idea of the importance of this branch of industry.

It may be well to add before dismissing this subject, that the very articles that grow most luxuriantly and abundantly in that climate, are those that it must always cost the most to bring from abroad. Hay, oats, potatoes, turnips, and barley are not only among the cheap products of lower Michigan or Ohio, but they are also bulky, and the cost of transporting them to ports on Lake Superior is sometimes more than the original invoice. This advantage inures directly to the home farmer, and will, until an excess is produced, of which there is no danger for many years, if ever, as mining will doubtless always increase the fastest. Hence, the farmer can depend upon about the following prices for his products on an average: hay, $18 per ton; oats, 50 cents per bushel; potatoes, 50 cents; turnips, 40 cents; barley, $1.25.

The great interest, that which is of paramount importance, so far as the sublime destiny of this peninsula is concerned, are its minerals. Without these, we are free to confess, that this part of the State would remain for long years an exceedingly uninteresting territory.

The deposits of iron ore, which, in fact, is almost a pure oxide of iron—its analyses, both in Europe and America, demonstrating that it is sixty-seven per cent pure iron, or that a ton and a half of the ore will produce a ton of pig metal —these deposits exist in mountains peering up in some cases hundreds of feet above the surface, and extend over a large territory of country. Only three of these are now worked, the Jackson mountain, fourteen miles from Marquette; the Cleveland, sixteen; and the Lake Superior, seventeen. But west and southwest from these are many others, and some which are much larger than either of the three named. Of this extraordinary deposit there is enough, for it doubtless never will be exhausted. A visitor last summer, who sat down to gaze upon one of these wonders of the world, mused thus to himself—"Here is iron enough to construct a railroad around the globe, and then freight it for a thousand years." Such were his impressions of the magnitude of our mountain, which, when compared with the whole, is only "as the dust in the balance."

In the region of Lake Michigamma, interior about forty miles from Marquette, the iron is not only abundant, but the country has also much greater growth of hardwood timber than nearer the lake, as well as the very best water-powers, so that the ore, the fuel, and the power all concentrate, and when the railroad penetrates thus far, if not before, furnaces will make charcoal iron with great success. Doubtless much the largest amount of this very rich ore will always be exported and manufactured at or near the coal beds in Ohio and Pennsylvania; but this export creates the facilities for its successful manufacture at home. While there is no good reason why pig iron may not be made with charcoal as cheap there, if all the material—the ore, fuel and power—exist, as anywhere else. It is also clear that perhaps even a better result may be produced by using bituminous coal. With the tonnage employed to move the ore, to a given extent, the coal can be taken to the ore much cheaper than it is to the coal. The time is at hand when the annual export of this important staple will reach three hundred thousand gross tons, and in a very few years will greatly exceed this. The average freight to ports on Lake Erie will not be less than $2.50 per ton. In extremely dull seasons, or the dull part of the season, charters may be made at lower rates; but as a business of years, constantly increasing, demanding often more tonnage than is available, profit and necessity will compel the average and name. But the vessels thus employed have no return freight, and many of them must have a ballast and are glad to carry coal at twenty-five cents per ton, if they can have dispatch in its discharge at Marquette. If, then, the vessels that deliver 300,000 tons of ore, only carry on an average a one-fourth cargo on return, they will deliver about 80,000 tons of coal, sufficient to make 40,000 tons of pig. With the cash to buy the raw material, the furnace so located that the ore, coal and flux can be delivered to it without transshipment or extra handling, the cost of a ton of bituminous coal pig will not now exceed $13.50, as follows:

| | |
|---|---|
| 1½ tons of ore, delivered, will cost | $4.00 |
| 2 tons of coal, delivered, will cost | 6.50 |
| Flux, per ton | 50 |
| Labor, per ton | 2.00 |
| Wood and oil, per ton | 50 |
| Total | 13.50 |

This is certainly a cheap product, the quality and value of the iron considered; but the day has arrived when it can be done, and when blast furnaces, properly located at Marquette, will prove better investment than at any other point.

Besides the wonderful richness of this ore, its freedom from every baleful ingredient, and the strength of iron produced from it, another remarkable characteristic is the facility with which it is smelted. It is so much less refractory in the furnace, that with less coal a larger yield of pig is had, than from furnaces of the same capacity, with the lean ores of the eastern and middle States. The Pioneer Iron Company furnaces, located on the railroad, fourteen miles from Marquette, are nine feet in the boshes, and with an average of 130 bushels of coal to the ton, produce twelve tons each, of pig per day. These furnaces are now run by contract, the company furnishing the wood, and paying the contractors a specified price for coal, per ton of pig, and also per ton for its manufacture. This system removes many contingencies,—reduces the cost of the pig to an arithmetical basis, and thus far is satisfactory to the corporation and the lessees. The Northern Iron Company furnace, located four miles down the bay from Marquette, near the mouth of the Chockalay river, is ten feet in the bosh, and with bituminous coal, produces twenty tons of pig per day.

In 1858, Stephen R. Gay, Esq., built the Phelps furnace, three and a half miles from Marquette, on Dead river, which went into operation about January 1, 1859. Its bosh is nine feet, and the cost of its erection about $15,000. For two years it has performed in every way satisfactorily, producing at first eight tons per day, and afterwards nineteen. The cheapness of this structure, the economy with which it is worked, and its success, induced Mr. Gay, the past season, to erect another, one mile distant from this, known as the Forest furnace. This is about the same capacity, but costing less than $14,000. This one went into blast early in December, 1860, and is producing, I learn, an average of ten tons of pig per day.

Mr. Gay contracts for all his coal made and delivered at a specified price per ton of iron, while all other labor, as far as possible, is let to the lowest bidder. Thus with the comparatively small investments of capital in the furnaces themselves, whatever may have been the discouragements and embarrassments under which the smelting of iron ore at Marquette at first suffered, as all new adventures in new countries must, time and experience has thus to a good extent obviated, and to-day charcoal pig is made there so that for $20 cash upon the dock, a very satisfactory margin is left to the manufacturer.

As an item of interest, I add the following results of the numerous experiments of Professor Walter R. Johnson on the tenacity of bar iron in various parts of the world:

| | | Strength in lbs. per square inch. |
|---|---|---|
| Iron from | Salisbury, Connecticut | 58.009 |
| " | Sweden | 58.184 |
| " | Centre county, Pennsylvania | 58.400 |
| " | McIntyre, Essex county, New York | 58.912 |
| " | England, (cable bolt E. V.) | 59.105 |
| " | Lake Superior, (by Maj. Wade) | 89.582 |

The process of mining the iron ore is both simple and cheap. There is no underground work, but the ore is blasted from the side of the mountain on a level with the surface of the earth; thus a perpendicular face is formed, and the larger this face the faster and cheaper it can be mined. A side track from the railroad runs along near this face, while the ore blasted off and broken up is loaded into the cars without extra handling. In some cases a cut is blasted into the mountain for a distance, securing a face on both sides from which it is mined. Rails are placed in the center of the cut, the cars run in and loaded from both sides.

West of the deposit is the great trap, or copper range, running a distance of 150 miles and from one to twelve miles wide. On this range are located the Cliff, Pewabic, Quincy, Franklin, Isle Royal, Minnesota, and National mines, together with many others well known to the public, now yielding, in the infancy of their existence, over 9,000 tons of native copper per annum. But while the iron is piled up in mountains above the surface, the copper is buried deep in the earth and rock, so that while a comparatively small capital will mine successfully the iron, in many cases it requires large sums to blast out and open doorways to the copper. But shall we call this an unwise arrangement? If the iron ore, which is only worth $3 per ton delivered free on board vessels at Marquette, had been hid in the earth as the copper is, it would remain there while the world stood. But the copper is worth over $300 per ton on the dock, so that its value is a motive to open ramifications through and deep into the mountains to find the hidden treasure. I know there has been much, too much, of copper-stock jobbing, and thousands have felt themselves robbed, and in many cases they have been; but notwithstanding all this, the development of this interest has gone steadily forward, rewarding prudent and persevering effort, and confounding the incredulous.

It is now but fifteen years since copper mining was inaugurated in that country, and but five years since the Sault canal was opened, securing increased facilities and a cheaper commerce, and to-day the mines of Lake Superior raise an annual product of copper exceeding one-half of the amount produced in the United Kingdoms of Great Britain.

But what has been done—all that is actually known of this valuable deposit is but the character of the copper alphabet, or but as the title page, or but the formal pleadings of a few chapters in Michigan's copper book, that will yet be read, and seen, and known.

The fact is settled in the mind of every Lake Superior "copper head," that in that range of 150 miles there are many more Cliff, or Pewabic, or Quincy, or Minnesota, or National deposits, that time and money and science will develop. We have only had the morning of copper wonders, the splendor and glory of their noonday are yet to come. The great range is for the most part yet only a wilderness; a few almost impassable roads crossing it—here and there a mine breaks its solitude—ever and anon the explorer winds his way among crags or thick wooded forests in search of an outcrop, and as often he passes and repasses what, if it were only uncovered and known, would excite the copper nerve of Boston, as an electric charge from a galvanic battery. But this range will continue to be explored and re-explored, the rubbish cleared away, every indication and outcrop minutely traced, new lights will help, success will follow success, until the development will be complete.

Previous to 1855, the development and commerce of this country was neither rapid nor remunerative, because of the disadvantages under which it labored. Its tonnage was not large, or of a reliable character, while freights were enormous. Capitalists were fluctuating between hope and fear; the falls of the St. Mary's river, at the Sault, was a natural embargo, subjecting imports and exports to a tedious portage and heavy tax. But the construction of the Sault canal, by a donation of public lands by the general government, and its opening in 1855, proved a remedy for many of these evils,and at once gave tone and shape to the future of the country. First class steamers and vessels now sail from Buffalo and Chicago to all the ports on Lake Superior, reducing freights, organizing business, securing dispatch, inspiring hope, and placing all the business of the country on an entirely new basis. From this time, then, we will more particularly trace the development and commerce of the country.

In 1855, Marquette, the port of the iron trade, was a flourishing little town, of a few hundred inhabitants; a plank road adapted to the transportation of ore by cars drawn by horses, on strap rail placed upon a plank, was finished from Marquette to the Cleveland iron mountain, a distance of sixteen miles. A locomotive road was also in process of construction, and that summer the first locomotive, the "Sebastopol," was placed upon it. Early in September, 1857, this road was pushed to completion, touching the Jackson and Cleveland iron mountains, and extending to the Lake Superior, then its terminus. This road; together with its dock, warehouse, depots, machine shops and rolling stock, has cost about three-quarters of a million, and was truly a mammoth enterprise, in so new a country, and especially one that presented so many obstacles to railroad building; but the late Heman B. Ely, who inaugurated the enterprise, saw a rich prize in the future, as it now promises, and madly as his action seemed to many, he labored incessantly for its completion, until death terminated them, in 1856. The road has now upon it four locomotives, and other rolling stock ready, or in process of construction, of sufficient capacity to bring to the lake, daily, 3,000 tons of ore. Its business for the last three years has been as follows:

| DOWN THE ROAD. | | | Number passengers. | Passenger receipts. | UP THE ROAD. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| Year. | Pig iron. | Ore. | | | Merchandise. |
| 1858 | 1,627 | 30,556 tons | 4,629 | $1.540 62 | 1.806 tons. |
| 1859 | 4,683 | 83.078 " | 6,445 | 2,007 42 | 2,258 " |
| 1860 | 3,560 | 150,903 " | 5,487 | 1,989 92 | 2,124 " |

The exports of ore to Detroit, Cleveland and other points, have been as follows:

| Year. | Gross tons. |
|---|---|
| 1855 | 1,447 |
| 1856 | 11,597 |
| 1857 | 26,184 |
| 1858 | 31,035 |
| 1859 | 65,679 |
| 1860 | *113,847 |

There has also been manufactured and exported in pig iron, in 1858, 2,000 tons; in 1859, 6,000; in 1860, 5,500.

In 1855 the ore was carried by the steamers, in 1856 a few vessels were employed, in 1857-8 the fleet was greatly increased, in 1859 forty vessels were principally employed in this trade, and in 1860 over seventy were employed, and prospectively this field promises the largest stable tonnage of the carrying trade. During the past three years there has also been erected near Marquette, as above noticed, five blast furnaces, which, if kept in blast, will produce hereafter not less than 15,000 tons of pig per annum. In 1855, the village of Marquette had a population of about 600; the county, 1,100. Now the village exceeds 1,500, and the county 3,000.

The development and progress in the copper districts has been no less wonderful since the date named. In 1855 Portage Lake was comparatively unknown—its population less than 1,000—while no great interest was yet attracting special attention. To day they have a population of over 6,000 souls; copper mines that are producing a monthly product of 150 to 330 tons. No man can now go to this interesting point and behold the thrift everywhere apparent, the great number of new buildings that are being erected, the stir of the populace, the immense investments of capital, the copper cars as they thunder down the train roads to the lake, the prodigious quartz mills, and the

---

*Of the 150,903 tons which came down the railroad, some 30,000 are now upon the docks at Marquette.

power and success with which they stamp the copper rocks and separate the copper from the rock, the large merchandise that is carried on to supply so large a population, the new enterprises in the form of spacious docks, new hotels, foundries, stamp mills ,smelting works—all this and more we might enumerate, cannot fail to make a deep impression upon an observing mind. Nor is this all. As these developments began to assume such proportions, some of the corporations and a few of the enterprising citizens of the place, in order to facilitate the commerce, appropriated $35,000 from their treasuries and pockets to open the harbor, known as "Portage Entry," fourteen miles below the villages of Houghton and Hancock, which are located near the mines and on what is known in common places as "Portage Lake," so that steamers of the largest class with a full freight, have been enabled to cross the bar, run up to the mines, discharge their cargo and receive the copper. Previous to this improvement, tugs and scows were used to transport the freight to and from the steamers, which dropped their anchor in the lake outside of the "entry" to the docks at the mines, at a cost of $2 per ton. When the lake was rough, as was often the case, steamers could not discharge or receive freight. This difficulty is now obviated, the expense saved, while the business has much greater dispatch.

There still remained a few short bends in the river or outlet of the lake, which it was difficult for steamers to get around, and the same parties have again contributed $15,000 to cut off these, which, when completed, will give them an unobstructed navigation.

This will certainly be called magnificent progress.

At the other points on the Copper Range, Eagle Harbor, Eagle River, and Ontonagon, the development was much earlier than at Portage Lake, and first gave prominence and importance to the country. The celebrated Cliff mine, whose annual product for over ten years has exceeded 1,500 tons, was opened in 1845. The Copper Falls, Central, and other mines in the same district known as "Keweenaw Point," were opened at a later day. The equally famous Minnesota mine, in what is known as the "Ontonagon district," and whose product the past year was 2,180 tons, was opened in 1848. The National and Rockland, whose products are now large, were opened some years after. It was the early opening of these mines, and their success under all the disadvantages which the country suffered at that early day, and the working of many others in the same districts, which have not yet been as successful, that for many years gave business and interest to the country, and now that other points with the light and facilities that existed, have bounded into being, with wonderful development, in no way detracts from those whose entire success gave birth to all that has followed.

Notwithstanding the shipments of copper from the Portage district have exceeded this year largely the amount of any previous one,—it being 3,238 tons, —still Ontonagon is the banner district, having shipped the past year 3,632 tons, or 394 more than her rising competitor. Which of these rich districts will ultimately rank as the district of the world, it is idle now to speculate. They both possess a fine area of rich and promising territory, which, when fully explored and opened, can alone determine the race. What prominence other districts, now budding into being, may take, would be equally speculative. Yet the fact is not to be disguised that the public eye, in search of copper, has fixed its gaze and hope upon what will be known as the "Carp lake district," as a rich field also, as the explorations and workings demonstrate.

These districts are undergoing minute and thorough examination; mining is being reduced to method and system; a rigid economy in the practical application of money is enforced; improved machinery for crushing the copper rock and separating the copper from the rock is being introduced; efficient mining associations are being formed; these and other agencies are producing their legitimate results, a large yearly increase of this metal until the mines of Michigan shall supply the world.

The progress thus far made is apparent from the shipments since 1845. It was, in 1845, 1,300 pounds; in 1846, 29 tons; in 1847, 239; in 1848, 516; in 1849, 753; in 1850, 640; in 1851, 872; in 1852, 887; in 1853, 1,452; in 1854, 2,300; in 1855, 3,196; in 1856, 5,726; in 1857, 5,759; in 1858, 5,896; in 1859, 7,245; in 1860, 9,200. The aggregate value of the copper exported in 1845 was $390; in 1850 it was $266,000; in 1855 it was $1,437,000; in 1860 it was $2,944,000.

And who will not call this progress, up even to the fastest ideas of "Young America."

"Irondom" may make a larger show of commerce than "Copperdom," for often during the summer her beautiful "crow-boy" is enlivened with the presence of thirty sail, going or coming, or at anchor; but in point of value she must for the present yield the palm to the latter.

But the question arises, will this copper find a market at remunerative prices should the product increase to forty or fifty thousand tons annually? I answer, it will be many years before the product will be so large, although it doubtless will reach this in time; while in all the important mechanic arts the world is increasing now as it never did before, and our own country is especially advancing in population and these arts with astonishing rapidity, thus creating a necessity for a large increase.

The world is also making rapid strides, I may say mighty ones, in the accumulation of wealth, not only in the material development of the industrial interests, and the improvements of the mechanic arts and other sources, but in money itself. California, Australia, and the other countries producing the precious metals are adding annually over one hundred millions to its specie basis—that which underlies every other species of wealth.

These agencies will make a demand for the largest possible increase of American copper, without any material decline in its present value. Already a large foreign demand exists for it. Although the mines of England are centuries old and have reached their maximum, yet to-day Europe is a large buyer of copper in American markets. This being the case, the Ontonagon district mining association have sent an agent to France, Mr. Artault, to represent in Paris the copper interest of Lake Superior, and it is to be devoutly hoped that his mission may not only furnish better information of the nature and magnitude of this deposit, as it exists on this lake, to that country, and secure a larger market for the copper, but that he will also enlist French capital to aid in its development. I append a statement taken from a letter addressed in November, 1860, by Mr. Artault, to the secretary of the Ontonagon district mining association, showing the amount of copper used in France in 1859, and what portion of it came from the United States.

Consumption in France of pure copper ingots, for 1859:

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| Russia | 17,348 | kilograms (2 lbs.) |
| Belgium | 302,628 | " |
| England | 5,478,322 | " |

| | | |
|---|---|---|
| Asiatic towns | 1,067,000 | kilograms (2 lbs.) |
| Spain | 329,289 | " |
| Roman States | 698,964 | " |
| Turkey | 260,573 | " |
| United States | 1,253,983 | " |
| Chili | 1,787,392 | " |
| Peru | 328,865 | " |
| Other countries | 614,808 | " |

Total for 1859,........................12,331,172 kilograms, or 12,331 tons.

In my next I will send you some more very important documents. In 1853, the United States had exported to France only $105,060 worth of copper. In 1859, they have exported to France the sum of $1,985,223, and every year it will increase in a very large way, particularly if we take the rank we must have if we exert ourselves.

Yours respectfully,
F. A. ARTAULT.

The facts developed in this statement from Mr. Artault should not only engage the earnest attention of the people of the upper peninsula, but of the State.

By adding to the $2,944,000, the value of the copper shipments for the past year, $367,350 for iron ore, and $121,000 for pig iron, and $40,000* for fish from the peninsula, and $20,000 for furs, we have an aggregate of $3,492,350 the product of the labor of a few thousand freemen.

In 1845 an occasional steamer visited the Sault of St. Mary's, and above that, parties worked their way from point to point mostly by coasting, the business was done by a schooner called the White Fish, and two others, but all of small burden. In 1850 three small vessels, two small steamers and one propeller did the business between the Sault and ports on Lake Superior, while four steamers plied between Cleveland, Detroit and the Sault. In 1855, the season the canal was finished, six steamers were engaged in this trade and were able to do all the business between ports on lakes Erie and Superior. In 1860, seventy vessels and twelve steamers were inadequate to do the business, and toward the close of the season special charters were made, two of which, the propellers Burlington and Globe, are now on that lake.

The tolls collected from the tonnage passing the canal each year since its completion, are as follows:

| | |
|---|---|
| In 1855 | $4,374.00 |
| 1856 | 7,575.00 |
| 1857 | 9,406.00 |
| 1858 | 10,484.00 |
| 1859 | 16,941.00 |
| 1860 | 24,660.00 |

The report of Mr. Mead, superintendent, shows that in 1859 there passed through it in imports:

| | |
|---|---|
| Barrels of flour | 39,459 |
| Bushels of wheat | 74 |

---

*The fish from the Sault and Mackinaw are not embraced in this statement.

| | |
|---|---|
| Bushels of coarse grain | 71,738 |
| Tons of ground feed | 1,104 |
| Barrels of beef | 4,762 |
| “ pork | 5,902 |
| “ bacon | 345 |
| “ lard | 611 |
| Pounds of butter | 342,421 |
| “ cheese | 54,742 |
| “ candles | 117,634 |
| Pounds and boxes of soap | 2,205 |
| Barrels of apples | 3,785 |
| Pounds of dried fruit | 727,159 |
| “ sugar | 486,020 |
| Bags of coffee | 1,112 |
| Chests of tea | 598 |
| Bushels of vegetables | 6,949 |
| Barrels of salt | 2,739 |
| “ vinegar | 300 |
| Pounds of tobacco | 21,754 |
| Tons of powder | 345 |
| “ coal | 8,883 |
| Kegs of nails | 3,632 |
| Tons general merchandise | 10,134 |
| Barrels of lime | 4,845 |
| M feet of lumber | 7,749 |
| Bundles of lath | 2,538 |
| Boxes of glass | 970 |
| Tons of hay | 823 |
| Mules and horses | 127 |
| Head of cattle | 2,031 |
| “ sheep | 1,571 |
| “ hogs | 374 |
| M brick | 3,409 |
| Pieces of furniture | 7,623 |
| Tons of machinery | 927 |
| Boilers and engines | 17 |
| Wagons and buggies | 130 |
| Barrels of liquor | 7,312 |
| Pounds of malt | 235,712 |

With the exports added, Mr. Mead estimates the total value of articles passing the canal that year, at $9,887,404.60.

His report for 1860 shows that there passed through the canal the past year:

| | |
|---|---|
| Barrels of flour | 50,250 |
| Bushels of wheat | 284 |
| “ coarse grain | 133,437 |
| Tons of ground feed | 1,291 |
| Barrels of beef | 4,897 |
| “ pork | 5,747 |
| “ bacon | 716 |
| “ lard | 719 |

| | |
|---|---|
| Pounds of butter | 400,610 |
| “ cheese | 43,260 |
| “ candles | 241,708 |
| Boxes and barrels of soap | 3,583 |
| Barrels of apples | 6,054 |
| Pounds of dried fruit | 34,986 |
| “ sugar | 832,926 |
| Bags of coffee | 1,758 |
| Chests of tea | 1,347 |
| Bushels of vegetables | 33,739 |
| Barrels of salt | 1,817 |
| “ vinegar | 486 |
| Pounds of tobacco | 74,186 |
| Tons of powder | 650¼ |
| Tons of coal | 15,542 |
| Kegs of nails | 3,429 |
| Tons of general merchandise | 10,289 |
| Barrels of lime | 5,109 |
| M feet of lumber | 3,673 |
| Bundles of lath | 1,555 |
| Boxes of glass | 871 |
| Tons of hay | 1,130 |
| Mules and horses | 183 |
| Head of cattle | 2,813 |
| “ sheep | 1,047 |
| “ hogs | 1,537 |
| M bricks | 325,870 |
| Pieces of furniture | 12,157 |
| Tons of machinery | 1,398 |
| Boilers and engines | 24 |
| Buggies and wagons | 119 |
| Barrels of liquor | 9,317 |
| Pounds of malt | 309,864 |
| Barrels of fish | 4,051 |

With the exports added, the aggregate value of articles passing the canal this year is estimated at $12,158,865.94.

These reports demonstrate many important facts in relation to the extent, the value, and the growing importance of this country and its commerce; for whether they treat of its population, its mineral products, its shipping, its canal receipts, or its internal improvements, they all demonstrate the same truth,—that no part of the State is augmenting its wealth and population so fast as the upper peninsula.

But a face I desire especially to call attention to, is the interest the various branches of industry, and especially the farmer, the miller, the merchant, and the mechanic, should feel in this country. What a market for their products and business! The country only partially improved, and yet it absorbs, annually, millions of produce and merchandise.

Turn again to Mr. Mead's reports; estimate the value of the flour, feed, coarse grain, beef, port, butter, eggs, cattle, sheep, and hay,—the general merchandise,—sugar, candles, soap, nails, wagons, furniture, coal, the powder, machinery, boilers and engines, and last but not least, the whisky. Estimate the yearly value of these, and many other articles named, and then tell me who are benefited by the country? There is not, especially, a farmer in the State,—I mean the lower peninsula,—who is not interested in, and benefited by this trade. Ten years ago the farmer had no market for his surplus coarse products,—hay was a drug, oats were comparatively valueless. Eggs and butter were almost unsalable in the season of their abundance; but these, and much more,—for all that is sent to market,—find ready sale, at remunerative prices. Detroit and Cleveland begin to estimate the value of the commerce of this country.

Thus has a large business, which is as yet only local, grown into being. In a few years a railroad communication will be opened from the west end of the lake with the Mississippi river, when it will at once increase an hundred fold. But is such a commerce to have no increased security? Must it be carried on with all its present extraordinary risks? Will the general government do less to foster and protect the maritime of this lake than it has Lake Erie or Michigan? Does "to regulate commerce," mean nothing more than to authorize the use of these waters, or to construct light houses? Does it mean to erect princely custom houses, but let the shipping in sight of them dash into ruin upon the rocks? Such is the genius of our government, that the people feel it should be as much interested in giving security to the property and lives of its citizens, while *in transitu* upon the public waters, as in the collection of imposts, or as the people are, in the development of the material resources of the country.

It has given the people a guarantee of its duty and identity with the security of commerce, in the erection of light-houses, and especially to the people of this peninsula in the construction of the St. Mary's Falls Ship Canal. This magnificent work reflects great honor upon the government, and is the cause of our rising greatness. How it has increased facilities, given value to its iron, inaugurated its manufacture at home, promoted the development of the copper districts and whitened the waters with its commerce. But having accomplished this, having created facilities that are producing such an international commerce, can the government leave it exposed to wind and wave without protection?

I need hardly say that every year life and property is being sacrificed, and in almost every instance, if the necessary harbors existed they would be saved. The shipping at Marquette, already so large, is exposed to constant peril. The improvements made at the mouth of Portage lake, by the energy and money of its citizens and corporations, should be extended, the whole greatly strengthened to make it secure, and a light placed on the end of the pier. At Eagle Harbor every vessel that enters is exposed to great dangers, and can do so only in a calm. Ontonagon is the oldest port on the lakes and of great importance, it being central between Copper Harbor and Lapointe, a distance of 160 miles; but it is with great difficulty that a vessel can now enter with the most favorable weather. At every point of commercial importance there, with an annual business of over twelve millions, on a coast of 360 miles, the most of it bold, rocky, and dangerous, there is not one secure or safe harbor.

Some years ago the people of this part of the State felt that the south,—the lower peninsula,—regarded them as insignificant, and often laws had been made to benefit the State,—legislation for their benefit and comfort was mostly ignored. At this time there was some talk of secession, of being set back to the general government in order to organize ultimately a State government of its own. It was thought that this peninsula was so far removed from the State proper, that its interests were so different from those of the lower peninsula, that the legislature could hardly ever know enough of its specific wants and character to act understandingly in relation to it. For these and other reasons, a convention was at one time called to inaugurate a movement to secure its separation from the State and become a federal territory, but I believe no declaration of independence was passed. For a few years past but little has been said upon this subject; a better understanding has come to exist,—the bonds of brotherhood and interest have grown stronger, and the legislature is doubtless willing to do anything that is reasonable and just to promote the interests and development of this part of the State.

The bona fide inhabitants of this peninsula are not wealthy. They are, for the most part, worthy and hardy sons of toil, blasting out its wealth. Its rich men are few, and its wealth is owned and controlled by foreign capital,—in Detroit, Cleveland, Pittsburg, Philadelphia, New York, and Boston. And the country owes its development to this capital. It would to-day be long years behind the proud position it occupies but for it. Foreign capitalists have poured out their money in its development,—hundreds of thousands of dollars have been spent in search of copper for which no return has been made and probably never will be. But the thorough opening of the country will require large sums of money, and it should be the policy of the State to encourage the investment of capital to secure the desired consummation.

With the data I have adduced, we are safe in assuming that the business and future of this peninsula never rested upon a firmer basis than at the present; for if the past, with its uncertainty and difficulties has been so abundant in its rewards, the future with such success and certainty will be correspondingly fruitful with them.

What check the political and financial derangements under which the country is laboring will have upon the next season's business cannot be definitely seen,—of course they will have their effect,—but under the ordinary prospects of the country Marquette would report the coming year 200,000 gross tons of iron ore, and 12,000 tons of pig iron, giving employment to over eighty large sized vessels; the copper districts would make rapid advance in the better opening of the mines, and produce at least 12,000 tons of copper, which would give an aggregate export in 1861 of about 5,000,000.

In 1865,—but a short period,—the iron exports will exceed $2,000,000, the copper $8,000,000; the population will have doubled, the tonnage employed trebled, and the destiny of the country placed upon a much higher basis.

Beyond this I will not attempt to lift the veil that hides the wonders of the future;—they doubtless will abound everywhere,—but "irondom" and "cop- of power, so this once despised and frigid coast will grow cities, the seats of of power, so this once despised and frigid coast will grow cities, the seats of magnificent manufacture and commerce; her wealth will become the possession of her own people, with all its financial power, when she will be a tower of strength, immovable as her rocks, commerce doing reverence at her altars, and her fame known in every land.

Thus far I have treated only of what is embraced in Michigan, on Lake Superior. Wisconsin and Minnesota both have a line of lake coast, and in the former the coast embraces much good land, well timbered, with, I understand, valuable iron deposits. The population now, in this part of Wisconsin, is an important item in the trade of the country. The time is also nearing, when a commanding commercial city will grow into importance in this State, at or near the west end of the lake. The increasing business of northern Wisconsin, of Minnesota, of northern Iowa, of Nebraska and Dakota territories, and the Red river of the North, will, during the summer, be done with the sea-board, viâ Lake Superior. Immense tides of travel will reach all these States and territories, by steam, from Oswego, Buffalo, and Detroit, the same way. Lake Erie was once the theatre of a magnificent steamboat travel; but this new field may one day rival it. Highways and thoroughfares are now being opened from the lake to the Mississippi; soon they will reach the Missouri, then San Francisco, when steam from Detroit to Bayfield or Superior will become a grand link in the commerce of the Atlantic and Pacific States of Europe and Asia. And this is no chimera,—for so they called Governor Clinton's New York and Erie canal when he proposed it, an enterprise in his day the accomplishment of which was not an hundredth part as certain as these results. The "Great Northwest" as it is now called, politically and commercially demands access to this lake and will have it; but another "Great Northwest" is coming into being in the settlement of the country near the head waters of the Mississippi and the Missouri, and the Red River of the North,—a territory quite as large as the original thirteen States, whose direct connection with the Atlantic sea-board will be via Lake Superior.

Nor is the accomplishment of this far distant. The commercial relation of Minnesota with this lake must become even more internate than those of Illinois with Lake Michigan, as well as northern Wisconsin. But a glance at the map will show that it is no farther from ports on Lake Erie to the head of Lake Superior than to Chicago, so that freights to Bayfield or Superior will be no more than to ports on Lake Michigan, while at the former ports they are much nearer all points in Minnesota, or territory west of her, than at the latter. All then that is needed to add the business of Minnesota to the commerce of this lake is a railroad from the Mississippi river to it. But we may be asked, will the business of that new and northern State warrant such an investment? I answer with the statistics of Commissioner Wheelock, in relation to the growth and products of that State up to 1859 and 1860. He says:

"The territory was organized in 1849, when most of the population of 6,400 souls were attached to the Indian trade. The National census of 1850 gave the following result:

| | Wheat. | Corn. | Oats. |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1849 | 1,401 | 16,725 | 50,582 |
| 1859 | 3,288,000 | 3,130,000 | 3,420,002 |

"The real agricultural history of the State did not commence, however, till 1854, when the Sioux were finally removed; so that a fair comparison would be the following:

| | Acres tilled. | Wheat. | Corn. | Oats. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| 1854 | 15,000 | 7,000 | 80,000 | 153,000 |
| 1859 | 454,000 | 3,288,000 | 3,130,060 | 3,420,000 |

"Thus in five years from the actual commencement of her agricultural growth, Minnesota has produced a surplus of over 5,000,000 bushels of grain, and in the meanwhile has fed a population which has increased from 35,000 to 175,000."

In relation to the crop of 1860 he says:

"1. That the tilled breadth of 1860 is one-third larger than 1859.

"2. That the breadth of wheat sown was nearly doubled. This increase was very considerable in the southeastern counties, but in the western and northern sections of the State the area is three or four times as great, and more than half of the whole tilled breadth of the State was in wheat.

"3. There was a large increase in the average yield per acre, variously estimated at from fifteen to thirty per cent.

"4. This fruitfulness extends to all crops, including corn, oats, potatoes and hay.

"5. The head of the grain is better filled, and the grain better developed than it was last year.

"6. The wheat crop has not met a single check, nor suffered from the depredations of a single insect, so far as ascertained.

"7. The breadth of corn and oats planted is much less than last year, but if the corn is harvested without accident, the aggregate product will be more than half that of last year.

"8. The wheat crop of Minnesota in 1860, with a yield of twenty-three bushels per acre, will reach an aggregate of over 6,000,000 bushels, of which 4,500,000 will be surplus; and this is by fifty per cent the largest recorded crop of wheat in proportion to the population, ever previously produced in any State of the Union, being more than half the whole crop of Ohio in 1859, and equal to twenty-five bushels of wheat to every individual in the State. The foregoing calculations are made upon an assured basis of fact, without reference to current opinions upon the subject."

The influence such figures must exert in the establishment of the best mediums of commerce, are too patent to need remark.

Good stage roads are penetrating this country from the towns on the lake. One has been opened from Superior to Crow Wing, and will be extended from there toward the settlements on the Red River of the North. Another is being opened to St. Paul, and over these roads, during the winter, good stages are now run.

Another road has been opened between Bayfield and St. Paul. Hon. H. M. Rice informs me that good stages now run twice a week between Bayfield and St. Paul; that the road, a distance of 170 miles, is in splendid order; that they will so run until navigation opens, when they will run tri-weekly or oftener. This arrangement will induce a large travel the coming season via this lake to St. Paul and other points on the Mississippi river, and is the sure forerunner of a railroad.

The Pacific railroad, or its northern route, should run from the head of Lake Superior; but if the government starts it from the Missouri river, before the "iron horse" enters San Francisco from this river, under the energy of private enterprise, he will reach it from this lake. Mark well the prediction.

When this already "Great Northwest" is thus settled and developed—when iron shall link its commerce and that of the Pacific with the commerce and wealth of Lake Superior—who will specify the mighty agencies they will bring into play in the final settlement, development, manufacture and business of the country on this lake, and especially that embraced within the upper peninsula? During the summer months it will become the oasis of the traveling world by thousands, for recuperation and healthy enjoyment; its wonderful deposits of copper, which had been regarded more as fiction than real, will be seen in their better development; the iron mountains will tell their own silent but mighty story; capital will be unlocked and enter practically into the final development of the whole. The thrift and happiness of its people will attract multitudes to join them in all the various pursuits that are or can be successfully followed. The copper will be smelted at home, and the ingot will go into western as well as eastern marts. Iron ore will be manufactured into pig, into cast iron in every form, and into merchant iron, and find a market west or south, as well as east. Its population will have swelled from a score of thousands into hundreds of thousands, surrounded with health, wealth and happiness, with churches, schools and colleges—the best basis of free institutions.

# A MICHIGAN EMIGRANT SONG.

From the Detroit Post and Tribune of February 13th, 1881.

A correspondent at Unadilla sends the following song, which was much used in 1833 and during the immigration excitement in the years following:

My eastern friends who wish to find
A country that will suit your mind,
Where comforts all are near at hand,
Had better come to Michigan.

Here is the place to live at ease,
To work or play, just as you please;
With little prudence any man
Can soon get rich in Michigan.

We here have soils of various kinds
To suit men who have different minds,
Prairies, openings, timbered land
And burr oak plains, in Michigan.

Our water's good, there's no mistake,
Springs, rivers, brooks, and little lakes
Will all be seen by any man
Who travels through our Michigan.

You who would wish to hunt and fish
Can find all kinds of game you wish;
Our deer and turkey they are grand,
Our fish is good in Michigan.

Ye who have led a single life
And now would wish to get a wife,
I tell you this, now understand,
We have first-rate girls in Michigan.

# LIST OF MEMBERS OF THE

(Continued from Page 186

| Number. | NAMES. | PLACE OF BIRTH. | | Date of Birth. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | Town or Village. | State. | |
| 409 | A. J. Kellogg | Marcellus | New York | March 9, 1827 |
| 410 | S. G. Blanchard | Sparta | " " | Nov. 10, 1819 |
| 411 | Norman Bailey | Locke | " " | Jan. 1, 1821 |
| 412 | John Hull | Sandy Hill | " " | Feb. 6, 1816 |
| 413 | David G. Robinson | Vassalborough | Maine | Jan. 4, 1811 |
| 414 | Wm. A. Whitney | Shelby | New York | April 21, 1820 |
| 415 | F. R. Stebbins | Williamstown | Vermont | Oct. 26, 1818 |
| 416 | John E. Swick | Covert | New York | Feb. 21, 1807 |
| 417 | Rev. E. N. Nichols | Amherst | Massachusetts | Oct. 21, 1797 |
| 418 | H. M. Russell | Seneca Falls | New York | May 21, 1819 |
| 419 | W. H. Montgomery | Lodi | " " | Aug. 8, 1805 |
| 420 | Mars Howard | Herkimer | " " | Feb. 12, 1809 |
| 421 | Stephen H. Aldrich | Palmyra | " " | March 5, 1817 |
| 422 | Andrew Wilson | Middlefield | " " | July 13, 1822 |
| 423 | Rev. J. O. Brancroft | Fowler | Ohio | Aug. 16, 1826 |
| 424 | Charles I. Walker | Butternuts | New York | April 23, 1814 |
| 425 | Albert E. Cowles | Chardon | Ohio | May 14, 1838 |
| 426 | Joseph P. Cowles | New Hartford | Connecticut | Sept. 28, 1806 |
| 427 | R. C. Kedzie | Delhi | New York | Jan. 28, 1823 |
| 428 | Melvin D. Champe | Franklin Co | Ohio | July 5, 1828 |
| 429 | Laurens B. Potter | Clarence | New York | Nov. 7, 1818 |
| 430 | Henry Parks | Middle Haddam | Connecticut | April 14, 1790 |
| 431 | Lew Loomis | Hamilton | New York | Sept. 10, 1810 |
| 432 | Roger Haviland | Londonderry | Ireland | Dec. 12, 1812 |
| 433 | Josiah L. Hawes | Corlish | New York | Oct. 12, 1823 |
| 434 | Noys L. Avery | Ledyard | " " | Sept. 15, 1815 |
| 435 | William D. Thompson | | " " | 1815 |
| 436 | E. H. Whitney | Allen's Hill | " " | Aug. 5, 1827 |
| 437 | Donald C. Henderson | Thurso | Scotland | March 20, 1826 |
| 438 | Wright L. Coffinberry | Lancaster | Ohio | April 5, 1807 |
| 439 | Eugene Laible | Ettenheim (Baden | Germany | June 2, 1824 |
| 440 | Jane Olds | Vienna | New York | Sept. 29, 1808 |
| 441 | W. F. Jenison | Byron | " " | Dec. 19, 1812 |
| 442 | Elias S. Woodman | Rodman | " " | Oct. 15, 1816 |
| 443 | John Ball | Hebron | New Hampshire | Nov. 12, 1794 |
| 444 | Jerome B. Eaton | Columbia | New York | Jan. 11, 1811 |
| 445 | Josiah W. Begole | Mt. Morris | " " | Nov. 20, 1815 |
| 446 | Abiah Angell | New Ashford | Massachusetts | Nov. 26, 1811 |
| 447 | Fanny L. Avery | Springfield | Vermont | May 14, 1830 |
| 448 | Harriet A. Begole | Homer | New York | Nov. 25, 1815 |
| 449 | Alonzo C Davis | Pitsford | " " | Sept. 4, 1823 |
| 450 | Franklin S. Clark | Lanesborough | Massachusetts | April 17, 1812 |
| 451 | Giles B. Slocum | Saratoga Springs | New York | July 11, 1808 |
| 452 | H. H. Allen | Williston | Vermont | May 14, 1804 |
| 453 | Henry Pennoyer | Norwalk | Connecticut | Feb. 8, 1809 |
| 454 | Caleb Dwinell Randall | Conquest | New York | Feb. 15, 1831 |
| 455 | Richard S. Varnum | Haverhill | Massachusetts | April 12, 1817 |
| 456 | Henry H. North | Lansing | New York | Jan. 18, 1816 |
| 457 | Almira (Buck) North | Lansing | " " | Nov. 29, 1815 |
| 458 | Alex. Chapoton | Detroit | Michigan | Feb. 3, 1818 |
| 459 | James Shearer | Albany | New York | July 12, 1823 |
| 460 | Henry W. Lord | Northampton | Massachusetts | March 8, 1821 |
| 461 | Wm. T. Mitchell | Middlebury | New York | May 27, 1817 |
| 462 | Oka Town | Stoddard | New Hampshire | July 2, 1806 |
| 463 | Osman Dewey Goodrich | New Hartford | New York | May 10, 1808 |
| 464 | Wm. Winegar | Ganes | " " | Jan. 1, 1827 |
| 465 | Duncan A McMartin | Amsterdam | " " | July 19, 1810 |
| 466 | Maria T. McMartin | Henrietta | " " | June 8, 1829 |
| 467 | E W. Hunt | Lodi | Michigan | Oct. 14, 1828 |
| 468 | Stephen Hill | Whiting | Maine | Jan. 21, 1809 |
| 469 | Stephen D. Bingham | Bennington | Vermont | May 26, 1828 |
| 470 | Nancy DeGraff Toll | Schenectady | New York | Sept. 18, 1798 |
| 471 | Stephen S. Cutter | | | |
| 472 | Henry R Naysmith | York | New York | March 1, 1824 |
| 473 | Riley C. Crawford | Richmond | " " | Jan. 27, 1817 |
| 474 | Lorenzo D. Halsted | Tompkins Co | " " | July 11, 1820 |

## STATE PIONEER SOCIETY.

Pioneer Collections, Vol. 2.)

| PLACE AND DATE OF FIRST RESIDENCE IN MICHIGAN. | | | PRESENT RESIDENCE. | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| Town. | County. | Date. | P. O. Address. | County. |
| Allegan | Allegan | June 30, 1838 | Detroit | Wayne |
| Retzhill | Oakland | April, 1835 | White Pigeon | St. Joseph |
| Hastings | Barry | September, 1853 | Hastings | Barry |
| Florence | St. Joseph | October, 1837 | Florence | St Joseph |
| Hastings | Barry | June, 1848 | Hastings | Barry |
| Adrian | Lenawee | June 8, 1828 | Adrian | Lenawee |
| Palmyra | " | October, 1837 | " | " |
| Macon | " | May, 1833 | Macon | " |
| Clinton | " | September, 1835 | Tecumseh | " |
| Saline | Washtenaw | June, 1837 | Saline | Washtenaw |
| Dundee | Monroe | May, 1831 | Hudson | Lenawee |
| Manchester | Washtenaw | January 17, 1833 | Cambridge | " |
| Raisin | Lenawee | May 30, 1833 | Raisin | " |
| Franklin | " | May 20, 1833 | Franklin | " |
| Tecumseh | " | October, 1831 | East Saginaw | Saginaw |
| Grand Rapids | Kent | June, 1836 | Detroit | Wayne |
| Alaiedon | Ingham | October 2, 1843 | Lansing | Ingham |
| " | " | October 2, 1843 | " | " |
| Blissfield | Lenawee | May 12, 1826 | " | " |
| Detroit | Wayne | August, 1828 | Onondaga | " |
| Jackson | Jackson | September, 1843 | Lansing | " |
| Birmingham | Oakland | 1821 | Pontiac | Oakland |
| Newark | Allegan | June, 1836 | Ganges | Allegan |
| Ann Arbor | Washtenaw | July, 1836 | Burns | Shiawassee |
| Kalamazoo | Kalamazoo | September, 1852 | Kalamazoo | Kalamazoo |
| Grand Rapids | Kent | September, 1850 | Grand Rapids | Kent |
| Jackson | Jackson | 1831 | Jackson | Jackson |
| Pontiac | Oakland | October, 1843 | Lansing | Ingham |
| Detroit | Wayne | 1835 | Allegan | Allegan |
| Centreville | St. Joseph | June, 1844 | Grand Rapids | Kent |
| Detroit | Wayne | August, 1833 | Ypsilanti | Washtenaw |
| Farmington | Oakland | September, 1834 | Okemos | Ingham |
| Eagle | Clinton | September, 1837 | Eagle | Clinton |
| Novi | Oakland | May 19, 1837 | Northville | Wayne |
| Grand Rapids | Kent | October, 1836 | Grand Rapids | Kent |
| Adrian | Lenawee | 1834 | Jackson | Jackson |
| Flint | Genesee | August, 1836 | Flint | Genesee |
| Plymouth | Wayne | May 29, 1836 | Caledonia | Kent |
| Lyons | Ionia | June, 1841 | Grand Rapids | " |
| Genesee | Genesee | September, 1837 | Flint | Genesee |
| Ypsilanti | Washtenaw | September 15, 1838 | Detroit | Wayne |
| Battle Creek | Calhoun | June, 1843 | Jackson | Jackson |
| Newport | Monroe | 1831 | Trenton | Wayne |
| Tecumseh | Lenawee | 1830 | Grand Rapids | Kent |
| Muskegon | Muskegon | July, 1835 | Nunica | Ottawa |
| Bronson | Branch | Autumn, 1835 | Coldwater | Branch |
| Monroe | Monroe | About 1839 | Jonesville | Hillsdale |
| Delhi | Ingham | May, 1839 | Delhi | Ingham |
| " | " | May, 1839 | " | " |
| Detroit | Wayne | February 3, 1818 | Detroit | Wayne |
| " | " | May, 1838 | Bay City | Bay |
| " | " | September, 1839 | Detroit | Wayne |
| Lapeer | Lapeer | October 30, 1839 | Port Huron | St. Clair |
| Richland | Kalamazoo | October, 1831 | Otsego | Allegan |
| Allegan | Allegan | May, 1836 | Allegan | " |
| Farmington | Oakland | October, 1835 | Grand Rapids | Kent |
| Allegan | Allegan | October 29, 1836 | Allegan | Allegan |
| Gun Plain | " | September 15, 1833 | " | " |
| Lodi | Washtenaw | October 14, 1828 | Dimondale | Eaton |
| Plymouth | Wayne | November, 1835 | Watertown | Clinton |
| Adrian | Lenawee | April, 1854 | Lansing | Ingham |
| Centreville | St. Joseph | January 4, 1834 | Monroe | Monroe |
| | | | | |
| Grand Rapids | Kent | April 22, 1845 | Grand Rapids | Kent |
| Troy | Oakland | March, 1825 | Ionia | Ionia |
| Coldwater | Branch | September 10, 1836 | " | " |

# LIST OF MEMBERS OF THE STATE

| NUMBER. | NAMES. | Town or Village. | | Date of Birth. |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | Town or Village. | State. | |
| 475 | Joseph M. Sterling | Adams | New York | Aug. 18, 1818 |
| 476 | Stephen B. Wakefield | Williston | Vermont | July 17, 1814 |
| 477 | Catherine (Ferry) Haviland | Wilton | Connecticut | April 21, 1821 |
| 478 | Wm. H. Horton | Wallkill | New York | Jan. 18, 1814 |
| 479 | Marcus Beers | Huntington | Connecticut | April 11, 1805 |
| 480 | Joseph Warren | Palmyra | Maine | June 16, 1814 |
| 481 | Thomas W. Palmer | Detroit | Michigan | Jan. 25, 1830 |
| 482 | E. W. Cottrell | Cottrellville | " | Feb. 17, 1842 |
| 483 | Wm. Brunson | East Bloomfield | New York | June 3, 1821 |
| 484 | Olive M. Partridge | Portsmouth | New Hampshire. | May 20, 1828 |
| 485 | Mrs. E. M. S. Stewart | Leroy | New York | Sept. 6, 1817 |
| 486 | Harvey Mellen | Middlebury | " " | April 3, 1822 |
| 487 | Alanson Edgerton | Genesee | " " | June 23, 1816 |
| 488 | Andrew Howell | Covert | " " | Dec. 18, 1827 |
| 489 | Philo Parsons | Scipio | " " | Feb. 6, 1817 |
| 490 | Ira H. Butterfield, Jr | Utica | Michigan | Dec. 22, 1840 |
| 491 | Henry C. Lewis | Clarendon | New York | May 5, 1820 |
| 492 | Kirke W. Noyes | Leroy | " " | April 22, 1830 |
| 493 | Geo. M. Dewey | Lebanon | New Hampshire. | Feb. 14, 1832 |
| 494 | Henry Woodruff | Seneca Falls | New York | Feb. 13, 1813 |
| 495 | Geo. Robertson | Dryden | " " | March 20, 1826 |
| 496 | Egbert F. Guild | Wolcott | " " | June 24, 1832 |

## PIONEER SOCIETY.—CONTINUED.

| PLACE AND DATE OF FIRST RESIDENCE IN MICHIGAN. | | | PRESENT RESIDENCE. | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| Town. | County. | Date. | P. O. Address. | County. |
| Monroe | Monroe | October 18, 1835 | Monroe | Monroe |
| " | " | September 15, 1838 | " | " |
| Scio | Washtenaw | May 7, 1832 | Burns | Shiawassee |
| Mason | Ingham | May 30, 1837 | Eden | Ingham |
| Ann Arbor | Washtenaw | September, 1833 | Ingham | " |
| Detroit | Wayne | February 28, 1852 | Bay City | Bay |
| " | " | January 25, 1830 | Detroit | Wayne |
| Cottrellville | St. Clair | February 17, 1842 | Greenfield | " |
| Victor | Clinton | September 17, 1843 | St. Johns | Clinton |
| Port Huron | St. Clair | August, 1840 | Portsmouth | Bay |
| Detroit | Wayne | September 20, 1824 | Michigan Center | Jackson |
| Romeo | Macomb | April 28, 1837 | Romeo | Macomb |
| Almont | Lapeer | February 14, 1838 | Lapeer | Lapeer |
| Macon | Lenawee | August, 1831 | Adrian | Lenawee |
| Detroit | Wayne | August, 1844 | Detroit | Wayne |
| Utica | Macomb | December 22, 1840 | Port Huron | St. Clair |
| Homer | Calhoun | February, 1835 | Coldwater | Branch |
| Washington | Macomb | October, 1832, | Paw Paw | Van Buren |
| Port Huron | St. Clair | March, 1852 | Hastings | Barry |
| Flat Rock | Wayne | October 14, 1833 | Farwell | Clare |
| Albion | Calhoun | May 14, 1837 | Albion | Calhoun |
| Detroit | Wayne | December 31, 1854 | East Saginaw | Saginaw |

# REPORTS OF COUNTIES, TOWNS AND DISTRICTS.

## ALLEGAN COUNTY.

### "ALLEGAN COUNTY—ITS RISE, PROGRESS, AND GROWTH IN POPULATION, WITH A BRIEF HISTORY OF ITS PRESS."

The following paper was read by Donald C. Henderson (founder of the Allegan Journal) before the Allegan Pioneer Society, at its meeting held in Allegan, May 29, 1878:

The county of Allegan was created by an act of the territorial council of March 2, 1831, and remained attached to Kalamazoo county until August 25, 1835, when it was duly established as an organized county of the territory.

The county derived its name from an Indian tribe in the Alleghanies—*gan* signifying lake. Allegan, the county seat, was first settled and its village site purchased in 1835 by A. L. Ely from Rochester, N. Y., for the "Boston Company," an association of eastern capitalists. The village was platted and surveyed in 1837 by Hon. F. J. Littlejohn, and incorporated in 1838. The bounds of the village were at first comprised of section 28, town 2 north, of range 13 west. The bounds of the municipality have considerably extended since the village became incorporated, containing now the whole of section 28, and in addition the east half of section 29, the southeast fractional quarter of section 21, the southwest quarter of section 22, the west half of section 27, the northwest quarter of section 34, the north half of section 33, and the northeast quarter of section 32, a good sized burgh when built up and improved.

Besides Allegan there are five other incorporated villages in the county of Allegan, viz.: Plainwell, Otsego, Wayland, Douglas, and Saugatuck, all of which have had or now have newspaper organs, while Allegan, the county seat, has two journals. The county is divided into twenty-four townships, which were organized in the following order:

In 1836, town of Allegan, which included towns 1, 2, 3, and 4 north, of ranges 13 and 14 west. The towns of Gunplain (the name changed from Plainfield in 1845), Otsego (including towns 1, 2, 3, and 4 north, of range 12 west), and Saugatuck (changed from Newark in 1861) were all organized the same year with Allegan. In 1838 Manlius was organized, and Martin (which included the present towns of Leighton and Wayland) in 1839. In 1842 Trowbridge (which included Cheshire until 1851) and Watson (which included Dorr and Hopkins) were organized. In 1843 Wayland (which included Leighton) was organized. In the year 1847 Ganges (which included Casco until 1854) was organized, as likewise Dorr (which included Hopkins until

1852) and Monterey (named after one of the battles of the Mexican war and which included Overisel and Salem). In 1848 Leighton was organized, in 1849 Fillmore, and in 1850 Pineplains. In 1851 Cheshire was set off from Trowbridge, and Heath from Allegan. In 1852 Hopkins was set off from Dorr, in 1854 Casco from Ganges, and in 1855 Salem from Fillmore. In 1856 Overisel was set off from Fillmore. In 1858 Laketown was organized. Clyde and Lee were organized in 1859. With the organization of the two latter towns the whole county was organized into townships. To show the growth of the county in population, we have only to point to the fact that but 92 votes were cast for President in 1836, while in 1876 the total vote on presidential electors stood 7,724, which was by no means a full popular vote at that election.

In 1850 Allegan ranked as the twenty-sixth county in the State in point of population. It was the twenty-second in 1860, and 1870 it stood the twelfth county.

The population of the county in 1838 was 1,469; in 1840, 1,783; in 1850, 5,125; in 1854, 7,804; in 1864, 18,849; and in 1874, 32,381. The census of 1880 at this rate of progression, will show a population of 36,000. There is no more flourishing county in the State to-day than the county of Allegan.

Allegan county is blessed with nearly every variety of soil found in the State. On the Kalamazoo river it is a deep alluvion. West of Allegan the soil is well adapted to the culture of fruit, particularly on the lake shore and the banks of the numerous streams and lakes of the county. Allegan is one of the greatest agricultural and grain-growing counties in the State. The manufacturing of lumber was the principal avocation of the pioneers of the county, but the lumbering business is not now nearly so extensive as it was; agriculture, horticulture, and the manufacturing of flour, wool, sash and blinds, plows and farming implements, now being the predominating pursuits.

The public lands were first placed in market in 1832, but very few settlements were made in the county prior to 1835. Prior to this the present site of the village of Allegan was the headquarters of the Macsaubee band of Indians who originally owned the lands of Allegan, Ottawa, Kalamazoo, and Kent counties. These aborigines made Allegan their base of operations for hunting and fishing parties. When the whites first came, Indian camps could be seen in large numbers at the present county fair-grounds, near the Allegan house, and opposite the Chaffee saw-mills. Macsaubee, their Indian chief, was a great favorite among the early settlers and frequently befriended the pioneers of civilization in the way of furnishing them with maple sugar, fish, and trophies of the chase of which the aboriginals always had an abundance. After the Black Hawk war the Indian title to the lands in western Michigan was extinguished and the Allegan county Indians were long in the receipt of annuities from that source from the national government. After the expiration of these annuities these Ottawa Indians were removed to reservations in the Grand Traverse region of country where remnants of this once powerful tribe can yet be found, enjoying the comforts of civilization along with their white neighbors. But Muckatah, Mascaubee, Ring Nose, and all the rest of their chiefs have gone to the Indian's happy hunting grounds. Chief Mascaubee died some twenty-five years ago, much lamented by the white pioneers of Allegan county. He is one of the principal characters mentioned in Cooper's romantic novel (Oak Openings) of Indian life in the Kalamazoo river valley, which was a howling wilderness when the great American novelist painted the beauties of this region of country, from one end of the river to the other. "Fire water" was the cause of Macsaubee's death. He had been visiting the village of Allegan one winter's day and in going to his camp near Mill Grove, that noble red man was frozen to death. This was before the red-ribbon movement which is working so beneficially at the present time. He, with his associate chiefs, had fought on the British side during the war of 1812, but after peace was proclaimed these Ottawa Indians took possession of this delightful portion of Michigan, and remained in occupation of the lands hereabouts till their removal to the northwestern portion of this peninsula. The fate of the American Indian and his intercourse with the white man are sad reminiscences to the proud and powerful race of people who once controlled and peopled this whole continent from ocean to ocean and sea to sea. They have everywhere been made to give way to the onward march of the white people. Where now are their Allegan villages, warriors and youth? They have perished and are consumed. The winds of heaven fan not a single region which the American aboriginals can now permanently call their own.

Judge Story well depicts the sad fate of the American Indian when he says: "There is something in their hearts which passes speech. There is something in their looks, not of vengeance or submission, but of hard necessity, which stifles both, which chokes all utterance, which has no aim or method. It is courage absorbed in despair. They linger for a moment. Their look is onward. They have passed the fatal stream. It shall never be repassed by them, no, never! Yet there lies not between us and them an impassable gulf. They know and feel that there is for them still one remove further, not distant, nor unseen. It is to the general burying ground of the race."

But we will drop the subject of the melancholy decay of the Indians and continue our narrative of the rise and progress of our flourishing county.

Prior to its organization as a county in territorial times, Allegan was attached to Kalamazoo county (which was organized in 1830), from which it was set off in 1835. By the way, the word Kalamazoo is derived from the Ottawa Indian word *Ke-Kenamazoo* (the boiling pot), the head-waters of the river flowing from a spring situated in Hillsdale county, resembling in appearance a pot of boiling or bubbling water.

In 1835, Allegan was a portion of the sixth senatorial district of the State, which consisted of the counties of Kent, Ionia, Ottawa, Allegan, Barry, Eaton, Kalamazoo, and Calhoun, and Horace H. Comstock of Kalamazoo county, was one of our two senators, and Elisha Ely of Allegan, our first representative. The counties of Allegan, Barry, and Eaton were one representative district. Now the county of Allegan constitutes a senatorial district (the 14th) by itself, while the county has two representative districts. When the State was admitted into the Union (January 26, 1837) Michigan had but one congressman, and one U. S. judicial circuit. Now the State has nine congressmen and two U. S. District judges. Allegan is in the 5th congressional district and the western U. S. judicial circuit. Hon. John W. Stone of Grand Rapids, represents the district in Congress, while Hon. Solomon L. Withey is U. S. judge of the western district of Michigan. Grand Rapids is the site of the U. S. district court, where Judge Withey resides.

There has been a complete change in the judicial system since the State was organized when it was divided into three circuits, and when courts were held twice a year in each of the organized counties by one of the judges of the supreme court, who, by law was allotted to a particular circuit, and who, with two associate judges, appointed in each county, constituted the circuit court. Now

(1868) we have a State supreme court of four judges, while the State is divided into twenty-one circuits. Allegan constitutes, with the county of Ottawa, the twentieth judicial district, of which Hon. Dan. J. Arnold is circuit judge.

In the early days Allegan county had two banking associations, both of which were incorporated January 8, 1838. One was known as the bank of Allegan, and had a capital it is claimed of $100,000. Alex. L. Ely was president of this bank, and Oshea Wilder was president of the other,—the bank of Singapore, with an assumed capital of $50,000. These banks were of the famous wild cat species and their career was brief and inglorious. The village of Allegan has now a good National bank as well as a private banking house (Allegan City bank), besides having a private banking house in every village of the county.

Otsego had the honor of ushering into existence the first pioneer newspaper. This first newspaper experiment in our county was called the Allegan County Democrat. Its first issue, April 12, 1842. Copies of this paper are very scarce. Moses Hawks was its editor and publisher. He was the pioneer printer of our county. The paper was democratic in its politics as one would infer from its name. Mr. Hawks was assisted in the typographical department by Dr. Boyd Coates, for several years afterward a dentist in Otsego, and George H. Foster, both now deceased. Its career in Otsego was brief and unprofitable. The material was removed to Allegan during the winter of 1842-3 and the name of the paper was transmogrified from Allegan County Democrat to the Allegan and Barry Record. It was the only paper published in the two counties for a number of years and was owned by Mr. Alexander L. Ely till 1846, when he removed to Iowa and founded the city of Cedar Rapids in that state. We have a copy of this unpretentious sheet now before us. It claims to be "published every Tuesday, for the proprietor, by Augustine W. Adams," an accomplished and well educated gentleman who printed the paper for a year and then returned to his old home at Pontiac. He was followed as publisher by Mr. Hawks, the founder of the Otsego paper, who was more or less connected with the typographical department of the Record for many years afterwards both as proprietor and printer. Mr. Hawks was an eccentric character, and was well known to the pioneers of our county. In 1840 he was foreman of the old Detroit Advertiser, then published by George Dawson and Morgan Bates. In 1845 he was sergeant-at-arms of the Michigan State senate, at which time our district was represented by the Hon. F. J. Littlejohn. He was subsequently appointed by President Pierce superintendent of light-houses for the northwestern lakes—a position he held four years, and at the time of his decease at Plainwell, in 1872, was route agent on the M. L. S. R. R., running between Plainwell and Muskegon.

In 1862 D. C. Henderson purchased the Record office of the late Hon. Elisha B. Bassett (who died in this village in 1865) and who had been editorially connected with it ever since 1848. The only real editors of the Record were Hon. Hovey K. Clarke (now of Detroit, who has the reputation of giving the paper its name), who was succeeded by Dr. John F. Ely (now of Cedar Rapids, Iowa), a brother of the owner of the paper, Mr. Bassett, F. J. Littlejohn, William Francis, and Fred Lyman. Among the Record's old typos were Boyd Coats, George H. Foster, D. C. Henderson (who studied typography on the paper from 1843 to 1845, obtaining a situation as assistant editor on the New York Tribune in 1847, and remained on that paper till 1855), Andrew J. Kellogg, James B. Stone, Arthur Kingsbury, the Barnhart brothers (now type founders of Chicago), Mr. Bacon, H. S. Manson (now of Chicago), Charles M.

Hawks, Morgan B. Hawks, Bredett C. Murray (afterwards one of the publishers of a weekly paper in Arizona territory and now the editor and proprietor of the Daily News, at Denison, Texas), Franklin J. Higgins and Warren A. Dyer —perhaps some others whose names we have failed to obtain. The Record was always a democratic paper in its politics.

The Record was first printed in Allegan, in a small building at the corner of Cedar and Trowbridge streets, but when it suspended publication it was printed in the old Bush building on Hubbard street (since destroyed by fire), east of the Ebmeyer building.

The Allegan Journal is now in the twenty-third year of its publication and is the only surviving pioneer paper of Allegan county. It was established April 30, 1856, by Donald C. Henderson, who has continued to be its chief editorial writer ever since, except during his absence in the Union army, when the paper was published by his brother Alexander Henderson. D. C. Henderson has had for editorial assistants and local writers the following named gentlemen: James D. Henderson, E. J. R. Currey, A. C. Wallin, George H. House.

The first printing office of the Journal was over J. D. Follett's hardware, in a building upon which now stands the Chaffee hotel block. When that wooden row was burned down in 1870, and the Journal printing establishment destroyed, the office was removed over P. H. Church's brick building in the Empire block. Its present printing office is over the First National Bank and Jenner's boot and shoe house. The Journal has always been an outspoken republican paper. In 1874 Mr. E. C. Reid purchased a third interest in the paper, and its publication has since been continued under the name and style of Henderson & Reid. Mr. Reid was formerly connected with the publication of a paper in Otsego, and for a time employed on the typographical force of the Allegan Democrat. He became foreman of the Journal, April 1, 1872, and shortly thereafter was placed in charge of the local department which he has continued to control ever since. The Journal has a fine corps of editorial correspondents and contributors (whose names are too numerous to mention here) in all the principal villages and towns of the county, who weekly grace its columns with their favors.

In 1873 the Journal was given the first premium at the State fair of the Michigan agricultural society, held at Grand Rapids, for being the best edited and printed local newspaper in the State.

Among the typos of the Journal have been Morgan B. Mills, (now of Chicago) V. V. Campbell, Joseph Pfeiffner, Edward Lowe, George L. Askins, Hiram S. Manson, Moses Hawks and his three sons, Charles M., Frank E., (the two latter now of Chicago) and Morgan B., F. J. Higgins, Warren A. Dyer, Dr. F. M. Calkins, Don C. Nichols, Horace G. Nichols, and Frank P. Cook.

No democratic paper was printed in Allegan since the consolidation of the Record with the Journal, till December 11, 1867, when the late Freeman Dubois Austin (who died in this village, July 15, 1869), removed from Otsego here and established the Allegan County Democrat, which he continued to publish till his decease. Mr. John C. Holmes was the first foreman of the Democrat. He was assisted typographically by Ed. E. Edmonds, Warren A. Dyer, our esteemed scientific friend, Dr. F. M. Calkins, frequently and efficiently officiating as printer's devil. The Democrat then passed into the hands of Mr. Oscar Hare, who subsequently formed a co-partnership with Mr. Martin T. Ryan, a former typographer on that paper. The firm name was then changed to Ryan & Furber, when it become incorporated under the name of the Northwestern Bible and Publishing Association. It has since been printed and published by the Allegan County Democratic Association, with D. R. Waters as editor.

Plainwell has had three papers, only one of which survives, and that is now continued to be published under the consolidated name of two of its old predecessors,—the Independent-Republic, with George Scales as editor and proprietor. Mr. Scales founded the Independent, and Jerome Winchell, now of Detroit, the Republic. The consolidated paper is a local non-partisan sheet. The Independent is a six-column quarto printed on the patented plan, two pages being printed at home. In 1869 the first paper was printed in Plainwell by John Goudy and Nelson M. Clute, but its existence was brief. It was styled The Express.

We now get to Otsego again. In 1855 another attempt was made by George A. Fitch to cater to the newspaper wants of the Otsegonians. This time it was the Otsego Courier. It was a mere advertising sheet and was simply started to goble up the State advertising. After its mission had been fulfilled the Courier had no more dispatches to carry, and its old material was returned unlamented whence it came,—to the Kalamazoo Telegraph office. The Courier was a miserable 7x9 affair.

No other newspaper adventure was again tried in Otsego till 1866, when G. W. Parks illuminated that village with the Herald, a small sheet, which changed hands every month or so from the number of its editors and proprietors. Here are a few of these changes: Parks & Hubbard, Samuel M. Hubbard, F. D. Austin, who afterwards founded the Allegan Democrat, G. A. Morgan, Morgan & Hartt, George Scales, and G. A. Morgan.

No sooner than the Otsegonians were furnished with this newspaper fiasco than another attempt was ventured in the journalistic line. This time the victim was H. E. J. Clute, and the paper was styled the Allegan County Record, which he continued to publish under his own name till 1870, when he formed a copartnership with Mr. E. C. Reid, now of the Allegan Journal, who continued its publication till the spring of 1871, when the Record went the way of all its predecessors. The printing material was sold to Kalamazoo parties. The Record was republican in its politics. Three more newspapers were established in Otsego after this, one in 1871-2, by George Scales, another by Jerome Winchell, and still another by Thomas T. Talbot. But one and all they failed to pay running expenses, till in August 2, 1875, the Otsego Weekly Union was established by C. H. Harris and V. V. Campbell. The firm was then changed to C. H. Harris and G. E. Johnson. It is now published by Messrs. Harris & Johnson, and we are glad to know it is now firmly established on a paying basis. It is published on the coöperative plan, one half at home and the other half in Chicago. It is neutral in politics, and in size it is seven-column folio.

The village of Douglas has its Weekly News; but one issue of it ever appeared. It was established by Mr. C. M. Winslow, formerly of the Saugatuck Commercial, while Wayland village has three defunct newspapers, viz.: The News, Venture, and Courier.

The Allegan Journal was printed by hand presses till 1872, when it had a new Cottrell & Babcock press made to order to do its newspaper work. The Allegan Democrat was at first printed on a hand press, but is now printed on a Cincinnati power press. All the rest of the county papers are printed on hand presses except the Saugatuck Commercial, which is printed on a Universal jobber, one page at a time.

The village of Saugatuck has had but one newspaper—the Lake Shore Commercial—which was founded by Dr. Pattee in 1871. The Commercial has subsequently been published by Frank Pattee, H. R. Ellis, George Sherwood & Co., E. W. Perry, M. V. Tarbox, C. M. Winslow, Byron Markham, and Charles M. Wasson, its present publisher. It is an eight-page five-column local and independent paper, half of which is printed at home.

This paper on the rise and progress of Allegan and brief sketch of its press has been hastily compiled, and may be in some respects inaccurate. It is to be hoped this essay may lead to still further explorations into our county's history and material progress, and thus lay bare important facts which may be of interest to future editors, antiquarians, and historians. Let the business of historical research be continued while our venerated pioneers are still in the land of the living.

I would conclude my first contribution to the society's annals with the following poetical compliment to the men of the types to whose kind assistance I am largely indebted for many of the facts contained in this historical paper—the men whose literary labors give a name and reputation to nations, states, counties, cities, villages, and towns:

Hurrah for nature's noblemen,
  The artists of the mind!
Hail, wielders of the mighty pen,
  **With every glory twined!**
Where thought flows freely to its God,
  Unshackled as he gave it;
And freemen rule o'er freedom's sod
  As freemen long will have it.

* * * *

A health to Franklin—Liberty—
  And freedom's press forever!

NOTE.—Since this paper of Mr. Henderson's was prepared, there have been a number of changes in the press of Allegan county. The Allegan County Democrat has ceased to exist, and is now succeeded by the Allegan Tribune, a local paper, neutral in politics, and edited by Gustavus A. Morgan. A new democratic paper has been established at Allegan, styled the Allegan Herald, edited and published by M. T. Ryan. There is another paper at Allegan, styled the Allegan Democrat. It is published by George Scales, of the Plainwell Independent, and edited by David R. Waters. The Saugatuck Commercial, neutral in politics, is edited and published by a lady—Mrs. Lena Woodhull.—[Editor of Pioneer Collections.]

## THE TOWNSHIP OF ALLEGAN—ITS TOPOGRAPHY, PRODUCTS, EARLY SETTLEMENT, AND HISTORY.

BY G. A. MORGAN, OF ALLEGAN.

From the Allegan Journal of October 5, 1878.

The township of Allegan occupies a central position in the county, possesses a first importance as the town in which is located the county seat, and the business metropolis of a large circuit of country, and is highly interesting as one of the best farming towns in the county, and as having a history of almost forty-five years. It is town two north, of range thirteen west, and its west line lies about eighteen miles east of Lake Michigan.

Its surface, like that of the greater part of the county, is highly diversified, and gives the township a very attractive appearance. More than three-fourths of the town is undulating—from a moderate degree to hilly, some parts having quite a high elevation above Lake Michigan. A considerable number of ravines seam the town in various parts, adding not a little to the picturesqueness of the scenery. From the high lands in the north part of the town are obtained wide, charming views of the country in every direction. In the north portion of the town, east of the center line, is a level tract, a considerable portion of which was originally swampy, and in the southeast quarter, on the east side, is a not large area of the same kind of land. There are also a few spots of level pine land on the west and south sides.

The Kalamazoo river comes in near the middle of the south line of the town and flows northwesterly in a most fancifully serpentine course, making more than twice the distance by right lines, and leaving near the middle of the west line. The banks, the most of the distance, are high—at points sixty feet—in some places somewhat precipitously steep, and there are wide bottom lands along its course a good part of the way. There are half a dozen creeks, of greater or less length, running into the river, all but one from the north. On the east side of the town lies Miner lake, with an area of towards one square mile, a most picturesquely shaped body of water, skirted by handsome fields and woods, much resorted to for boating and pleasure parties, and in addition to swimming, several kinds of native fish are planted with white fish, eels, trout, and California salmon. A little more than one-half of another good-sized lake, Dumont, lies within the town on the north line. This lake has unmeasured depth in some parts, fine surroundings of hills, and some foreign fish recently deposited in it. White fish were found in it years ago, conjectured to have swam up from Lake Michigan in an underground passage. Half a mile east of this lake is Wetmore lake, and in the southwest corner of the town is the little Littlejohn lake by the pines.

The timber of this town is, on three-fourths or more of its territory, beech and maple, and the many varieties growing on beech and maple lands, of large size, and the elm, ash, tamarack, cedar and others that grow in swamp lands. Pine, with beech and ash, covered once the land on portions of the south and west sides. H. S. Higinbotham remarked to me that almost all the varieties of timber in the town are to be seen on the bank of the river opposite his house in the village.

The soil is generally a strong sandy loam, in some localities mixed with clay, occasionally stiff clay soil. That of the pine lands is a fair sandy loam. The swamp lands and those of the bottoms of the river have great fertility.

The most of the land of the town is good wheat land, and this grain is produced with good average yields, and at times with the largest, up to the point of forty-five bushels. A portion of the lands are specially adapted to the growth of large corn, and all of them grow it with good productiveness, according to culture. I noticed some very stout corn growing on sandy lands. All other kinds of grain, and the various kinds of roots and vegetables are raised with as prolific yield as might be presumed from the quality of the soils, as in any other parts of the county. A large portion of the town is specially well adapted to the cultivation of grass.

A good deal of attention has been given to the raising of fruits, and there are many fine apple orchards. George E. Jewett showed me through his, which makes this year a display of very abundant and handsome fruit. His neighbor, A. Wood, has also a fine orchard, with the fruit from which he is accustomed frequently to take premiums at the fairs. Plums are also raised to quite a large extent. The elevation of the lands makes them well adapted to the culture of the peach. That is done to a large extent. There are some large orchards, and farmers are planting trees in considerable numbers every year. H. S. Higinbotham tells me he has on his grounds peach trees thirty years old. It is claimed that the peaches in this town and vicinity are better than on the lake shore in quantity and quality. A few people are cultivating strawberries for market. W. O. Hudson has a fine nursery of a variety of fruit trees, on the Dumont and Monterey roads, of about ten acres. G. A. LeFleur has also nurseries in the north part of the town. H. Dewey has a hot house, and a large fruit, vegetable and flower garden in the west suburbs of the village.

A few farmers have been engaged for some years in breeding the short-horn cattle. W. C. & H. C. Weeks have on their fine farm by Miner lake the largest herd in the county; one five-year old thoroughbred bull from Smith's herd, Kalamazoo county, and one of the finest animals in the State, and one two-year old thoroughbred, four thoroughbred cows and three calves, purchased with the two-year old bull from a Kentucky herd, and about fifty half grade—many fine animals among them. They have altogether on their farm about 100 cattle. J. H. Wetmore has a thoroughbred bull and eight grade cows; N. Jewett a thoroughbred cow purchased at the State agricultural college farm, with a thoroughbred bull calf, and a thoroughbred is kept on the county-house farm. Ira Chaffee has ten or twelve very handsome high-grade short-horns on his farm near the village. A considerable number of farmers are breeding from the thoroughbred bulls in town. J. H. Wetmore is breeding the Poland-china and the Berkshire hogs, and G. W. Lonsbury and J. Snedeker are keeping thoroughbred Berkshires. Mr. Lonsbury has an imported hog, and some superior animals. Improved breeds of hogs are generally raised by the farmers. A good number of sheep are kept, most good grade merinos, with a few Cotswold and Lincolnshires. A. Vosburgh of Mill Grove has a thoroughbred Percheron stallion, and some attention is given to improving the stock of horses. A considerable number of people are engaged in bee culture. A few have a large number of swarms; A. S. Weeks 81, P. Leonard 24, and J. Tomlinson 45, all within Allegan village.

G. E. & N. Jewett have quite a large extent of osage orange hedge on their farms, kept well trimmed, and the most I have seen in any town in the county. The hedges present a beautiful appearance, and give one a pleasant faith's discerning view of the splendid country of fifty years hence, when the farms will be extensively lined with such hedges. G. E. Jewett told me that he has found these hedges as cheap as board fences.

A creditable proportion of the farm buildings are substantial and good-looking, and there is a good number of elegant farm-houses in the town. A good proportion of the farms are apparently well and profitably tilled, and the town numbers among its citizens some of the best farmers in the county. Some of the lands in the town can be bought at low figures, and some of the best and most favorably located farms would claim $100 or more per acre.

The amount of improved land by the census of 1874 was 9,446 acres, with 221 farms, somewhat increased since. The supervisor's valuation in 1866 was $411,966, in 1877, $1,118,205. The equalized valuation in 1877 was $1,120,000 of which $211,786 was personal. The tax levied was $25,062.65—$3,744.73 county, $3,037.29 State, $18,290.63 town. The railroad bond tax helps to swell the taxes in this as in some other towns in the county, it amounted to $8,750 last year. A considerable portion of the lands in the town were held by non-residents or speculators for many years, and the town was not improved in farms to so large an extent as some other towns in the county, with a later begun settlement.

The settlement of Allegan began in 1834. In 1833 Elisha Ely of Rochester, N. Y., who was one of the first settlers of that city, prospected in this region and purchased land for a company called the Boston company, on the Kalamazoo river at the point of the site of the present village of Allegan. Among the members of the company were Sam. Hubbard, E. Monroe, and P. Cutler of Boston, and C. C. Trowbridge of Detroit. The company proposed to build mills on the river for manufacturing pine and other lumber, and to inaugurate as soon as possible all the kinds of business which should lay the foundations of a city which they fondly hoped to see rise in the valley and on the hills. The spot seemed favorable. It was on the border of a pine forest that stretched away to the west; in other directions were other kinds of valuable timber and good farming lands. Here was a good water power and a navigable river on which they could float their products to a great lake and to all the world to which it led out. In the spring of 1834 Mr. Ely came on from Rochester with a little company consisting of Leander S. Prouty, wife and year-and-a-half old boy Andy, J. Pomeroy who was to be foreman of the work to be undertaken, and J. Hoyt. Mr. Prouty tells of their having the usual experience pioneers had in those days in coming from Detroit to Kalmazoo, getting stuck now and then in the mud, and once or twice capsizing in it. Arrived at the port of Pine Creek, on the Kalamazoo, Mr. Ely bought lumber with which to build a shanty when they should arrive at their journey's end, and rafts were made of it upon which their goods were loaded. E. Sherwood piloted one of the rafts, but Mr. Prouty, having been a sailor on Lake Ontario, knowing the current of any river like a fish, and "born to command," as he says, took the other raft, placed his family and goods on it, and refused to have any pilot but himself. At the mouth of Schnable brook Sherwood's raft ran aground, and some of the freight was shaken into the water, Mr. Prouty, by the exercise of his authority, compelling Pomeroy to hold on to a barrel of pork and save it as he valued his life. While the men were righting up the raft, Mrs. Prouty and her child went ashore, and some Indians meeting them and not knowing from whence they came, were astonished and imagined that some angels had come down.

Arriving at the future home of Allegan, the party put up a shanty on the spot nearly opposite the present Chaffee house, Wallace Chittenden, who came with them from Pine creek, driving the first nail, and making the first echoes of the hammer in the woods. But they were not the first whites that camped on that spot. Lucius Barnes of Wayland, informed me that fifty-one years ago last February, while on his way from Rabbit river, where he was in the employ of the fur trader, L. Campau, to his father's house on Gull prairie, he camped one night on the spot where now stands the Allegan house. It was the 6th of June when the emigrants arrived. They immediately cleared an acre of land, borrowed a plow of Abijah Chichester of Otsego, not having yet fished up their own that went to the bottom of the river from the raft, and put in potatoes and the seeds of vegetables, from which they harvested a supply for winter. Mr. Prouty tells me that on the peninsula were elevations of ground that resembled garden vegetable beds, with large trees on them. In the course of the summer they put up two log houses, one near the Allegan house site for a boarding house, the other a few rods above for Mr. Prouty. They had to roll up the logs to their places with oxen. He and his wife had been engaged by Mr. Ely for one year, for work and keeping boarders, at the moderate price of $12.50 and $5 respectively, per month. Mr. Prouty proving to be a more natural man for foreman than Pomeroy, was given his place. They were in his employ fifteen months, and then moved on to their land in Trowbridge, where they still reside. Alex. L. Ely, a son of E. Ely, came on in the fall. On the 17th of October was received another addition, in the birth of Jeanette E. Prouty. As there was no other family or woman in the little clearing, Mrs. Prouty was sojourning at the house of Eber Sherwood in Otsego at the time when the child was born. Mr. Ely afterward gave a lot of land to this little first white daughter of the Allegan wilderness, in honor of her being the first born.

In the spring of 1835 Horace Wilson and wife came, also a Mr. Keep and wife, who kept the boarding house awhile, but did not become permanent settlers. Soon after came Joseph Fisk and wife, and during the year H. Sabin, Ira Chaffee, Elias Streeter with his boys, the present J. B., T. E., and A. L. Streeter, B. Eager, L. Fish, D. Doane Davis, P. N. Higinbotham, J. Weare, Sen., John Askins, B. and J. Colburn, H. and E. D. Ely, W. C., W. B., and T. C. Jenner, G. H. and E. S. Baker, E. Parkhurst, N. Abbott, J. H. Swezey, E. Moody, A. W. Beals, W. Jones, Feek, A. S. and C. Weeks, Z. L. Griswold, J. W. Bond, J. Dawson, L. Huddleston. In this year was born the first boy, and second child of the settlement, Jos. Allegan Fisk, to Mr. and Mrs. Jos. Fisk. He received the last christian name at the request of Mr. Ely. The boy lived, however, not quite one year.

In 1836 there were many arrivals, among whom the names of the following persons have been learned: J. Peabody, D. A. McMartin, O. D. Goodrich, A. Rossman, J. B. and L. Bailey, S. Marsh, D. Ammerman, W. A. Knapp, E. A. Murray, L. W. Watkins, J. D. Stone, W. H. C., T. and W. A. Bliss, L. Loomis, John, S. F., F. J., A. and P. B. Littlejohn, Leech, J. Higgins, W. Porter, W. Finn, W. Field, John J. Jones, formerly postmaster, T., A. and N. B. West, P. Leonard, W. H. Brown, W. Allen, E. G. Bingham, M. Winslow, G. McCoy, H. K. Clarke, J. P. Austin, D. Emerson, E. C. Southworth, H. Bassitt, J. Stone, C. Field, A. Mann, L. Wilcox, E. and W. R. Dickinson, G. and C. Hollister, G. Kennard, H. H. and Z. Booth, P., W. S. and Dan D. Davis, J. R. Kellogg, H. Hoaxie, J. L. Shearer, D. B. Stout, B. Streeter, O. Fisk, H. Annis, B. Atkins, J. Torrey, A. Johannot, A. Fuller, J. Billings, J. Bush, C. Higinbotham, W. Pullen, E. Moody, J. Cook, Reynolds, G. Y. Warner, Ellis, C. and J. J. Miner, A. and P. Chaffee, T. M. Russell, G. Jewitt, G. Nelson. There were estimated to be 500 people in the town in November of this year.

Among those who came in 1837, I have learned of the following: A. Morse, P. Vankeuren, R. W. Brooks, E. Brownell, with sons E. and J., D. Leggett, L. K. Pratt, J. Davison, G. H. Hill, L. Ross, J. B. Higinbotham, L. Lyons, J. M. Thomas, A. Parkinson, T. N. West, L. Winslow, N. and C. Dickinson, N. Briggs, G. Muma, G. Benson, Rogers, Randall, C. Austin, B. Pratt, J. P. Nolan, J. Weare, Jr., W. Goff, J. Hudson, W. C. Rowe, W. F. Brown, G. H. Hull, J. Robinson, H. Hutchins, George and John F. Ely, A. D. Dunning, A. Goodrich, J. Doty, H. Streeter, J. and L. Eager, M. VanNorman, T. Sands, D. C. Alling, J. P. Austin, E. Flannegan, Z. Huggins, A. Edgerton, G. Morton, J. H. Wells, Aldsworth, J. Smith, H. and J. Allett.

In 1838 H. Langley, J. Henderson, and sons A. and J. D. Henderson, F.

and C. G. Wilson, F. Day, H. Cole, J. Lowe, O. Smith, G. Perkins, C. F. Nichols, J. and S. L. Stone, N. Manson, G. Rutsan, R. and G. W. Fairchild, J. Weeks, F. Wilson, H. Fisher, D. A. Plummer, W. Marshall, F. Vanbogart, D. and J. W. Willard, R. Rogers, D. Bracelin, W. P. Giddings, B. W. Kibby, F. C. Parker, J. Ross, I. Dexter, J. Knowlton, S. Brockway, J. B. Price.

Some of the immigrants of 1839 were S. Rumery, D. Kingsbury, H. L. Hurd, H. S. Higinbotham, J. Green, S. Underwood, D. and E. Wilder, A. P. Bush. From 1840 to 1845 included S. Miles, E. and L. Knapp, D. C. Henderson, J. B. Alexander, M. Hawks, L. Barker, H. Staring, Asa Morse, S. Stafford, H. C. and G. C. Smith, J. B. Allen, J. Frost, J. Bush, A. and A. B. Carpenter, W. Hinckley, C. C. Willis, C. C. Brownson, J. P. McCormick, H. Lonsbury, E. B. Bassett, C. R. Wilkes, R. and L. Thompson, A. R. Calkins, J. Moses, J. Littlejohn, Jr., R. Dyer, J. and J. W. Kent, G. Bigsby, G. Updyke, C. J. Tanner, O. Goodspeed, T. N. Hudson, R. G. Winn.

Between 1845 and 1850 included the following among others immigrated into Allegan: A. Muma, J. Rawley, S. Peek, Crary, A., H. J., and M. Cook, Rev. D. Platt, J. Sadler, S. P. Stanley, Z. Huggins, R. Updyke, O. B. Bellinger, B. Collins, L. Comstock, T. Childs, R. Mabbs, L. Sage, Watson Brown, G. and J. Stegeman, F. Ronte, H. S. Lay, J. E. Babbitt, G. Peet, Mr. Hovey, W. Partridge, J. Dyer, H. Stimson, H. Cole, J. Yelden, M. Baldwin, H. Green, C. and M. Richards, T. J. Parker.

Within the following eight years the following were among those that took up their residence in the town: E. B. Born, Eggleston, H. Carter, S. H., O., and W. Priest, Geo. Lovelace, J. M. Foster, J. R. Rockwell, A. Wood, S. Shank, J. Penfield, J. Gritz, T. Bush, P. O. Littlejohn, J. O. Northrop, Alanson and Augustus Lilly, McComber, J. Agan, C. and F. Atwell, J. Clement, H. and D. D. Seamon, M. Stegeman, P. Vahue, C. J. Bassett, C. Baker, S. Harnden, G. Hewitt, A. Cheeney, G. E. and N. Jewett, F. Sullivan, D. White, A. Hurd, J. B. Porter, J. D. and E. D. Follett, G. W. and G. R. Stone, G. and A. Oliver, W. B. Williams, J. Aldworth, J. and P. Cook, D. and S. Ellinger, W. C. Messinger, P. S. Aldrich, W. C. Haynes, J. D. and H. H. Pope, C. W. and A. E. Calkins, D. and J. Ely, W. Allen, B. Tagg, T. L. Dean, P. Smith, J. Pfeiffner, J. Fansler, J. Alley, W. A. Alberts, D. Thompson, T. J. and J. Pennock, E. G. Hackley, A., H. G., and A. D. Case, G. Moyers, J. C. Elliott, F. A. Williams, J. B. Champion, J. S. Cray, J. A. Rigby, J. J. Jones, G. Thompson, J. Thew, J. M. Heath, H. Franks, J. Lanehauts, L. B. Smith, B. D. Pritchard, H. Vosburgh.

George Bigelow, a son of Dr. Bigelow, seems to have been one of the earliest born boys, perhaps the earliest that grew up to adult years. He died for his country at the battle of Corinth. Elizabeth S. Abbott, daughter of Nirum Abbott, who came in 1835, now Mrs. H. S. Higinbotham, a girl of ten years, was the first little girl emigrant in town. On Christmas day, 1835, Alex. L. Ely was married to Mary Weare, and Geo. Y. Warner to Mrs. Williams, by Rev. Wm. Jones—the first marriages in town. The oldest person living in the town of whom I have learned is Mrs. Watson, the widow of Eli Watson, a Watson pioneer, now 87 years of age, with well-preserved vigor of body and mind.

A considerable number of the earliest settlers were from Rochester, N. Y., and vicinity. The people of Allegan have come mostly from the eastern States and Ohio, and some from England. There is quite an infusion of Germans and Hollanders, and a considerable number of colored people. The first settlers were from all characters, from the highest to the lowest, as there were many transient people working in the mills and woods, and adventurers. Quite a number of present prominent citizens of other towns lived at first for a while in Allegan. Within three years from the beginning of the settlement there were seven men of liberal education resident in the village.

From the beginning to the present time the citizens of Allegan have been, in large proportion, people of large enterprise, energy, and public spirit, with the intellectual and moral character which abundant educational and religious institutions, begun at the outset, infuse and keep alive in a town. The present population of the township is not far from 4,000. The vote at the presidential election in 1876 was 923.

The first company found Macsaubee and a few Indians camped on the bank of the river. The Indians were accustomed to wigwam on the peninsula where are now the race and mills. They had ground down the river by the Bushong fur trading post, where they raised corn. Mrs. G. E. Jewett tells me they were kind to the whites, at times when sickness was very prevalent. She related to me an incident illustrating an Indian characteristic. One of them came to the house of her father, E. G. Bingham, one evening when the snow was falling, and asked Mr. B. to go with him, with a lantern, and help him look for a silver piece which he had just lost. They soon found it. The Indian gave a grunt, and not a word of thanks, but a day or two after came with a quantity of game as a present to Mr. B. Macsaubee, she says, had some fine-looking smart sons, one of them now a gambler in San Francisco, and a daughter with a wonderfully musical voice. Muckataw was the name of the Indian chief. A half-breed named Prickett, brought by Mr. Ely from New York, acted for a while as an interpreter, but the whites and Indians soon learned one another's words, so that there was no need of an interpreter.

Philander Leonard, who with his brother-in-law came in 1836, relates to me an incident showing the difference in Sabbath notions in those days. Their families came in a wagon from Detroit, and arrived at Gull Prairie Saturday night, after a six days' ride, Mr. Leonard carrying a child on foot, the greater part of the way, in his arms. The question came up next morning whether they should go on to Allegan on Sunday. There would have to be some washing done there on that day, if they waited till Monday, so they concluded it would be no worse to travel, and that it was a case of necessity. Some little time after when Mr. Bliss wished to join the M. E. class, this matter was formally inquired into, and he was pronounced guiltless of Sabbath breaking.

In 1835 a dam was built across the river at the point where the settlement began, on the same spot the present one occupies, a race was dug and a saw-mill built, and put to running on the site of the present Chaffee mill, by the Boston company. The dam was built with layers of pine trees, and stones on each layer. The locality is favorable for getting a good fall by a short race, it being a peninsula, and the river making a circuit of about a mile and a half from the dam around the lower end of the peninsula up to the point opposite the dam, where it is twenty to twenty-five rods across the peninsula, making in that distance a fall of about two feet. The fall from the race into the river is nine feet. There is abundant room on the peninsula, with only the present short race for a large number of manufacturing establishments. In 1837 the Schoolcraft saw-mill was built on the site of the present Streeter mill by the Schoolcraft family, and in 1838 another run by I. Chaffee and C. F. Nichols. I. Chaffee put in the second muley and the third circular saw in the State. In

1837 a bridge was erected across the river by Joseph Fisk, and the lower bridge, the Littlejohn, by S. F. Littlejohn, in 1841, and about the same time one was partly built across, starting from near the present Wetmore mill, by C. F. Nichols and other parties. In 1838 Sidney Ketchum built a large first-class flouring mill, with four run of stones, on the spot where Oliver Brothers furniture factory now stands. It was got to running in 1839, and two years after was burned down. In 1854 John Littlejohn put up the present Wetmore mill, which was completed in 1855. J. Fisk sold lumber in 1836 in Chicago at $50 per thousand, culls in, and in 1839 the price of lumber had gone down to that point, that he sold lumber there at $5 and culls out. He tells me that he built the first dock in Chicago in 1836, twenty feet in length, near Wells street. He afterwards built a larger one near Randolph street. A. Rossman and J. Hoxie started a foundry in 1836, the one now owned by Tomlinson & Heath, which Mr. Rossman ran till within a few years (and the people say he got rich by it). F. Booher, of Kalamazoo built the Exchange hotel in 1835, his brother, H. Booher keeping it, making a beginning in the barn. J. Fisk built a portion of the Allegan house in 1835, sold to O. Fisk, who kept it some months in connection with William Finn, and in 1836 Mr. Fisk bought it back and added to it, keeping it for a time himself. A. Fuller and D. Doane Davis were others of the early landlords of this hotel. Mr. Barber, J. Askins, J. Henderson and J. Grover were the first millwrights in the place, and helped build many of the mills of the county. A. Johannott started a stage line to Kalamazoo in 1837. A. L. Ely was the first postmaster in the village. Some years after, in 1855, a plank road was completed to Schnable creek, on the route to Plainwell, was kept up a few years and then given up; the people on the other part of the route failing to build their portion of it. The first jail building, a portion of which was used for a court room some years after, was built in 1837, on the southwest corner of court-house square. The first planing mill was started by N. B. & A. West in 1842, a small, simple concern, compared with N. B. West's present large establishment. The Ammerman saw-mill was built in 1843, on Dumont Creek, by Fisher & Ely. It was converted into a grist-mill, of two run of stones, two or three years since, and is owned and run by Mr. Holmes. A wooden railroad three-fourths of a mile in length, the first railroad in the county, was constructed in an early day from the saw-mill to the river for freighting lumber, and so used for a time. This Ammerman locality went for a time by the name of Babylon. The A. Vosburgh saw, shingle and heading mill at Mill Grove was built by Levi Comstock, in 1849, afterwards burned and rebuilt. Horace Wilson cleared the most of the village plat on the west side, the timber of which was pine and ash, in the winter of 1835 anud 1836, and sowed a portion of it to oats in 1836, probably the first grain raised in the county. Mr. Wilson was a great tramp, and prospected on foot and alone, in 1836, the Muskegon and Big Rapids country. Z. L. Griswold chopped a few acres in 1836 on his land north of the village, and E. Moody on land adjoining. N. Abbott commenced the first farming in the town on the Sage farm west of the village, and J. F. Ely, Jr., about the same time on the Charles Wilson farm. P. Dumont and C. Wetmore began farming operations in the northwest part of the town in 1837. Mr. Dumont built a saw-mill on the outlet of Dumont lake in 1840.

The greater part of the freight from the east into western Michigan, in those days, came around the lakes and up the Kalamazoo and St. Joseph rivers, and flour was shipped down the rivers, and there was consequently a great deal of boating in flat-boats on the Kalamazoo, and poling them up the river was no small job. John Allett and Alex. Henderson were among the captains of those boats. The boats commanded $100 a trip between Kalamazoo and the mouth. The "Pioneer" was the name of the first river boat. A little river steamer was put on the Kalamazoo river to ply between Saugatuck and Allegan in 1838. It was named the "C. C. Trowbridge," in honor of the distinguished Detroit capitalist, and one of the principal stockholders in the Boston company, who owned the Allegan village site. The captain of this steamboat was George S. Porter. This boat was too large and unwieldy and was soon hauled off. In 1856 a company was formed to build another steamer named the "Adelaide." Dr. J. C. Elliott and Captain C. S. Mixer were the owners. She only ran a year or two on the river. Many years after, between 1860 and 1870, the Helen Mar, by J. D. Bush, Mayflower, Aunt Betsy, owned by Ira Chaffee, ran between Allegan and Saugatuck for several years till the railroads built in the county made them no longer profitable. The only representative of steam craft at present in Allegan is J. Pike's little pocket steamer, the "Pond Lily." M. Winslow opened the first store, in 1836, nearly opposite the Allegan house, and J. Fisk the same summer, near the same point. Mr. Fisk's store, the first building put up of much style in that line, was afterwards moved near the Kellogg corner, and is now occupied by D. Ellinger as a tailor shop. The A. L. Ely house, now occupied by Mrs. Moses, the Dr. Goodrich, the S. F. Littlejohn (Colonel Fisk's now), built in 1837, the J. Higgins house in 1838, are among the first dwelling houses of some account. Mr. Higgins tells me he has lived longer than any other man in Allegan on one place, beginning in a shanty on his in 1837.

Among the early mechanics, A. S. Weeks was the first painter and chair-maker, G. Kennard, cabinet maker, Perkins and Bond and S. Rockway, tailors, E. Knapp, hatter, H. Langley, tanner. J. Torrey made the first brick near the present tannery.

The prices of many things which the first settlers had to buy were high, and they produced for a considerable time not much but lumber and shingles. Provisions were often scarce. Pork ran up at times to 28 cents, butter to 50, salt to $9 a barrel, prints to 38 cents per yard. The prices of village lots were high in 1836, and things went on swimmingly till the financial crisis of 1837 came and made business dull here, as everywhere else, and this, with a good deal of sickness prevailing from chills and fevers, caused a considerable number to move away about that time. Asa Morse told me one of his neighbors, a farmer, being reduced to potatoes and salt for a number of days, and johnny cake was a staple article of diet.

Dr. O. D. Goodrich, who arrived in 1836, was the first physician to commence practice, and, with the exception of Dr. L. B. Coates of Otsego, he is the oldest practicing physician in the county. Dr. R. M. Bigelow came in the same year. Dr. A. B. Calkins located in 1844. Sawtelle, Ham, Stanton, Barber, Elliott, were others of the early physicians.

G. Y. Warner, F. J. Littljohn, and H. K. Clarke, who came in 1836, were the first lawyers, Mr. Warner the first to begin practice. Mr. Littlejohn being in poor health, practiced surveying, and was a sub-agent of the Boston company for a few years. He was for a short period prosecuting attorney, the first one in the county, and succeeded in driving out some counterfeiters who had their rendezvous in the woods. On one occasion he played the detective by running a random line with his compass to a lake in Clyde, and came across a man whose rifle he managed to secure, and marched the man into Allegan. The fellow forgot to throw away some bogus money he had in his pocket, and these pieces secured his conviction. T. and D. C. Chapin, Goble, and E. B. Bassett were also among the lawyers of the first fifteen years. E. Ransom of Kalamazoo, afterwards governor, was the first circuit judge in the county, the first in 1837, and after him A. Pratt and B. F. Graves. F. J. Littlejohn was elected circuit judge in 1856, and was re-elected, holding the office till 1869. The circuit embraced Allegan and twenty other counties mostly to the north. The judge was obliged to travel on some part of the circuit in very simple style, and earned his salary by many hard knocks. The circuit judges had, in the early judicial system of the State, two assistant side judges, generally, or always, non-professional men. Judge L. tells of a case in Allegan county, in which he was one of the counsel and in which a decision by Judge Ransom on a point of law was reversed by his two farmer side judges. A county court was at one time provided by the legislature, which flourished in 1848-50, in which everybody could practice who chose to. It was given up as a non-paying institution. Henry H. Booth of Allegan and Ab. I. Dederick of Gunplain were the judges of this court.

In 1837 a scheme was projected for a canal from St. Clair to the Kalamazoo river, to be called the Clinton and Kalamazoo canal, and Mr. Littlejohn was employed in February, 1838, to survey the west end of the line, from near Middleville, Barry county, to Allegan, which he did, twenty-five miles, in eight days, with quite a depth of snow on the ground. The fates deferred the construction of this canal to a later age. A line was also run in 1837 for a railroad from Marshall to Allegan, and timber for a depot was got on to the ground where the Chaffee house now stands.

Allegan had also its wildcat bank, opened Jan. 8, 1838, with a capital of $100,000. Alex. L. Ely was the president and H. K. Clarke cashier. It went "where the woodbine twineth" in less than two years. "Uncle Ben. Eager" and some others are said to have lost some money in stock invested in the bank.

The township was organized in 1836, the first town meeting held in April, in a small building a little west of the Allegan house. The first election in the town was held in the November previous, for the election of a member of the constitutional convention, to which Richard Weare was elected. Twenty-five votes were cast at the town meeting. Jos. Fisk was moderator, Joseph Allen and Elisha Moody clerks. Alexander L. Ely was elected supervisor; Nat. Livermore, town clerk; Elisha Ely, J. Fisk, Elisha Moody, Enoch S. Baker, justices; E. Moody, Nirum Abbott, J. Fisk, assessors; David Anthony, collector; D. Anthony, Hiram Bassitt, constables; E. Moody, E. Ely, E. S. Baker, highway commissioners; Lyman Fisk, E. Ely, overseers of the poor; Sylvester Aldrich. Benzern McCoy, E. S. Baker, school commissioners; A. L. Ely, Wm. C. Jenner, Jos. Allen, school inspectors; D. Doane Davis, Ben. Eager, fence viewers; N. Abbott, path-master; A. L. Ely, pound-master. At a special meeting Oct. 4, Jason Torrey was elected clerk, and Garrett H. Baker collector. At a special election in January, 1837, Silas F. Littlejohn and Elijah G. Bingham were elected justices to fill vacancies.

At the elections held in the county in November, 1836, the following officers were elected: Elisha Ely was elected to the lower house of the legislature, receiving 25 votes, the whole number cast; E. Ely, John Anderson, associate judges of the circuit court; Eben Parkhurst, probate judge; A. L. Ely, register and county clerk; John Murphy, sheriff; Milo Winslow, treasurer; Wm. Forbes, surveyor; Dan. A. Plummer, Jas. Preston, coroners. Jason Torrey was chairman of the board of canvassers, and E. J. Bingham deputy county clerk. The first board of supervisors consisted of A. L. Ely, Hull Sherwood, Jr., D. A. Plummer, J. Murphy; H. Sherwood, chairman. The county board of commissioners, elected by the people of the county, was established in 1838, and continued till 1842, when the return was made to the system of board of supervisors. The first board of commissioners consisted of S. F. Littlejohn, O. Wilder, and H. Sherwood. At the election held in 1837 for member of Congress the number of votes cast in Allegan was 137.

The township of Allegan having within its territory the county seat, has been under the necessity of standing a strong draft for county officers, and has ever been willing to make the sacrifice. She has, in addition, furnished some State and national servants. The following, as near as I have been able to ascertain, is a true record of the honored ones: Members of the legislature, Elisha Ely, representative; Flavius J. Littlejohn, representative and senate, also candidate for Congress and for Governor; H. C. Briggs, senate; John R. Kellogg, representative; David B. Stout, representative; Gilbert Moyers, senate; Wm. B. Williams, senate; Philetus O. Littlejohn, representative; Mark D. Wilber, senate; Henry F. Thomas, representative and senate. Circuit judges, F. J. Littlejohn, John W. Stone, Dan. J. Arnold; probate judges, D. C. Chapin, Geo. Y. Warner, E. Ely, Elisha B. Bassitt, W. B. Williams, D. J. Arnold, J. B. Humphrey; prosecuting attorneys, F. J. Littlejohn, G. Y. Warner, D. C. Chapin, G. Moyers, J. W. Stone, Albert H. Fenn, Philip Padgham; county clerks, A. L. Ely, E. G. Bingham, Henry H. Booth, E. B. Bassitt, J. W. Stone, H. C. Briggs, A. E. Calkins; registers, A. L. Ely, Ebenezer Parkhurst, E. G. Bingham, Wm. Finn, E. G. Hackley, Jacob B. Bailey, Wm. C. Weeks, Perry J. Davis; treasurers, Alvah Fuller, D. Doane Davis, Duncan A. McMartin; circuit court commissioners, J. L. Havens, Jos. Thew, D. J. Arnold; sheriffs, John Murphy, Jos. Fisk, William Still, Ben. Pratt, Nelson Chambers, Willard Higgins, Jacob Grover, Andrew P. Grover, William S. Hooker, Alex. Henderson, Wm. L. Ripley, Wm. Hay, Thos. J. Parker; surveyors, Wm. Forbes, John P. Allard, E. B. Wilder; coroners, Alex. Henderson, Donald C. Henderson (Don claims that the office of coroner is higher than that of sheriff, as a coroner is the officer, and the only officer, that can arrest a sheriff); county commissioners, Silas F. Littlejohn, M. Winslow. Benj. D. Pritchard has held the office of state land commissioner, Jas. B. Porter that of secretary of state, W. B. Williams those of delegate to the constitutional convention and railroad commissioner. W. B. Williams was twice elected member of Congress, and J. W. Stone, a present member, was a resident of Allegan for a number of years, till one or two years previous to his election. One of the earliest settlers, Alanson S. Weeks, has also furnished an officer to the regular army, Lieutenant Harrison S. Weeks, a graduate of West Point. The town furnished also a large number of privates, and a good number of officers who were efficient in the service. The officers were so many that I mention only the two most prominent, General D. B. Pritchard, who led the band that captured Jeff. Davis, and Colonel Chauncey J. Bassett of the Michigan sixth infantry, and afterwards colonel of the first Louisiana colored infantry, who was killed in the Red river expedition, and to whom the citizens of his native town of Lee, Mass., have erected in that town a handsome monument.

The county farm is located in Allegan, and consists of 160 acres of the best quality of land, 90 of which are improved. The buildings are spacious, in most respects well adapted for the accommodation of the unfortunate inmates. One of the buildings is a two-story structure, with basement, built in 1869, for the keeping and treatment of the insane, in which the officers have had encouraging success. There is also a neat two-story building, erected two or three years since, for the care and instruction in school of the poor children thrown upon the county, of sufficient size for the accommodation of thirty of them, in which fifteen were provided for last winter, and homes obtained for them in the spring. This is the first institution of the kind established in the State, in connection with a county house, and was largely indebted for its origin to the efforts of S. S. Dryden, one of the county superintendents of the poor. O. Town and C. W. Calkins are the other superintendents, Mr. Calkins having charge of their office.

Schools were started as early as 1835, and a district was organized in 1836. Miss Hinsdill, a daughter of Judge Hinsdill, of Kalamazoo county, who seems to have been a pioneer teacher in several parts of the county, was, as well as I have been able to ascertain, about the first teacher in the town. She taught the school in a building just west of the present Peck block. Mrs. G. E. Jewett remembers the spot from the circumstance of her being sent down to the river when attending the school as a pretty small girl, to wash the ink off her hands, falling in, and coming up the third time before she was rescued. Miss Eliza Littlejohn taught a private school in the fall of 1836, and the district school in summers after. Miss Luvia Bingham, now Mrs. H. Dumont, taught select schools in 1839 and 1840, in the village and district school at Hudson's corners. Miss Mary Parkhurst taught a private school in 1837. Spencer Marsh, G. Y. Warner, E. Parkhurst and H. Munger were the earliest male teachers. The first district school-house was built in 1836, a little south and east of the present residence of J. B. Bailey. It was a building twenty-six by forty feet and had cupalo with a bell in it, which bell, with tone well preserved, still rings out its peals on the village fire companies' building. The school-house stands now on the bank of the river opposite the public square, and has at times, of late years, been put to the useful but lower purposes of livery stable and blacksmith shop. It was at first for a few years used also for holding courts and religious meetings. An academy was organized and incorporated in 1845 or 1846, which was taught for five or six years by Elisha B. Bassett, who received his education at Williams college. The academy building stood on the grounds of the present Irving House. Mr. Bassett is spoken of by his pupils of those days as an excellent teacher, and the school was prosperous but had a short life. It was at this school that D. C. Henderson received a part of his education, but some unpleasantness occurring one day, Don did not pursue his studies any further, proceeding to New York City and graded up into a printing office and took his sheepskin as an editor. Judge H. H. Booth erected in 1857, on the west hill, in a beautiful pine grove, a large building for a private school, which he named "The Pine Grove Seminary." He gave the use of the building to the teachers and kept it in repair. The school was taught for several years by Mr. and Mrs. Hermon Perry, and after by Rev. L. F. Waldo. In 1865 Judge Booth sold the building to the school district in that part of the village and it is now the principal building of the union school. A female seminary was opened and taught for a year or two by Dr. S. D. Tobey and sister, now Mrs. H. C. Briggs, in the residence now occupied by W. B. Jenner. The number of school districts in the township is eight, of which

Rev. Walter Scott is the learned and capable superintendent. The school census last year showed 1,064 between the ages of five and twenty years, and the attendance in the year 903. There are three brick school-houses and eight of wood, the most of them of good and some of superior quality; the estimated value of the buildings $16,600. Four male and twenty-two female teachers were employed at salaries amounting to $5,016. The total school expenditures of the town were $8,139. The west district of the village was graded in 1865, and a Mr. L. C. LeBarron was the principal. In 1867 the other districts were connected with it and the union school organized, with William H. Stone as principal. There is a central and three ward schools, with intermediate departments in each of the ward schools. A superintendent and eleven assistant teachers give instruction in these schools. Edmund D. Barry is the present able and popular superintendent. The institution has had the services of capable and efficient principals. The central building, a wooden one, and the ward school-houses, of brick, are very creditable school edifices. The total enrollment of pupils in the union school last year was 681. The township school library numbers 400 volumes. The village of Allegan has a library and literary association, a stock company of thirty-five members, with a good number of yearly reading members, a library of 677 volumes, and in addition 200 books of reference.

[A paragraph relating to the newspapers is here omitted, the subject being complete in the preceding article.—Ed.]

The religious welfare of the people was provided for at an early period, and regular services were held in 1835. In that year Rev. William Jones, a Presbyterian clergyman, located in Allegan, and was soon engaged by the people to preach for a year. In 1836, April 23, a Presbyterian church, with fourteen members, was organized at the house of William C. Jenner, by a committee of the St. Joseph presbytery, Rev. S. Woodbury and W. Jones. A small church building was erected a little west of the present Baptist church, and when nearly completed was burned, in May, 1836. A new church was begun in 1840 and finished in 1842, on the site of the present church, which was burned by an incendiary in 1874, and the present beautiful brick edifice, the finest one of the village, was erected in the next year. The ministers of this church for a considerable number of years were, Revs. W. Jones, L. Lyon, G. W. Elliott, S. Newberry, H. Hyde, E. F. Waldo, W. Page, J. A. Ranney, and J. Sailor. The present pastor is Rev. J. D. McCord, and the membership is 180. A class of eight members of the M. E. church was organized in 1835 by Rev. Williams of Indiana conference; the first sermon was preached by Rev. Mr. Robe, and a church with an official board was organized in 1837. The early preachers of this denomination were Rev. W. H. C. Bliss, still living in the township, and commonly known as "Father" Bliss, Byron, Bears, Kellogg, W. Todd, G. Stanley, and A. G. Eldred. Messrs. Hargrave and Irkenback were early presiding elders. Rev. L. M. Edmunds is the present preacher in charge, and the church numbers 146 members. W. H. Brown is a resident local M. E. preacher. The first church building of this society, 24x30 feet, was erected in 1837, on the spot where the German M. E. church now stands. Mr. Ketchum, the agent of the Boston company, contributed the lumber. The present church was built in 1852-5, and in it was hung in 1852 the first church bell in the village. The Baptist church of Allegan was organized January 15th, 1841, with seventeen members, as a branch of the Plainfield church, and on April 17th of that year as an independent church. Rev. H. Munger, who preached in Allegan before the organization of the church at an early year, A. J. Bingham, Stanwood D. Platt, T. Z. R. Jones, were the first preachers and pastors of this church. The society commenced building the present court-house building for a church in 1844, and in 1854 sold it to the county. In 1855 they erected their present church edifice. Rev. O. O. Fletcher is the present pastor of this church, which has a membership of 159.

The Congregational church was organized June 10, 1858, with twelve members, at the house of H. H. Booth; N. B. West, moderator, A. Oliver, clerk of the meeting. The society met for some years in the Pine Grove seminary, and in 1864 built the church which they now occupy. The ministers of this church have been Revs. W. W. Wolcott, Hill, E. Andrus, D. Wirt, L. F. Waldo, Apthorp, L. Bickford. Rev. J. Sailor at present ministers to the church, which numbers 150 members. The Protestant Episcopal church of the Good Shepherd was organized June 15, 1858, beginning with a membership of five, which has increased to eighty at the present time. Rev. L. N. Freeman, of Kalamazoo, supplied the church as a mission church at first, and Rev. J. R. Taylor, H. Judd, and W. Scott have been the rectors of this church, the latter clergyman being the present rector. Their church edifice was dedicated in 1869. The S. D. Advent society was formed in 1856, and their church was erected in 1863. Rev. W. H. Littlejohn has ministered to the church a portion of the time of its existence. It has now thirty members. The German M. E. church was organized in 1860 with five members; it numbers now sixty-seven. Their church was dedicated in 1865 by Rev. Mr. Joslyn. Rev. G. Bertram was their first preacher, and Rev. Mr. Militzer is the present minister in charge. There are four German M. E. churches in the county. The Lutheran church was organized in 1868, and built their church edifice in 1875. They number twenty-five members, and Rev. A. Schoenberg of Hopkins, is their minister. A colored Baptist church was organized in October, 1877, with a membership of twenty-one. The spiritualists have also a society which meets in Grange hall. The church edifices are mostly tasteful, creditable buildings, without being of a pretentious character. The Presbyterian, Congregational, Baptist, M. E. and German M. E. societies have also parsonages. There is also an M. E. church at Mill Grove of fifty-four members, attached to the Allegan charge. They have a fine little church building, erected in 1871, toward which A. Vosburg of that place, has contributed between $1,300 and $1,400.

There is a good number of benevolent, and mutual beneficiary societies in Allegan. The Woman's Christian Temperance Union numbers fifty members; Red ribbon club about 400; Good Templars, 100; Juvenile Templars, 150; Ancient Order of United Workmen, thirty-two; German Workmen's society, twenty-two; Knights of Honor, forty-three; Heart and Hand Encampment No. 32, I. O. O. F., forty-five; Allegan Lodge No. 105, I. O. O. F., eighty; Home Lodge No. 290, I. O. O. F., fifty-two; May Lodge No. 61, Daughters of Rebecca forty-six; Eureka Chapter No. 50, R. A. M., sixty; Allegan Lodge No. 111, F. & A. M., 100; Patrons of Husbandry, 230 members. The Allegan county agricultural society was organized in 1853, and numbers now 123 life and seven-years members. J. H. Wetmore is the president of this society, E. C. Reid, secretary, H. B. Peck, treasurer. The society have forty to fifty acres in their grounds on the banks of the Kalamazoo, in the suburbs of the village of Allegan, which possess remarkable beauty, lying in three table land elevations, and well shaded. The driving course, of one-half-mile, occupies the lower plateau, and a fine opportunity for viewing the trotting matches is furnished from the elevation above it. A large two-story floral hall, with a tower was erected last year, at an expense of $2,600. The grounds are well provided with other buildings, sheds, and stands.

The village of Allegan is located on both borders of the Kalamazoo, which has a charming winding course through the place. There are bottom lands along the river, and the town is built on plateaus of two different elevations, the lower one fifteen to forty feet above the river at different points and varied here and there by gentle swells and ridges. The upper elevations are twenty-five to fifty feet above the lower one, and have an irregular line of boundary with it, two or three ravines also being interjected to diversify the features of the landscape. The one on the west side is a deep and romantic one. Extensive views of the lower town and of the surrounding country are obtained from the upper plateaus. Altogether the village has one of the most picturesque sights to be found in Michigan. It is luxuriantly planted with shade trees, among which are some native pines and oaks. The most of the residences of the town are of a very respectable character in their tastefulness, and a good number of them are of an elegant style. The business blocks of brick are large and handsome, not surpassed by those of any other village with the population of Allegan, which is estimated at 3,000 to 3,500. The village is provided with the Holly water-works, two wells, the water elevated by water power from the river, through three miles of pipe, at a cost of about $1,000 a year. The works have been constructed at an expense of $50,000. A handsome stone building contains the machinery of the water-works. Our efficient fire department work for the salvation of the town from fire, of which S. D. Pond is chief engineer. The companies are, Alert hose company, fifteen members, J. C. Holmes, foreman; Rescue hose company, fifteen members, A. W. Messinger, foreman; hook and ladder company, twenty-one members, W. R. Webster, foreman. The companies have fine carriages and apparatus, a good engine house of two stories, a hall in the upper one, and the fire department has the reputation of being one of the best disciplined and most effective in the State.

The village of Allegan was incorporated in 1838, and William C. Jenner seems to have been the first president of the board of trustees, as well as I have been able to ascertain, as the records for a number of the first years have been lost. Don C. Henderson is the president of the board at the present time. The present village trustees are A. E. Calkins, P. J. Davis, Fred B. Leweke, John Allett, Andrew Oliver, C. F. Tubah, with M. H. Welton, marshal, and Clark Nichols, superintendent of the Holly water-works. The portion of the town lying between the base of the hill on the west and the river and Cutler and Hubbard streets on the other hand, was surveyed and platted by O. Wilder in 1835-6, the remainder of it in 1836, by F. J. Littlejohn. The north side is called Brooklyn, formerly "Guinea." There are two public squares in the town, one on the south side and one on the west side, on a handsome little elevation of ground, graded and planted with young trees. The first jail building was erected in 1837, one room of which was in later years used for a court room. It stood on the southwest corner of court-house square. The present court-house, originally built for a church, was purchased by the county in 1854. A commodious and elegant two-story brick building was erected in 1871 on court-house square for the county offices. The present jail and sheriff's residence, a tasteful two-story brick dwelling, was erected in 1862.

Quite a large amount of manufacturing is done in Allegan, its water power affording almost unlimited facilities for this. A water-power company, of which N. B. West is president and J. B. Streeter superintendent, manages this power. There are four flouring mills on the river, J. H. & A. D. Wetmore's, five run of stone grinding about 30,000 bushels of grain per year; S. N. Pike & Co.'s, three run, 15,000; A. E. Calkins, two run, 20,000 bushels of wheat and 10,000 of other grain; J. M. Mendel & Co.'s, three run, 30,000 bushels per year. There are two saw, shingle, and heading mills, Ira Chaffee's, a large one, and a smaller one, of which J. B. Streeter is proprietor. N. B. West runs a large planing mill and door, sash, blinds, moulding, and bracket factory, a business of $15,000 a year in lively times; Stiles & Cook are manufacturing step-ladders in West's factory. There are two foundries, Tomlinson & Heath's, at present operated by J. Tomlinson, and L. W. Watkins', leased and run by R. S. Hill. J. M. Heath manufactures fruit dryers, plows, pruning shears, rotary drags, solid emery wheels, does saw-filing and gumming, wood-turning, emery-grinding, polishing, etc., a business of $1,000 to $3,000 per year. P. Chaffee, pumps. Oliver & Co. have a large cabinet-ware factory with capacity for working twelve to fifteen men, and a business in good times of $20,000 to $25,000 a year. They ship their manufactures abroad to some extent. There are three wagon and carriage factories—E. B. Born's, the first started in Allegan, 1854, in flush times working fourteen hands and turning out $12,000 worth of work per year, W. S. Priest's, J. Kirsheman's, and E. Motley's. Dickinson & Fenn lease the Allegan manufacturing company's works, and are manufacturing milk safes, the Messinger fanning mill (the manufacture of this mill was begun by W. M. & T. C. Messinger in 1855), screen doors, Park's patent inside window blinds, and deal in wire cloth for mills. They are turning out this year 200 mills, 300 safes, and 2,000 blinds. They ship to all parts of the State, and do a business of $7,000 to $10,000 a year. Leweke & Krumbein, M. C. Vandercook, E. A. Stedman, and J. N. Whitmore carry on the marble business; A. B. Curtis, Cronk & Osborn, Wm. Partridge, W. Anderson, S. H. Priest, H. M. Rosa, E. B. Born, blacksmithing; J. Ambler, wool-carding and cloth-dressing and the manufacture of yarn; P. Leonard manufactures bee-hives and honey-boxes; W. Parker and S. Davis, brick. I. O. Hoffman runs a tannery (built in 1856 by E. D. Follett), and J. Caskey a small one. A company for the manufacturing of the Carter tongueless cultivator was organized last winter, which has employed a part of the season twenty-five to thirty hands, and turned out about 1,000 cultivators, which they ship and wholesale. J. G. Ellinger runs a cooper shop; W. H. Blanchard and C. Mattoon, gunsmithing. Amsden & Smith and D. Church manufacture spring bed bottoms, doing each a wholesale business of $3,000 to $6,000 a year. Briggs & Lehman manufacture Timby's "common sense" gate. M. C. Henshaw manufactures cigars.

A large merchant trade is also carried on in Allegan. In the dry goods and clothing line are, Sherwood & Griswold, Hall & Rudd, Livingston & Stern, carrying large stocks; Grange store, with general assortment and heavy stock, managed by A. Stegeman. The dealers in groceries, provisions, crockery, glassware, etc., are J. P. Gardiner & Co., who do also a wholesale business, C. W. Hall, Clapp & Lilly, J. B. Bailey & Son, H. Bohm, I. O. Hoffman, DeLano & Co., J. Sowersly, J. W. Hartson, F. Neiffert.

In the hardware line and agricultural implements are J. W. Chaddock, S. S. Dryden, C. F. Tubah. G. T. Lay, and J. B. Allen, are dealers in agricultural implements, wagons, and buggies. Hodges & Pike, and J. M. Mendel & Co., keep flour and feed stores. In the drugs and medicines, oils, paints, and dye stuffs trade are Dunning Bros., also wall papers, books, and stationery, J. W. Snedaker, VanOstran & Stanley, and H. D. Crane. In clocks, watches, jewelry, and fancy goods, S. D. Pond, H. Vosburg, W. W. Vosburg; merchant tailors, J. M. Killian, D. Ellinger, H. Franks; crockery and glassware, H. Dumont; boot and shoe trade, Jenner & Northrop, Peck & Harding; boot and shoe shops, W. B. Jenner, T. Powers, T. Clifford, S. C. Bovee, J. Shirmer, J. Campbell. A. W. Sherwood, dealer in furniture and school desks; C. H. Adams, dealer in books, stationery, fancy goods, cigars, and news agent; Sphon & Vanderhook, and W. Williams, are proprietors of harness and saddle shops. Baker & Spaulding, Mrs. S. B. Vosburg, Miss Shier, Miss Plimpton, millinery; Mrs. M. E. Todd, Mrs. H. H. Baker, Mrs. A. H. and E. Mead, dressmaking; Miss E. Allen, hair dressing. Two banks furnish funds for business,—the First National, B. D. Pritchard, president, $50,000 capital, and the Allegan city bank, H. M. and H. B. Peck. The office of the Farmer's mutual insurance company of Allegan and Ottawa, a company doing a large business, is located at Allegan; J. B. Dumont is president, and Ira Chichester treasurer of this company. H. F. Marsh, Jr., runs a real estate and insurance office. Lutts & Martin, Mæntz & Franks, D. & H. Doud, are proprietors of meat markets.

The town is furnished with excellent hotels. The Chaffee house, a three-story hotel, owned by Kellogg, Fisk, and May, and leased by Webb Clark, is a first-class village hotel. The City hotel, H. C. McDuffee; the Allegan house, T. Ragan, and I. N. Green's house, at the railroad station, are also well equipped, well kept public houses. E. Daly, O. Smith, W. Seifer, and Mrs. Welch, keep restaurants and boarding-houses; L. Y. Cady, the city bakery; J. B. French, the new bakery; H. Calvert, R. Collier, and J. C. Cousins practice the tonsorial art. H. Burges, L. Humphrey, D. Stewart, C. Carter, M. Huntley, are house, sign, and carriage painters. There are three warehouses at the depot of the L. S. & M. S. railroad; an elevator, J. Fisk and Mrs. H. Carter proprietors, is leased and run by Merrill & McCourtie, for buying grain; warehouses by Sutphin & Schuler, buyers of grain and wool, and Redpath & Campbell, grain dealers. At the same point Green & Lowe deal in lime, stucco, plaster, flour, feed, and baled hay. W. Preston and G. W. Allen have livery and boarding stables, and M. P. Johnson a livery stable and omnibus line. G. F. Sperry deals in fruit and fruit trees.

In the professional departments are G. W. Lonsbury, C. Agrell, and Atwater & Garrison, photographers; W. A. Piper (J. B. Streeter, the first dentist in Allegan, opened an office in 1858), J. E. Fuller, and M. P. Johnson, are dentists. The legal profession is well represented by F. J. Littlejohn, D. J. Arnold, circuit judge, W. B. Williams, J. B. Humphrey, H. Hart, H. H. Pope, D. B. Pritchard, Joseph Thew, P. and J. H. Padgham, H. B. Hudson, W. W. Warner, P. A. Latta, J. E. Babbitt, A. H. Fenn, and F. S. Donaldson. In the medical are O. D. Goodrich, H. F. Thomas, A. B. Way, J. J. McConkie, H. S. Lay, W. H. Bills, F. M. Calkins, J. G. Weeks, F. R. Hynes, E. Goodrich. D. B. Allen and M. P. Grice practice veterinary surgery. One cornet band, of high tone, discourses much good music to the people. O. A. Field deals in pianos and organs, and W. Norte in sewing machines. W. Webb and J. M. Pennock are in the insurance business. G. R. Stone is postmaster, American express agent, and telegraph operator. The L. S. & M. S. railroad, the G. H. R. R., and the M. C. & L. M. railroads run through Allegan, and afford the best facilities for traffic and travel in all directions. J. H. Hart is the station agent of the first named road, and A. M. Shepherd telegraph operator; E. C.

Leavenworth is the agent of the other two roads. A large freight business is done on these roads. At Mill Grove, in addition to A. Vosburg's saw-mill, is a store, of which Vosburg & Barrett are proprietors.

## TOWNSHIP OF PINE PLAINS—A HISTORICAL SKETCH.

BY G. A. MORGAN, OF ALLEGAN.

From the Allegan Journal, of June 8, 1878.

This township of fragrant name, and some note in Allegan county, borders Allegan on the west, and is town two north, of range fourteen west. It is somewhat misnamed, as there is but a small part of it, chiefly in the northwest portion, that is "plains." The remainder is quite undulating, a considerable of it highly so, and the surface altogether—plains, ridges, knolls, and hills—presents a very handsome appearance. There is only a small amount of swamp land in the town.

The Kalamazoo river enters the town from the east at the middle point of the east line, runs northwest, and leaves within one and a half miles of the northwest corner. Its course is very crooked, and the bottom lands along it are very wide. Swan creek flows from the southwest quarter, in a northeasterly course, and empties into the Kalamazoo within one mile of the north line the town. There are four small creeks in the part of the town north of the river. One little body of water, and a part of another small one, on the west town line, are all the town can boast of in the line of lakes.

The timber of about one-fifth part of the town, in the northeast corner, is chiefly beech, maple, oak, basswood, etc., with some pine interspersed. The timber of the remaining portion of the town is mostly pine, mixed with some beech and oak. On the river bottoms, elms, soft maple, black-walnut, and some other varieties grow. Most of the good pine has been cut up into lumber. A considerable portion of what is left is not of great value. Quite a large portion of the timbered land has a clay-loam soil, the rest sandy loam. The soil of the pine-timbered land is sandy, generally good for sandy land—not a large proportion light-sandy. Clay is frequently intermixed. Mineral paint is found near Swan creek in the southern part of the town. The quality of the soil on the timbered land is quite as good as that of similar lands in other portions of the county, and is highly productive. There are several fine farms in those localities with excellent farm buildings—the best of the residences that of Geo. Peet, a large and first-class stylish farm house.

Some of the most valuable of these farms would command $50 to $60 per acre, while some of the poorest of the pine lands, with little timber on them, can be bought at $2.00 per acre, and others of much better quality at $4.00 to $10.00. The soil of the river bottoms, which are overflowed occasionally, is extremely fertile, rivaling the valley of the Mississippi in fatness.

Wheat is raised on the beech and maple lands with the usual variety of good, poor, and indifferent yield, according to the style of farming, some of the thirty-five to forty bushels per acre returns being occasionally obtained. On the pine lands twenty bushels are occasionally raised—not unfrequently by some of the best farmers—and Alfred Muma, who has farmed it on those lands upwards of twenty years, and his neighbor J. Bruner, have in some instances harvested thirty bushels per acre. Mr. Muma has also raised on the second level above the river, which is not overflowed, thirty-three bushels.

Corn grows with still better success. Mr. Muma raised last year on his pine land three acres of corn, on different parts of which he measured square rods of ground, and husked on each a heaping bushel basket of ears, which would give 160 bushels of ears per acre. He showed me some traces of ears of the corn, which lifted very heavily—in some cases weighing six ears ten pounds. He obtained this large yield, partly by cultivating the ground nine times, both ways, during the season, cultivating and hoeing it four times in the month of May. Mr. Bruner also harvested on a few acres of this same kind of land, over 100 bushels of ears per acre. Mr. Muma and G. H. Hill have raised on the river bottom lands, respectively, 186 and 195 bushels of ears to the acre. These pine lands produce also very large crops of rye, in some cases upwards of twenty bushels per acre. I saw on Mr. Bruner's farm some rye of very heavy growth. Many of the farmers practice plowing in rye to enrich the land, and prepare it for a seeding of clover and timothy.

Mr. Muma has cut on the bottom land on a field of four acres, nearly 100 bushels of oats to the acre, by actual careful measurement. These lands give also three tons of grass to the acre. I saw on J. W. Steininger's pine land farm a field with a very good growth of timothy. G. H. Hill has raised rutabagas at the rate of 500 bushels per acre.

There being many hills and ridges—higher or lower—in the town, it is well adapted to raising peaches, and a good many trees are being planted. O. Sikes, near Mill Grove, has a good orchard from which he gathered last year a large crop of peaches. G. Peet and N. Kingsley have failed but once or twice in peaches for many years. J. Smith, at the old Paris mill, raised last year on a small portion of his farm, peppermint, which he manufactured into oil with fair profit.

W. H. Shirley, a son of supervisor Shirley, is engaged somewhat largely in raising bees. He wintered last winter 100 swarms; has had good success in bee culture; sold last year 4,098 pounds, at about sixteen cents per pound. B. Calkins and W. Kelsey keep also quite a large number of swarms.

Some of the farmers turn their pine stumps to good account in making handsome fences. J. Bruner and I. W. Steininger, in different parts of the town, on pine lands, have succeeded, with small means, with which to make improvements, remarkably in making, within six and eight years, productive and profitable farms—the former partly out of land that had been badly run.

In speaking of the settlement of this town, I shall speak of settlers within the bounds of the present limits of Pine Plains, although those north of the river were in what was, until seven years ago, a part of the town of Heath, it having been attached, for governmental purposes, to that township. The first man to make a settlement was T. M. West, father of N. B. West, now of Allegan. He located in 1838 on the north bank of the Kalamazoo, on section fourteen. A transient resident, however, A. Nobles, is said to have stopped a short time in the town, two years before. Major J. M. Heath came in 1845, and his sons John and George, and S. Bigsby in 1847; D. Ammerman, G. H. Hill in 1849; J. Babbitt and E. Pratt in 1850; H. Howe in 1851, and from that time till 1860, the following persons with their families: W. Kelsey, C. Hitchcock, C. Jones, S. Howell, B. Ingham, G. W. Kingsley, George Alfred, and Eb. Muma, J. Palmer, G. and W. Peet, S. Thayer, P. Konkel, S. Pris, W. Flagg, D. Spafford, N. Barlow, D. G. Platt, A. Sirrine, A. and B. F. Estabrook. There was also a first child born in Pine Plains, said to be Clarence Heath, now of Saugatuck, son of George P. Heath.

Much of the population of Pine Plains has been transient men engaged in lumbering, and farmers who got discouraged and left, deeding back their lands to nature. Quite a large immigration has been going into the town within three years—eleven families the past spring—industrious, steady-going, temperate men and women, who are making neat, attractive, and productive farms, some of them said to be men of considerable means for farming operations. The number of dwellers in Pine Plains is small among the two-score thousands of Allegan county, but a large proportion of her citizens are among the most intelligent and worthy in character, of the farmer population of the county.

The township previously included with Allegan, was in 1850 organized—with a name from nature—into a territory having separate civil powers and privileges, embracing that part of the U. S. government township of six miles square, which lies south of the Kalamazoo, and having connected with it the two townships which are now Clyde and Lee. The town records which have been presented, show only the names of the supervisor and town clerk elected at the first town meeting, which was held at T. S. Coates' Pine Plains house, Tim. Coates and Eli Hathaway. It is conjectured that, there being perhaps less than fifty people in all three of the townships, no other officers were elected, but those two were able to run the town alone the first year. The record next year shows the following full complement of officers: T. S. Coates, supervisor; G. H. Hill, clerk; C. L. Billings, treasurer; S. Hill and C. T. Billings, highway commissioners; E. Hathaway, S. Hill and T. Coates, justices; T. Coates, school inspector; S. Hill and E. Pratt, assessors; M. Wood, overseer of the poor; O. Hill, E. Pratt, M. Wood, C. Billings, constables.

In 1871 the part of the original township lying north of the river was taken from Heath and attached to Pine Plains. The population of the town in 1874 was 360, probably now as large as 500. [By the census of 1880, 643.—Ed.] The vote in 1876 was 104. The improved land in 1874 was 1,964 acres; number of farms 62; equalized valuation in 1877, $75,000, of which $11,055 was personal; tax $1,770, of which $203 was State, $251 county, $1,316 town.

Schools were first begun in the northeast quarter of the town, near Major Heath's, and in the northwest corner, near the old Pine Plains tavern. There are four districts, the value of the school buildings $2,080, number of scholars between five and twenty years 131, attendance in the schools last year 128. There were three male and three female teachers, to whom were paid for wages $616. The total expenditures of the year were $1,687. The township superintendent of schools is J. J. Young. The school-house near Mill Grove, built on a hill, with a grove hard by, is a new one, and one of the prettiest and most tasteful country school-houses in the county. The groves, "God's first temples," are the only churches the people of Pine Plains have within their bounds, but there are some Christians in the west part of the town, belonging to a class of the "Evangelical" church, and probably there are some Christians there not belonging to any class or church; while on the north side are quite a number of people belonging to an M. E. church, which is made up of members from this town and Allegan, whose church building is over the line, in the township of Allegan, at Mill Grove. That locality numbers also a good round number of red-ribbonites. At the Muma school-house is a Sabbath-school, superintended by Ira Wilcox, and numbering about thirty-five scholars. In the district beyond the old Paris saw-mill is another Sunday-school of forty, Mr. ——— superintendent, Miss Eleanor Bierce assistant.

Jos. Smith is now proprietor of the Paris saw-mill and shingle-mill on Swan creek, at which a good deal of manufacturing is still done. The buildings of the Bush mills, two miles up the creek, are in good preservation and only need the repairing of the dam to make them a live institution—and perhaps a paying one.

The Michigan Lake Shore railroad runs through the northeast quarter of the town, upon which is the station of Mill Grove, partly within the town of Pine Plains.

About fifty years ago there was an Indian trading-post in the vicinity of the Cold Spring hotel, kept by a Frenchman named Bushong, from which that portion of the Kalamazoo river derives its name of "Bushong stretch." The old log house where the store was kept was burned down many years ago.

I take pleasure in acknowledging the hospitalities of W. J. Shirley, Esq., the efficient supervisor of Pine Plains, whom the people of that town are very unwilling to see retire from office.

## THE RABBIT RIVER MOUNDS AND CIRCLES.

BY H. D. POST, OF HOLLAND CITY.

From the Allegan Journal of June 8, 1878.

By the kindness of Mr. George S. Harrington, of Fillmore, I was enabled to visit and make a careful and complete examination of the circular works and burial mounds near Hamilton, a few days ago.

These works are all within a mile of each other, and of the Rabbit river, in the townships of Fillmore, Manlius and Heath, Allegan county, Michigan, three of the circles being in the southeast corner of Fillmore, one of the burial mounds and one of the circles in the northeast corner of Manlius, and the largest mound and one of the circles in the northwest corner of Heath.

The first circle we visited is on the farm of Mrs. Bostwick (on the southwest quarter of the southeast quarter of section thirty-six, town four north, range fifteen west, Fillmore). An elevated ridge, rising from fifteen to twenty feet above the town line road, between Manlius and Fillmore, extends from the north to within thirty rods of the south line, with a gentle slope to the east, south and west; and at the south end of this ridge, commanding a fine view of the whole country southward, we found a circle having a diameter to the outside of its walls of 124 feet from east to west, and 138 feet north and south, composed of a ridge averaging two feet high, and sixteen feet in width evidently made by throwing up the earth from a surrounding trench or ditch. This remained after years of cultivation and leveling with the plow, which had turned the soil over again but a few days before our visit. The soil is a gravelly loam, and the recent plowing showed a darker colored strip across the circle from north-northwest to south-southeast which perhaps marked a beaten path across to the entrance of the work. Near the center, and southwest from it stood the stump of a sugar maple tree, which we afterwards learned from Mr. McWilliams was cut down in January, 1876, which measured forty-five inches diameter across the stump. Another sugar maple stump which was cut about the same time, stands northwest, on the top of the surrounding ridge, which measures thirty inches in diameter. By carefully counting the rings of annual growth to the inch on these stumps, we computed the age of the trees to have been probably 240 years.

East from this work about thirty rods we cross a small stream known as Dry Run, in a deep ravine which widens into a valley in some places.

Across the road from Mrs. Bostwick's house, about twenty rods from the bank of the Dry Run ravine, and 143 feet south of the center of the road, we find another circle on land of Mr. Brouwer (northeast quarter of northeast quarter, section one, town three north, range fifteen west, Manlius). This has been plowed over and leveled, and was covered with growing wheat at the time of our visit, and we could only trace its limits by the taller and darker growth of the wheat on the remains of the wall, which clearly defined it. This measures 144 feet across east and west, and 142 feet north and south.

We were informed that when the land was cleared, many years ago, the ridge was sharply defined, about two and a half feet high, and sixteen feet broad, with a ditch outside, and that beech trees from twenty-four to thirty inches diameter grew within it, but this was so long since that all the stumps have disappeared.

About sixty rods east of this work (on northwest quarter of northwest quarter section six, town three north, range fourteen west, Heath) is a burial mound, measuring thirty feet in diameter from east to west, and twenty-eight feet north and south, which was, as nearly as can now be estimated, about five feet high. This has been dug open and its contents removed, in the last instance with a team and road scraper (!) so that there was very slight basis for an examination. There is the stump of a sugar maple of quite slow growth, twenty-two inches in diameter, standing on the east side of it. Mr. Harrington says that about October 1, 1870, he visited this mound with Mr. Woodhouse of Kalamazoo, before the scraper gang had reached there, and carefully opened and examined it. On removing the earth to the depth of sixteen or eighteen inches they found a mass of human bones, with little or no earth among them, to a depth of thirty inches, and below them a trace of ashes and fire coals, from half an inch to an inch thick; below this, the natural surface soil. The lowest bones showed traces of having been slightly burned. The remains were of all sizes, and did not seem to be arranged in any regular order, but the bones of each body were in their proper relative position, showing that they were entire corpses when buried, and not gathered bones. The skulls were entire except some of the smaller ones which had separated at the sections. This would seem to indicate that they died by pestilence or disease, rather than in battle or by massacre, in which case there would have been many fractured skulls. Mr. Harrington estimated the number of skeletons to have been at least 100. Mr. McWilliams, and others who saw them at the time of the scraper opening, thought that there might have been 150 in the mound.

The next circle that we visited was on the Helmer place (north half of southeast quarter, section thirty-six, town four north, range fifteen west, Fillmore) a few rods southeast from the barn, and not more than twenty-five rods east of Dry Run. The road from Rabbit river to Holland has been cut through this work, which is very similar to the others already described in character, and measures 130 feet in diameter from north to south, and 127 feet east and west. At the road side the ridge of the wall and the ditch are more sharply defined than any of the others. Mr. Helmer and Mr. McWilliams say that the ridge was from thirty to thirty-six inches high when the forest was first cleared from it.

Not more than forty rods northwest, and about five rods east from the bluff bank of Dry Run, also on Mr. Helmer's farm, was another circle, measuring sixty-seven feet in diameter north and south, and seventy-nine feet from east to west. This has been plowed over until it is nearly obliterated. It is said that there were interior mounds, measuring about four by eight feet on the ground, within the two circles on the Helmer farm, but no traces of them now remain.

We were told of another circle on the high bank of the Rabbit river, on the farm of Mr. Holman (on the northwest quarter of section six, town three north, range fourteen west, Heath). This was said to be similar to the ones we had already visited, but it is entirely leveled so that not even a trace remains.

We visited another burial mound near the Rabbit river, on the northeast quarter of section one, town three north, range fifteen west, Manlius, which measured twenty feet in diameter and three feet high, but found that it had already been dug open. The remains of a very large skeleton were near the surface. This mound appeared to be of more recent date than the others. The high bank of the Rabbit near by was full of the old cache pits, of recent Indian occupation. We could not learn that any weapons, ornaments, or implements of any kind have ever been discovered, either in the burial mounds or in any of the circles we have described.

These circular works seem to be alike in character and were probably designed and used for the same purposes. Their age must be from 250 to 300 years at least, and when they were constructed the high rolling lands north of the Kalamazoo and west of the Rabbit river, must have been a favorite resort of the Indians for hunting and fishing, and if the country was then as well timbered with the sugar maple as now, for making sugar in the spring season. These earthen walls, after making due allowance for the leveling of the centuries past, and the more destructive plows of latter years, could never have been high enough to be of any use for shelter or defense, alone. They are probably the remaining traces of slight stockade forts, surrounded with palisades set deep in the ground, and the earth from a ditch outside used to make an elevated walk on the inside, high enough to give their defenders command of the level outside, and to enable them to shoot over their palisade defense. None of them have any supply of water within, or near enough to be defended from the inside, and they could not have been intended to stand any protracted siege, but were probably merely intended as security against surprise, or night attacks.

Perhaps this region was disputed territory, and some of the southern tribes may have been accustomed to come here springs to catch fish and make sugar, and being trespassers on the limits of another tribe were obliged to construct the defensive works for their own protection.

It is a great pity that so little interest is taken generally in the preservation of these remains of the prehistoric inhabitants. When they were opened and examined, it is usually done out of mere idle curiosity; no notice is taken of the many important facts which a careful observer would gather, and the only result, usually, is their complete destruction. In all cases these mounds should be carefully opened, every fact in regard to them or their contents carefully noted, and after examination any human remains should be carefully replaced, and the earth restored as when found.

## AN INCIDENT OF PIONEER LIFE.

BY MRS. J. V. ROGERS, A DAUGHTER OF THE PERSONS MENTIONED IN THE INCIDENT.

**Read at a meeting of the Pioneers of Allegan County, held at Otsego, Aug. 20, 1879.**

This sketch dates back to the time when Michigan was almost an entire wilderness. It was when the howl of the wolf, the growl of the bear, and the scream of the lynx made night in those dim dark woods most terrible. The peril, the suffering, the privations, the hardships endured by the earlier settlers of Michigan are overlooked, and seldom brought into account by those of the present generation. As we pass through a well-tilled farming country, and behold the barns filled, the fields of grain, the orchards bending with their burden of ripe fruit, we reflect not that the hand that planted those trees is palsied, and that strangers pluck and eat the fruit; that he who hewed that farm from out the desert wilderness, even as the sculptor artist hews the marble, piece by piece, so tree by tree, acre by acre, he wrought out this beauty, and has left to posterity the life work of his hands; for most of the first pioneers of Michigan have passed away, gone over to the other country.

In the privations and perils of pioneer life, woman plays no small part. It is true the sinews of her arm have not strength sufficient to fall the trees, or hold the plow as it first breaks the rooted, sodded soil, but in very many ways her active mind and ready sympathy find employment, and the woman who willingly consents to such a life is not one to fail in the hour of danger. Weighed down by the gloom of measureless and unknown forests, haunted by the fear of wild beasts, it must have been a loneliness of life hard indeed to be borne, and to one of a sensitive nature, used to the refinements of good society, it must have been almost revolting; and yet hundreds of that very class did come willingly, banishing themselves from society, stifling the pleadings of their own hearts, holding their very natures in subjection for the good of those that were to come.

Ere Michigan was admitted into the Union a family came from the State of New York and settled in one of the heaviest timbered sections of the territory. The man was strong and large, in the prime of life, one who could wield the ax as an experienced swordsman does his sword, with a masterly hand. The wife and mother was a small, delicate woman, but possessing a strong will and a great deal of energy—two very essential qualities to the woman who is to make her home in a new country—and it was to work out from that wilderness a home, that these people had left friends and socieity and come far away into the forest alone. Several other families with the same purpose in view had just settled in that locality, but their homes were from two to three and even five miles apart. In the desire for society they had met, exchanged words of welcome, and become friends and neighbors. Spring had come; the warm sunshine had brought the bright green foliage to the trees; from the maple they had made sugar enough for the season's supply; and now the long warm days warned the woodsman that the time was nigh when the seed must be in the ground if he would raise corn and potatoes for the next winter's supply, and without which they must surely suffer. Every hand had been busy, and they had delayed sending the only team in the place for supplies until most of them were nearly out of food. Twenty-five miles was the nearest station where supplies could be obtained, and twenty-five miles was a long journey without a road and no guide but the marks on the trees. Three days had passed, and three more must elapse before the wagon would return. Fortunately a neighbor called, and learning their circumstances, told them he thought he had flour enough for both families, at least he would divide it with them, and the husband started between three and four o'clock in the afternoon to get it. As he left the house the wife warningly remarked: "Don't talk too long, for the road is but a foot-path seldom traveled, and the marks on the trees will not serve you in the dark;" but he forgot the warning. It was very pleasant to tell their plans and talk over their work, and besides, it did not seem so near night in the little opening where the house stood, but when he passed into woods the marks on the trees were no longer visible. He took the direction that he thought was toward home, but after having traveled three times the distance there, he knew he was lost. The wife at home had done up the chores for the night, the cow had been securely fastened in the stable to protect her from the wild beasts, the night wood was piled in the corner, a bright fire kindled on the hearth, and the wife and her three little boys were sitting in its warm glow waiting for the father to come. The moments seemed hours to that anxious woman. The two smallest children had fallen asleep, with no supper but a cup of warm milk, but the eldest, a bright boy of seven, waited with her. The clock struck ten; the sound startled every nerve like electricity. She stirred the fire, threw on a fresh stick, and then went to the door to listen. Away to the southwest in the windfall she heard a lone wolf calling to its companions; and then, far away—it seemed almost miles in distance to her excited ear—she heard a human voice, and she knew it was the voice of her husband calling for help. She tried to answer, but her voice for the moment failed her, and she turned to her little one with pale cheeks and trembling lips, saying, "father is lost in the woods; the wolves are banding themselves together, and I am powerless to help him." At that moment her eye fell on the bundle of torch wood that hung by the fireplace. Quickly she pulled out a handful, lighted it, and ascended to the loft, chiding herself that she had not thought of it before. She thrust her head and arms out of the little square window that served to light the low chamber, and with torch brightly burning, called many times, but no answer. Her voice would sound far away, and then echo bring it back again as though it meant to mock her. What must be done? She called to the little one, "bring up the whole bundle of torch wood; my voice fails to reach him; there is no hope now but in the light." Stick after stick was added to the flames until her hands could hold no more. They hissed and crackled and then ascended high into the air. But what if his face should be turned from the light and he be blindly going into the miry swamp—the swamp that she knew was the grand crossing way for wild beasts going from the windfall to the creek. She must call again, if but the faintest sound of her voice, he would turn his head in that direction and see the light, and with all the strength she had she did call. There was a faint sound came back, but was it his voice or the echo of her own? Once more; this time it seemed nearer, but she might be deceived. She added more fuel to the torch, and called once more. This time the answer came full and clear. He had seen the light. She tried to answer back, but emotions prevented her, and tears rained down those tender cheeks the flames were scorching, for the torch wood contained heat as well as light. But she held those blazing fagots firmly, the small white hands were burned to blisters, the soft brown hair on her brow and temples was scorched and crisp; but she faltered not until she saw him emerge from the woods into the little clearing, and she knew he was saved. At the same moment she heard, not the howl of one lone wolf calling, but of the whole pack in concert. They were already on his track, but the light held by that noble woman cheated those wild beasts of their prey, brought the father back to his children, the husband to his wife, and the lost tired man to home and rest.

## NOTES ON SAUGATUCK.

BY DONALD C. HENDERSON, OF ALLEGAN.

From the Allegan Journal, July 17, 1880.

Time rolls his ceaseless course! The race of yore
Who danced our infancy upon their knee,
And told our marveling boyhood legends' store
Of their strange ventures happ'd by land or sea,
How are they blotted from the things that be!
How few, all weak and withered of their force,
Wait, on the verge of dark eternity
Like stranded wrecks, the tide returning hoarse,
To sweep them from our sight! Time rolls his ceaseless course.
—*Sir Walter Scott, in "Lady of the Lake."*

These beautiful lines from the classical British poet who has so graphically painted Scottish history, romance, and scenery, were recalled to our memory when revisiting Saugatuck on the 5th inst. We made our first trip to the mouth of the Kalamazoo river in 1841, some thirty-nine years ago, going down the river in a small Indian canoe, and stopping with Stephen D. Nichols and William G. Butler, two of the pioneers of civilization in that then wilderness region. We spent two or three weeks in exploring the sheets and pyramids of sand of Singapore (which was then quite a commercial point), the wild and romantic scenery of "Bald Head," which is almost an unknown land to Saugatuckians to-day, as well as taking jaunts on the lake beach, north and south of Kalamazoo river harbor.

We were charmed in those primitive days with the wildness of the country, the beautiful lake views, and the sylvan aspect of the whole region from Kalamazoo lake to the mouth of the river. By the way, the term "Saugatuck" is an Indian word, and means the mouth of a river. The original name of the present town was Newark, which was changed to Saugatuck, March 7, 1861, when the Hon. F. B. Wallin represented Allegan county in the legislature.

William G. Butler, the pioneer white man of Saugatuck, came there in 1830, and was killed in the village of Saugatuck in 1857. His son, Major James G. Butler, is an extensive tobacco manufacturer of St. Louis, Missouri, and served throughout the war as an officer of the 3d Michigan cavalry. A pioneer contemporary of Mr. Butler, Mr. Stephen D. Nichols, for several years lighthouse keeper at the mouth of the river, still lives. His successor, Samuel Underwood, who officiated for twenty years, has now retired to private life and resides in Saugatuck village.

Saugatuck township was organized in 1836 by an act of the legislature under the name of Newark, and embraced the territory of Laketown, Saugatuck, Ganges, Casco, Fillmore, Manlius, Clyde, and Lee, eight towns, of which it is to-day the natural business center. The town has two incorporated villages, Douglas and Saugatuck, one situated on the northern side of the river, and the other on the south side. The village of Saugatuck was organized in 1868, and H. B. Moore was chosen its first president. The village of Douglas was organized in 1870, and C. A. Ensign elected its president. At the late census Saugatuck village had 797 inhabitants, and Douglas 502, while the township proper had a population of 912.

For many years past the lumbering business has been the principal industry of Saugatuck and Douglas, but as the best part of the pine of Allegan has been cut and marketed, the lumbermen who operated here have retired from business or have gone elsewhere to carry on their avocations in localities where they can make a greater profit.

There is still some scattered pine to be found on the Rabbit river and its tributaries, and on the banks of the Kalamazoo river. This, with the hardwood lumber to be found in the neighborhood, furnishes work for two sawmills in the village of Douglas, and one in Saugatuck, and carried on by Robert M. Moore (with Capt. Isaac Wilson as foreman), and O. R. Johnson & Co. Douglas has a fine flouring mill kept by John S. Payne. Saugatuck has no such mill at present, the one they had having been destroyed by fire. Here is a good opening for an enterprising miller, as it is surrounded by a fine farming country, and is noted for the superior quality of the wheat it sends to market.

In Douglas they have a splendid basket factory, making about 4,000 or 5,000 baskets a day.

Messrs. C. C. Wallin & Son carry on two extensive tanneries in Saugatuck, one at Douglas (formerly Gerber's), and the other at Wallinville, a suburb of Saugatuck. They employ a large number of men at their manufactories, using about 10,000 hides at one of their tanneries yearly, and 20,000 at the other.

By the way, these tanneries are superintended by the Hon. Franklin B. Wallin, who has been for over a quarter of a century in business at Saugatuck, and is unquestionably the most extensive manufacturer now in the place since the decadence of lumber manufacture.

Saugatuck has another tannery, that of Morrison and Leland, which does a good business.

Speaking of Mr. Wallin, he crossed Lake Michigan from Chicago December 2, 1853, for Saugatuck, on board of a scow, the D. R. Holt, which he now owns, and of which Capt. Henry Smith was commander, and Henry Allett mate. Hank Smith is dead. Henry Allett is now captain of the aforesaid scow which is used in carrying hemlock bark from Grand Haven to Saugatuck.

The tug Fanny Shriver is used by Messrs. Wallin & Son to carry on their extensive tanneries, together with three scows; the scow Holt carries 110 tons.

### THE FRUIT BUSINESS.

Now that lumber manufacturing has become of minor importance, great interest is being taken in fruit culture by the business men and property holders of both Saugatuck village and township, and of Douglas village.

Through the politeness of Mr. Horace D. Moore, we were shown some of the finest orchards on the lake bank in the vicinity of the village of Douglas. As these were the first peach orchards we had ever seen and explored we were perfectly charmed with them.

Fruit culture on an extensive scale did not begin until 1869, although the pioneer settlers ascertained the fact that the climate, soil and surroundings of Saugatuck were well adapted for horticultural purposes—peaches especially.

Prior to Mr. Butler's settlement in Saugatuck, there was an old peach orchard in the vicinity of Douglas which must have been planted by the French or Indians long before the white settlement of Saugatuck. This co-called "Peach Orchard" was situated between Town's Point and St. Pierre's Point, about a mile and a half from Douglas. Old river boatmen recollect this peach orchard well. It covered the territory of the former wild cat City of Breeze whose lots were sold in New York city during the wild cat mania, and maps of which were such a curiosity among the pioneers, with its public buildings, parks, water-power, etc.

We rode for miles along the banks of Lake Michigan and nothing could be seen but peach orchards, except a very few cultivated farms and beautiful groves of natural growth forest trees. One of these groves is owned by Mr. Stephen A. Morrison, one of the pioneers of Saugatuck, at a spot known as "Lake View." It is a most enchanting spot, and it is here the churches and Sabbath-schools have their picnics during the beautiful summer weather. In lingering in this sylvan grove the words of the poet are recalled:

O unseen spirit! now a calm divine
  Comes forth from thee, rejoicing earth and air!
Trees, hills, and houses, all distinctly shine,
  And thy great ocean slumbers everywhere.

The mountain ridge against the purple sky
  Stands clear and strong, with darkened hill and dells,
And cloudless brightness opens wide and high
  A home aerial, where thy presence dwells.

The chime of bells remote, the murmuring sea,
  The song of birds in whispering copes and wood,
The distant voice of children's thoughtless glee,
  And maiden's song are all one voice of good.

Amid the leaves' green mass a sunny play
  Of flash and shadow stirs like inward life;
The ship's white sail glides onward far away,
  Unhaunted by a dream of storm or strife.

But nature's glory in a beautiful summer day withdraws our attention from the main subject in hand, a description of the peach orchards which are almost innumerable from the banks of Lake Michigan to the shores of the Kalamazoo river.

Up to November, 1879, some 1,200 acres of land in Saugatuck township were set to peach trees, of which 400 acres were bearing. At 100 trees per acre, and five baskets per tree, these 1,200 acres would show an annual yield of 600,000 baskets. Within a year the peach orchards of Saugatuck have been greatly extended and many more trees planted. Saugatuck promises to be the greatest peach town in the Michigan fruit belt. The most extensive bearing peach orchards in Saugatuck township are on the south side of the river. We explored one of these farms, that of Robert M. Moore, which consists of ninety-five acres. On ten acres Mr. Moore has 4,000 bearing trees, which look in a fine, thrifty condition. At the time of our visit he was thinning the fruit from the trees one half,—this process improving the fruit in quality and size. We never saw such a prolific yield of fruit before in any portion of the country we have ever been from Michigan to Texas. Mr. M. has a new orchard of thirty acres, but these trees will not bear fruit yet for two years to come. The land is in a fine state of cultivation and is plowed two or three times a year. Mr. Moore's peaches are in good demand at Chicago, and are branded "Mountain Rose Fruit Farm."

Williams & Son have a very fine fruit farm of forty acres, with 4,000 bearing trees. Thomas Gray has 3,000 bearing trees, and James Crouse 2,000 trees. We might go on and enumerate the tree statistics of several other fruit growers in this vicinity, but want of space forbids our doing so at this time. But we will name a few of these pomologists: They are P. Purdy, Sophia Shultz, Robert Reid, F. C. Kile, William Corner, William Cummings, Joshua Weed, Dressler and Patchin. On the north side of the river are several fine peach orchards, but we did not visit any of them. Among those orchards is that of C. E. Wells, who has 4,000 trees which bear this year, we are told. John L. Coats has 2,000 trees, George Kingsley, of Chicago, 3,000, and D. L. Barber 2,500 trees. To show the importance of this interest to Saugatuck we have only to mention the shipments of fruit made from the two villages last year:

| | Baskets | Crates. |
|---|---|---|
| Douglas | 145,420 | 2,173 |
| Saugatuck | 30,000 | .... |
| Total | 175,420 | 2,173 |

The shipments of fruit for 1880 bid fair to be much larger than for 1878.

The lake breezes and water front of the Kalamazoo river and Lake Michigan are most conducive to fruit culture, especially in the case of peaches. The fruit belt of Allegan county, from Saugatuck to South Haven, is the finest fruit region in the world; 100,000 acres at least have been planted this season between Fennville and South Haven. Fennville and vicinity is in itself a fine fruit region, and we noticed during our recent visit there some large fruit farms, but did not stop long enough to gather any statistics, and shall depend on our Fennville correspondent to do justice to the subject. But last year Fennville exported by the Chicago & West Michigan railway 132,500 baskets of peaches. We learn that Mr. James McCormick of Manistee, has sold the growing peaches on his fruit farm (ten acres) for $2,000, and says he has lost $2,000 by the transaction. This shows that there is money in the business.

### SHIP-BUILDING.

The steamer C. Ward is now in the stocks and in course of reconstruction. She is owned by R. C. Brittain, and is to be lengthened twenty-seven feet, and completed in time for the shipment of peaches. Two more vessels are being built at Saugatuck, which by the way, is quite a ship-building point, the best kind of ship-timber being abundant in the neighborhood of Saugatuck. Ship-building began early in Saugatuck, James McLaughlin having built the "Crook," a lumber vessel, in 1837, we believe. From that time on a number of vessels have been built at Saugatuck, among the first of which were the "Octavia," a lake vessel, and a flat-bottomed steamer called the C. C. Trowbridge, which was found when constructed to be too large a craft for river navigation, and was soon hauled off the river.

### RIVER NAVIGATION.

In the olden time when we first visited Saugatuck, there was a large Indian population on the banks of the river, and it was no unusual sight to see their beautiful birch bark canoes and dugouts on each side of the river; but now the river banks are bereft of these noble red men, and not one of their canoes or pirogues is now to be seen.

Prior to 1846 flat-boats ran from Kalamazoo to Saugatuck, being poled up and down, but the completion of the Michigan Central railroad to Kalamazoo that year destroyed in a great measure that system of boating, and by 1848, when the road was completed to Niles, river boating above Allegan came to an end. Rafts and boats, however, carried lumber, etc., from Allegan to the mouth of the river for several years after,—no railroad reaching Allegan till 1868, when the first railroad, the Lake Shore and Michigan Southern, reached here. Prior to this a large forwarding business was transacted by William G. Butler and S. D. Nichols at Saugatuck, which ceased in a great measure when flat-boating stopped. However, river steamboats continued to ply from Allegan to Saugatuck from 1856 to 1869, among which we may mention the Mayflower, Adelaide, Helen Mar, and the Aunt Betsey, the three latter being constructed in Allegan and doing a good local business till the railroads were built to Allegan, when they failed to pay expenses. These boats ran in connection with steam and lake craft to Chicago.

Notwithstanding the decline of river commerce, a beautiful little steamer finds it profitable to make two trips a day from Saugatuck to Richmond (a distance of ten miles by water), a point on the Chicago & West Michigan railway, during the summer months. This is a most picturesque route, and we advise all of our friends having occasion to visit Saugatuck during this sultry weather to be sure to take a ride on the steamer Twilight, Captain Robinson, commander, and take a view of the river scenery with the trees in foliage and nature in its most attractive garb. We took that route on our return to Allegan.

Saugatuck is now the entrepot for the western part of our county, and has a regular line of steamers connecting the villages of Saugatuck and Douglas with Chicago. The first boat on this line was the propellor Ira Chaffee (built at Allegan), which has been succeeded by the steam barge G. P. Heath, owned by Capt. R. C. Brittain, who is to put on another steamer the latter part of the season for the exportation of fruit and lumber—the latter business being quite insignificant of late years.

### MISCELLANEOUS.

Nov. 17, 1842, the brig Milwaukee was lost off Saugatuck harbor while being loaded, being driven ashore by a sudden squall of wind, resulting in a total loss of her cargo (flour boated down from Kalamazoo and owned by D. S. Walbridge). The captain and eight of his crew all lost their lives. The weather was bitter cold when this disaster occurred, and was freezing very hard at the time.

During the hard times in 1837-38 the village of Saugatuck was virtually abandoned except by Mr. Morrison's family.

July 25, 1844, the wife of the late John H. Billings and three of her children, together with Mrs. McLaughlin (the wife of the ship builder), were drowned by the capsizing of a boat on the river a few miles above Saugatuck village.

In 1838 the first light-house was erected at the mouth of the river. S. D. Nichols was its first keeper. The lights are now kept at the end of the pier in Kalamazoo harbor. George Baker is the keeper.

In 1851 Mr. S. D. Nichols opened the first store in Saugatuck, the mercantile trade having previously been monopolized in the now defunct city of Singapore.

The first postoffice was established at Saugatuck in August, 1835, and R. R. Crosby was the postmaster, who has had ten successors, George T. Arnold being the present incumbent.

Saugatuck was made a port of entry in 1870, and the deputy collector is George T. Arnold.

Dr. Chauncey B. Goodrich was the first physician in Saugatuck. He began his practice in 1842. He was chosen Allegan's first republican representative in the legislature in 1856 and died in Ganges in 1871.

Saugatuck boasts of but one lawyer, D. A. Winslow. Her first legislator was Peter J. Cook (elected in 1845), followed by F. B. Wallin in 1861, and F. B. Stockbridge (a representative in 1869 and senator in 1871).

By the way, Robert M. Moore's big fruit farm, near Douglas, is superintended by Capt. Ike Wilson, formerly of the 3d Michigan cavalry, who occupies a house on one of Mr. Moore's peach farms.

Saugatuck's first landlord was the late Moses Nichols, while the name of the present landlord of the Saugatuck house is E. G. Billings.

Saugatuck village has three churches, Congregational , Reformed (Dutch), and Episcopal. There is also an Odd Fellows' lodge and encampment, a Masonic lodge, a Red-ribbon club, and a Woman's Christian Temperance Union.

A sketch of the history of the extinct village of Singapore would be worth publishing, but we have no space at present to do so. The village was a product of the wild cat speculations of that period and was situated near the mouth of the river, opposite Bald Head. It was established in 1837 and had a wild cat bank in 1839, which was as good as any other fiat money institution of that period and remaining in existence as long as any of them. The village was founded by the New York and Michigan lumber company (Oshea Wilder & Son), and several saw-mills were in operation there from 1837 to 1875, when Stockbridge and Johnson ceased to lumber there and removed to Point St. Ignace in Mackinaw county, Lake Superior. Quite a romance could be written on the history of Singapore.

The village of Douglas has two churches, Methodist Episcopal and Seventh Day Adventist, a Masonic lodge and Red-ribbon club.

Saugatuck has a weekly local paper—The Commercial—edited and published by Mrs. Woodhull, which we understand has a fair circulation and is doing well.

Nature intended the mouth of the river for a great city, and we think the time is not far distant when Saugatuck and Douglas will be under one incorporation. There is at present no railroad at Saugatuck, which we think was a great mistake on the part of the Chicago and West Michigan railway company, for nature has made this place the shipping and commercial emporium of the fruit belt. Let the capitalists of Saugatuck watch their opportunity (now that business has revived, specie payments have been resumed and good times are assured), and their much needed railroad facilities will be secured and Saugatuck assume that place in the business world which its geographical situation designed it to occupy.

In going up the river on the Twilight we passed McCormick's landing, a familiar point in river navigation. From this point to Lake Michigan it is a dense peach orchard all the way. Farmers that used to raise grain are now converting all their farms into peaches and other fruit. The Detroit river under the French and British occupation never presented a lovelier sight than this—the famous fruit belt of Michigan—for the western portion of Allegan county is really the *creme de la creme* of this great fruit region—the paradise of western Michigan. The grand scenery with which Nature decorates herself on the banks of the Kalamazoo and grand old Lake Michigan, near whose shores these orchards arise, presents a prospect that would inspire a poet. The great American poet, Bryant, must have contemplated such scenery when he penned the following beautiful lines:

> The birds and wafting billows plant the rifts
> With herb and tree; sweet fountains gush; sweet airs
> Ripple the living lakes that, fringed with flowers,
> Are gathered in the hollows. Thou dost look
> On thy creation and pronounce it good.
> Its valleys, glorious with their summer green,
> Praise thee in silent beauty; and its woods
> Swept by the murmuring winds of ocean, join
> The murmuring shores in a perpetual hymn.

While at Fennville we called upon Mr. Matthew C. Wilson, and were shown sixty-four colonies of bees and his mode of culture and care of those useful and industrious insects, which Mr. W. handled just as carelessly as printers do type or editors pens. Last year Mr. W. with fifty-five hives raised 1,250 pounds of honey. The country in this neighborhood seems well adapted to bee culture. Speaking of bees, J. Fenimore Cooper's novel, "Oak Openings," describing the natural beauties of the Kalamazoo river at this season of the year, will be found an attractive work, describing as it does, the whole of western Michigan's primitive ornaments with a master pen, telling all about the Bee Hunter and his hairbreadth escapes, by land and water, from Indians during the war of 1812.

### SAUGATUCK AND ITS ANTIQUITIES.

There is no doubt of the Kalamazoo river having been visited by white people at an early period; by Father Marquette and many of the French Jesuits and voyageurs in their explorations of the lake regions as far back as 1675, when Marquette was taken ill and returned to Mackinaw as he coasted along the eastern shore of Lake Michigan in a small boat. In 1679 the St. Joseph river was discovered by Chevalier La Salle. La Salle built a fortified trading post at St. Joseph, which he called the Fort of the Miamis, from which post the Indians of the Kalamazoo river probably received their supplies and bartered their peltries. In 1686 the Fort of the Miamis was changed to Fort St. Joseph, on site of the old fort. In 1697 the Miamis were driven from the St. Joseph river and this region of country was dominated by the Ottawas and so continued to do with the Pottawattamies for nearly 130 years, when, September 8, 1815, they disposed of their lands in Michigan to the United States and were placed on reservations. During the war of 1812 these Indians fought on the British side, but after that war was concluded made a treaty of peace with the Americans. Cooper's novel, "Oak Openings," is a fine romance of the Indian occupation of the Kalamazoo river valley, and ought to be placed in every school district library in this county.

In taking an excursion down the river on board the Fanny Shriver, from Saugatuck into Lake Michigan, Mr. Wallin pointed out to us the spot where the Bee Hunter dashed two barrels of whisky down a spur of Mount Bald Head at the east end of the pier and facing the light-house near the field of wild rice where the Bee Hunter was trying to secrete himself and canoe. We quote from Cooper's novel that portion which relates the Bee Hunter's capture by hostile

Indians and the strategy he employed to escape from his savage foes, when he represented where he could find the whisky spring. But let the author tell his own tale.

"I know it," answered Le Bourdon, coolly, "because medicine men know most of what happens. Do not be so hasty, Chief, for this is a medicine spot —whisky grows here."

"Yes, this place is called by the whites Whisky Center," he added, "which means that it is the center of all the whisky of the country round about."

"Dat true," said Cloud, quickly, "I hear so'ger at Fort Dearborn call him Whisky Center."

After the Bee Hunter discovered the puddles where the whisky spilled, the narration continues:

"Now open your ears, Crowsfeather, and you, Cloud, and all of you young braves," commenced the Bee Hunter solemnly, and with a steadiness that was admirable. "Yes, open wide your ears. The Great Spirit has given the red man a nose that he might smell—does the Cloud smell more than common?"

"Sartin, smell whisky—dis Whisky Center dey say—nat'ral dat such smell be here."

"Do all the chiefs and warriors of the Pottawottomies who are present smell the same?"

"'Spose so—why he don't, eh? Got nose—can smell whisky good ways, tell you."

"It is right that they should smell the liquor here, for out of this rock a whisky spring will soon begin to run. It will begin with a very small stream, but soon there will be enough to satisfy everybody. The Great Manitou knows that his red children are dry; he has sent a medicine man of the pale faces to find a spring for them. Now look at this piece of rock—it is dry—not even the dew has yet moistened it. See; it is made like a wooden bowl that it may hold the liquor of the spring. Let Crowsfeather smell it—smell it, Cloud—let all my young men smell it, too, that they may be certain there is nothing there."

All the Indians then smelled and tasted the whisky, and the cunning Bee Hunter made good his escape.

### MOORE'S CREEK.

Here is a description of Moore's creek, a covert employed by the Bee Hunter in his final escape from the Indians:

"The halting place that morning was not in a swamp, for none offered itself at a suitable place from the mouth of the river. On the contrary it was in a piece of opening, that was tolerably well garnished with trees, however, and through which ran a small brook which poured its tribute in the Kalamazoo. The Chippewa had taken notice of this brook which was large enough to receive the canoes, where they might be concealed in the rushes. A favorable copse, surrounded with elders, afforded a covered space on shore, and these advantages were improved for an encampment."

As we have said before, the late Mr. Butler was the first known permanent white settler at Saugatuck. But it is well known there was an Indian trading post at Kalamazoo in 1820 and 1823, while it is also well known that a Frenchman named Bouchon had a trading post at Couchon stretch, a long piece of smooth water about four miles by water below Allegan. Louis Campau of Grand Rapids had a trading post where the Rabbit river empties into the Kalamazoo, in 1825, while the American fur company had a post in the same year at the point known as Peach Orchard, where quite an Indian settlement then existed. It was these Indians who probably planted the old peach orchard discovered there when the white immigrants first arrived at Saugatuck.

Until 1834 the Butler family were the only white settlers at the mouth of the river. In that year Johonnet and Crosby came to Saugatuck and built the first tannery there. Daniel Plummer came there about the same time. Stephen D. Nichols came to Saugatuck in July, 1834, from St. Joseph, and in September returned and has ever since made his home at Saugatuck.

Benjamin Plummer, now of Ganges, was one of Saugatuck's pioneers, coming there in the fall of 1834, when he found Butler, Nichols, Johonnet and Crosby, the tanners, Daniel Plummer, Palmer and Mayo (the latter two fishermen), the only white permanent residents in Saugatuck. In May, 1837, Stephen A. Morrison located at Saugatuck and embarked in the tanning business, in which he has continued ever since. In 1844 Wells & Johnson built a tannery near Plummer's saw-mill, now known as Wallinville, but sold out to C. C. Wallin & Son in 1854. This saw-mill was built in 1834, and in 1837 was operated by Benjamin Plummer and Edward Johonnet.

### THE INDIANS.

When the white people came to Allegan county the most of the territory was occupied by a band of Ottawa Indians, under the chieftainship of Macsaubee, who was well known to the pioneers of Allegan county, and who came from Mackinaw every autumn to hunt, and returned to the north in the spring. In the war of 1812 these Indians fought in the British army, and wore medals for the battles they participated in, given to them by the Canadian authorities. During the early days of flat-boating these Indians displayed a British flag at one of their powwows on Bald Head. When the fact became known, the captains of two of those boats (Alexander Henderson and Henry Allett), with their men, made a raid on the festive Indians and carried off the ensign of England and took it back to Allegan as a trophy. The remnant of this Indian band lives on a reservation in Emmet county.

### MOOREVILLE.

This is a western suburb of the village of Saugatuck, and was formerly the seat of the extensive lumbering operations of Mr. Horace D. Moore, who retired from business in 1875, and lives in a comfortable residence near the scene of his former business operations in a beautiful grove on the road to Holland. A fine view of Mr. Moore's residence and its beautiful surroundings can be found in the history of Allegan and Barry counties, in which work much valuable historical information can be obtained relative to Saugatuck's history.

Mr. Moore is a native of Ryegate, Vermont, and of Scottish descent, 58 years old and came to Saugatuck in 1856. Although he has retired from the manufacturing of lumber, he oversees three farms and owns and cares for a considerable property in Wisconsin and Illinois, owning the Sherman house in Allegan, and a fruit farm near the same place. He intends next season to embark in fruit culture in the vicinity of Saugatuck. During our recent trip to Saugatuck and the fruit regions of western Allegan county, we had the pleasure of partaking of the hospitalities of Mr. Moore for several days, and take this occasion to return our thanks to that gentleman and his wife for the courteous treatment we received. May long life and prosperity ever attend them.

### SAUGATUCK AS A SUMMER RETREAT.

Saugatuck is as well adapted for a summer retreat as Grand Haven, and we have no doubt if some enterprising landlord would erect a good, first-class hotel somewhere near the mouth of the river, say at Saugatuck village, with a boat-house and bath houses on Lake Michigan in connection therewith, that they would be a profitable investment, for no river on the whole eastern shore of Lake Michigan presents more attractive scenery than does the mouth of the Kalamazoo, a region of country rendered classic by the graphic pen of the great American novelist, Cooper.

## DEATH OF THE VENERABLE JUDGE LITTLEJOHN.

### MEMORIAL REPORT BY EDWY C. REID OF THE ALLEGAN JOURNAL.

On the morning of the 28th of April, 1880, ex-Judge F. J. Littlejohn was stricken with pain in his bowels, while in his office, and was forced to stop at his daughter's, Mrs. A. S. Butler, a short way off, not being able to go home. He remained there, in great pain and dangerously sick for a few days, when, becoming better, he was taken home, but was not at any time afterward able to quit his bed except for short times. He remained in full possession of his mental powers and conversed quite freely, though at time his voice was made weak by the pain. His physician from the first doubted his ability to effect a cure, but thought it possible to restore him to his former state. The acute malady at first was a stoppage of the fæces caused by inflammation of a gland near the bladder, which, when in such condition, was likely to produce that result at any time. That condition is called senile disease of the bladder, and it caused his death at about half-past three o'clock, May 15th. The announcement, because of his previous rather favorable condition, caused great surprise, and regret and sorrow for the departure of one so loved and venerated were expressed on every hand.

Judge Littlejohn was born in Herkimer county, N. Y., in July, 1804. He graduated from Hamilton College in 1827, and delivered the valedictory address. In 1830 he was admitted to the bar. He practiced law at Little Falls, in his native county, until the spring of 1836, when his health failed, and he sought a home in the west. He settled in Allegan, being among the pioneers of this section of country. He was engaged for some years as a surveyor, engineer, and geologist. In the fall of 1841, he was elected to the lower house of the legislature, and was afterwards chosen for second and third terms. In 1845 he was elected to the senate. He was president *pro tem.* of that body during the lengthy session of 1846, when the revised statutes of that year were adopted. He was again returned to the house in 1848, and sat as a member during its first session at Lansing. He was also elected to the same body in 1855. As a legislator his labors have been arduous, and his influence salutary. He was the originator and chief advocate of many measures which, having become laws, have strongly aided the growth and development of the State. In 1849 he ran as Whig and Free-Soil candidate for governor, making a thorough canvass of the State and lacking not much of an election. The only county office Mr. Littlejohn ever held was that of circuit court commissioner, but his defeats were always because of political questions, he having been a democrat since 1850.

He was frequently, however, made a candidate by his party whose confidence and respect he always retained. In the interval between his last two elections to the house, Mr. Littlejohn returned to the practice of his profession, in which he has also been engaged for the last ten years. In 1858 he was elected circuit judge of the ninth circuit. This circuit had been newly organized, and embraced, territorially, some twenty counties, viz.: those lying along the eastern shore of Lake Michigan, from Van Buren to Emmett, besides the contiguous inland counties. No reliable means of public conveyance then existed —there were even no roads—and the performance of his duties was, therefore, difficult. In 1875 or 1876, Judge Littlejohn prepared the material from which an historical work was compiled.

As a lecturer he was, a few years since, in frequent demand, being sought both for his logic and his eloquence. In public matters he was always prominent and his influence was for good, his labor in the cause of temperance being frequent and effective. He was one or more times elected president of the village. Living always a moderate and exemplary life, he professed Christianity only in his latter years, but was then very firmly convinced of its truth and he did some work for its advancement. As citizen and as judge he always bore a spotless reputation, and now goes to his grave full of honors and of years, widely known and as widely respected, peacefully and in faith moving to his reward.

### THE FUNERAL.

Seldom, if ever, has Allegan seen so large a funeral as that of Judge Littlejohn, which occurred on Sunday, and never has there been one where the participators were moved more by sincere respect for the departed friend. The news of his death created much surprise and much deep regret about the county, for he was everywhere known, and known only to be highly esteemed and venerated.

### BIOGRAPHICAL.

Mr. Littlejohn failed to leave any extended record of his busy, useful, and eventful life. He was of that noted New York family of Littlejohns of which Bishop Littlejohn, of Brooklyn, and Hon. DeWitt C. Littlejohn are members and near relatives of the judge. The legislative work mentioned above included influential labors for the establishment of our present school system, a work which is a sufficient monument in itself to perpetuate his name. His political course had little of variation from the several prevailing doctrines of the democratic party. He believed that the constitution guaranteed to the southern States their "peculiar institution," and as he was always a stickler for strict construction of law he opposed national interference with the evil. But he did not believe in the rightfulness nor the expediency of slavery, and he was opposed to its extension. He therefore became a freesoiler, and in 1849 ran as the freesoil and whig candidate for governor of Michigan, against John S. Barry, pro-slavery democrat, making a brilliant canvass and being defeated by only 4,279, though there were about 5,000 more votes given for him than the whig candidate of the preceding canvass. But at the next election he was back with the democrats, agreeing to the compromise by which California was admitted as a free State and the infamous fugitive-slave law was enacted. This compromise appealed directly to his peculiar ideas. California in the Union as a free State pacified him as a non-extensionist, while the fugitive-slave law was but a logical and legitimate result of his theory of State rights practically applied. He afterward coöperated with the democrats; and although during the war of the rebellion he would make speeches in favor of upholding the government, he regularly supported and voted for the democratic tickets, apparently not appreciating the anomalous position in which such action placed him. His State-rights views stopped this side the destruction of the government and there only. His views of the cause of the war were thus given in a speech made in 1862:

> The causes of this war will be ultimately found in aggressions, either fancied or real, from without the government circle, in the morbid feelings engendered by the clashings of abstract theories, and the fierce antagonisms of sectional political ideas. Theories essentially and absurdly groundless, and ideas, on the one hand, diametrically opposed to the fiat of nature and providence, and on the other subversive of the fundamental principles, the express guarantees and the solemn compacts of the constitution itself.

Evidently he believed the South to be actuated by "theories absurdly groundless" and ideas "diametrically opposed to the fiat of nature and Providence," but on the other hand, he thought the North moved by views "subversive of the fundamental principles" of the government and the "solemn compacts of the constitution." In other words, though slavery was wrong the North had no right to interfere with it; and while the States were independent of each other none of them possessed the right of secession. This was the common democratic view and the common democratic error.

In the same speech quoted from above, Mr. Littlejohn uttered the following admirable sentiments:

> In this civil war thus ruthlessly thrust upon us all the attributes of our higher nature, all the holy instincts of patriotism, all our precious memories of the past and our glorious hopes for the future, take sides with the government and cluster around the president. No matter upon what political platform he stood whilst soliciting the suffrage of the people; no matter by whom he was elected nor by what majority, it is enough for us to know that he is lawfully in the presidential chair under the provisions of the constitution and the forms of law, and that being there, he invokes our aid to sustain the government, to uphold the constitution, to defend the Union, and to maintain the supremacy of the laws. This must be done at any cost and by cheerful sacrifices of blood and treasure.

It is related that sometimes, in his speeches, after making such eloquent and patriotic flights as this, he would go off into an ill-timed exposition of State-right's theories which his more discreet fellow-partisans on the platform would check by vigorous pulls at his coat-tails! There is no question but if he had followed his freesoil principles to their logical conclusion, he would have gained great distinction as a republican statesman. But his State-rights views, though honestly entertained, caused his political career to be a failure. The rhetoric of his speeches was always admirable and his delivery clear, fervid and energetic.

Preparations for the funeral began Saturday, by a meeting of the bar, at which Judge Arnold presided, R. L. Newnham acting as secretary. The necessary committees were appointed, and an adjournment made until Sunday afternoon, the members agreeing to attend the funeral as a body. During the afternoon a dispatch was received from Judge Hawes of Kalamazoo saying that the bar of that county would come to the funeral on a special train. The train, when it arrived on Sunday, had two full coaches, many persons boarding it at Otsego and Plainwell. About thirty members of the Kalamazoo bar were present, and several prominent citizens of the place. A special train was also run from Muskegon, bringing about thirty persons from that city, several members of the bar among the number, and others from intermediate stations. The Allegan bar furnished carriages for conveyance of their guests to hotels and furnished them entertainment.

### THE BAR RESOLUTIONS.

The Allegan bar met at the court-house early Sunday afternoon and received and adopted the following report of the committee on resolutions:

The Allegan county bar receive with profound sorrow the announcement of the death of Hon. Flavius J. Littlejohn, and from an earnest desire to show every mark of respect to his memory, and to manifest the high estimate we entertain of his eminent legal ability, and his worth as a citizen, therefore,

*Resolved*, That we learn of his death with sincere regret, and deeply mourn the loss from our midst of him who was so distinguished as an upright Judge, a wise counselor, and a most worthy and exemplary citizen in every relation of life;

*Resolved*, That we as members of the Allegan county bar, hold in high esteem his unswerving integrity as an eminent jurist, universally respect his character and honor as a lawyer, and appreciate his highly cultivated and refined taste as a scholar, and realize that by his death he has left to us, as members of the profession, the rich legacy of a spotless name;

*Resolved*, That we sincerely sympathize with the bereaved family of the deceased, in this the hour of their affliction, and request that the secretary transmit a copy of these resolutions to them as a testimonial of our respect and veneration of the departed, and also to the various county papers for publication.

P. A. LATTA,
J. B. HUMPHREY,
*Committee.*

The court-house was draped both inside and out, and a portrait of the departed judge, appropriately draped, hung back of the bench. A procession was formed from the court-house, going to the deceased's late residence, headed by the Allegan bar, the attorneys from Kalamazoo and Muskegon following, with the village council, the Free Masons, Odd Fellows, pioneers, and firemen. They received the body and escorted it to the church, about and in which large numbers of people had been for some time waiting. The interior of the church was quite elaborately draped, festoons of black and white cloth extending across the rear of the auditorium, and from the sides to the chandeliers and thence to a point back of the pulpit, where hung a portrait of Mr. Littlejohn amid crape and white flowers. The orchestra railing was hung in black, as also was the pew lately occupied by the deceased, while about the pulpit and at other places were the beautiful calla lilies. The floral ornaments about the casket were a large cross, a gift from Mrs. H. P. Dunning and Mrs. P. J. Davis; a pillow of flowers, the letter L in the center, from his relatives, Mrs. Dr. Calkins and Mrs. W. F. Clark; a cross, crown, and anchor, from his daughter, Mrs. A. S. Butler; and bunches of ripened heads of wheat and autumn leaves, from Mrs. N. B. West.

The church contained but a small part of the attendants, large numbers awaiting outside the close of the sermon and the procession to the grave. The pall-bearers were Dr. O. D. Goodrich, D. A. McMartin, Joseph Fisk, N. B. West, Ira Chichester, and Z. L. Griswold, all of the Pioneer Society. The mourners were Mrs. Littlejohn; her son, the Rev. Wolcott Littlejohn; her daughter, Mrs. A. S. Butler and two sons; P. O. and J. J. Littlejohn; Mr. and Mrs. Dr. Calkins; Mr. and Mrs. W. F. Clark; and Charles W. Butler, of Lansing, brother of the deceased A. S. Butler.

### THE SERVICES.

began ere all were seated, by the choir rendering a motet: "I heard a voice from heaven saying, 'Write, from henceforth blessed are the dead who die in the Lord. Even so saith the spirit, for they rest from their labors, and their works do follow them.' " The pastor, the Rev. J. Sailor, read the 90th Psalm, "Lord, thou hast been our dwelling place in all generations." The Rev. William C. H. Bliss, a venerable retired Methodist minister, now seventy-eight years old, a pioneer of the church, offered prayer, making a finely worded, fervent, and impressive petition. The choir followed with a hymn:

Sleep the last sleep
  Free from care and sorrow,
Rest where none weep,
  Till th' eternal morrow;
Tho' dark waves roll
  O'er the silent river,
Thy fainting soul
  Jesus can deliver.

Though we may mourn
  Those in life the dearest,
They shall return,
  Christ, when thou appearest.
Soon shall thy voice
  Comfort those now weeping,
Bidding rejoice
  All in Jesus sleeping.

The Rev. Mr. Sailor's discourse was based upon Isaiah xlii, 16, "I will bring the blind by a way they know not; I will make darkness light before them, and crooked things straight. These things will I do unto them and not forsake them." The sermon was a dissertation upon the hidden but wise methods of God, his promises and fulfillments, and the sweet reward to us of obedience and trust. He closed by saying:

> The death of our venerated friend calls vividly to our minds the truthfulness of our subject. Strange it is that those who are so useful can not longer be retained in society and in the church of God. And yet we could hardly expect that he could much longer linger among us, though he would if pure and warm affection and friendship could have lengthened out his useful life, have been kept still longer among us to cheer our hearts and encourage our faith. But our Heavenly Father, for wise reasons, has removed him "from this outpost of his dominion to a place nearer home; from the doubt and strife of the army on earth to the glory and triumph of the army in heaven." * * * His character was without a stain, his integrity unchallenged, and his morality spotless. But with all his morality and purity of character he felt that something more was necessary to fit him for usefulness here and eternal blessedness hereafter. Hence, some three years since, he sought and found an interest in the gospel of Jesus Christ, and two years since publicly professed his faith in the religion of the cross; and from that time to his death his interest in and love for the services of religion were unabated, and he added very much to the several services of the church. It was a rare spiritual feast to listen to his clear, logical statements of gospel truth, and his warm-hearted exhortations to his Christian brethren to be true and faithful to their high calling. The last passage of scripture he quoted to me was, "The life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me." * * * Let us profit by his example, his spirituality, his faithfulness. He was ready to go—are we?

The choir sung "Blessed Hope," a selection from the Gospel Hymns. It was a duet by Mrs. I. F. Clapp and Miss Lizzie Sherwood, with chorus. After viewing the remains the people formed in

### PROCESSION,

or took their several ways to the cemetery. It is estimated that the concourse numbered from 1,500 to 2,000. In the procession were the pastor and undertaker; the band, twelve members; the common council; Judges Arnold and

Hawes; the Allegan bar, eighteen members; the Kalamazoo bar, with the same number; the hearse, flanked by pall-bearers; the mourners; the Pioneer Society, twenty-six members; the Freemasons, forty-six members; the Odd Fellows, twenty-seven members; the fire department, twenty-eight members; citizens in carriages.

There were only the ordinary religious services at the grave. They were performed with becoming solemnity and the worn frame of the noble spirit was put to rest by the side of its kin, in the waning hours and calm light of a Sabbath afternoon.

### ACTION OF THE KALAMAZOO BAR.

On Saturday afternoon Judge Hawes received notice of the death of Judge Littlejohn of Allegan, and made the announcement in a few appropriate remarks, in which he paid a fine tribute to the virtues and high qualities of the deceased, his connection with this and neighboring circuits. Judge Hawes proposed that this bar should attend the funeral at Allegan, Sunday. Judge Hawes was followed by T. R. Sherwood, Esq., who spoke affectionately of the departed. He moved that a committee be appointed to present resolutions to this court on Wednesday, expressing the feelings of the court and the bar of this county, of the life and character of the deceased judge, and to make arrangements to attend the funeral. This motion was carried, and Messrs. Sherwood, Severens, Buck, Hill, Breeze, Wells, and Balch were appointed such committee.

A meeting was held in the evening pursuant to adjournment, and arrangements completed for attending the funeral at Allegan, Sunday, at 3 P. M. Robert F. Hill was appointed to take charge of the train, and Judge Hawes (in the absence of Hon. N. A. Balch), to lead the bar. It was voted that the portrait of Judge Littlejohn, in the court-room, be draped in mourning. Thanks were voted to Superintendent Amsden, for furnishing a special train. The train, consisting of a passenger coach, caboose, and engine, left here about 12:45, both cars being well filled. The run was made to Allegan in good time, quite a number of persons getting on at Plainwell and Otsego. At the depot carriages were in attendance to take the members of the bar and the ladies to the Chaffee house, where dinner was prepared and served. After dinner the members of the Kalamazoo bar marched to the court-house, where there was a meeting of the members of the bar association of Kalamazoo, Allegan, and Muskegon counties. Appropriate resolutions were passed, responded to by Judge Williams. From the court-house the procession, composed of 100 pioneers, the members of the different bar associations, the firemen, and citizens, marched to the church, led by the band. The services were at the Congregational church at 3:30 o'clock, and were conducted by the Rev. Mr. Sailor, whose sermon, in the presence of a large assemblage, was largely appreciated. Conspicuous in the procession to the cemetery was the line of gray haired veterans of Allegan county, numbering about 100, who testified by their appearance and action, that one of their number, a good and useful man, would be seen on earth no more. The bar and citizens of Allegan were very kind and attentive in extending attention and hospitality to the friends of the deceased, who were present from other places.

# BAY COUNTY.

## BAY COUNTY HISTORY,—ITS PIONEER RECORD AND WONDERFUL DEVELOPMENT.

### A PAPER BY GEN. B. F. PARTRIDGE.

**Read at the Annual Meeting of the Michigan Pioneer Society, Feb. 5, 1880.**

The recording of the history of the county of Bay will include the time as far back as the white race made the first settlement in its territory. Allusion will be made to the occupancy of the banks of the Saginaw river by the red man, and perhaps his right here. But it concerns us most to know when, where, why, and by whom Bay county was first settled, by what methods the county was so rapidly filled with the enterprise, the wealth, the intelligence, by what steps she has risen to so much prominence which we so much admire, and what it is that constitutes our true and rapid prosperity.

It is of equal value to enumerate the manners of the different nationalities composing our community, their genius and customs, and especially show the character, disposition, the talents, virtues, and perhaps the vices of those having from time to time the management of corporate and municipal affairs of the towns, villages, and cities composing the county.

The rise and progress of the lumber trade centering in Bay City deserves some attention, it being unequaled in magnitude by any other community of equal numbers.

The salt manufacture is another great interest, the magnitude of which is not equaled by any other part of the world in so small a territory.

Such are the subjects which this history presents, seeming as it were, to pass in review before us, and at the same time some of the men who were the more conspicuous in carrying forward the great enterprises or completing the corporate or municipal divisions of the county, thus instructing us by example in the art of building up communities to successful results, as well in a business view, as in the principles of government. the rules of policy and conduct of society, and education.

The Saginaw river had many visitors prior to any permanent settlement in the present limits of Bay county. The Saginaw river was the highway to Saginaw, where the American Fur company had their headquarters for this region. The United States had a fort or block house at Saginaw city, with her soldiers stationed there some years before any lodgment was made in the limits of this county. Even in those early days it was found difficult to navigate the Saginaw river above Bay City, and those who had stations up the river found it convenient to make stations below. So one Leon Trombley, an old Frenchman, having an interest at Saginaw in 1831, came down the river and erected a small log house on the bank of the river on Water street, about in front of where Forsyth & Pierson's hardware store now stands, where half an acre was soon cleared for an Indian camp-ground. Mr. Trombley was the scientific farmer employed by the government to instruct the Indians in the practical science and secrets of farming. After Mr. Trombley had built his house and cleared his half acre, he planted a patch of potatoes in order to have some for his next winter's supply at hand. On leaving for Detroit, where his family lived, he made arrangements with an Indian and his squaw to hoe and take care of his potatoes through the summer of 1831. In the fall, on arrival at his house with his family, Mr. Trombley discovered to his astonishment and great disappointment that the potatoes had not been hoed or cultivated at all, and mourned over the instability of character of the red man, and his want of the expected supply of potatoes, and paid but little attention to them for some time. After getting well settled in his home it occurred to him that there might be a few small potatoes that would do to plant the next year, and he proceeded to secure them; but on digging them found to his great astonishment and happy disappointment that he had an abundant supply of nice, large potatoes, the first crop of potatoes raised in the limits of Bay county.

Mr. Joseph Trombley came to the Saginaw valley about 1829 or 1830 to look over the country with a view of trading with the Indians. After exploring, and camping, and becoming somewhat acquainted with the red man, he left for his home in Wayne county. Mr. Trombley returned, however, and selected his place, and built his store and house on the river below any other settlement except the Leon Trombley family, near the old Center house, and then supplied himself with the first stock of goods ever brought to the limits of this county, in time to attend the Indian payment in the fall of 1833. In order to illustrate the extreme hardships and expense and great difficulties in reaching the Saginaw river in this early time, it is well to show the indomitable will and perseverance of the men and women who became the pioneers of this wild country; we will detail the hardships, the extreme labor patiently borne by some of them.

Mr. Trombley having determined to remain in this wild country, went to Detroit and hired the mechanics required to accomplish his work, bought such material as could not be obtained from the timber here, shipped to the Saginaw river a small quantity of boards, for which he paid $8 per M., paying $8 per M. freight, and other freight $3.50 per 100 pounds, using mostly wrought nails at eighteen cents a pound. These were a part of his material. Himself and the men hewed his timber, split his shingles, and whip-sawed a part of his lumber, and built a house 25x30, near where the old Center house now stands, of timber flatted to six inches, well roofed and floored, and ready for use in the fall of 1832, in time to be used as his residence and store for his goods, hauling his timber by hand, for not a team was in this region at that time. There being no road but an Indian trail from Flint to Saginaw, sixteen miles up the river, from there the travel, while the river was open, was done by canoes, and in the winter on ice, and from Flint to Saginaw on foot or horseback. His men had to travel on foot from Detroit, camping on the way, like the Indians, and frequently in common with them, sharing their scanty provisions, wading streams and bayous, and sometimes being obliged to swim across them, each with his pack of bed and board on his back, carrying his ax and gun in the meantime. Canoes and paddles being the only steamboats then in general use, every man or family was the owner of one, and his finely fashioned maple or white ash paddles.

Mr. Trombley being the only trader at the lower end of the river, through his shrewdness managed to secure the Indian payment to be made at this place, and reaped a rich harvest for his efforts in getting established here. In the meantime others followed and shared the hardships and great promise of rich returns. It required not a little bravery and shrewdness in every one of the early settlers to live and thrive here. In the meantime others were casting their nets in this far off region. There are always in every community those who are not content with their status, and are prone to seek a better home in the confines of the most promising wilderness, facing the dangers incident to the most severe privations, among the wild red man, the wild beasts, and not the least, to sickness and perhaps death in the far off wilds among Indians and strangers. Having sought these conditions, the pioneers in every new settlement seem to gravitate to one thing, to fraternity, to reliance upon each other, more or less, to close social relations, sympathy with each other in their prosperity and sufferings, turning out to assist each other in putting up the houses and making each and all feel among their friends.

Joseph Trombley flourished for some time in his trade with the red man, having dealt largely in the only commodity the Indian had, the lucrative fur trade. Sending to headquarters for his Indian supplies, getting them at low prices and selling them at the Frenchman's "one or two per cent," that is, what he paid one dollar for he was quite sure to get two dollars for, and what he took in barter he was sure to get for half or less than its value, and selling it for several times its cost. These were the inevitable results of the pioneer Indian trade.

In 1834 the next house built on the present site of Bay City was a log house built by one John B. Trudell, an old Frenchman, near where the residence of the late James Watson now stands, in the Fifth ward, where Mr. Trudell lived a long time.

The next family fixing its residence in the limits of this county was another Frenchman, Benjamin Cushway, who built himself a house and blacksmith shop on the west side of the river, a short distance below the west end of Twenty-third street bridge, and for many years did the Indian blacksmithing and assisted the traders in their traffic with the Indians.

We find no more people located here for some time. But in March, 1835, our thrifty friend, Joseph Trombley, becoming somewhat aristocratic in his notions, bought of the government the land along the bank of the river from where W. R. McCormick's house now stands to the red salt works of Albert Miller, and commenced to erect the house known as the old Center house, by getting his timber hewed and on the spot at the same time. Mr. Trombley bought his siding and a quantity of boards, and his lime and nails, hired carpenters and other help, and put them all on board the sloop Savage, a small vessel of 28 tons, and sent them to the Saginaw river, coming by land himself. After long delays the vessel arrived safely, when the work went on as rapidly as one slow carpenter could frame his oak timber. In the meantime the studding and joist and other lumber was being sawed with a whip-saw. The frame being completed, the joiner came and finished the outside and inside, and the house was fully completed within two years after its commencement, being the first frame house in the limits of this county.

Subsequently, in March, 1836, this land where the village of Portsmouth was subsequently laid out, was purchased by Benoit Trombley, of Joseph Trombley, who subsequently sold it, in July of the same year, to Judge Albert Miller, when in the same month the town of Portsmouth was surveyed and platted by Judge Jewett, of Saginaw, for Judge Albert Miller. After the outlines of the survey had been made the surveying party repaired to Leon Trombley's house for refreshments, when young Lewis Trombley, then a small lad, standing at the door, cried out, "a steamboat." The steamer, Gov. Marcy, being then in sight, was the first steamer that ever entered the Saginaw river.

The surveying party hailed the boat and put out to her in canoes, and took passage for Saginaw.

In the winter of 1836-37 Judge Miller sold out his interest in the plat of Portsmouth, reserving certain lots to other parties, among whom was Henry Howard, the State Treasurer, Kintzing Pritchette, Secretary of State, John Norton, the cashier of the Michigan State bank, John M. Berrien of the United States army, and Governor Stevens T. Mason, who individually purchased all the land subsequently included in the Portsmouth plat. These formed a stock company and caused the same to be resurveyed and replatted in 1837 by John Farmer.

A portion of this plat of Portsmouth was resurveyed and replatted by A. Alberts, surveyor for Wm. Daglish in 1855, under the name of Daglish division of Portsmouth.

Up to some time in 1836 all the lands purchased in the Saginaw valley were in the land district of Detroit, and a trip to Detroit was then considered a fearful hardship for any one, and a land office was established at Flint, thirty miles from Saginaw.

In these early times much strife began to appear between parties purchasing United States lands, and then all purchases were made in gold and silver. It is stated that more than $40,000 were frequently stored away in the little hotel at Flint, kept by one Bill Gifford, to be used for purchasing lands. Though the times were prosperous and every one was accumulating wealth, no one seemed to realize what terrible disasters were in store for them. In 1837 an incident occurred, which illustrates the will of men who keenly appreciate their interests. It is said that Joseph Trombley and Dr. D. H. Fitzhugh took a fancy for the same piece of land at the same time, neither knowing that the other wanted the land. At noon Joseph Trombly learned Dr. Fitzhugh was to start for Flint from Saginaw to purchase the said land which was on the west side of the river. On the next morning early, Trombley being then at Portsmouth, collected his gold and started in a canoe, and rapidly sped his way to Flint, expecting to overtake Fitzhugh on the road, who was to start on horseback, but found nothing of him. Arriving at Flint on a good smart run, he entered his land, took dinner, and started on his return to the Saginaws. On his way back he met Dr. Fitzhugh, who was greatly astonished to meet him going towards Saginaw, suggested that he (Trombley) had bought certain land, when Trombley showed his certificate of purchase. Dr. Fitzhugh seeing there was no use in going further, returned. Trombley kept him company a while but finding that the Doctor was too slow, even with his horse, left him, and arrived at Saginaw City, at a store owned by one McDonald, where he had left his canoe. Trombley told his story about his getting the start of Fitzhugh, when McDonald disbelieved him, even after seeing the certificate, and bet a gallon of wine that Trombley had not been to Flint that day. Now the mail carrier was on his way from Flint to Saginaw on horseback, and Trombley met him before arriving at Flint, and then overtook and passed him on his way back. So they waited a few minutes for the mail carrier, who verified Trombley's statement. Trombley treated out his gallon, and took his canoe for home, arriving there before ten at night the same day. Mr. Trombley says no man not having an iron frame and constitution could stand the strain to run that distance as he had to run.

Judge Albert Miller, then living at Green Point, in company with B. K. Hall and Cromwell Barney, built the first steam saw mill on the Saginaw, at Portsmouth, on the site of Albert Miller's red salt block, in 1836-7.

The difficulty of building a mill in those times is hardly apparent to the present people of the Saginaw valley.

When the arrangements had been completed between the parties, Cromwell Barney was to have the timber got out, and the frame erected and put in order, while Judge Miller went to Ohio to purchase the needed machinery, and other materials for the mill. Mr. Barney hurried up his part of the work and when the timber was ready to haul it was found that but one team was to be found in the country, and that was owned by Leon Trombley on the other side of the river, and they were made to swim the river daily till the ice prevented, when the men with tackle and ropes and chains hauled the timber by hand to complete the mill, which was ready for operation in the spring.

Judge Miller was not so fortunate. He bought the mill gearing and everything in a grist and saw mill, at the mouth of the Huron river, in Ohio, and shipped it on a vessel to Detroit. Navigation was closing, and freights were excessively high from Buffalo to Detroit, $2.50 per 100 pounds, and Mr. Miller was obliged to purchase the schooner Elizabeth Ward for his use. The machinery and a large stock of goods and provisions were put on board of the vessel, and when Mr. Miller saw his cargo safe under way, with his workmen, whom he had hired at excessive wages, $3.50 to $3.00 per day, all on board, he started for Saginaw on horseback, till he arrived at Flint, when he found the roads so bad that no horse could go through. He then bought a canoe and paddled down the Flint river, hoping to get through, but found the river frozen at the mouth, and started from there on foot, breaking the ice, and sometimes wading up to his arms in the water and ice, until he reached Green Point, where his mother lived, and was unable for a while to go further on account of sickness, but on arriving at the mill found no tidings of his vessel; he sent men up after the mail. After waiting some time he received letters that his vessel had laid up at Port Huron.

He at once started for Detroit and Port Huron, where he found the captain had made away with about all the goods. Miller then had to hire his machinery and goods drawn from Port Huron on sleighs at $50 a load. The mill was, notwithstanding all these difficulties, finished and put in operation.

When the mill went into operation in April, 1837, they found that there was no market where the best lumber could be sold for enough to pay transportation.

The mill was purchased by James McCormick and his son James J., who ran the mill till 1847, when the father died. They shipped the first cargo of lumber from the Saginaw river. This cargo was shipped to Detroit, and sold for $8 per M., half cash, balance in eight and ten months, the lumber running sixty per cent uppers. How long would the lumbermen of to-day do business under this pressure; and yet these persevering men operated the mill till 1846 with varying success.

The Hon. S. S. Campbell came to Lower Saginaw in March, 1838, with his family, and built his house on the corner of Fifth and Water street, where the Globe hotel now stands; Judge Campbell being the first permanent resident on the surveyed plat of Lower Saginaw, where his family lived and kept the first hotel opened in this county, and continued this business till several other hotels were in successful operation, when the house was greatly enlarged and opened as the Globe. Mr. Campbell, in about 1873, built a fine brick block on the lot north and adjoining the Globe, and has lived on his property on Woodside avenue for nearly sixteen years, and is enjoying the fruits of his early efforts and hardships in peace and quietness, having his family around him to cheer up his fast approaching old age.

Thomas Rogers came from Canada in the fall of 1836, with a view of securing a home where he could enjoy his political views without the interference of the wealthy nobility such as reigned in Canada at that time. He was employed by Judge Miller to help put in the machinery in his mill, and the next year sent for his family, who came up on the steamer Governor Marcy at the same time that Joseph Trombley and his bride came to this region. Mr. Trombley says he went down to see the family on the lower deck of the boat, and was surprised to find so fine and intelligent a family there, and after some conversation, finding that they could not afford a first-class passage, got his wife to go and see them, and finally paid the difference in the fare and took them up where they could enjoy the benefits of a first-class table, which was keenly appreciated by Mrs. Rogers and family.

In 1822 the territory east of the river was surveyed, and soon placed in market. The reserve west of the river was surveyed and placed in market in 1840. The Indian reservations were to be sold at $5 per acre, for the benefit of the Indians, except the private reservations such as the John Riley reservation, which the owners held at fabulous prices.

Some time in 1836, John Riley, son of Stephen V. R. Riley, then and for many years postmaster at Schenectady, N. Y., was prevailed upon to sell his reservation of 640 acres, to Andrew T. McReynolds of Detroit, and F. H. Steevens, then president of the Michigan State Bank in Detroit, for the fabulous sum of $30,000. The title of this purchase soon passed to the stock company known as the Saginaw Bay Land Company, consisting of A. T. McReynolds, James Fraser, F. H. Steevens, Governor Stevens T. Mason, Henry R. Schoolcraft, Phineas Davis, Horace Hallock, John Hulbert, Electus Backus, Henry R. Sawyer. This company caused two hundred and forty acres of this purchase in the northwestern portion of the river to be surveyed and platted for a town and named it Lower Saginaw. The boundaries of this embryo city were the present Woodside avenue, Saginaw river, a line about 400 feet south of and parallel with Tenth street, and a line 100 feet east of and parallel with Van Buren street.

It would seem that this formidable company had dreams of wealth as great as the fabulous price they paid for the land, for they commenced making extensive improvements to induce capitalists to invest in this new city by building a dock and warehouse, and a large hotel was framed and lumber provided for its completion, and yet the plans projected were but partially developed.

The financial bubble had swollen to the fullest extent about this time all over the west and east; the wild mania for speculation had culminated in the suspension of specie payment, because of the run upon all the banks for the specie with which to purchase the United States lands. This company were unable to "stand from under" and were thus crushed in all their dreams of wealth, in the greatest crash in the finances this country ever knew, and everything was as dead as a door nail. About the only one of the company that had been shrewd enough to save himself was James Fraser, who subsequently, with Dr. D. H. Fitzhugh, and Hon. James G. Birney, purchased for a nominal sum the whole interest except that of Theodore Walker, when they divided the property, and each after that managed his own interests without regard to the others. Thus the nucleus for a future city was formed by the two land companies, covering Portsmouth and the Riley reservation.

Soon after the grand crash the legislature of Michigan passed the wild cat bank bill to save them from total ruin, but it only served to sink what little hope and energy there was left in those hardy men. Though two banks were chartered for the two companies here, the Commercial bank of Portsmouth, and the Saginaw County bank, which was later located at Lower Saginaw, and a banking house was actually built on the lot where the Rouech block now stands. No bills were ever put in circulation, however, except those stolen while on the way from New York, fictitious names of officers having been signed to the bills. They were found in circulation, and it is truly said of these bills that they were just as good as any.

For several years subsequent the main strife was to devise ways and means for simply living, and many turned their wits to farming and prospered finely along the rich alluvial bottom lands of the Saginaw. In about 1840 Dr. D. H. Fitzhugh purchased several parcels of the Indian reserve lands opposite the present Bay City, where the thriving young city of West Bay City now stands. All these lands were only partially occupied for many years, though a much handsomer site for a town than the opposite side of the river.

The Hon. James G. Birney, who was in 1844 the Abolition candidate for president, came to Lower Saginaw with his family in 1842. Mr. Birney's house was built on the corner of Fourth and Water streets, where he lived for several years, when he sold these eight lots and house to his son David B., and his son David B. sold to B. F. Partridge, who sold the same to James Fraser, where he lived several years. That house was moved to the corner of Saginaw and Fourth streets, and changed into a hotel known as the Moulton house. While Mr. Birney lived here he imported some very fine Durham stock, and for many years he and Mr. Fitzhugh bred fine stock.

In 1846 the lumber interest was again revived somewhat, and Hopkins, Pomeroy, and Fraser built a mill on the site where the Gates & Fay mill now stands. Their lumber went to Chicago, and other mills began to spring up soon after.

In 1838 Joseph F. Marsac, an old Frenchman, removed to a piece of land just above the present Astor house, in the sixth ward of Bay City, and still lives on a part of it, the rest being covered nearly all over with mills and other buildings.

Among those who came to Bay county in early times was one Capt. J. S. Wilson, who purchased a piece of land of J. F. Marsac, and lived on it till his death in about 1872. He sailed the sloop Mary, the first trading vessel on the river. Judge Albert Miller was the first postmaster. He was appointed in 1836, by Amos Kendall, as postmaster of Portsmouth, and the late Thomas Rogers was his deputy, and carried the mail to and from Saginaw once a week in a canoe in summer, and on the ice in winter. This office being discontinued, there was no office for a while, but shortly after, Mr. Rogers received the appointment of postmaster of Hampton, and kept his office in his dwelling house where the Shearer block now stands, till in 1852 he died with the cholera. Also Mr. Monroe, a brother-in-law, died at the same time, each leaving large families, who are now identified with the business men of this city.

Captain B. F. Pierce also settled here as early as 1839, and was known among the enterprising men of the river. He built a storehouse and dock just north of the bridge, and the old storehouse stands there yet. He was a steamboater, and owned the first steam tug on the river that towed the first vessel ever towed by steam here.

Mike Daily, an Irish lad of eleven years, came here in 1837, with Norman Little from New York, and has served since in almost any capacity imaginable, and by his shrewdness and ability has accumulated a large fortune.

Edwin Park and Curtis Munger came to Lower Saginaw in 1848, as coopers, and carried on that business successfully some time, furnishing fish barrels to the fishermen. During the winter their shop, tools, and clothing were all lost by fire, but that did not discourage them. They got new tools and went on, and commenced fishing in the spring, made money, and afterwards engaged in mercantile pursuits, and are known among the business men of the city.

Captain Lyman Crowl came in 1849, and was a resident till 1853. He was a partner of Russell, Miller & Co., of Portsmouth.

J. S. Barclay came and built the Wolverton house, after being in trade two or three years. It was much the best house of any kind at the lower end of the Saginaw river, and is still a good house to stop at.

Captain Raby and H. C. Scott are also among the enterprising pioneers of the Saginaw, having visited the river in 1837-8.

Alexander and William McEwan came to Lower Saginaw in 1850, and in the fall commenced to erect their mill at Woodside. Some time in the next year they were joined by John McEwan, brother of William and Alexander. The three brothers operated the mill till 1854, when Alexander died, and the business went on in the name of McEwan & Brother.

Charles E. Jennison came here in 1850 as a partner of James Fraser in the mercantile business.

In 1857 James Fraser sold his Kawkawlin mill property to O. A. Ballou & Co., of the State of Connecticut, for $80,000, and Dexter A. Ballou, a son of O. A. Ballou, became the manager of the property and lumbering business; and the village of Kawkawlin was laid out and platted, and the business and place prospered finely. Mr. D. A. Ballou married a daughter of the Hon. H. M. Fitzhugh of Baltimore, Maryland, and has been a resident of Bay City ever since.

In 186- the firm of Folsom, Arnold & Co., of Albany, New York, purchased the land and water, and built the large mill and salt works now managed by that genial old bachelor, Alexander Folsom, who is as much engaged in banking as in lumbering.

The Hon. George Lewis, president of the Bay City bank, came to the Saginaw river in 184-, and lived at Zilwaukee several years, and was supervisor to the Saginaw county board of supervisors before this county was organized, and came to Portsmouth, and with William Peters purchased the Partridge mill, and the firm operated the mill very successfully several years. The mill was destroyed by fire, when Messrs. Lewis and Peters opened a banking house in Bay City, and subsequently opened the Bay City Savings bank. Mr. Lewis has since represented Bay county in the State legislature, and his ward on the board of supervisors.

James Watson, of the firm of J. & J. Watson, of Detroit, came here in 1850, and his mill and mercantile operations made him one of the most enterprising men on the river, contributing largely to the welfare of Bay City.

It seems that business began greatly to revive in the Saginaws, which brought such men here.

Another worthy business pioneer who came here in 1850 was Henry Raymond to put a mill in operation with Mr. James Watson, and has always been known as one of the sterling business men of this county.

In 1846, J. B. and B. B. Hart came to establish a trade with the Indians, and both became good Indian traders and talkers and business men.

Dr. J. T. Miller, brother of Judge Albert Miller, came to Portsmouth in

1836, and was the first family and physician that lived in the limits of Bay county that was not French or Indian, B. K. Hall next, and Cromwell Barney third. Dr. Geo. E. Smith was the second male physician and kept the first drug store at Lower Saginaw.

E. Stanton came in 1850, and began his mill in 1851, and has been one of Bay City's prominent citizens.

Israel Catlin, a builder, carpenter, and good business man, came here in company with James Fraser, and assisted in the Kawkawlin mill in 1843-44, and has been counted as one of the soundest men in the county ever since.

C. C. Fitzhugh, who had lived at Midland several years, on his large farm, removed to Lower Saginaw in the spring of 1855, and occupied the house he now occupies, which was built by W. D. Fitzhugh, his brother, and who lived in it a while but removed to New York, when Conrad Hage occupied the house till the spring of 1854, when B. F. Partridge removed his family from Lexington, Sanilac county, Mich., into it, and lived there one year.

Thomas Whitney, John Drake, Judge Campbell, and J. J. McCormick had all built mills in the county adjacent to Lower Saginaw.

In the fall of 1853 B. F. Partridge purchased the land where the Pitts & Cranage mill now stands, and in company with John C. Baughman built a large mill, and ran the same till March, 1855, when Partridge sold his interest in the land and mill to his partner, taking a mortgage for $22,500, and commenced building the mill in Portsmouth where the McLean mill now stands, and put it in operation in 1855, and ran the mill several years. He resided in Bay City till 1867, when he moved to his farm three miles from the city.

The Hon. James Birney, son of James G. Birney, acquired the title to all the co-heirs of the late James G. Birney, and moved his family to Lower Saginaw in 1857, having been here the year before, and has been identified with the progress of the whole county ever since.

The late James Fraser, one of the earliest visitors to this county, resided in Saginaw county till 1856, but was one of the main business men and property holders in the county, and was one of the original purchasers of the John Riley reservation, and one who was the means of Dr. Fitzhugh and Mr. Birney becoming so deeply interested in the town of Lower Saginaw. He certainly caused more improvements to be made, and engineered about all the enterprises, or was the means of the large investments in real estate in the county. No man was up earlier and worked later to accomplish his ends, and no man could do more with less means in any enterprise, and he was engaged in about everything to improve this county. He purchased the Birney property of B. F. Partridge in 1856, and moved into it in 1857, from Saginaw City, and occupied it till his removal east, when the Hon. James Shearer took the house for a number of years.

Henry Hess came to Lower Saginaw in September, 1851, and was in the employ of Henry Raymond in the mill, but finally purchased some land and has cleared up several farms and built several houses in the city.

John and William McEwan built the first grist mill in the county in 1857, where the Griswold block now stands, and ran the mill several years, J. B. Wetherell being the miller. During the first year the mill laid still a portion of the year for want of grain, but supplied the wants of the people.

J. W. Putnam came to East Saginaw some time in 1849, and built a house on the corner where the Campbell house now stands, and lived to operate here several years. "Old Put" was as well known as any on the river.

In 1853-4 Henry Moore and his partner built the Moore & Voce mill, on land purchased of Benoit Trombley below Bangor, and have run the mill with varying success ever since. Mr. Henry Moore married one of Colonel Raymond's daughters, and now lives in Bay City and is numbered among the foremost bankers and business men.

Wm. B. Doty commenced putting up the mill known as the Peters' mill in 1854, in April, and died about the time he had completed it.

In 1845 the government directed and built a light-house at the mouth of the Saginaw river, and the first keeper was a Mr. Thompson. Joseph Trombley was employed to dig the well to supply the water for the keeper.

The pioneer school here was taught by David Smith, brother of Dr. Geo. E. Smith, in the town of Portsmouth, and the scholars were Peter and Hiel Rogers, and Esther Rogers, now the wife of Captain R. Burrington, A. J. Crutchfield, Elizabeth McCormick, wife of Orrin Kinney, Sarah McCormick, wife of Medore Trombley, and W. R. McCormick, of Bay City, seven in all. The first school-house was built on the lot just south of where the Detroit & Bay City passenger depot now stands, and was sold to B. F. Partridge in the spring of 1854, and removed to give room for his mill boarding house, and the school-house in the second ward on Adams street, was built the same year.

At this writing the school system of Bay City is not second in efficiency to that of any city in Michigan, as an enumeration of the school-houses and advantages will justify any one in saying. The elegant and costly high-school building in the third ward is second to no similar building in the State. We have the new and elegant brick school-houses in the first, sixth, and seventh wards, and the large wooden house in the second ward for 500 scholars; those in the fourth and fifth wards, elegant houses and sufficient for those wards for some time; all estimated to be worth $140,000 at least, under the management of a school board composed of a president, clerk (the recorder of the city being clerk), fourteen members (two from each ward), one superintendent, and one principal at each ward school, with a corps of assistant teachers in each school, at an annual expense now of not less than $30,000. West Bay City has been equally well provided with elegant school-houses and teachers, Mr. Lankenaw being the principal. The townships are not behind the cities, but seem to vie with them in the education of their youth, when we are able to count up in the townships alone over fifty organized school districts with teachers during some portion of the year.

The first ferry was run between First street, Lower Saginaw, and the road north of the Drake mill, in 1854, with row boats; in 1859-60 John Hays kept a hotel, the only house on Midland street, at the west end of Third street bridge, and a steam-ferry run there from the foot of Third street.

The first lake vessel built here was the schooner Essex, three masts, by H. D. Braddock & Co., in 1860-61; and the first steamer was built at Bangor by Thomas Whitney & Co., called the Whitney.

The first wheat raised in the county was by Cromwell Barney on his farm more recently known as the Longton farm; the old family farm house is now standing, but the farm is covered all over with streets and saw-mills, salt blocks and houses.

The first steamer that made regular trips on the river for passengers and freight as a river boat was the old Buena Vista; captain, Ad. Mowry; engineer, Orrin Kinney, now living in the sixth ward of Bay City on his forty acre farm, were the chief officers.

Thomas Watkins, a genial lumber inspector, built the first brick structure here for a residence, on the corner of Center and Washington streets, in 1862, and the same house has just been torn down to make room for a four-story brick block, 125x100 feet, by James Shearer. In the same year James Fraser put up a brick store adjoining the building where W. H. Miller's hardware store now is; the building caved in and was rebuilt. In 1865 James Fraser built the Fraser house, a substantial brick building on the corner of Center and Water streets.

In 1867 it was discovered that sewers must be constructed or substantial buildings could not go up, and the city provided for the first sewer, and it was built on Center street, a mile in length, at a large outlay.

In 1868 a portion of Water and Center streets was paved with Nicholson pavement, and before this work had a vacation some three miles had been paved.

The first couple married here was by Judge Albert Miller, and the parties were John Jones to Lucy Trombley, a daughter of old Leon Trombley, the first settler here, at the house of Mr. Trombley. This John Jones was the son of John Jones of Livingston county, N. Y., who was a captive among the Indians for many years in his younger days.

The first white child born here was a daughter of Cromwell Barney, christened Elizabeth, and now the wife of Alderman Sinclair.

The first church erected in the limits of this county was the Indian mission Methodist church on the Kawkawlin river in 1847. The first in Bay City was the Methodist church on Washington street, in 1852, while at this date—1880—almost every denomination has its finely built modern church edifice, the seating capacity of some being as high as 1,500.

In 1860 the first salt well was commenced on the site of the Northwestern Gas and Water Pipe Co., and was in operation in 1861, but the first barrel of salt was made by the Portsmouth Salt Co., in 1861, and at this date there are annually made in the county at least 1,000,000 barrels of salt.

John Burdon made the first casting in the county in 1847, and subsequently started the first iron foundry and machine shop on the site of the Industrial Works.

In 1865-6 the Third street bridge was opened for travel. It was a wooden structure and has since been replaced by a very beautiful and substantial iron bridge; this is the main thoroughfare to West Bay City; the original bridge cost some $25,000. At this date we have this and the Twenty-third street bridge for travel, and the Detroit & Bay City Railroad bridge across the Saginaw river between Bay City and West Bay City.

In 1859 the pioneer newspaper was established by Mr. Perry Joslin, and edited by Hon. James Birney. Its career was brief. Since that date newspaper ventures have been too numerous to trace. At this writing the county boasts of fifteen publications of different descriptions.

June 25, 1857, John Robertson vs. Harvey Williams was the first suit entered in the Bay county circuit court, W. L. Sherman attorney for plaintiff; May 31, 1858, George Lord vs. Joseph P. Whittemore, W. L. Sherman attorney for plaintiff; June 2, 1858, Andrew C. Maxwell vs. James J. McCormick, Maxwell & Wisner for plaintiff, and James Birney for defendant. But no court was held in which to try any cases till April, 1859, when Judge Wilber F. Woodworth presided. The grand jury empaneled for this session consisted of J. S. Barclay, Henry M. Bradley, John Burdon, Daniel Burns, Jonathan Burtch, Calvin C. C. Chilson, William L. Fay, Lyman Garrison, B. B. Hart, Christopher Heinzmann, Fred Keisler, Nathan Knight, Alexander McKay, Gunder Miller, John W. Putnam, Henry Raymond, Harvey Stewart, Edward Vosburg, Albert Wedthoff, and Michael Winterhalter—Henry Raymond being chosen foreman. It will be conceded in this county by every one knowing these jurors (and everybody in the county did know them) that it would be extremely difficult to summon an equal number of men from any place—even now—of equal general intelligence, and of so high standing in community.

The bar of Bay county at this time consisted of C. H. Freeman, S. P. Wright, James Birney, W. L. Sherman, A. C. Maxwell, and I believe Nathan Knight, who long since left the practice of law and went to farming, and has been one of the most honored men of the county ever since. He lives in the town of Hampton and has been supervisor many years, and represented his district in the State legislature the past two years.

The first Federal office was established here in 1837, Judge Albert Miller being appointed postmaster of the township of Portsmouth, but this was soon discontinued and no office was established in Portsmouth for several years.

The postoffice in Hampton was established in 1846, when Thomas Rogers was appointed postmaster and mail carrier. He served until his death, in 1852, when Dr. George E. Smith received the appointment. The postoffice in Bay City has grown from the little office that in 1846 did not pay for handling the letters, to one that does a business of nearly $200,000 a year, distributing mails in every direction. There is now one first-class, one second-class, and eighteen other postoffices in the county to accommodate the rapidly increasing public. ——— ——— was appointed custom house officer at this place in 18—, and this office records more reports and clearances than any other custom house in Michigan. In September, 1867, B. F. Partridge received the appointment of Assessor of Internal Revenue for the sixth collection district of Michigan, and removed the office from Vassar, Tuscola county, to Bay City, where the office remained four years, placing it where the public could reach it easily by rail and steamer from any part of the district, which included all of the upper peninsula and nearly one-third of the lower peninsula, bringing a large traveling public to Bay City.

In 1871 the population of Bay City having increased to considerably more than 7,000, and being dependent upon water for household uses from surface well water and the river, and the demand of manufacturing establishments for a better water supply induced the common council to inaugurate some system for supplying the city with pure and wholesome water for all purposes. After mature deliberation a board of water-works was created, with Hon. James Shearer as president, and the Holly system of water-works was adopted, and the most complete water supply has been secured, at an expense to the city of about $375,000. The city has a fine, substantial water-works building and machinery, and about thirty-three miles of main pipes laid, including about six miles of thirty-inch inlet pipe from the Saginaw bay. There has been no delay in the construction of these works since their inception, and not a dollar has been known to have been misapplied during all this time in their construction and management. So much to the credit of the men having it in charge. To close the history of the water-works without reference to the fire department would leave it incomplete.

The first election under the village charter was held on May 2, 1859, Curtis Munger being elected president. The first meeting of the council was held May 6, 1859, and the full organization being completed, the council and board of trustees commenced making improvements, but did not reach the question of a fire department until December 19, 1859, when a committee on fire department was made, consisting of Israel Catlin, H. M. Bradley, and Harmon A. Chamberlain, who procured hose, and a triangle with which to give the alarm of fire. These were certainly not extravagant. Then the "Tiger," a hand fire engine, afterwards called the "Peninsular," was procured, and John McEwan was elected captain. Next the "Red Rover" was purchased by W. L. Fay. On August 10, 1863, the order was given to purchase a steam fire-engine, but for some reason failed to be carried out for several years. But in October the city purchased two hand engines with hose cart and all other apparatus, the engines being named "Red Rover, No. 1," and "Protection, No. 2." Thus the village continued to increase the efficiency till the water-works were in operation, when the Holly system of fire protection was instituted, and with the fire-alarm telegraph and the stream and hand engines constitute the most efficient fire protection in use by any city in the State of Michigan.

In order to be in fashion with other and larger towns, and to accommodate the traveling communities on Water street to the various mills and other places, a company was formed in December, 1864, to build a street railroad, and this company has not only extended its lines and firmly fixed itself, but has extended its franchises to the right to use its tracks for a transfer railroad from 10 o'clock at night until 6 o'clock in the morning, thus giving all the mills and salt works and other manufactories direct access to the railroad connections to ship from their very doors.

The lumbering and salt business employing so many transient people, men of desperate characters may be found more numerous in these trades in connection with shipping and sailing than all others. These facts and the demand for greater safety in traveling the streets of the place in the night, and the belief of the merchants and others that gas light was much cheaper and better than any other light, induced an effort to secure the erection of gas works in Bay City. So in February, 1865, a charter was granted to the Bay City Gaslight Company, and the works were in due time completed and their pipes extended to every part of Bay City.

The banking business of this county commenced in 1863. The Bay bank was opened by C. W. Gibson with about $5,000 in the shape of a small-sized "broker's office." Mr. Gibson started his bank on Water street, on the site of the Campbell house, and continued until January 16, 1864, when the First National bank was organized with C. W. Gibson president and Clark cashier, with $50,000 capital.

In 1867 N. B. Bradley and B. E. Warren opened a banking house on the corner of Center and Water streets, where they continued some time, but they and James Shearer and others reorganized the First National bank, and finally increased the capital to $400,000, with James Shearer president, and B. E. Warren cashier. The same president and cashier have been continued to this date. There are now also, beside the First, the Second National bank, Bay City bank, and the Savings bank in Bay City, and the Lumbermen's bank in West Bay City, with a total banking capital in the county of not less than a million dollars. These facts surely seem to indicate rapid strides in the accumulation of wealth and prosperity in this community.

The circuit court calendar from year to year shows the importance of this branch of business simply immense. The very nature of the immense business transacted in this county renders litigation in this court almost impossible.

The Hon. Sanford M. Green has ably presided in this court about twelve years in succession, with great honor to himself and to the full satisfaction of all doing business in his court.

The bar of Bay county is so numerous that but few of the oldest will be named, there being at this time forty-eight members. It is a seeming paradox, but very true, perhaps, that this numerous class of men operates to prevent much litigation. Among the pioneer lawyers will be remembered W. L. Sherman, who came here in 1853 from the State of New York. Mr. Sherman was a "character," never letting a chance linger when he could get his "one per cent." A. C. Maxwell, who was "all over" like bad weather, came here in 1854 or 1855. Maxwell was then a large-sized "green" looking "horn," but anybody who took him for one of that species found his mistake. He is now counted one of the shrewdest lawyers in this part of the State; and has contributed largely to the growth and prosperity of this city and county. Chester H. Freeman came in about 1855, securing a good show of practice, and has ever since been counted of the solid men of the county. Then in 1856 or so the Hon. James Birney appeared on the scene and put up his shingle as a lawyer, but never acquired much reputation or business as such, though it may be truly said of him that he is a success as a politician, having been prosecuting attorney, circuit judge, member of the constitutional convention, lieutenant governor, and for several years U. S. Minister to the Hague. More recently the more noted lawyers are Judge Isaac Marston of the supreme court, H. H. Hatch, Judge S. T. Holmes, formerly member of Congress from the State of New York, and A. McDonell. Then T. F. Shepard, who is employed in more suits on the present calendar than any other lawyer of the bar, McDonell & Mann standing next. Judge J. W. McMath has been here several years and enjoys a high place on the bar and a higher place as a man among the business community. It may be truly said of the rest of the bar, especially among the younger portion, that a more earnest, intelligent, and persevering lot of lawyers are seldom found.

Among the early farmers of the county may be named Nelson Merritt, who purchased his land in 1857, on the old "Cass road," and has a very fine farm. Samuel Henry, who came in 1854, was employed by B. F. Partridge in the Partridge & Baughman mill, as engineer, but soon bought the land where he now lives in the town of Portsmouth, where he has in course of construction a fine brick house for his future residence. Henry Hess also has made himself a fine farm on the Tuscola plank road, having come here in 1851; and C. L. Mix came in 1852, and purchased the land where his farm is and where he lives, the farm being partly in Bay City and partly in Portsmouth. Then J. M. Miller came in 1849, purchased his land near Mr. C. L. Mix, and made himself a farm, but has been engaged in other business as well as farming, and is known as "the prohibition man of Bay county." Mr. Essex, father of the late R. P. Essex and John Essex and of the wife of Joseph Hudson (brother of the popular landlord of the Hudson house of Lansing), came here very early and made a farm where Essexville now stands.

There are numerous farmers who settled the towns of Williams and Monitor in the early days of the county. But the number of farmers now in the county is "legion," and cannot be noticed any further. Some time in 1855 or 1856 B. F. Partridge purchased the land of James Fraser on Center street, where he completed a fine and expensive house, nearly half a mile from Water street, and nearly that distance in the woods, with no street or road to it till he cut a crooked, winding path through the woods to the lots, over which to transport his material for the house. As soon as completed he occupied it, and continued to do so till 1867. But in September, 1861, he went into the army and remained there till July, 1865. After returning home, he purchased the land for his future home of Theodore M. Bligh, when he sold his house on Center street to H. M. Bradley, and removed to his land, where he has lived ever since. The next year, 1857, Center street was opened one mile out. In 1860 a company was formed for building a plank road from Bay City to Tuscola county, and B. F. Partridge was employed to survey the route and engineer the building of the road; when Willam McEwan, Alexander McKay, Chris. Heinzmann, James Fraser, and others accompanied the party as assistants; Chris. Heinzmann being the axman, and McEwan to write down the notes of survey, and the work was prosecuted to completion, it being the first road of any kind over which a team could travel to and from Bay City at all times of the year.

In 1865 the people of Bay county began to think of promoting the interests of agriculture, though but few farmers could then be counted in the county, and that few not very strong. But the business men came to the front, and a creditable county fair was held which proved a success. In 1867-8 B. F. Partridge was chosen president by the society and two more successful fairs were held, proving that the farmers as well as others were progressing and progressive. The society has continued in operation to the present time, having provided beautiful grounds, spacious buildings, and gotten up in as good shape as any society in the State. And the county, in 1879, having generously purchased the ground where the racetrack and buildings had been erected at great expense, leaves the society nearly out of debt, with everything ready for future use.

It seems the province of this sketch to take up some of the most prominent actors on the scene during and since the pioneer state had, in a measure ceased, and events had become more general and quite modernized. Then we will run over the same ground again, adding many prominent names, and perhaps include many things not already mentioned.

Perhaps one of the most locally prominent persons is Joseph F. Marsac, about whom everybody knows some good thing or some funny thing. The old captain had been a noted hunter and sportsman, being able in the early times here to take his gun and step quietly back into the woods, and in an hour bring in his deer—thus in a brief time replenish his supply of venison—being able in this manner to entertain in royal style his numerous visitors, and these visitors never were known to "refuse" the old man's hospitality. I remember since I came here of the wonderful success of the old man in killing duck, he having left home in the morning in his little canoe, and returning before night with ninety wild ducks killed that day—all killed on the wing. In those days no steamers prowled along the river frightening the wild game on the Saginaw. The captain is fast approaching his spirit home, being about ninety or more years of age, and sometimes gets lost in his own house. But in his best moments he will relate many very interesting incidents in pioneer life. The captain has raised a numerous family, and will be able to leave them all quite comfortably off when his "light" shall have ceased to burn.

Medore Trombley has been one of the active men of this place since 1835, having carried on an extensive fishing trade many years, and then laid out his land into lots, and sold well in the best times, leaving him wealthy.

James J. McCormick was here in his boyhood, became early inured to labor, and the extreme difficulties of pioneer life made him one of the most energetic men here. Whatever enterprise he engaged in was prosecuted to final success. In an early day he made a trip to California, and was able to save enough to return with and to start him on the road to future wealth, and enabling him to leave a fortune for his family at his death in 1875.

The name of Henry Raymond merits a more extended notice as one of Bay City's most active men to this day. Having accumulated a fortune, he knows how to enjoy it to its fullest measure.

Colonel H. S. Raymond, son of Henry Raymond, was young when he came here, but has been fully identified with the city as among the foremost in the county. He was postmaster before and during the war and several years after—doing all his public as well as private business with fidelity. He went to the army and remained till the war closed, returning in command of his regiment.

After the war Colonel John McDermott made Bay City his future home, and has reaped the fullest measure of success and the confidence and respect of all good citizens.

John Drake, that excitable though honest and upright Scotch gentleman, was one of the early business men here. He and his brothers built the "Drake mill" in 1852, and operated the mill several years, when he was prostrated with rheumatism, which so unfitted him for business that he sold out and did no business for many years, but is now doing a good insurance business.

Edwin Park and C. Munger were here as early as 1848, and A. S. Munger in 1854—have been engaged in all kinds of trades and are among those who contributed to the great prosperity of the county, and they have held the most responsible offices in the city and county. But they now find their time fully occupied with their own business.

This paper would be incomplete without the name of Philip Simon, a gentleman who arrived here in 1850 as a German laborer, worked by the month at $12 a month for two or three years, but finally opened a butcher's shop on the spot where the Union block stands, in a little board shanty. While his wife attended to the business he was laboring or hunting up cattle for his stock of beef. This business must have paid well, for he soon opened a hotel in a small house where his brick block stands, next the Fraser house, and kept saloon, hotel, and butcher shop, and then built the Bay City house, on the corner of Center and Saginaw streets. But all these places were swept away in the great fire in 1863 or 1864, and he rebuilt with brick, but engaged in merchandizing, and continued several years. He has finally retired to his fine residence on Twelfth street, and lives easy. Mr. Simon is raising a family of only fourteen children to cheer up his old age.

Christopher Heinzmann came here about the same time as a German laborer, but by his careful management has accumulated considerable wealth, and owns and keeps the Forest City house, and is, perhaps, as easy financially as any one in Bay City.

C. B. & J. F. Cottrell opened a store on the corner of Second and Water streets in 1854, and continued several years, and finally sold out and removed from the county. But C. B. returned and married Miss Rogers, daughter of Thomas Rogers, one of the pioneers, and is firmly located here doing a fine business in insurance.

Then Clark Moulthrop is one of the active men here, having been one of the successful mill operators and business men, and resides in his palatial residence on Center street, seeming to enjoy life in its fullest measure.

W. L. Fay and George Lord are early mill-owners, having built the Keystone mills, and now W. L. Fay, with Gates, owns the Gates & Fay mill, and are large operators in grist-mill and other business. Sage & McGraw came here in 1864, and built the immense saw-mill and laid out the land into lots where the thriving city of West Bay City now stands, while John McGraw, some years after, purchased a large tract of land in the seventh ward of Bay City, where he built an immense saw-mill and other lumber and shingle mills, salt works, and quite a large town, where nearly the entire property was destroyed by fire, but was immediately rebuilt in better style and more perfectly than before. It is perhaps the largest lumbering mill in the world for manufacturing lumber in all its forms. Together with the salt works, railroad tracks, docks, and dwellings, it makes quite a city.

Richard Padley, an early pioneer and laborer, came here poor, but has gotten bravely over that long since. C. C. C. Chilson was another early pioneer, poor in everything but the letter "C" in his name. He was a carpenter, builder, justice of the peace, and everything else handy, but made quite a fortune before he died. He built the first sash and blind factory here that was run by steam. Conrad Hage, another business man, came in 1851 as a common laborer, but has made himself easy financially.

Benoit Trombley, the old Frenchman who purchased the land from Joseph Trombley and sold to Miller, where the sixth ward of Bay City is, subsequently purchased the land below Banks, where the Moore & Smith mill stands, and made his farm and home there till 1875, when old age took him away, leaving considerable property to his family of eight grown up children.

The territory comprising Bay county was originally a part of Saginaw, Midland, and the whole of Arenac county. Arenac being attached to Midland for judicial purpose, including all the territory in town thirteen north, range six east, and all the north half of town thirteen north, range five east, that lies east of the Saginaw river, and all of fourteen north, range three, four, five, and six east, fifteen, sixteen, seventeen, and eighteen north, range three, four, and five east, and all of towns nineteen and twenty north, range three, four, five, six, seven, and eight east, and also the Charity islands in the Saginaw bay. This county lies around the shore of Saginaw bay, and including the Saginaw, Kawkawlin, Pinconning, Pine, Rifle, AuGres, and Quanicassee rivers emptying into the Saginaw bay.

This territory was organized into Bay county in 1857. Then but two townships were in full organization in the county. The town of Hampton, which had been a town in Saginaw county, and which was organized in 1843 by the board of Saginaw county. At the first election thirteen votes were cast for supervisor, of which Hon. James G. Birney received seven, and Judge Sidney S. Campbell received six, so that Mr. Birney was the first supervisor of the town of Hampton, which after the organization comprised the county except Williams, as it stood when the county was organized. The town of Williams was organized by the Midland board in 1855, two years before the county organized, and comprised towns fourteen, fifteen, sixteen north, range three east, and all of Arenac county. The first supervisor from Williams to the Bay county board was George W. Smack, and from Hampton was Sidney S. Campbell, who met the first time on August 10, 1858, when S. S. Campbell was "duly elected chairman" of the first board of supervisors of Bay county.

The first election of county officers was held on the first Monday in June, 1857, under the act to organize the county, and William Simon sheriff, Elijah Catlin clerk, James Watson treasurer, Thomas M. Bligh register of deeds, S.

S. Campbell judge of probate, C. H. Freeman prosecuting attorney, Stephen P. Wright circuit court commissioner, Benjamin F. Partridge surveyor, Wm. C. Spicer coroner. And these officers duly qualified and were ready for business, but Saginaw county protested against any such "unwarranted proceedings."

The organization having been disputed by Saginaw and Midland counties, who assumed all judicial power over the entire county, paralyzed the operation of the courts and the collection of taxes till the supreme court decided a case arising in Bay county, the jurisdiction of which the Saginaw circuit claimed, which decision was that Bay county "was duly organized." When the decision was rendered, the county officers were yet in power, but the sheriff, Wm. Simon, had removed from the county, and his vacancy filled by the appointment of B. F. Partridge, who filled the place long enough to lease a court-house and offices and build a jail, when the new officers took their places January 1, 1859.

At the first meeting of the board of supervisors, the board allowed and paid fourteen wolf certificates, eleven of which were to Indians, total amount $112; total constable's bills, $70.43; total justices' bills, $66.61; giving notice of election, claim $10, allowed $5; total amount of A. Kaiser's bill for boarding prisoners was $1.00.

Total assessed valuation of the county in 1858, as equalized by the first board was $530,589. This board levied $1,165 county tax.

The first superintendents of the poor were E. N. Bradford, Israel Catlin, and J. B. Hart. At the first meeting of the board October 10, 1858, the county treasurer's report showed orders paid to the amount of $78.14, leaving in the treasury $2.85. Thus it will be seen that the county expenses were extremely light, and all the bills allowed are recorded as having been allowed by a "unanimous vote." But these two supervisors put on record a resolution that the chairman should be "entitled to vote on all questions before the board." But the county was rapidly filling up, and at a special meeting of the county board, in February, 1859, the township of Arenac was duly erected into a township, with Daniel Williams, N. W. Lillibridge, and Daniel Shaw the board of inspectors, Peter Marksman being elected the first supervisor. But Peter Marksman resigned, and M. D. Bourasso was appointed and took his seat.

At a special meeting held in March, 1859, the board erected the town of Portsmouth. J. M. Miller, A. Stevens, and Wm. Daglish were the first board of inspectors. Appleton Stevens was elected the first supervisor. In 1859 the town of Bangor was also erected into a township and Scott W. Sayler was the first supervisor. So that the board consisted of George E. Smith of Hampton, chairman, and four others, at the October meeting in 1859.

On the 4th day of July, 1859, the board of supervisors met and fixed the location of the county seat and buildings.

On February 6, 1862, the board changed the location, and fixed it at Bay City, on block 114 in the village plat of Portsmouth; and on March 3, 1863, the board again changed the location of the buildings to lots 4, 5, and 6, in block 56, old plat of Lower Saginaw, where the court-house now stands, and the jail stands nearly opposite, on the south side of Center street, on lots 4 and 10, in block 65. Both these buildings are an ornament to the city and county, and cost about $75,000.

The State legislature constituted the township of Beaver in February, 1867, by detaching territory from Williams, and the town elected Levi Willard, one of its oldest and most intelligent men in the town, its first supervisor. The board of supervisors in January, 1868, passed an act to organize the town of Kawkawlin from the territory of Bangor, and Alexander Beard was the first supervisor to the board.

The township of Monitor was made a township by an act of the legislature in 1869, and William H. Needham was elected the first supervisor, and in 1870 the board of supervisors took a stick from Arenac and formed the town of Au-Gres, which sent the young lawyer W. R. Bates, who had settled there, as their first supervisor to the board, and in the same year another town was created from Arenac called Clayton, and one of its hardy pioneers, William Smith, one of the most upright and intelligent men in the county, was its first supervisor. It will have been seen ere this that the county had rapidly advanced in population, and that they were distributed nearly all over the county, and other territory was being settled so fast that the inhabitants were driven to seek new organization of towns in order to construct roads and bridges for their use in getting in and out of this vast wilderness, and in 1871 the old town of Portsmouth was divided, and the town of Merritt constituted, and Mr. Henry F. Shuler was first supervisor. In March, 1873, the charter of Bay City was so amended that it covered the village of Portsmouth, leaving a small amount of land without the limits of any town or city. So the present town of Portsmouth was carved out of that part left and a portion of Merritt and a portion of Hampton, and erected into a township called Portsmouth, by act of the legislature in March, 1873, and the town was fully organized the next week, B. F. Partridge being elected their supervisor, and he has been reelected every year since, holding the office of chairman of the board the last five years.

In the year 1873 the towns of Deep River, Standish, and Pinconning were organized by act of the legislature, and they sent from Deep River, John Bullock, known all over the county as an intelligent gentleman; from Standish, Menzo Havens, whose father moved to the town years before from Ohio; from Pinconning, that old pioneer, Joseph U. Meech, as first supervisor to the board. Still further north the county was settled with the true men of the nation, the soldiers of the late rebellion, upon the rich government lands, and in 1874 the townships of Moffat and Mason knocked at the door of the board for organization and were admitted, and the first supervisor from Moffatt was that genial and well informed gentleman, Alvin N. Culver. And that other humorous gentleman, of the numerous Smith family, Henry M. Smith, was the first supervisor from the town of Mason, and the town from that time settled rapidly. The next in order at the door for representation was the town of Fraser, which the legislature authorized to organize in 1875, sending that sandy-haired, hot-headed, ungovernable Scotchman, William Mitchell, as its first supervisor.

In 1866 the city sent to the board from her three wards Jerome B. Sweet, J. H. Little, and Angus Miller, and in 1867 the legislature had authorized the comptroller and city treasurer members ex-officio of the board, and again in the spring of 1873, the city having acquired the village of Portsmouth and four additional wards, and being allowed four more supervisors, and the city attorney and recorder ex-officio members of the board, the board of supervisors counted a membership of twenty-eight; and then in the spring of 1877 the city of West Bay City having been chartered with three wards and allowed to send its recorder as ex-officio members, the board consisted in 1877 of thirty-two members, and at the January session of the board in 1880, the towns of Lincoln and Whitney were organized, which will give the county of Bay, in October, 1880, a membership of thirty-four members, two more than that of the State senate: thus the city of Bay City, eleven; West Bay City, four; the townships elected, seventeen; the townships to be elected, two; total thirty-four. The villages in the county now are Essexville, Kawkawlin, Auburn, Pinconning, Saganing, Standish, Deep River, Pine River, Rifle River, Rowena, and Wells. West Bay City absorbed the villages of Wenona, Salzburg, and Banks in 1877, while Bay City absorbed the village of Portsmouth in 1873. Bay City has a frontage on the Saginaw river of about five miles, and averages one and a half miles wide, while opposite this city is the young city of West Bay City, of about the same extent, with one of the best and most commodious harbors on the lakes between them. Bay City has at this time a population of 19,750, while West Bay City has 6,780, while the lowest estimate for all the rest of the county is put down at 10,000 inhabitants, making a total for the county of 36,530, while three years after the organization of the county in 1860 the census gave the entire population as 1,519. The highest amount of State and county tax levied since the county started was in 1875, being $70,540, and the amount of county tax for 1879 was fixed at $40,000, being the lowest for several years. The county having its county buildings and poor-farm in order, and all the branches of the county service and expenses so systematized that her taxes will decrease steadily for some time, and the county had on January 1, 1880, in its treasury, over $16,000, and a credit in the auditor general's books of some $34,000 more, with a county bond indebtedness of about $60,000, payable yearly after 1882 in nearly equal amounts till 1892.

The total assessed value of Bay county in 1879 footed $11,942,978. Thus it is seen that the material wealth has kept pace with the increase of population, while taxation had once reached its maximum for many years, and has perhaps decreased to about its lowest point until the bonds are paid. Up to 1866, the only way to reach Bay county from any place was by water,—the Saginaw river or bay,—no practical stage road for all seasons of the year could be made, the towns up the river opposing any such improvement between the rival cities. But about this time the people of Bay county came to their senses and made arrangements to connect Bay City with East Saginaw by the Bay City and East Saginaw railroad, which was advantageously leased to the F. & P. M. railroad for a long term of years, they assuming the bonded indebtedness, etc. Soon after this the Jackson, Lansing & Saginaw railroad reached a point opposite Bay City, and finally in two or three years was extended north and beyond the limits of Bay county, through nearly all the townships. Soon after this the Detroit & Bay City railroad was completed from Detroit to Bay City, and a road commenced from Bay City to Midland west and the road-bed made.

These roads opened up the county in every direction, giving the county complete access by water and rail, for the very largest commerce with every quarter of the world, and it has been flowing in at as rapid a rate as to any county and city in the State, of their age.

The following is from the pen of W. R. McCormick, and taken from the work he is now writing of the "Pioneers of the Saginaw Valley for the Last Fifty Years." Mr. McCormick, in speaking of Thomas Rogers, an old pioneer of the valley, says:

"And now in regard to this noble man's wife! I fear that I am inadequate to do her justice. It would take a better pen to portray her many acts of benevolence; her many self-sacrificing acts of womanly devotion to suffering humanity and to the pioneers and their families, in the hours of sickness and death in those early days that tried men's souls.

"Mrs. Elizabeth Rogers, wife of Thomas Rogers, was the daughter of an eminent physician, Dr. Wilcox, of Watertown, N. Y., who afterwards moved to Toronto, Canada. She was born November 12, 1809. When a young girl, she attended to her father's office and filled his prescriptions. She became a great student, and to such an extent did she pursue the study of medicine that at the age of eighteen she was often consulted by her father on difficult cases, and it was that which fitted her in after years to be of such great benefit to the settlers of the Saginaw valley. At the age of nineteen she became the wife of Thomas Rogers. After residing for a time near Toronto, she came with her husband to Michigan in 1837-38, and settled in Portsmouth, now South Bay City.

"From 1837 to 1850 she was the only practicing physician to the early settlers. At all hours of the day or night, when called upon, you would find her at the bedside of the sick and dying. Through storm or snow, rain or shine, it made no difference to her. Sometimes on horseback, sometimes on foot through woods, she felt it to be her duty, and like an angel of mercy she did it, and would have continued to do so, but as settlers began to come in, also doctors came. She still visited the sick of a few old settlers, for they would have none other but her. There was scarcely a birth for twenty years but she was present. In that dreadful year of the cholera, which swept off so many of the inhabitants, she was at the bedside of the sick and the dying, administering assistance and comfort without money and without price; yes, without any remuneration, for she made no charge. She felt it a duty she owed her fellow creatures, and nobly did she do it. Oftentimes the settlers would send her something, and she would accept it thankfully. Your humble servant was once taken with the cholera. She was immediately sent for, and but for her I might not now be here to pen these few lines as a tribute to her memory. Some time since in conversing with the old lady she said: 'How things have changed.' 'Yes,' I answered, 'we have seen Bay City and its surroundings rise from three or four families to a population of 20,000.' 'No,' she said, 'I do not mean that; but there are no such noble-hearted men and women now, as among the early pioneers. It seems almost as if God had chosen such men and women to make the beginning here, or it would never have been done.' I thought she was right. She said, 'when we first came here, we lived in a little log house on the bank of the river, and the wolves howled so at nights we could not sleep. I have looked out of my door many a time in the middle of the day, and have seen a pack of wolves playing on the opposite side of the river, where Salzburg now stands.' One day two Indians who had been drinking came to her house while her husband was away to work some miles from home. She fastened the door. They demanded admittance and told her if she did not open the door they would break it down. They went to the wood-pile, got the ax, and began breaking in the door. She seized an iron rake, opened the door, and knocked the first Indian senseless; the other ran off. This is only to show what a courageous woman she was. When circumstances required, she was brave as a lion, and when her sympathies were called into action she was as tender as a child. May she live long to enjoy the love of those early pioneers who are still living and who can never repay her for her many acts of kindness."

Another early comer (in 1845), P. J. Perrott, has been one of those who contribute to build up the county, is counted one of the estimable citizens, and has honorably held the office of sheriff or deputy sheriff and comptroller of Bay City, and was a near neighbor of mine for many a year. Mr. Perrott married Elizabeth, a daughter of old Leon Trombley, the first settler in this county, while Job Trombley married another daughter of the same Trombley, and still another daughter married John B. Trudell, who now lives in West Bay City.

Among the number who have contributed their brick blocks and mills and fine residences to swell the beauty and wealth of Bay county is Mr. Thomas Cranage, Jr., who came here about the first year of the war.

Captain J. P. Phillips, long a resident and capitalist, has displayed large liberality in distributing his means among all branches of business, greatly to the benefit of the county.

N. B. Bradley, one of the most energetic and sound business managers, has contributed very largely to the advancement of Bay county in the lumber and salt trade, and manufacturing and banking, while politically Mr. Bradley has ably represented his district in Congress two terms, and been one of the foremost citizens in promoting the welfare of Bay county.

W. H. Miller, supposed to be the king of the hardware men in this valley, has contributed his means in increasing the fine residences in various parts of the city, while several other hardware stores are scarcely inferior in this city and West Bay City. This branch of business is simply immense in this end of the valley.

Then Gustin & Merrill come to the front with the largest grocery business ever done in the valley, which they have nursed from its infancy in a small way to its present immense proportions, their annual sales amounting to not much short of three-fourths of a million dollars.

Among the representative men of Bay county may be named T. C. Phillips, of the Chronicle and Tribune of Bay City. Mr. Phillips came to Bay City during the war of the rebellion (in 1862) and engaged in building State roads and other matters, among which was securing to the credit of Bay county the correct quota of drafted men for the army. He was for a time engaged in the grocery trade, and joined Mr. Perkins and others in building the Union block on Water street. After this he was appointed postmaster of Bay City, and held that position for about eight years, and at the same time engaged in farming and other enterprises, and publishing the Tribune, etc.

H. H. Aplin came in 1865 or 1866 and started a small grocery in Bay City, but soon removed to the little hamlet at the west end of the Third street bridge and opened his store there. Securing the appointment of postmaster there he has held the same for ten or more years, and made his mark as a successful business man. He has several fine business blocks and a fine residence in West Bay City.

James A. McKnight is another of the same stamp, and possesses a good share of worldly goods, and a large share of political success, being the present county treasurer.

George and James Shearer removed to Bay City immediately after the war, engaged in the lumber manufacture, and continued in that business some years, but finally closed it out. Then George engaged in the grist-mill business, while James Shearer prosecuted other branches of business, building fine brick blocks and fine residences, and thus ornamenting the city and increasing banking facilities, and has at the same time for many years been the foremost of the State Building Commission to build the new State capitol, and is now one of the regents of the State university.

Among the great enterprises originating in Bay county, is one not known anywhere else in the whole State, of the same kind, known as the Miller and Daglish reclamation of the Saginaw marshes, located partly in Bay and Saginaw counties. This is one of Judge Albert Miller's pets, and consists in the drainage by dredging with a steam dredge around some 1,000 acres of marsh much of which was under water, making the land fully susceptible of raising grain or grass, and all this was done at much less cost than to clear any timber land, leaving the land completely cleared without stumps. The land is kept clear of water by a small steam engine run at occasional times, at very small cost.

The number of men in this county of fine business talent is so numerous that it is impossible to give them even a mention here. The peculiar combination of circumstances contributing to the settlement and rapid development and advancement in everything pertaining to build up and perfect all the interests in this county are being seized upon as soon as presented and carried to final success.

The county stands financially high, the two cities are equally so, and the townships have been so well managed that there seems to be a bright future for every municipality in the county.

A careful review of this paper will reveal the talents that have so ably contributed to these almost unequaled results.

### CONCLUSION.

From the inception of building the first little rustic log house on the banks of the Saginaw, where the smooth waters of this broad river were streaked and spotted with islands of high grass and wild rice, the land on either bank richly lined with stately elms and old oaks, filled in with all other kinds of timber, with now and then an immense pine towering high above all; with wide expanses of wild prairie, above and below, along the river, with innumerable bayous and creeks covered with the wild water fowl listening and peering shyly through the high grass at the solitary passer in his canoe, fearless of harm—where the population has increased from that one family to thousands of families, and from that single house to thousands of houses, the poorest of which would be a comparative palace, and many of the best vieing in style with the best in the State.

While the census of 1840 did not give the county fifteen families, and in 1850 very few more, in 1860 there were 3,164 inhabitants, and in 1874 (only fourteen years later) 24,832 were enumerated as the total population of the county, and at this date Bay City alone contains a population of 20,000, West Bay City at least 6,000, and the county entire at the least 35,000 people. While the population has increased so rapidly, everything else has rushed along in the same ratio, there being at least 450,000,000 feet of lumber, 20,000,000 shingles, 1,000,000 barrels of salt and innumerable other things manufactured in Bay county in 1879, while coal fields are found and being opened for mining purposes. To this time when innumerable steamers and tugs and sail vessels plough through the the waters of the Saginaw and its bayous, with rafts and tows, the times and events chronicled in the foregoing seem to pass in review, and to bespeak the honesty and persevering industry as well as the talents and ability to grasp the whole thing and carry forward to completion the great enterprises that have so richly contributed to the immense results seen in every part of the county.

Any attempt of a full description of the soil and advantages of this county for agriculture would make it a paradise for the farmer, so if I should state fully all the various advantages for business enterprises, it would appear the Eldorado of Michigan.

## MEMORIAL REPORT.

BY JUDGE ALBERT MILLER, OF BAY CITY.

February 5th, 1880.

The following are the names of Pioneers who have died in Bay county within the past year:

At West Bay City, December 10, 1879, Mrs. Trombley, wife of Joseph Trombley, one of the earliest settlers of Bay county. Mrs. Trombley's maiden name was Sophia Chapoton; she was born in 1812 in Detroit, where she resided till her marriage in 1836, when she removed to Portsmouth (now a part of Bay City), and commenced her pioneer life in a log trading house which her husband has previously built to accommodate his business as an Indian trader. Mrs. Trombley was truly an "help-meet" for her husband; she was possessed of all the qualifications necessary to assist him in his pioneer struggles, and to adorn and make pleasant his home after success had crowned his early efforts. Although Mrs. Trombley's first residence in this county was in a log house, her spirit took its flight from a brick mansion at West Bay City, where she had resided with her family for many years previous. She leaves a husband, four sons, one daughter, and a large circle of relatives and friends to mourn her loss.

Aaron Oldfield was born in Erie county, Pennsylvania, July 11, 1807. He died at Bay City, Michigan, January 19, 1880. Mr. Oldfield in his youth learned the trades of carpenter and cabinet maker. In 1834 he married Miss Lucy Loomis (who survives him), and removed to Davisonville, Genesee county, Michigan, in 1836, where he resided till 1873, when he removed to Bay City, which was his home till his decease. Mr. Oldfield was a man of sterling Christian character, and boldly fought against every institution which he considered savored of oppression or wrong. He leaves eight sons, two of whom are physicians, and one an attorney and stenographer.

# BRANCH COUNTY.

## EARLY BANKING IN BRANCH COUNTY.

BY C. D. RANDALL, OF COLDWATER, PRESIDENT OF THE SOUTHERN MICHIGAN NATIONAL BANK.

**Read at the annual meeting of the State Pioneer Society, February 5, 1879.**

"You do not yet know, my son, with how little wisdom men are governed." So said Oxenstierna, in the year 1648, when the people, as an element of control in politics, was yet comparatively unknown. And when we call to mind the many edicts that have been promulgated, the many laws enacted by autocratic, arbitrary authority, which during the ages have been submissively and blindly obeyed by the people, though bringing to them irreparable injury in estate and deprivation of civil and religious liberty, we are, seeing this, painfully impressed that history proves only too conclusively the truth of this remarkable saying of Sweden's great chancellor, that it takes very little wisdom to govern mankind. The laws of all countries, for all time since paper currency has been used, have been remarkable in attempting to create value where none existed. Paper currency, which only promised to pay money, has been confounded with money itself, so much and so long that it has been largely treated as money itself. But whenever the issue of this currency materially exceeded the money it promised to pay in any country, its value depreciated down to the amount of the actual money in that country, or lower, and often became worthless. The examples of France, England, and of our own country fully illustrate this. Legislation, at least until within a few years, has shown little wisdom in regard to banking. All systems, until the free banking of New York and our National banking were established, authoriized excessive issues of paper currency and with no reliable security for bill-holders. Absolute security of the circulation, and government inspection are modern improvements, and illustrate the dangers of the old systems.

When Michigan was a territory there was no general banking law, the banks being incorporated by special charters, which were substantially the same. The capital in each case was nominally $100,000, with the right to increase the same to $300,000. The circulation could be three times the amount of the capital paid in, and in case of an excess of circulation above that amount, the directors permitting it became personally responsible. For this issue no security was required by bonds, stocks, mortgages, or anything else. By such a law our Coldwater National bank could issue, with its $100,000 capital, $300,000 of circulation, and our Southern Michigan National Bank, with its $165,000 capital, could issue $495,000,—nearly half a million. This excessive issue must have been based, not on the ability to redeem on presentation, but the ability to pay when the notes which had been taken for the bank bills issued were collected. Such an amount of currency would have made banking very profitable if the bill-holders had not asked to have these paper promises redeemed; which they did, thus bringing ruin upon them in the great panic of 1837-8. I find the following named territorial banks:

Bank of Michigan, chartered in 1817, capital $100,000.
Bank of Monroe, chartered in 1827, capital $100,000.
Bank of Pontiac, chartered in 1835, capital $100,000.
Bank of River Raisin, chartered in 1832, capital $100,000.
Bank of Washtenaw, chartered in 1835, capital $100,000.
Bank of Wisconsin, chartered in 1835, capital $100,000.
Bank of Erie and Kalamazoo, chartered in 1835, capital $100,000.
Bank of Merchants and Mechanics', chartered in 1835, capital $200,000.

All these banks failed mainly for want of a proper capital as compared with their circulation.

In January, 1837, Michigan was admitted into the Union as a State. That was especially an era of the wildest speculation. The pioneers of that time yet living relate vividly the oft-repeated story about excessive prices of wild or cultivated lands, and of lots in prospective villages and cities which now have little or nothing but the recorded plat in the office of the register of deeds to indicate their location. This speculation was no doubt largely owing to the great amount of paper money afloat in the State. It took a great deal of this currency to buy property, and so property was called high when it really was the money which had depreciated. In March, 1837 (Session Laws, p. 76), a general banking law was enacted, making the business free to all. Under this law was the early banking in Branch county, of which I treat in this paper. The general provisions of this law were fairly drawn, except that in the two important features which most concern the public,—security to the bill-holders, and a bona fide capital to secure the depositors or other creditors,—there were none adequate. The capital must be not less than $50,000, nor over $100,000. The issue could be two and one-half times the capital paid in; that is, a bank with $100,000 capital paid in could issue $250,000 in bills. The interest should not exceed seven per cent on discounts, and the banks were required to make semi-annual dividends, thus assuming the banks' ability to always do this. The security for payment of the banks' obligations were to be bonds and mortgages on real estate, to be held by the bank commissioner,—a State officer,—and the specie in the vaults of the corporation. Few banks had this specie, though the law required thirty per cent of the capital to be paid in in "legal money of the United States." These specie deposits in the banks, where they could be paid out or loaned at any time by the officers, or were liable to be stolen, furnished little reliable security. The fact was, the State bank commissioner whose duty it was to examine these banks once in three months at least, was often deceived, as one bank would inform another when the commissioner was coming, and the banks would borrow money to exhibit to the commissioner, and return it when he went away. In this manner the same specie would often serve for the use of several banks. Surely our financial pioneers were not wanting in skill to bank without money.

A good story is told of Ex-Governor Felch, to the effect that when he was State bank examiner, as he was going from one bank to another on his round trip he noticed a familiar look in the boxes containing the silver, and so after reaching the end of his route, though finding all the banks properly supplied with coin, he suddenly turned back on his course, reëxamined the banks, and found them without coin. The banks had by preconcerted arrangement kept the specie in boxes by special messenger ahead of the commissioner. Mr. Isaac Alden, an old, respected, and prominent resident of Coldwater, relates how when a young man, between Pontiac and Detroit he drove the team which carried the coin from bank to bank for the commissioner to examine.

This was the system of banking which was inaugurated in the early days of Michigan, the overthrow of which so shocked this State financially that many years elapsed before a recovery from its effects.

Early in 1837 there were in the State twenty banks with an aggregate capital of $3,915,000. In June, 1837, an act was passed authorizing the suspension of specie payments until May, 1838. I cannot ascertain the amount of the circulation of these banks and believe it cannot be determined. The circulation must have reached $6,000,000 or more—a very large amount considering the limited population of the State at that time, and the small demand for money then for commercial or manufacturing enterprises. Michigan, then, north of the old territorial road, was almost an unbroken wilderness, and the whole population of the State was not far from 100,000 to 150,000. The population decreased after the panic of 1837-8, and was then probably greater than in 1840. In 1830 there were only 31,639. The following shows the amount of capital of Michigan banks prior to the national banking system:

| Year. | Number. | Capital. | |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1835................ | 8 | $658,980 | Territorial government. |
| 1837................ | 9 | 1,400,000 | State government and general law. |
| 1838................ | 43 | 2,317,765 | Period of revulsion. |

| Year. | Number. | Capital. | |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1844................ | 3 | $202,650 | Period of liquidation. |
| 1849................ | 5 | 392,530 | Free banking. |
| 1859................ | 4 | 755,462 | Free banking. |
| 1862................ | 4 | 786,455 | Free banking. |

It was under the general banking law of 1837, as amended, that Branch county took never-to-be-forgotten lessons in financiering. The year 1837 is remarkable in the history of Michigan legislation. Besides the banking law there was the organization of the university, an act for a ship canal around St. Mary's Falls, and many matters of general interest. In local matters we find an act approved March 21, 1837, to establish the Adrian and Coldwater turnpike company—Dr. Hiram Alden and Mr. L. D. Crippen being named as two of the trustees. February 28 of that year the village of Coldwater was incorporated, the "free male inhabitants," being voters, to meet at the Central Exchange the first Monday of May to elect village officers. Also by act approved May 14, 1837, any balance of the $250 deposited with the State Treasurer in reference to the removal of the county seat from Branch, and not used, was to be returned to the depositors. These were days of great expectations. Branch county had a population of less than 4,000, and the village of Coldwater numbered about 500 souls, then as now principally of New York and New England people. Coldwater was ambitious. The men of business who planned and worked there were full of life and activity. There were then many men here of first-class business ability and sterling worth. Most of them have long since gone from the active work of life, and many of them are our pioneers to the unknown land over the river. The history of the old Coldwater bank illustrates the system of banking in this State in the early days and the operations under it. Some of the facts here given are from the public records, and the rest are from the lips of our oldest and most reliable residents, among whom I especially thank for assistance, Hon. E. G. Fuller, Mr. Philo H. Crippen, and Thomas Daugherty, each of whom were members of the redoubtable corporation here treated of. This bank was organized in December, 1837. The capital named was $100,000. I am unable to find the books of the bank, which no doubt would correct some of the figures here given. The following is a list of the original stockholders: Hanchett & Holbrook, Thomas Daugherty, Cross & Holbrook, William A. Kent, L. D. & P. H. Crippen, James H. Hanchett, Robert Baker, R. J. Champion, William Reynolds, H. Cowles, Ed. Sloan, B. Crippen, Lewis Goddard of Detroit, John J. Curtis, Lorin Marsh, John Cooley, Martin Olds, Harvey Warner, Lot Whitcomb, J. S. Ware, Enoch Jones, L. Taylor, and E. G. Fuller. The first board of directors were L. D. Crippen, P. H. Crippen, William H. Cross, Lorin Marsh, Thomas Daugherty, Morgan L. Collins, Walter W. Prentice, Daniel O. Hoyte, and Lewis Goddard. Mr. L. D. Crippen was president, George Nichols cashier, and a Mr. Mandel teller. The location of the bank was in a little one-story building on the north side of Chicago street, about where Mr. L. Sloman's or Mr. Flandermeyer's store now stands. There are only part of the organization papers on file in the county clerk's office. Among them I find most of the bonds and mortgages. The following is a copy of one of the bonds given to secure general creditors and bill-holders:

Know all men by these presents, that we, Lorenzo D. Crippen and Philo H. Crippen, of Coldwater, of the county of Branch, and State of Michigan, stockholders in the Bank of Coldwater, are held and firmly bound unto Robert Abbott, Auditor General of the State of Michigan, and his successors in office, for and in behalf of the people of said State, in the penal sum of five thousand four hundred dollars, lawful money of the United States of America, to be paid to the said Robert Abbott, Auditor General as aforesaid, or his successors in office, for which payment well and truly to be made we bind ourselves, our heirs, executors, and administrators, firmly by these presents. Sealed with our seals and dated the eighth day of December, in the year one thousand eight hundred and thirty-seven;

WHEREAS, An association has been formed under an act entitled "an act to organize and regulate banking associations," approved March 15, 1837, with a capital stock of one hundred thousand dollars;

AND WHEREAS, The said association is to be known and designated by the name of the "Bank of Coldwater," and the office for the transaction of the business of said bank is located at the village of Coldwater, in the county of Branch, in the State of Michigan;

AND WHEREAS, Lorenzo D. Crippen, Philo H. Crippen, Wm. H. Cross, Lorin Marsh, Thomas Daugherty, Morgan L. Collins, Walter W. Prentice, Daniel O. Hoyte, and Lewis Goddard have been duly elected the directors of the said Bank of Coldwater by the subscribers to the capital stock of said association in the mode prescribed in said act;

Now therefore, the condition of this obligation is such, that if the said Bank of Coldwater punctually pays on their becoming due all debts which may be contracted by said association or its agents and shall discharge all liabilities which may exist against it, and if the said Bank of Coldwater shall faithfully and fully redeem, at the time and in the manner prescribed by the act above referred to, all notes and obligations issued by it, then and in that case this obligation to be void, otherwise in full force and virtue. Executed the day and year aforesaid.

In presence of LORENZO D. CRIPPEN.
——— ——— PHILO H. CRIPPEN.
——— ———

The form of one of the bills reads: "No. 1968. Safety fund. Capital $100,000. Real estate pledged. Michigan, Bank of Coldwater promises to pay two dollars on demand to C. P. West or bearer. Coldwater, Nov. 6, 1837. (Signed) L. D. Crippen, Pres't, and Geo. Nichols, Cash." A left hand vignette represents a standing Indian in a wooded and rocky country. Washington's portrait is the right hand vignette. The bill is well executed. The Branch County Bank bill, unsigned, has a trotting horse vignette—a prophecy of the coming fast horses of Branch county, for which we have become so noted—and a right hand vignette represents a young farmer and wife among bundles of wheat; railroads and factories in the distance. And they were then certainly "in the distance." The career of the Coldwater Bank was not solely affected by the times. There were other and more internal causes that determined results in its case. While the Michigan banks in the great revulsion of 1837 and 1838, with their genuine or pretended capital of specie in vaults, stores, groceries, log houses or pretentious frame houses, with their circulation of some $6,000,000 in the hands of the people who had sold their wheat, corn, and pork for it, or who had worked for it, while these banks by reason largely of the fault of the system, were swept away by the great financial storm, never to appear again, the Coldwater Bank was doomed to suffer from internal disease as well as the other destructive causes named. The specie of the Coldwater bank was similar to that of others under the same system. It existed only on paper. It never saw the bank. The certificate of a Mr. Brown of Detroit, banker, showing the requisite specie in American half dollars was deposited in his bank to the credit of the Coldwater Bank did the work. This satisfied the examining officers, and then the certificate was returned to Mr. Brown, it having been loaned fraudulently— there having been no specie to represent it in his bank or elsewhere. Before the issue of bills a new election of directors was had, by which a majority of the directors were non-residents, and in the interest and control of Goddard and Ware. It had been agreed in the organization of the bank that Coldwater should have a majority of the directors and the Detroit parties a majority of the stock, and hence this new election was a violation of this arrangement. George Nichols removed here before he was elected director, and was in Goddard and Ware's interest, and being cashier gave the Detroit parties inside control. Goddard was the ruling spirit. It was the special business of Goddard and Ware to organize banks as they had done in other places, for the sake of what might be made from them. Goddard was a man about forty years of age, while most of the other directors were under thirty. He had established one bank at Brest, just north of Monroe on the lake, and he was going to make it a great commerical and maritime center. Under this regime and in the control of these men the bills of the Coldwater Bank were issued to the amount allowed by law, as I am informed, but could only tell positively from the books. In legitimate banking these bills would have been properly paid out in making loans. There was no specie in the vaults to redeem them. Goddard had another theory in regard to these new bills just fresh and crisp from the printers. He was a man of financial theories —too much so for our Coldwater merchants, farmers, doctors and lawyers. Like many another great man, he had a hobby, rode it well, and always towards home. His system was adapted to the times when, in theory at least, banks were required to redeem their bills at their own counters with specie. The modern plan now in vogue, which requires a national bank to redeem its notes, permitting the redemption in greenbacks (United States currency), the greenbacks to be redeemable in specie, and it made for the interest, consequently, of all national banks to keep the greenbacks on hand and away from the government redemption bureau—such a system in those days was as much an unconceived idea as then were the telegraph and telephone. It was then redemption or suspension. And as these banks—well named "wild cat"—had no specie, there must be some way of obtaining it. Lewis Goddard was equal to the emergency. "Great emergencies make great men." His system, which he promulgated to the pioneers of Branch county, especially directed to the directors of the bank, was as follows: He said it was not necessary for a bank to have specie of its own; a bank should create specie. The pioneer stockholders and directors living to-day will tell you how he bewildered and influenced them by his very logical reasoning on creating specie. "What," said he, "is a bank good for unless it is well enough conducted to create its own specie? In order to create specie of your own, you must exchange your circulation for it, and you must take your bills away from home so they will be slow in returning for redemption—taking away the specie you have created. The way to obtain this specie by exchange is: first get the bills of other banks with your bills, take these bills of the other banks to their counters, get the gold on them, and bring it home and put it in your own vaults. In this way you have created specie and have provided your bank with the material for redeeming your bills, and I can show you how to do it." A most remarkable plan, worthy of the times and the projector. Mr. L. D. Crippen was president of the bank. He was then, and was known for many years in Branch county as a gentleman of rare business abilities. His enterprise had much to do in building up Coldwater. He was then comparatively a young man, but saw the fallacy of Goddard's arguments and very strongly objected to Goddard's proposition, and especially objected to permitting him to put his system in practice. But Goddard and Ware had the majority of the directors, and the bank was consequently in their control. To prove his unlimited confidence in his plan, Goddard very generously offered to give the bank his valuable time to go on the pilgrimage to exchange bills for bills and bills for gold, thus creating specie. So he and his willing coadjutors had their way, and he was permitted to take away $20,000 to create specie with, and also $5,000 as a personal loan. This event happened in the winter or spring of 1838, most of it being taken the day the bank opened.

About forty-one years have gone into history since that eventful day to the Coldwater bank when its distinguished and able financier, Louis Goddard, undertook to show the directors and stockholders of that corporation how to create specie. Forty-one years since the day, in the early springtime, when Louis, with all due complaisance and financial bearing, gathered up the new, crisp bills, before the signatures of the cashier and president were scarcely dry, and graciously taking leave of officers and directors, quietly walked out of the little one-story wooden bank building with his $25,000,—one-fourth the nominal capital of the bank,—into the streets of the embryo village with its wooden stores, wooden hotels, and wooden residences, nodded benignly to chance acquaintances on the street, and took, no doubt from the "Central Exchange", the old-fashioned stage for the west, for the generous purpose of creating specie for his friends and the Coldwater bank.

About forty-one years have passed away since then, and the Coldwater bank and the Coldwater people who once knew him so well have known him no more forever. Longer than the Israelites wandered in the Wilderness has he been away from his Coldwater home. He never returned or sent home any of the bills he took away, payment in whole or in part for them, or any of the precious specie he had created. Of course he was an honest fellow, meant all right, and is no doubt now among some of the western tribes creating specie, and some day will return with all he has made and make everybody rich, especially the stockholders of the Coldwater bank. His friend Ware, of Detroit, believed implicitly in the system of his friend Goddard, and for the good of the young corporation also took away $25,000, of which $5,000 was a loan; the $20,000 to be used to create specie with. But he took it some little time after the first depletion. It had depreciated in value so that he returned $7,000 he could not pass, converting $18,000 for his own use. Each of the Detroit stockholders made a loan of $5,000 each, the night of the day the bank opened. So did a Mr. Collins of Toledo. He also took $2,000 to exchange for specie, which was the next week returned to the bank for redemption in the original package, he having paid his own debt with it. George Nichols took enough to build him a good house with,—the one owned many years by Mr. Walton, opposite the Presbyterian church, and lately remodeled by Mr. George Foster. Mr. Mandel, the teller, from Detroit, now clerk of the United States circuit court in that city, truly said, "They broke the bank the first night." Tradition says he was mad at the way the business was done. The young man was evidently unaccustomed to such banking, and not in sympathy with Goddard and Ware's operations. None of those who came to Coldwater to establish this bank remained as residents. Their financial ability of course ranked very high, but their manner of executing trusts was too unsatisfactory to the people to warrant a long residence.

Mr. L. D. Crippen was an active, hard-working officer of the bank. He was especially a worker. I knew him from childhood, for many years, and never heard of his taking recreation. He did all he could to save it from the ruinous acts of Goddard and his conspirators, but being in the minority he could not prevent what they did. Mr. Crippen was assisted in the effort to sustain the bank by his brother and partner, Philo H. Crippen, who still survives him. Philo was one of the directors. They struggled to keep the bank afloat, even becoming personally responsible to the amount of $20,000, by giving individual time drafts on New York to redeem bills, mortgaging their lands for the purpose. But notwithstanding all these efforts and personal sacrifices the bills of this bank necessarily depreciated by reason of its depletion. They were soon at fifty per cent discount. All efforts were unavailing, and the bank, sorely crippled by the fraud I have described, went rapidly down in the great financian storm that swept like a simoon over this whole country in 1837 and 1838, destroying all before it. In the summer of 1838 the bills were taken for twenty-five cents on the dollar,—at John J. Curtis' mill, for instance, for bran,—and in the fall of 1838 the bank failed entirely. Like all the other wild cat bank bills of that day they were never redeemed. We come across them sometimes, having been kept as mementoes of the days of wild cat banking. The Crippens, by reason of the liabilities assumed, had to go through bankruptcy, the mortgages giving real estate security for the redemption of the bills had been declared invalid by our supreme court, and so the financial bottom dropped out of the whole concern.

Besides the Coldwater bank there were three efforts to organize one in the village of Branch. The principal mover to form a bank at Branch was Mr. Joel Burlingame, then a resident and hotel-keeper of that village. He had most ambitious financial aspirations and moderate means. He was the father of the Hon. Anson Burlingame, since so well known as the Minister Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary of China, to the western kingdoms, empires, and republics. Anson was then a young man and living with his father. The following is a copy of one of the applications now on file in the county clerk's office of Branch county:

*To the Treasurer and Clerk of the County of Branch:*

We, the undersigned, freeholders and residents of the county of Branch and State of Michigan, do hereby make application for the formation and establishment of an association for transacting banking business, according to the provisions of an act of the Legislature of Michigan, approved March 15, 1837, to be called the "Branch County Bank," with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars. The office for the transaction of the business of said association to be located in the village of Branch, in the county of Branch aforesaid.

Branch, December 11, 1837.

J. BURLINGAME,
ELISHA WARREN,
LEONARD TAYLOR,
I. D. HORLEY,
MILTON BEESMER,
E. L. ROSE,
DAVID WATERMAN,
BENJ. OLMSTED,
FREDERICK HATTON,
ERASTUS THOMAS,
ELI THOMAS,
LIVINGSTON JONES,
JAS. BRAYMAN.

There is one application filed April 26, 1837, and one October 7, 1837, both for banks of $50,000 capital, Burlingame's name appearing in both, with some different names. I find nothing on file or on record in the county clerk's office besides these applications, but tradition informs me that no bank went into business in Branch, though in the case of the latter one the bills were ready for issue when the great panic came to all. And so Mr. Joel Burlingame, failing in the establishment of his bank, kept along for a while with his hotel, waiting for immortality to come to him through his son Anson, who was then in the drowsy days of spring-time idling his time away, often sleeping lazily for hours on the marsh haymow in the father's tavern barn, dreaming, maybe, of the far-off celestial empire. Dreaming of the ancient Cathay, so rich in its wealth and history, so crowded with its teeming millions,—this gorgeous east, that some day, when he was a man, he would represent to the civilized kingdoms, empires, and republics of the west, with his splendid retinue of titled and liveried attendants; and doing this on a salary of $50,000 in gold,—the same amount his father proposed to have the capital of his Branch county bank, in the little village of Branch,—a place no emperor of China ever heard or dreamed of. Surely, how wonderful is real life, how much more remarkable is fact than fiction, and how true it is that fiction is but a feeble imitation of the real.

The financial highway traveled by our Michigan pioneers, described in this paper, illustrates the weakness and dangers of the system described, and as a contrast brings out the strong points in the National banking system. To reach our present system, with its sound basis and stable currency, we have passed along a road which has been strewn with the ruins of corporations, business firms, and individuals. It is to be seriously hoped we shall not have to travel it again, and that by a more intelligent legislation we can say that, in this age Oxenstierna would be in error to say of us: "My son, it takes very little wisdom to govern mankind!"

---

## CALHOUN COUNTY.

### THE CITY OF BATTLE CREEK—ITS EARLY HISTORY, GROWTH, AND PRESENT CONDITION.

**From the Detroit Post and Tribune, June 16, 1878.**

In June, 1831, Sands McCamly and George Redfield viewed the spot where Battle Creek now stands, and liking the appearance of it decided to secure it to themselves. Arrived at the land office at White Pigeon they found that J. J. Garnsey and two government surveyors were ahead of them. The surveyors were bought off, and it was agreed that Garnsey should enter 837 acres where the city now stands, at the junction of the Kalamazoo river and the Battle creek; Sands McCamly and Daniel G. Garnsey to be allowed to buy of him, each a one-third interest. They were to meet in Detroit the next October and settle the matter, and then come on, each placing $2,000 in bank as a fund for founding and developing a city. Their plans all fell through; but this is given to show that Battle Creek was marked for cityhood before the white man disturbed its soil.

Meanwhile settlers began to locate in the county round about, and in 1831 Daniel, Jonathan, and Isaac Thomas, John Stewart and his four sons and two daughters, and Josiah Goddard and family settled in Goguac Prairie. In 1832 Samuel Convis, Moses Hall, Polydore Hudson, Roswell Crane, John Conway, and the Langley Brothers came into the present city limits; but Mr. Hudson was the only one who remained at that time, Messrs. Hall and Convis not bringing their families till the next year, and the others settling finally in other parts of the county. In 1833 Nathaniel Barney and the family of Ezra Convis and Nedebiah Angell came in, and in 1834 Judge Tolman W. Hall, Ezra Convis, Warren B. Shepard, Josiah Gilbert, Joseph Farnsworth, and Deacon David Salter. In 1835 there were important accessions to the little colony. Among those who came in that year are: William H. Coleman and David H. Daniels, the pioneer merchants; Rev. Robert Adams, the first Baptist preacher; John Marvin, the first blacksmith; and Judge Sands McCamly, who first began to develop the water power. The list need not be extended further. The history is that of all histories of early settlements in this section; the settlers' weapons were axes, which they weilded against the trees of the forest, and the foes with which they had the bitterest struggles were fever and ague. The Indians were friendly and even helpful, and no trouble with them is on record since the row which gave the name to the stream for which the city was christened. The story goes that in the winter of 1823-24, when the survey of the State, under Colonel John Mullett, was being made in this section the Indians did all they could to hinder the work. One day when the surveyors were at work in the woods two very large Indians attacked the two men left in charge of the camp with intent to rob them. A fight followed, in which one of the Indians snatched up Mullett's rifle and sent a ball from it through a coat worn by one of the whites. The Caucasian wrested the gun from the red man and broke his skull with it, and badly hurt his companion. When the rest of the party learned of the affair they thought it best to run away, and went to Detroit. General Cass settled the matter, and the survey was resumed in the spring. This scuffle took place at the junction of Battle creek and the Kalamazoo, and is the battle which gave the creek its name.

A more romantic story, but not so well authenticated, has it that, many generations ago, two strong tribes of Indians fought here all day long, until the limpid waters of the stream ran red, like frothing wine, and the Indians named it Waupokisco, "River of Battle," or "River of Blood." This is said to be confirmed by traditions of Canadian Indians.

### FIRST HOUSES.

The first log house in Battle Creek was built for Daniel Garnsey, by Sherman Cornings, of Toland Prairie, in September, 1831. The first frame house was built in the Gardner settlement in 1834, by John V. Henry, five miles from the city, and was moved in 1836 upon the spot where the American hotel now is. Judge T. W. Hall put up the first frame house built in the city in 1837, and it is now a part of the Bristol house. The first brick house was built in 1846, by Jonathan Hart, on Maple street. His son Thomas now lives in it.

### THE FIRST SCHOOL.

In 1834 the first school district was organized and a tax of $60 was levied to build a school-house. The house, a log one, was put up the same year on the corner of Main and East Canal streets. Warren B. Shepard was the first teacher. This house did duty three or four years, when a larger one was built on the present hay market at a cost of $500. From 1844 to 1850 there was more or less quarreling over the question of building greater houses for young ideas to shoot in. The liberals triumphed, and in 1850 a three-story brick, 40x60 feet, was erected at a cost of $6,000. This was displaced by the present building.

### THE FIRST CHURCH.

The Methodists were first on the ground here, and formed a class on Goguac Prairie in 1833. Daniel Thomas and wife, their son Aranthus, and their daughter Parthenia, and a nephew, Jonathan Thomas, were the members. The latter was the class-leader. This was disbanded the following year and another organizied by Rev. Thomas Wiley. In 1836 a class was formed in Battle Creek, which absorbed the Goguac class and became the permanent church. Asa Phelps got it together, and it consisted of himself and Daniel Clark and Thomas Hinchman, and their wives, Mrs. John Wentz and Miss Theodosia Clark. The church first held its services in the log school-house. Its first church was built in 1841. It was a small frame, and was sold to the colored Baptists in 1859, and is now occupied by them. The present church edifice was built in 1859.

### THE FIRST STORE

was opened by William H. Coleman in 1835, and was kept in a log house on the site of James L. Whitcomb's block, corner of Main and Jefferson streets. David H. Daniels, now of Galesburg, opened a store in the place about the same time, but soon removed to Verona.

### THE RAILROADS.

The Michigan Central railroad was completed to Battle Creek in December, 1845, and great was the rejoicing when the "Battle Creek" first woke the echoes in the city. This brings Battle Creek within 123 miles of Detroit, and 164 miles of Chicago by rail. For the year ending December 31, 1877, about 16,000,000 pounds of freight were shipped from this point, and for the preceding year the freight and passenger earnings of the road at this point were $40,569.

The Chicago and Lake Huron railroad company was formed by the consolidation of various companies instituted by the Peninsula railway, with the Port Huron and Lake Michigan railroad, in July, 1873. Ground was broken for this road in Battle Creek in the fall of 1866, and the first rail was laid July 11, 1869. By the summer of 1873 the road was built from Lansing to Valparaiso, Indiana, and the union with the Port Huron road completed it. It is 164 miles to Chicago, and 160 to Port Huron by this line. Over this line 6,718,270 pounds of freight were shipped in 1877.

### THE POSTOFFICE.

The postoffice was established in Battle Creek when Andrew Jackson issued a commission as postmaster to Polydore Hudson: and the office was located in Mr. Hudson's log house. Captain William Wallace is the present incumbent. His predecessors since Hudson were: Nathaniel Barney, Sands McCamly, John L. Holcomb, Alonzo Noble, two terms; Leon H. Stewart, William S. Pease, William M. Campbell, George Mead, Tollman W. Hall, Edward Van DeMark, Chandler Ford, James S. Upton, D. V. Bell.

### THE WATER POWER.

In 1835 Sands McCamly, who had settled in Marshall in 1832, when his scheme for founding Battle Creek failed, returned to improve the water power at this point, having gained control of it in 1834. He at once set about thirty men to work, building "the long race." Judge McCamly was a man of sound judgment and quick perception, and by seeing the advantage Battle Creek had in its water power, and developing it, did a great work for the city.

### THE MUNICIPAL GOVERNMENT.

The village of Battle Creek was platted in 1836, and chartered in 1850. William Brooks was its first president and Isaac C. Mott first clerk. It was incorporated as a city February 3, 1859, and the first city election was held in the ensuing April. E. W. Pendill was its first mayor, and Wm. F. Neale first recorder. The present city officers are: Mayor, James L. Whitcomb; recorder, Loyal C. Kellogg; city attorney, Chas. E. Thomas; marshall, Captain Geo. H. Rowell.

### THE PRESS.

In 1845 the people of Battle Creek raised a fund to secure the establishment of a newspaper in their midst. Leonard Stillson was sent to Rochester to buy material. There he met a young printer whom he induced to return with him to take charge of the printing of the paper; that young printer was Walter W. Woolnough, who has done such good work on the Battle Creek press and gained an enviable reputation as a journalist. The Western Citizen and Battle Creek Champion (what a name was there, our countrymen!) made its first appearance in July, 1845. It bore up under the name till August, 1846, when Mr. Woolnough and E. Dougherty changed its name to the Michigan Tribune, gave it whig politics, and kept it alive until February, 1848. The next summer the Signal of Liberty (Abolition) suspended at Ann Arbor and the proprietors of the late Tribune bought it and removed it to Battle Creek, retaining its editor, Erastus Hussey. It was soon burned out, and the city was paperless until the establishment of the Journal in 1851. In 1864 Pease & Lewis established the Constitutional Union, which lived a little more than two years. The present Michigan Tribune was founded upon the Union's remains by Mr. A. B. Tozer, now city editor of the Grand Rapids Times. Mr. Tozer did not know of the dead Tribune, but named his paper himself, intending to make it a literary journal with the State for its field. He had all the requisites for founding and conducting a successful literary paper—except the cash. Lacking that needful thing he had to surrender in a few months, and in August, 1870, C. N. Pease and Lyman Reade bought the paper. Mr. Woolnough bought Mr. Pease's interest and Mr. Wm. H. Bodine bought Mr. Reade's in 1871. Charles E. Barnes and George W. Buckley bought them out September 1, 1877, and now conduct the paper. It is independent in politics and everything else. No inland weekly in the State surpasses the Tribune in the fullness of its local news; and we do not know of any that equals it in the preparation and classification of matter in this most important department of country journalism. A new Campbell press has just been added to the machinery of the office.

The Battle Creek Weekly Journal was established in October, 1851, as a whig paper, by Gantt and Burton.* W. W. Woolnough bought it in February, 1852, and conducted it for eleven years. Charles E. Griffith bought it in 1863, and sold it to George Willard, the present proprietor, in November, 1867. In 1872 Mr. Willard bought new type and new presses, and July 2, of that year issued the first number of the Daily Journal, an afternoon sheet, which has made the most of the very limited field for daily journalism in Battle Creek.

A number of other newspaper ventures have been made in Battle Creek which need not be mentioned.

### THE FIRE DEPARTMENT.

Battle Creek prides itself on its fire department. It has two hose companies, a hook-and-ladder company, a hand-engine company, and one steam engine company.

The original Tempest No. 2, hand-engine company, was organized August 2, 1856, and contained many prominent citizens. John Nichols was its first foreman. Its best "boys" went into the war for the Union among the first and the company disbanded. It was reorganized March 1, 1872, and now claims to have the best hand-engine in Michigan, and the most perfectly manned. It took the first prize and State championship at the Kalamazoo tournament in 1874, and did the same thing at Jackson in 1875, where it did the best work on record for a hand-engine. It still holds the State championship. The other companies are Tempest hose No. 2, Union hose No. 1, Goguac hook and ladder, Union steam No. 1. The headquarters are in the City Hall. The companies are full and well disciplined.

### GENERAL VIEW OF THE CITY.

Nature has done a good thing for Battle Creek in the way of location; and the philosopher who was moved to tears at the thoughtful kindess of the Lord in running rivers by the great cities of the world could not fail to be touched at the liberal provision made for this little city by supplying it with two fine streams. They give a good water power and excellent drainage. The hills which surround it add to the healthfulness of the place as well as to the beauty of the landscape. The streets are broad and their cleanliness and beauty are notable. The finest residence street takes the name of Maple from Michigan's favorite shade tree, which lines both its sides. It is said that no two of its houses are at all alike, and the variety thus afforded adds greatly to the street's attractiveness. The residences of E. C. Nichols, J. M. Caldwell, David Shepard, John Nichols, J. M. Ward, C. Wakelee, V. P. Collier, T. B. Skinner, J. L. Whitcomb, and John F. Hinman are the finest on this street. Worthy of mention in other parts of the city are the houses of L. D. Dibble, Erastus Hussey, A. Lewis Clark, W. W. Larmour, A. C. Hamblin, Alonzo Noble, and Henry H. Brown.

The city schools are much above the average; and in the way of public libraries no city of its class in the State is so well supplied. The thoughtful will of Henry B. Denman ensures to the city a preëminence in this particular in the future.

Besides the churches, which are uniformly creditable edifices, the city has two public buildings deserving of notice. The City Hall was built by order of the council in 1868. It is on East Main street, built of brick, three stories high. The first floor is used as an engine-house; on the second are the recorder's court-room, council chamber, and marshal's office; while the third is given up to a large hall used for public meetings. It cost $12,000. The other building referred to is the handsome opera house. It was built in 1868 by A. C. Hamblin, at a cost of $40,000. The auditorium has a seating capacity of 1,200, and the whole building is well furnished for the purposes for which it is designed.

---

*Dr. Charles S. Burton Was born in Waterloo, N. Y., Sept. 23, 1823, and died in Hastings, Mich., Dec. 5, 1902.

The leading hotels are the Potter, Bristol, Waverly, and Arnold houses, which are as good as cities of this class are apt to furnish. The Potter house is a large four-story brick, on Main street, near the Michigan Central depot. It was built by Henry Potter in 1869, and is owned and managed by H. Potter & Sons. It enjoys a large patronage, sets an excellent table, and is in all respects a good place for Battle Creek's stranger guests to stop at.

The city has even a summer resort near at hand—at Goguac Lake, a mile and a half from the city. The lake is a beautiful sheet of water, two miles by one in its greatest length and breadth, and the scenery about it is very pleasant. Here are excellent fishing, fine facilities for boating, charming spots for picnics, and fascinating nooks for parties of two. It is much resorted to by Battle Creekers and residents of neighboring inland cities. There is a comfortable little hotel here and a good hall for dancing parties, while one of the hills is terraced and provided with seats for public gatherings. Fourth of July oratorical eagles are in the habit of taking their flights from this spot. There is some talk of connecting the city with the lake by a street railway line.

To sum the matter up: Battle Creek has been liberally dealt with by nature, and her citizens are enterprising and thrifty, and have made the most of these natural advantages. And these things have made it one of the most important manufacturing points in the State, and a very desirable place of residence. Some of its people claim for it a population of 8,000; and it really has about 7,500.

### THE SEVENTH DAY ADVENTISTS.

A most potent factor in the development of Battle Creek's prosperity was the location there of a large colony of "Seventh Day Adventists," which has grown until that city is now the world's headquarters of the sect. The sect dates its origin from the great Advent movement of 1840-4; the disappointment of many when the world's business was not wound up at the time appointed leading them to look into the matter more closely, and to the conclusion that no prophetic period of the Bible is given to reach to Christ's second advent. These disappointed and thoughtful ones founded the sect of Seventh Day Adventists. For the rest we submit herewith a sketch of their work in Battle Creek, prepared mainly by Ed. W. Freeman, of that city, to whom we are also indebted for aid in compiling material for other parts of this article.

The authorized head of the denomination is Elder James White, a sketch of whose life appears elsewhere. He established the Advent Review and Sabbath Herald, at Paris, Maine, in 1844, and after several removals set it up in Battle Creek in November, 1855. That city thus became the center of the Advent movement, greatly to its advantage morally and materially. The wants of the cause demanding an enlargement of operations and the employment of more capital in the publishing business, an act of the Legislature of Michigan, for the incorporation of associations for publishing purposes, was secured and approved in March, 1861. Under that act a legally incorporated association, under the name of "The Seventh Day Adventist Publishing Association," was organized in this city in the same year. They immediately erected a two-story brick building in the form of a Greek cross. In 1871 a second building of the same size and form was erected to meet the necessities of the increasing business. In 1873 a third building of the same kind was built for the same reason. These all stand side by side, opposite the city park, on the corner of Main and Washington streets. Another building, to be used for publication purposes, is now under contemplation, and will no doubt be erected this year. In the last named building is located the bindery, furnished with improved modern machinery for the manufacture of blank books and all branches and varieties of book-binding.

The different periodicals issued by the association have an aggregate monthly circulation of 40,000, and are as follows: The Advent Review and Sabbath Herald, weekly; Youths' Instructor, monthly; Health Reformer, monthly; Advent Tidende, Danish, monthly; Advent Herald, Swedish, monthly; College Record, quarterly. Books on the prophecies and other biblical subjects have been largely issued from the beginning, and have reached an aggregate of 200,000,000 pages. One hundred hands are regularly employed in the work, and the capital invested is $130,000. It is by all odds the most complete and largest publishing house in Michigan. A large amount of all kinds of job work is turned out which will compare favorably with any printing that is done in the country. Seven large power presses have been brought into requisition to do their printing. Electrotyping and stereotyping have lately been added, and in fact there is no kind of work that is done in a publishing house but what can be done by this association.

The organization of this sect is very plain and simple. A body of believers associate together, taking the name of Seventh Day Adventists, and attaching their names to a covenant simply to keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus Christ. The Bible is their only creed, but they have a creed nevertheless, as all churches have. Their distinctive principles are: that the seventh day (Saturday) is the Sabbath, to be kept holy; that at death we pass into a state of silence, inactivity, and entire unconsciousness, from which we are called at last by the trumpet of the archangel; the righteous rise first and reign with Christ a thousand years, when the wicked are called to life again and annihilated, becoming as if they had never been. They also believe that the second coming of Christ is to precede the millennium and that His second advent is near at hand, although they do not pretend to fix the date of His coming.

The number of members of this branch of God's church is estimated at about 30,000, with 500 churches and over 100 ordained ministers. None of the churches have pastors stationed with them. They maintain their worship without the aid of a preacher, only as one may occasionally visit them, leaving the ministers free to devote almost their whole time to carrying these views to those who have never heard them. During the summer months they carry forward their work by means of large tents.

Seventh Day Advents can now be found in Maine, New Hampshire, Massachusetts, Rhode Island, Connecticut, Vermont, New York, Pennsylvania, Ohio, Michigan, Indiana, Illinois, Wisconsin, Minnesota, Iowa, Nebraska, Missouri, Kentucky, Tennessee, Kansas, California, and Oregon. This sect thoroughly believes in health reform, as a person's moral and spiritual nature is largely affected by his physical condition. Their system, as at present advocated, banishes the use of tobacco in any and all its forms, none addicted to its use being received into the churches, except upon the promise and expectation of its immediate abandonment. The result is that, as a denomination, the sight and scent of tobacco are not found among them. They also exclude from their diet, pork, tea, and coffee. Rich and highly seasoned food is discarded. Grease and spice take a back seat in the culinary department. Meat of any kind is but rarely used. Two meals a day are considered preferable by most of them, those meals to consist of grains, fruits, and vegetables. Their health reform embraces not only their method of living, but the right means of recovering from sickness. Being impressed with a sense of the evils of the drug medication, the friends of this movement felt so great an interest in this matter that steps were taken in 1866 for the establishment of an institution to which persons might resort, not only to learn the principles of healthful living, but also for the recovery of health. A high and beautiful site of eight acres a short distance from the publishing buildings was purchased, buildings were added to those already on the ground, and the "Health Reform Institute" was opened for the reception of patients and boarders in Sepember, 1867, and a short time thereafter an act of the Michigan legislature was procured, and a legally incorporated association was formed. Increasing patronage demanded more facilities, so that in 1877 a medical and surgical sanitarium building was commenced and completed only a short time ago. This fine building constitutes the largest and most perfectly constructed edifice of its kind in America. The sanitarium building is on a mammoth scale. The dimensions of the main building are 150x50 feet, including the verandas. The rear extension, containing the bath-rooms, is 60x60 feet. The entire depth of the building through the middle is 137 feet. The building is of brick, four stories high, besides the basement. The fourth is in the Mansard roof. The style of architecture has a simplicity and massiveness quite rare in these days of ornate designs. Altogether the building presents an imposing appearance. Verandas seven feet wide, extend around the three stories of the entire building. The bakery and kitchen is located in the basement. The cooking is done by steam, and a dummy waiter elevates the prepared food to the dining-rooms above. The perfection of neatness, excellence, and dispatch is attained in the management and execution of business in the culinary quarters. Bread and crackers are made by machinery, and baked in one of the most improved rotary ovens.

On the first floor of the building are the parlors, library, dining-rooms, gymnasium, physician's office, and business office. The bath-rooms are 25x60 feet, and all of the appliances for over fifty different kinds of baths are brought into requisition.

The system of ventilation adopted in the institution is of the newest and best yet known. The building is heated by steam, which is generated by the boiler in the basement and distributed by means of pipes. The building has also all the modern improvements in regard to water supply. Every room is supplied with hot and cold water, and is thoroughly ventilated, so that patients can have the benefit of pure, fresh air.

Nothing has been overlooked in the construction of this sanitarium. All of the rooms are handsomely provided. The building, with its system of heating and ventilation, was planned by Dr. J. H. Kellogg, after a careful observation and study of all the principal establishments of the kind in the United States. The entire cost of the building, including the ornamentation of grounds, will reach fully $100,000. The institution is managed by a board of seven directors, of which Elder James White is president.

The corps of physicians are J. N. Kellogg, M. D., physician-in-chief; Dr.

W. J. Fairfield, Dr. W. B. Sprague, Miss Dr. Kate Linsday; and Miss Dr. P. M. Lamson, as assistants. The number of persons employed in the sanitarium is from seventy to eighty. No special method of treatment is either advocated or practiced. The institution is neither a "water-cure," a "mineral spring" establishment, nor anything of that sort. Its physicians follow the rational method of treatment, employing all remedial agencies which have been proven to be of real value in the treatment of diseases. The building will accomodate from 350 to 400 persons. Patients from all parts of the country have been treated here with beneficial results. The total number of invalids that have been treated in this institution since its formation has been 4,000; of which 500 have been treated during the past six months.

The sanitarium grounds occupy fifteen acres, a part of which is in vegetable gardens, vineyard and orchard. Seven beautiful cottages situated on the property are in the immediate vicinity of the main building. All of these are for the occupation of guests. A great deal of pains has been taken to beautify the grounds about the sanitarium. Beautiful gardens of flowers and ornamental shrubbery and evergreens can be seen. A fountain plays in front of the building. A natural grove of fruit trees extends along the whole street front of the sanitarium grounds. The institution is not only an honor to Battle Creek, but to the State.

The Health Reformer, which is published in the interest of the institution, has attained the largest circulation of any health journal in America.

The views taught by the Adventists have gone beyond the shores of our own land, as missionaries are now at work in various portions of Europe.

The free catalogue of the publications issued at their publishing house embraces thirteen different works in French, twenty-one in Danish, fifteen in Swedish, thirteen in German, one in Holland, and 200 in the English language.

The next largest headquarters of this religious sect is at Oakland, California, where they have a large publishing house.

Perhaps the most effective and eloquent minister in this denomination is Mrs. E. G. White, wife of the Elder. She has a voice of great power, and is said to be one of the most eloquent, clear, forcible female speakers in the United States. Elder Uriah Smith, who is the editor of the Advent Review and Herald, is also a preacher of considerable note.

The Adventists have a college here, also, the building being located just across the street from the sanitarium. The first movement toward founding it was made early in 1873, and it was incorporated May 16, 1874. The building, of brick, three stories high, 37x71, with two hall wings 17x37, was opened for use January 4, 1875, and can accommodate over 400 students. About 300 are now in attendance. The faculty consists of Elder James White, president; S. Brownsberger, principal; with six professors and six instructors. Instruction is given in the Hebrew, Swedish, and Danish languages, in addition to those ordinarily taught in colleges.

To their other enterprises they are about to add the manufacture of school-furniture, and are putting up large buildings for this purpose. They are, indeed, a moral, healthy, thrifty people, and a great blessing to the section in which they choose to make their abiding place. Their location in the western part of the city is all that could be desired, and their homes show every evidence of the possession of wealth and taste by their owners.

### *The Methodist Church,*

as the oldest in the city, has been treated of already. Its present church edifice—a neat brick—was built in 1859, and is worth $25,000; will seat 600 persons, and boasts a $4,000 organ, and has a parsonage on Bennett street. The society has 425 members, 325 children in the Sabbath school. Pastor, Rev. A. A. Knappen. Former pastors: Revs. Elijah Crane, Alvin Billings, Allen Staples, J. F. Davidson, Washington Jackson, Richard Lawrence, Peter Salein, Roswell Parker, Joseph Jennings, Rezin Sapp, Franklin Gage, E. H. Pilcher, O. Mason, M. B. Cramburn, Wm. Kelley, R. C. Crawford, Enoch Holstock, F. B. Bangs, Jacob Odell, N. S. Fassett, T. H. Jacokes, L. M. Earl, J. I. Buell, D. D. Gillett, E. H. Cooley, L. H. Pearce.

### *The Baptists*

organized in April, 1835, in the Gardner settlement in Emmett township, under the Rev. Ebenezer Loomis. The original members were Michael Spencer, Nedebiah Angell, Wm. Carter, Benjamin T. Dwinell, and their wives; Mrs. Horace Mott and four children, Mrs. Ezra Conviss, Sophia Southworth, Asa Lowell and his mother, Phebe Johnson. In 1849 they built their first church in Battle Creek, and in 1872 dedicated their present brick church, which cost $25,000. It has 351 members and 350 pupils in its Sunday-school. Rev. L. D. Palmer is the pastor. Former pastors: Revs. Mr. TenBroeck, Joseph Belcher, John Harris, — Harrington, Job Moxom, — Garfield, E. W. Lounsbury, C. H. James.

### *Congregational and Presbyterian.*

On March 26, 1836, a conference was held of parties adhering to the Congregational and Presbyterian views to form a union church, and this was the beginning of the present church over which Rev. Reed Stuart presides. Rev. Silas Woodbury of Kalamazoo and Rev. Wm. Jones of Allegan were present, and David H. Daniels, Tolman W. Hall, John S. Van Brunt, Moses Hall, and their wives were the charter members. John S. Van Brunt was elected deacon the next day. In 1842 they built a small frame church, which was burned in November, 1846. In 1847 they built a brick church, in which they still worship, having enlarged it in 1868 at a cost of $16,000. It seats 800 and is valued at $20,000. The church has 225 members, and 300 people are taught in its Sunday-school. Rev. Reed Stuart is the present pastor. The ministers who have officiated in it as pastors or stated supplies are Revs. Calvin Clark, S. M. S. Smith, Justin Marsh, Stephen Mason, H. Hyde, M. Knappen, R. B. Bement, Alex. Trotter, Joel Byington, S. D. Pitkin, Charles Jones, E. L. Davies, S. E. Wishard, W. C. Dickenson, H. H. Haloway.

### *The Episcopalians.*

The first Episcopal service in Battle Creek was celebrated by Rev. F. H. Cuming in 1839. Samuel McCamly, Samuel Buell, and Mrs. Barton were then the only Episcopalians in the place. In August, 1841, Rev. Montgomery Schuyler held services, and in December began to have them every alternate Sunday. April 21, 1842, Bishop McCoskry confirmed six persons in the Methodist church, and August 7, 1842, the parish of St. Thomas was organized. Rev. R. S. Adams became rector May 1, 1845, and under his administration a church was built. Work was begun on the present church—an elegant brick structure—in July, 1875. It cost $23,000; will seat 700. There are 120 communicants and 100 children in the Sunday-school. Rector, Rev. J. T. Magrath. Former rectors: Revs. R. G. Cox, R. S. Adams, H. Safford, D. B. Lyon, George Willard—from April 15, 1855, to April 9, 1860, when he left the church and entered the Congregational ministry—Augustus Bush, Charles Ritter, Josiah Phelps, George W. Wilson, I. E. Jackson.

### *Seventh-Day Adventists.*

The Adventists began to have meetings here in 1854, in a small frame house—16x24 feet—on Cass street. In 1857 they built a larger one—28x42. Their present church is a neat wooden building, corner of West Main and Washington streets; will seat 700 people; worth, perhaps, $2,500. They design building a new brick, on their present site, this season, at a cost of $25,000. They have 375 church members; Elder James White is pastor.

### *Spiritualists.*

The Spiritualists had meetings conducted by occasional trance speakers from 1848 to 1860, when they formed a legal organization. They are quite strong in this vicinity, and Battle Creek is a sort of spiritualistic headquarters for the State. Rev. J. M. Peebles, of Baltimore, Maryland, was called to take charge of the society's interests as its first pastor, and acted in that capacity seven years, until health failed him. They have a fine hall on Main street.

### *The Quakers*

used to be pretty well represented here and formed a meeting in 1837, and in 1843 built a meeting-house. Spiritualism, it is said, made serious inroads upon them, and in 1860 they sold their church to the Catholics. In 1871 they built a small house in their burying-ground here, where they have occasional preaching. They hold First day meetings regularly in private houses.

### *Other Churches.*

The African Methodists have a frame church on VanBuren street, worth $1,500. They have eighty-three members. Rev. John McSmith is pastor.

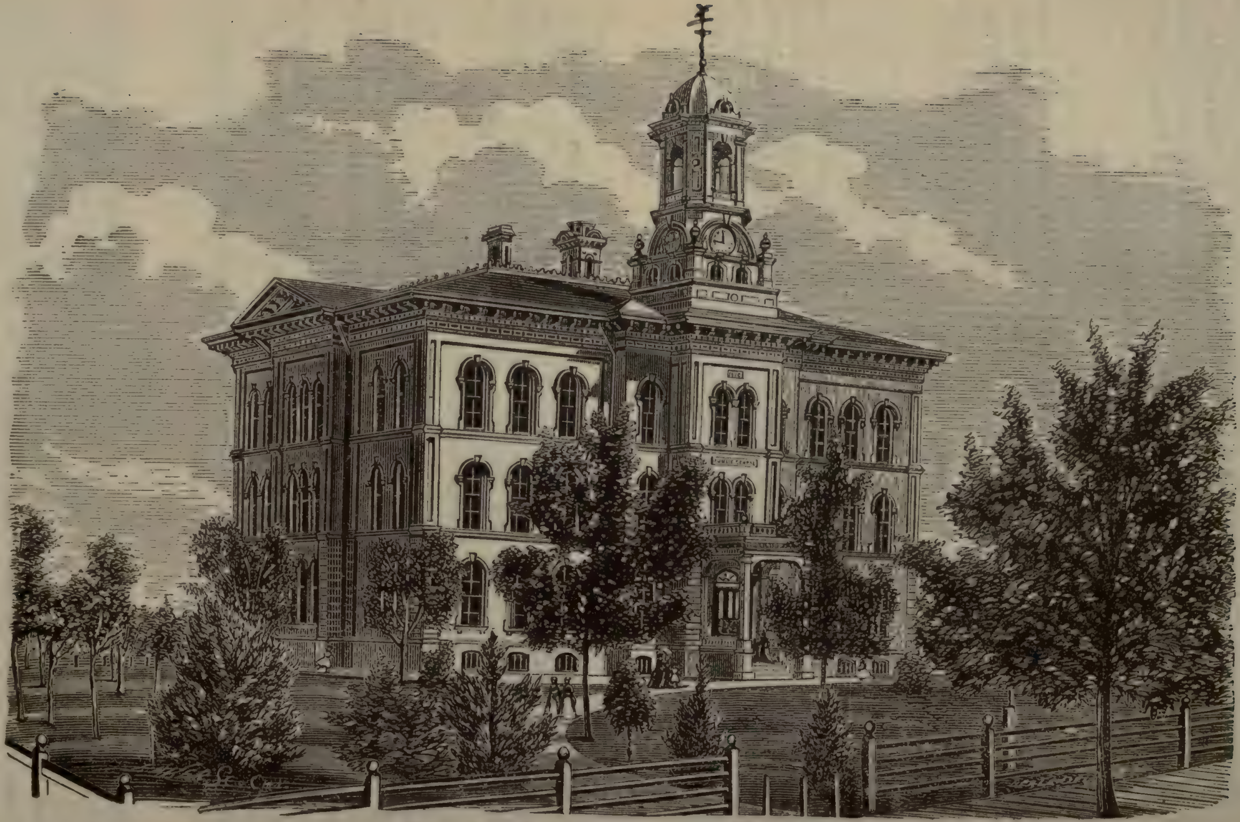
The Second Baptist church (colored) has forty-five members, and a $1,000 church. Rev. Daniel Robbins is pastor.

The Catholic church was organized in 1860; bought the little Quaker meeting-house and still occupies it; will build a brick church this summer. Rev. Father Brogger is pastor.

The Free Methodists and the Swedenborgians also have infant organizations here, but are homeless and pastorless.

## THE CITY SCHOOLS.

The Battle Creek central school building is one of the best in the State, and probably has no superior outside of Detroit. Ground was broken for it in March, 1870, and it was opened for school uses April 10, 1871. It is built of red brick and cut stone, and roofed with slate. It is 96½ feet wide by 119½ feet long, and it is 133 feet from the ground to the top of the vane. On the first floor are six primary school-rooms and the library; they are each 25x35 feet. The second floor is devoted to the "grammar" grades, and on it are seven school-rooms, the same size as below, and the superintendent's office. The high school is on the third floor. Here are two school-rooms seating 142,



BATTLE CREEK CENTRAL SCHOOL HOUSE.

three recitation rooms, a music room, and a museum. The building, as now arranged, will seat 864 pupils, and its seating capacity can be considerably increased. In the basement are the laboratory, the engine room, and two large play rooms. The building is warmed and ventilated by an almost perfect system of heating flues, which secure an entire change of air every eight or ten minutes, fresh air being drawn directly from the outside of the building, passing over the coils in the steam box in the basement, and then through the several rooms. In winter the rooms are heated entirely by this pure, warm air. This building should be visited by all committees having the ventilation of large school-houses in charge. The building is finished throughout, inside, in walnut, ash, and pine, oiled to show the natural color and grain of the wood; and there is no trace of paint in all its interior. The building cost $90,000.

Besides this there are three handsome ward school buildings in the city, which cost $50,000, and will seat 600 pupils.

There are 1,762 people of school age,—between five and twenty years,—in the district, of whom 1,525 are enrolled in the schools; average daily attendance, 878. The cash valuation of school property is $150,000; annual cost of superintendence and instruction, $11,945; incidental expenses, $3,863; average annual cost of education per pupil, $16.94. Professor I. L. Stone is employed as superintendent of schools, at a salary of $1,800; Professor L. C. Hull as principal of the high school, at $800; Helen B. Muir as preceptress of the high school, at $550; the other salaries range from $300 to $500. In all, twenty-seven teachers are employed, of whom twenty-five are women. The present organization of the school board is: President, E. C. Nichols; secretary, Chas. E. Thomas; treasurer, Myron H. Joy; trustees, William H. Neale, Zena Gould, A. H. Geddes.

Two points about the public schools here deserve special mention. There is a room set apart in the central school building for a museum, in which there is already a very fair collection, especially of geological specimens, which is growing daily. Some years ago Mr. Henry B. Denman bequeathed $10,000 to be invested for the support of a public school library. This library is located in the central building, and already contains over 3,000 volumes, while the Denman fund has been invested so as to yield an income of $1,000 a year. That the library is appreciated may be seen from the fact that over 20,000 volumes were circulated by it last year. It is open every afternoon; Miss Theresa A. French is librarian.

## SECRET SOCIETIES.

### *Free Masons.*

Freemasonry made its first appearance in organic form in Battle Creek January 14, 1847, when Battle Creek lodge No. 12 was instituted; E. Smith of Detroit, Grand Master. Charles Bartlett was its first master. Its lodge room is on the third floor of Skinner's block, and is pleasantly furnished. It now has 165 members; A. B. Powell is its present master; meets Tuesday evenings on or before the full moon.

Zabud Council No. 9 was organized January 8, 1860, Frank Darrow, T. I. G. P. It has 96 members; meets first Wednesday of each month; Wm. Brown, T. I. P.

Battle Creek Chapter No. 19 was organized January 14, 1858, T. C. Coffinberry, Grand H. Priest. L. D. Dibble was the first high priest. It has 87 members; meets Thursday evenings on or before the full moon.

### *Odd Fellows.*

The pioneer lodge of Odd Fellows—Battle Creek No. 29—was instituted under a dispensation November 11, 1847. It died in 1857, but rose again October 12, 1859, with L. H. Steward as N. G. It has its lodge room in Collier's hall, No. 10 East Main street, and has 100 members; Wm. Adams, N. G.; meets every Wednesday evening.

Sprague Encampment No. 23 was instituted May 27, 1867, and got its charter from the Grand Encampment January 15, 1867. It has 40 members; meets first and third Mondays in each month.

Friendship Lodge No. 1, Daughters of Rebekah, was instituted March 11, 1869. B. F. Fairchilds was its first N. G.; Mrs. Helen Bidwell, first V. G. It meets at Odd Fellows' hall the second and fourth Tuseday evenings of each month.

### *Other Secret Societies.*

Moguago Tribe No. 10, Independent Order of Red Men, was organized May 20, 1875. It was named for old John Moguago, a Pottowottomie* chief, who lived on the reservation in Athens. A. H. Brown was its first Sachem. Its wigwam is in the third story of No. 4 East Main street. It musters 32 warriors, and James H. Gridley is Sachem.

Hesperian Lodge No. 78, I. O. of G. T., was chartered January 30, 1860, and prospered for a while. In the fall of 1876 it fell asleep. Woke again in February, 1877, and soon had 200 members at work. But it is dead, or asleep, now; no man knoweth which.

A lodge of Knights of Honor has just been organized. It has 20 members. O. Waters is Dictator.

A lodge of the Ancient Order of United Workmen was organized this spring. It has 45 members, and Wm. H. Mason is Master Workman.

Gladstone Lodge No. 3, new order of Good Templars, was instituted a short time ago, and has 20 members.

## MISCELLANEOUS ORGANIZATIONS.

### *Ladies' Library Association.*

Black-marked among Michigan cities shall be that one—if we find such—in which no woman has ever bestirred herself to get a library founded. But the black mark is not for Battle Creek. Years ago some of its women, chief among whom were Mrs. A. E. Graves and Mrs. Erastus Hussey, set about this work, and March 12, 1864, the Ladies' Library Association was founded. Its first officers were: president, Mrs A. E. Graves; vice president, Mrs. Charles Merritt; secretary, Mrs. A. S. Havens; treasurer, Mrs. C. Cox. The society began with nothing. For support and growth it has given lectures, concerts, etc., and charges an annual fee of one dollar per member. It now has elegantly furnished rooms on South Jefferson street, over the Journal office, 1,600 volumes in its library, and about $1,000 in its treasury. It has 100 members and its library is open from 2 to 5 P. M., every Saturday. The present officers are: Mrs. George Howes, president; Mrs. B. F. Hinman, vice president; Mrs. J. F. Hinman, secretary; Mrs. A. E. Havens, treasurer; Mrs. A. E. Graves, librarian. Connected with it—or an outgrowth of it—is a prosperous ladies' literary club, with Mrs. A. E. Graves as president, and Miss Hattie M. Collier as secretary.

---

*The Century Dictionary spells this Pottowottomies.

### *Woman's Christian Temperance Union.*

A branch of the Woman's Christian Temperance Union was organized December 28, 1876. Mrs. L. H. Pearce was its first president. Its present officers are: president, Mrs. I. L. Stone; secretary, Miss Emma Morley; treasurer, Mrs. M. H. Joy. It has very handsome rooms—with the Reform Club—in Centennial hall, and is in a very prosperous condition. Number of members, 150; meets every Tuesday at 3 P. M.

A Young Woman's Christian Temperance Union was organized March 23, 1878, under the leadership of Miss Fannie McCartney. It has 250 members, and meets every Thursday afternoon. Its first officers still reign, and are: president, Miss Hattie Collier; secretary Miss Jessie Collier; treasurer, Miss Jennie Merrill.

### *The Choral Union*

is an organization in which Battle Creek takes special pride, and with good reason. It was organized June 2, 1877, "for the purpose of improvement in the knowledge and practice of music." One hundred and fifty names are now written on its rolls, and as many voices are heard at its concerts. Chas. Austin is president—and has been since the union was formed—and Marshall N. Cobb is musical director. The society is doing some very good work.

### *Young Men's Christian Association.*

A Young Men's Christian Association was formed February 17, 1867, and died in a few years. It was revived July 17, 1876, with E. Clapp as president, got 57 members, and fitted up a reading room. But there was no material to work on in Battle Creek—which is a very moral city—and the young men getting tired of going out to country school-houses to spread the gospel among the farmers, it died again about a year ago, and will probably stay dead until the city adds considerably to its population and wickedness.

### *Red Ribbons.*

When the scarlet temperance wave struck Battle Creek it found plenty of folks there who could be benefited by donning the red ribbon, with all that that implies; and plenty, too, to lend their aid in helping such into saner life. The Reform club now has over 800 members enrolled, and has fine rooms in Centennial hall, across the street from the opera house; P. H. Shipman is president.

### *Bands.*

Battle Creek has two cornet bands. The German cornet band was organized January 1, 1872, and has eight pieces. Gustav Brucher is leader.

"The Vibrators" is a younger organization, and is composed of young men employed in Nichols, Shepard & Co.'s threshing machine works. It musters twelve pieces. J. C. Bryce is leader.

### *Irish and German.*

The Hibernian Benevolent Society was organized January 11, 1871, with John Murphy as president. It has twenty members, and its object is set forth in its title.

The Germans have a Workingmen's Association, of which Leopold Werstein is president.

### *The Goguacs.*

The Goguac Boat Club was organized July 24, 1873, and the original constitution was signed by twenty-two young men. Charles A. Ward was its first president, and to him the club owes much of its success and its present prosperity. In the first two years of its life the club sustained a loss of $600 by the wreck of two four-oared shells in railroad accidents. But it soon replaced them and is now well equipped. It has just completed a handsome boat house at Goguac lake at a cost of $1,200. It is two stories high, twenty feet wide by sixty feet long, with a balcony running across its lake front. Here are stored the club's boats, which comprise a fine ten-oared pleasure barge built by La Chapelle, of Toledo; a coxswain four-oared shell, one four-oared shell without coxswain, one double and two single sculls, all made by Waters & Son, of Troy. It has a well-furnished club-room in the Reilly block on Main street, supplied with newspapers and magazines for the use of members, and connected with which is a very complete gymnasium. The property of the club is valued at $3,500; it is free of debt, and there is money in the treasury. It has twenty-three active members, with ninety-one on the retired and honorary lists. The present members are: Dr. T. W. Robertson, president, A. L. Clark vice president, Eugene Harbeck secretary and treasurer, Charles Brown captain, Charles H. Hinman, Scott Field, Frank Andrus, Charles Stebbins, Henry H. Hubbard, Walter Clark, Fred B. Parker, George C. Morrow, Ellis R. Smith, Will Hicks, Ed. Parker, N. A. Osgood, Gren Macard, E. W. Avery, Charles Harbeck, C. L. Livingstone, G. N. Westcott, George Rockwell.

Goguac lake is well adapted for the work of the club; the boys are thoroughly in earnest, work hard, and we venture to say will make a good record in the regattas of the future.

### *The Driving Park.*

A driving park association has been formed, with H. H. Brown as president, and W. F. Garfield as treasurer. The association has bought seventeen acres of ground in the southwestern part of the city, where it is making a half-mile track, and putting up buildings. It is expected to have the grounds and buildings in order by September, in time for the fall races. There is considerable fine horse stock in Battle Creek and vicinity, and to the love of horses which this betokens, the association owes its life. Among the prominent horse breedars are G. W. Allen, four miles east of the city, who has several Hambletonians, and is running into Mambrinos; W. H. Fonda, Henry Brown, J. W. Smith, and William Farnsworth, who have fine Mambrino stallions; Walter Cady whose favorite is the Champion, and David J. Downs, who has several excellent specimens of horseflesh.

### *Merchants and Manufacturers.*

One hears but little talk of hard times in Battle Creek. Its business men seem to think that they are blessed with as good success as comes to any in these days. We submit herewith an epitome of its business for the past year: For the year 1877 seven dry goods houses report their aggregate sales at $265,000. The leading dry goods firm is that of Austin & Hoffmaster, No. 15 Opera block, which was established in 1872. The firm occupies two floors of the block, 22 feet wide by 100 feet long with their dry goods, and a room 20 feet wide by 40 feet long with carpets. The members of the firm are Chas.

Austin and Peter Hoffmaster. Mr. Austin was formerly in business at Bedford, Calhoun county. He is one of Battle Creek's most prominent and useful citizens, has twice served the city as mayor, and is now president of the choral union. Mr. Hoffmaster hails from Kalamazoo, and is an excellent business man. Mr. Austin is financial manager of the house, while Mr. Hoffmaster has direct charge of the sales-rooms. They are very popular, and are doing a large and rapidly increasing business.

Seventeen groceries report aggregate annual sales of $255,000; two furniture dealers of $45,000; three saddle and harness dealers of $25,000; one dealer in hats and caps of $20,000; three merchant tailors of $30,000; two hardware and agricultural implements firms $160,000; seven boot and shoe houses of $88,000; seven dealers in agricultural implements of $60,000; three clothiers of $60,000; one dealer in paints and oils of $10,000; one tea, coffee, and spice house of $12,000; five druggists of $89,000; three tobacconists of $45,000; two booksellers and news dealers of $18,000; three jewelers of $75,000; one marble and granite dealer of $9,000. This gives an aggregate of seventy-three houses doing an annual business of $1,366,000. Three banks do business in the city; one National bank, one under the State law, and one private bank. Their aggregate capital and surplusages amount to $275,000.

As we have already hinted, Battle Creek is one of the leading manufacturing towns in the State. The most prominent manufacturing house in the city is that of Nichols, Shepard & Co., which makes the Vibrator threshing machines. It was begun in a small way by Nichols & Shepard, in 1848. The company now has a capital and surplus of nearly $1,000,000; has extensive brick workshops, which, with the grounds attached, cover ninety-seven acres; employs 300 men, to whom they pay $150,000 a year; and can turn out 1,500 machines annually.

The Upton manufacturing company makes the "Sweepstakes" and "Combination" threshers. It has a capital of $100,000; employs sixty men, and can turn out 250 machines a year.

The Battle Creek machinery company has a capital stock of $304,000 and employs thirty men. It manufactures several machines, chief among which is Boult's carving, paneling, dovetailing and moulding machine, invented by a member of the company. This is a very simple but most efficient machine, which does marvelously nice work, and has received any number of medals at State, international and other exhibitions.

Another manufacture which promises to become of great importance in Battle Creek is that of the automatic school seat, which was invented by Elder Uriah Smith, the well-known Adventist. The proprietor of the seat expects soon to have forty men at work. He is putting up a workshop 40x85 feet, two stories high, with a store-room 30x40 feet; in which will be placed a twenty-horse-power engine. The seats have been fully tested in the Battle Creek college and the public schools of that city. The improvement in this seat on other styles is in its folding principle, and in the formation of the seat and back of the desk for the comfort of the individual sitting. The seat folds up from the rear instead of the front. It is raised easily and without noise by the mere pressure of the limbs upon the front edge, in the act of rising. By sitting down upon its upper edge it readily and naturally lowers into its place without the aid of the hands. This manner of folding allows the seats to be placed three or four inches nearer than other seats, so that an erect position, instead of a stooping one, is made easy to the students,—a thing greatly to be desired.

A very strong support is given to the seat by means of two braces underneath, guarding against the danger of snapping. The seat presents as fine an appearance when folded as when down, the finished side being always out. The awkwardness caused in rising and sitting by the arrangement of other seats is avoided by this one, and the student can rise in his place at the desk without getting into the aisle. Three styles of seat are manufactured, and five different sizes for pupils of different ages.

There are three grist-mills in full operation with an aggregate capacity of 400 barrels a day; three carriage factories, which make $45,000 worth of goods yearly; three tobacco manufacturers, whose business is included in that of the merchants; two broom factories, which make $15,000 worth of brooms annually; five general builders, who employ from forty-five to sixty men; and several planing mills, furniture and agricultural implements factories, and others of minor importance.

## REPRESENTATIVE MEN.

### *Judge Graves.*

Judge Benjamin F. Graves was born in the town of Gates, Monroe county, N. Y., near the city of Rochester. He received a common school education, studied law with Addison Gardner, and was admitted to the bar in Rochester in 1841. In 1843 he removed to Battle Creek and entered upon the practice of law there. In the fall of 1856 he was elected Judge of the fifth circuit to succeed Judge Platt. The latter resigned and Judge Graves was appointed to fill the vacancy for the rest of his term, which expired in the spring. At that time the Supreme court had really no separate existence, but was composed of the circuit judges. By virtue of his appointment Judge Graves had a seat on the supreme bench and held two terms of court,—one at Adrian and one at Pontiac, under that arrangement. January 1, 1858, the supreme court, as at present constituted, began to be, with Martin, Manning, Christiancy, and Campbell as justices, and Judge Graves had only his circuit to attend to. The ability he showed in the management of that secured his reëlection at the end of his first term of six years. July 1, 1866, he resigned his position on account of ill health, and gave some time to rest and the regaining of strength. In the spring of 1867 he was elected to the supreme bench, and took his seat January 1, 1868. In 1874 he was elected for a second term unanimously, the democrats doing themselves the honor of placing his name on their ticket.

Judge Graves has a fine political mind, and has done his full share towards making for the Michigan supreme court the excellent reputation it has throughout the nation, and which secures for its decisions such thorough respect in the State. He has one of the finest legal libraries in the State, is credited with possessing considerable wealth, and in private is much esteemed.

### *Elder James White.*

This man, whose fame extends far beyond the boundaries of his own land, is worthy of more than passing notice. He was born in Palmyra, Maine, August 4, 1821. His father, Deacon John White, was a lineal descendant and namesake of John White, son of Peregrine White, who has a name in history as the first white child born in New England. Elder White's father possessed the knee-buckles worn by Peregrine's father in the Mayflower, and they are now held as an heir-loom by his nephew, Professor John White, of Harvard university. Elder White was deprived of many early educational advantages, but made the most of every opportunity he could find for acquiring knowledge, made rapid progress in his studies, and before he attained his majority had gained an enviable reputation as a teacher.

At the age of twenty-one Mr. White entered the ministry, enlisting his energies in the Second Advent movement, which was then exciting great interest. He met with great success in this work, but his labors were so severe that his health was seriously impaired and much suffering was entailed upon him in after years in consequence.

In 1846 he married Ellen G. Harmon, who has been a most effective co-worker with him in all he has undertaken.

In 1849 Mr. White began the work of publishing at Middletown, Connecticut, issuing a small denominational paper, Present Truth. In a year this was enlarged and issued at Paris, Maine, as The Advent Review and Sabbath Herald. The next year it was removed to Saratoga Springs, New York, and the year following to Rochester. In 1855 the office was removed to Battle Creek. He entered upon this branch of business with little encouragement from others, and for years gave to it his best energies. At first his printing was done in a job office, and the publisher carried the whole edition of his paper seven miles to the postoffice in a carpet sack. That publishing work has now so increased that it requires three large buildings to accommodate it; and the amount of mail sent out and received by it is such as to make Battle Creek the third city in postal importance in the State, although it has only a population of 7,500. And besides the Battle Creek interest, a large publishing house has been established at Oakland, California, and a fund of $10,000 raised to equip an office in Basle, Switzerland, where the work of publication has already begun, two papers being regularly issued, together with many works in German, French, and Italian. These publishing houses are owned by incorporated associations organized by Elder White, and managed by boards of trustees, of which he is president.

In addition to the labor involved in this, Mr. White has almost continuously performed the duties of a gospel minister, traveling through all parts of the United States, preaching and advancing the interests of the Seventh Day Adventists, of which he has always been the acknowledged head, having been president of their general conference since the first organization of the denomination, except when incapacitated by illness. He has also added to these labors those of author, having written numerous works on Biblical subjects, in addition to weekly editorial articles for many years. He was the prime mover in establishing the sanitarium at Battle Creek; and is practically the founder of the Battle Creek (Advent) College, of which he is president.

He is, in fact, the founder of the Seventh Day Adventists, and there is, probably, no other man in the country who wields so strong an influence,—amounting to almost unbounded power,—over so many people as he does. No sect, save the Catholics, is so thoroughly organized as these Adventists, and Elder White lays down the laws for them all; the people look to him as their chief counselor in all matters of importance. When failing health obliged him,—nearly twenty years ago,—to assume simple dietetic habits, and he made up his mind, from the effects on himself, that temperate living and a simple dietary greatly conduce to long and active life, he told his people so, and of the 30,000 persons in the denomination, not one is known to use alcoholic drinks or tobacco; the use of tea and coffee is almost wholly discarded; and the exclusion of pork and like gross kinds of food is almost an article of faith.

These things show him to be a man of remarkable power. His personal appearance is commanding and dignified. He has fine social talents which win him hosts of friends and add largely to his influence; remarkable acuteness of perception, a wonderful memory for facts and details, and a versatility of talent which enables him to adapt himself to men and circumstances with great facility; and foresight, caution, and sound judgment are predominant traits of his mental make-up.

The amount of labor which has devolved upon him has been too much at times, even for his large fund of vitality, and he has twice had apoplectic attacks, once of so severe a nature as to render necessary entire abstinence from work for two years. His simple habits and vigorous constitution have brought him through all right, and he has recovered full vigor in each case.

Elder White has several times been urged for public positions, but has always declined, holding it to be his duty to stick to his chosen work.

### *Hon. George Willard.*

The Hon. George Willard was born in Bolton, Vermont, March 20, 1824, and came to Battle Creek with his parents in 1836. He entered the ministry of the Episcopal church and was rector of St. Thomas' church, Battle Creek, many years. He left the Episcopal church and ministry, as elsewhere noted, and became a minister of the Congregational church, which office he finally left for the political arena. In 1856 he was elected a member of the State board of education, and served on it six years. He was elected a regent of the State university in 1867, and in that body was an earnest advocate of the admission of women to the university, and introduced the resolution on that point which was finally adopted. Mr. Willard was a member of the Michigan house of representatives in 1867, and of the constitutional convention of the same year, serving in both bodies as chairman of the committee on education. In 1872 he was elected to Congress, from the third district, on the republican ticket, and served two terms. He was delegate at large to the national republican convention in 1872. While in Congress he served on the silver commission, and united with the majority in the report favoring the remonetization of the original dollar. Mr. Willard is editor and proprietor of the Battle Creek Daily Journal, and now gives his personal attention to its management.

### *Hon. Victory P. Collier.*

The Hon. V. P. Collier was born in the town of Victor, Ontario county, N. Y., April 25, 1819. He received a common school education, which was supplemented by a short season at the Genesee Wesleyan Seminary at Lima, N. Y. In 1835 he clerked for a time in a country store in Monroe county, N. Y., and in the fall of the same year came with his parents to the vicinity of Battle Creek. He helped his father clear his farm until 1837, when the family removed to the village of Battle Creek, then containing between 200 and 300 inhabitants. In the fall of the same year the elder Collier located land in the township of Johnstown, Barry county, and moved his family to it. The son helped on the farm until 1847, when he returned to Battle Creek and engaged as clerk with H. Marsh & Co. Two years later he went into business with William Wallace, one of the firm for which he had been clerking, and carried on a general trade until failing health compelled him to retire in 1858. In 1861, his health being restored, he engaged in the hardware trade, in which he remained for many years. In 1842 Mr. Collier was elected sheriff of Barry county. In 1864 he was sent to the State senate from Calhoun county, and was re-elected in 1866; during both sessions he was chairman of the committee on finance. In the fall of 1870 he was elected State treasurer, and served two terms. Mr. Collier is a man of solid abilities and sterling character, and has discharged the duties of every position he has been called to fill with credit to himself and to the entire satisfaction of the people. To-day he is justly ranked among the first citizens of the State.

## CORRESPONDENCE OF COLONEL CHARLES DICKEY WITH VARIOUS PERSONS WITH REGARD TO THE HISTORY OF THE INDIANS WHO FORMERLY LIVED IN CALHOUN COUNTY.

Colonel Charles Dickey, of Marshall, a short time previous to his death, was collecting material for a history of the Indians who formerly had their home in Calhoun county, and for this purpose corresponded with parties who he thought could give him some information on the subject. His death occurring in January, 1879, prevented him from carrying out his plan. He had collected much information on the subject, and a part of this correspondence, found among his papers after his decease, is here given; also in connection therewith is a paper by Mr. B. O. Williams, of Owosso, relating thereto:

*Marshall, December 26th, 1878.*

*Colonel Geo. W. Lee:*

Dear Sir,—Pardon me for making you a little more trouble, for I wish to know if you can find any record of the removal of the Indians west, first in 1837, and then in 1840 some 250 more. The six families of Pamptopes, now at Athens, were picked up here in 1844. Charles G. Hammond secured an amount of about $2,000 to pay for the land, houses, barn and school-house and a perpetual annuity of $400.

General Brady removed both lots, as I am informed, and I want to know how many went in 1837. Many of those who roamed around here early went to Canada, and there died; and it is said that "Leather-nose" and his band ran to Canada, and that he was drowned in the Detroit river.

### LETTER OF GEO. W. LEE.

Mackinac Agency,
*Ypsilanti, Mich.,*
*December 26th, 1878.*

*Hon. Chas. Dickey:*

My Dear Sir,—Your favor of this date is at hand, asking for information as to the history of certain Indians and tribes who were formerly resident in Calhoun county and vicinity. You are undoubtedly under the impression that this office should hold, among its archives, the evidence sought; but I am sorry to inform you that there is nothing beyond the facts connected with the treaties made at various times, which has any bearing upon the subject. Among the contracting parties I do not recognize any of the names you mention. This office has no record of which I am cognizant, of any of those named; or, indeed, any of the individual transactions, dealing always with tribes. It is a matter of serious misfortune, in a historical view of the case, that such negligence has been tolerated, which would have thrown so much interesting light upon the history of a race of people who are known to-day to so few of our citizens, and who wielded, a hundred years ago, so powerful an influence in all this part of the country. In early times, so far as my knowledge extends, or as the records of this office reveal, and from 1795, Wayne's treaty, to 1833, the Indians of this region were known as the United Nation of the Ottawas, Shiawassee, Chippewas, and Pottawottomies,* occupying a large portion of the States of Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Michigan, and Wisconsin. At various times, from 1795 to and including 1833, and more particularly in 1808, 1809, 1818, 1821, 1826, 1828, 1829, 1832, and 1833, the Government purchased over 25,000,000 acres of these tribes, stipulating to pay for the same certain sums of money annually and forever.

Many of these treaties have been shamefully violated by the conditions of subsequent treaties, until finally, in 1832 and 1833, they made by strategy a treaty by which all the rich reservations in the valley of the St. Jo. and Nottawasepe, and other adjacent neighborhoods, were swept away. These treaties were made at Fort Dearborn, now Chicago. Old Pokagon and some of the Michigan chiefs would not become parties to this transaction, and never became parties to the compact, although all the persuasions of whisky and even assassination were brought into requisition. Yet these poor people were robbed of their land, and every acre they now claim, has been bought by the pittance which they have obtained of the price of their more than princely heritage, to which they were the rightful owners. The little band of Pamptopes, at Athens in your county, known as the Pottawottomies of Huron, now receive of their perpetual annuity $400—barely the interest of the price to-day of a single quarter section.

Of old Pokagon's band numbering about 350 souls, some of them live at Pokagon; others are scattered in various directions, some in Indiana, near South Bend, others in Oceana county and Allegan.

I think if you could see John Pamptepe of Athens or D. K. Foster of Bradley in Allegan county, you might learn something of the persons you speak of. I have no knowledge of the paymaster named Clark, of whom you speak, as there is no other paymaster in this agency except myself. If I can obtain any information from research, or in any other way, which will be of service to you, I will most cheerfully communicate it. The trouble is, that to-day we see with our own eyes and hear with our own ears the passing events, and forget the day will soon arrive when the record of these would be precious mementoes to those who will follow in our footsteps.

I am, my dear sir, most truly yours,

GEO. W. LEE.

## LETTER OF N. P. HOBART.

*Athens, December 23, 1878.*

*Hon. Charles Dickey, Marshall:*

DEAR SIR,—Yours of the eighth was duly received, in which you ask me to give you some information in regard to the Indians that once lived in this town, etc.

In 1840 General Brady removed all they could get of the Indians (the Huron band of the Pottowottomies) west of the Missouri river, in what is now Miami county, Kansas, where they remained a few years, and were then removed onto a reserve northwest of Topeka, on the Kansas river and east of the Big Blue; then, in the spring of 1876, they were removed south to the Indian

---

* The Century Dictionary.

Territory, between the North Fork and the Canadian river, where such as are alive and their descendants now are.

The general had some trouble in getting them together, though he finally succeeded in collecting about 250, more or less, at my house, from which place they commenced their journey west. Some, however, succeeded in escaping to Canada before they left the State. Among those who died in Canada was Checum-quassy, Ne-aw-ta-naw, Baw-bees, Wap-ot-asko, and Ne-au-to-beer-saw, otherwise called Leather-nose, from the fact of having his nose bitten off in a fight, and had a false nose made of leather. He was a quarrelsome, ugly fellow. I was well acquainted with all of them, and could talk with them. He was drowned crossing the Detroit river from Canada in a canoe. Cho-chack was captured by a soldier just before he reached the river at Detroit and brought back, and went west with the others. John Moguago, the head man or chief, with his half brother, Pamp-to-pee, and their families, escaped from the soldiers at Skunk grove, in Illinois, and after a while made their way back here. Marcho-no-qua, John's sister, with her four children, went west with the others, and came back with Ben Holcomb the next year. Jacksone or Whetstone, Te-tese and Seba-qua, together with their families returned to this town in less than two years after their removal west, in all about forty souls.

About the year 1844 we got on the track of some back pay (if you please to call it so) belonging to the heirs of old Chief Moguago (John's father), who was killed on his way home from Chicago to Nottawa Sepee reserve, where he lived, because he would not sign the treaty held at Chicago in 1831, to sell the Nottawa Sepee reserve, which is ten miles square, including a large part of Nottawa prairie. Charles G. Hammond went to Washington and succeeded in getting something over $2,000 and an annuity of $400 for them, which is but a moiety of what is equitably, and I think, legally their right. They (the band) then appointed myself and Thomas L. Acker their agents, to disburse the money for them, and with it their land was bought, houses, barn and school-house built, cattle, farming tools, etc., bought. I think they have received their annuity regularly up to this time, and will continue to so long as they remain a band. John Moguago, Pamp-to-pee, Whetstone Te-tese, Se-ba-qua and Marcho-no-qua, the heads of the six families who had houses built and shared the land, are all dead, and their children and heirs occupy the farms. Moguago had no son to succeed him as chief, and a son of his half brother, Pamp-to-pee, is now the head man of the band. His name is Phineas Pamp-to-pee; he is a good, honest man. There are now about forty on the farm—men, women and children; the younger ones attend school, and most of them can read, write, and do their own business.

Truly yours, N. P. HOBART.

### STATEMENT OF CORNELIUS OSBORN.

Cornelius Osborn, of Mason Valley, Nevada, says that about thirty years ago he knew an Indian chief called "Leather-nose;" he, with a small band of Indians, ran to Canada when the Indians of this section were removed west. Mr. Osborn gives it as his recollection that Leather-nose and an Indian trader of Coldwater whose name was Marsh got the payment due the Indians from the government, and it is said they never paid it over; and when the Indians were removed, Marsh, who had the contract for the removal, let Leather-nose and his followers go to Canada for presents before going west, and they failed to return in time to go; and for many years Leather-nose, with his little band of say forty, were seen at several places in our county in search of Fech and Barnes. Leather-nose was a terror to all the children of the country; he is said to have killed his son's squaw, a beautiful person, for stealing away his keg of whisky when he with some of his comrades were having a drunken row, and that she took the keg of whisky to Osborn's and then went back to the tent near Mr. Holt's house on the bank of Nottawa lake, Calhoun county, Mich., and in the night old Leather-nose came up, and finding the daughter asleep, cut her head off at a single blow, and her remains were buried near the old home of Mr. Holt near Nottawa lake, in Tekonsha township, Calhoun county. Tekonsha was an old Indian town of two or three hundred Indians.

### STATEMENT OF ANDREW CUTLER.

Andrew Cutler of Parma says he once saw 300 Indians at Jackson on their way to Canada for presents. In 1843 he spent some time with the Athens Indians, where he knew Ben. Holcomb, a Connecticut Yankee, who cohabited with a noted squaw called Marchia, who had two sons by an Indian before she knew Holcomb. Marchia was a beautiful woman of the tribe, and she still lives: also her two sons. The name of the eldest is Mandoka, and the name of the other is Muckie, and he is now acting as chief of the others at the settlement. Marchia has also a daughter named Ponseekman; an attractive, cultivated, and beautiful woman of her tribe. Marchia herself was a very attractive squaw. She was a doctress, and had the reputation of making many cures by laying on of hands; and it is said that her magnetism was too powerful for even Holcomb to resist. We do not learn that Marchia had any children by Holcomb; they lived together twelve or fourteen years.

### LETTER OF B. O. WILLIAMS.

*City of Lansing, Feb. 6, 1879.*

*To Mrs. Harriet A. Tenney, Secretary of the State Pioneer Society:*

At the request of the committee of historians I have looked over the notes and memoranda of the late Hon. Charles Dickey, gathered by him in order to preserve and perpetuate a record of some of the bands of the Pottawottomie Indians living in the southwestern portion of our State. In a letter of N. P. Hobart, of December 23, 1878, on second page, I find the following words: "Cho-chuck was captured by a soldier just before he reached the river Detroit, and brought back, and went west with others." This recalls to me what occurred at that time at Owosso, in Shiawassee county. One Sunday morning in the fall of 1840 I met on our village plat General Brady of the United States army, who had followed a large number of those Indians from their homes through the woods with a company of United States troops to Chesaning in Saginaw county, where he had captured some forty or fifty men, women, and children the day before, and his troops came near having a fight as they came very suddenly upon the encampment. These Indians were secured in a log cabin erected for the hard cider campaign of that year. We ascertained that the Indian that General Brady was most anxious to secure, and who, from my present recollection, was known and called by the General and the captured Indians their head chief, by name of Mack-e-moot, had started for Canada two days before, taking with him three men, all armed, the chief with a bow and quiver of arrows with barbed iron points. The main body of the Indians were encamped near a large cranberry marsh about eight miles northwest of Owosso, and had been gathering berries and selling both at Owosso and Saginaw for over a week. General Brady agreed to pay my brother A. L. Williams and Mr. Ira Stimpson $200 if they would capture the chief and deliver him at Owosso during the week. They immediately started in pursuit, overtaking the four Indians and capturing them one and one-half miles east of Pontiac, being aided by the sheriff of Oakland county, Mr. Schuyler Hodges, and my brother, Hon. G. D. Williams of Saginaw, who by chance was at Pontiac. The capture was an entire surprise to the Indians, and the chief had declared before leaving his band that he would never be taken alive. He was securely manacled and his legs bound by express request of the general, and the four men placed in a wagon and rapidly driven to Owosso, guarded by my brother and his assistant, and delivered to General Brady at the log cabin. Their capture and return to custody induced the chief to send a runner to the band in the woods, who soon came in, and the whole started under escort of the troops for Kansas *via* their point of escape. General Brady felt very indignant that they had broken their promise to not make an attempt at escaping to Canada, and had the chief Muck-e-moot closely guarded upon a wagon.

Query. Is not this the same Indian called by Mr. Hobart Cho-chuck? Nothing is more common than for Indians, and particularly chiefs, to have two and even three names. I have written this very hastily at Lansing, hoping it may aid the committee in compiling the notes and memoranda of Mr. Dickey.

Very respectfully yours,

B. O. WILLIAMS.

---

## MEMORIAL REPORT.

BY DR. O. C. COMSTOCK, OF MARSHALL.

Read February 5th, 1879.

### MEMOIR OF COLONEL CHARLES DICKEY.

Mr. President:—Another year has been added to the cycle of time since we assembled to greet each other, and to renew our efforts to rescue from utter forgetfulness the pioneer history of our glorious State. Within that period that seems so short, events big with interests that reach beyond the narrow bounds of time, have been seen and felt in every county, every town, and in many of the families of this State. This desolation has not been confined to age or sex. As is natural, and to be expected, the old pioneers are growing so perceptibly less in the number usually attending our annual meetings, as to mark a special feature in our gatherings. Look around you, Mr. President and gentlemen, and note the absence of some, aye many, who have graced the annual meeting ever since our organization, and who are not among us to-day, nor among the living. Some hearts are in sadness, and a circle of friends, large or small, lament death's doings, and "the mourners go about the streets." Great changes are taking place in society at large, in our own cherished society, and in ourselves. More than forty years ago, a young gentleman of manly form and grace came into my place of business, to enroll me among the militia of Calhoun county. I was pleasantly impressed, and from thence forward mutual confidence and regard was established between us. Cordiality was the characteristic of my friend, and cold and suspicious must be the spirit that did not spontaneously reciprocate. When such a man dies, both private and public grief is united in one common sorrow. Men of high social virtues and endowments, and who chance to have held important political trusts are more generally known, and their loss more generally and more deeply deplored, than the death of those in the humbler walks of life. Such a man, and such an influence which was wisely and widely exerted, was

COLONEL CHAS. DICKEY,

whose memoir (though all unworthy of the man) I now offer to the State Pioneer Society, of which the deceased was a vice president.

Hon. Charles Dickey died at his residence in the city of Marshall, on Monday morning, January 13th, 1879, in the sixty-sixth year of his age. Col. Dickey was born in Londonderry, Rockingham county, New Hampshire, April 3d, 1813. His father removed to the town of York, Livingston county, New York, in 1818. At the Moscow academy in this county Charles Dickey graduated with the highest honors. The rudiments of a good English education were thoroughly inculcated, and undersood by him; and, although his life has been a remarkably busy one, he has found time to increase and perfect himself in the indispensable primary studies, without which good scholarship is never attained. He was a ready and pleasant writer, and possessed high and agreeable colloquial powers. He settled in Marshall in March, 1836, and took high rank at once with the prominent men of that embryo city. His title of Colonel, by which he was generally known throughout the State, was conferred upon him by our first governor, Stevens T. Mason, in November, 1836, who ordered him to enroll the militia of the county of Calhoun. In 1842 he was elected sheriff of the county, which office he very creditably filled for four successive years. In 1848 he was elected to the senate of this State, where he was continued for four years. He was subsequently elected a representative, and was speaker *pro tem.* during his entire term, with the exception of some four weeks when he was speaker *de facto.* He also served as chairman of the important committee of ways and means. He held the office of United States marshal at the time of the civil war, when the most bitter animosities were engendered; but the Colonel sustained throughout his term of six years the reputation of a discreet and courteous law officer. Upon retiring from this office he was presented with an elegant and massive chain, to which was attached a silver plate bearing the following inscription: "Presented to Charles Dickey by the attachés of the U. S. Marshal's office, June 2, 1863." Upon the death of Hon. Eden F. Henderson, he was appointed probate judge of Calhoun county. He was continued in that office until the time of his death. Thus, it will be seen the deceased has been in public life, with an occasional intermission, ever since 1836 when he came into the county. A retrospect of these years of office-holding reflects the highest credit upon Col. Dickey. No malfeasance in office has ever shadowed his pure and conscientious public life. In the discharge of the delicate duties of probate judge, he was eminently successful. Nature seemed to have given him for a purpose his kindly and sympathizing heart, which brought him at once into harmony with the bereaved wife and fatherless children. It may be truly said of him that he bestowed a more painstaking attention to those who were thus made his wards, than in the prosecution of his own private business; for his heart and soul were joined with his judgment in caring for them. Colonel Dickey had a commanding presence, a genial confidence-inspiring countenance, and in the private walks of life was trusted and loved by all who had the happiness of knowing him, as an uncorrupt citizen and neighbor. His death makes a void not only in the desolate hearts of his sorrowing wife and his large and interesting family, which can never be filled, but in the community so long and steadfastly attached to him. The suffering poor will never forget his generous benefactions or cease to mourn his loss. The front porch of the court-house was heavily draped in the habiliments of mourning for many days, and until his able and very acceptable successor was appointed. This was intended by the county officers as an expression of their own bereavement and sorrow, but it was also a fitting and constant reminder to the general public of its great and irreparable loss.

The executive committee of the State Agricultural Society, in session at Detroit, January 15, 1879, passed the following resolution in reference to the death of Colonel Dickey, which is hereunto attached, together with a few remarks made by Colonel Shoemaker and Mr. C. W. Green, as appear in the Detroit Post and Tribune of above date:

Colonel M. Shoemaker, from the special committee to whom was referred the matter of the death of Colonel Charles Dickey, a former president of the society, presented the following:

The executive committee of the Michigan State Agricultural Society have heard with deep regret of the death of Colonel Charles Dickey, an ex-president of this society, which occurred on the 12th inst. at his residence in Marshall. The record of the life of Colonel Dickey is one of which his family, the community in which he lived, and the people of the State of Michigan may well be proud. One of the pioneers of the State, he has always occupied a prominent place in its history. He has filled many offices of honor and trust in his county, in the State, and under the general government, always with credit to himself and to the entire satisfaction of his constituents.

At an early day a member of the senate of the State of Michigan, he discharged the duties of his place in a manner calculated to promote the best interests of the State.

As president of this society in 1858 and 1859, and as one of the executive committee of which he has since been a member, he identified himself with the agricultural interest of the State, and his counsel was of great value, as it was always dictated by a desire to do the greatest good and governed by a comprehensive knowledge of the relations existing between the society and the people, as well as of the measures best adapted to promote the interests of both.

Colonel Dickey was always a leading citizen of his own county, and often chosen by its people to fill offices of a local nature. He enjoyed, as he deserved, the fullest confidence of the entire community. Genial in his manners, amiable in his disposition, unbounded in his hospitality, he was as universal a favorite in society as he was beloved in the family circle.

Called from among us full of years and of honors, we feel that we but express the general sense of his merits when we say of him that he was "an honest man, the noblest work of God."

*Resolved*, That this society, in giving expression to their sense of the high character of Colonel Charles Dickey, and of the great loss caused by his death, feel that the good he has done will live after him, and that his example in all the walks of life will be of great value to the community in which he lived, as well as his best epitaph.

In presenting the report, Colonel Shoemaker paid an eloquent and touching tribute of respect to Colonel Dickey, an old and intimate personal friend with whom he had been associated in this society for many years.

Remarks of an eulogistic character, prompted by feelings of warm personal friendship, were also made by Philo Parsons and Henry Fralick.

Mr. Chauncey W. Greene of Oakland county, one of the pioneers of the society, and always its staunch friend and supporter, spoke substantially as follows:

Mr. President and Gentlemen:—I fully subscribe to and indorse every word contained in the resolutions just presented, and allow me to add my testimony as to his generous impulses, his social, genial nature, and unfaltering integrity. For a quarter of a century I have been intimately associated with deceased, both in a private and official capacity, and in no colleague have I found a more attentive, devoted, self-sacrificing spirit. In his departure, it may truly be said that we all feel the loss of a worthy and dear friend; that a vacancy has occurred in our ranks that will long remind us of his great usefulness and worth, of his labors in promoting the interests of this organization; and as a pioneer, the interests of his adopted State as well. All these are monuments which will preserve his memory sacred in the hearts of his fellow citizens.

The report was adopted and the secretary was instructed to forward a copy to the family of Colonel Dickey.

## MEMOIR OF DEACON ARZA LEWIS.

Died, at his home in Marshall, on the morning of January 17, 1879, Deacon Arza Lewis, in the eightieth year of his age.

Another landmark has been removed, another pioneer of the place has gone to his rest and his reward. One by one the early settlers pass from our midst. We pause to drop a tear on their graves, and pay a passing tribute to their memories.

Arza Lewis was the son of Ezra Lewis, and was born at Derby, in the State of Connecticut, May 1, 1799. While he was quite young his father removed with his family to the State of New York, and settled upon a farm in the township of Galen, near the village of Clyde, in Wayne county. Here, on a new farm, the boyhood of young Lewis was spent. Arriving at manhood, after preparing himself for a business life by serving as a clerk in a store, first at Clyde, and afterwards in the city of Albany, he commenced business as a merchant in the former place, continuing it for several years with gratifying success. During that time he became acquainted with Mary Redfield, to whom he was married June 1, 1828, and with whom he spent half a century of wedded life. Their golden wedding was celebrated on its anniversary in June last. In 1837 he removed to this village and for nearly twenty years was extensively engaged in milling and mercantile pursuits. He was an active, energetic, upright business man. Before removing to this place he was converted and made a public profession of his faith in Christ. At the organization of the Presbyterian church in this village, which occurred June 2, 1838, he became a member, and was elected as one of the first deacons, continuing to hold that position for several years. Only four of the original members now remain. In 1852 or 1853 he purchased the site on which the Presbyterian church and parsonage now stand, and soon after, in connection with Deacon Henry Cook, Hiram Smith, B. S. Redfield, and a few others, erected a house of worship at the time when the church and society did not feel able to undertake the work. Some slips were sold, and enough others taken by the builders to pay the expense of building, thus leaving the society free from debt. During his active business life he was a liberal supporter of the institutions of religion, and in the early history of the church his house was a "minister's home." He always stood firm and decided for the right and for God.

In politics he was a democrat of the old school, his democracy being of the Jeffersonian type, holding strongly to the "inalienable rights of man." Being decidedly anti-slavery, when that question was thrust into politics he became a positive uncompromising republican, adhering to his early principles and convictions in regard to liberty and human freedom.

For several years past Mr. Lewis has been badly broken down in health, and for much of this time a constant sufferer, and yet he has borne his burdens of age and infirmity with a degree of patience and quietness unlooked for by those who were acquainted with his active business habits and temperament. His wife, oldest son, and two daughters survive him. The oldest daughter and youngest son have gone before. His two surviving brothers from abroad, both younger than he, yet men of advanced age, were present to follow, with the resident relatives, the remains to their last resting place.

The funeral, which occurred Sabbath afternoon, was largely attended. The services, conducted by the pastor, Rev. A. S. Badger, assisted by Rev. L. H. Corson, of the Episcopal, and Rev. E. L. Kellogg, of the Methodist churches, of this place, were simple, brief, and impressive. As was appropriate, the service was held in the sanctuary he had helped to build, where he had for so many years worshipped, and where but a little less than a month ago, with feeble footsteps, he had made his way to celebrate once more and for the last time, the "Last Supper of his Lord." Prepared by loving hands and placed upon the casket, were a cross and a wreath constructed of faded forest leaves and also a handful of ripe and whitened heads of grain, emblematic alike of the winter of age and the rich, ripened fruits of life, gathered into the "garner of God."

### MEMORIAL OF ASHAEL WARNER.

*February 4, 1880.*

Ashael Warner was the eldest son of Wareham Warner, and was born in the township of Gorham, Ontario county, New York, April 8, 1800. He came to Marshall, Calhoun county, in 1831, and was employed at once as a carpenter upon the grist mill erected at that time by the late George Ketchum. After a short residence in Marshall, Mr. Warner went upon a farm near Marshall, but in the town of Marengo. He soon sold his farm and bought a large farm in the town of Sheridan, where he ever after resided. He died August 16, 1879, aged 79 years.

In 1846 he married Miss Mary Jane Moore. They had five children, four of whom still live. Mr. and Mrs. Warner were long useful members of the Methodist Church. Mr. Warner was a successful business man and accumulated a handsome estate. He was a quiet and unassuming man, highly esteemed by his neighbors, and his death was very generally deplored.

### LIFE, TIMES AND CHARACTER OF DR. ASAHEL BEACH, BY EDWARD COX, M.

Doctor Asahel Beach, son of Thomas and Mary Beach, was born in Cambridge, Washington county, New York, on Christmas day, A. D. 1799. His father was a farmer, and the doctor's youth was spent among the natural beauties of that country. He attended the common schools, and later the academy of his native place, where he completed his elementary education.

In 1821 he commenced the study of medicine with his brother, Thomas Beach, M. D., of Ontario county, New York. He afterwards studied with Dr. A. G. Smith, an eminent surgeon of western New York. He attended two courses of lectures at Castleton Medical College, Vermont, and graduated at that institution December 24, 1824. He practiced medicine with marked success in Victor, Ontario county, New York, for ten years. In 1834 he moved to Michigan and located a large tract of land four miles east of Battle Creek, and with his usual zeal commenced improving the same. Soon thereafter he formed a copartnership with the late Capt. Wm. G. Wheaton in the cattle trade, which proved unsuccessful. While living on this farm, he was induced to act as physician to the early "settlers," particularly in the sickly season of 1838.

He removed to the *village* of Battle Creek in 1843, and practiced medicine until 1850 or 1851—one year in company with Dr. Hazard A. Potter, late of Geneva Medical college, and one or more years with the late Dr. Z. T. Slater. This ended his professional career.

Although he was a zealous, intelligent, and faithful physician, yet he was not successful in accumulating property while engaged in practice. And, as has been before said, his speculations in the cattle trade were disastrous. On moving to Battle Creek, his forethought caused him to purchase a tract of University lands, which he laid out into lots, the sale of which amounted to a large sum, and from which he accumulated a good fortune, and has left his children a competence.

On the 24th of October, 1826, he married Miss Martha N. Cady, daughter of Gen. Crolet Cady, of Mendon, N. Y., and cousin of the noted Mrs. Elizabeth Cady Stanton, with whom he lived until her decease, March 1, 1879.

They had four children—Martha A., died November 1, 1834, while *en route* for Michigan; Mary A., now the wife of Frank Bennett; Cholet Cady, for some years engaged in Battle Creek in the banking business; and Thomas S., now residing in Topeka, Illinois.

Dr. Beach was a man of strong and marked traits of character, and took pride in calling himself a "progressive" man. He was a zealous politician, but never sought and seldon held office. He was formerly a whig, and remained such until the organization of the republican party, since which time he has been an ardent member of the same. In proof of this we will relate an incident: In 1856 he was a great admirer of, and worked hard for the election of Fremont to the presidency, and was greatly disappointed at his defeat, but expressed an opinion that he would yet be elected, and pledged himslf that he would never shave until Col. Fremont should become president. This pledge he faithfully carried out, never putting a razor to his face from that time till the day of his death.

In religion he was educated a Presbyterian, and for a while worshiped with that denomination. In early life he however became affiliated with Universalists. He afterwards embraced the philosophy and theology of spiritualism, and was, to the day of his death, a firm believer in the occult phenomena of the same.

He was a propagandist, and was ever anxious to proclaim his opinions, religious or political, and was a bold, aggressive champion of any cause he espoused.

He was very fond of domestic animals, particularly horses, and stated the belief that he should enjoy them as well as the society of his friends in the future world; and on one occasion, admiring a fine span of horses belonging to L. C. Kellogg, then a banker of Battle Creek, he purchased *the spirits of the horses*, to have and to hold the same in the future world, and had a regular bill of sale made out and executed that they should become his property in the next world.

He was a positive character, and followed his convictions. He was a strong disputant, as are all men of his kind who entertain no doubt of the soundness of their opinions.

"He was unyielding in his views, but not intolerant." He never expressed or felt any bitterness for an opponent who gave him "blow for blow." He was honest and sincere, and believed others equally so with himself.

He was an inflexible man, and one of large hope; defeat, however disastrous, never discouraged him.

He was a genial man, with a good idea of the ludicrous, and was ever ready to give or receive a joke. Not long before his death, in conversation with the writer, it was remarked that the late Jonathan Hart, Thomas Hart, and the writer were natives of the same township with himself, to which he replied that it was a great mystery to him "how so many great men should be born so near together."

So long as he practiced medicine he was recognized as an intelligent, zealous, and faithful physician, always showing a warm sympathy for the poor and distressed.

He was a good citizen and neighbor, an affectionate husband and kind father, and was almost idolized by his family.

He had hosts of friends and few or no enemies.

His last sickness, paralysis, continued but a few days. He was conscious of the near approach of death, and "passed away" on the 29th of December, 1879, being eighty years and four days old.

His decease removes another of our most beloved, well-known pioneers. Others must soon follow, and soon there will be none of that brave band left.

## MEMOIR OF STEPHEN COLLIER.

Read February 4th, 1880.

*Dr. O. C. Comstock:*

DEAR SIR,—In reply to your questions I make the following statement:

My father, Stephen Collier, was born November 18th, 1793, at Kinderhook, N. Y., where he resided till he reached the age of nine years, when he removed with his parents to Burlington, Hartford county, Conn. His educational advantages were limited to the district schools of that period, which he attended during the winter months until he attained the age of thirteen years, when he was indentured to a Mr. Hotchkiss to learn the trade of a wagon-maker. At the age of twenty-one years he married Abigail Emeline Phelps. Very soon thereafter he, with his wife, removed to the State of New York, settling in Victor, Ontario county, where they resided, he working at his trade, until 1835, and where were born to them five children, two of whom died in Victor. In the spring of 1835 my father came to Michigan, and located 160 acres of land four miles south of Battle Creek, and immediately proceeded to erect thereon a log house, preparatory to the removal of his family, occupying a portion of his time during the summer in building wheelbarrows, which were used in removing the dirt from the present mill-race of Battle Creek. These barrows, at this day, would be considered somewhat unique in construction. The material for the frames was split and hewn from trees felled for the purpose, while the frame work of the body, or box, was made by nailing strips onto the limbs of trees, selected and hewed with special reference to the shape and form desired. These barrows, rude as they were, formed an important part in what, at that day, was a great work. In September, 1835, my father returned to the State of New York, and on the 28th of the same month started with his family for Michigan, arriving at Battle Creek October 16th, and at night occupied for the first time the new log house, which had neither floor or chimney.

He was a man of fine constitution, great physical energy and undaunted courage. From this time his occupation was clearing and cultivating land. He was for more than half a century a member of the Presbyterian church, in which faith he died, in the town of Bedford, Calhoun county, October 15th, 1879. His age was nearly 86. Of all this family but two are now living, my brother, E. P. Collier, of Bedford, Calhoun county, and myself.

*Battle Creek, February 2d, 1880.*

Yours truly, V. P. COLLIER.

### MEMOIR OF CHARLES M. COBB.

**Read February 4, 1880.**

Charles M. Cobb, the only son of James Cobb, was born in 1804, at Woodstock, Vt. In the fall of 1836, he same to Albion, Calhoun county, with a moderate stock of goods. Albion then had a very small population, probably not more than 100 inhabitants. After two years unsuccessful experience as a merchant, he removed to a small farm in the township of Sheridan, which he cultivated till 1871. In May, 1821, he married Miss Armenia E. Lathrop, at Stowe, Vermont. They had two daughters, to wit: Mrs. Rogers and Mrs. Shuart, the latter now living at Albion. Mr. Cobb again married in Morris, Vt., to a Mrs. Lurenda Pease, who returned to Vermont upon the decease of Mr. Cobb, and who still survives him. Mr. Cobb was long a working and useful member of the Methodist Episcopal church at Albion, was one of the eleven that formed the first class. He was at one time secretary of the board of trustees, and for many years was a trustee of Albion College. He was supervisor of his town for ten successive years, and in the board of supervisors was influential, useful, and highly respected. He also served his town as treasurer for a few years, and was also one of the superintendents of the poor of Calhoun county. He was so constantly occupied with public concerns that his private affairs did not receive the care indispensable to success. In early life he belonged to the Masonic fraternity, but was never identified with the order in Michigan. He died at Albion in 1879, having been run down by a locomotive upon the M. C. R. R. at that place.

## EATON COUNTY.

### PIONEER HISTORY.

BY DR. O. C. COMSTOCK, OF MARSHALL, CALHOUN COUNTY.

Eaton county came into existence by act of the legislative council of the territory of Michigan, approved October 29, 1829, in the following words, to wit: "That so much of the county (Calhoun, to which it was attached for judicial purposes) as is included in the following limits, viz.: north of the base line, and south of the line between townships four and five north of the base line, and east of the line between ranges six and seven west of the meridian, and west of the line between ranges two and three west of the meridian, be, and the same is hereby set off into a separate county, and the name thereof shall be Eaton."

At, and a long time prior to this period, this region of country had been at least the temporary home of the Indians, for a full and graphic account of whom I avail myself, by permission, of the "Historical sketch of the early days of Eaton county," read by Edward A. Foote, Esq., at the centennial celebration at Charlotte, July 5, 1876.

Edward A. Foote, Esq., to whom I am indebted for the following interesting account of the Indians, and which exhibits an accuracy and industrious research rarely found in a man of such busy and varied pursuits, is the son of Rev. Luman Foote, late of Charlotte, and was born at Burlington, Vermont, August 5, 1825. His early education he mainly received from his father, but he was in a boarding school for boys in Burlington for more than a year, and was for about the same length of time in a branch of the university of Michigan, at Kalamazoo. For four years he was the editor of the Eaton Republican. He has been four years county clerk, and one year deputy county clerk of Eaton county. During this period he read law, and upon his admission to the bar commenced practice in Charlotte, in which he has been successfully engaged ever since. He is at this time (1878) mayor of the city of Charlotte. Mr. Foote is a gentleman of cultivated taste, of good education, refined and cordial manners, a ready and forcible writer, and conspicuously identified with every moral reform, notably at the present time, with the temperance movement.

## HISTORICAL SKETCH OF THE EARLY DAYS OF EATON COUNTY.

BY EDWARD A. FOOTE, ESQ.

**Read at the Centennial Celebration at Charlotte, July 5, 1876.**

### THE INDIANS.

In attempting this historical sketch of the county, a brief chapter of Indian history seems proper.

The whites who settled here previous to 1840 found the county inhabited by some of the Pottawottomie and Chippewa—or properly Ojibwa—tribes. There were two Pottawottomie villeges about ten miles south of us, on territory which is now the township of Walton. The oak opening land in the south part of the county seemed better adapted to the Indian mode of life than the dark and heavily timbered forests north of there. Signs of Indian cornfields—rows of corn hills overgrown with turf—could be seen at an early day upon this prairie where Charlotte now stands. Their wigwams were usually built of elm bark and flag mats. During the sugar-making season they would move into the heavy timber and camp among the great sugar maples. After this they would come out and remain in the oak openings in the south part of the county, cultivating corn and pumpkins, and gathering berries. In Walton they had 100 acres, in scattered patches, under cultivation. Editor Johnson says in the Eaton Eagle, published here in 1845, that this prairie upon which Charlotte is built gave evidence of having been an Indian cornfield. They had one village on section 18, in Walton, near the brook now called Kedron. Another—a large village—with a burying ground for their dead, on section 28 in Walton, on or near the Burroughs farm. To protect their corn patches they hobbled their ponies with bark, and surrounded the patch with a fence of bark strings tied to trees and stakes.

Indian trails, well beaten and apparently quite old, traversed the county nearly in the same direction as our two railroads now in operation, and the proposed route of the Marshall and Coldwater road. One trail from the southwest, Bellevue, ran through Walton, crossing the Battle creek about forty rods east of the bridge, south of the city, and crossing this fair ground in a northeasterly direction, along the east skirt of the prairie, it swung off east and ran through Eaton Rapids towards Jackson. Just east of our prairie this trail crossed another large pony trail which came up from Duck lake and the whortle or "huckleberry" swamps south of us.

This Duck lake trail crossed our prairie near where the Sherwood house now stands, passing off in a northwesterly direction towards Grand Rapids by the way of Fish creek, following the route of the Grand River Valley railroad. It was known as the Grand Rapids trail. As late as 1854 I walked in this trail across land owned by me in the northwestern part of the corporate limits of Charlotte. It was smoothly and deeply worn, deepest in the center and rounding up at the sides, running straight as an arrow off into the dim, shadowy vista of the forest trees, rendering it a cool and pleasant walk.

The Indians were civil, submissive and kind to the settlers. They nearly always looked in at the window before entering at the door. Without the warning snap of a twig, they would appear unexpectedly close beside you in the woods. They never would help themselves to a pumpkin or potato without leave. They never stole anything from their friends. Barnes' potato hole was relieved of its contents here on Willow prairie, but Stephen Kinnie says if that was the work of the Indians, it was the only instance he ever knew of their stealing.

They had a way of locking up the doors of their wigwams, when leaving them, which the settlers adopted for the protection of their own log shanties. This lock was simply two sticks leaning across the doorway, so that they formed an X. An Indian would never enter a doorway where he saw this cross placed to guard it.

Benjamin Shumway, of Walton, had borrowed some steel-traps of one of the Indians and was ready to return them. The Indian went for them, quite a distance, to Mr. Shumway's house, but found that the family were absent and the door locked with the crossed sticks. He looked in at the window and saw his traps, but that cross forbade his entering to take even his own. He went one mile from there, found Captain Hickok, and stated to him the difficulty. The captain went to the house and delivered the traps, but even then the Indian could not be induced to enter.

Isaac E. C. Hickok, Esq., the first white male child born in the county, while yet young enough to wear frock and aprons, received instructions in the art of shooting with a bow and arrow, from an old Indian whose hair was white as snow, and who was very fond of visiting around the house of Captain Hickok, in Walton, near the Indian villages. This old Indian made for little Isaac a perfectly formed Indian bow and some arrows, and would spend hours teaching him how to shoot. The pupil, to show his gratitude to his preceptor, would go into the house and step down cellar, and taking a few potatoes in his apron, would go out to the Indian and say, "netos pen-ny-ax" (I give you potatoes). The school master, taking the potatoes, would place his hand on Isaac's head and say impressively, "ne-chim chemokoman pappoos," which means: good white man's pappoose.

The Indian ponies nearly all wore small bells, so that their whereabouts while wandering in the bushes could be traced. A drove of them would come in the night under a back window of the captain's house, where dish water had been thrown out, and it was tinkle, tinkle, tinkle, all night long, notwithstanding the yelling and throwing of boots at them. "Confound them," says the captain, "I would find in the morning that it would take pretty near a wagon load of dirt to fill the hole they had gnawed in the ground to get the salt that was in the dish water."

### THE EARLIEST LEGAL PROCEEDINGS.

that I can find any trace of in this county, was an Indian trial for murder held in 1836, in Walton, near the Shumway farm.

An Indian, called Neemah, was charged with the killing of his squaw with a hatchet. The Indians met in grand council. There was a great chief, and several smaller chiefs,—answering, probably, to our grand and petit juries. Neemah was found guilty, and the sentence was that he should never during life own a rifle or a pony. It is said by some that he obeyed the sentence during the remainder of his days; that he made for himself a large and powerful bow, and would patiently pursue deer for a great distance until he could get within bow shot. The other Indians despised and shunned him, and would not assist him to food, though ever so hungry. Even his brother Sangar turned against him and said Neemah was "no good Indian." Putting ourselves in an Indian's place, we can realize that this sentence was equivalent to the sentence of a white man to solitary imprisonment for life. I am informed by Captain Hickok that after the trial of Neemah was over, the Indians had a drunken powwow which lasted three days.

The strictness with which Neemah obeyed this sentence, has been questioned. I am informed that David Lucas, of Bellevue, whould take his rifle and meet him privately in the woods, and allow him to shoot with it. Stephen Kinne says that he knows that Neemah did sometimes hunt with a rifle. This was clearly a case of contempt of court, but very excusable when we consider the three days' drunken powwow.

In 1838 and 1839 Neemah had his wigwam over on the other side of Battle Creek, not far from where we are now. One day while he was absent hunting, two white men went to his wigwam and carried away four venison hams. One of the men took two of them home and hid them in the corn-crib under the corn. The other man put put his two hams in a bag and made tracks for home, along the road running south from here, past Amos Kinnie's, where Stephen and Amos were engaged in making an ox sled. It had been customary for this man to stop and have long talks, but now he seemed in great haste. Soon Neemah came along indignantly following the big chemoke-man's tracks, and holding out two fingers on each hand to show the number of hams that had been stolen.

The terribly broken profanity that Neemah indulged in, how he followed those large tracks to a house some eight miles away and stalked in, and how terribly he looked when he pointed into the spider on the cook stove, where some of the venison was then cooking; how he afterwards met that man alone in the woods one Sunday morning, and how near Neemah came to having another murder trial on his hands, and the rescue by another white man whom I have seen and talked with, I have not the time now fully to relate.

### THE REMOVAL.

In 1840 the government of the United States removed the Potowottomies from Michigan beyond the Mississippi river. Government agents and soldiers, under the superintendence of General Brady, were scouring all through the woods to collect and remove them.

David Lucas, of Bellevue, a great friend of the Indians, saw them in council just west of Bellevue. They had received intelligence that the troops were after them. Mounted on the backs of their ponies, huddled together as closely as they could stand, with the heads of their ponies all toward a common center, they were in deep, anxious consultation around their wisest heads. Soon they scattered like a flock of blackbirds. One company fled north, far into the forests. They had with them a sick squaw, which impeded their travel. They were overtaken, and sought refuge in a dense swamp, which was surrounded by the cavalry, and after two or three days' seige, they were brought out from their hiding place and taken to Marshall, the place of rendezvous for those collected in this part of the State. From thence they were taken to their place of banishment beyond the Mississippi river. I am informed that during the last night of their stay the moans and lamentations were heart-rending. Those squaws were leaving their corn-fields where they had worked so hard, their burial grounds, their hunting and camping grounds, their homes. They were women, and all women love home. They were going to a strange land where they had been told corn would only grow knee high, and pumpkins no larger than potatoes. The men wrapped up in their blankets and bore their grief in silence. The government would not let them have a drop of whisky to drown their sorrow. Even at that early day Uncle Sam had discovered that it was a great offense to sell whisky to an Indian, and severely punished it. There was a good reason for this discrimination as to race. Whisky was liable to make the Indian very drunk, ugly, and troublesome, while with the white man it seldom produced that effect.

Another band of these Eaton county Pottowottomies made their escape into Canada under the lead of Tuckamin. Tuckamin did not approve of the government's policy in discriminating against his race. He had fought on the side of the British under Tecumseh at the battle of the Thames, and very naturally took a band of followers and went to Canada. Neemah, the wife killer, went with him.

Not an Indian of this tribe was again seen in this county until in April, 1851, when three or four of the Canadian refugees came to Bellevue to see their old friends among the whites. One day I saw one of them visiting with Mr. Lucas in the kitchen, engaged in an animated conversation in broken English and Indian. A description of him will answer for the tribe.

With a large knife, which he had taken from its sheath, he was picking a large ham bone, and occasionally cutting slices from a loaf of bread which lay in his lap. Upon his head he wore a large, bright cotton handkerchief folded into a towering turban. High up in the back part of each ear hung rings of white metal. His dress consisted of a blanket overcoat, a dark calico shirt, and leathern belt, a pair of leggins tightly wrapped around his slender legs, and well worn moccasins upon his feet. He made a great many gestures, and kept his knife and ham bone constantly flourishing to express his meaning.

Mr. Lucas asked him what had become of Neemah, who went with him to Canada. The reply, as interpreted to me, was in substance, that Neemah had eaten too much corn and killed himself.

After the banishment of these Indians in 1840, the woods seemed lonely. Capt. Hickok says: "They had not been gone six months before we wished them all back. They helped us hunt and keep track of our cattle. If we lost an animal and described it to an Indian, he was sure to bring information as to where it could be found. When we had visitors, the Indians would furnish us with turkey or venison." The regular price for a deer, large or small, was one dollar in silver. They would as soon take a chip as paper money.

### A FEW CHIPPEWAS

were left in the country, but their headquarters was the Chimnecon Mission just over the north line of the county. There was something of an Indian village in the town of Delta, the northeast corner of the county. Okemos was their chief. In the Republican of September 10, 1869, and in other articles published about that time, are some interesting sketches in regard to the Indians of which Okemos was chief. Mr. Chauncey Goodrich gives a description of a war dance which he witnessed in Delta at an early day.

Sawba, from whom the lake in Sunfield derived its name, was not a good Indian. He had a disagreeable habit of visiting houses when the men were away and frightening the women into giving him the best there was in the house to eat. He thus made himself a terror and a pest to the settlers, and does not seem to have been remarkable for anything else.

The Battle creek, which runs by our fair-ground and southwest through Bellevue, bore the Indian name of "Mejash Ke-wappi-kisco," which is a long name for "stone pipe," named from the limestone in Bellevue from which the Indians carved their pipes.

The present name, "Battle Creek," was given to this stream by the United States surveyors, in commemoration of a fight which took place upon its bank, a short distance below Bellevue, and within this county. The surveyors had located their camp near the stream and had left it, with their supplies, in charge of their cook. A company of Indians visited the camp and demanded provisions. The cook refused to comply. A fight ensued, in which the cook killed one of the Indians and defeated the others. This incident gave the name of Battle Creek to the stream, upon the surveyors' notes and maps.

They doubtless had a name for our beautiful prairie, but all I can glean in this direction is that they always called Charlotte "Eatum Center," a corruption of the name Eaton Center, by which Charlotte was long known.

Bidding good-bye to the poor Indian, we now turn out attention to their white successors.

### THE FIRST DEATH

and burial of a white person in this county occurred in Bellevue during the summer of 1835. John T. Hayt and Daniel Mason were engaged in digging and walling up the first lime kiln. A man by the name of Baker, while engaged in digging within this side hill excavation was killed by the caving in of the bank. He was buried by the side of the Battle Creek—the first occupant of the Bellevue graveyard. He was a stranger in Bellevue, without family or relations at that place.

The pioneer teacher of the county was Hepsibeth Hutchinson. She taught in the log school-house in Bellevue in 1836. In 1837 Williard Davis taught their school and on Sundays preached to the then united Methodists and Presbyterians.

Of our own race, the

### FIRST-BORN CHILD

of our county was Sarah Fitzgerald,—wife of John Spaulding. She was born in October or November, 1834. Next comes Isaac E. Crary Hickok, son of Captain James Hickok. He stands recorded as the first white male child born in the county. He found his way into Bellevue, September 7, 1836—an involuntary pioneer in destitute circumstances. He has since been elected our county clerk for several terms, and is now engaged in the practice of the law in the city of Charlotte. He is a man whom our county will never be ashamed to own as its first born son.

And here permit me to relate a sad incident which belongs to our pioneer history. On the 16th day of July, two months previous to Isaac's birth, as Captain Hickok was moving into Walton, having his wife and young children and his household goods in a wagon drawn by oxen, when, after a long and tedious journey they were approaching quite near to their new home, Mrs. Hickok met with a very serious accident. A small tree which was leaning over the track caught her knee, as the wagon passed, and wrenched her limb back against the boxes so violently that it broke the thigh bone. They were some three or four miles from Bellevue, and there was no help nearer. The captain was obliged to leave her lying upon the ground alone in her misery, while he went back to Bellevue for aid. Lawrence Campbell, George Browning, Wm. R. Carpenter and one by the name of Sackrider hastened back with him to the aid of the suffering woman. They took a crick bed from the wagon, lashed some poles to it, and upon this litter they carried her through the woods in the night to Bellevue; the captain with the youngest child in his arms followed along. Of course the pioneer women and men of that settlement did all in their power to alleviate the suffering, but it was three or four days before the fracture could be set. The captain, after going to Marshall in a fruitless effort to procure surgical aid, returned with such instructions in surgery as he could obtain from a Marshall physician and set the limb. This is one of the many instances I have collected of the privations and hardships encountered by those who came first into the wilderness.

They all longed for letters from their friends—for news from the distant world of civilization. To them the establishing of the

### FIRST POSTOFFICE

and mail route was a joyful event. On the 4th day of August, 1835, Mr. John T. Hayt received a commission from Amos Kendall, dated May 2, 1835, which made him the first postmaster in Eaton county. The postoffice was established with the understanding that the mail should be carried between Marshall and Bellevue, once a week, for four years without expense to the government. Captain Reuben Fitzgerald volunteered to carry this mail for four years for $15 a quarter or $60 a year—a little over a dollar a trip—to compensate him for the time and expense of himself and horse. His pay was to come from the postage receipts of the office. The postage on a single letter was then twenty-five cents. The entire receipts for the first quarter amounted to $2.25 with which to pay the postmaster's salary and the $15 to the mail-carrier. But the mail-carrier faithfully plodded along each week with his mail until at the end of two years the receipts had considerably exceeded the expenses. But Mr. Hayt had in the meantime lost $25 by trusting postage, which he had to account for to the department.

The next great enterprise was the opening of the

### BELLEVUE AND IONIA ROAD.

In 1835 there was no bridge across Battle Creek at Bellevue and the heavily timbered country north of there was almost impenetrable for teams. A subscription was circulated in Bellevue and Marshall. Forty signers subscribed $150, and the pioneers with this money and their own strong arms made a road through north to the Thornapple river. There the work stopped until the Vermont colony settled Vermontville and opened the road through to Ionia.

The well-known lime quarries of Bellevue underlie about one section of land. The first lime was burnt without kilns by piling alternate layers of wood and limestone and then firing the heap. In 1835 W. C. Fonda built a large boat, resembling a canal boat, with which he expected to ship lime down the Battle Creek to Kalamazoo, disposing of his cargo at the intermediate ports. On the first trip the boat capsized, the cargo of lime slackened, and this enterprise was abandoned. But the superior lime from these exhaustless beds has proved a steadily increasing source of wealth to those who have worked them.

Bellevue was long the gateway into the deep forests of Eaton county. Through the oak openings from Kalamazoo, Battle Creek, and Marshall, the journey was comparatively easy. But there at Bellevue was the jumping-off place into the depths of the wilderness, and the coming-out place of the burrowing settler, where he was once more in the light of day. This of course made the "Village Inn," as it was called, a great comfort to the weary traveler. They say Lawrence Campbell, in 1836, built the inn, kept it two years, giving good satisfaction. He was succeeded by Ebenezer Avery, who kept a "comfortable bar," and all else that a wayfaring person could reasonably ask for. His house was patronized to its utmost capacity, doing a good business for several years, until the building and contents were destroyed by fire, when he built another and much better one than the first, called the "Union house." The Rev. John D. Pierce in 1835 built the saw mill which for a long time supplied the greater portion of the county with the luxury of sawed lumber. Then came the grist mill, groceries, stores, asheries, salaratus works, and a tannery in rapid succession, until the streets were filled with ox teams from all parts of the woods, and until the Woodburys, Carpenters, Hinmans, and Gage & Hughes had hard accounts to collect wherever a settler's ax could be heard.

In 1838, when the legislature gave the county an existence separate from Calhoun, Bellevue for two years became the county seat, Hon. Epaphroditus Ransom, the circuit judge, came there and held the circuit court in Carpenter's tavern. The grand jury, then a very great and terrible institution, and the petit juries, which were not much smaller, would assemble and receive legal instruction. The circuit court was held there and the county business all transacted there until the spring of 1840, when Charlotte became the county seat.

But this prosperity and impetus which the settling of the county for a time gave the place, could not always continue. The settlers could not always be expected to draw their black salts across the county to Bellevue, or always go there for their justice and milling. Two other openings into the county had been discovered. The first was through Hamlin and Eaton Rapids. The emigrants, instead of first going past this forest bound region as far west as Kalamazoo, and circling around Gull Prairie, Goguac Prairie, and Battle Creek, and asking questions about the country up in north, and finally concluding to try Eaton county, and then going in and disappearing at Bellevue, now began to feel the attraction before going so far west and to *gee* off at Jackson, and coming up through the openings, and then *hawing* in through Spicerville or Eaton Rapids. Thus the creaking of the emigrant's wagon and the whack of his ox goad began to be heard in the eastern part of the county. For a time those who came in by the different routes knew nothing of each other. Those who came in by way of Bellevue would push in and live for months within two or three miles from those who had worked in through the Eaton Rapids entrance, and neither would be aware of the other's presence until their cattle found each other in the woods; which would be followed by an investigation on the part of the owners, and two families would then be made happy by finding that they had neighbors. This was the experience of Uncle Samuel Searls, on Searls street, just south of Charlotte Prairie, and Wm. Wall, five miles east from him, but both in the township of Eaton. It is said—I read it in the Bugle—that it was two years before they discovered each other's presence. There was a settlement in the northeast corner of Brookfield, commenced in 1837 by the Moes and Boodys called Moetown. During the same fall Mr. Jesse Hart came into the northwest corner of the same township and built his log shanty and shingled it with basswood boughs, and lived a long while in ignorance of Moetown's existence.

By act of legislative council, approved March 17th, 1835, "the county of Eaton shall be a township by the name of Belleville, and the first township meeting shall be held at such place as the sheriff of Calhoun county (H. C. Goodrich) shall appoint in said county of Eaton, and shall be attached to the county of Calhoun for all judicial purposes." The following article from the pen of Mr. John T. Hayt, written and published in 1869, and a more recently written letter from his accomplished wife and widow, both of whom were active participants in the trying period referred to, are highly graphic and interesting.

## SETTLEMENT OF BELLEVUE.

The first actual settlement made in this county by those who came to stay was probably in July, 1833. It was in the southwest corner of the county, very near the present site of the village of Bellevue—beautiful sight.

Mr. John T. Hayt, in his account "written from recollections," published in the Republican May 14th, 1869, says that in June, 1834, he visited this burr oak plain upon which the village is now located, "before the white man had marred its beauty." Describing the vision as it then appeared to him he says: "It was to me the most beautiful spot I had ever seen. The wild grass was then about a foot high, and interspersed with it were the most beautiful flowers," the fragrance of which reminded him of the garden of Eden. He then resolved, Providence permitting, to build a home upon that plain, and there, with his family, pass the remainder of his days.

Whether it had previous to this received its appropriate name of Bellevue, I am unable to learn. Mr. Hayt gives it as his impression that the first purchase of land made there was by Mr. Blashford, in 1829 or '30, of the northeast quarter of section twenty-eight—the village site. But this location does not appear upon the United States tract book.

To digress a moment from Bellevue history to that of the county at large, I will say that the first location of land made in the county, as shown by the tract book, was made by H. Mason, in July, 1831, of the northeast part of the southwest quarter of section two, in Oneida, upon the banks of Grand river. There is nothing to show that this locator ever came into the county, and the land was four years afterwards sold for taxes—the first tax sale of land in the county.

In February, 1832, Mr. George W. Barnes located the west half of the northwest quarter of section eighteen, in Eaton, which is a part of the original plat of the village of Charlotte. In the following June, 1832, Luther Lincoln located and purchased from the government land on section twenty-eight, which includes the present site of the village of Bellevue. This location was sold by Luther Lincoln to Isaac E. Crary, of Marshall, Mich., by whom the village of Bellevue was platted, November 5, 1835.

The next important locations were made in Bellevue by Sylvanus Hunsiker on sections twenty-seven, twenty-eight and twenty-nine, in May, 1833; portions of which were afterwards conveyed to Captain Reuben Fitzgerald.

While Charlotte can claim a priority of three months in the location of land, Bellevue was about two years in advance of any town in actual settlement. As an occupant of the soil, Captain Reuben Fitzgerald is the pioneer of pioneers. July, 1833, witnessed his advent.

The township of Bellevue, as first organized, comprised the county of Eaton. It contained the sixteen townships now separately organized, and was twenty-four miles square.

### THE FIRST ELECTION

held in this county was when Bellevue held its first town meeting in the spring of 1835. There were then only four men in the entire county who had resided here long enough to be entitled to vote. I give the poll list of the county, viz.: Captain Reuben Fitzgerald, Sylvanus Hunsiker, Calvin Phelps, and John T. Hayt. The first three named were the election board, and they elected Mr. Hayt clerk of this election, to perform the difficult task of keeping poll list as the voters from 576 square miles of territory came in to vote. The election was held in a log shanty, which they called the meeting-house. This savors a little of New England, where churches are generally called meeting-houses. This shanty—the first church built in the county—was also a school-house. It was built on a corner of the lot owned in 1869 by Mr. Ford. But to return to our town meeting. When the officers of election had taken their seats it was necessary to proclaim the polls opened. Calvin Phelps took off his hat, stepped out in front of the cabin, and in a loud voice proclaimed: "The polls of this election are now opened," and warned all men, under the penalty of the law, to keep the peace. These four voters where then triumphantly elected to all the best offices in the gift of the people, unanimously taking two or three of the highest offices apiece. They gave the minor ones to outsiders who had not yet become voters, and were not eligible. There were too many offices to go around. In strict accordance with law, they sat all day until the legal hour for closing the polls, and then, without breathless anxiety, counted up and ascertained the result. Not one of those men are now living.

Mrs. Hayt says: In the spring of 1834 Rev. John D. Pierce and wife visited Ithaca, New York, my native place. The glowing accounts he gave us of central Michigan induced Mr. Hayt to visit the State. He was so well pleased that he decided to move his family thither, make his home at Bellevue, build a tannery, and manufacture leather. With this purpose in view he bought a small interest in the water power, with a lot upon which to place the works and buildings. He also bought the entire block bounded on the east by Main street, west by Elizabeth street, south by South street—I do not remember the name of the street on the north. He also engaged men to build a house 18x26 to be enclosed by the first of October ensuing, and then returned to Ithaca for his family. We, with our three children in company, Mr. Scout and family, who now reside in Bellevue, left Ithaca September 21, 1834. We were a week or more in reaching Detroit, coming the entire distance by canal and steamboats. At Detroit we learned that our house was not built in consequence of the men having "the chills." This was not encouraging, but we must go on. Five teams were engaged to carry us with our goods to Marshall. With us was a servant girl who had lived a long time with my mother; she having a desire "to go west," proposed going with us and living with me. The roads through the timbered land were very bad; sometimes the wheels on one side would be on the roots of a stump, while the other wheels were in a deep mud-hole; but the worst of the road was the long causeways of uncovered logs. The second night after leaving Detroit we reached Ann Arbor, and stayed at Gregory's, who kept a public house. Mrs. G. made many inquiries with regard to dress, which showed us that the settlers had not lost their interest in dress during their sojourn in a new country. After leaving Ann Arbor we found only small patches of cultivated land with a log house or shanty surrounded by stumps, and sometimes miles away from any other clearing. I felt that we were going into a wilderness, never again to enjoy the blessings of civilization. The fourth night we spent at Matthews' tavern, Sandstone. About noon, the last day, we dined at Abbott's tavern, our last stopping place before reaching Marshall. We drove into Marshall about 9 o'clock P. M., and stopped at a one-story public house kept by a man named Vandenburg. On the first floor was a bar-room, dining-room, kitchen, and bed-room. Above, a low chamber was divided into three rooms—one large room with stalls on each side, and a bed in each stall; two small rooms back which were reserved for ladies. There were fifteen persons in our party, including teamsters. Mrs. Vandenburg looked cross, and I could not blame her. She said there would be no more meals got in the house that night. I expected to go to bed supperless (if we got a bed), and the poor children so tired and hungry! After consultation with Mr. V. and his daughter, seconded by a boarder named Burnet, a good supper was provided. This Mr. Burnet went to Wisconsin and built a cabin on land upon which Milwaukee now stands, intending to enter the land whenever it came into market, but he was killed by the Indians soon after his settlement there. Mr. Pierce called upon us the night of our arrival in Marshall, and took my cousin, Miss Wilbour home with him. The following day our two families (Hayt and Scout) went to Mr. Pierce's, where we remained a few days, and until Mr. Hotchkiss came on with his family and took possession of Mr. Pierce's house which he had previously sold. We then went back to Vandenburg's.

When the wagons that brought us returned to Detroit my girl went with them. Mrs. Pierce was anxious to keep her until our house was finished, but she could not be persuaded to remain. She claimed not to like the country, but I think the real reason was her admiration of one of the teamsters. To be left without help, to care for three children in an unfinished house, was more than I was then prepared for, but the task semed less a few years later.

Mr. Hayt, with the assistance of one man, neither being masons, built a fire place and chimney in lime-stone, bringing the water in a large brass kettle from the river for making the mortar. In building the chimney they took the precaution to have it lean toward the street, so that if it fell, as some thought likely, it would not fall into the room at imminent peril of our lives. It was a rough piece of masonry, but looked cheerful and comfortable in cold winter evenings, when the huge fire-place was filled with blazing logs.

The first dwelling house erected in Eaton county (Bellevue) stood on the corner of South and Elizabeth streets. Elizabeth street was named after the first wife of General Crary. The house mentioned was divided into three rooms. James Kimberly and Lawrence Campbell and their families were the occupants. Mr. Kimberly having a large family, besides boarding the men at the mill, had the largest room and a bed-room. Mrs. Kimberly boarded Mr. Hayt and his man, and on learning my anxiety to reach my destination, kindly offered to give me a place in her house.

After a three weeks' stay in Marshall, we moved to Bellevue. Our ride from Marshall to Bellevue was harder and more lonely than from Detroit to Marshall. We saw neither house nor human being the entire route. The way-marks from Marshall to Bellevue, by which the distance was computed, were: (1) Bear Marsh; (2) Tamarac Run; (3) the half-way house, a lake near which Mr. Lane afterwards built and kept a public-house; (4) the Devil's Nest, where the junction now is; then a swamp covered with fallen trees, the roots turned up; it did not seem possible that the land could ever be cleared; (5) the Beaver Dam, now called Ackley's Lake; (6) and last, the Short hills. It was dark before we reached Bellevue, and not a light to be seen until we drove up to Mr. Kimberly's house. I was glad to reach the end of our tiresome journey. On the supper table we had wild honey, the first I had ever seen. Afterwards we were abundantly supplied by the Indians. Mrs. K. gave us the bed-room. Her bed was in the large room, which was also used by all as kitchen, dining-room, and sitting-room. There were twelve persons in the two families. To look back upon those times, I wonder how we endured living in that way; but we got along nicely. Mr. and Mrs. Kimberly did all they could to make us comfortable.

We remained with them two weeks, when, our house being tenantable, we moved in. The only doors of the house were an outside door, and a trap door to the cellar. A ladder led to a hole in the upper floor, which consisted, however, of loose boards. As we had no glazed windows, we used boards with one exception, that had a half sash; the upper part was boarded up. The little furniture we had was still in Marshall. Mr. Hayt made a table and some stools. Mr. Campbell lent us two chairs, and we moved into our house, glad to be in a home of our own once more.

Captain Fitzgerald was the oldest resident in the county, having made a settlement in Bellevue in 1833. Blashfield had been there in 1832, but had left. Gen. Crary and Mr. Pierce had built the log house in which Mr. Blashfield lived, for a boarding-house for the men who were building a saw-mill. When we went to Bellevue the entire population of the county, so far as I know and believe, was Mr. Hunsiker, Esq. Phelps, and Mr. Fonda. Mr. Fonda, the following year, moved to his present residence near Verona. Dr. Carpenter, wife, daughter, and two sons (William and Abner), came in, built the store Gage and Hughes have occupied for some years.

The Carpenters opened the first store in the county. They also kept public house for awhile in the yellow building on the corner south of their store.

Every member of this family is supposed to be dead. If any are alive, it may be the widow and one child who returned to the State of New York. Lawrence Campbell built a small house, which he occupied a short time as a public house, and then sold to Ebenezer Avery, who kept it until destroyed by fire in 1837, after which Mr. Avery opened the hotel on Main street. The first district school was kept by Miss Hepsibeth Hutchinson. The first church organized was by the Methodists. The first religious meeting I attended was in October, 1834—a Methodist meeting held in Mr. Hunsiker's house. The first white child born in Bellevue was Sarah, daughter of Capt. Fitzgerald, now the wife of John A. Spaulding, living one mile north of the village of Bellevue. The first marriage celebrated in the county was that of Miss Campbell and Lewis Ives. An infant daughter of Mr. Campbell was the first white person who died in the county. The second death was that of a Mr. Baker, a young man who had just come in, and was killed by the caving in of one side of a pit being dug for burning lime. He was immediately rescued, but life was extinct. Medical assistance was out of the question. There was no doctor nearer than Marshall. Mr. Hayt being a man of reading and intelligence, and usually supplied with the more simple medicines, was generally sought for in cases of sickness, and was by some dubbed with the title of doctor. In the fall of 1835, our entire family were very sick. I was sick every other day. When I felt the chill coming on, I would make fire enough to last till it passed off. Most of our neighbors were as helpless as ourselves. During our sickness my father visited us, and on his return he sent us from Detroit such medicines and stimulants as we very much needed, and which speedily restored us to health.

In 1836 land-lookers and "speculators" filled the little tavern, often to overflowing. Each one was provided with memoranda, and a county map which they were diligently studying. Mr. Hayt and Darius Clark went through the county "land-looking," locating for themselves and others, carrying their provisions on their backs, and their specie in shot-bags. At night they would camp with other parties on the bare ground by the side of some up-turned tree, fearless of robbers or wild beasts. On one of these trips Mr. Hayt, Darius Clark, and Caleb Woodbury went near Grand Ledge, when their stock of provisions gave out. On the plains, now the site of the city of Charlotte, they found an unoccupied shanty in which was a box containing some bread. This, with a raccoon they had killed, afforded the hungry men a sumptuous repast, and the only meal they had until they reached home. During this trip they had torn their clothes badly, and made repairs with strips of bark, so that their appearance led us to suppose they were Indians.

In the spring of 1836 Mr. Hayt and Mr. Kirkham attempted to get a raft of lumber down the river to Battle Creek. Mr. Hayt thought the river (Battle Creek) could be made navigable for steam-boats as far as Bellevue, and had written an article to that effect which was published in a Detroit paper. He thought this a good opportunity to examine the stream the more fully to satisfy himself. A strong man named Sackrider was employed to work the raft, and Messrs. Hayt and Kirkham expected to have little to do but sit on the forward end of the raft and view the country. Mr. Kirkham being in delicate health, Sackrider agreed to carry him on his back to and from shore. They set off in the morning, expecting to reach Battle Creek on the evening of the second day. Like prudent men as they were, very much to our surprise, they came home to lodge at night, when we supposed them half way to Battle Creek.

The second day Mr. Kirkham fell into the stream, and Sackrider construed this accident into an annulment of his contract, and therefore Mr. K. waded the shallow creek thereafter. After five days' effort the lumber was safely banked two or three miles above Verona, save a portion which was irrecoverably lost. Mr. Hayt never after advocated the feasibility of steamboat navigation on the "Battle Creek river."

In 1835 it was decided by the few patriotic citizens that the Fourth of July should be celebrated, picnic dinner served under the beautiful burr oaks, and the observance of the time-honored ceremonies of their late eastern homes. As the day was rainy, the crowd adjourned to a small barn, building by Captain Fitzgerald, where dinner was served, and the Declaration of Independence read by Esq. Phelps. Our supplies for the table were limited. The Indians brought us venison and wild turkey, and a good supply of maple sugar made by Mr. Hayt and Mr. Kimberly the spring before, constituted the feast mainly. Mr. Kirkham, thinking wine a necessity upon such an occasion, sent to Marshall for a pint or quart of wine; but little, however was drank,—it seemed to be a compound of water, sugar, and logwood.

In 1836 the Fourth of July was again celebrated. An arbor was built in our door-yard, and near where the Methodist parsonage now is, where the tables were set. We had some accessions to our numbers during the past year. Dr. Carpenter and family, Mr. and Mrs. Browning, and some others, came in, all of whom joined in getting up the dinner, and it was quite gay compared with the year before. Wine was omitted this time. The Fourth of July was for many years celebrated in Bellevue from and after 1835. Long arbors were built on the public square, under which tables were erected. An oration was delivered in the grove, and all marched in order from that to the tables, where a good dinner awaited them, provided by the ladies of the village. After the ashery was built, we used the oven for a part of our baking. One year, I remember, a whole sheep was brought to our house, then quartered and prepared for the oven. One sheep was but a small part of the meats, however. Two or three roast pigs were considered indispensable, also cakes in great abundance, and all very nice. The ladies were good cooks. I have eaten dinners served at our best hotels that were not so good. After 1841-2, the population in and around Bellevue had increased so much that the ladies could no longer provide free dinners. Owing to this or some other circumstance, the eating part of the celebrations has lost its former interest.

The first school-house was built of logs. It stood on the north side of South street, about half way between Main street and Mr. Hunsiker's house. The first town meeting was held in this house in 1835. I think there were five voters, not more. The polls were kept open all day and closed at five o'clock P. M. Mr. Phelps opened and closed the polls by a loud and authoritative proclamation. There were no disappointed office-seekers; most of them had one or two offices. Mr. Hayt was the first postmaster in the county. When Vermontville was first settled, their nearest postoffice was at Bellevue. We had one mail a week, to wit: on Saturday, when our room, which served as postoffice, kitchen, parlor, and dining room, was half full of persons anxiously looking for and expecting letters from the eastern friends they had so recently left. Capt. Fitzgerald was the first mail-carrier, whose only recompense was the profits of the postoffice at Bellevue. John Hill, now a prominent physician and nephew of Capt. Fitzgerald, then a sixteen year old boy, was the real carrier. A part of the present site of Bellevue had been used by the Indians as garden and planting ground, and was most reluctantly yielded to the white man. They remained in this vicinity until removed by the government beyond the Mississippi in 1840. Unless inflamed by whisky sometimes sold them by unprincipled white men, they were quiet and friendly, bringing us venison, turkeys, berries, and honey in exchange for flour, Indian meal, potatoes, etc. They charged twenty-five cents for a venison ham, and one dollar for a bee tree, the purchaser to cut his own tree and gather the honey. Mr. Hayt bought a bee tree of an Indian named Sanbar, who said it was a petite march off, meaning a short distance. Mr. Hayt, with a man with him, started with the Indian, expecting to return the same day. They followed him to the Indian village, which was situated near the present village of Olivet, when he was told that it was still a petite march off, and could not be reached that night. Mr. Hayt went to the French trader's tent, where he procured supper, lodging, and breakfast. The supper consisted of venison and a kind of bread made with flour and water, and baked before the tent fire. After supper the trader put some large dent corn over to boil through the night for breakfast. During the evening the Indians came in with a bear, over which they had a dance. The trader advised Mr. Hayt not to go out, as they did not like spectators. The next morning the Indian led Mr. Hayt about a mile further to the bee tree, which was very large. With the Indian's help, they got about 100 pounds of honey, leaving a quantity of a poor quality for the poor Lo. The Indians made maple sugar, which they stirred off dry like brown sugar, and offered for sale in mococks, a kind of box made of bark, which would hold from ten to twenty pounds. The sugar looked nice, but it was said the young papooses were washed in the sap; consequently it did not find a ready sale with the fastidious whites.

When we reached Bellevue in 1834, we were at the end of the road, as the country on the north side of the Battle Creek was an unbroken wilderness. During the years 1835-6, people moved north into the timbered land and made small clearings, but except in winter the roads were almost impassable. For six or eight years I was sent for to go three or four miles to watch with and nurse the sick. At such times I was obliged to go on horseback or on foot, and often the roads were almost impassable on account of the mud and no road. In 1837 we moved to Marshall for one year. Mr. Hayt resigned the office of postmaster, and Caleb Woodbury, an influential and worthy man, succeeded him. In 1838 we moved back to Bellevue and into a new and more comfortable house, where we lived more than twenty years, and until we sold to Dr. Fero. This was the first painted house in Eaton county. My cousin, subsequently the wife of Caleb Woodbury, assisted me in laying down a carpet in my front room and hall, and after placing a table, chairs, and Franklin stove in the room, we felt we were nicely fixed for living. Among the persons who settled in the village in 1835-6 were Elial Bond, who built and kept for many years the public house on the square, called the Eagle hotel; also Asa Phelps, who in 1837 moved near Battle Creek; George Holden, who is now living with his daughter Mrs. Hughes; J. Pond, Caleb Woodbury, Dr. Samuel Clark, who died in the spring of 1845; Dr. S. H. Gage, who is still actively engaged in the practice of medicine; Mr. Haskell and his son Timothy, who bought farms south of the village. Mr. Grant, with his sons Amos, William, and Robert, came in the spring of 1837, and about the same time Norman S. Booth, Albert and George Avery, John T. Ellis, M. W. Walker, and William Hill. Mr. Holden and Dr. Gage still live in Bellevue. The only woman now living there who resided there when we went into the place, is Mrs. Hunsiker, who lives on the place improved by herself and husband. In the summer of 1836 Captain James Hickok moved in between Bellevue and Indian village,—now Olivet. When about two miles from Bellevue the oxen drawing the wagon containing the family became unmanageable. They ran against a tree, and in some way broke Mrs. Hickok's leg. Captain Hickok placed a bed upon the ground and Mrs. H. upon it, and then came to the village for help. She was brought to our house, where she remained two months. While there her youngest son, Isaac E. Crary Hickok, was born, being the first white male child born in the county, and now a resident thereof.*

For several years after the first settlement of the town there was sickness every fall. Many cases were fatal, and no one felt safe without quinine in the house. Calvin Phelps buried his wife and four children during the years 1835-6. I think their mode of living was little less fatal than the climate. Their house was open to the weather; sometimes they lived quite well on bread and meat, at other times their daily food was boiled fresh fish and corn bread without butter, etc. After our box of tallow candles was gone, and but a few sperm candles left, a substitute had to be found. I utilized the beeswax I had bought of the Indians in this manner. I set a cake of it before the fire until it was soft enough to shave nicely into strips, and while warm would wind it around strips of old cotton cloth. I used to make two a day; a long one to last the whole evening, and a shorter one to piece out when circumstances made it necessary. They gave a dim light, but with a great fire of logs the room became bright and cheerful, and we were contented and happy in anticipation of brighter times in the future.

From the lips of Mr. Lawrence Campbell, now a highly respected and intelligent citizen, residing in Marengo, Calhoun county, I have received the following facts and incidents connected with the early settlement of Bellevue. Mr. Campbell emigrated from Onondaga county, New York, and August 17, 1834, with his family, settled in Bellevue. He was induced in part to do so by the gift of two acres of land in the village, conditioned upon his building a blacksmith shop thereon and carrying on the business of blacksmithing. These conditions he complied with, but owing to the scarcity of work he kept his shop open then but one day in the week, working the balance of the time for Lansing Kingsbury or Peter Chisholm in Marshall, each of whom carried on blacksmithing at that place. At this time the saw-mill erected by General Crary and Mr. Pierce was in operation. Messrs. Fitzgerald, Hunsiker, Kimberly, Fonda, and their families, constituted the entire population of Eaton county. The first sermon delivered in Bellevue was by a Methodist missionary from Green Bay. Upon this occasion he was accompanied by Sidney Ketchum, himself a Methodist and one of the founders of the city of Marshall. In one week after Mr. Campbell reached Bellevue he buried a two-year-old daughter, which was the first white person buried in the county. This was on the 24th day of August, 1834. The first white male child born in the county was James, son of Lawrence Campbell, May 1, 1835.

The first attempt to navigate the Battle Creek was made by Colonel Fonda, who started for Battle Creek with a load of lime, in a small boat built by Lawrence Campbell. The lime slacking, and expanding the boat, sank it, but the crew were saved, as was the boat itself, for it afterward brought a load of potatoes from some point below to Bellevue. Mr. Campbell was the first tavern-keeper. Some idea of the capital required to keep his tavern supplied at that time may be found in the fact that he paid forty dollars a barrel for pork, and twenty dollars a barrel for flour. He charged fifty cents a meal, surely a very modest price. The price of lodging, whether in beds or upon the floor (and the latter by no means an unusual resting place) was remunerative.

---

*Since this was written, Hon. I. E. C. Hickok died at Charlotte.

In the summer of 1837 Samuel Searles, who then lived near Charlotte, lost his wife, whose remains were brought to Bellevue for interment. This bereaved husband placed the body of his wife upon an ox sled and brought it to Bellevue to be properly prepared for the grave by the ladies of the village. The writer adds that the place of interment cannot be found.

Rev. James F. Davidson, a missionary of the M. E. church, preached in Bellevue once in two weeks in 1835-6; a class was formed consisting of six persons, to wit: James Kimberly and wife, Lawrence Campbell and wife, and Sylvanus Hunsiker and wife. James Kimberly was the class leader. Rev. Hiram Colclazer held the first quarterly meeting in the barn of Dr. Carpenter. The Baptists had an early organization under Rev. T. Z. R. Jones.

Mr. Campbell says of Captain Fitzgerald that he was a reserved man, but was, from education and large experience, entitled to and received the confidence of the public to a great degree, as his counsel and coöperation were generally sought for, and always modestly and cheerfully given. He also says of the Messrs. Woodbury that they were men of means and enterprise, and gave Bellevue its most important business start.

An excellent quality of lime rock was soon discovered, especially along the south bank of the creek, and many of the early settlers embarked largely in its manufacture. Then, as now, it was, and is, a large factor in the commercial business of the place. Being on the confines of an ample forest, and possessing good water-power, the attention of the founders of the village was early drawn to the importance of manufacturing lumber. Their first step, therefore, was, as we have seen, the erection of a saw-mill, which was kept in constant operation. Every species of wood for lumbering purposes was found in the vicinity of the mill, except pine. Whitewood and black-walnut, two of our choicest woods, and of the finest quality, were very abundant,—so abundant, indeed, that for many years it was sold at a ruinously cheap rate, and has thus unfortunately diminished the supply, now that it possesses a greatly enhanced value. The manufacture of pot and pearl ashes and saleratus, also on account of the abundance of timber, was an early industry here, and was successfully carried on by the Messrs. Woodbury, and other merchants, for many years. Some of the "backwoodsmen" of Eaton county cleared up their farms the more rapidly because the ashes they made had only to be hauled to Bellevue to be transmuted into articles indispensable to family comfort, and possibly for which the wolf would have tarried longer at their door. Many a settler has been known to cut and burn his timber, having no other immediate end in view. This winter employment afforded fresh and abundant browse for the pair of oxen and one cow which constituted the herd of nine-tenths of the pioneers of that place and day. As the evening shades appeared, the hardy chopper would drive his stock before him to the music of the tinkling bells, to their mutually rude quarters for safety and repose. Some may have felt themselves the safer for having a trusty rifle at hand to protect themselves, or at least to overawe the wandering Indian,—a precaution born of distrust, and entirely unnecessary in those woods. As a general rule, confidence and kindness is as fully appreciated by the Indian as by his distrustful white neighbor.

Many of the more active business men who were pioneers in Bellevue, are herein mentioned, but by no means all of them; there were no drones in that hive. The Messrs. Hinman came in a little later, and long since moved to Battle Creek; but while in Eaton county they were thoroughly engaged in mercantile and other pursuits, and left upon Bellevue the impress of their restless energy. They bought ashes for seven cents a bushel, and wood for five shillings a cord, delivered at their ashery, and payable in goods. They manufactured large quantities of pot and pearl ashes and saleratus.

### THE HUGHES FAMILY.

Henry Hughes was born in East Haven, May 10, 1777; baptized June 6, 1778, Trinity church, New Haven; parents and Henry Freeman Hughes sponsors. When he was no more than four years of age his father moved to Russell, Hampden county, Massachusetts; after his death he went back to East Haven and lived with his grandfather and perhaps other relatives. During this period of his life he made several sea voyages to Nova Scotia and other points on the Atlantic coast, but tradition has fallen into considerable confusion as to the exact date and circumstances attending them. It has always been supposed, from his relation of this part of his history to his children, that these voyages were made with one of his uncles; but as he had no uncles in the paternal line who were seamen or ship-owners, this seems to be a mistake. His mother was greatly opposed to his following a sea-faring life, and came to New Haven and dissuaded him from proceeding on a voyage about to be undertaken. He yielded to her wishes, and went home with her to Russell; the vessel sailed soon after and was lost. Whoever was the owner of this vessel there seems no doubt that his escape from her fate was deeply impressed on his memory. After this he lived for a time with his mother at Russell, on the farm, but his stay was short. He went to Hebron, Washington county, N. Y., to live, and there married his first wife, Sally Whedon, who was probably a distant relation on his mother's side, as the Whedon family, to which his mother belonged, resided at that place. Sally was a sister to Augustus Whedon, who married Grace Hughes, sister to Henry. The marriage of Henry and Sally was in May, 1796. In 1799 he went to Camillus, Onondaga county, N. Y., and bought the land that was for a long time the homestead of the family.

His brother, Freeman Hughes, and brothers-in-law, Augustus Whedon and Abner Carpenter, accompanied him on this expedition in search of a new home. At this time the township of Camillus contained a population of only fifty-four and Syracuse was a small Indian settlement, containing a few white families and situated in an almost inaccessible swamp. The village of Geddes had no existence, and the whole country was a wilderness. The nearest post-office and settlement of any consequence was at Onondaga Hollow.*

This purchase was fifty-five acres from James Geddes. It was conveyed by deed April 29, 1799. It was a part of lot thirty-five of the Onondaga reservation, bounded on the north by the bounds of said lot, on the west by the middle of a road on the east side of Israel Kimberly's land, on the south by the middle of the turnpike road, and on the east by a line parallel to the west line and fifteen chains therefrom. Subsequent purchases increased this farm to 150 acres.

---

*Clark's Onondaga.

He cleared an acre or more of the land, built a log house, put in a few crops, and the next year, 1800, returned to Hebron for his small family, and moved with his wife and one child, Lucretia, on to the new farm. His mother, Grace, either accompanied him or soon after came to him in his new home, and lived with him until her death. On this farm, which is about one and a half miles east of Camillus village, and on the north side of the turnpike leading to Syracuse, he resided many years; and with the exception of a few years immediately preceding his removal to Michigan,—during which he lived on the adjoining farm which he purchased of Harry Kimberly,—was his home until September 3, 1840.

There came to Camillus with him or about the same time several of the Whedon families, into one of which he had married, and purchased lands in the same neighborhood. Several of these were coopers as well as farmers, and he and they carried on the coopering business for several years on their new farms. The rapid development of the manufacture of salt made a demand for barrels, and the circumstance of the coopers' business being prosecuted to such an extent, gave to the neighborhood the name of Cooper street, by which it has ever since been known.

There were by his first marriage, eight children, three of whom died in early life of consumption. He was a strong, healthy, vigorous man, near six feet in hight, blue eyes, head quite bald; spare but muscular. His remaining children, with one exception, have lived to mature age in the enjoyment of robust health. His first wife died February 13, 1821, leaving the youngest child, Sally, an infant. The children of the first marriage were all born at Camillus except the first: Lucretia, October 30, 1799; m. Aaron White. Polly, December 22, 1800; m. William Finch. Sally, May 28, 1803; d. July 1, 1820. Maria, May 28, 1805; m. Cephas Blodgett. Son, July 13, 1807; d. July 16, 1807. Electa, January 23, 1810; m. William Plum, a farmer residing near Geddes'; she died May 15, 1831, leaving no children; consumption. Henry C., June 22, 1814; m. Charlotte Loomis. Laura, January 1, 1818; m. Renselaer W. Kennedy. Sally Triphena, June 17, 1820; m. Mortimer F. Sweeting.

In March, 1822, he married Hannah, widow of David Earll of Marcellus. Her maiden name was Hannah Bowen. They continued to reside on the farm in Camillus until the autumn of 1840, when, influenced by the fact that some of the children had settled in the west, and by a desire to afford the others better opportunity to establish themselves in life, they removed with their family to Bellevue, Eaton county, Michigan, where they had a comfortable house built and made ready for occupation, and where they intended to spend the rest of their days retired from active business. In 1839, preparatory to removal to Michigan, he contracted for the sale of his farm to Mortimer F. Sweeting, his son-in-law.

When they came to Michigan the diseases of the climate were very prevalent and fatal. On the 29th of July, 1841, she was attacked with a chill fever, and the most careful and energetic measures were unavailing to check its course, and on the 8th of August following she died. She had always been a healthy, energetic, and active woman, remarkably free from attacks of illness; and it is a notable fact that persons with such sound constitutions and such uniform robust health as she possessed, were quite apt to be the first to yield to the terrible fevers with which Michigan was at that day infested. On the 10th she was buried in the cemetery at Bellevue. Father Sabin, a Methodist preacher of great purity of character, and usefulness, preached the funeral sermon, Numbers, 23d chapter, last part of the 10th verse,—"Let me die the death of the righteous, and let my last end be like his." She had been a member of the Methodist church a great many years and died in that faith.

She was a lady of good personal appearance, rather under the average in stature, dark eyes and hair, stout rather than slender; of refined notions, ambitious and enterprising, and well calculated to advance the interests of those who were placed under her care. She held a high rank socially, but was plain and unostentatious.

The children of the second marriage, all born at Camillus, were: David Darwin, February 1, 1823; m. Cynthia C. Jones. Amanda Celestia, September 16, 1824; m. Seneca H. Gage. Elitha Elpha, December 21, 1826; m. Jared F. Sykes. Rossel Bowen, October 4, 1828; m. Addale Holden. Caroline Hannah, October 1, 1830; m. John C. Spencer.

He was afflicted with climatic diseases at the time of the death of his wife Hannah, and never afterwards fully recovered his health, and his memory became greatly impaired. He married Ruth Brown, a widow by whom he had no children; gradually failed, mentally and physically, until his death, December 14, 1848. He was buried beside his wife Hannah in the Bellevue cemetery.

He was a man of prominence in the neighborhood where his active life was passed, of strict integrity and good capacity.

At the time of the attack of the British on the fort at Oswego, he marched with a company of militia commanded by him to the relief of the fort, but arrived after its capture. He was known familiarly in business and social circles as Captain Hughes. He was an enthusiastic Methodist, and studied the scriptures and commentaries with great persistency, and among religious friends was known as Father Hughes. His integrity commanded the confidence and respect of all, and his genial good humor and well-developed intellect made him a pleasant and rational companion. No one was more fond of a jest than he, and very few had much to do with him without feeling the point of his pungent wit; but it was never offensive, or approached anything like sarcasm, and was never used as a weapon to wound the feelings of others. The rigid economy which he practiced exhibited itself in all his affairs, and particularly in his dress; cleanliness and comfort were the governing idea. No ornament was ever seen upon his person; fashion was entirely ignored and its requirements disregarded if not despised.

David Darwin Hughes, one of the compilers of this sketch, was born at Camillus, New York, February 1, 1823. Received what was then a liberal education in the Syracuse and Canandaigua academies. Accompanied his farther's family to Michigan in September, 1840. The following April returned to Camillus and spent the summer until late in July, remained at Bellevue the following winter, and was then appointed deputy in several of the county offices of Eaton county, and resided at Charlotte about two years. Commenced to study law with M. S. Brackett of Bellevue, and in 1844 removed to Marshall, and continued and completed his legal studies with Gibbs & Bradley, a noted law firm. Was admitted to the bar in 1846 by Judge Warner Wing, at the Eaton circuit, and October 14th of the same year married Cynthia Caroline Jones, at her father's house in Akron, Ohio. The ceremony was by Rev. Mr. Forman. She was born at Middlebury, Summit county, Ohio, September 16, 1828. Is a member of the Episcopal church, in which all her children have been baptized. He immediately entered upon the practice of the law at Marshall, Michigan. In 1849, and one or two succeeding years, edited the Democratic Expounder. Was appointed United States commissioner in 1849, and held the place until the division of the Federal district. In 1851, formed a law partnership with Hon. Isaac E. Crary, which did a successful business under the name of Crary & Hughes. Was prosecuting attorney for Calhoun county for two terms. The law firm was dissolved by the death of Mr. Crary, May 10, 1854, leaving a large amount of important legal business on the hands of the junior and surviving partner, who employed Justin D. Woolley, then a law student in his office, and prosecuted the business for about a year in his own name. At the expiration of that time, he formed a law partnership with Mr. Woolley, under the name of Hughes & Woolley, which continued for several years; but as more important business increased, he gradually abandoned a local practice, and about 1865 gave his entire attention to the trial of important and leading cases in different portions of the State, and surrendered the local business entirely to his partner, although his name continued in the firm until the beginning of 1871.

In politics he has always been a democrat; doubted and deprecated the necessity of the rebellion, but when it became a fixed fact, was a steady advocate of the union side of the controversy, and was a war democrat. Was tendered by Governor Blair a commission as colonel of the Twentieth Michigan Volunteers, which he declined. He has never sought political preferment, but adhered steadily to the practice of his profession. Was mayor of the city of Marshall for two terms, and against his own wishes and inclinations has been twice a candidate for representative in Congress, and twice for judge of the supreme court of Michigan, but was defeated with his party on each occasion.

In April, 1871, he accepted the position of General Counsel for the Grand Rapids and Indiana railroad company and the Continental Improvement company, which he still holds, and went to Grand Rapids, Michigan, to assume the duties of the place. His family remained at Marshall until September, 1872, when the homestead at that place was sold, and they joined him at Grand Rapids, where a new home had been built and furnished for their reception. The homestead in Marshall was a pleasant suburban place of about ten acres on Kalamazoo avenue, about half a mile north of the main street. The new home in Grand Rapids is a city residence on Jefferson avenue, near Island street.

As the new duties assumed in connection with the corporations above mentioned required the employment of assistants, he formed, early in 1871, a partnership with Thomas J. O'Brien, then a prosperous lawyer of a few years' practice, and member of the firm of Fitzgerald & O'Brien. The new firm of Hughes & O'Brien opened an office in Grand Rapids, and in little more than a year found it necessary to add more working force to dispatch the business constantly accumulating. To effect this, Mitchell J. Smiley, of Kalamazoo, and a member of the firm of Balch, Smiley & Balch, a lawyer of several years' practice, and who was rapidly working himself into a prominent position at the bar, was added to the firm, and its name changed to Hughes, O'Brien & Smiley. The firm continues to enjoy an extensive and profitable business, and employs a large corps of clerks and assistants, several of whom are practicing lawyers.

R. H. Hughes, the youngest of the family, was for twenty years in mercantile business in Bellevue, but is, I think, at this time station agent on the G.

R. & I. R. R. at Big Rapids. During the war of the rebellion he commanded a company in Merrill's Horse.

### MARTIN S. BRACKETT.

The man most prominent, all things considered, who lived and died in Bellevue, was the Hon. M. S. Brackett, whose obituary notice, as printed in the Bellevue Gazette, February 15, 1877, is herewith appended:

"*Life, Death, and Funeral of an old Resident of Bellevue.*

"We had hoped that some one, an older resident of this county and one earlier and better acquainted than we with the late Hon. M. S. Brackett, would be found to prepare for the columns of the Gazette a history of his early life, his long residence in Michigan, his death and burial, but as no such preparation has been made, we have consented to prepare such an article according to the best of our ability.

"Mr. Brackett was born in the village of Elbridge, Onondaga county, N. Y., December 19, 1810, and passed his boyhood days in working on his father's farm and in the brickyard during summers, and attending district schools during winters. At fifteen years of age he entered an academy at Onondaga Hollow, where he remained for three terms. He then returned home and pursued his studies until the close of the summer of 1828, under the instruction of Rev. Timothy Stowe, pastor of the Presbyterian church at the time. He then spent two years in the employ of his brother, in superintending the construction of nine miles of the Chesapeake and Ohio canal, near Washington. Early in 1831 he commenced civil engineering under the supervision of Judge Wright, in the State of New Jersey, and did valuable service in the construction of the canal built through New Jersey at that time, and also in the partial excavation of the canal for the water-works at Trenton. The Trenton company being enjoined from further proceedings, Mr. Brackett went to Philadelphia and took a contract on the Philadelphia, Germantown & Morristown railroad. After finishing this contract he went to New York city, where he entered into a contract with Robert L. Stevens, Esq., to furnish the stone blocks for the Camden & Amboy railroad. He then returned to Onondaga Hollow, and entered the law office of the Hon. James R. Lawrence, where he studied law for over two years. In 1836, after the commencement of the Auburn & Syracuse railroad, Mr. Brackett contracted for and completed the heaviest job on the line. It was also under his supervision that the Erie canal was enlarged from Syracuse to Geddes.

"In the spring of 1838 he became one of the earlier settlers of Bellevue, and at once identified himself with the growth and prosperity of the now great State of Michigan. In the fall of that year he entered the law office of Gibbs & Bradley, of Marshall, and the following year was admitted to the practice of his profession. During the same year he was elected county clerk, and held the office for six years, when he was chosen prosecuting attorney, remaining in that position for three years, holding one year by appointment. He was a candidate for State senator upon the whig ticket in 1842, but with his party was defeated. In 1848 he identified himself with the democratic party, with whom he has ever since acted. He was their candidate for State senator in 1856, and for lieutenant governor in 1864.

"Foreseeing as he did, in the no very distant future, the possibilities and probabilities of a railroad through our town, Mr. Brackett added his early knowledge of constructing public works, to his enterprise and energy in pushing improvements of such a nature, and joining forces with Hon. L. D. Dibble of Battle Creek, worked and talked for the road, until, on the 7th of September, 1865, the organization of the company was completed in his office in this village, and work at once commenced on a road which he lived almost long enough to see grow to be one of the best roads in the west. He was elected one of the directors, and also secretary and attorney, all of which positions he held steadily up to the time of the consolidation of the Peninsula and Port Huron and Lake Michigan roads under the title of the Chicago & Lake Huron.

"Mr. Brackett was also prominently identified with the early history of the order of Good Templars, and was for three years Grand Worthy Chief Templar. His love for the study of geology led him to spend much time and many dollars in collecting specimens, and it has been conceded for years that not more than one finer collection of such specimens could be found in the State, and that at the State university. Mr. Brackett possessed many traits of character which made him a pleasant and sociable companion, a kind husband and father, a generous, kindly disposed neighbor, and a good citizen. He leaves a wife in feeble health, the companion of his youth, and seven sons and three daughters, all of whom reached home in time to find him alive.

"As to his last sickness and death we can only say that it was less than one week after he first gave up business before his death. The disease which terminated his life seemed to be inflammation of the lungs complicated with inflammation of the liver.

"The funeral services, which were held at the late residence of the deceased on Sunday last, were conducted by the Masonic fraternity, of which deceased had long been a prominent member, and was the largest attended of any funeral ever held in Bellevue. Not less than 1,200 people were in attendance, between 300 and 400 of whom belong to the Masonic order. The burial services were conducted by the Peninsula Commandery of Knights Templar of Kalamazoo. Special trains were run from both ways, and commanderies and lodges were present from Kalamazoo, Marshall, Battle Creek, Charlotte, Vermontville, Kalamo, and Bellevue. Rev. Mr. Fox, of Charlotte, preached the sermon, and was assisted in conducting the services by Rev. M. Smith of the Baptist church."

The geological and mineral collection owned by M. S. Brackett, Esq., of Bellevue, is well worthy of historical mention before leaving the Bellevue portion of our sketch. A correspondent of the Detroit Tribune published in June, 1874, in describing this fine collection, says: "Mr. Brackett has been gathering contributions for thirty years from all parts of the world for this rare cabinet. In a large room built expressly for the purpose, finely classified, are petrifactions, corals, metals, rocks and fossils from the formations of every period. The leading attraction of this collection is a case of precious stones, among which are Brazilian agates, sapphire, topaz, emeralds, beryl, garnets, onyx, Lake Superior and western agates, cornelians, turquoises, opals, rubies, etc. Many of these are highly polished, and they are so arranged in an octagon case that all may be brought under the rays of the strong light. Mr. Brackett has in his collection a meteoric stone weighing 102 pounds, rare Indian relics, and a part of a petrified serpent, which must have been seventy feet in length. A lapidary for dressing and polishing fine stones, a geological chart, and many standard books treating of these interesting subjects, are among the valuables of Mr. Brackett's collection, and have been gathered and placed here in a most attractive way for his own recreation and the entertainment of his friends. In value and extent this collection is greatly in advance of many of the college cabinets."

This collection has received frequent visits from abroad. It has become so large that it requires an entire day to view it with satisfaction. Among the Indian relics are flint spears and arrow heads, stone hatchets and axes, stone chisels and skinning knives, and stone pestles for pounding. The cabinet also contains a fine collection of shells. The meteoric stone fell on the farm of an old German residing in Bellevue several years ago.

As an able lawyer practicing in our earliest courts, as an efficient clerk of the county commissioners and supervisors, and as a guide in all kinds of public business, putting matters in shape, Mr. Brackett has filled a prominent place in the early history of our county.

### ENTRIES OF LAND.

The following lands in the township of Bellevue were entered at the land office and to the persons named:

| | Sec. | Acres. | Patentee. |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1832 | 28 | 160 | Luther Lincoln. |
| | 27 | 160 | I. E. Crary. |
| | 28 | 80 | " |
| 1833 | 27 | 80 | S. Hunsiker. |
| | 28 | 40 | I. E. Crary. |
| | 28 | 320 | S. Hunsiker. |
| | 29 | 80 | " |
| | 29 | 160 | " |
| | 32 | 160 | " |
| | 33 | 160 | " |
| 1834 | 21 | 80 | W. C. Fonda. |
| | 28 | 40 | J. Tripp. |
| | 29 | 40 | B. Bader. |
| 1835 | 5 | 80 | N. & H. Weed. |
| | 8 | 160 | " |
| | 9 | 80 | T. R. Smith. |
| | 11 | 80 | J. Shepherd. |
| | 13 | 320 | N. & H. Weed. |
| | 13 | 160 | S. Hubbard. |
| | 14 | 80 | G. R. Wilbur. |
| | 15 | 160 | E. K. & P. Howland. |
| | 17 | 80 | N. & H. Weed. |
| | 19 | 40 | J. Reynolds. |
| | 20 | 80 | R. Bell. |
| | 20 | 80 | B. Bosworth. |
| | 20 | 160 | J. Luscomb. |
| | 21 | 160 | P. Campbell. |
| | 21 | 80 | C. Allen. |
| | 21 | 80 | S. A. Southworth. |
| | 21 | 80 | J. Easton. |
| | 21 | 80 | A. Meach. |
| | 21 | 80 | T. Cassida. |
| | 22 | 120 | R. Fitzgerald. |
| 1835 | 22 | 80 | T. Daniels. |
| | 22 | 40 | R. Slader, Jr. |
| | 22 | 40 | P. Campbell. |
| | 22 | 40 | S. Hunsiker. |
| | 22 | 80 | L. Russel. |
| | 22 | 160 | L. L. Ives. |
| | 22 | 80 | A. E. Ives. |
| | 23 | 80 | G. H. Wilbur. |
| | 23 | 80 | R. Fitzgerald. |
| | 23 | 160 | Wm. Goss. |
| | 24 | 120 | G. C. Gibbs. |
| | 24 | 40 | J. T. Ellis. |
| | 26 | 80 | H. Powers. |
| | 26 | 80 | C. Sprague. |
| | 26 | 80 | H. Powers. |
| | 27 | 160 | B. Rowley. |
| | 27 | 80 | C. Sprague. |
| | 27 | 80 | Hubbard & Co. |
| | 29 | 40 | S. Hunsiker. |
| | 29 | 160 | B. Bosworth. |
| | 29 | 160 | E. Conviss. |
| | 30 | 40 | W. R. Shepherd. |
| | 32 | 80 | H. C. Hughes. |
| | 32 | 160 | " |
| | 32 | 120 | C. H. Hunsiker. |
| | 33 | 120 | B. Atheran. |
| | 34 | 80 | J. Beers. |
| | 35 | 160 | C. Sprague. |
| 1836 | 1 | 165 | A. Day. |
| | 1 | 165 | R. Swift. |
| | 1 | 80 | P. S. Spaulding. |
| | 1 | 80 | P. Dubois. |
| | 1 | 160 | A. Sessions. |

| | Sec. | Acres. | Patentee. |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1836 | 2 | 164 | Thos. Scott. |
| | 2 | 165 | W. Tillotson. |
| | 2 | 160 | Joel Barker. |
| | 2 | 160 | P. Dubois. |
| | 3 | 167 | H. Colton. |
| | 3 | 168 | W. Swift. |
| | 3 | 160 | P. S. Spaulding. |
| | 3 | 80 | A. M. Mills. |
| | 3 | 80 | D. Clark. |
| | 4 | 80 | W. Swift. |
| | 4 | 169 | D. Lucas. |
| | 4 | 80 | A. W. Rogers. |
| | 4 | 320 | N. Chase. |
| | 5 | 80 | A. W. Rogers. |
| | 5 | 170 | F. Fordham. |
| | 5 | 240 | Chas. Cummings. |
| | 6 | 80 | S. Fordham. |
| | 6 | 96 | E. H. Evans. |
| | 6 | 80 | A. Webster. |
| | 6 | 160 | D. Judson. |
| | 7 | 40 | J. T. Hayt. |
| | 7 | 40 | C. Tilton. |
| | 7 | 80 | S. Hunsiker. |
| | 7 | 175 | H. Hunsiker. |
| | 7 | 93 | Clark & Daniels. |
| | 7 | 80 | J. B. White. |
| | 7 | 120 | Hunsiker. |
| | 8 | 80 | J. P. Woodbury. |
| | 8 | 240 | J. Chase. |
| | 8 | 80 | Wm. Kindell. |
| | 8 | 80 | S. Labar. |
| | 9 | 240 | E. Follett. |

| | Sec. | Acres. | Patentee. |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1836 | 9 | 80 | P. Hathaway. |
| | 10 | 40 | J. N. Higgins. |
| | 10 | 80 | F. Haskell. |
| | 10 | 80 | J. S. Shepherd. |
| | 11 | 160 | P. Dubois. |
| | 11 | 40 | J. Barber. |
| | 11 | 160 | A. F. Phipps. |
| | 11 | 80 | R. Battey. |
| | 12 | 160 | C. S. Grinell. |
| | 12 | 40 | A. Day. |
| | 12 | 40 | C. H. Church. |
| | 12 | 80 | D. Clark. |
| | 12 | 80 | R. Battey. |
| | 12 | 80 | A. E. & L. L. Ives. |
| | 32 | 37 | G. Osborn. |
| | 33 | 40 | T. Haskell. |
| | 33 | 80 | A. White. |
| | 33 | 80 | O. Morse. |
| | 33 | 80 | Dodge & Fitch. |
| | 34 | 120 | L. Campbell. |
| | 34 | 40 | E. Avery. |
| | 34 | 80 | T. Haskell. |
| | 34 | 80 | J. R. Grosenover. |
| | 35 | 120 | L. Campbell. |
| | 35 | 40 | J. Beers. |
| | 35 | 240 | L. Campbell. |
| | 36 | 80 | S. McAlister. |
| | 36 | 240 | C. P. Ives. |
| | 36 | 160 | R. B. Way. |
| | 36 | 80 | L. Pierpont. |
| | 36 | 80 | A. Ingham. |

Bones of the Mammoth (*Mastodon Giganteus*) have been found on the farm of Charles Cummings, in this town, and have been exhibited in many parts of the State. These bones being near the surface, and in low ground, were easily and safely exhumed. When first exposed to the air, being exceedingly friable, they crumbled some, but upon being dried, oiled, and varnished, they acquired so much solidity that they can now be handled and put in juxtaposition with entire safety. Although there are many missing bones, yet enough are found to establish the fact beyond controversy that these bones were once wielded by the largest animal of its species yet discovered.

Occasional discoveries of immense bones were made as early as 1705, but no skeleton approximating completeness, until, 1801, when a nearly perfect skeleton was found on the bank of the Hudson river, Orange county, New York. In 1826 the writer saw it, neatly wired, and nearly complete, in Peale's museum, Philadelphia. From the base of the skull to the roots of the tail was seventeen feet; circumference of the body about sixteen and a half feet; the tusks were eleven feet long. The bones of this animal have been discovered in all latitudes, and invariably on the borders of streams or upon marshy grounds, as in this instance. Taking this circumstance into consideration, together with the configuration of the teeth, it is inferred that the animal subsisted on vegetables, largely perhaps on aquatic plants. Mr. Cummings writes me as follows:

"The length of the femur, or thigh bone, is three feet ten inches; circumference of the head of the femur is two feet; three feet around the largest part of this bone, just below the neck of the femur; two feet ten inches around the lower end, and one foot nine inches around the middle of the femur. The weight was fifty-eight pounds before it was oiled or varnished. The shoulder-blade is two feet ten inches long. The longest rib measures four feet seven inches. All I can say about the tusks is, we found the remains of one over twelve feet long, and at least three feet in circumference at the largest end, but was so far decayed that it could not be preserved. It is supposed that the length of the hind foot was two feet six inches. Judging from the length and curve of the ribs this animal must have measured about twenty-four feet around, for the ribs curve on an arch of about seven feet. I think it would be safe to say that the length of the animal from the base of the head to the roots of the tail was fourteen feet. I have four teeth belonging to the upper jaw; the largest one weighs six pounds.

## KALAMO.

Kalamo was organized in 1838, and at the first town meeting eighteen votes were cast, and the following persons elected as follows, to wit:

P. A. Stebbins, supervisor.

T. T. Stebbins, town clerk.

Eli H. Evans, P. S. Spaulding, Lewis Stebbins, Nathan Brooks, justices of the peace.

G. B. Griffin, Phineas Spaulding, assessors.

John Davies, treasurer.

At the second town meeting there were polled twenty-five votes; third, forty-four votes; fourth, forty-nine votes.

Its present poll list is large and composed of strong men morally and intellectually. There are seven whole and six fractional school districts; nine school-houses—value, $2,975; no graded schools; number of children drawing public money, 479; two church edifices, one resident clergyman, one grist and saw-mill, one grist-mill and one saw-mill driven by steam, one water saw-mill, five doctors, five stores, one stave-mill, one planing-mill, two postoffices, one tavern. Erastus Clemons carries a tri-weekly mail to and from Charlotte, and runs a comfortable stage both summer and winter. The Marshall, Coldwater, & Mackinac R. R. passes through the town, and when completed the village of Kalamo will be one of its most important stations. Beach, maple, oak, black walnut, and whitewood timber attains great height and perfection, and has been and now is of great commercial importance. It must not be inferred, from the number of doctors, that it is not a healthy town, for I understand it is said by the respectable medical gentlemen to be distressingly otherwise. Two tributaries of Thornapple river traverse the town from south to north. On section twenty-five an expansion of one of these streams is dignified with the appearance and name of lake. The Messrs. Gridleys came into the town at an early day and built a steam saw-mill, which supplied settlers and others with a good quality of lumber and at a cheap rate, and made other and useful improvements in and about the present village of Kalamo. They attached grain grinding to their saw-mill after a few years, which has been a great convenience and relief. "Uncle Sam. Herron" kept a tavern one mile north of the village, and a mighty good one it was. Hot, flaky biscuits and pure, beautiful honey was a standing dish and never excelled. The weary land-lookers who surrounded his spacious fire-place glowing with the heat of half a dozen logs, can never forget the hearty though rude hospitality of the landlord and landlady of the "forest tavern." The officers elected at the first town meeting indicates who were the prominent men at that day. Spalding, Stebbins, and Griffin, I remember as genial, industrious and competent men. The town is moderately rolling, well timbered and watered; soil productive and generally easily cultivated. North of the village the soil is a gravelly loam, while south of it is a heavy soil, clay predominating. Its productions for export are wheat, wool, fruit, potatoes and lumber. Maple sugar and honey are common delicacies.

The entries of lands are as follows:

| | Sec. | Acres. | Patentee. |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1835 | 1 | 160 | Weed. |
| | 5 | 78 | " |
| | 6 | 78 | T. R. Smith. |
| 1836 | 8 | 160 | Weed. |
| | 9 | 80 | N. & H. Weed. |
| | 17 | 160 | T. R. Smith. |
| | 29 | 80 | N. & H. Weed. |
| | 32 | 40 | " |
| | 1 | 487 | A. B. Law. |
| | 2 | 324 | " |
| | 2 | 321 | W. C. Henry. |
| | 3 | 318 | J. W. Gordon. |
| | 4 | 238 | H. Butler. |
| | 3 | 160 | A. Warner. |
| | 4 | 319 | J. W. Gordon. |
| | 5 | 158 | C. T. Moffatt. |
| | 5 | 160 | H. H. Hooker. |
| | 6 | 40 | J. A. Thomas. |
| | 6 | 171 | R. Griswold. |
| | 6 | 93 | D. Love. |
| | 6 | 80 | N. Willis. |
| | 6 | 160 | S. H. Preston. |
| | 7 | 80 | J. D. Pierce. |
| | 7 | 80 | B. F. Cleveland. |
| | 7 | 80 | D. Herron. |
| | 7 | 91 | S. D. Webster. |
| | 7 | 170 | D. Dickenson. |
| | 7 | 160 | J. C. Dickenson. |
| | 8 | 160 | Peter Chisholm. |
| | 8 | 160 | T. J. Willis. |
| | 8 | 80 | N. Willis. |
| | 8 | 80 | C. Robinson. |
| | 9 | 80 | C. T. Moffatt. |
| | 9 | 80 | H. Butler. |

| | Sec. | Acres. | Patentee. |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1836 | 13 | 320 | Russel Hubbard. |
| | 15 | 160 | H. Butler. |
| | 17 | 80 | " |
| | 17 | 160 | T. J. Willis. |
| | 18 | 336 | McComber. |
| | 20 | 160 | H. Butler. |
| | 20 | 80 | A. W. Rogers. |
| | 21 | 160 | T. W. Hall. |
| | 21 | 160 | S. S. Church. |
| | 21 | 80 | H. Butler. |
| | 21 | 80 | A. W. Rogers. |
| | 21 | 80 | T. W. Hall. |
| | 23 | 320 | A. Warner. |
| | 54 | 160 | H. S. Grinell. |
| | 24 | 80 | J. E. Kerr. |
| | 26 | 160 | F. Brown. |
| | 26 | 80 | J. Brown. |
| | 26 | 240 | J. W. Hicks. |
| | 27 | 160 | C. P. Dibble. |
| | 27 | 80 | J. Brown. |
| | 28 | 160 | H. Butler. |
| | 29 | 160 | " |
| | 29 | 160 | R. Fitzgerald. |
| | 30 | 163 | J. Wight. |
| | 31 | 120 | E. H. Evans. |
| | 31 | 80 | S. Peso. |
| | 32 | 120 | D. Bowen. |
| | 32 | 160 | H. Brown. |
| | 32 | 160 | Isaac Gibbs. |
| | 33 | 160 | H. Butler. |
| | 34 | 80 | P. P. Kellogg. |
| | 34 | 160 | H. Colton. |
| | 35 | 80 | P. S. Spaulding. |
| | 35 | 80 | M. Leach. |

| | Sec. | Acres. | Patentee. |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1836 | 35 | 80 | P. P. Kellogg. |
| | 35 | 80 | Sydmore. |
| | 35 | 160 | T. Scott. |

| | Sec. | Acres. | Patentee. |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1836 | 36 | 120 | A. Stevens. |
| | 36 | 160 | A. Brooks. |
| | 36 | 160 | A. Sessions. |

Seven thousand nine hundred and forty acres of land were entered in 1837.

### WALTON.

Walton held its first township meeting April 1, 1839, at the house of Joseph Bosworth. John Miller was chairman, and James W. Hickok secretary. The township officers elected were as follows:

Parley P. Shumway, supervisor.

Joseph Bosworth, town clerk.

Parley P. Shumway, John Miller, Silas Fordham, Richard Hughes, justices of the peace.

Joseph Chase, collector.

Joseph Bosworth, John Miller, Benjamin F. Belding, assessors.

Silas Fordham, Robert Campbell, James W. Hickok, commissioners of highways.

Benjamin Shumway, treasurer.

John Miller, James W. Hickok, Samuel Bond, school inspectors.

Benjamin Shumway, Joseph Chase, constables.

Parley P. Shumway, Joseph Miller, overseers of poor.

Joseph Bosworth, Charles Peters, Parley P. Shumway, Benjamin F. Belding, overseers of highways.

The number of school districts, when the town was organized, was two; at the present time, eight. There is no graded school in town. The number of children drawing public money is 538. The number attending school is 412. The value of school-houses and grounds is $3,550. There are four church organizations, to wit: two Congregational, one United Brethren, and one Methodist Episcopal. The church edifices are worth about $7,000. There are three steam saw-mills, one saw-mill driven by water, one grist-mill using both steam and water, one planing-mill and rake factory using steam and water. The productions are wheat, corn, oats, hay, timothy seed, etc. Large quantities of apples, cattle, and hogs are also largely raised. Surplus products marketed at Charlotte and Marshall. Town rolling and very healthy.

There are some eight or ten stores and shops at Olivet. There are four doctors, eight resident clergymen, including the reverend faculty of Olivet college. George W. Keyes and E. N. Ely are leading citizens. At this time Thomas Scott is supervisor, George W. Keyes and Joseph Chappel justices of the peace, A. G. Wright treasurer, and George T. Haskell town clerk.

The entries of public lands were as follows:

| | Sec. | Acres. | Patentee. |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1835 | 1 | 420 | T. R. Smith. |
| | 14 | 160 | N. & H. Weed. |
| | 19 | 40 | Arnold. |
| | 19 | 80 | S. A. Smith. |
| | 20 | 160 | “ |
| | 20 | 120 | J. Miller. |
| 1836 | 2 | 175 | C. Osgood. |
| | 2 | 160 | J. H. Dewey. |

| | Sec. | Acres. | Patentee. |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1833 | 6 | 167 | C. M. Lee. |
| | 4 | 160 | D. B. Phillips. |
| | 4 | 80 | A. M. Peck. |
| | 6 | 75 | A. B. Austin. |
| | 6 | 80 | A. A. Grant. |
| | 6 | 160 | G. W. Taylor. |
| | 7 | 160 | F. Clark. |
| | 7 | 80 | J. W. Hicks. |

| | Sec. | Acres. | Patentee. |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1836 | 7 | 318 | C. H. Carroll. |
| | 8 | 160 | “ |
| | 9 | 320 | F. Bushnell. |
| | 10 | 320 | “ |
| | 10 | 320 | C. M. Lee. |
| | 11 | 160 | T. R. Smith. |
| | 12 | 160 | “ |
| | 13 | 160 | Dodge & Fitch. |
| | 13 | 160 | G. Wilcox. |
| | 14 | 160 | Dodge & Fitch. |
| | 15 | 240 | J. Bosworth. |
| | 15 | 160 | Dodge & Fitch. |
| | 17 | 40 | H. Quimby. |
| | 18 | 556 | C. H. Carroll. |
| | 18 | 40 | C. Arnold. |
| | 19 | 200 | Jas. W. Hickok. |
| | 20 | 120 | H. Quimby. |
| | 20 | 80 | M. Clark. |
| | 20 | 160 | W. Wright. |
| | 21 | 640 | H. W. Field. |
| | 22 | 160 | B. Palmer. |
| | 22 | 40 | J. Bosworth. |
| | 22 | 160 | E. Bacon. |
| | 23 | 320 | P. W. Brown. |
| | 23 | 160 | E. Bacon. |
| | 23 | 80 | Wilcox. |
| | 24 | 80 | Buckingham. |
| | 24 | 80 | G. Wright. |
| | 24 | 160 | Kingsland. |
| | 25 | 80 | Baker. |
| 1836 | 25 | 80 | C. Waldo. |
| | 26 | 240 | Dodge & Fitch. |
| | 26 | 80 | J. Wilcox. |
| | 26 | 160 | C. Bacon. |
| | 26 | 80 | F. Fordham. |
| | 26 | 80 | Woodburys. |
| | 27 | 80 | C. Bacon. |
| | 27 | 40 | S. Fordham. |
| | 28 | 160 | I. Clark. |
| | 29 | 80 | H. G. Rice. |
| | 29 | 120 | S. Holland. |
| | 29 | 160 | E. L. Ely. |
| | 29 | 360 | M. Clark. |
| | 30 | 240 | J. W. Hickok. |
| | 30 | 159 | B. Shumway. |
| | 30 | 160 | J. B. Jackson. |
| | 31 | 138 | Levi Bishop. |
| | 31 | 163 | C. M. Lee. |
| | 32 | 160 | O. Williams. |
| | 32 | 120 | S. Holland. |
| | 32 | 80 | C. M. Lee. |
| | 33 | 80 | M. Ely. |
| | 33 | 80 | L. Ely. |
| | 33 | 80 | M. Clark. |
| | 33 | 120 | C. Insleman. |
| | 34 | 480 | D. W. Crapsey. |
| | 35 | 320 | J. W. Hickok. |
| | 35 | 160 | S. Fordham. |
| | 36 | 160 | G. Phipps. |
| | 36 | 320 | J. G. Bean. |

Four thousand one hundred and ninety-eight acres were entered in 1837.

Joseph Bosworth moved into this town in 1837, coming to the end of the road on section fifteen. Here he lived in his wagon box with wife, daughter, and brother while a shanty was being built, probably about a week. He was an active man, popular in his town, and filled many of its offices.

Captain Jas. W. Hickok was born at Lansingburg, N. Y., December 9, 1798, and was named after his father. He recieved a fair education for those times, which has been wisely improved by a long life of reading and observation. He married Eliza Wood, of Corinth, Saratoga county, New York, July 8, 1819. This is the lady whose limb was fractured, and whose sufferings are so touchingly mentioned by Mrs. Hayt in her interesting sketch of Bellevue before given. Although Captain Hickok's life has been mainly spent upon a farm, in his younger days he was for thirteen years a sea-faring man. He came into Eaton county in 1836, and lived in Walton about thirty years. He was the first postmaster, and held at various times nearly every office in the town, has been county surveyor and member of the legislature. But two of seven sons are now alive. The youngest son, born in Bellevue and named after General Isaac E. Crary, is now (1878) a prominent lawyer in Charlotte and a most estimable man. Captain Hickok and wife moved to Charlotte in 1867, where they now reside. Though they are now old, and the inevitable infirmities of age bear heavily upon them, yet is their ability to remember and relate the events of the past in an enjoyable and truthful manner both complete and minute. May no dark clouds gather around the setting sun of these venerable persons!

## DEATH OF ISAAC E. C. HICKOK, ESQ.

### NOTES BY A BROTHER ATTORNEY.

On the morning of January 30, 1879, Isaac E. C. Hickok, Esq., died after a lingering illness, from disease of the brain. His death had been expected by his medical attendants for nearly two months. He had premonitions of his approaching fate several days before the stroke, which shivered one of the finest minds in the State.

The son of James W. and Eliza (Wood) Hickok, he was born at Bellevue, in this county, September 7, 1836, the first white boy born in the county. He pursued the usual routine of farmer's boy life until the age of seventeen when, being disabled for manual labor by a disease of the bone of his right arm, he commenced attending school, then hardly able to read and write. But his mental energy soon gave him a good position among his fellow students. He was close, thorough, and retentive. He spent five years at the Olivet institute, now Olivet college, and two years at the Ann Arbor university. He taught school for several years, and in 1863 was chosen principal of the Charlotte Union school, and taught in the old academy building, now used as the Peninsular house. In 1864 he was elected county clerk, and reëlected three times, holding the office eight years to the entire satisfaction of all who were acquainted with the affairs of the office. While in this position he commenced the study of the law with the same conscientious thoroughness that always characterized him as a student. In 1869 he was admitted to the bar after a very creditable examination. For some years he would only take such cases as lay in the path of his studies.

He avoided general practice, and still worked at laying deep and strong foundations for future professional success. Everything that tended to throw light upon the elementary legal principles he studied with avidity, making it a rule to follow every rule or maxim to its reason or origin. No one ever studied, compared, and annotated the thirty-seven volumes of Michigan Reports, and our State constitution and laws with more care. The neat, precise annotations on the margins of his books are a marvel of industry and the envy of lawyers. He had commenced training his memory so that he could not only give the volume where the authority was to be found, but the name of the case and of the judge giving the opinion, and also the page. Often as points of law unexpectedly arose in court, he would at once quietly give a brother attorney a note of the book and page where the whole matter was settled. And yet with all this devotion to his mistress, the law, he avoided dryness. He fairly studied some of Scott's and Dickens' best works, and loved, with kindred minds, to spend whole evenings in the fields of literature. There is not space here to tell what ought to be told of him as a man of the purest integrity, and of his exalted estimate of professional honor. Every client who ever consulted him can bear testimony to this, and so can any attorney ever associated with him or engaged against him in a case. What he clearly saw to be for the interest of his clients led him to settle more cases than he tried. By his death our bar loses its most promising member. Much yet remains to be said by those who knew him. He is taken from us while on the threshold of the temple, and the general public had not yet so fully appreciated his legal ability and acquirements as it certainly would have done had he lived.

## EARLY HISTORY OF OLIVET COLLEGE.

The most important event bearing upon the history of Walton, and, indeed, upon all the surrounding country, and, no doubt, into the infinite beyond, is the founding of Olivet College within its limits. Its location in the woods, and at a place almost unapproachable, shows the moral and mental stamina of its founders. The following sketch, furnished me by Hon. Oramel Hosford, who has been connected with the institution from its infancy, gives its rise and fall and final triumph with captivating simplicity and faithfulness. Every thoughtful person will be made better by its careful perusal:

Olivet College, located in the township of Walton, Eaton county, was established in 1844. The events that led the founder, the Rev. J. J. Shipherd, to select this location were as follows:

Mr. Shipherd, the founder of Oberlin College, Ohio, remained connected with that college for some years, acting in its interest in various capacities until it had become permanently established, having grown from feeble infancy to a manhood of wondrous power. Feeling that his labors were completed there, and that the time had come for him to seek some other destitute field where he might repeat the work which had proved so successful, he resolved that, as soon as the way should be opened, he would seek the new field. He did not expect to see the speedy results, so unexpectedly realized in Oberlin, for the causes which largely determined these no longer existed.

His health being somewhat infirm, he determined to take a tour on horseback, more or less extended as his health might be improved by the journey. He had in mind, when he left home, some point in central Wisconsin. The trustees of Oberlin College having an interest in a large tract of land on Grand river in the northeast part of Eaton county, requested Mr. Shipherd to go and examine it. The fulfilment of this mission led him to leave the main thorough fare of travel at Marshall. Following by-paths and Indian trails, he was compelled to traverse the entire length of the county, then a well-nigh unbroken wilderness. Pursuing the obscure path, he became bewildered, but at length reached the hill upon which Olivet is now situated. Looking off to the southeast, he descried through the openings a log house, less than a mile away, and as it was getting late he determined to seek shelter there for the night. The next morning he renewed his journey, after receiving special direction from his host in regard to his course. To his great surprise, after working his way through the thick undergrowth for a time, he found himself on the same hill-top. Again he set forward, resolved to give more thought to his journey and less to his new project until he found a plainer path. He had, however, pursued his course but a short time, carefully choosing his way, when he found himself again on the same spot where he had been twice before.

Accustomed to recognize the hand of Providence in the daily events of life, he inquired if this was not the place the Lord designed he should occupy. Dismounting, he knelt and sought wisdom from above. His prayer was, "Lord, direct thy servant in this thing." Having visited the lands he came to see, he returned to make inquiry as to the condition of the lands in this locality. Past experience had shown Mr. S. the importance of having a water power under the control of those entering upon such an enterprise. Such a power, he found, was furnished by a small stream flowing through a tract of non-resident lands, held by parties who wished to dispose of them. Thus everything seemed favorable, and he believed he had not been mistaken in the hand of Providence.

Returning at once to Oberlin, he reported to the one or two friends with whom he had consulted before leaving, and who were interested in the enterprise. This was in 1843. The country had not then recovered from the panic of 1836-7. To secure the lands necessary for the College and the colony who were to aid in its building, ready money was needed, for these lands were in the hands of men who had made sale of them once, but were compelled to receive them back, and were not to be troubled in that way again. It was no easy matter to secure money at that time. But at length one was found who was ready to join the colony and furnish the requisite means to commence the work. On the 14th of February, 1844, the colony, consisting of thirty-nine persons, including fourteen children, left Oberlin, and after a tedious journey of ten days, with ox teams, reached their destination. They were most hospitably received by Mr. Parley Shumway and his family, they leaving their house, granting the new comers free access to the cellar and barn, and doing all in their power for their comfort. Nearly the whole region was in its native wildness. Only four or five families were in this part of the township. Mr. Shumway and son in the southwest part; Captain Hickok in the west; Isaac Hogle and Newton Curtis in the east; and Hiram Burroughs in the southeast. The colonists, on visiting the place of their new home, for the first time felt their courage wane, everything was so wild and rough. Mrs. Shipherd, after standing upon a log and looking over the ground as well as she could, said: "Mr. Shipherd, your college looks much better upon paper than in the bush." None of them came, however, expecting cushioned seats or velvet-covered floors. Self-sacrifice they were ready to make, and they did not shrink from the hardships they knew they must meet. Mr. Shipherd reminded them of the great work they had undertaken; that it was no mere holiday pastime they had entered upon, and that they had no strength of their own for such a task; they must have divine aid or they would utterly fail, that at the very beginning of their effort they should seek divine guidance. All knelt by the trunk of a fallen tree and consecrated these grounds and themselves to God, and besought strength and wisdom and patient endurance, that they might not fail in the good work before them.

They entered at once, and with a will upon their labors. A few days found three or four log houses rolled up and fitted to receive their occupants; then followed the clearing of land, planting, and sowing. Next, their attention was directed to the improvement of the water-power, building the dam and laying the foundations for the saw and grist-mills.

A few months of vigorous toil produced marked changes. Fields of corn, potatoes, oats, and millet took the place of brush and wild undergrowth. The saw-mill was so far completed that it could be used; the grist-mill was well under way.

From the first it was the design of the founders to build a manual labor college. The plan was to erect cottages for dormitories for the young men, instead of having a single edifice. A small plat of ground was to be attached to each cottage, upon which the young men might labor and have the entire product. Three very neat cottages were built by four young men who came with the colonists, and were ready for use in the autumn. No one of the colony had any experience of the climate and worked on, regardless of rain or heat or exposure of any kind. Although often warned, they could not realize their danger. As a consequence, by the first of September all were taken with chills and fever. Mr. Shipherd fell a victim to the fever. Never was the faith of Christian men more sorely tried; never did darker clouds hang over a sorely stricken community. As soon after the death of Mr. Shipherd as the strength of those weak, sick men would permit, three or four upon whom the responsibility of the work now rested, came together to consult as to the future. Two questions were prominently before them. First, "Have we been deceived in what we have supposed were the leadings of Providence? Was the light which Mr. Shipherd had followed a light of his own kindling, or was it a divine guidance?" The second question was "Shall the enterprise be abandoned?" To these men, a negative answer to the first question would be a most prompt and complete negative to the second. If they had not been deceived, if Providence had guided thus far, there could be no reason to them why the work should be abandoned because of discouragement and darkness. They came, as they believed, because God called them, and they would not leave until they were assured with equal certainty that the Lord bade them go. The unanimous decision was: We will continue this work as God gives us strength.

The autumn frosts checked the fevers, and returning health brought renewed courage. The school opened in December of the same year, under the imposing title of Olivet College. The sessions were held in one of the cottages before referred to. This cottage was chapel, recitation room, and dormitory. There were nine students in attendance the first term, three of them forming a freshman class. This number was increased to eighteen during the year. A building, two stories in height, was in process of erection, designed to be ready for use at the beginning of the second term. But in an unexpected moment a falling spark kindled a flame, which soon consumed the entire building, the result of so much toil and sacrifice.

This was a sore trial, and it is not strange that the enfeebled colony were led to another careful review. The question naturally presented was, "Does Providence thus indicate a disapproval of this enterprise?" A council was immediately held, and the decision reached was that another house should be erected upon the same ground as the one burned. This was completed and ready for use at the opening of the school the following autumn. To give even a brief account of the many similar discouragements to which the colony were subjected, would require too much space. In a few words it may be stated that in 1847-8 Colonial Hall was erected to meet the growing demands of the College. This was an edifice three stories in height, furnishing eighteen dormitories, four recitation rooms, and a room for apparatus. It had been in use but a little time when the second building was consumed by fire from a burning dwelling-house near by.

In 1846 an attempt was made to secure a college charter. This effort failed, it being the policy of the State at that time to reserve all college privileges and powers to the University. There was also a very extended, not to say general, feeling of opposition to establishing other institutions, lest they might in some way interfere with the great educational plan that the State had adopted.

In 1848 a charter was obtained under the title of Olivet Institute.

For eleven years the school continued to prosper under the direction of Professors E. N. Bartlett and O. Hosford, with such assistants as they needed.

It was the constant endeavor of the instructors to elevate the standard of scholarship from year to year. Numbers of pupils were attracted to the school on account of the thoroughness of the course of study, the moderate expenses, and the quietness and moral atmosphere of the place. During this period, not less than 2,500 youth were connected with the Institute.

One prominent object of the school was to prepare teachers for the common schools of the State. Not less than fifty teachers were sent out in a single year. Students were also prepared for college, often entering advanced classes in the University and other colleges.

During this time a great change had taken place in the whole State. Every considerable village had organized a graded school under the supervision of competent instructors.

The advantages which Olivet had furnished to those preparing to teach could now be secured in almost any of these villages. The point had been reached when it seemed inevitable that a new departure must be taken, and this, too, under very discouraging circumstances. Prof. Bartlett, worn down by excessive toil and continued care, felt compelled to leave for another field of labor. The Ladies' Hall, now so beautiful and essential, was not fully inclosed. There were no means to meet the cost of enlarging the work. Yet the trustees determined to make a most vigorous effort to lift the institution to a higher plane and open to it a broader field.

Consequently, in the autumn of 1858, Rev. M. W. Fairfield, of Brimfield, Ill., was called to take charge of the institution. His enthusiasm inspired the people with new courage, which led to the re-organization of Olivet Institute under the title of Olivet College. This change the trustees were enabled to make, as a law had recently been enacted by which, upon certain conditions, college privileges and powers were conferred upon institutions. The sum of $10,000 was readily raised within the limits of the village to complete the Ladies' Hall and to meet the current expenses beyond the income of the college, until an endowment fund could be secured.

In 1859 the College opened under its new charter, with a faculty of five instructors, Rev. M. W. Fairfield having been chosen president. A freshman class was organized; also classes in the scientific, ladies', and preparatory departments. Within twelve months President Fairfield resigned, and Rev. N. J. Morrison was elected to fill the vacancy.

In 1861 came the war of the rebellion. The call for troops was promptly responded to by the students of the College. The more advanced College classes were entirely broken up; so that there were no graduates until the lower classes had completed their course.

Three young ladies received their diplomas from the ladies' course in 1863. The first class graduated from the classical course in 1867. From that time there have been graduates from the several departments, annually. At this writing (1877) the graduates number more than one hundred. The number of students who have been in attendance for a greater or less period has exceeded five thousand.

In 1866 the corner stone of Parsons hall was laid, which has since been completed at a cost of about $35,000. President Morrison resigned in 1872. The duties of the president were performed by different professors until 1876, when Rev. H. Q. Butterfield, D. D., entered upon the presidency.

The present estimated valuation of the property of the College, in buildings, and apparatus, library, and endowment, is $250,000.

This hasty sketch would be incomplete without farther mention of the more prominent men engaged in the enterprise.

Rev. J. J. Shipherd, the founder, was a man of earnest piety, quiet and unassuming, yet when once committed to any work, was firm and unyielding. He was not hasty in reaching conclusions, but when his purpose was once formed, obstacles and unexpected events that seemed adverse never turned him aside. His twelve years' experience at Oberlin was of great service to him in organizing his new work. Taken away as he was, at its very opening, yet he had clearly mapped out the whole enterprise, and had all his plans laid for its prosecution. He was only forty-two years old when he died, yet he looked a man of sixty. He had long been called "Father Shipherd" in consequence of his reverend appearance.

William Hosford, a special friend of Mr. Shipherd, the man whom he first consulted in regard to his new project, was a native of Vermont. He left there in 1833 to join the colony at Oberlin. After laboring there eleven years, aiding as he was able, in that work, and building for himself a beautiful home, he readily left all and entered with the same earnest devotion upon the new enterprise, until prevented by the feebleness of increasing years. He died in 1870, in the seventy-ninth year of his age.

Carlo Reed, the one who furnished the means to purchase the land, was from Seneca county, N. Y. He was a man of firm will and great energy. He was always equally ready with the others to further the work in every possible way. Both these men, as advancing age prevented their giving labor or money, gave lands or other property, so that at their death they had less to leave than they brought with them. Mr. Reed died in 1865, at the age of seventy-three years.

Wilson C. Edsell was a student at Oberlin at the time the Olivet colony was organized. He entered heartily into the enterprise, and was a very efficient helper. Being a millwright by trade, his services were invaluable. He remained at Olivet about eight years. He now resides at Otsego, and is one of its most prominent and enterprising citizens. He has served two terms in the State senate.

[At the time of printing this volume Mr. Edsell is a member of the senate from Allegan county, for the third time.—Ed.]

Albertus L. Green came with the colony and entered the first freshman class. He did not, however, continue his studies more than one year, as his attention was called to business pursuits. His tastes being in accord with an active business life, he soon exhibited rare ability in that direction. While still a young man, he was elected to responsible offices of trust in the township. He was also elected one of the trustees of the College, which office he continued to hold during his life, he being one of the most prominent and efficent members of that body. He served three terms in the legislature of the State—two in the house and one in the senate. Early in October, 1875, he received a fatal injury while superintending the erection of a bridge. He was fifty years of age. In his death the College suffered an irreparable loss.

Mr. Edsell on leaving Olivet made an exchange of property with Mr. S. F. Drury of Otsego. Mr. Drury was a merchant, and continued his business after coming to Olivet. His interest in the College led him here, and he became its financial agent. The College is largely indebted to him for its success. He gave money, and much time and earnest effort to raise funds, and was many years a member of the board of trustees. He still resides at Olivet.

Mr. Fitz L. Reed was elected a member of the board to fill the vacancy occasioned by the death of his father. He has since been one of the most efficient home workers.

Professors Reuben Hatch and Oramel Hosford were the first instructors. Mr. Hatch was in feeble health when he came to Olivet, and the climate proving too severe for him he was compelled to leave. Professor Hosford still remains connected with the College, his period of service having continued one-third of a century.

### CORPORATION.

Rev. Horatio Q. Butterfield, D. D., president.

Homer O. Hitchcock, M. D., Kalamazoo; Fitz L. Reed, Esq., Olivet; Philo Parsons, Esq., Detroit; D. M. Ferry, Esq., Detroit. Term expires 1878.

Rev. Wolcott B. Williams, Charlotte; Rev. Zachary Eddy, D. D., Detroit; Rev. A. B. Allen, Alpena; Hon. David M. Richardson, Detroit. Term expires 1879.

Rev. Joseph L. Daniels, Olivet; Henry Fralick, Esq., Grand Rapids; Hon. Jacob S. Farrand, Detroit; Rev. George D. Baker, D. D., Detroit. Term expires 1880.

Rev. Moses Smith, Jackson; Rev. H. H. Northrop, Flint; Edward S. Lacey, Esq., Charlotte; Hon. John K. Boies, Hudson. Term expires 1881.

Rev. Arthur T. Pierson, D. D., Detroit; Hon. William A. Howard, Grand Rapids; Hon. Oramel Hosford, Olivet; Hon. Asa K. Warren, Olivet. Term expires 1882.

Rev. James L. Patton, Greenville; Rev. Philo R. Hurd, D. D., Detroit; Rev. J. Morgan Smith, Grand Rapids; Hon. Alanson Sheley, Detroit. Term expires 1883.

The executive committee are: H. Q. Butterfield, chairman; A. K. Warren, J. L. Daniels, O. Hosford, F. L. Reed.

Librarian, Charles P. Chase, A. M.; Secretary and Department Treasurer, George W. Keyes; Treasurer, Henry Fralick.

The present faculty is composed of the following: Rev. Horatio Q. Butterfield, D. D., President and Drury professor of mental and moral philosophy.

Rev. Henry M. Goodwin, D. D., professor of English literature, logic, and rhetoric.

Rev. Oramel Hosford, A. M., professor of astronomy and natural philosophy, and lecturer on the theory and practice of teaching.

Rev. Joseph L. Daniels, A. M., Parsons professor of the Greek language and literature, and instructor in German.

Stewart Montgomery, A. M., professor of natural science.

Charles P. Chase, A. M., Rutan professor of the Latin language and literature.

——— ———, *professor of mathematics.

John L. Sewall, A. B., principal of preparatory department.

George H. Howard, professor of music.

Miss Alice P. Goodwin, principal of ladies' department.

Miss Olive Kirkland, A. B., assistant principal.

Miss Cornelia P. Dwight, instructor in French.

Mrs. Harriet B. Northrop, instructor in painting and drawing.

---

*Instruction in this department is at present given by Profs. Hosford and Chase.

### SUMMARY OF STUDENTS.

*College.*

| | |
|---|---|
| Classical course | 30 |
| Scientific course | 21 |
| Ladies' course | 35 |
| Ladies' elective studies | 13 |

*Preparatory.*

| | |
|---|---|
| Classical course | 45 |
| English course | 26 |
| Ladies' preparatory course | 48 |
| Whole number of gentlemen | 109 |
| Whole number of ladies | 109 |
| Total | 218 |

| | |
|---|---|
| Art department | 60 |
| Conservatory of music | 41 |

It should be borne in mind that the foregoing statements of the condition of Olivet College was given me in 1878. I am happy to say that at the present time (1880) it is shedding its benign influence upon a larger patronage, and promises in the near future to be second only to the State university. For the widest diffusion of religion and education the immortal pioneers of Eaton county, from their earliest settlement, erected school-houses for the primary education of their children, and on Sunday this humble edifice, often built of logs, was consecrated to religious purposes. Here the early settler and his entire family, with his few and often widely scattered neighbors, met for the worship of God. Not content with a simple district school, these friends of learning, and especially a sanctified learning, developed simultaneously a determination to endow a college where Christian influences and a pure morality should be taught and observed. Hence Olivet College.

### CHARLOTTE.

The city of Charlotte, and the county seat of Eaton county, is situated upon an elevated and beautiful plain in very nearly the geographical center of the county, upon section thirteen of the township of Carmel, and section eighteen of the township of Eaton. I am indebted to Manly C. Dodge, Esq., city recorder, for the following city items and the interesting personal sketches of some of its prominent business men:

The city of Charlotte was organized in March, 1871, with a population of nearly 2,800. It held its first charter election the first Tuesday in April following, which resulted in the election of the following officers:

Mayor—E. S. Lacey.
Recorder—Isaac D. McCutcheon.
Supervisor—Earl T. Church.

Treasurer—Fred. E. Leiter.

Justices of the Peace—Frank A. Hooker and Dyer F. Webber.

School Inspectors—Frank W. Higby and Isaac E. C. Hickok.

Aldermen—1st ward, A. D. Baughman and J. C. Harmon; 2d, Seth Ketcham and R. D. Wheaton; 3d, B. J. Grier and J. W. Ames; 4th, B. W. Warren and Pitt M. Higby.

Constables—James Johnson, D. S. Coder, Loren H. Turner, and A. T. Roe.

The present population is not far from 3,200. There is one graded and three ward schools. The whole number of scholars attending school the present year as per enrollment is 1,101; whole number drawing public money is 799. The value of the school buildings is estimated at $19,500.

There are seven churches in the place, the value of which is about $50,000. The new Congregational church when completed will cost $30,000 or thereabouts.

The place supports thirteen doctors and eleven lawyers. The doctors represent the following schools, viz.: ten allopathy, two homœpathy, one uriscopian. There are two banks—one national,—Joseph Musgrave, president, and E. S. Lacey, cashier; and one exchange—E. & J. Shepherd. The National bank has a cash capital of $50,000, with a surplus of $10,000, and the Exchange, ———. There are eight resident clergymen, viz.: one Methodist, two Congregationalist, three United Brethren, one Baptist, one Episcopalian. There are three foundry and machine shops, two grist and flouring-mills, one saw-mill and one brewery. The most extensive manufactories in the place are the Michigan Double Stave Barrel Manufactory and the Charlotte Manufacturing Company's Works.

The number of stores is as follows: dry goods, eight; grocery, five; hardware, three; drug, three; millinery and fancy goods, two; books and stationery, etc., two; boots and shoes, five; bakery, candy, and confectionery, three; ready-made clothing and furnishing goods, three; furniture, two; flour and feed, two.

There are two good railroads in operation, viz.: the Chicago & Lake Huron railroad and the Grand River Valley railroad.

The value of manufactured articles per annum is estimated as follows: barrels, $100,000; wagons, carriages, etc., $50,000; machines, $15,000; cigars, $5,000; boots and shoes, $4,000; all other articles not named, $30,000.

The only county buildings are the jail and sheriff's residence, treasurer's and register of deed's offices. The original cost of the jail and sheriff's residence is $12,000.

There is a Farmer's Mutual Fire Insurance Company of Eaton and Barry counties with officers as follows: president, B. W. Warren, Charlotte; secretary, Clement Smith, Hastings; directors in Eaton county, John Dow, J. W. Ewing, Geo. W. Knight, Fitz L. Reed, and S. W. Harmon. The names of the others I am unable to learn.

There are five hotels, two printing offices, one real estate office, two agricultural warehouses, three harness shops, and two livery stables.

Hon. Joseph Musgrave was born in Chester county, Pennsylvania, May 20, 1811. At the age of six years, he removed with his parents to Westmoreland county, Pennsylvania, and afterwards lived in other places in that State and Ohio. His early life was variously employed in working on a farm, attending school, clerking in a store, and teaching district school; and for some time he carried on the mercantile business in Ohio for himself. In the fall of 1846, he was elected as representative to the Ohio legislature from Richland county, which position he held for two years. In the fall of 1855, he was elected to the Ohio senate from the senatorial district composed of the counties of Richland and Ashland, which position he also held for two years. He came to Charlotte in 1854 with his nephew, Joseph Haslett, and after opening a store, he left Mr. Haslett to conduct the business and returned to Ohio, where he remained until 1857, when he moved here with his family and has lived ever since. He continued in the mercantile business with Mr. Haslett for about ten years, when he withdrew and went into a private banking business with his son-in-law, Hon. Edward S. Lacey. When the First National Bank was organized, he was made president and holds that position at present. He is among the wealthiest men in this place, and has always contributed liberally to every enterprise. He has retired from business owing to his declining health. [Mr. Musgrave died, after a brief illness, in 1880.]

Elisha Shepherd was born in the township of Oneonta, Otsego county, N. Y., March 27, 1830, where he lived with his parents until the fall of 1840, when he came to this county with them and located upon a farm two miles south of Charlotte. He lived and worked on a farm until the fall of 1852, when he was married, and the following spring, with his father-in-law, Mr. L. H. Ion, assumed the proprietorship of the "Old Eagle Hotel," long since numbered with the things that were, and also had charge of stage lines between this and neighboring towns. After four years he abandoned the hotel and stage business and purchased a one-half interest in the drug and grocery business that was being carried on by his brother, James Shepherd, and formed a partnership with him. They afterward added to it a stock of general goods and carried on the business until 1876. In 1870 the firm opened a private bank which is doing business at present. In April, 1876, Mr. Shepherd withdrew from the firm of E. & J. Shepherd and formed a partnership with another brother, Leroy Shepherd, under the firm and title of L. & E. Shepherd, with whom at present he is operating a general store, and also in the grain and wool season is in the market as a buyer, in which he has had a long experience. Mr. Shepherd is one of the directors of the Chicago & Lake Huron railroad, and also has the management of the wood department of that company. He is also a member of the present council and one of the trustees of the school board. Mr. Shepherd is one of our most thorough business men. He is the owner of considerable real estate in this vicinity, and one of the largest property owners. Has a fine home and everything around him for comfort.

B. W. Warren was born in the township of Clarendon, Orleans county, New York, September 21, 1821, and at the age of twelve years moved to what is now the township of Emmet, Calhoun county, Michigan. In February, 1847, he became a resident of Olivet, Eaton county. He lived in and near Olivet until 1860, when he was elected sheriff of this county, and came to Charlotte, where he has since made his home. He served four years as sheriff after which he was given the position of deputy register of deeds under E. W. Barber, which he held until 1866, when he was elected register of deeds, which office he held for three terms in succession, to the satisfaction of his constituents. Mr. Warren has served the city and county in various capacities. At present he is engaged in the insurance business, and is president of the Eaton & Barry County Farmers' Mutual. He is a member of the Congregational church, and an earnest and successful worker in everything he undertakes.

Elzey Hayden was born in the township of Orange, in what was then Richland county, Ohio, August 20, 1825. He moved to Charlotte in October, 1844, while the place was in its infancy and has lived here ever since. In the early history of the place he served the people in various capacities, and in 1864 was elected treasurer of the county, and held the office eight years in a most acceptable manner. He was afterward associated with E. T. Church in the grocery business until compelled to abandon it owing to his declining health. He has accumulated sufficiently of worldly effects to admit of his living without labor, and at present he is not employed. Mr. Hayden is a kind-hearted and pleasant gentleman, and has hosts of friends among all classes. He has contributed much that has proved of interest to the city.

Earl T. Church was born in Adams township, Seneca county, Ohio, January 26, 1835. He worked on a farm until sixteen years of age, when he went into a grocery store in Fremont, Ohio, where he was employed for two years. He came to Charlotte in September, 1853, and from that time until the spring of 1858, his time was occupied in working in a saw-mill, going to school, clerking in a store and in the office of register of deeds. In the spring of 1858, he engaged in the grocery business in a little wooden building now standing on Lovett street, with a $280 stock of goods. Mr. Church is now the owner of a one-half interest in the Excelsior Block on Main street, one of the finest in the city, in which he has the best arranged grocery store in the city. He is regarded as one of the leading grocers, and outside of his own private business has done much to benefit the place. He was the first supervisor elected under the city charter, and served the city one year as mayor as well as in other capacities. He has an elegant home and takes much pride in ornamenting it with everything intended to make it beautiful and attractive. He is an exceedingly friendly gentleman, and has been successful in making many warm friends.

Hon. Edward L. Lacey, son of Edward D. and Martha (Pixley) Lacey, was born in Chili, Monroe county, New York, November 26, 1835. He came with his parents to this State in 1842. His education was completed in Olivet college. In 1857 he settled in Charlotte, Eaton county, where he has ever since resided. In 1862 he, in connection with the Hon. Joseph Musgrave, organized the first National bank of Charlotte, from which time he has been its cashier. He has been a director and treasurer for many years in the Grand River Valley railroad. January 4, 1861, he married the daughter of Mr. Musgrave. They have three daughters. Mr. Lacey has held many municipal and county offices with great acceptability, and is now member-elect of the forty-seventh congress. His election to this office by a very large majority over an able and most worthy competitor attests his great popularity.

Upon the resignation of Hon. P. T. Van Zile as judge of the fifth circuit, Hon. Frank A. Hooker, of Charlotte, Eaton county, was appointed by the governor his successor, upon the almost unanimous petition of the bar of this judicial district. This appointment was made April 5, 1878, and at the ensuing fall election Judge Hooker was elected for the residue of the term. In reply to sundry questions propounded to the Judge, he very courteously replied as follows:

"My father's name is James Sedgwick Hooker. He is a native of Hartford, Connecticut, and a lineal descendant of Rev. Thomas Hooker, of Hartford colony fame. My father was a contractor and builder (being by trade a mason), and carried on business at Hartford and adjacent towns. My mother's name is Camilla Porter, a daughter of Reuben Porter, Esq., of Baldwinsville, New

York. I was born at Hartford, January 16, 1844. At the age of twelve years I removed with my parents to Maumee City, Ohio, and three years later to Defiance, Ohio, where I remained until 1863. While at these last named places I learned the mason's trade, which I prosecuted through the season of warm weather, and during the winter I taught school. When residing in Hartford, I was constant in attending school, but afterward went but little. I pursued Latin and many of the higher English branches of study with an elder sister, late the wife of Dr. J. B. McLean of Ovid, Michigan. In 1863 I entered the law department of the university of Michigan, from which I graduated in 1865. I was admitted to the bar both in Michigan and Ohio, the same spring, and formed a copartnership for one year with John A. Simons, Esq., of Bryan, Ohio. At the expiration of the year I removed to Charlotte, Eaton county, Michigan, and opened a law office, receiving many favors and substantial encouragements from the late Dr. A. B. Sampson, Hon. Joseph Musgrave, Hon. E. S. Lacey, I. E. C. Hickok, Esq., B. W. Warren, Esq., and many other friends. In the spring of 1867, I was elected superintendent of schools for the county. In 1869 was elected justice of the peace, and for two or three years did most of the business pertaining to that office in Charlotte. In 1872 I was elected prosecuting attorney, holding the office four years, and trying many important criminal cases. My law business, which virtually began with my election to the office of prosecuting attorney, soon increased, and at the expiration of my second term was perhaps second to none in the county. April 1, 1878, I was appointed judge of the fifth circuit, consisting of the counties of Calhoun, Eaton, and Barry, to fill a vacancy occasioned by the resignation of Hon. P. T. Van Zile, and at the fall election in same year was elected for the residue of the term. I have always been a republican in politics. I am a member of the Masonic fraternity. In 1863 I married Miss Emma S. Carter, daughter of Hon. William Carter, of Defiance, Ohio. I think I may say that I am temperate. Your other questions are difficult for me to answer. I hardly know what to say about my habits of study, or my love of the profession of the law. Not being entirely satisfied with myself, especially as to the former, I prefer to say nothing about them. Should you desire fuller or more impartial information upon the subject of my law practice. cases, or professional habits, character and standing, Judge Woodruff, of Marshall, can perhaps furnish it, as most of my practice was before him."

Desirous of doing strict and impartial historic justice to Judge Hooker, I referred, as by him permitted, to the Hon. George Woodruff, fully appreciating his able and impartial criticism, and herewith give his reply:

"Complying very cheerfully with your request to give my impressions of Judge F. A. Hooker as a practicing lawyer, I do so under the added sanction of his own reference to me as a competent reporter. Most of the Judge's professional forensic life prior to his own accession to the bench having passed under my observation while occupying that place, I am perhaps not improperly referred to for the desired information, and I give my impressions as they now recur to me.

"A prominent recollection in his case is that Mr. Hooker always prepared his cases well in relation both to the evidence and the law; consequently he was seldom surprised by unexpected objections or proofs from his adversary, thus reinforcing his native equanimity and securing coolness and consideration at every step. He was no mere case lawyer, but regarding the law rather as a science than as a mass of rules without system or coherence, he was seldom at fault in applying it to the facts of the particular case, and I have no recollection of his ever citing an authority that was not in point. Gifted with such power of strict analysis, it is not surprising that his arguments were logical and his exposition always lucid, and they were generally effective.

"Several years of painstaking service as a magistrate at the outset of his professional career in a populous and busy town, were appropriated as an opportunity of dealing practically and studiously with a variety of questions such as familiarize the application of legal principles in the common routine of general business and government action through the administration of the law. This experience gave Mr. Hooker a signal advantage in his use of it, and will account in part for his subsequent rapid success at the bar.

"His talent as a jury advocate was of a superior order, while his efforts in that way might be termed rather solid than brilliant. His aim seemed to be to enlighten and convince rather than to move his auditory, except as they were to be moved by a sense of justice, through a thorough conviction of the fairness and candor of the speaker, rather than by any address to passion or prejudice. It was always interesting to listen to his arguments, and one could not help giving them the fullest weight they deserved.

"Thus far as to the matters technically professional. But this brief notice would be still more incomplete were I to omit another feature of Mr. Hooker's practice, and that is the uniform, unpretentious courtesy and urbanity of his intercourse with his professional brethren and the bench. While he never surrendered the rights of his clients by obsequious concessions, or failed properly to signify his dissent, if he did dissent, from an adverse decision, he never forgot the duty of professional decorum, or of public respect for the personal administration of the law, and in that and in other particulars has left an example the fruits of which, it is hoped, he may live long to enjoy.

"*February 4, 1880.* GEO. WOODRUFF."

The useful and honorable career of Rev. Prof. Hosford, of Olivet College, and late Superintendent of public instruction, inspires the profound respect of every good citizen, and should kindle in the breasts of the young especially a desire to emulate such a holy and successful life. The crown of such a man outshines the diadem of kings, and his approving conscience doubtless gives him a peace of mind of infinitely more worth than all the trappings of royalty.

Oramel Hosford was born May 7, 1820, in Thetford, Vt. He was educated at Oberlin College, Ohio, where he graduated in 1843. Three years thereafter he graduated from the theological department of the same institution. At the age of seventeen he commenced teaching school. While in college he taught, and has been thus engaged ever since, except (if it may be called an exception) the eight years he was serving the State and the rising generation as Superintendent of public instruction. In 1848 he was ordained to the ministry of the Congregational church, but has never performed pastoral work, except for one year, and then in connection with teaching in Olivet. He was married August 26, 1846. He has had three children—two daughters now living, and one son who died when but three years old. Prof. Hosford is a hard student from habit and choice, a great economist of time, and irreconcilably opposed to the vicious and filthy use of tobacco and all intoxicating beverages. In his report to the legislature in 1872 occurs this strong (not too strong) language: "The street school which truants attend furnishes ample facilities for all the pupils. The exercises are varied and attractive. The groceries, the bar-rooms, the billiard-rooms, filled with tobacco smoke and fumes of whisky, where men indulge in gross profanity and low, vile conversation, and where the ribald songs are sung by drunken men with fetid breath, are just the places in which to educate our youth for deeds of shame and violence. Those who graduate from them are ready to enter the ranks of those who prey upon society. From them come the murderers, highway robbers, burglars, horse thieves, assassins, drunkards, and vile, debased debauchees. This whole, numerous horde are never producers, but must be supported, and society at large have them to support, not in the most economical way, but these wretches prey upon society, like wild beasts; their whole course is destructive and wasteful." This short extract must suffice, and is given, not only for the excellence of the sentiment, but in illustration of the heart and conscience of the writer.

Dr. Asa K. Warren, A. M., resides in Olivet, where he practices his profession in connection with other branches of business, and is a trustee of Olivet College. He was born January 29, 1830, in Eden, Erie county, New York. His father, Hon. Asa Warren, is well known in that county as a wealthy and influential farmer, and a member of the legislature. The primary education of Dr. Warren was acquired in the district school, and in process of time in the academy of Eden. After teaching one year, he entered Oberlin College, Ohio, from which he graduated in 1853. His second degree was conferred upon him by the same institution in 1856. His medical studies were pursued at our university. After practicing physic one year in the State of Ohio, he removed to his present residence in 1859. He is a republican, and has held sundry municipal and county offices, to which he has been elected by that party. He is a member of the Congregational church, and is a prominent and useful man, and of great personal popularity.

No one in Eaton county, at the present time, stands higher in public estimation than the Hon. Philip T. Van Zile, the incorruptible judge of the fifth judicial district of this State. Judge Van Zile acquired his education and reputation by a perseverance and industry rarely equaled and more rarely excelled. He was born in Osceola, Tioga county, Penn., July 20, 1844. In that State he received his primary and classical education, and was graduated at Alfred University, Alleghany county, N. Y., July 2, 1863. He taught school in Pennsylvania and Ohio, to which latter State he emigrated in 1863. He enlisted as a private soldier in Battery E, 1st Ohio Field Artillery, and went into service in our late civil war. He was recommended by the military committee as a suitable person to command a company, and was tendered a commission as captain in the 32d Ohio Infantry with the privilege of naming his own lieutenants, but desired to serve in either the cavalry or artillery. He was captain of Company D, 3d Ohio Militia, which received the prize of a beautiful silk flag for the best drilled company. The young patriot went upon the principle then as now, "that faith without works is dead."

He continued in the service until the close of the war, then moved to Charlotte, his present residence. He graduated from the law department of the university of Michigan in March, 1867. He has been attorney for Eaton county four years, and was elected judge of probate and discharged its delicate functions with great acceptance until his resignation in 1875 to enter upon the still more responsible office of circuit judge as before named. His decisions are made after careful and painstaking examination of the law and testimony, and after giving counsel a patient hearing, and yet he is one of the most prompt and industrious judges now dispensing justice in this State. He is indeed celebrated for dispatch of business. For all his patience, industry, and learning, he is allowed by the constitution a salary scarcely sufficient to cover his indispensable necessities, (and no others are indulged in). The supervisors of Calhoun and Eaton counties, with great unanimity, showed their appreciation of the judge, and their opinion of the inadequacy of his salary, by voting a handsome addition thereto in the shape of an appropriation toward payment of expenses, but as there were constitutional objections in the minds of some, and possibly in the mind of Judge Van Zile, he declined to receive it.

I inquired when and to whom he was married. I desire to give his own words in reply: "I was married to Miss Lizzie A. Jones, daughter of Alexander Jones of Cleveland, Ohio, December 28, 1865. My wife has been to me indeed an helpmeet, and I take pleasure in mentioning the fact that her influence has helped me very materially, and if I have achieved any success in life, her gentle and Christian influence has had much to do with it." This last sentence does honor alike to husband and wife, and Judge Van Zile may be safely sent to Utah as attorney general without incurring the fear of polygamy on his part.

Since writing the foregoing biographical sketch, Judge Van Zile has been appointed to the above office, and has signified his intention to accept.

Subsequent to the writing of the foregoing, Judge Van Zile has gone to Utah and has added to his just fame by his firm adherence to the law, both statute and moral. I append the article which appeared in a Charlotte newspaper about the time of his removal from that city:

"Judge Philip T. Van Zile, who was recently appointed United States District Attorney to Utah, has been a resident of this city for the past ten years and upwards. He was born July 20, 1843, in Tioga county, Penn., and at the age of twenty years graduated from the literary department of the Alfred University, of Alleghany county, N. Y. He then entered the army in an Ohio regiment, where he remained as a private until the close of the war, and won some distinction for his gallantry. He graduated from the law school of the Ann Arbor university, March 28, 1867, and immediately commenced the practice of his profession in this city. The following fall he was elected prosecuting attorney of this county, which position he retained two terms, when he was elected judge of probate, which office he filled until compelled to resign upon his election, in the fall of 1875, as circuit judge of the fifth judicial district. He has also filled the offices of mayor and city attorney under the city government, and in every position of trust to which he has been called he has shown himself to be an efficient and reliable officer. Upon assuming the judicial position he left a very extensive and lucrative law practice, in which he had gained a reputation as a lawyer and advocate second to none in this section of the State. Judge Van Zile is republican through and through, and has been an energetic and successful worker in the interest of the party, during each campaign since his advent into this county. He is a large, well-proportioned man, has a commanding appearance, and possesses a fluency of speech and command of oratory that at once attracts attention and makes him a very effectual public speaker. As a judge it is but just to say that he has given general satisfaction, and has won the confidence and esteem of the entire bar of his district, and made many friends, who very much regret to lose him from that position. He is an active member of the Congregational church, and at present is superintendent of the Sabbath-school, to which position he was recently elected for the third year. His family comprises his wife and two small children. A general feeling of regret prevails at the thought of losing him from our midst, but, while we will lose a good citizen, the government will secure an efficient and trustworthy officer."

### THE AGRICULTURAL SOCIETY OF EATON COUNTY

was organized January 3, 1855. Its earlier promoters were Messrs. Greene, Foote, Reed, Williams, Davis, Corbin, Spence, Saunders, Shaw, and others. The following persons constituted its first board of officers:

President, W. U. Benedict; treasurer, Harvey Williams; recording secretary, J. H. Corbin. Corresponding secretaries were appointed, one in each town, to wit: R. Fitzgerald, Bellevue; F. L. Reed, Walton; Jesse Hart, Brookfield; H. A. Shaw, Eaton Rapids; J. P. Hall, Eaton; E. A. Foote, Carmel; T. T. Stebbins, Kalamo; D. Griswold, Vermontville; R. M. Wheaton, Chester; B. Saunders, Benton; A. T. Cunningham, Windsor; E. S. Ingersoll, Delta; Reuben Wood, Oneida; G. S. Allen, Roxand; G. W. Andrews, Sunfield. These gentlemen gave to this enterprise their cordial and prompt attention, and the society became, from its inception, a power in the county. Like all kindred societies its usefulness is felt not only by the agriculturist, but by all intelligent persons of every calling. Its present officers are:

President, Peter Horn; treasurer, A. E. Chappel; secretary, Seth Ketchum.

Executive committee: James T. Grist, Chester; J. H. Shearman, Carmel; T. H. Brown, Benton; F. L. Reed, Walton; Aldro Atwood, Brookfield; B. L. Bentley, Eaton Rapids.

At the last meeting of the society, about twelve hundred dollars was awarded in premiums. The competition was spirited, and the attendance very large. "Its usefulness is acknowledged, especially in the stock department, as the show of good stock is increasing, and was more especially noticeable the past year, as there was a great increase in good cattle, hogs, and horses over any previous year, and the show, as to quality, was generally remarked." The spacious and handsome grounds are owned by the society. The buildings thereon are ample for their accommodation, and the whole aspect gives the impression that the agricultural society is a cherished institution of intelligent patrons. The secretary remarked to the writer that "there seems to be a desire for a change in the requisites of a good horse. Heretofore speed has been the controlling qualification; now the demand is for draft horses. The committee have this year reduced the speed premiums, and increased the premiums for good roadsters; offering first, second, and third premiums for the teams that will draw a heavy load on wagons one mile in the shortest space of time, the teams driven on a walk. An effort was made to do away with speed premiums entirely, but this was over-ruled by the committee."

The annual membership is about one thousand. The society owe upon their grounds, three thousand dollars, which they hope soon to wipe out.

### ANNUAL REPORT OF THE SECRETARY OF THE EATON COUNTY AGRICULTURAL SOCIETY.

On making a report of the doings of the Eaton County Agricultural Society for the year 1878, I hardly know where to begin, inasmuch as no previous report of record has ever been made to the State Agricultural Society of its doings in former years. I will therefore, before proceeding with the report for the current year, give a brief outline of its organization and history up to the 31st of December, A. D. 1877.

On the 3d day of January, A. D. 1855, pursuant to notice, a meeting of citizens of the county met at the court-house in the village of Charlotte for the purpose of organizing a county agricultural society. Willard Davis of Vermontville, was elected chairman of the meeting, and L. H. Ion of Charlotte, secretary.

A resolution was adopted to organize the Eaton County Agricultural Society, whereupon a committee of three, consisting of Harvey Williams, J. C. Spencer, and L. H. Ion, were appointed to draft a constitution and by-laws for the society, and then adjourned to meet February 12th following.

Pursuant to adjournment a meeting was held, the committee reported, and the report was accepted and adopted. The first officers of the society (who were elected at this meeting) were W. U. Benedict of Vermontville, president, L. H. Ion of Charlotte, secretary, and Harvey Williams of Charlotte, treasurer.

The first fair was held in the village of Charlotte, October 11 and 12, A. D. 1855, the citizens of the village furnishing the grounds, buildings, and fences the first year free of cost to the society. The total amount of premiums awarded was $194.

In May of the following year the society purchased eight acres of ground at a cost of seven hundred dollars, which was enclosed with a suitable fence, and buildings for the accommodation of exhibitors erected. The cost of buildings and fence does not appear on the records. Amount of premiums awarded for the year 1856 were $230.25.

Annual fairs have been held every year since with increasing success, showing by the increasing number and quality of articles and animals exhibited, the interest taken by farmers and mechanics in the success of the society, and its influence in encouraging and developing the agricultural resources of the county.

In the year 1868 it became apparent that the needs of the society demanded more room, whereupon the necessary arrangements were made to sell the old grounds and purchase others and in a more suitable location. The old grounds were sold on the 19th day of June, A. D. 1869, for $3,000, and the new, containing thirty-five acres, were purchased at a cost of $3,875, upon which there have been expended in a half-mile track, buildings and fences, about $5,500.

The new grounds are located in the south part of the late village, now city, of Charlotte, well planned and laid out with walks and drive-ways to and through a splendid natural grove of about ten acres, which occupies the eastern portion of the grounds, and through which runs Battle Creek, supplying water for all.

At the time the new grounds were purchased, the society assumed obligations on the same, amounting to $3,285, with interest at the rate of ten per cent per annum, using all available means at that time and the following few years in improvements on the grounds. Since that time the change in values and consequent stringency in all monetary affairs have made it a heavy load for the society to meet its obligations. The indebtedness, however, has been steadily reduced each year for the past five years, until on the 31st day of December, 1878, the total indebtedness, including interest, was $2,700, with a balance of cash on hand, $658, leaving net indebtedness, $2,042.

The twenty-fourth annual fair was held on the society's grounds September 24th, 25th, 26th, and 27th, 1878, and although the fairs of previous years had been proverbially successful, the officers and managers of the present fair had many misgivings as to its success, owing to some changes in rules in regard to tickets of admission to which very many objected, and the prospect of bad weather. The weather the first day was not pleasant, but before night the entries were in excess of any former year. The second day, from 10 A. M. to 3 P. M., the rain fell most of the time in torrents, and yet the attendance was good. The third day was bright and clear, and although the roads were very bad, the Eaton County Agricultural Society's grounds never had so many visitors before, and the fourth day was equal to any previous day in the history of the society.

All the departments were full and overflowing with the choicest exhibits in their several classes, and the fair which, at the beginning, promised to be a failure, proved a triumphant success; and I feel that I should be derelict in my duty in this connection if I failed to mention the fact that very much of our success was due to the ladies who took a special interest in the fair, those of the country and city vieing with each other in seeing who should do the most in helping on the good work and make the best exhibits.

The amount of premiums offered for the fair of 1878 was $1,458.50, distributed as follows: horses, $326.50; cattle, $391.50; sheep, $154.50; swine, $132.00; poultry, $32.25; fruit, $40.25; vegetables, $38.50; grain, $35.25; farm implements and mechanic arts, $109.25; household domestic manufactures, $69.50; household dairy products, $45.50; fine arts, $52.00; plants and flowers, $30.50. There were 162 entries of horses, 91 of cattle, 94 of sheep, 35 of swine, 57 of poultry. Total stock entries, 439; and 1,235 miscellaneous entries. Total, 1,674; besides entries for the special premiums.

Total amount of premiums awarded, $900.50; besides the special premiums offered by different individuals.

The financial statement of receipts and expenditures for the year ending December 28, 1878, are as follows:

| | |
|---|---|
| Balance on hand December 27, 1877 | $188 76 |
| Loaned at bank | 90 00 |
| Sale of logs | 11 38 |
| Membership tickets sold | 1,239 00 |
| Admit-one tickets sold | 774 00 |
| Vehicle tickets sold | 342 50 |
| Grand stand tickets sold | 93 60 |
| Rent of stands and grounds | 331 00 |
| Pasturage | 30 10 |
| | $3,100 34 |

EXPENDITURES.

| | |
|---|---|
| Paid interest on mortgage | $246 54 |
| Paid insurance | 14 40 |
| Paid drawing and sawing logs | 21 48 |
| Paid loan and interest at bank | 95 54 |
| Paid permanent improvements | 505 57 |
| Paid contingent expenses | 668 42 |
| Paid premiums | 889 50 |
| Cash on hand | 658 89 |
| | $3,100 34 |

The following officers were elected on the second day of the fair, to become operative January 1, 1879:

President, Fitz L. Reed, Olivet; secretary, Seth Ketcham, Charlotte; treasurer, B. W. Warren, Charlotte; directors three years, Fitz L. Reed, Olivet, M. L. Squier, Vermontville; directors two years, Harris Cooper, Carmel, A. P. Hartson, Eaton; directors one year, Esek Pray, Windsor, H. S. Robinson, Walton.

All of which is respectfully submitted. SETH KETCHAM,

*Sec'y Eaton Co. Agricultural Society.*

*Dated at Charlotte, January 1, 1879.*

### COURT HOUSE SQUARE,

the gift of Horatio A. Lawrence, Esq., contains some two or three acres of beautiful level ground in the center of the city. Mr. Lawrence is not a resident of this State but of the city of New York, spending more or less of each summer at Charlotte. The jail and sheriff's house, so called, is a very substantial brick edifice, ornate and spacious, and is the forerunner of a court-house which shall be its equal, and worthy the intelligence and liberality of the taxpayers of the county. The sheriff's residence, and jail before mentioned occupy the northwest corner of Court-house square.

### VERMONTVILLE.

Lands entered as follows:

| | Sec. | Acres. | Patentee. |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1829 | 30 | 80 | A. Sumner. |
| 1835 | 31 | 80 | N. & H. Weed. |
| | 32 | 160 | " " |
| 1836 | 1 | 137 | J. C. VanAlstyne. |
| | 2 | 142 | Lovina Smith. |
| | 2 | 465 | Hyde & Jackson. |
| | 3 | 309 | R. Gage. |
| | 3 | 80 | J. L. Chatfield. |
| | 4 | 159 | L. Merrill, Jr. |
| | 5 | 241 | " " |
| | 5 | 160 | E. H. Barber. |
| | 5 | 160 | D. Barber. |
| | 6 | 80 | J. Sherkick. |
| | 7 | 320 | D. & R. Barber. |
| | 7 | 188 | J. H. Snyder. |
| | 8 | 160 | O. Benton. |
| | 9 | 160 | G. S. Griswold. |
| | 8 | 480 | E. H. Benton. |
| | 9 | 160 | O. Benton. |
| | 9 | 160 | Scoville & Co. |
| | 10 | 320 | " " |
| | 11 | 320 | " " |
| | 10 | 320 | Nathan Benedict. |
| | 11 | 160 | W. Warner. |
| | 11 | 160 | Seldon & Fairfield. |
| 1836 | 12 | 160 | P. W. Archibald. |
| | 12 | 80 | C. T. Moffat. |
| | 12 | 160 | E. H. & D. Barber. |
| | 12 | 80 | L. R. Hall. |
| | 13 | 160 | " |
| | 13 | 160 | D. Archibald. |
| | 14 | 640 | Scoville & Co. |
| | 15 | 640 | " " |
| | 17 | 320 | E. H. Barber. |
| | 17 | 320 | Barber & Ladd. |
| | 18 | 160 | S. Selden. |
| | 18 | 185 | S. S. Church. |
| | 18 | 184 | A. Wilder. |
| | 18 | 160 | W. Grey. |
| | 19 | 80 | R. Sanford. |
| | 19 | 162 | H. Fish. |
| | 19 | 261 | D. Wakefield. |
| | 19 | 80 | C. Selden. |
| | 20 | 480 | Ladd & Barber. |
| | 20 | 160 | Scoville & Co. |
| | 21 | 640 | " " |
| | 22 | 640 | " " |
| | 23 | 640 | " " |
| | 24 | 320 | " " |
| | 24 | 160 | A. Sumner. |

| | Sec. | Acres. | Patentee. |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1836 | 24 | 160 | E. R. Murray. |
| | 25 | 160 | " " |
| | 25 | 160 | Scoville & Co. |
| | 25 | 160 | N. Jackson. |
| | 26 | 480 | Scoville & Co. |
| | 27 | 480 | " " |
| | 27 | 160 | W. Warner. |
| | 28 | 320 | Scoville & Co. |
| | 28 | 240 | J. R. Williams. |
| | 28 | 80 | W. J. Squires. |
| | 29 | 160 | Scoville & Co. |
| | 29 | 160 | Ladd & Barber. |
| | 29 | 320 | J. R. Williams. |
| | 30 | 160 | E. H. Barber. |
| | 30 | 280 | J. C. Culver. |
| | 30 | 160 | J. R. Williams. |
| | 31 | 513 | C. T. Moffat. |
| 1836 | 31 | 80 | A. Sumner. |
| | 32 | 320 | J. R. Williams. |
| | 32 | 160 | J. Hinman. |
| | 33 | 160 | P. Raymond. |
| | 33 | 80 | A. Sumner. |
| | 33 | 240 | B. F. Hinman. |
| | 33 | 160 | D. Wakefield. |
| | 34 | 160 | James Allen. |
| | 34 | 160 | E. J. Penniman. |
| | 34 | 160 | D. Wakefield. |
| | 34 | 80 | W. Morse. |
| | 34 | 80 | D. F. Bullock. |
| | 35 | 480 | W. G. Henry. |
| | 35 | 120 | J. Allen. |
| | 35 | 40 | W. G. Henry. |
| | 36 | 640 | W. J. Squires. |

Wells R. Martin, Esq., a prominent citizen of Vermontville, and one of its early settlers, was born March 18, 1811, at Hoosic Falls, N. Y. His parents, James and Lydia Martin, were plain New England farmers. Their son Wells was trained to habits of industry and economy, upon a hard, stony farm, laboring from sunrise to sunset. His primary and academic studies were pursued at Bennington, Vt. In May, 1838, Mr. Martin and wife moved to Vermontville from Bennington, and were subject to all the inevitable hardships and privations incident to a new country. In this town they still reside, in the enjoyment of competence, honored and loved by their neighbors, and exerting a wide-spread moral influence. Mr. Martin has filled nearly every office in the town, and has been a valuable member of the legislature from that representative district. He was married at Bennington, Vt., to Miss Emily Robinson, August 26, 1835. Has had three children. In early life he taught school three terms. At present he is engaged in mercantile business. When he made his settlement at Vermontville, there were about 100 inhabitants.

Frances E. Hewitt, now Mrs. R. W. Griswold, was born in Stonington, New London county, Conn., September 6, 1816, where she received her education and lived until nineteen years of age, when she was married to George S. Browning, of Griswold, Conn. They came to the wilds of Michigan in May, 1836, to build for themselves a home. They arrieved in Bellevue the 6th of June, where they lived one year and a half, and then moved to Vermontville, where she has since remained.

George S. Browning died July 26, 1874.

The following statistics of the township of Vermontville have been kindly furnished me by a venerable pioneer of the town, and may be fully relied upon: The present population is about 2,000. The leading men are Messrs. Barber, Martins, Churches, Greens, Bodine, Smith, Squire, Griswold, Benedict, Stebbins, Hall, Dickinson, Parmeter, etc. To my inquiry why they were leading men, he said, "they are leading men because some of them are leading men in the churches, some as politicians, some as office holders in the town and village, as members of the legislature, and many are active business men, as merchants, manufacturers, produce dealers, bankers, etc. There are three resident clergymen, who minister to Congregational, Methodist, and Free Will

Baptist churches. The Methodist and Congregational denominations each have church edifices, worth jointly about $8,000. There are twelve school districts in the town, five of which, however, are fractional districts; one graded school with four teachers. The graded school-house is worth $10,000; the district school-houses, of which there are eight, are worth about $500 each. There are four doctors, one lawyer, seven merchants, one banking house, one handle and bowl factory, two flouring mills—one steam, one water power,—three saw mills—two by steam, one water power,—one steam planing and matching works. The streams are the Thornapple and Scipio. One lake—"Round lake." Average value of improved farms about $40 per acre. Productions for export: all the cereals, live stock, lumber, wood, wool, clover-seed, maple sugar, etc. Four thousand cords of wood were sold at the railroad station of the Grand River Valley railroad in the year 1877, and a larger amount is ordered for the year 1878. After the harvest of 1877, up to January 15, 1878, $80,000 dollars worth of wheat was shipped from this station. The Grand River Valley railroad passes through the town, having a station at the village of Vermontville. The Coldwater, Marshall & Mackinac railroad is graded and bridged through the town, and when completed will give shippers and travelers a competing line for business and travel which cannot fail to largely increase, while it will cheapen business transactions. The town is rolling, generally high, but not hilly or broken by swamps, and all capable of cultivation. It is considered a healthy town, is generally covered with a magnificent growth of maple, beach, black walnut, oak, whitewood, cherry and basswood, and is abundantly supplied with springs and rivulets. The soil is a dark, gravelly loam, easily worked and quite productive. Clay is found in many places.

## EATON RAPIDS.

The city of Eaton Rapids, in the county of Eaton, is situated nineteen miles south of the city of Lansing, and is a place of considerable and varied business. Mineral springs have been discovered within the corporate limits of the city, which are extensively utilized in the way of baths, and also used internally in the treatment of invalids who flock there in great numbers from this and other States. The principal diseases which are said to have been successfully combatted by the use of these waters are rheumatism, paralysis, and biliary obstructions. Many marvelous cures are claimed to have been made, and many more cases of partial relief are well authenticated. It would be false and exceptional to say that failure never attended the administration of these waters. It is enough to say that they generally relieve the sick, and often effect a radical cure. The springs known as the Stirling and Frost are perhaps the most celebrated. I append an analysis made by scientific chemists of established reputation, which must be truthful and worthy of the implicit confidence of the public.

### ANALYSIS OF THE STIRLING SPRING.

By Prof. Jackson, State Assayer to the Commonwealth of Massachusetts:

*Boston, October 15, 1870.*

**One imperial gallon of the water, or ten pounds avoirdupois, evaporated to entire dryness, yields of dry solid matter, of a drab color, 85.20 grains, which, separated into its different constituents, was found to be composed of**

| | |
|---|---|
| Carbonic acid | 2.72 |
| Chlorine | .20 |
| Sulphuric acid | 45.84 |
| Lime | 22.77 |
| Magnesia | 3.20 |
| Soda, grains | 5.59 |
| Peroxide of iron (or carbonate of iron), grains | 2.80 |
| Volatile matter and loss | 2.08 |
| | 85.20 |

These constituents are undoubtedly combined as follows, in accordance with the laws of solidity, in an aqueous solution, and of atomic proportions of acids to the bases:

| | |
|---|---|
| Sulphate of lime | 55.20 |
| Sulphate of soda | 12.59 |
| Sulphate of magnesia | 9.40 |
| Carbonate of soda,<br>Chloride of sodium, | 5.21 |
| Carbonate of iron | 2.80 |

A water of this combination is decidedly an active medical agent, having alterative and aperient qualities, useful in many forms of diseases, as will be perceived by all physicians who examine this analysis.

Respectfully, your obedient servant,

C. T. JACKSON, M. D.

### ANALYSIS OF THE FROST SPRING.

As soon as practicable, a quantity of the water was bottled, sealed, and transmitted to Prof. Samuel P. Duffield, professor of chemistry in the Detroit Medical College for analysis, who reported as follows upon its constituent parts:

#### SOLID RESIDUE, AFTER EVAPORATING A GALLON OF WATER, IN GRAINS.

Grains in one imperial gallon ........ 82.22

| | Grains. |
|---|---|
| Sulphate of lime | 4.64 |
| Carbonate of magnesia | 9.11 |
| Carbonate of iron | 2.38 |
| Carbonate of lime | 46.24 |
| Chloride of sodium | 9.21 |
| Silica | 15.74 |

| | Grains. |
|---|---|
| Organic matter and loss | .90 |
| | 88.22 |
| Cubic inches of carbonic acid gas to galon of water | 22.22 |

S. P. DUFFIELD.

Apprehensive of having done injustice to parties owning or interested in other springs, I add the following; remarking that so far as I am informed, these springs are no less valuable than those before named:

### ANALYSIS OF THE VAUGHAN HOUSE SPRING.

By Professor R. C. Kedzie, professor of chemistry in the State Agricultural college, at Lansing.

#### PROTO-CARBONATES.

| | Per gallon. |
|---|---|
| Cubic inches of carbonic acid gas | 15.97 |
| Solid residue left on evaporating a gallon of water, in grains | 90.45 |

#### ANALYSIS OF RESIDUE.

| | |
|---|---|
| Suphate of lime, grains | 48.13 |
| Carbonate of lime | 20.74 |
| Carbonate of magnesia | 3.84 |
| Carbonate of iron | 1.23 |
| Carbonate of soda | 11.57 |
| Carbonate of potassa | 1.27 |
| Chloride of sodium | .90 |
| Silicic acid | 1.40 |
| Nitrate of ammonia, hydro-sulphuric acid | Traces |
| Organic matter and loss | .90 |
| Total | 90.45 |

#### ANALYSIS OF SOLID MATTER.

The alkaline substances reckoned as bicarbonates, in grains.

| | |
|---|---|
| Sulphate of lime | 48.13 |
| Bicarbonate of lime | 29.88 |
| Bicarbonate of magnesia | 5.85 |
| Bicarbonate of iron | 1.70 |
| Bicarbonate of soda | 16.31 |
| Bicarbonate of potassa | 1.66 |
| Chloride of sodium | .90 |
| Silicic acid | 1.40 |
| Nitrate of ammonia | Trace |
| Hydro-sulphuric acid | Trace |
| Organic matter and loss | .37 |
| Total solid matter | 107.20 |

R. C. KEDZIE.

### ANALYSIS OF THE MITCHELL HOUSE SPRING.

By Professor Kedzie, of the Agricultural college.

Alkaline substances reckoned as bi-carbonates.

| | |
|---|---|
| Cubic inches of carbonic acid gas in gallon | 15.36 |
| Grains of solid matter in gallon | 93.02 |

ANALYSIS OF SOLID MATTER.

| | |
|---|---|
| Sulphate of lime | 5.16 |
| Bicarbonate of lime | 27.83 |
| Bicarbonate of magnesia | 6.88 |
| Bicarbonate of iron | 1.38 |
| Carbonate of potassa | 1.50 |
| Bicarbonate of soda | 7.58 |
| Chloride of sodium | .90 |
| Silicic acid | 2.54 |
| Nitrate of ammonia | Trace |
| Hydro-sulphuric acid | Trace |
| Total solid matter | 93.02 |

TABLE SECOND.

Alkaline substances reckoned as protocarbonates.

| | |
|---|---|
| Sulphate of lime | 45.16 |
| Carbonate of lime | 19.43 |
| Carbonate of magnesia | 4.52 |
| Carbonate of iron | 1.00 |
| Carbonate of potassa | 1.15 |
| Carbonate of soda | 5.38 |
| Chloride of sodium | .90 |
| Silicic acid | 2.54 |
| Organic matter and loss | .85 |
| Nitrate of ammonia | Trace |
| Hydro-sulphuric acid | Trace |
| Total solid residue on evaporation in grains | 79.23 |

R. C. KEDZIE.

Eaton Rapids is a handsome town, abounding in good and spacious hotels, and its large and increasing population numbers many persons of education and refinement. The railroads converging here afford invalids a speedy and easy transit from all parts of the state.

Hon. Henry A. Shaw, now a leading lawyer in Eaton county, resides at the village of Eaton Rapids. He was born June 21st, 1818, in the town of Benson, county of Rutland, Vermont. His ancestors were pioneers in the town before named. His grandfather, John Shaw, emigrated from Berkshire, Mass., when his father, Cheeney Shaw, was but two years of age. His grandfather settled in a valley in the southwest part of the town, upon a farm, nine miles from Whitehall, and one and a-half miles from Lake Champlain. Upon this farm Henry A. Shaw was inducted into the mysteries of farming. At the age of sixteen his parents removed to Ravenna, Portage county, Ohio. Here he received an academic education, and completed his law studies in the office of Francis W. Tappan, Esq. Prior to his admission to the bar, he taught school in Charleston and Edenburg a very common thing with the educated young men of that day. In the fall of 1842, in consequence of impaired health, he was advised by his physician to travel; and true to his instinct and enterprise, he purchased a load of miscellaneous goods and 850 sheep, which he sold out in the following winter in and about Eaton Rapids. At this place Mr. Shaw purchased a farm and other property, and Eaton Rapids has been his home ever since, though he has occasionally for short periods resided in other places. The enterprise and perseverance of Mr. Shaw have contributed largely to the development of the varied resources of Eaton county, and its intelligent citizens made an early discovery of his eminent abilities. In 1856 he was elected a member of the legislature, and rose at once to prominence. At this session he introduced the bill creating an independent supreme court, a bill making the judge of probate a salaried officer, a bill for the relief of religious societies, and a bill authorizing the laying-out of highways under the constitution of 1851, which had not been provided for. At this, and the special session of the legislature in 1853, Mr. Shaw was very properly chairman of the judiciary committee. In 1859 he was again returned to the house by a larger vote than had ever before been accorded to any candidate for office in the third district. He was elected speaker, and discharged his duties with great acceptability. Subsequently he served his county as judge of probate for eight years, during which time he introduced some useful and practical reforms in the conduct of the probate court. In 1869 he was again elected to the legislature, and was chairman of the judiciary committee. His experience as a legislator and lawyer qualified him in a remarkable degree for uncommon usefulness, and which was fully realized. During the civil war he served with distinction in the Second Michigan Cavalry. He has held many municipal offices, and was instrumental in the inception and construction of the two railroads passing through Eaton Rapids, which afford such ample means of shipment and communication. Every enterprise which promised substantial benefit to Eaton county has always received his hearty support, and so universal is the opinion of the people of the county, that Mr. Shaw's identification with any project is an augury of its success. With his large and responsible law practice, he still found time to carry on his farm and devote much time to his students. He refers with commendable pride to some very distinguished lawyers in this and other States who were students of his, and whose standing at the bar attest the thoroughness of their instruction, to wit: Hon. O. M. Barnes, I. M. Crane, and M. V. Montgomery, of this State, O. F. Price of Illinois, A. Bronson of California, H. H. Willard of Ohio, and many others. Mr. Shaw is widely and favorably known throughout the State, and his reputation was never greater than at the present time. On the 25th of January, 1879, his wife died of disease of the heart.

Lands entered in the town of Eaton Rapids:

| | Sec. | Acres. | Patentee. |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1835 | | 1,138 | Silsby, Spicer, Montgomery, and Johnson. |
| 1836 | 1 | 161 | C. Munger. |
| | 1 | 160 | R. W. Branch. |
| | 1 | 80 | W. Page. |
| | 3 | 160 | A. Randall. |
| | 6 | 69 | J. Bates. |
| | 7 | 70 | " |
| | 7 | 151 | H. Lewis. |
| | 10 | 160 | A. Randall. |
| | 11 | 160 | L. Munger. |
| | 12 | 120 | S. Darling. |
| | 12 | 80 | S. W. Clark. |
| | 12 | 80 | C. Munger. |
| | 13 | 127 | W. Page. |
| | 13 | 92 | T. Woodward. |
| | 14 | 160 | L. Munger. |
| | 14 | 160 | J. Marshall. |
| | 14 | 158 | R. W. Whitcomb. |
| | 17 | 320 | J. Rhines. |
| | 18 | 80 | D. Johnson. |
| | | 240 | Roberts. |
| | | 72 | C. Burr. |
| | | 160 | J. Rhines. |
| 1836 | 18 | 160 | T. T. Rudger. |
| | 19 | 308 | C. Burr. |
| | 19 | 160 | T. Spears. |
| | 20 | 160 | J. E. Clash. |
| | 23 | 388 | R. Whitcomb. |
| | 23 | 108 | A. Summers. |
| | 23 | 113 | C. Burr. |
| | 23 | 12 | R. Whitcomb. |
| | 24 | 76 | " |
| | 24 | 160 | C. Burr. |
| | 25 | 80 | A. Carrier. |
| | 25 | 80 | C. Townley. |
| | 25 | 320 | C. Burr. |
| | 26 | 147 | " |
| | 26 | 306 | J. Penfold. |
| | 26 | 156 | A. Sumner. |
| | 27 | 80 | C. Burr. |
| | 27 | 152 | J. Penfold. |
| | 28 | 160 | C. Burr. |
| | 28 | 160 | D. Foote. |
| | 28 | 80 | W. O. Thompson. |
| | 29 | 160 | C. Burr. |
| | 29 | 160 | P. Gallery. |
| | 30 | 160 | C. Burr. |

| | Sec. | Acres. | Patentee. |
|---|---|---|---|
| 1836 | 30 | 80 | A. Hyde. |
| | 30 | 160 | C. Burr. |
| | 31 | 160 | J. & J. Holten. |
| | 31 | 153 | A. Hyde. |
| | 32 | 160 | J. McQueen. |
| | 32 | 160 | A. Spencer. |
| | 33 | 320 | **D. Foote.** |
| | 33 | 160 | J. McQueen. |
| 1836 | 34 | 262 | J. Penfold. |
| | 34 | 80 | G. Ward. |
| | 34 | 52 | A. Shepherd. |
| | 35 | 80 | J. Montgomery. |
| | 35 | 40 | J. Turney. |
| | 36 | 80 | G. Scoville. |
| | 36 | 80 | W. Bush. |

Entered in 1837, 3,587 acres.

# GENESEE COUNTY.

## THE CITY OF FLINT.

### BY HON. E. H. THOMPSON, OF FLINT.

From the Detroit Post and Tribune of May 12, 1878.

### A CHAPTER OF FIRST BEGINNINGS.—FIRST LAND PURCHASED.

The first land purchased of the general government in the territory now composing the county of Genesee, was in Grand Blanc, on June 17, 1824, when William Thomson, from Livingston county, New York, took up 400 acres; Charles Little, from the same place, 160 acres; and Samuel B. Perkins, from Ontario county, New York, 80 acres. Such were the small beginnings of a county, which, in the lifetime of its first settlers, outstripped in agricultural products the old counties from which they came, and which in 1877 yielded over 1,000,000 bushels of wheat alone. Such, too, was the first rivulet of a stream of immigration which poured into the new county from the Empire State an enterprising population of 40,000 souls, who, in one generation, have replaced its unbroken forests with tilled farms and flourishing cities. To give some account of this remarkable transformation, and of the men who contributed to it, is the object of this sketch. Its principal city is yet too young, and its citizens too busy, to have organized a pioneer society and laid the foundation for a historical collection, and for the facts and incidents given below we are indebted to the Hon. F. H. Rankin, of the Wolverine Citizen, the Hon. J. W. Begole, Lewis Buckingham, first sheriff of the county, and a few other early settlers, who, like Æneas of old, relate "that which they saw, and a great part of which they were."

### NAME AND LOCATION.

Like many another city, Flint seems to owe its location to an accident, and its name to an unaccountable caprice. Lo, the poor but vengeful Indian, who has sent so many Michigan towns soaring into endless noteriety with as many Chippewa syllables to each name as there are rag knots to the tail of a kite, called the region now occupied by the city Mus-cu-ta-wa-ingh, or "open plain burned over," and the beautiful stream which flows through it Pa-won-nuk-ening, or "the river of the flint," though just why he should have done so, nobody seems to know. The gently rolling land was covered with heavy forest timber, and the river, though having a rocky bed, has nothing suggestive of flint about it. After wrestling for several years with these Chippewa jawbreakers, the early settlers ended the struggle by calling both river and settlement Flint, and Flint they are.

The great Indian trail from the Saginaws to Detroit, along which the northern tribes came down in large numbers to barter their furs for fire-water, and to receive their annuities from the government at Detroit, crossed the Flint river a little way below the present Saginaw street bridge, and to this circumstance the city seems to owe its site. The first French traders called it Grand Traverse—great ford—a name which still clings to one of the streets near the original crossing. As well as a resting place at times when the river was not fordable, the place became a popular hunting and camping ground, game and fish being abundant in the neighborhood.

### FIRST ROAD.

Following very nearly the old Indian trail, the government started to build a military road from Detroit through Pontiac to the old United States post on Saginaw Bay. This road was surveyed one hundred feet wide, the timber cleared away, the ground turnpiked, streams bridged, etc., making a very passable wagon road, which is still the principal highway in the country through which it was laid out. The builders of this road constructed a bridge across the Flint at the "Grand Traverse," and this gave the locality an importance it never had before. Had the little wooden bridge been moved either up or down the stream, it would undoubtedly have carried the whole future city with it, on so slender a thread do the weightiest events often hang. In 1836 this military thoroughfare had been surveyed twelve miles north of the Flint, and turnpiked five miles, when, the territory having become a State, all further work on the road by the government was suspended, but Saginaw street, which is to this day the main avenue of Flint on each side of the river, is simply this old military turnpike, disguised in a modern Nicholson pavement.

### LITIGATION.

The title to the land on which Flint stands has played an important part in the growth of the city, but it has been too many years in litigation, and has become altogether too complicated, not to say delicate, a subject for discussion in this sketch. It appears that at a grand Indian council held at Saginaw in 1819, in which General Cass represented the government, and the noted red warrior Neome represented the Indians, the Chippewas ceded all their lands in the lower peninsula to the general government except a few reservations, one of which was eleven sections of land about "the Grand Traverse," especially reserved for certain heirs of an Indian trader called by the Indians Wah-basins, and by the settlers Jacob Smith, and much of the subsequent trouble grew out of the question who the rightful heirs were, the Smith family being then, as now, somewhat numerous. This litigation, which only came to an end recently, having lasted some thirty or forty years, and engaged at one time or another pretty much all the lawyers in that part of the State, seriously affected the growth of the city, many who had bought homes being virtually lawed out of them, and many others declining to buy lots the titles to which were under a shadow.

### FIRST LOG CABIN.

Soon after the treaty of Saginaw awarded these lands to Wa-ba-sins and his heirs of Indian descent, he removed to "the Grand Traverse" and built the first log cabin ever built in the neighborhood. This pioneer house stood on the north side of the river, where the Baptist church now stands, and in it Smith died in 1825. In it, too, died probably the first white woman who was ever buried in Genesee county. In 1828 Archibald H. Green came from New York State into this remote wilderness, accompanied by his wife and intending to buy a farm; but soon after his arrival she was taken sick in Smith's cabin, and where, remote from friends and medical aid, she died, and her husband returned east without purchasing, but through his representations of the fine farming lands he had seen, John Todd and other enterprising pioneers were induced to try their fortunes in the same wilderness, and met better success. The old Smith homestead was still standing in 1840, and in it was organized a "Tippecanoe club" in that year; but club and cabin soon after disappeared, leaving no trace behind. About the year 1836 Chauncy S. Payne, of Painesville, Ohio, having married one of the heirs, who is still a respected resident of the city, came into possession of three sections of land, covering part of the site of the future city, and took a prominent part in the long litigation which followed.

June 12, 1825, the general government issued a patent for a section of land on the south side of the river to Francis Campau, who sold it five years afterwards to John Todd, now of Owosso, for $800. This section included most of the land now occupied by the city on the south side of the river and was first platted and offered for sale in the summer and fall of 1836, when the part east of the military road, on Saginaw street, was owned by A. C. Stevens, and the part west of the road by Wait Beach.

### TODD'S TAVERN.

About 1831 John Todd, who is spoken of as the first regular white settler at the "Grand Traverse," built a small tavern on the south side of the river on the site of the present Wolverine Citizen office. This little frontier inn, with its numerous log additions, became quite a noted institution in its day, and was regarded as a sort of half-way house between Pontiac and the Saginaws. But the growth of the hamlet was slow, and up to 1836 there were but four houses in the neighborhood. In that year the United States opened a land office at the "Grand Traverse," with Gen. Charles C. Hascall as receiver, and Michael Hoffman register. This had the effect of turning the tide of immigration in that direction, and so great a rush for patents has seldom been witnessed at any land office in the State. For several weeks the tavern was wholly unable to accommodate the crowd of land-seekers, and hungry men had to wait from dawn till near dusk before finding a vacancy at the scantily covered table. The land had to be paid for in coin, and purchasers came provided with silver, mostly in half-dollar pieces, which they carried in boxes and bags, in what would now be regarded as a most reckless and foolhardy way. At night these boxes and bags were piled up promiscuously against the wall, while the owners, strangers to each other, slept around promiscuously on the floor; yet, strange to say, no case of theft of the coin was ever reported, and the pioneers take pleasure in telling how the government took away its money in a four-horse wagon. It is referred to as the most exciting season in the history of the place, and from that time on, the population of both village and county increased rapidly.

### THE FIRST POSTOFFICE

was established in 1836 with Judge Lyman Stowe as postmaster, who, like many another obliging public servant under similar circumstances, is said to have gone about the streets carrying the postoffice in his hat. His successors in office were John Todd, Wm. Crandall, Wm. Moon, Colonel Crossman, E. S. Williams and Washington O'Donoughue, the present popular incumbent.

### TOWNSHIP ORGANIZATION.

In 1821 Oakland county apparently included everything north of Wayne clear to Saginaw Bay. Out of this comparatively unknown territory the legislative council of the territory of Michigan on March 9, 1833, organized the townships of land now known as Mt. Morris, Genesee, Flint, Burton, Davison, Mundy, Grand Blanc, Atlas and Fenton, to form a township by the name of Grand Blanc, directing the first township meeting to be held at the house of Rufus W. Stephens; and by enactment of the same council, March 26, 1835, the whole county of Shiawassee was attached to and made a part of the township of Grand Blanc for the purposes of township government. Two days after the passage of that act, the county of Genesee was formally organized out of the eastern tier of townships of Shiawassee county, the western tier of Lapeer county, and the southeastern corner township of Saginaw, and the territory thus organized into a county was attached to Oakland for judicial purposes. In 1836, the township of Flint was organized by act of the legislature, and the first town meeting was held at the house of Wait Beach, and Lyman Stowe elected first supervisor.

### FIRST SUPERVISORS' MEETING.

The first annual meeting of the board of supervisors was held in the tailor shop of Daniel H. Seeley, over Stage & Wright's store, in Flint. The full board consisted of S. W. Pattison of Argentine, Samuel Rice of Grand Blanc, and Lyman Stowe of Flint. Their work was carried on simultaneously with that of the tailor, and they voted him the sum of $1 for the use of his shop and fuel during their sessions. One of the appropriations made at this meeting was $3 to Samuel Rice for the purchase of a trunk in which to preserve the county records. With a few notable exceptions, the long and illustrious line of Genesee county supervisors have followed the example of economy set by the first board, the present receptacle for the county records being one of the exceptions.

### FIRST ELECTION.

The first election of county officers was held in the fall of 1836, but there is no record of the number of votes cast. At the April election, in 1838, the question of borrowing $5,000 to build a county jail was submitted and carried by a majority of seven, and the money was borrowed from the State superintendent of public instruction.

### FIRST COURT.

The first term of the circuit court was held in Flint, in July, 1837, by George Morell, then chief justice of the supreme court, who was followed by the Hon. Charles Whipple, associate justice of the supreme court. The first judge of the district to which Genesee county was attached after the circuit courts were made independent of the supreme court was the Hon. Ellsworth Walkley, who soon after removed from the State, and was succeeded by the Hon. Josiah Turner.

### FIRST SAW-MILL.

The honor of having built the first saw-mill within the present limits of Flint is usually accorded to Stage & Wright, whose first effort in that line dates from 1836; but Mr. Lewis Buckingham, who came to the place in 1833, says he bought the lumber for his house at a mill on the Thread river about a mile and a quarter south of Saginaw street bridge, and some distance above the present Thread river mills, and that the mill was then several years old. It was built as early as 1830 by George Oliver, and, according to one account, was destroyed by lightning, though Mr. Buckingham's recollection is that it was torn down and never rebuilt. Though pioneers are far from agreed on this point, the second mill in point of time was the one built on Thread river some distance below Oliver's, by Rufus W. Stevens, about the year 1833 or 1834. A grist-mill was added two or three years later, and the two, after passing through many changes and the hands of many owners, are now known as the Thread mills, and are owned by Pearson & Burrows. The first saw-mill built on the Flint, but the third within the present city limits, was that of Stage, Wright & Co., above alluded to. Compared with the mammoth mills which have followed it, and given the city its leading industry, this pioneer mill was a small concern, driven by water and having but a small capacity. It was sold about 1840 to Stevens & Pearson, who ran it a few years, when Mr. Stevens was succeeded in the firm by John Hamilton, and later still Mr. Hamilton bought out the interest of his partner, Mr. Pearson, and became sole proprietor. About 1844, he added a grist-mill, and three years later sold both to his sons William and Oliver Hamilton, and his son-in-law Cornelius Roosvelt. The latter soon after sold out to the two brothers, and Oliver dying in 1852 William became sole proprietor and has since remained so. We have taken pains to trace out the history of this pioneer mill partly because it has been a subject of controversy and partly to show the bewildering changes in ownership to which that kind of property in a growing town is subject. The mill has, of course, been greatly changed since first it polluted the clear waters of the Flint with its fish-killing saw-dust, but it is still courteously regarded as the same old mill. The United States census of 1850 credits Flint with only two saw-mills, Stage & Wright's and another built by "the Grand Traverse Hydraulic Association," afterwards known as Crapo's old or lower mill.

### A POW-WOW.

An Indian council or grand pow-wow was held at Flint in 1837, in which the government was represented by Schoolcraft, and the object of which was the purchase of certain lands which had been reserved to the Indians by the council at Saginaw in 1819. It was attended by the usual palaver, but by no very important or dramatic incident. A lady who was present tells how a certain squaw made an eloquent harangue at the council, the burthen of which was, when interpreted, that the Great Father should give the Indians an abundance of beads for their land so that they could give them to the squaws and so love their squaws better.

### FIRST STORE.

The year following the construction of their saw-mill in 1836, Robert F. Stage and Ira D. Wright built the second store, or, as some say, the first, within the present limits of the city. This was a frame building, and stood near the river and across the street from Todd's tavern. It is chiefly notable as furnishing the first suggestion of a town hall. The attic over the storeroom, though small, crowded close up to the roof, and poorly lighted, was used for holding town meetings. Here, too, was held the first county election and the first court, and almost the first religious meetings, being used in common by all parties and all denominations, as occasion offered. This ancient landmark was destroyed by fire in 1858. The honor of having built the very first store is claimed by Rufus W. Stevens, but the exact date of that important event has passed from the uncertain memories of the few who were present at the time and still survive. It was a very small affair, its customers almost exclusively Indians, and was started about 1834. From these barely discoverable beginnings has grown the present immense mercantile trade of the city.

### FIRST SCHOOL.

The first school of which mention is made was opened in the fall of 1834 in a small log shanty on Harrison street, near the present site of the Chicago and Lake Huron depot. It was taught by Daniel Sullivan, who still lives in the field of his early labors, but engaged in the more lucrative calling of saloonist. It was, of course, a private school, and at the end of 1834 he had twelve pupils, the sons and daughters of Rufus W. Stevens, John Todd, and James Cronk, from whom he received ten cents a week for each pupil. The first school district was set off April 11, 1837, and the first public school-teacher was Miss Overton, afterward Mrs. William Chambers. The district comprised the whole settlement, and the school-house stood north of where the Fenton Block now stands on Saginaw street. In 1838 the whole number of children of school age in the township was 103. The first offical report of the school inspectors was made on October 20 that year, and shows that the school lasted six months, and that the whole number of scholars attending was sixty. The amount raised by tax was $586, of which $499 was for building a school-house, and $87 for the support of schools. The new school-house then built was a frame building on the corner of Clifford and First streets, and was used for many other purposes besides that for which it was especially built.

### FIRST SHOP.

The first shop of which there is any record was a blacksmith shop, started about 1830 in a barn by Merrick Stowe, brother of Judge Stowe, the first postmaster. He soon after built a shop on the river bank near the crossing, the posts in the water upon which it rested remaining to mark the spot many years afterward. Mr. Stowe died about five months ago in the town of Atlas. In 1835 John Todd sold his farm and tavern to Wait Beach, and he sold the house about two years afterwards to Lewis Buckingham, who had been elected sheriff and removed from his farm into the village, where he has ever since resided, having served the county as sheriff for three terms. Mr. Buckingham opened the "River House" as a temperance hotel, and erected a fine sign to that effect; but there being two sentiments on that question then, as now, one fine morning he found his sign-post bored in two at the surface of the ground.

### FIRST RELIGIOUS SOCIETY.

In a little pamphlet lately prepared and published by a committee of the Court Street Methodist Church, it is claimed that the first religious service ever held in Flint was conducted in 1834 by the Rev. Bradford Frazee, who was then on his way from Ohio to Saginaw, whither he was sent as a missionary by the Ohio conference. Tradition says Mr. Frazee, for some reason, became very obnoxious to the wild Saginawians of that day, who avenged themselves by shaving his horse's mane and tail, and other acts of barbarism. In 1835 the Ohio conference appointed to the same mission the Rev. W. H. Brockway, now of Albion, who, unlike his predecessor, became a great favorite with the natives and early settlers throughout the whole Saginaw region. In 1836, he is said to have been the only regular preacher in all the territory now comprised in the counties of Lapeer, Genesee, Shiawasse, and Saginaw. He traveled on foot, carrying his bible, hymn-book, and book of discipline in his hand, and preached in Flint once in three or four weeks. In a recent letter Mr. Brockway writes: "I think at that time there were not more than four or five families on the ground embraced in the city of Flint. I generally came from Saginaw every third week and preached at Flint, and also five miles north at Mt. Morris, then called the 'Cold Water Settlement.' At Flint my home was generally at the tavern of Mr. Beach, and my preaching place his little bar-room. During the summer of 1836 a frame store was built opposite Beach's tavern. When the floor was laid, we got permission to use the upper story, and I preached there once, I think, in July, 1836; and then and there the first class was organized. To the best of my remembrance it consisted of nine persons, most of them from the settlements near Flint." This class was not organized till a few months after Mr. Brockway took the names, when Daniel F. Freeman was appointed leader by the Rev. O. F. North. If Mr. Brockway's recollections are correct, this was properly the first religious organization in Flint. Others, however, say that Stage & Wright's store was not built till 1837, and that the events spoken of by Mr. Brockway must have occurred later than 1836. If this be so, then the honor of organizing the first religious society must be awarded to another denomination.

### ANOTHER FIRST ONE.

In a historical sketch of the first Presbyterian church of Flint, by the Rev. G. P. Tindall, we find the following: "May 7, 1837, at the 'River house,' occupied by Lewis Buckingham, seventeen persons were organized into a Congregational church by the Rev. Mr. Dudley. He was preaching at the time to the church in Genesee, and most of the members constituting this church were members there. There being no Congregational association in this region, this church in 1840 submitted its articles of faith to the Presbytery of Detroit, and was taken under the care of that body. The first place generally used for public meetings in the village was the room over Stage & Wright's store, east of Saginaw street, and near the river. For some reason the first communion was held in a barn standing near the east corner of the square west of Saginaw and north of Kearsley streets. The same season of the organization of the church a house of worship was erected where the Henderson warehouse now stands. The Rev. Mr. Bates preached the dedication sermon of this house in the late fall or early winter. A religious interest arising, he continued the meetings, the Rev. Orson Parker assisting and continuing the meetings after

Mr. Bates left. As the result of that precious revival twenty-one persons were united with the church on profession of faith December 17 (1837), and seven by letter." From this it appears that the first religious society organized in the place was a Congregational church, and that the first house of worship erected there belonged to that denomination, but that both were soon after turned over to the Presbyterians, where they ever after remained. The first Episcopal society was organized in 1839, by the Rev. Daniel E. Brown, a missionary from Green Bay, Wisconsin, and the first communion was held on Christmas day that year, there being fifteen communicants, of whom nine were Presbyterians. Their first church was a small frame building on Saginaw street, between First and Second streets, built in 1843.

### MINISTERIAL WORLDLINESS.

The Rev. Orson Parker, the first regular pastor of the Congregational church mentioned above, was quite an effective evangelist in his day, but withal eccentric, and many amusing stories are told of him. It is said the society engaged him, as they supposed for a year at a stipulated salary, but he construed the contract as calling for a stipulated number of sermons, and by getting up revivals and preaching daily, he managed to get in his whole year's work in a few months, and demanded his salary just the same as though his 104 discourses had been evenly distributed through the whole fifty-two Sundays. Failing to collect a church subscription from a delinquent brother he would write a business note to his attorney closing about thus: "Levy on his household goods, and if he don't pay, throw him and them into the street. Yours in Christ, O. Parker." Among his successors in the pastorate were the Rev. P. S. Van Nest, now in Wisconsin, the Rev. J. G. Atterbury of Detroit, and the Rev. H. H. Northrop of Flint.

### NEVER WAS A VILLAGE.

Strange as it may seem, Flint never had an organization as a village at all, but from a simple township leaped into a full-fledged city, with all the immunities and machinery thereto belonging. January 18, 1855, a citizen's meeting was held in the court house to consider the subject of a city charter, and after several hours of spirited debate General C. C. Hascall, Levi Walker, Charles H. Beecher, F. H. Rankin, James Birdsall, George M. Dewey, and C. S. Payne were chosen a committee to draft the provisions of the proposed charter. Of that committee Messrs. Dewey and Rankin alone survive. The draft was presented to an adjourned citizens' meeting, and after further discussion adopted. The business of working over a settlement into a city was gone through with by the legislature with its customary dispatch, and the act of incorporation became a law by the approval of Governor Bingham, February 3, 1855, just fifteen days after the citizens first met to think about it, and about a week after they had made up their minds. On April 2d following, the first charter election was held, and the Hon. Grant Decker was chosen mayor. That office has since been held by R. J. S. Page, Porter Hazleton, E. S. Williams, H. M. Henderson, William Patterson, S. M. Axford, William M. Fenton, William Hamilton, A. B. Witherbee, W. S. Patrick, H. H. Crapo, J. B. Walker, D. S. Fox, William B. McCreery, Alexander McFarlan, George H. Durand, E. H. Thompson, and Jerome Eddy. Of these, just one-half are now living.

### FIRST NEWSPAPER.

The first newspaper established in Genesee county was the Flint River Gazette, by J. K. Averill, in 1839. It was democratic in politics and lived only six months,—not long enough to take part in the stirring campaign of the following year. It was succeeded by the Northern Advocate, published by W. A. Morrison, and discontinued at the end of the second year. Then came the Genesee Herald, published by Perry Joslin, more recently connected with the Saginaw Enterprise. The age of the Herald at its death is not a matter of record, but it seems to have been called hence in its infancy. The Western Citizen, owned by O. S. Carter, also had a short existence, and from its ashes, February 23, 1850, arose the Genesee Whig, afterwards rechristened the Wolverine Citizen, and still published. These last named were whig or republican in politics. About 1854 the late R. W. Jenny was publishing for its proprietor, General C. C. Hascall, a democratic paper called the Flint Republican.

### FIRST MEDICAL SOCIETY.

The first medical society in Genesee county was organized in the winter of 1841-2. Its members were Drs. John A. Hayes, Robert D. Lamond, John W. King, and George W. Fish, who by a singular coincidence all hailed from Herkimer county, New York, and had all been students in the same medical college. It was called the Flint Medical Association, and maintained its organization till superseded by the Flint Academy of Medicine. Of the original four Dr. Fish alone survives.

### FIRST RAILROAD.

Flint has had several attacks of railroad fever, but has suffered much less from them than some other cities where the spirit of speculation reached a white heat. An ancient embankment of covered and rotting timbers is pointed out in the city as the foundation of a railroad laid with considerable enthusiasm away back in 1837. This was part of the projected railroad to connect Port Huron with Grand Haven, which General Hascall contracted to build from the western limits of Genesee county to the county seat of Lapeer county. Work was pushed vigorously for a time, but through some difficulty in getting the expected State aid and other causes, work was suspended and the track was given a rest of nearly thirty-five years, when, having changed hands and names, the eastern end was completed as the Flint and Port Huron railroad, and after another rest it pushed on a couple of years ago, not to Grand Haven, but to Lansing, as the Chicago and Lake Huron railroad.

The first locomotive reached the city in the spring of 1863, over the Flint and Pere Marquette road, then completed as far as Saginaw; but the new road afforded such a limited outlet, or the city was so distracted with the events just then occurring in the army, that the arrival of the first locomotive seems to have excited no special attention, and was followed by no popular demonstration, as were like events afterward. Work on the Flint and Holly road was begun the same spring that the above section of the Pere Marquette was completed, and by the untiring energy of Governor Crapo, president of the company, seconded by the leading business men of Flint, it was graded, tied, ironed, and ready for the rolling stock in about eighteen months, and, it is said, at a cost much less than any equal length of road in the State was ever constructed, wages and cost of material considered. The money for the work was largely advanced by Governor Crapo and his friends in the East, and the company was further fortunate in having secured the iron at ante-war prices. The trip of the first locomotive in November, 1864, was the occasion of great rejoicing. A few years later the road was sold to the Flint and Pere Marquette company at a handsome advance upon its original cost, and has since been operated by that company as part of its through line. It has since built the Flint river division, a branch road extending from Flint to Otter Lake, for the benefit of the extensive lumber interests of that region.

### THE OLD AND NEW.

The opening of these several roads gave Flint good railroad outlets east, west, north, and south, and stimulated, directly or indirectly, all its material interests. They bring it within twenty miles by rail of Lapeer, sixty-six of Port Huron, seventeen of Holly, fifty-seven of Wayne, one hundred and eight of Toledo, forty-nine of Lansing, thirty-four of East Saginaw, forty-seven of Bay City, one hundred and seventy-two of Ludington, sixty-four of Detroit by way of the Milwaukee road or seventy-five by the Michigan Central, and within nineteen miles of Otter Lake on the Detroit and Bay City road. Previous to the opening of the railroads these points had to be reached by foot or stage coach under delays that seem almost incredible by their contrast with the present facilities for travel. Under the direction of William Clifford a line of stage coaches was established through Flint over the old military road, which was considered a model of dispatch in its day. Under favorable circumstances a man could take the stage at Flint, go to Detroit and return in three days, but the ordinary time was four days. By the same conveyance Pontiac could be reached in from eight to twelve hours. After the Milwaukee road had been extended west of Pontiac the stage route was changed to Fenton, but a trip to Detroit was still a very laborious undertaking, while the hauling of produce and lumber, except to purchasers within the county, was very limited.

### EVIDENCES OF GROWTH.

The steady increase of the population, and growth of the material wealth of the county and city, may be inferred from a few figures taken from many others equally significant. In 1838 the whole number of children of school age in the township of Flint was 103. In 1840 the number had increased to 234; in 1845 to 587; in 1850 to 1,009; in 1853 to 1,322; and in 1877 the number in the city alone between five and twenty years of age was 2,441. At the first township election held at Todd's tavern, April 4, 1836, only fourteen votes were cast, and out of these electors were chosen three assessors, four justices, two constables and six school officers. How many defeated candidates there were, is not stated. The same year the whole number of votes polled in the county was 220. In 1854 the votes polled in the township numbered 713, and in 1876 they were in city and township 2,122, and in the county 8,780. The assessed valuation of taxable property in the county by the supervisors was in 1836, $321,869; in 1840, $1,008,316; in 1858, $4,051,957; and in 1877, $6,492,853. The present valuation of the taxable property of the city by wards is as follows: First ward, $318,844; second ward, $428,008; third ward, $433,650; fourth ward, $85,989; total, $1,266,491. The present population of the city is about 10,000, and of the county 39,000.

### MAINLY MISCELLANEOUS.

The present city government is: Mayor, Jerome Eddy; clerk, Francis H. Rankin; treasurer, Charles C. Beahan; city attorney, George R. Gold; marshal, Michael Doran. The city has no police department proper. The city marshal is, by virtue of that office, chief of police, and he, with his deputies and subordinate officers, constitute the police force. The city has never been desolated by fire or flood, nor violently agitated by strikes and mobs—unless that little unpleasantness with McDermott a year ago is to be dignified with the name of a mob—and its annals are nearly as barren of stirring incidents as a merchant's ledger. It is mainly a record of hard work, good investments and fair profits. The farming community is largely composed of thrifty New Yorkers, who left none of their thrift or partiality for schools, churches and comfortable homes behind them on moving into a new and better State.

### A CHAPTER OF OBSERVATIONS—THE CITY CHASED OVER THE RIVER.

It is said that after the opening of the land office turned the tide of immigration in this direction, the owners of real estate on the north side of the river put up their prices in expectation of realizing large fortunes therefrom. If this be so it was surely a case where "vaulting ambition o'erleaped itself," for its effect was to drive about three-fourths of the population and nine-tenths of the business to the south side of the river, though the land on the north side would on some accounts have been preferable as a site for a city. So decided was this movement that some business men who had moved their establishments to the north side found it for their interest to move back again, and to-day 111 acres of eligible city lots inside the city limits and north of the river are sown to wheat, and a good many others might as well be. However, now that the long litigation is over, and different prices prevail, the north side is in a fair way to take a new start.

### PLOT AND COUNTER PLOT.

In laying the foundation of the city the points of the compass were ignored. The line marking the city limits changes its direction twenty-three times in making its grand circuit, and only once, and then for a very short distance, does it approach either the east, west, north, or south. The inclosed twenty-two sided figure resembles nothing in Euclid or out of it, unless it be the plan of a military fortification by a draughtsman who only knows that a fortification is something abounding in salient and re-entrant angles. Through this irregular inclosure and dividing it into two not very unequal parts, the Flint river pursues its winding way from the northeast toward the southwest. In the upper part of its course it divides in natural channels, forming Crapo's Island; farther down, and opposite the central part of the city, it pours over a dam and through artificial channels on each side for the benefit of Crapo's and W. Hamilton's mills; below the Saginaw street bridge it bends southward, turns abruptly to the north and sweeps round to the south, nearly surrounding J. B. Atwood's Island mill and yards; then running the gauntlet of Begole & Fox's mills, it escapes from the city limits in another grand sweep northward by Glenwood Cemetery.

The southern part of the city is again divided by Thread river, a slender, tortuous creek, which meanders up from the southeast, and empties into the Flint, near the Island Mill. The old government road, now Saginaw street, crosses the southern city limits in a northerly direction, turns several points towards the west, crosses the Thread river a mile and a quarter from the center of the city, pursues the even tenor of its way for half a mile, turns west of north, makes a bee line for the Flint, then turns due north, and so passes out of the city, about a mile from the bridge. An extension of Saginaw street in the line in which it passes through the center of the city has been opened through the part north of the river, and is called Detroit street. Saginaw street and the rivers form the boundaries of the wards. All north of the Flint river constitutes the first ward; all south of the river and east of Saginaw street, the second ward; between Saginaw street and the Thread river, the third ward; and all west of the Thread, the fourth. The last is by far the smallest in population, as it is the youngest of the wards.

### DIRECTORY.

The main thoroughfare through the center of the city at right angles with Saginaw street is Kearsley street, which comes up through the sparsely settled fourth ward, beyond the Thread, touches the Flint a quarter of a mile below the bridge, crosses Saginaw street a few blocks south of it, and passes on, steadily diverging from the river in a direction north of east. To these two streets the other streets of the city adjust themselves with tolerable success. The principal streets running parallel with Saginaw are, named in order to the west, Beach, Church, Grand Traverse, Oak, Stockton, and Ann Arbor; and to the east, Harrison, Clifford, Stevens, and Liberty. The streets running parallel with Kearsley and south of it are numbered, except Court street, which falls between Fourth and Fifth. Between Kearsley and the river are two fragmentary streets called Union and Mill. On the north side the streets which try to run parallel with the river are numbered, but are somewhat demoralized by the divergent courses of Detroit and Saginaw streets, and their upper ends circle over toward the river like threads of a spider web. The principal streets west of Detroit street and parallel with it are Garland, Mason, Smith, and Stone, all of which maintain a fair degree of rectitude.

### HOW IT LOOKS TO A MAN UP A TREE.

From an elevated point at the corner of Saginaw and Kearsley streets the Institution for the deaf, dumb, and the blind would be seen in a southwesterly direction over a mile distant, on Court street; the new high school building in nearly the same direction, but near by, between Beach, Church, Second and Third streets; the court-house and jail nearly south, on the square bounded by Saginaw, Beach, Court, and Fifth streets; the new stone church (St. Paul's) and the city hall nearly in the same direction; the extensive county fair grounds and buildings near the eastern limits of the city; Glenwood, the principal cemetery, to the westward, between the Flint river, and the Chicago and Lake Huron railroad; the depot of the latter toward the north, about the foot of Clifford street; and the depot of the Flint and Pere Marquette, and the Taylor house further down the river, at the foot of Beach street. A different and much prettier view of the city and surrounding country may be had from the city hall or the Institution, but the above affords a fair idea of the relative positions of the most noteworthy objects "around town."

The Flint and Pere Marquette railroad enters the corporation on the south, one and a quarter miles south of the center of the city, crosses the Thread and follows the general course of the Flint on the southeast bank till it passes

Saginaw street, then crossing over, it leaves the corporation limits north of the river and at some distance from it. The Chicago and Lake Huron railroad enters the corporation limits in the east near the fair grounds, runs northwesterly to the Flint, then southwesterly, and after crossing and recrossing the river, passes out of the city limits to the left of Glenwood.

### A GOOD SHOWING.

The principal streets are paved with wooden pavements, which are kept remarkably clean and in good repair, while the unpaved streets are so well graveled by nature or the tax-payers as to be in excellent condition at nearly all seasons of the year. The business portions of the city are built of fine brick blocks, while the back streets are lined with handsome brick and frame residences, lawns, shade trees, flower gardens, and other evidences of wealth and culture. Despite the hard times which have depressed its principal business interests, the city of Flint exhibits very few unoccupied houses, and far less than her proportion of business failures.

### THE INSTITUTION FOR THE DEAF AND DUMB, AND THE BLIND.

#### *Its Origin.*

In reviewing the city's institutions, the first place should undoubtedly be awarded to the Michigan Institution for the Deaf, Dumb, and the Blind. The act authorizing the establishment of the Michigan institution for educating the deaf, dumb, and the blind, was introduced by the Hon. E. H. Thompson, was passed in 1848, and the first board of trustees elected under it were Elon Farnsworth of Wayne, Charles C. Hascall of Genesee, John P. Cook of Hillsdale, Charles E. Stewart of Kalamazoo, and Charles H. Taylor of Kent, who held their first meeting in Detroit, May 22, 1849. The principal proposals for the location of the new building came from Flint and Romeo, and the board decided in favor of the former at a meeting held in November, 1849. December 21, 1850, Charles H. Palmer was appointed principal of the institution, but without pay until it should go into operation. The same year Mr. Farnsworth was chosen acting commissioner of the board, with instructions to visit other institutions for plans of buildings, and Mr. Hascall, the resident trustee, was authorized to make certain improvements on the grounds.

#### *Work Begun.*

In 1857 the legislature amended the act of 1848, so that the institution should be entirely independent of the Kalamazoo Insane Asylum, the two having been up to that time in charge of the same board. Under the amended act each was to be governed by a board of three trustees appointed by the governor. The first board for the Flint institution consisted of James B. Walker of Flint, Benjamin Pierson and John Le Roy. A vacant building was rented for the purpose in Flint, and the education of the deaf, dumb, and the blind begun.

B. M. Fay was chosen principal, and organized the school work proper in 1857. Mr. Walker was chosen building commissioner, and authorized to visit New York and study the plans upon which the deaf mute institution of that State was constructed. He was accompanied by Mr. Fay, and the present cluster of five buildings are substantially the same as the plans adopted by the board.

### *The School Wing.*

The part known as the school wing was first built, but its uses were changed with the addition of the other buildings. Its basement is now used as a store-room for provisions, a basket shop for the blind, and sleeping-rooms for domestics. The first story is used for the library, office of steward, music and recitation rooms. The second story has six recitation rooms for the deaf mutes and two for the blind. The third floor, recently used for shoe shops, etc., has been converted into dormitories.

### *The Chapel.*

Directly in front or north of the school wing is the chapel building, the two being connected by a covered archway. The basement of this building is used as a kitchen, bakery, and store-rooms, and the first floor as a dining-room for the pupils. On the second floor is the chapel in which the pupils meet for religious and other exercises, and which is appropriately planned and furnished for that purpose.

### *Boys' and Girls' Wing.*

East and west of the chapel building are two buildings, called respectively the boys' and the girls' wing. They are separated from the chapel building by open courts, each twenty-eight feet wide, and connected with it by covered passage ways. Running across the rear of each wing is a hall ten feet wide in each story, and opening from the hall of each lower story is a large outside door. The basements of the wings are used for wardrobes, wash-rooms, and bath-rooms. Each pupil has a wardrobe of his own, or a wooden case in which to keep his clothing, and the metallic bath-tubs with which the bath-rooms are plentifully furnished, are each supplied with warm and cold water. The second floors of the wings are used for the sitting-rooms for the boys and girls respectively, where they prepare for their recitations, or spend their spare time in reading or amusements. The part of the floor set off for the blind is also used for their recitation rooms. The second story of the girls' wing is used for the girls' sleeping apartments, hospital, and sewing-room. The second story of the boys' wing is similarly divided for the boys, and has also a dormitory for the blind. The third story of each wing is used for dormitories and for sleeping-rooms of the attendants who have charge of the pupils when not in school.

### *The Main Building.*

The main or front building consists of three parts, an upright five stories high, and two wings each four stories high, including basement. At each end a large hall leads from the main corridors to the boys' wing, the girls' wing, and the chapel building respectively. In the basement are the teachers' dining-room, bath-rooms, etc. On the first floor is a vestibule leading from the front entrance to the main corridor, and on the same floor are the reception rooms, principal's office, sitting-rooms, parlor, etc. The second floor contains the rooms occupied by the matron and assistant matrons, the principal sewing-room, and several guest-chambers. The third and fourth stories are mainly taken up with rooms for the teachers. There are water-closets and sinks on each floor of each building at the ends of the halls. The water for their use and for use in the bath-rooms is supplied from iron tanks under the roof, one for hot and the other for cold water.

### *Heating, etc.*

In the rear of the buildings described, and at a short distance from them, is a long, low building, used partly as a boiler-house and partly for a wash-room in which the washing for the institution is carried on by steam. Another part of the building contains the boilers, engines, pumps, heating apparatus, etc. Originally the buildings were heated by driving a strong current of air through an immense coil of steam pipe, and through an underground passage, by means of a powerful fly-wheel or fan, but the method was not a success, and they are now heated by direct radiation. Instead of the fan and large underground passage, steam is now conveyed in iron pipes directly from the boilers to the room to be heated, and by this means excellent ventilation is also secured. The subject of sewerage has also received much attention and the method adopted is as nearly perfect as any yet devised, and for this purpose the location of the buildings is very favorable.

### *Still Unfinished.*

The ground floors of the front and school buildings are the same size, each being 60 feet wide by 100 feet in length. The central building is 50 feet wide by 90 feet long, and the wings 50 by 80 feet each. This pile of buildings was commenced about twenty years ago, and though not yet completed, they have all been occupied for several years, the front and last one being ready for occupancy in September, 1870. According to the architect's designs, there remains to be built an elaborate portico to the front of the building, the foundation for which was laid with the building. The aggregate cost of the buildings was about $400,000. In addition to the buildings already named, there is a smaller building used for the cabinet and other shops, and also a barn.

### *Principals and Principles.*

Prof. B. M. Fay, the first principal of the institution, after organizing the work of the school in the "Dewey house," rented for the purpose, and afterwards superintended the still small classes in the new school building after its completion, resigned the position in September, 1864. He was succeeded by Egbert L. Bangs, who carried on the work of his predecessors and added new features and methods of instruction of his own. Among other notable experiments was an attempt to teach deaf mutes to articulate by Prof. G. L. Brockett. He taught by the imitation method and succeeded very well. The system known as "Bell's Visible Speech" was introduced into the school in the fall of 1876 by Miss Hattie McGann, who is still teaching it with encouraging results. Prof. Bangs was succeeded in the principalship by Prof. J. W. Parker, September 1, 1876.

### *Present Attendance.*

The whole number now in attendance is 242, which is twenty-two more than ever were in actual attendance at any one time in previous years. The whole number enrolled during the past year was 256, and the highest attendance at any one time was 250. There have been already over thirty applications for admission during the coming year, but as the capacity of the institution is only 250, and only twelve of those now in it will leave at the end of this year, it is evident that many who are entitled to all the benefits it affords will have to be turned away. Thus it happens that before the group of new buildings which were to furnish accommodations to this class of the State's wards for a generation at least are actually completed, they are filled to overflowing, and at the present rate of increase it cannot be many years before another group will be necessary. The removal of the blind to a separate institution of their own cannot be much longer delayed, and yet that will afford only temporary relief to the deaf mutes, who are already numerous enough and ready to take their places.

### *In the Shops.*

During the session of the legislature in 1871, the Hon. J. W. Begole offered a resolution requiring instruction in printing, the manufacture of boots and shoes, cabinet making, and other trades. This failed at that session, but a similar resolution was adopted at the next session.

The 242 pupils now in attendance comprise 19 blind girls, 21 blind boys, 92 deaf mute girls, and 110 deaf mute boys. Including the 40 girls who are given employment in the sewing department, about two-fifths of the whole number of pupils of the institution are employed at some kind of manual labor or in learning some kind of trade, by which it is hoped they can earn a livlihood after graduation. All the blind boys, except four, work in the basket shop, the remaining four being in training for broom makers. All the blind girls were taught needle work, and all the blind females, who show any capacity for it, are taught music, as affording them possible employment as teachers in future. It is, moreover, a study for which their finely cultivated sense of hearing peculiarly fits them; an advantage of which they are not wholly unconscious when brought in competition with pupils who can see. Of the deaf mutes eighteen are employed in the shoe-shop, fifteen in the cabinet-shop, and fifteen in the printing office, five of whom are girls. Some of the pupils show remarkable aptitudes for their respective trades, and turn out manufactured articles which are really models of skilled workmanship. Especially worthy of mention are a handsomely ornamented box of different woods, made by Charles Traver, and a library table in Principal Parker's office, made by James Hull.

As a general rule the pupils spend three hours a day in the shops during the last four years of their course, spending three hours daily in the school rooms during the same years. In the first four years of the course they spend the whole six in the school rooms, so that though only about two-fifths of the pupils are learning trades at any one time, yet about four-fifths of the whole number receive that advantage before their term of eight years is completed. In addition, a few pupils work in the garden and aid on the farm on Saturday forenoons.

### *Officers and Teachers.*

The following is a list of the present officers, teachers, and employés of the institution, with their years of service: Principal, J. W. Parker, two years; matron, Miss Emma A. Hall, three years; steward, Dan. H. Church, five years; first assistant matron, Miss L. V. Abbott, charge of sewing department; second assistant matron, Mrs. M. E. Clarkson, four years; girls' supervisor, Miss Sarah R. Jones, four years; boys' supervisor, Charles S. McBride, two years; teachers of deaf mutes, Willis Hubbard, fifteen years; Thomas L. Brown, nineteen years; John L. Buchanan, nine years; Miss Carrie K. Standart, five years; Miss Addie Hendershot, four years; Miss Phoebe Wright, three years; Miss Maggie Bennett, three years; Miss Kate Barry, two years; Miss Hattie

McGraw, two years; Fred A. Platt, B. A., two years; teachers of the blind, Miss Emma Knight, five years; Miss Jennie VanWormer, five years; Miss Carrie Young, one year; foreman of cabinet shop, Edwin Barton, two years; shoe shop, Thomas Page, two years; basket shop, Herman Kœpner, three years; printing office, George H. Pond, four years; broom shop, Clark Torrey, one year. Charles Sellick has been superintendent of the farm for three years, and Thomas Stilson, chief engineer for five years.

The following are the present members of the board of trustees, with the year of the expiration of their term of office: President, Charles G. Johnson, of Monroe, 1883; treasurer, A. L. Aldrich, of Flint, 1881; secretary, James N. Neasmith, of Vicksburg, 1879.

### *Receipts and Expenditures.*

Through the courtesy of steward Church we are enabled to give the following summary of the receipts and expenditures of the institution for the last fiscal year, which have never been published, but will appear in the next biennial report of the trustees: Appropriated by the State for the two years 1877 and 1878 for general purposes $87,000, for special purposes $5,600, total $92,600. Of this sum one-half has been expended. The total receipts for the year from other sources than the State, or more properly the total earnings of the institution were $6,858.19, of which $283.63 was derived from sales of articles made in the sewing department, $319.50 from sales of products of the farm, and $5,279.26 from products of the shops.

The total expenditures, general and special, during the year foot up $43,286.23, of which the following are the principal items: groceries, $1,750.23; sugar and syrup, $1,168; meat and fish, $3,710.75; milk, butter, and lard, $1,289.94; flour and meal, $2,246.80; vegetables, mostly potatoes, $545.78; fuel, $4,779.81; lights, gas, etc., $1,116.84; bedding, $346.97; sewing department, $581.88; laundry, $969.99; school books, etc., $347.75; stationery, $120.24; postage, $179.42; library, $83.50; medical expenses, $561.84; heating apparatus, including salary of engineer and assistants, $2,374.77; teachers' salaries, $5,472.90; salaries of officers and employés, $6,715; salary of farm superintendent and assistants, $961.34; hay, straw, and grain, $248.35; cabinet shop, $2,617.53; shoe shop, $375.38; basket shop, $641.10; printing office, $858. The items charged to the several shops include the stock or material purchased, the tools, and the salaries of the foremen and their assistants. Allowing $43,500 to have been the general or current expenses during the year, and 240 to have been the average attendance of pupils, the board, lodging, and tuition of each cost the State about $140 a year, or 38½ cents a day.

### *Miscellaneous.*

Of the pupils now in the institution, thirty-eight are clothed by the counties from which they came, and the rest are clothed by their parents or guardians. The washing, repairing of clothing, and repairing of shoes, unless they involve an expense, are furnished free of charge by the institution. There are eighty-eight acres of land belonging to the institution, of which about fifty acres are tilled, twenty in lawns, and seven timber land. On the farm are raised nearly all the vegetables used in the institution, except potatoes. There are also 300 young apple trees coming into bearing, and there are kept on the farm twelve cows, three horses, and thirty hogs. The library now contains about 1,200 volumes, mostly purchased with money derived from the sales of fancy articles made by the pupils in the sewing department. Few contributions have ever been made to it, though the charitably disposed could hardly put their gifts where they could do more good. Books are drawn on Fridays and read with great avidity by the deaf mutes. Should the bill pending before Congress for the printing of books for the blind become a law, the library, which is now a sealed book to them, might become a source of delight to that class of pupils also.

[NOTE.—In 1879 a separate school for the blind was established by the legislature, and in 1880 located at Lansing.—ED.]

### OTHER INSTITUTIONS.

#### *The Ladies' Library Association.*

Next to the State institution for its minor wards should be mentioned, perhaps, the Ladies' Library Association. The planting of this first institution of the kind was almost a necessity at the then early day of the then rustic village. Settled as it was by people feeling the lack of means of culture for themselves and children, from which their voluntary exile had debarred them, and while the fathers and brothers were occupied in building new homes, the mothers and sisters set about supplying, to the best of their ability, this want of their existence. This necessity being the mother of invention, prompted a small band of ladies to resolve themselves into an association, March 22, 1851, for the purpose of reading and discussing literary subjects, and exchanging books and periodicals, meeting at least once a week, first in private residences and afterwards in a room rented for the purpose. The first meeting was at the house of Mrs. T. B. W. Stockton.

They called their organization the "Ladies' Library Association," and the money for the purchase of the first books, derived from membership fees, did not exceed $10. Some donations of books followed this first purchase, the mose valuable of which was a complete set of "Harpers' Library," the gift of Chauncy S. Payne. This strengthened the ladies' resolution, and lectures and various entertainments were resorted to to raise funds for enlarging the library. The proceeds of these amounted the first year to $160, which was invested in books. The first printed catalogue contained the titles of 240 volumes, but they were well selected and contained the choicest reading. The second catalogue was printed in 1854, and contained the names of between 400 and 500 volumes. The catalogue of 1869 showed that the number had increased to nearly 2,000, and at present it is about 3,000.

The association was incorporated in 1853, at which time it was served by the following officers: President, Mrs. C. S. Payne; vice president, Mrs. H. I. Higgins; secretary, Mrs. A. Thayer; corresponding secretary, Mrs. F. H. Rankin; treasurer, Mrs. A. T. Crossman; clerk, Mrs. R. W. Jenny; librarians, Mrs. J. B. Walker and Mrs. O. Hamilton.

February 9, 1861, the library was nearly destroyed by fire, but the loss was largely covered by insurance, and the sympathies of the community being awakened, the ladies were incited to renewed efforts. A subscription was circulated and means raised sufficient to purchase a lot and commence a library building on the corner of Beach and Kearsley streets. Several citizens contributed $200 each on the first subscription, and added liberally afterwards, while others donated books and building materials. The lot was purchased in

1867, and September 17 of that year the corner stone of the new building was laid with Masonic ceremonies under the direction of the late Colonel Fenton. The estimated cast of the building when finished was about $6,000. It was dedicated June 30, 1868, at which time Governor Crapo delivered the dedicatory address. In it he paid a high tribute to the ladies, who "from the beginning to the present time have never abandoned their task, or become disheartened in view of discouragements and difficulties. Conscious of the good work in which they were engaged, they have yielded to no obstacles or embarrassments. And the result is this fine structure, both a credit and an ornament to the city—these volumes, the chariots of knowledge—and this hall which they so well adorn, of all which we may well be proud."

The library building suffered much from the freshet in the spring of 1869, necessitating many repairs; yet the ladies holding it in trust for the future of Flint, although having no stock-holding interest—the institution being entirely benevolent—and looking for no reward but in the success of their object, renewed their efforts for its advancement. The celebration in March, 1871, of their twentieth anniversary, called out many encomiums from persons of high literary standing both at home and abroad, and many valuable donations were received, both of money and books. In March, 1876, the centennial of the nation's history, the quarter centennial of the Ladies' Library Association was celebrated in their library rooms with a supper, addresses, reading of poems, toasts, responses, and other exercises appropriate to the occasion and long to be remembered by those present. About 450 printed invitations to this celebration were sent out, and brought responses in prose and verse, in floral tributes and gems of art, and also in donations of books and greenbacks. Ladies' library associations in other cities of the State were represented, many of the representatives joining the exercises both afternoon and evening. Among the many valuable gifts to the library should be mentioned a set of "Audubon's Birds of America," by the Hon. William L. Bancroft, of Port Huron, and "The History of the Pacific Races," five volumes, by Mr. L. Browne, of California.

In the construction of the library building great credit is due to the untiring industry and self-sacrificing labors of the building committee, which consisted of the following ladies: Mrs. J. B. Walker, Mrs. R. W. Jenny, Mrs. J. W. Begole, Mrs. G. M. Dewey, Mrs. F. H. Rankin, Mrs. E. H. McQuigg, Mrs. H. M. Henderson, Mrs. A. Thayer. Of this committee Mrs. Walker was president, Mrs. Jenny secretary, and Mrs. Begole treasurer.

### *Flint Scientific Institute.*

The Flint Scientific Institute was organized in 1853, with Dr. Daniel Clark president, and about a dozen members, including Prof. Manly Miles, afterwards of the State Agricultural College, the Hon. F. H. Rankin, and other prominent citizens. Its object was to promote the study of science by forming a library and collecting specimens, making a specialty of the products and natural history of Michigan. It met once a week in a house on Saginaw street where the Fenton block now stands, and afterwards in a room in the Henderson block, for discussion and lectures. It was incorporated under the laws of the State, and was for many years one of the most active and promising organizations in the city. In 1875 its collection was turned over to the high school, to be used as a museum, and the meetings were discontinued, though the institute is still nominally in existence. The collection was remarkably full, particularly in specimens of the local flora and fauna, and had been enlarged by exchanges with collectors in other cities. It includes about 15,000 specimens, and is a valuable acquisition to the high school.

### THE CITY SCHOOLS.

#### *A Model Building.*

A conspicuous object in that part of the city and one in which the citizens take especial pride, is the new high school building. It stands on the west side of Beach street, about seventy rods south of the Thayer house, and with its grounds and appurtenances occupies nearly the whole square. It is an imposing structure of brick, stone, and iron, three stories high above the basement, the gable point being eighty feet above the basement floor. The rear or west front of the main building corresponds with the front, but the ends are finished with Mansard roof, surmounted with crest railings, and the whole building is covered with corrugated iron. The walls above the basement are of white brick, tuck pointed with dark slate, the window sills being of Berea sandstone, and the water tables, steps, etc., of Ohio blue freestone, the window caps of Ransom artificial stone. The building is 102 feet in length from north to south, by 90 in width. The tower at the northeast corner is 26 feet square at the base, and 128 feet in height to the globe which caps the cupola. This tower contains a broad stairway leading to the second and third stories. Of the smaller tower at the southeast corner, the first floor is the Superintndent's office, the second the library, and the third the collection of the Flint Scientific institute, now used as the school cabinet or museum.

A hall extends the whole length of the building, with entrances at the ends for the pupils, that at the south being used by the girls, and the other by the boys. The boys' stairway is in this hall, and the girls' stairway in a transverse hall. The two front rooms in the basement are used as school-rooms for the primary department, and on the first floor are five large school-rooms, ranging in size from 22 by 33, to 34 by 40 feet. On the second floor the number and arrangement of the rooms is the same, while on the third floor the whole rear of the building is occupied by a large hall, 56 by 99 feet, and 18 feet in height, provided with a stage, moveable seats, and other necessary furniture. It will seat about 1,000 persons. On the front of this floor is a room, 20 by 26 feet, used as a laboratory. The building is admirably heated, lighted, and ventilated, and is regarded as a model of what a high school building should be.

The contract for its construction was let June 16, 1873, to Reuben Van Tiffin, for $68,000, and it was completed July 1, 1875, with certain changes and additions which swelled the original contract price to $77,377.62. The building was formally dedicated July 13, 1875, and the school opened in its several departments August 30, 1875, by Superintendent T. W. Crissey. The total cost of the grounds, building, furnishing, etc., was about $115,000, of which about $92,000 remains unpaid and constitutes the present city debt. The school bonds mature slowly, only $2,000 or $3,000 falling due each year.

#### *School Statistics.*

In the building are the central grammar school with five teachers and 251 enrolled pupils, and the high school proper, with four teachers and 161 pupils. In addition to these there are seven ward schools in the city, with an aggregate of twenty-two teachers and 1,432 enrolled pupils. The average daily attendance in all the schools for the past year was 1,198, being within about seven per cent of the number enrolled. This small percentage of absences is very creditable to the efficiency of the schools, and is due in part to the fact that as soon as the absences amount to six half days, the name of the pupil is dropped from the roll. Professor T. W. Crissey is employed as superintendent at a salary of $1,800 a year, and Professor Delos Fall as principal of the high school at $1,200. The lowest salary paid any teacher is $320, and the aggregate salaries of the superintendent, principal, and all the teachers for the fiscal year ending August 5, 1878, will be $16,260. This is about $200 less than was paid last year, and it is the intention to reduce the aggregate to $15,000 next year. The other ordinary and extraordinary expenses for the present year are about $10,000, making the total cost of maintaining the city schools for the year $26,260. The whole number of children of school age in the city is 2,441; the total sittings in the schools 1,639; so that were all who are entitled to seats to apply for them, 802, or nearly one-third of the whole number, would have to be turned away. As a matter of fact, the highest number enrolled is 1,314, which leaves sittings for 325 more. The school year, consisting of forty weeks, ends June 21, when there will be a vacation till September 2. The present organization of the union school board is: President, Oscar Adams; secretary, H. R. Lovell; treasurer, Charles S. Brown; trustees, S. C. Randall, Daniel Clark, R. W. Dullam, William Stephenson, Charles S. Brown, H. R. Lovell, Oscar Adams, P. F. Cleveland, and G. L. Walker. For the above statistics and many other favors we are indebted to the gentlemanly secretary of the board.

### *Parochial Schools.*

In addition to the public schools given above, there is a flourishing Catholic school, conducted in connection with St. Michael's church, by the Rev. Father Haire. It is under the direction of Prof. John Donovan, and contains about 250 pupils. It is taught by three Sisters of the Immaculate Conception, who came to Flint from Monroe last September, and occupy a building directly west of the Catholic church, in the first ward.

## RELIGIOUS ORGANIZATIONS.

### *The Episcopal Church.*

The finest church edifice in the city, and one of the finest in the State, is St. Paul's—Episcopal—on the corner of Saginaw and Third streets. It is a handsome structure, built of stone from the sandstone quarries at Flushing, and has a seating capacity of 700, though on occasion it can be made to seat many more than that number. The corner stone was laid May 29, 1872, and the building occupied August 23, 1873. The site, building, and furniture cost in all between $56,000 and $57,000, of which about $5,000 is still unpledged. The present membership is about 300, being considerably larger than ever before. The Sunday-school has 152 children enrolled, who receive the attention of nineteen teachers and officers. The Rev. Marcus Lane has been the rector since September, 1869.

### *The Presbyterian Church.*

For a number of years the Presbyterian society, the organization of which, in 1836, has already been given, worshiped in a building called the Tabernacle, on the corner of First and Saginaw streets, afterwards used as a saddlery. In 1847 they built their present church, on the corner of Second and Saginaw streets, which was dedicated by the late Dr. Duffield, of Detroit, January 26, 1848. About 1870, a parsonage was purchased, and in 1874 the church was partly destroyed by fire and extensively repaired. Since the first organization of the society, nearly 800 persons have been admitted to membership, and from 1853 to 1876 it had contributed $10,755 to missionary purposes. The present membership is 267, and the number of children in the Sabbath-school is 120. The Rev. G. P. Tindall is the pastor.

### *The Methodist Churches.*

The Methodists built their first church, a small frame building, on the corner of Church and Court streets, which was dedicated December 21, 1844. It was burned down March 19, 1861, while a series of prohibition meetings were being held in it, and the incendiary was supposed to be some enemy to that movement. There being a difference of opinion as to the best site for rebuilding the church, a part of the members organized a new society and built the Methodist church on the north side of the river, known as the Garland Street Church, ever since a flourishing society, of which the Rev. G. W. Lowe is now the pastor. The other branch of the original society built the present brick church on the site of the frame which was burned, and the new edifice was dedicated August 20, 1862, by Bishop Ames. It is 50x80 feet in size, and will seat comfortably 500 persons, and cost about $12,000. The society now numbers about 350 members, and the Sunday-school about 200. The pastor is the Rev. W. H. Pearce, now in his second year. There is also an African M. E. church in the city, with a membership of about twenty, and a small frame house of worship not yet completed. It has no pastor.

### *The Baptist Church.*

The Baptist church was organized in 1853, and met for worship in the court house, till their present church on the corner of Saginaw and First streets was ready for occupancy in 1855. The building was enlarged in 1872, and has a seating capacity of 500. The present membership is 380, being an increase of fifty since January 1. The Sunday-school has twenty officers and teachers and 250 enrolled pupils. The present pastor is the Rev. James Cooper.

### *The Congregational Church.*

The Congregationalists organized in October, 1867, and held their first meetings in Dewey's hall, on Saginaw street. Their frame church, on the corner of Second and Saginaw streets, was begun in May, 1868, and dedicated in November following. It has a seating capacity of 500 and is entirely free from debt. The present membership is about 180, with 175 children in the Sunday-school. Since the resignation of the Rev. Dr. Cordley, April 1, the church is without a pastor.

### *The Catholic Church.*

Work on St. Michael's was first begun in 1843, but the building was not completed till many years afterward. It is a frame structure, on the north side of the river near the corner of Saginaw and Fifth streets, and attracts attention by having its large bell mounted on a frame in the front yard, instead of in the tower. The Rev. Father Haire is the priest, and the organization is reported to be in a flourishing condition.

Besides the churches above enumerated, there are a Second Adventist society, a German Evangelical church, and others of recent origin and few in numbers.

### SECRET AND BENEVOLENT ASSOCIATIONS.

#### *Freemasons.*

There are in the city two blue lodges, one chapter, and one commandery of the Masonic order, each with a growing membership, and having in common one of the largest and finest lodge rooms in the State. Masonic Temple, a substantial brick structure 46 by 100 feet in size, and four stories high, was built in 1872 on the corner of Saginaw and Union streets, at a cost of about $12,000. The Masonic fraternity own the two upper stories, the lower stories being used for mercantile purposes. The lodge room proper is 44 by 63 feet in the clear, and is very handsomely furnished. The first Masonic lodge in the city was Genesee Lodge, No. 23, of which Henry Higgins was the first master. It was instituted April 2, 1848, and held its meetings over Higgins' store, burned in 1872. It surrendered its charter January 11, 1855, to Flint Lodge, No. 23, which held its meetings in the Weatherly block till it removed into its present lodge room in Masonic Temple in September, 1874, where it meets every Tuesday evening. The present membership is about 230, and its present master Samuel C. Randall.

Genesee Lodge, No. 174, was instituted June 1, 1865, and held its first meetings in the Eagle block on Saginaw street. It now meets Wednesday evenings in Masonic Temple, and has a membership of 110, with Leroy C. Whitney master. The Flint Commandery was organized June 14, 1865, with J. B. Hamilton commander and nine charter members. Its present membership is ninety, and present commander C. S. Brown. It meets on the first Friday of each month. The Chapter was organized January 14, 1857, with a membership of eleven, and C. K. Williams first high priest. Its present membership is 180, and present high priest J. B. F. Curtis. It meets on the Tuesday evening before the full moon of each month.

#### *Odd Fellows.*

Genesee Lodge, No. 24, I. O. O. F., was instituted January 1, 1847, by Right Worthy Deputy Grand Master Alfred Treadway of Pontiac. Edwin H. Thomson was the first noble grand, and Charles D. Little, now of Saginaw City, the first secretary. This lodge has the distinction of producing more grand masters than ony other lodge in the jurisdiction. They are Wm. M. Fenton, B. W. Dennis, J. S. Curtis, F. H. Rankin, and E. H. Thomson. Its present membership is about 100, and noble grand, R. H. Hughes. It formerly met over Mason's drug store, until it took possession of Odd Fellows' Hall in 1876, which it has now leased for ten years, and where it meets every Tuesday evening. Friendship Lodge, No. 174, I. O. O. F., was instituted in 1871, by Dr. Isaac Sides, now of Colon. It meets Thursday evenings in a room in the Sutton block.

Flint River Encampment of Patriarchs, No. 28, was instituted in 1867, by F. M. Foster of Jackson, grand patriarch. It meets in Odd Fellows' Hall on the first and third Wednesdays of each month. Its present membership is forty, and present chief patriarch, David T. Gault.

### *Other Secret Organizations.*

Flint Lodge, No. 22, Ancient Order of United Workmen, was instituted in November, 1877, with thirty-nine members, and Henry R. Lovell, master workman. Its present membership is ninety, and its meetings are held in a room in the Bank block Tuesday evenings.

Wolverine Lodge, No. 408, Knights of Honor, was instituted in December, 1876, with twenty-five charter members. Its present membership is forty-five; its present dictator, E. A. Davis; and its place of meeting, Odd Fellows' Hall.

Apollo Lodge, No. 27, Royal Arcanum, was instituted in November, 1877, with a membership of sixty-two, and H. P. Seymour regent. Its present membership is seventy-five, and they meet in Odd Fellows' Hall on the second and fourth Mondays of each month.

Ivanhoe Lodge, No. 27, Knights of Pythias, was organized September 10, 1875, with twenty-seven charter members, and A. L. Aldrich chancellor commander. Its present membership is forty-six, and present commander, C. E. McAlester. Its hall is over the first national bank. The section of the endowment, a branch of this lodge, has nineteen members.

## FLINT ACADEMY OF MEDICINE.

The Flint Academy of Medicine was organized August 18, 1871, with fifteen charter members and Dr. Daniel Clark president. Its first meetings were held in the Scientific Institute rooms on the first Tuesday in each month, but now it meets at the private offices of its members. The present membership is twenty-three; president, H. P. Seymour; secretary, B. Cogshall; treasurer, J. C. Willson.

## GENESEE COUNTY AGRICULTURAL SOCIETY.

This society was organized in 1850, and under the presidency of such men as Governor Crapo it became one of the most effective associations of the kind in the State. Its grounds, just east of the city, are well fitted up, and its annual fairs are a decided success. The present officers are: President, Thomas Foster; secretary, H. C. Van Deusen; treasurer, George W. Hubbard. The Flint Driving Park Association, which is joint owner with the society of the race-course on the fair grounds, has not been active for the past year or two, but now shows signs of life, and may soon make itself heard on the race-course again. Artemus Thayer is president, and Jerome Eddy secretary of the association.

## FLINT UNION BLUES.

The Flint Union Blues was organized August 20, 1872, and was mustered into the service of the State in the following October. Its first captain was Oscar F. Lochhead, now Colonel of the Third Regiment. It has seventy-one enrolled members, and turned out sixty-three strong at the last encampment. Its present officers are, captain, Geo. E. Newell; first lieutenant, Ira H. Wilder; second lieutenant, Geo. E. Child. The company has a handsome, well-equipped armory on Kearsley street, of which they are justly proud, and where they meet for drill Tuesday evenings.

The Flint Union Grays was organized in 1855, and at the breaking out of the Rebellion went into the army as Company F, Second Michigan Infantry, under Captain William R. Morse. The organization has not since been revived.

### MUSICAL ORGANIZATIONS.

The Flint City band, under the skillful direction of Prof. Gardner, has achieved more than a State reputation, and is not without honor in its own city, where it is very popular. The Flint Choral Union, is another healthy musical organization, creditable to the city of its birth, and now in the field for a public concert.

### HOTELS.

The leading hotels are the Thayer House, the Sherman House, and the Brotherton Hotel. The Thayer House is a commodious structure, conveniently near to the Flint and Pere Marquette depot, and has recently been extensively repaired, calcimined and painted. It will accommodate from 75 to 100 guests and is generally full. A three-story wing is soon to be built at the south end, corresponding to the wing at the north end, which will considerably increase the capacity of the house. It was built in 1871, and has been under the management of Mr. L. H. Roberts since 1872. Mr. A. H. Skillman, the gentlemanly clerk, spares no pains to add to the comfort of guests.

### THE FIRE DEPARTMENT.

Up to May 1, 1877, the city fire department was a voluntary affair and indifferently organized. At that time it consisted of six volunteer companies, to which the city was accustomed to vote annually $150 each. At present the company comprises seventeen men, of whom six sleep in the engine house, and receive eight dollars a month. James Williams, as chief engineer, receives $275 a year, and the firemen who sleep at home, but in the immediate vicinity of the engine-house, receive five dollars a month. The whole department is under the control of a committee of four aldermen, chosen one from each ward, and who, with the mayor, constitute the board of fire commissioners. The apparatus comprises an Amoskeag and a Silsby steam fire-engine, two hose carts, ladder truck, three horses and other equipments, all of which are kept at the engine house, corner of Saginaw and Third Streets. This is a three-story brick building, 80x70 feet in size, the first and third floors of which are used by the fire department, and the second by the city council. There is also a small engine-house on Saginaw street, between First and Second streets, on the north side of the river, where are kept a hand engine and hose cart. Water is supplied on that side of the river by two large hydrants and three cisterns filled by an artesian well. The cisterns for the south side are filled from the river and other sources by the fire engines. There is some talk of establishing the system of Holly water works, but the supply from the artesian and ordinary wells seems so pure and abundant that the citizens are slow to move in the matter. The first steam fire engine was bought in 1868.

### THE LUMBER INTEREST.

#### *Retrospective.*

For some years lumbering on the Flint assumed such vast proportions as to quite overshadow all other industries, and it still holds its place in the front rank of the business interests of the city, though it cannot maintain its pre-eminence much longer. A history of the growth and fluctuations of the trade and their effects on the general development of the county would be an interesting subject of study, but altogether too extensive for the purposes of this sketch. We can give only a few of the more suggestive facts in that history, and leave the reader to speculate or enlarge upon them at his leisure.

According to the United States census for 1850, Flint then had two saw-mills, Stage & Wright's and the one afterwards known as Crapo's lower mill, and they are credited with manufacturing during that year an aggregate of 3,500,000 feet of lumber. In 1854 the business had increased until there were four steam saw-mills and three water-mills, with an aggregate capacity of 16,800,000 feet annually, being an increase of nearly 500 per cent in four years.

In 1838-40 lumber in Flint reached what was then considered the extraordinary price of from $10 to $15 per thousand, but it soon after fell to $3, $4, and $8 per thousand, and became a drug in the market. In 1854, the plank roads having been constructed, so that lumber could be drawn into the surrounding country, prices had again increased to from $7 to $15 per thousand, according to quality, but it was practically dependent on home consumption, and the trade limited. At an average of $11 per thousand, the value of the lumber sawed in Flint in 1854 is given at $184,000, which the Genesee Whig of that date, from which we glean these figures, seems to regard as a very extraordinary showing. With the advent of railroads and the opening of a foreign market for the products of their mills, the lumber trade received a new impulse, and in 1870 there were nine saw-mills with an aggregate capacity of 90,000,000 feet annually, and seven steam planing-mills, besides almost countless other shops and factories more or less intimately connected with the mills, and to be reckoned as part of the products of the lumber trade. The mills in that year were valued at $500,000, and gave employment to over 500 men.

The golden age of lumbering on the Flint extended from about 1866 to 1873, reaching its highest point both as to the amount of lumber manufactured and the prices realized about the years 1869 and 1870. The panic of 1873 ruining a few operators and crippling many others, quite demoralized the whole lumber manufacturing business, though some mill-men who are in position to know, date the beginning of its decline a year or more before the panic —and attribute it to other causes than the financial depression throughout the country. However that may be, the business has steadily declined since that date, until now, instead of nine mills there are but three in operation, employing about 210 men and with an aggregate capacity of about 38,000,000 feet. The owner of these mills have about standing timber enough to keep them running at their present rate for five years longer, when lumbering on the Flint will practically be at an end.

### *Crapo's Upper Mill.*

This extensive mill, the first in the order of cutting capacity, started up April 15, and now employs about 150 men. It has a cutting capacity of 20,000,000 feet annually, and is owned by the Hon. W. W. Crapo. It is on the north side of the river, near Saginaw street, and with the planing-mill, yards, etc., it fills up quite a section of the upper part of the first ward. The proprietors have some 10,000,000 feet of new logs in the stream, which, with 5,000,000 or 6,000,000 feet left over, will probably keep the mill running till October. Thomas Foster has for several years taken the contracts for getting out logs for the Crapo mills, and the last season he had about 225 men in the woods. Only about 2,000,000 feet of logs had to be left skidded in the woods, the others being successfully put in the stream in spite of the unfavorable season. One of the proprietors of this mill gives it as one curious effect of the hard times that while the lower grades of lumber were formerly a drug in the market, they are now most in demand, while the best lumber, formerly most in demand, is now the most difficult to dispose of.

### *Begole, Fox & Co.*

Second in the amount of lumber sawed is the water mill of Begole, Fox & Co., in the fourth ward. The mill was built by Thayer & Smith in 1865, and was bought two years later by the present firm, who thoroughly reconstructed it. It employs fifty-seven hands and turns out on an average 70,000 feet of lumber, 14,000 or 15,000 shingles, and 12,000 lath. The firm put in 7,000,000 feet this year, of which 5,000,000 is already down, and the other 2,000,000 on the way. Only about 1,000,000 feet had to be left on the skids in the woods. They expect to put in as many next year as this, and calculate that they have standing timber enough to last at the present rate of consumption about five years. Last fall the firm bought 20,000,000 feet of standing timber from Busenbark & Stowe, who had carried on the lumber business for the last ten years quite extensively, but it had been discontinued through the death of Mr. Busenbark. By this purchase Begole, Fox & Co., came into possession of a second saw-mill in condition and of 5,000,000 feet annually cutting capacity, but for which they have no use. The price of the mill and standing timber was $60,000.

The firm employed about 100 men in the woods last winter, and their mill, which started April 8th, will run until July, running from 6 A. M., to 7 P. M., with an hour's rest at noon. The foreman receives $6 a day, and the wages of the others range downward to $1.25 a day. The aggregate weekly pay roll is about $400. In the division of labor Mr. Begole attends to the outside work, David S. Fox is cashier and collector, and George L. Walker bookkeeper. The mill cut about 8,000,000 feet last season, and the annual sales of the firm range from $96,000 to $200,000.

### *McFarlan's Mill.*

The Hon. Alexander McFarlan came to Flint in June, 1850, bought a one-half interest with George Hazelton in the building of what is now known as McFarlan's mill, which was completed October, that year, and was the first steam saw-mill on the Flint, if not in the Saginaw valley. It burned the following year, when Mr. McFarlan bought the ruins, rebuilt the mill, and has run it ever since as sole proprietor, though in that time it has been burned and rebuilt three times. It has a cutting capacity of about 8,000,000 feet. In 1871 it cut 10,000,000 feet, but since then has been dropping off, the average annual cut being about 6,000,000 feet. During the last winter he put about 2,000,000 in the Tittabawassee, which will be sawed in Saginaw, and 1,500,000 in the Flint, which will be sawed in his Flint mill this season. About 500,000 feet of the logs cut are still back. He has 12,000,000 feet of standing timber on the Flint, and about 2,500,000 on the Saginaw. He had in the woods about 150 men and 32 teams during part of the winter. His mill will run only about two months.

### *J. B. Atwood & Co.'s Mill.*

The Island mill, owned by J. B. Atwood & Co., was built in 1866, employs forty-five men, and has an annual capacity of about 7,000,000 feet. It is not in operation this year, but will be started up next season on logs brought by rail. There are about 4,000,000 feet of sawed lumber now in the yard.

## MANUFACTURES.

### *The Old and New.*

Closely following the rise of the lumber trade have grown up the city's manufacturing interests. Their development has been less rapid, and, therefore, less seducive with promises of ready-made fortunes, but on the whole, a more healthy, stable growth, so that in the race for wealth the fleet-footed speculator is liable and even likely to be passed by the slow-paced mechanic. Nor has this growth been very tardy. In 1850 there was but one steam engine in Flint, and that a small one in Elias Williams' pail factory. In 1854 there were two machine shops, two sash and blind factories, and one foundry, all driven by steam power. That was surely growth enough for four years in a backwoods village scarcely yet visited by a plank road. At present there are five steam planing mills and box factories; five sash, door, and blind factories; four flouring mills; one large woolen mill; two stave and heading mills; one paper mill; one tannery; three founderies and machine shops; four corriage and wagon shops; and steam engines, shops, and small manufacturing concerns without number. Mention of these must serve as samples of all.

### *Hard Wood.*

One of the most prosperous establisments in the city is that of Hiram Smith, known the State over as "Hardwood Smith," who makes a specialty of furnishing any sort of hardwood material that may be ordered, from the heaviest bridge timber down. He has been in the business in Flint for about ten years, and has built up a very extensive trade. He employs about 100 men, and last year turned out 4,000,000 barrel head pieces, mostly for oil barrels and sold to the Standard Oil Company. He also gets out to order a large amount of bridge, ship, dock, and other hardwood timbers, which are mainly shipped to New York, New England, and European markets. He is also extensively engaged in the manufacture of charcoal, turning out about 1,200 bushels daily, Sundays included. His pits convert 12,000 cords of four-foot wood into charcoal annually, the sales of which amount to about $50,000. The capital invested in both industries is about $75,000. He also manufactures large amounts of hardwood lumber used for car-building purposes, the sales from which, including the barrel headings, aggregate about $50,000. His mills are at the mouth of Thread river, below the Flint and Pere Marquette railroad depot, and many acres on the vacant lots adjoining are covered with piles of barrel heading and hardwood lumber generally. The enterprise of manufacturing certain chemicals from the smoke and gas escaping from charcoal pits, in which Mr. Smith invested quite heavily, has not thus far realized the expectations of those who entered into it. Mr. Smith is at present laboring under financial embarrassments, in which he has the sympathy of his neighbors and those who have transacted business with him. The exact condition of his affairs and the prospects of his business in the future cannot, at present, be ascertained.

### *Carriages.*

William A. Patterson is one of those men who act on the belief that "where there is a will there is a way," and proves it by building up a thrifty industry in spite of the times. He came to Flint in 1869, rented a small shop for the making of carriages and employed one hand. Now he is the owner of an extensive factory on Saginaw street, and employs between twenty and twenty-five hands constantly. The building is a two-story brick, 22x85 feet in size, with wooden addition 22x65 feet, and he occupies for carrying on his business the upper story of an adjoining brick building equal in size to his own. He makes a specialty of buggies and carriages, and his shops are supplied with all the tools and appliances for carrying on that industry. In his shops are to be seen carriages of all the latest and most fashionable styles and of the best workmanship, Brewster's side-bars, ladies' phaetons, yacht buggies, coal boxes, Concord or side-spring wagons, piano boxes, etc. Of those mentioned the first is the most costly, and the coal box and yacht buggies are the cheapest, prices ranging from $400 for a double-seat down to $90 for a single-seat coal box. The home demand for these carriages is quite large, and numbers of them are also shipped to the Saginaws and Bay City, from which he has now several orders. His work is well known in these cities. There is no peculiarity to commend them except their elegance of design and excellent workmanship. In the building of the ladies' phaetons he uses Armstrong's patent springs, being the only carriage maker in Michigan, so far as known, who does use them. Mr. Paterson keeps no agent in the field to push his trade, but lets his work speak for itself, and feels confident that the business must grow in years to come as it has in years past.

### *Genesee Iron Works.*

The Genesee Iron Works are, we believe, the only manufactory of the kind in the State, and proves to have been a lucky venture on the part of its projectors. They turn out malleable iron almost exclusively, for which they find a ready market. They employ at present twenty-seven men, and their annual product amounts to about $25,000. The capital employed is about $40,000. The works have been in operation about three years, and the business has steadily increased during that time.

### *Flint Woolen Mills.*

The growing of sheep and wool has increased in Genesee county of late years with the vigor of a new and profitable industry, and the capabilities of the country for that sort of business is just beginning to be realized. Under the circumstances the Flint woolen mills could hardly help being a success from the start. They now employ seventy-five hands, and produce 250,000 yards of woolen goods, mostly cassimeres, each year. The capital invested is $100,000, and the mills work up 300,000 pounds of wool annually, the sales amounting to $150,000. The weekly pay-roll reaches $500. The business was commenced in 1867, and the shipments are principally to Buffalo, Rochester, Cleveland, and most of the western cities.

### *Other Manufactories.*

Among the many other firms which carry on various kinds of manufactures on a large or small scale, we should mention Jerome Eddy's sash and blind factory, which employs fifteen men, and the owner of which has been in the business about thirty years; Schillinger, Meek & Co.'s furniture factory, in which are employed from three to seven men; Beardslee, Gillies & Co.'s sash and blind factory, which employs twenty men; Charles Bassett's tannery, which employs six men; D. A. Bagg's box-shook factory, which employs eight men; Newell & Co,'s sash and blind factory, which employs twelve men; Hawkes & Castree's agricultural implement factory, which employs seven men;

and the Genesee Paper Company's mill, which employs fifteen men and turns out three tons of paper per day. According to figures furnished by the last seven firms, their aggregate sales for 1877 amounted to $137,500. According to the census of 1850 Flint had two flouring mills, with an aggregate capacity of 14,000 barrels annually. There are now four flouring mills, with an aggregate capacity of between 50,000 and 60,000 barrels annually.

### RAILROAD SHIPMENTS.

As exhibiting in the smallest space the very best proofs of the magnitude of the manufacturing industries of the city, we add the shipments by rail from the Flint depots during the year 1877. These figures are kindly furnished by the officers of the respective companies, and are undoubtedly accurate. During the year there were shipped by the Flint and Pere Marquette railroad 26,870,000 feet of lumber, 660,000 pounds of live stock, 4,105 barrels of flour, and 6,369,400 pounds of grain. During the same time the Chicago and Lake Huron Railroad took from the city 18,248,500 feet of lumber, 700,000 pounds of live stock, 4,000 barrels of flour, and 7,010,500 pounds of grain. These figures give the following totals: lumber, 45,118,500 feet; live stock, 1,360,000 pounds; flour, 8,105 barrels; and grain, 13, 379,900 pounds. To these totals should be added the home consumption, of which no statistics can be given, though the amount is very large, and so far as the above relates to agricultural products, the fact must not be forgotten that there are several other railroad stations in the county from which shipments are also made.

### THE MERCANTILE INTEREST.

#### *A Creditable Showing.*

But however rapid has been the growth of the manufacturing interests of the city, the steady growth of its commerce in equally gratifying. From the little Indian store of Rufus Stevens, 44 years ago, the annual sales of which scarcely warranted a teamster in going to Detroit for another load, trade has increased, until to-day there are at least 100 mercantile houses of all kinds whose aggregate sales for 1877 could hardly have fallen short of $2,000,000. This is the rough estimate of a man familiar with the business, and though given in round numbers, is probably below rather than above the true figures could they be ascertained. Be that as it may, we subjoin a few figures from individual firms which, taken together, will give some idea of the amount of goods handled annually by the salesmen of this growing city.

#### *Smith, Bridgman & Co.*

The members of this firm are William L. Smith, Eli T. Smith and Charles T. Bridgman, and their partnership dates from 1866, though the senior member of the firm had carried on the business since 1862 in partnership with F. W. Judd. From very small beginnings, their sales aggregated in 1877 $350,000, of which $150,000 was for dry goods, $100,000 for groceries, $50,000 for boots and shoes, and $50,000 for carpets. Mr. W. L. Smith buys the goods, visiting New York for that purpose every month; Mr. Eli T. Smith has the oversight of the salesrooms and looks after the jobbing business, while Mr. Bridgman takes charge of the finances and correspondence of the house. To conduct their immense business about thirty assistants are employed, some of whom have been in the service of the firm almost since its first organization in 1862. The building, which is 44x140 feet in size, three stories high above the basement, and at the busiest point on Saginaw street, is literally packed full of goods in every corner. The basement is used as a storeroom for groceries, and contains several large safes, a cistern of water for use in case of fire, and other arrangements not always thought of in the construction of stores. On the first floor are the salesrooms, suitably set off into departments for dry goods, for groceries, etc. On the second floor are stored wall papers, carpets, window curtains, mattings and other light goods, and on the third floor their stock of boots, shoe, gaiters and goods in that line. A special department of ready-made clothing has been added within a few years, and has grown into quite a store by itself.

### *F. H. & E. O. Pierce.*

This firm, composed of Frank H. and Edward O. Pierce, came to Flint twelve years ago, and rented a small building now occupied by the Sullivan crockery store on Saginaw street, in which they began a small mercantile trade, employing one salesman. Their business increasing they removed into their present quarters in 1873, which they enlarged by adding another story in 1877. It is now a three-story brick building, 22 by 145 feet in size, and full of nearly all manner of merchandise from cellar to attic. They now employ fourteen salesmen and a book-keeper, and their sales for the year 1877 footed up over $200,000.

Their stock includes a choice assortment of carpets, boots and shoes, dry goods, crockery, etc., and a department of ready-made clothing is soon to be added. They buy their goods mostly in New York city, which the senior member of the firm, F. H. Pierce, visits once every sixty days to replenish his stock from the latest and best the market affords. The firm also does a small wholesale business, the sales amounting to about $25,000 a year.

### *M. Davison.*

Mr. M. Davison came to Flint in May, 1869, and commenced business in the Sutton store, occupying one side, which he soon found too small for his business, and in 1870 he removed to the Bishop store. That in turn proving too small, he purchased a lot and erected his present building, No. 84 Saginaw street, in the fall of 1872. The new store is a fine, three-story brick building above the basement, 25 by 110 feet in size, and planned expressly for his particular line of business. His stock of goods comprises clothing, hats, caps and gentleman's furnishing goods. He now employs four salesmen, and his trade, which was discouragingly small at the start, has grown, until last year his sales amounted to about $50,000. He buys principally in New York, where he goes frequently, and carries a heavy stock of goods. He also does a small jobbing business. He occupies the entire building, and should his trade continue to increase as heretofore, another enlargement or removal will be necessary.

### *Summary.*

But to go through the long list of mercantile establishments and give details of the business of each would be tedious, nor is it necessary for the purposes of this sketch. The houses and their business may be briefly summarized as follows: There are now doing business in the city as dry goods merchants, including Smith, Bridgman & Co. and F. H. & E. O. Pierce, seven firms who give their aggregate sales for 1878 at $835,000. Eleven firms dealing almost exclusively in groceries give their aggregate annual sales at $210,000. It should be stated, however, that while the grocers rarely sell dry goods, the dry goods merchants nearly all sell groceries in connection with their other goods, so that while the aggregate shows the correct sales of both dry goods and groceries, the above figures do not give the correct sales of each. The six drug stores in the city give their respective sales for 1878, which aggregate $122,000, and the three crockery stores at $26,000. There are three firms dealing almost exclusively in boots and shoes, whose total sales foot up $75,000, though, as in the case of groceries, this is not the total amount of boots and shoes sold in the city, since several of the dry goods firms deal in boots and shoes also. Four merchant tailors give their aggregate sales at $33,000; two dealers in hats and caps, at $10,000; two jewelers, at $40,000; three bakers and confectioners, at $35,000; four clothiers, including M. Davison, at $120,000; four hardware dealers, at $190,000; and one harness dealer, one dealer in furnishing goods, one firm of books and stationery, one furniture dealer, and one milliner, who give their aggregate sales at $69,000 per annum.

### THE AGRICULTURAL INTEREST—A GROWING INDUSTRY.

One can but look with regret on the rapid and often wanton destruction of the grand old forests of the Peninsula State and the desolation of swamps and rubbish which mark the trail of the lumberman, but it is some consolation to note how close the plow and reaper follow after the ax, and when in a few years the dreary slashings are replaced with fields of waving wheat and corn, the disappearance of the pineries and decline of lumbering will, perhaps, be matter of rejoicing rather than of regret. The question so often mooted, "After lumbering, what?" is already receiving an answer in some of the earlier settled portions of the Saginaw Valley, where wheat raising and stock growing are unexpectedly coming to the front, not merely as possible but as actual and lucrative industries. If any one doubts this, he should visit some of the farms about Flint and be convinced of his error.

#### *Chickahominy.*

As in this matter an ounce of fact is worth a ton of theory, we are glad to be able to give the following figures from the private note book of a man who is not a professional farmer but who keeps a cash account with his farm, in which all the receipts and expenditures are noted down as carefully as though it were a store or a bank. The Hon. Alexander McFarlan, besides his vast lumber interests, has several farms, one of which, having 520 acres under tillage, is at Mt. Morris, and known as the Chickahominy farm. This farm is in charge of a foreman hired at $1.50 a day, and Mr. McFarlan, though never living on it, visits it often, especially in the summer, hires all the help needed, and gives the work his personal supervision. Last year was not a particularly favorable one for crops, but the following were the marketed products of this farm, the value being the market price January 1, 1878: Wheat, 200 bushels, $200; oats, 1,168 bushels, $330; barley, 284 bushels, $150; buckwheat, 100 bushels, $50; corn, 10,000 bushels of ears, $2,000; hay, 250 tons, $2,000; pork, $100; butter, $100; total $5,010. Expenses: Taxes, $130; total other expenses, $1,500, leaving to the credit of the farm, after all outlays were made, of $3,180. He bought the first part of this farm in 1857 at $5 an acre, and added to it from year to year, the last addition costing him $35 an acre. Estimating the present value of the whole farm at $40 an acre, Chickahominy last year paid its owner, over and above all current expenses, thirteen per cent interest on its own market value.

### *The Mundy Farm.*

Mr. McFarlan also has a farm of 320 acres, 270 of which are under cultivation, in the town of Mundy. This leased on shares, the owner taking one-half the proceeds, and lessee the other half and bearing all the expenses. The products of this farm last season were as follows, the prices being those of January: Oats, 1,911 bushels, $535.08; barley, 180 bushels, $93; winter wheat, 266 bushels, $332.50; corn in the ear, 1,310 bushels, $288.20; hay, 59½ tons, $476; wool, 600 pounds, $168; beans, 16 bushels, $16; clover seed, 8 bushels, $32; total, $1,940.78; Mr. McFarlan's half $970.39. This farm is valued at $50 an acre, and after the owner has deducted $100 for taxes and added a fair valuation for the growth of the live stock on the farm, his net profits amount to six per cent of the value of the farm.

In this connection it is worthy of mention that Messrs. Begole and McFarlan sell their land as fast as the pine is cut from it at about $5 per acre, and the owners of the Crapo mill say the demand for such land is much greater this spring than usual. Mr. McFarlan also reports that the amount of wheat sown in Genesee in 1877 was about thirty-five per cent more than ever before, but he does not think the amount sown will be materially increased next year. He has 111 acres sown to wheat inside the city limits, and estimates the average yield at twenty-five bushels to the acre.

### *Stock Breeding.*

Genesee county is noted for its stock farms and its fine horses, and the profits derived from this branch of industry, which has assumed its present proportions within the past few years, would seem incredible were they not so easy of verification. One is embarrassed by the abundance rather than the scarcity of examples. The Crapo heirs have a farm of 1,100 acres of bottom land in the town of Gaines, about eleven miles from Flint, which is devoted almost exclusively to the raising of Herefords and Shorthorn cattle, and it is stated that the owners have an offer from responsible parties in Kansas of $100 for every bull calf Hereford, and $50 each for grades or half breeds. If this be so, the raising of the pure breeds introduced by the late Governor should be profitable as well as ornamental.

Of the noted horses and horsemen of Flint, it is scarcely necessary to speak, Mr. Sotham has so recently introduced them to our readers. Among them should be noted H. D. and Ira M. Nye and their half-mile track, on the Richfield road, one mile northeast from the city. This was the home of the far-famed Mambrino Gift, and the less famous members of the same family—Mambrino Kate, Mambrino Turk and Mambrino Queen. Thomas Foster, about two miles east of the city on Kearsley street, is the owner of about sixty horses, mostly blooded stock, of which Brick Pomeroy and Tipsico are, perhaps, best known. H. C. Spencer has eight blooded horses, of which Smuggler Maid and Rocket head the list. The Hon. Sumner Howard and William Hamilton have each about thirty choice horses, while H. C. VanDeusen and John Dayton also have several, notable for their fast time or other qualities. Mr. Spencer has recently shipped one blooded horse to Tennessee and two to Kansas, at prices that would have seemed impossible a few years ago. Mr. William Newton is also engaged in stock raising.

## THE PRESS.

### *The Wolverine Citizen.*

The Wolverine Citizen was established in February, 1850, as the Genesee Whig, by Mr. F. H. Rankin, its present editor and proprietor. Only one other paper was published in the city at that time, the Flint Republican, a Democratic journal owned by General C. C. Hascall and edited by Mr. R. W. Jenny, afterwards of the Democrat. In 1856 Mr. Rankin changed the name of his paper to the Wolverine Citizen and Genesee Whig, and the following year he dropped the last half of the name as no longer of any significance, the whig party having gone out of existence. About the same time the paper was considerably enlarged, and in 1867 it was changed to its present quarto form. No one except Mr. Rankin has ever had any proprietary interest in it. The local department is now conducted by his young sons, Franc H. and George H., who do their work well. Besides holding the office of city clerk several terms, and secretary of the Genesee county agricultural society for twenty-six consecutive years, Mr. Rankin has served his district two terms in the lower house of the legislature, and one term in the senate, where he served with credit to himself and profit to his constituents. The Wolverine Citizen was a zealous whig and free-soil paper, and still cherishes its old-time hatred of hunker democracy in whatever form it shows itself.

The Citizen office has the reputation of having graduated more journalists than any other yet reported. Among those who have been connected with it and have since started papers of their own may be mentioned Robert L. Warren, now of the Lawrence Advertiser; Wm. R. Bates, afterwards of the Lumberman's Gazette; Ed. Cowles, of the Saginaw Courier; Willard Smith, of the Charlevoix Sentinel; Morgan Bates, afterwards of the Marshall Statesman; Clark B. Turner, of the Pontiac Gazette; Charles F. Fellows, of the Flint Journal; Orlando White, of the Linden Record;— Graham, late of the Lapeer Democrat; and Harry Hall, of the Locomotive, Stuart, Iowa. And the educational resources of the office are still far from being exhausted.

### *The Globe.*

The first number of the Flint Globe was issued August 12, 1866. It was established by Robert Smith, now of the Gratiot Journal, and Charles Smith, now treasurer of Labette county, Kansas, who were at the same time publishing the St. Johns Republican. The Journal office and good will were purchased by A. L. Aldrich, then publisher of the St. Joseph Traveler, August 11, 1869, who has ever since remained its sole publisher, editor, and proprietor. In the fall of 1875, a daily edition was begun as an experiment, but it did not prove a success, financially, and was discontinued at the end of a month. The publication day of the weekly was changed from Wednesday to Thursday, but otherwise the paper remains the same as at first. The Globe has always been a staunch republican paper, and while not disposed to countenance any factiousness in the party ranks, it criticises the president and the soft-money republicans with great severity. Mr. Aldrich is a graduate of the literary department of the university in the class of '60, and believes in writing editorials with a pencil rather than with a pair of scissors. Judging from the solid success of the Globe, his readers are of the same opinion.

### *The Democrat.*

The Flint Democrat was established in 1848 by Royal W. Jenny. It was then a small sheet, 22x32 inches in size, but was subsequently greatly enlarged and improved. He remained sole publisher and proprietor until his death in January, 1876. In August following the paper was bought by H. N. Mather, of Buffalo, who is now its editor and publisher. The Democrat was first issued in a small building on the corner of First and Saginaw streets, and after numerous removals, is now lodged in the Fenton block. Under Mr. Jenny it was always a steady-going, orthodox democratic paper, but under the new management is more given to sensation. It has both a Saturday and Sunday edition.

### *The Journal.*

The Flint Journal, also democratic and the youngest of the Flint weeklies, is owned and edited by Charles Fellows, formerly of the Democrat, which paper he left soon after Mr. Jenny's death. The first number of the Journal was issued April 5, 1876, as an eight column paper, but was enlarged at the end of the first volume. The Flint Advertiser is an advertising sheet for free distribution, issued from the Journal office on Saturdays by C. Fellows, Jr. The office is in the Armory block, on Kearsley street.

## REPRESENTATIVE MEN.

### *Governor Crapo.*

This sketch would be incomplete without a passing notice of some of the men who have been identified with the city's history, and who have contributed largely to its prosperity. Of these it has given to the councils of the State or nation one governor, one lieutenant governor, two congressmen, and a State treasurer. Henry Howland Crapo was born at Dartmouth, Mass., May 24, 1804. Of his boyhood little is known, except that it was spent in hard work, and but little of it in school. Shortly before his death, and after he had become a millionaire, he said to a friend, in referring to his boyhood: "I would like to have you know just how poor I was then. Why, I never owned a pair of boots till I was seventeen." His energy, however, overcame all obstacles, and we next hear of him as treasurer of New Bedford, an office he filled for fifteen consecutive years. He married Miss May A. Slocum, and engaged in the nursery business, and also, it is said, in the whaling business, from which he realized considerable money.

The date of his first visit to Michigan is not known, but after visiting Flint and satisfying himself of its advantages for the investment of capital, he brought his family there in 1857. He bought of Senator Chandler the handsome homestead on the corner of Kearsley and Clifford streets, and lived there till his death. He had at that time two silent partners, James Arnold and Oliver Prescott, both of New Bedford, the firm having a capital, it is understood, of about $250,000. They had bought about the year 1853, of Macy & Driggs, 12,000 acres of pine lands in Lapeer county, and in 1856 they bought of Judge Walkley, the large steam saw-mill which stood on the site of the one still owned and run by the estate, and in 1857 they bought of McQuigg, Turner & Co. the lower saw-mill, which he operated till his death, and which was burned last fall. In 1860, he bought out Arnold's interest in the firm, and in 1862 he bought out Prescott, and thereafter carried on his immense business without a partner. He was the first president of the Flint and Holly Railroad Company, and it was mainly through his energy and financial aid that the road was built in 1863. He was elected State senator in 1862 and governor in

1864, being re-elected to the latter office in 1866. He also held the office of mayor two terms. In addition to vast lumber interests and his eminent political service, he also gave much attention to the developing of the agricultural and stock-raising resources of the county. He served as president of the Genesee County Agricultural Society, and bought several farms, which he improved and stocked with imported cattle and horses of pure blood. In 1866 he built the large planing mill still running, and about the same time he bought the Busenbark mill, which he sold in 1868.

Gorvernor Crapo had but one son, the Hon. W. W. Crapo, who never removed from New Bedford to Flint, and who is now a member of congress. He had nine daughters, six of whom accompanied him to Michigan. One of these, Lydia, died in 1861, and the others married and are still living, with the exception of Mrs. F. F. Hyatt, of Flint, who died in 1866. David Crapo, a brother of the governor, is still living, we believe, in Odessa, Ionia county. Governor Crapo died July 23, 1869, after an illness of only a few days, and his large estate still remains undivided.

### *Lieutenant Governor Fenton.*

Wm. M. Fenton was born at Norwich, Chenango county, New York, December 19, 1808, the youngest in a family of nine children. He graduated at Hamilton College, in the class of 1826, and entered the banking office of his father, the Hon. Joseph S. Fenton. He soon after went to sea for his health, and there rose from the rank of a sailor to mate of a large merchant vessel. He came to Michigan in 1834, and was a merchant in Pontiac for two years. He married Miss Adelaide Birdsall, daughter of the Hon. James Birdsall, member of Congress from the Chenango county district, and settled in Fentonville in 1839, where he commenced the practice of the law. He was elected to the State senate in 1846, elected lieutenant governor in 1848, and re-elected in 1850, serving under Governors Ransom and Barry. In 1848 he removed to Flint, which was ever after his home, and where he built the first block, still bearing his name.

He was a member of the State military board at the breaking out of the war, and was appointed major of the second regiment of infantry. He was commissioned as colonel of the eighth infantry, August 8, 1861, and participated in the campaigns and battles of that regiment about James Island, Port Royal, and elsewhere. He was forced to resign by ill health in March, 1863. Besides the posts of public trust already mentioned, he was mayor of Flint, two terms and register of the United States Land office for four years, under Pierce's administration.

In 1853 he formed a law partnership with William Newton, which lasted through life, and the practice of the firm became very large and lucrative. Colonel Fenton also engaged extensively in real estate transactions, and took a prominent part in nearly all the political and business interests of the city, and was a leading member of the Episcopal church, the Masonic and Odd Fellows' organizations. In 1871 he held the responsible but gratuitous office of chief engineer of the fire department, and it was while discharging the duties of that office that he met with his untimely death. On the night of May 11, 1871, while running to answer the alarm of fire, he fell over a hitching-post at the corner of First and Saginaw streets, got up and walked to his office near by, where he was found an hour afterwards seriously injured and almost unconscious. He never rallied, but died at eleven o'clock the next night.

### *Congressman Begole.*

The Hon. Josiah W. Begole was born in Groveland, Livingston county, New York, January 20, 1815. He received his education at Mount Morris, New York, and in Temple Hill academy, at Geneseo, New York. Being the eldest son in a family of ten children, he had to depend mainly upon his own resources. He came to Michigan in August, 1836, and settled in Flint when there were but four houses in the place. He taught school during the winters of 1837 and 1838, and afterwards worked two and a half years on a farm, and with his wages bought eighty acres of land. At the end of eighteen years he owned a 500 acre farm about nine miles from the village. In 1839 he married Miss Harriet Miles, they being probably the first couple married in Flint.

While living on his farm he held the office of justice of the peace for seven years, and also inspector of schools. In 1856 he was elected county treasurer, and held the office four terms, till 1864, when he engaged in the lumber business. In 1871 he was nominated by acclamation for State senator, and was elected by a large majority. He was a delegate to the National republican convention at Philadelphia in 1872, and the same year he was elected to represent his district in Congress, where he served on the committees of agriculture and public expenditures, taking an efficient though unobtrusive part in the proceedings. He was nominated for reëlection in 1874, but went down in the general republican reverses of that year, being defeated by a small majority, though receiving more votes than any republican congressman elected in Michgan at that campaign. Since his return from Washington he has given his attention to his extensive lumbering interests, his firm being one of the very few which had met all its obligations on sight, and kept its mills running and hands employed, though at an actual annual loss of thousands of dollars. He has a tastefully furnished residence on the corner of Beach and Court streets, where his many friends are welcomed and hospitably entertained.

### *Congressman Durand.*

The Hon. George Harmon Durand was born at Cobelskill, New York, February 21, 1838. He came to Michigan in 1856 and settled in Flint in 1858. He taught school in Oakland county during his first two years in the State, reading law at the same time. He opened a law office in 1858, and was elected a member of the school board in 1861, an office he held for about ten years, also serving as a member of the city council five years in the meantime. He was elected mayor of the city in 1873, and held the office two terms. He was elected to congress in the fall of 1874, defeating his fellow townsman, Mr. Begole, for the same office. In 1875 and 1876 he was grand master of the Masonic fraternity, serving in that capacity with distinction. Mr. Durand is still a young man, very popular with all who knew him, and in a less decidedly republican State there is scarcely an office he might not aspire to with fair prospects of gaining it.

### *State Treasurer McCreery.*

The Hon. William B. McCreery was born at Mt. Morris, New York, in 1837, whence his father removed to Michigan in 1839 and settled at Flint, where he engaged in the lumber business. His son was employed in his mills, received a common school education, read law with Colonel Fenton, and was admitted to the bar in 1860. He enlisted as a sergeant in company F, second Michigan infantry; took part in the first Bull Run battle, and was severely wounded at the battle of Williamsburg, receiving a Minié ball through both legs and the left hand. He was afterward commissioned lieutenant colonel of the twenty-first infantry, and took part in the battle of Stone River. While Colonel of his regiment he was wounded in the leg at Chickamauga, captured and taken to Libby prison. After five months captivity he escaped, with others, by tunneling under the street in front of the prison. He rejoined his regiment, and was given command of the engineer brigade of the army of the Cumberland, resigning in September, 1864. Since the war he has held the office of mayor for two terms, collector of internal revenue for four years, and is now serving his second term as State treasurer. In December, 1864, he married Miss Addie Fenton, daughter of Colonel Fenton, and the union has been blessed with three children. The family has just met with a severe affliction in the death of their youngest child on the morning of April 27, and in which they have the sympathies of the whole community.

## HILLSDALE COUNTY.

### MEMORIAL REPORT.

BY E. O. GROSVENOR, VICE PRESIDENT.

February 4th, 1880.

List of early settlers of Hillsdale county who have died during the year 1879:

Otis Betts, aged 83; settled in the township of Litchfield in 1835.

Israel Slites, aged 62; settled in Jonesville in 1836.

Alanson Lockwood, aged 83; settled in Lenawee county in 1832. He came to Scipio, Hillsdale county, in 1837.

Peter M. Gamard, aged 80; settled in the township of Fayette in 1836.

David W. Scovell, aged 83; settled in the township of Fayette in 1837.

Jacob Noe, aged 73; settled in Scipio in 1835.

Carey Della, aged 70; settled in Fayette in 1835.

Charles Gregory, aged 74; settled in Jonesville in 1833.

## INGHAM COUNTY.

### MEMORIAL REPORT.

BY O. M. BARNES.

Almon Morris Chapin, member of the Michigan State Pioneer Society, was born in Springfield, Massachusetts, November 25, 1810, and died at his residence in Vevay, Ingham county, Michigan, September 5, 1878. While yet a school boy he moved with his father, the late Levi Chapin, to Camillus, Onondaga county, New York. He studied for some time at the Onondaga academy, and also at the Skaneateles seminary, both of which were then schools of repute. He afterwards pursued a course of medical reading, but on account of failing health abandoned the purpose of entering the profession. A few years were spent by him in Rochester, and then he went into mercantile business at Lakeville, Livingston county, New York. July 16, 1835, he married Miss Jane Pease, of Lima, who survives him. In December, 1842, he removed to Michigan, and settled on the farm in Vevay, Ingham county, where he resided at the time of his death. The toils and privations of the pioneer were endured by him with never-failing cheerfulness, and through many vicissitudes of life he maintained unfaltering courage and hope, finding always a bright side to every cloud, and something to enjoy and be thankful for, under all circumstances. A marked feature of his character was his love of trees, flowers, and all beautiful things. Moved by this spirit he made his home one of the most pleasant and comfortable in the county.

He was distinguished also for his mental endowments and culture. He habitually pursued a wide range of reading, and kept himself in hearty sympathy with whatever was for the good of society and the advancement of the world; never mourning for "the good old times," but looking hopefully to the future. He was always actively interested in education, and at times, both in early life and later, he entered the school-room as a teacher. His own children are largely indebted for their education to his personal instruction, especially in mathematics and language.

One of the early settlers of Ingham county, Mr. Chapin was identified with all its growth and public work. He held from time to time the various offices in the gift of his township, and discharged their duties faithfully. He was connected from their very beginning, and generally in some official capacity, with the Ingham county agricultural society, and with the farmers club. He was a member also of other similar organiztions, both State and local, which have done so much to develop the agricultural interests of central Michigan. He was chosen secretary of the Farmers' Mutual insurance company, and held the office for several years.

Mr. Chapin was, from early life, a believer in the Universalist view of the Christian faith, and of this church he was for many years a member. He died in the full assurance of the faith in which he lived, speaking of and looking forward to his departure with the most perfect resignation and trust. Life to him was a continual growth. The added years brought him increased experience and knowledge, and with these, increased happiness and usefulness. Instead of diminishing (as with most men), his activity and enthusiasm for the public good increased with his years, and his last days were emphatically his best.

He was suddenly stricken with incurable disease, and passed from earth before infirmity had laid its hand upon him, or old age impaired the vigor of mind or body. He was a kind husband, a wise and indulgent father, a warm and genial friend, and a good citizen. The place he has left will long be vacant in the wide circle of those who knew him.

Mr. Isaac Carl, a member of the State Pioneer Society, residing in the township of Meridian, Ingham county, Mich., died at his residence January 14, 1879, aged 64 years.

# IONIA COUNTY.

## THE CITY OF IONIA.—ITS FIRST SETTLEMENT AND EARLY HISTORY.

**From the Detroit Post and Tribune of June 1, 1878.**

In the fall of 1832 the Hon. Samuel Dexter, of German Flats (near Herkimer), New York, came into this quarter of the country, viewed the land, chose the northwest quarter of section nineteen, town seven north, range six west, of Ionia county, and entered it at the land office in Kalamazoo. That was the first step taken towards the civilization of this region. He returned to his home, sounded the praises of the country, and by the ensuing spring had enlisted a company of sixty-three persons to lead in the work of subduing this land.

This company consisted of Samuel Dexter, Erastus Yeomans, Oliver Arnold, Joel Guild, Edward Guild, and Darius Windsor, with their wives and children; and Dr. William B. Lincoln, Patrick M. Fox, Windsor Dexter, Warner Dexter, and Abram Decker, single men. They left home April 25th, and reached Detroit by the steamer Superior, May 11. Then they began their march to the Grand river, following very nearly the present line of the Detroit and Milwaukee railroad. It took them sixteen days to reach Ionia, and they camped out nine nights on the way, arriving at the site of the future city May 28, 1833. They could find shelter only at Royal Oak, Pontiac,—a hamlet of a half dozen cabins,—and at two isolated settlers' cabins. The last of these was where Corunna now is, and from that point they had to cut their way through the woods where no wheel had ever passed before.

On their way they had the first white funeral in the Grand River valley. About thirty miles from their journey's end one of Mr. Dexter's children died. They could not well carry the body with them, so a grave was hollowed out in the forest, a wooden trunk was brought forth by one of the company, and in it the little body was laid to rest.

The site of Ionia was then occupied by an Indian settlement, where some 500 Indians stopped to raise a little corn, fish, and make sugar in the proper seasons.

In the same year settlements were made at Grand Rapids, Grand Haven, and Grandville, and each cherished the hope of growing into a great city. These pioneers had been preceded by Genereau, near Ionia; Louis Campau, at Grand Rapids; and Rix Robinson, at Ada: all were Indian traders with no fixed idea of remaining at their posts, although Campau and Robinson did stay and did good work, and left names that are cherished by the inhabitants of those sections.

It was too late to clear land for work that season, so they bought an Indian plantation for $25, and planted five acres to corn and potatoes. That was the beginning of Ionia county's agriculture, as well as of its city. They had some articles to trade with the Indians for fish, venison, maple sugar, etc., six spans of horses, and ten head of cattle. A supply of provisions and other goods they had sent around the lakes, and got them in the middle of the summer. Messrs. Dexter, Yeomans, and Windsor built log houses, and the rest lived in Indian wigwams, and all quite in Indian fashion for a time; even getting most of their eatables from their red brethren, with whom they ever kept on the most friendly terms. A few years later, indeed, a family named Glass, in North

Plains, some miles from the settlement, was murdered and its buildings burned. This is the only "Indian outrage" on record in the Grand river valley; and as the head of the family was never seen afterwards, many believe that he, for some reason unknown, did the deed himself and fled at once from the scene of his crime. The crime created much alarm, as the settlers feared more trouble with the Indians, and the story fixing it on Glass is said to have been started to quiet the fears of the people.

### FIRST HOUSES.

The first log house was built by Samuel Dexter, about where the grist-mill, on the corner of Main and Dexter streets, now is. In 1834 Dr. Lincoln built the first frame house. It is still standing, opposite the postoffice, and is occupied by A. F. Carr.

Indeed, Dr. Lincoln is

### A CHAMPION PIONEER,

and we may as well dispose of him here as anywhere. He was the first physician in the Grand river valley west of Jackson, taught the first school in Ionia county, and was one of the leading actors at its first wedding, July 5, 1835, when he and Miss Anthilda P. Arnold, were made one flesh by 'Squire Dexter, the pioneer preacher not yet having come to town. The happy couple are still living on a pleasant farm, just north of the city limits—the doctor having retired from practice—and are the best authorities on the early history of the county to be found, as the doctor has kept a written record of leading events. We are much indebted to them for information for this sketch.

### FIRST STORES.

The first store—a log building— was put up by John Lloyd, in 1834, on the northwest corner of Third and Main streets. Its stock comprised dry goods, crockery, groceries, hardware, and whisky, and the proprietor did not grumble about hard times. The first brick store was built by Wilson & Kennedy, dry goods dealers, just west of the first national bank, and is now owned by Dye & Carr. The first brick house was built by Frederick Hall, where Hitchcock & Tabor's store now is.

### THE FIRST TAVERN

was opened in 1836, by Asa Spencer, in the frame house built by Dr. Lincoln; the rush of settlers to this point upon the opening of the land office having created a necessity and profit for it. This was followed soon after by another, kept by William McCosland, on the site of the present Sherman House, which was thus early set apart as a place for the entertainment of Ionia's stranger guests.

### THE POSTOFFICE

was established in 1835, and Erastus Yeomans was the first postmaster. He had his office at first in his log house, a few rods west of his present residence. Mr. Yeomans is still living, at the age of eighty-six, strong in mind although feeble in body. He thinks he was appointed in 1836, but is not sure, and the burden of evidence favors 1835. Soon after he built for the postoffice a two-story frame building, where McMullen & Yeomans' drug store now stands. His successors, in their order, were Jacob Winsor, Ethan S. Johnson, Jonathan Tibbitts, David Irish, Edward Stevenson, Lewis Smith, Marion L. Smith, and Alfred H. Heath, the present incumbent.

### THE MILLS.

In the fall of 1833, Mr. Dexter built a saw-mill on Bellamy, or Welch Creek, two and one-half miles west of the present city; and in 1834 he put into it a run of stone for grinding meal and flour. This was an epoch in Ionia's history. Previous to that its people had done their grinding in a "big coffee mill," fitted up under Mr. Dexter's piazza. Its hopper would hold six quarts of corn, and every man was his own miller.

Two small streams flow through the east and west ends of the city. Mr. Dexter conceived the idea of uniting these streams and thereby gaining water power for a mill. He brought the water of the eastern brook along the base of the hills to the western, found that he had the power he wanted, and in the fall of 1837 built the first grist-mill. It was situated about the middle of Main street, just in front of where the City Mills now are.

In 1852 Page & Bean built a steam saw-mill. It has been once burned, once torn down, and is now represented by Fargo's mill.

### THE FIRST SCHOOL,

as we have said, was taught by Dr. Lincoln. He opened it in the fall of 1834, in his office in his new frame house. It was a private school. The first public school was taught by Mason Hearsey in the fall of 1835. The school-house was built in 1836, on the north side of Main street, a little east of Senator F. S. Freeman's residence. Previously, May 12, 1835, Alfred Cornell, George Case and John McKelvy were elected commissioners of common schools, and William D. Moore, A. Cornell, Jr., Nathaniel Soules, and William B. Lincoln, inspectors. This was the beginning of the school system in the county.

### THE FIRST CHURCH.

The Methodists are apt to claim that they are the skirmishers of the church militant, and first to appear at the outposts of civilization. But the Baptists were ahead of them at Ionia, and June 24, 1834, under the guidance of the Rev. E. Loomis, of the American Home Missionary Society, held a conference preliminary to the formation of a church society. Samuel Dexter, Erastus Yeomans and Alfred Cornell and their wives were members of this conference. August 23 the church was organized. Benjamin Barber was received by letter, and Dr. Lincoln as a candidate for baptism. February 18, 1837, a meeting was held in the school-house, at which articles of faith and a covenant were adopted. The membership was twenty. In May following the Rev. A. C. Sangster and family joined the church, and he became its first pastor. In 1845 the Rev. Alfred Cornell assumed the pastorate. Previous to this the people had worshiped in the school-houses or private houses, but under his administration a large frame church was built. It gave way in 1870 to the present building on the old site, and was removed up the street to do duty as a shop. Mr. Cornell served the church faithfully for nineteen years. He is now chaplain of the House of Correction here—active, full of life and work, and very companionable.

This was the pioneer church of Ionia county, and the first protestant church in the Grand River valley, having been preceded only by the Catholic Mission church at Grand Rapids.

### TOWNSHIP ORGANIZATION.

Ionia township was formed in 1835. It embraced all the territory of the present county, and was attached to Kalamazoo for judicial purposes. The first town meeting was held at Genereau's trading post, April 6, 1835. Erastus Yeomans was elected supervisor and Dr. Lincoln, clerk. When Kent county was organized in 1836 Ionia was attached to it.

### COUNTY ORGANIZATION

Ionia county was established by legislative enactment in 1837, and divided into two townships, with Montcalm county attached for judicial purposes. The present division into sixteen towns was made in 1850.

The first election of county officers was held in the spring of 1837. There were two hundred and ninety-three votes polled. At this election these officers were chosen: Associate judges—Isaac Thompson, Truman H. Lyon; probate judge, William D. Moore; sheriff, E. W. Curtiss; clerk, Asa Brunnell; treasurer, John E. Morrison; register of deeds, Adam L. Roof.

### THE FIRST COURT.

The first term of the circuit court was held in May, 1837, Judge Epaphroditus Ransom presiding. The only business done was to admit Adam L. Roof to practice. At the November term Cyrus Lovell was appointed the first prosecuting attorney.

### THE LAND OFFICE.

In 1836 the land office was opened in Ionia and there came a rush of settlers and speculators. Two hotels were opened, and these and the houses of settlers were filled to overflowing. Many are the stories told of the manner in which men were stowed away for the night, and the reckless way in which they threw their bags of specie about, feeling sure that no one would steal them, considering the very poor facilities for getting away with the plunder. The opening of the land office at this juncture is said to have been unfortunate for the county. Fraud was alive and at work even in those days, and succeeded by his work in the land office in driving away many who came to buy homes; and the land was left to speculators, who held it from settlement and improvement. The Hon. Alonzo Sessions, in Prof. Everett's "Memoirs of the Grand River Valley," says:

"The land office was opened by officers so void of all sense of honor as to practice daily, in open daylight, the most bare-faced frauds upon poor men who desired small tracts to live on, and a criminal favoritism in the interest of those who had money to bribe them. * * * The bids were required to be in writing, and placed in a box previous to the day of sale. When the time for final decision came, all bids were missing except the one put in by the favored one. Again, only gold, silver, or the notes of a few favored banks were receivable for lands. This was a surprise sprung by Jackson's Specie Circular, and many—in fact most poor men—came unprepared. The nearest banks were at Detroit, and no road. A broker's office across the street from the land office was a good thing to have, for gold and silver were in demand at ten per cent premium. The broker's office sold specie while the supply lasted; but gave out before noon and night. At night and at noon boxes were seen to pass from the land office to the broker's, and the specie used to buy land was used twice each day, and somebody pocketed twenty cents on each dollar of it; and the money was taken from the pockets of those who had no money to spare."

### THE RAILROADS.

The Detroit and Milwaukee Railroad was completed to Ionia in 1856, and was a great boon to the inhabitants, as it placed them in reach of markets, lack of access to which was the chief barrier to their progress. It is hard to conceive now of the slowness with which things moved in those early days, especially away from navigable waters. It used to cost more to get stoves from Grand Haven to Ionia than from New York to Grand Haven. All supplies came around by way of the lakes and were poled up the river in flat boats. Thirty-day paper of merchants would often fall due in New York before the goods would reach Ionia. Wheat would drop early in the fall to almost nothing, as it was known that it must be sold before navigation closed, if at all. The change wrought by the first railroad was apparent, and merchants and farmers alike acknowledged their indebtedness to it.

The Detroit, Lansing and Northern Railroad was completed to Ionia in December, 1869; to Howard City in August, 1871, and the Stanton branch in February, 1873. This branch will be extended twenty miles further north, to Milbrook, the coming summer.

### OTHER FIRSTLINGS.

The first Methodist preacher who visited Ionia came in 1835 and said that "he had taken his life in his hands, and came all the way from Ohio to go into the backwoods to preach the gospel to the heathen." The saying got noised abroad and injured his usefulness among "the heathen," some of whom still live to tell unpleasant stories of one whose very name is forgotten.

The first white child born in Ionia county was Eugene Winsor, son of Darius Winsor; time, 1833.

The first wheat was exported from Ionia in 1839, when Gileo Isham took 2,254 bushels down the river.

Mr. Henry B. Lebhart, of Lyons, delivered the first Fourth of July oration in the Grand river valley.

Ionia had her first Fourth of July celebration in 1836, and Alonzo Sessions was the orator. We believe that was his first appearance on any stage.

The first village in the county was Ionia, incorporated in 1835. It was also the first city, chartered in 1873.

The first duel in the county was never fought. A Dr. Beckwith was offended by A. F. Bell, the lawyer, and challenged him to mortal combat. Bell promptly accepted; chose for weapons, potatoes, and for the ground opposite sides of Grand river; firing to be kept up until honor was satisfied. The doctor thought the terms ungentlemanly and declined to fight under them; so the duel never came off and has had no successor.

The first blacksmith, or mechanic of any kind, was Oliver Arnold.

The first newspaper established in the county, so far as we could learn, was the Ionia Gazette, the first number of which appeared on the first Tuesday in January, 1849. It was founded by E. R. Powell; was neutral in politics for two years, after which it became democratic. It was merged into the Ionia Sentinel in 1867.

In 1837 John Aleny, of Grand Rapids, represented Ionia, Kent and Ottawa counties in the State Legislature. Ionia's first representative, however, after it had gained a separate existence as a county, was the Hon. A. F. Bell, in 1847.

### IONIA AS IT IS IN 1878.

Bidding good-bye to the past, let us look at Ionia as it is to-day. Its situation is one of considerable beauty. The valley of the Grand river is here about two miles wide, bounded on either side by hills of very respectable size, clad in the green of meadow and woodland and the russet of plow-troubled earth. The river winds through the center. Half a mile north of it the little city begins to lay claim to the bottom lands, and with its business houses and residences occupies them for the space of about two miles in length and half a mile in width. Around this the hills are drawn in an irregular semi-circle. But the town used to be very ambitious and pushed over the hills to the north, covering their sides and summits with handsome residences and spacious, well-kept grounds. The owners of these residences look out from their windows upon about as pleasant a landscape as is to be found on this peninsula, and their view is not marred by the smoke of furnaces and factories.

The original plat of the city covered but very little territory, and additions have been made to it at such times and in such shapes as suited the owners of lands, who laid out additional streets as seemed best to them without much regard to securing regularity of lines. The result is that a street here is a very uncertain quantity, and the lines marking the city limits crooked as the crookedest heart could wish. As near as may be shown without a map this is the situation of the streets; omitting the indescribable bits that so soon are done for, one wonders what they were begun for. The principal streets run east and west. First, just north of the railroad depots, is Front street. Next to it is the principal thoroughfare, Main street, on which are all the business houses, three of the chief churches and the place where the county buildings ought to be.

North of Main street is Washington street, and north of that, on the brow of the hill, High street. This traverses a little more than half the length of the city—the western half—when it comes to a sudden stop; there is a jog and Lafayette street leads the pedestrian on out to the city limits. Intersecting these at right angles, beginning at the east, are Jefferson, Jackson, Rich, Union, First, Pleasant, Second, Third, Dexter and State streets. Of these only Dexter, Third, State and Jackson run through from High or Lafayette to Front. First and Second run north to Washington street; Pleasant and Union south to Washington; and Rich runs south to Main.

The business is confined chiefly to the part of Main street which lies west of the Detroit and Milwaukee depot. There are no public buildings except churches. At the head of Church street is a square designed for county buildings; but all to be found there is a low one-story brick, worth, perhaps, $1,000, where the judge of probate, county clerk, register of deeds and treasurer have their offices and pigeon-hole their papers, having no safer vault in which to put them. And then there is a two-story frame house in which the sheriff lives, and attached to which is the jail. One peep into

### THE IONIA COUNTY JAIL

would have driven John Howard to suicide, unless, indeed, he should have learned the ease with which one may escape from the black hole. Two very rude cells in a shed are all there is to it; low, dingy, unhealthful, insecure things, a disgrace to the community which permits them to exist. The objections which will lie against this jail, if they are careful not to let too much of their weight come upon it—are: It is almost impossible to keep prisoners in it, and by their escape justice is defeated or crippled; if they do not escape, they are deprived of rights which belong even to the worst of criminals. In either case justice suffers. And yet the people of Ionia county refused this spring to vote $10,000 for the construction of a new jail.

### IONIA'S STRONG POINTS.

But what Ionia lacks in one point it makes up for in another direction. If it should blush for its jail, it may well be proud of its churches, which are not equaled by any other town of its size, nor surpassed by any of double its population in the State. Of these more anon. If it has no manufactures to speak of, it can boast of as fine residences and as handsome grounds as can be found in cities ten times as large, and certainly no city of its own class in the State can equal it in this respect. Among the more conspicuous are the houses of O. Tower, J. M. Kidd, L. S. Lovell, H. Rich, J. H. Kidd, J. C. Blanchard, Benjamin Harter, G. S. Cooper, L. Clute, A. J. Webber, F. W. Stevenson, A. F. Bell, W. C. Page, W. P. Burhans, A. B. Morse, James Kennedy, W. W. Mitchell, S. F. Page, Ira Root, Benjamin Vosper.

### POPULATION AND CITY OFFICERS.

The census of 1874 credited Ionia with a population of 3,251; it now claims 4,000. The present city officers are: Mayor, James M. Kidd; clerk, C. H. Spencer; treasurer, John W. Baldie; marshal, Charles Broad; attorney, W. O. Webster. Its police force consists of the marshal and a night watchman, S. M. Norton.

### THINGS TO BE REMEMBERED.

One who spends a week in Ionia will be apt to remember these things touching it, and will speak of them to friends: Its exceptionally handsome residences; its churches; its pleasant situation; its need of money invested in manufactures. Having thus taken a general view of the city, let us now look a some of its institutions and its business more closely.

### THE STATE HOUSE OF CORRECTION AND REFORMATORY.

A mile and a half west of the village is the State house of correction and reformatory. The act providing for the establishment of the institution and for a board to select a site for it, was approved April 25, 1873; and Hampton Rich of Ionia, Charles T. Hills of Muskegon, and John M. Swift of Northville, were appointed to constitute the board. The principal places bidding for the location were Muskegon, Grand Rapids, East Saginaw, Adrian, and Ionia. The latter got it. By an act approved April 22, 1875, $150,000 was appropriated for the erection of the officers' quarters, rotunda and two wings, dining room and hospital building, boiler and engine-house, and a section,—one third,—of the workshops. By virtue of the same act Hampton Rich of Ionia, Charles Kipp of St. Johns, and Westbrook Divine of Montcalm, were appointed building commissioners. The designs for the buildings submitted by Mortimer L. Smith of Detroit, were accepted; he was appointed architect, and H. M. Lewis of Ionia, superintendent of construction. Eighteen bids were received for the work of erecting the buildings, ranging from $189,281, by L. M. Daniels, of

Ionia, to $130,575, by Jules A. Knapp & Co., of Detroit. The contract was awarded to the latter firm for $134,575, some alterations in the specifications justifying the addition of $4,000 to the contract price.

In 1877 the present board of managers was appointed. It consists of Hampton Rich of Ionia, Westbrook Divine of Belding, and Thomas F. Moore of Adrian. July 17, 1877, the board of managers met and accepted all the buildings covered by the contract, except the workshops, which were completed and accepted the 7th of the next September.

June 26, 1877, John J. Grafton of Ionia, was appointed warden, and on July 5th he nominated these officers, which were confirmed by the board: Deputy warden, O. H. Webster, Detroit; clerk, Charles S. Lowe, Ionia; engineer, Isaac R. Dolson, Ionia.

The prison opened August 15, 1877, and the first prisoners entered it August 30,—three men from Eaton county, for ninety days each, one for adultery, and two for assault and battery. The next day sixty men were transferred to it from the State prison at Jackson. That is, in brief, the history of this young prison.

### *The Buildings.*

are situated on the high bluffs which bound the valley of the Grand river on the north, and command a fine view of the country, pure air, and excellent natural advantages for sewerage. Of the buildings, the three-story building in front, in the center, the rotunda, just behind it, the two wings on a line with the walls, the two-story building directly in the rear of the rotunda, the one-story building near the west wall, and forty feet of the long two-story building in the rear, are completed. The second wing, extending from the rotunda on the left, is about ready for the roof; the foundation is laid for a corresponding wing on the right, and work is progressing on the workshops. The two-story building outside the walls at the southeast corner was designed for the warden's residence. No provision has yet been made for it, and it is very likely never to be built. The walls and buildings are of Ionia cream-colored brick, trimmed with Ionia (brown) sandstone.

The three-story building in front has seventy-six feet front, and is eighty nine feet deep. On the first floor are the warden's office, parlor, manager's room, officers' dining room, clerk's office, and turnkey's room. On the second and third floors are the living rooms for the warden's family, the keeper's rooms, and officers' reading room.

### *The Rotunda.*

is octagonal in form, and eighty-nine feet in diameter. Into it the wings containing the cells open, and its first floor is used as a general assembly room for prisoners. Here the convicts are collected after work to be marched to their cells, and thence to their meals. In it, too, are the offices of the chaplain and the deputy warden. The chapel occupies the second floor of the rotunda, and is appropriately fitted up for the purposes for which it is designed. The wings containing

### *The Cells.*

are each 175 feet long and 45 feet wide. In each wing are three tiers of cells, with two rows of cells in each tier, placed back to back, one row opening to the east and one to the west. At the top of every block is a circular air duct, two and a half feet in diameter, through which runs a steam pipe.

Each cell is five feet wide, eight feet long and six and one-half feet high; floor a single slab of Ohio blue-stone; ceiling the same; furniture, an iron bedstead, small square stand, and a stool about three feet high. The door is an iron grating, which in no way hinders the entrance of air, and it and the air shaft in the cell, communicating with the air duct above mentioned, secure perfect ventilation. The cells are heated by steam pipes along the walls of the corridors. Each cell locks separately; but in addition to this, at night when all are locked up, by the simple turning of a lever a single long iron bar comes down across the tops of the doors in every row of cells, so that all are locked together. Between each row of cells and the wall of the wing is a space of eight feet. The windows of the wings are grated; the cells are lighted from the corridor. An iron balcony runs around the upper tiers. At the extreme end of each tier are fourteen iron wash-bowls, with water on tap for the use of prisoners. There are 156 cells in each wing; 312 are now ready for use; and when the buildings are completed there will be separate accommodations for 624 convicts. The ground floors of the prison throughout are of Ohio blue-stone laid in cement.

### *Dining-room, etc.*

The two-story building in the rear of the rotunda is 213 feet long and 76 feet wide. On its first floor are the dining-room, kitchen, bake-room, and laundry; on the second floor are the hospital, tailor and shoe shops, and drying-room. The dining-tables consist of maple planks a foot wide and twelve feet long, set on iron standards. Six men are seated at a table. The laundry is furnished with steam washers and wringers.

The hospital contains a general sick-room, large, light, and airy, and a number of single rooms. Each room has a bath and wash-room, with hot and cold water, and water-closet attached.

The low building in the rear is the boiler-house—40x60 feet—which contains four horizontal tubular boilers, thirteen feet long and five feet in diameter. They furnish heat for the institution and power to the engine for its work, which at present is confined to pumping the water for the prison and running the washing-machines. The detached building near the western hall is a stable and carriage-house. A little east of it is another one-story building containing the blacksmith shop, etc. The workshops are to be 400 feet long, 75 feet wide and two stories high. The ceilings throughout are fifteen feet high, the walls are twenty-five feet high, thirty inches thick at the top, and capped with blue stone. In the towers at the corner are the guards' watch-houses.

### *Guards, Gas, and Water.*

Four guards are on the wall all day long. They are armed with Springfield rifles and Smith & Wesson revolvers—five-shooters. The guards at the gate have seven-shooting Spencer carbines instead of a rifle. The keepers have revolvers, and in the turnkey's room is a Springfield rifle, with bayonet, for each of them.

The water for the institution is furnished by a cluster of springs a few rods north of the northern wall. These springs are enclosed in a brick curb eighteen feet in diameter, in which there stands ten feet of water. From them it is pumped through a six-inch pipe into a reservoir at the northeast corner, whence it is distributed over the grounds and buildings.

Gas for lighting is manufactured on the grounds by two of Berry Brothers' gas machines.

In every department there is a telegraphic signal box, by which communication can be had in an instant with all parts of the buildings and grounds, and notice given of trouble in any quarter to all the officers and guards "as quick as lightning."

### *Discipline.*

The prison uniform is a round-a-bout coat and pantaloons of plain gray satinet; and for summer wear heavy duck cloth. Under this is worn a hickory shirt, and in winter good flannel underclothing is provided. There is no "prison cut" here for the hair, it being merely kept trimmed to a medium length; but beards and mustaches disappear in the basement, with outside clothing, when one enters here to stay awhile.

The punishments used are cutting down of rations, losing "good time," confinement in the "solitary" and flogging. A convict who keeps all the rules and behaves himself well gets two months off his sentence the first year, seventy-five days the second year, and so on, increasing the time deducted as the years go by until a "five years' man," who keeps all the rules, will save twelve months' time and get out at the end of four years; and a man in for twenty years may shorten his term seventy-five and one-half months. For sentences of less than one year five days per month is allowed. For every violation of rules an inmate forfeits all the time gained for the month in which it was committed, and the board of managers may deduct all the time previously gained. One can readily see what a potent element in the discipline of the prison this time factor may be made if judiciously managed.

For graver offenses confinement in "the solitary" is provided. There are six solitaries in the rotunda, built in the little towers that may be seen about it. Each of them is four feet wide, five feet long, and eleven feet high, and has for its sole furniture a night bucket, a heavy iron ring in the floor and two chains suspended from the wall. It is perfectly dark but well ventilated. An unruly prisoner is put into this loose; and only chained when he pounds and threshes around in it and refuses to be quieted.

For the gravest offenses flogging precedes the solitary. It is inflicted at the end of the prisoner's cell-block with a strap an inch wide laid on the bare hips.

Recently a convict, with an improvised slung-shot, knocked down a keeper at a gate and got out. The guard's gun covered him and he was in again in five minutes. He meant to kill. He lost all his good time, and got fifty stripes, spent two weeks in the solitary and wears a ball and chain at his work. When his time is up he will be re-arrested for assault with intent to kill. The general aim is to avoid these severe punishments as far as possible.

### *Food and Work.*

The food furnished the prisoners is plain but plentiful and substantial. If the bills of fare were printed, hash, bread, coffee, beef stew, codfish, corned beef, potatoes, pork and beans, cabbage and such things would figure in it.

The law requires that the inmates shall be kept at hard labor ten hours a day. The workshops are empty as yet; no contracts have been let, and the prisoners are employed in grading the grounds, building the unfinished portions of the prison, doing its cooking, washing, baking, tailoring, etc. But four men who have a right outside the walls are employed on the prison improvements—those are the master mechanic and three masons, whose places could not be filled from among the convicts.

### *Aim and Management.*

The institution is meant to be reformatory and to separate young offenders from old and hardened criminals. The law allows courts at their discretion, to sentence to this place all males guilty of a felony between the ages of sixteen and twenty-five, except for crimes involving a life sentence, and all persons guilty of misdemeanors and sentenced for ninety days or more.

The board of managers meet at the prison at least once a month, and are required to examine all its departments; and all State officers, commissioners of State institutions, sheriffs, prosecuting attorneys and ministers of the gospel may visit it at pleasure, and the officers are obliged to show them around. It is the interest of the managers that they should allow no abuses to pass undetected, and, with their watchful care and the constant liability that some of these other privileged parties may pop in at any moment the chances for the growth of abuses are reduced to a minimum. The prison seems to be well officered and well managed, and to be fulfilling the end for which it was designed.

There are now 220 prisoners in it, and there have been confined in it since it opened 385 different persons. There should be more, but a clause in the law requiring a copy of the information and abstract of all the testimony taken in the case to be sent in with every prisoner operates to keep judges from sending men here at such trouble and expense. The managers of the House of Correction and the State Prison Inspectors may agree on the transfer of convicts from Jackson to Ionia, and in this way some of the pressure on the resources of the Jackson prison has been removed. In one of these transfers Dan Van Waggoner, who about a year ago went out riding with a man from Kalamazoo and tried to kill him in a most cold-blooded manner, was sent here. He has a forty-five years' sentence to work out, and is not yet twenty. He is making a good prison record and will knock a big hole out of that—about sixteen years —if he makes the most of his "good time."

### *The Present Officers.*

of the prison, with their salaries, are here given: John J. Grafton, warden, $1,500 and living expenses of self and family; D. P. Fargo, deputy warden, $1,000; Charles S. Lowe, clerk, $1,000; C. O. Thompson, treasurer, $500; Alfred Cornell, chaplain, $1,000; Wilbur F. Reed, physician, $600; Isaac R. Dolson, engineer, $1,000; David Stellberger, baker, $600; thirteen keepers at $600 each; eight guards at $480 each.

Among the keepers is S. C. Whiting, formerly of the Detroit house of correction, who is hall master here.

## THE CITY SCHOOLS.

On the top of the hill, at the northeast corner of Union and High streets, about half a mile north of the Detroit and Milwaukee depot, is the union school building. It is a handsome structure, three stories high, with a basement, built of Ionia's cream-colored brick. It stands in the center of a grove three acres in extent, and commands a good view of the surrounding country. It was built by L. F. Mills of Ionia, cost $30,000, and school was opened in it in September, 1866.

The high school, with two recitation rooms, and the offices of the principal and the superintendent, occupy the third floor. On the second floor are four rooms for the grammar school and intermediate departments; and in the first three large session rooms for primary scholars. The high school boasts of a fine piano, and has a fair cabinet of minerals and philosophical apparatus. Other rooms in the building are provided with cabinet organs bought by the pupils and teachers.

Besides this there are three ward school buildings in the city, each containing two rooms, built at a cost of $4,500 each. More room is needed, and an addition of two rooms will probably be made to the second ward building this summer.

There are 1,060 people of school age in the district, of whom 800 are enrolled in the schools, with an average daily attendance of about 700—and that is about all there are seats for. There has been a constant increase in the average attendance for the past seven years. The high school will seat 130 pupils, and has 126 in attendance. Prof. A. L. Todd is employed as superintendent of schools at a salary of $1,400 per year, and Prof. A. P. DeWolf as principal of the high school at a salary of $900. The assistant in the high school and the principal of the grammar school get $550 each; the lowest salary paid is $320. In all sixteen teachers are employed. The total cost of supporting the schools last year was $12,307.74, an average of $17.78 per pupil. Over $1,300 was received as tuition from foreign pupils. The district owes $10,000, which has to be paid at the rate of $1,500 per year. The present organization of the school board is: President, Osmund Tower; secretary, Virgil Van Vleck; trustees, A. W. Kimball, Lemuel Clute, Geo. Cooper, and Chauncey Waterbury.

## RELIGIOUS ORGANIZATIONS.

### *The Methodist Church.*

The Methodist Episcopal house of worship, corner of Main and Union streets, is the finest in the city. It is a very handsome building, of Ionia brick, and trimmed with Ionia sandstone, and cost, including furniture, $63,000; debt, $8,000; seating capacity, 1,000; built in 1870. The Methodist Church organization is the next to the oldest in the city, and had its beginning in 1835, when the Rev. Mr. Monette, of Ohio, formed the first class. This class consisted of Oliver Arnold and wife, their son Silas D. Arnold, and two daughters, A. P. and Anthilda Arnold. Silas D. Arnold was the first class leader. This church has now 400 members, and a Sabbath-school 200 strong. Its present pastor is the Rev. E. Cooley, salary $1,400.

### *The Christian Church.*

The Church of Christ—Disciples—was organized January 4, 1859, by the Rev. Isaac Errett. It began life with a membership of forty-three persons, mostly from Muir, where Mr. Errett had been preaching for some time. In 1869 it built a neat brick church edifice, which will seat 600 people, and cost $21,000. It is on the north side of Washington street between Rich and Jackson streets. This society has a membership of 250; has eighty children enrolled in its Sabbath-school and pays its pastor a salary of $1,000. Its present pastor, the Rev. A. J. Hale, has been here six months. Former pastors: The Revs. Isaac Errett, J. B. Crane, W. R. Spindler, O. Eberts, L. R. Gault.

### *The Presbyterian Church*

was organized October 8, 1842, by the Rev. L. M. S. Smith. Its charter members were: William Babcock and wife, Araminta Dye, Rebecca Dye, Lucretia

Webster, Mary S. Lovell, Samuel P. Hodges, Dolly B. Overhiser and Harriet A. Bates. In 1857 this society built a frame church on Main street, just east of the present M. E. Church. This was enlarged and improved about a year ago, and cost, with improvements, $12,000; will seat 500 people. It is very tastefully finished and its members pride themselves on their organ, which has the reputation of being the best in the village. This society has 280 members; 225 scholars in its Sunday-school and pays its pastor $1,700. Its present pastor, the Rev. J. Pierson, has been with it ten years, and is the oldest Protestant pastor in the city. He has resigned, however, and there will be a vacancy in the pastorate July 1st. The former pastors were: The Revs. L. M. S. Smith, — Waring, S. S. Brown, L. Q. Root, Louis Mills, R. W. Landis, E. D. Newberry.

### *The Baptist Church,*

as the oldest in the city, has been treated of elsewhere. Its present church edifice was built in 1870, at a cost of $20,000. It is a brick structure, ranking next to the Methodist for elegance, on the corner of Main and First streets; will seat 500 people. The society has 350 members; 275 pupils in its Sabbath-school; pays its pastor $1,300. The Rev. S. Donnely, the present pastor, has been here one year. Former pastors, the Revs. A. C. Sangster, H. D. Buttolph, Alfred Cornell (for nineteen years), J. H. Morrison, Levi Parmely, J. Rowley, E. O. Taylor.

### *The Episcopal Church.*

St. John's Church is eighteen years old, having been organized May 14, 1860, by the Rev. Melancthon Hoyt. It worships in a small wooden building on the corner of Washington and First streets, which cost $2,000, and will seat 160 persons. It has fifty communicants, a Sabbath-school of forty scholars, and pays its pastor $500. Former pastors, the Revs. Melancthon Hoyt, D. B. Lyon, Ezra Jones, D. E. Brown, Robert Wood. The Rev. William Brittain, the present pastor, has been here one year.

### *The Congregational Church.*

Some dozen years ago there was trouble in the Presbyterian church, and as the result of it the Congregational church was organized May 14, 1868, with forty members. The Presbyterians say that the Congregationalists "split off" from their church. The Congregational brethren say that the Presbyterian church was originally Congregational, and as such acquired all its present prosperity, but a certain minister won the hearts of his people from their primal faith and led them into Presbyterianism; when those who were not able to brook the government of a Presbytery secured a shop on the north side of Washington street, between Rich and Union, and fitted it up as a house of worship. But they date their organization back to 1842, and look upon themselves as robbed of their rights by Presbyterians. Their church is worth $3,000; they have 127 members, forty scholars in their Sabbath-school, and pay their pastor $1,200 a year. The Rev. W. H. Thomas has been with them seventeen months, but has resigned, to accept the pastorate of the First Congregational church of Kalamazoo. The Rev. Benjamin Parsons was its first pastor, and Rev. Mr. Barker preceded Mr. Thomas.

### *Catholic Church.*

St. Peter's church was erected in 1860. It is a plain frame, at the west end of High street; cost $2,000; will seat 300. The Rev. C. G. Bolte has been its pastor since 1863, and preached to the people a year before that. There are 140 families in his parish, with about 800 members. The people pay what salary they choose under $700. A parochial school of seventy scholars is connected with the church, of which Miss Matilda Harvey, of Detroit, is teacher. The Catholic church property, including schoolhouse, etc., is $8,000.

### *German Evangelical.*

The German Evangelical church was organized in 1859. In 1866 it built a plain frame church on Washington street near the west end, which cost $1,800 and will seat 100 people. It will be enlarged this summer so as to seat fifty more. The society has 100 members, a Sunday-school of seventy scholars, and pays its pastor, Rev. Fred. Miller, $600 a year.

Besides the churches above mentioned, the Lutherans and Free Methodists hold meetings once in two or three weeks in Firemen's Hall.

## SECRET SOCIETIES.

### *Freemasons.*

There are in the city two Masonic lodges, a council, a chapter, and a commandery of the Masonic order, all in a very prosperous condition. They have leased the third floor of Union block, southwest corner of Third and Main streets, for ninety-nine years, and have there fitted up one of the most commodious and handsomely furnished lodge-rooms in the State. It is claimed, indeed, that there are but two in the State superior to this. Before the Masons took it, this was known as Union Hall.

The oldest lodge in the city is Ionia Lodge No. 36, which was chartered by Grand Master Jeremiah Moors, Jan. 10, 1850. Levi Taylor was its first master, and C. S. Hooker its first senior warden. It held its first meeting in the old Eagle hotel, since burned, where the Bailey House now stands. It meets in Masonic Hall on Wednesday evenings on or before the full moon. Its present membership is 200, and R. C. Hatheway is its master.

Washtenong Lodge, No. 286, was instituted January 13, 1872, by Grand Master A. T. Metcalfe. C. R. Taylor was its first master. Present master, Dr. O. R. Long; membership, sixty.

Ionia Chapter No. 14, R. A. M., was chartered January 9, 1856; N. Shoemaker, grand high priest. Its charter members were George W. Wilson, Frederick Hall, Philander Hinds, David Irish, J. R. Croswell, L. B. Barnum, Dorus M. Fox, Wm. Jones, and Levi Taylor. Mr. Hall is the only one of these now belonging to the chapter. It has 213 members, and meets on Friday evening on or before the full moon. C. Waterbury is the present high priest.

Ionia Council No. 12, R. and S. M., was chartered June 5, 1861, by Frank Darrow, T. I. G. P. It meets on Monday evenings after the full moon, has twenty-eight members, and R. C. Hatheway is its thrice illustrious master.

Ionia Commandery, No. 11, Knights Templar, was organized June 5, 1861. It has 100 members, and Dr. B. F. Doughty, of Lowell, is its present commander. Meets on Friday evening after the full moon.

### *Odd Fellows.*

Ionia Lodge No. 175, I. O. O. F., was organized in Bayard's Hall November 22, 1871, by Grand Master Isaac Sides. T. A. Willetts was its first noble grand. It received its first charter January 18, 1872. It now has its lodge room in Smith's Hall on Union street, just opposite Masonic Hall. It has seventy-five members, and meets every Tuesday evening; D. P. Chapman, N. G.

Relief Encampment of Patriarchs No. 53, was instituted in January, 1873, by L. C. Tillotson, grand patriarch. T. A. Willetts was its first chief patriarch. It has forty-seven members; E. A. Chubb, chief patriarch; meets in Odd Fellows' Hall on the first and second Thursdays of each month.

### *Other Secret Societies.*

Ionia Lodge, Knights of Honor, was organized two years ago. It has twenty members; H. C. Sessions, dictator.

Ionia Lodge, No. 32, Ancient Order of United Workmen, was organized in January, 1878, and has twenty-eight members. A. H. Heath is master workman, and J. C. Taylor recorder.

A Division of Sons of Temperance was organized March 26, 1877. It has sixty-eight members, and meets in Odd Fellows' Hall. E. A. Chubb is its present patriarch.

On July 20, 1873, James Pogue was authorized, by Grand Chief Engineer Charles Wilson to organize Grand River Division, No. 168, Brotherhood of Locomotive Engineers, and did so. It meets in Odd Fellows' Hall, which is all we were able to learn concerning it.

### LADIES' LIBRARY ASSOCIATION.

At some time or other in the hisory of almost every town in Michigan two or three women gather together and decide that there ought to be a library in their community, and that what should be shall be. And very soon it is. Ionia reached this period in her history three years ago. Mrs. J. Pierson was the first to move in the matter, and went about soliciting subscriptions and stirring up the women to the work. The Ladies' Library Association was born and christened May 25, 1875, and received for its first birthday present the little that Mrs. Pierson had been able to secure for it in the few days immediately preceding. Its first officers were Mrs. J. Pierson, president; Mrs. G. W. Webster, secretary; Mrs. Van Vleck, treasurer. These ladies have since been elected annually to their respective positions. It has given ice cream and strawberry festivals, one or two lectures, some amateur entertainments, and by the receipts from these, members' dues and some donations, has come into possession of 950 volumes and has $90 in the treasury, which will be expended for books in a few days. It expects to add to its store of books now at the rate of 100 new volumes annually, exclusive of donations, and this rate will be greatly increased as the years go by. The present librarian is Miss Anna Babcock, and Misses Mary Norton and Alice Stanton as assistants.

### AGRICULTURAL SOCIETY.

The Ionia County Agricultural Society was organized in 1856. Its fair grounds, comprising 20 acres, are on the north bank of Grand river, just south of the city, and are admirably adapted for the purposes of the society.

The present officers of the society are: E. P. Kelsey, president; W. D. Arnold, secretary; J. W. Loomis, treasurer. The Ionia Driving Park Association has grounds adjoining those of the Agricultural society. This is not a sporting organization, but was formed to give instruction in horsemanship, and to provide grounds and track for private "speeding" and pleasure driving. But little interest is taken in it, and it will probably be absorbed by the Agricultural society in the fall.

### THE BAND.

The Ionia City Band was organized a year ago. It musters thirteen pieces, manned mostly by young men. Under the leadership of Quincy Hoyt it is making creditable progress.

### Y. M. C. A.

The Young Men's Christion Association was organized here in February last, with W. D. Webster, president, and J. E. Howard, secretary. It has seventy members, and being homeless as yet, meets in the basements of the various churches. A Bible class is conducted under its auspices, which meets every Tuesday evening, and the members do considerable work among the prisoners at the House of Correction.

### SCIENTIFIC.

The Ionia Scientific Association was organized in the fall of 1877, and held two or three meetings. Dr. F. Gundrum is president and C. B. Wardell, secretary. Just at present it seems to be engaged, like Mr. Micawber, in waiting for something to turn up, but some of its members think it will begin more active operations in the fall and become a permanent institution.

### RED RIBBON.

With all its virtue and temperance Ionia did not lack material for the great temperance reform to act upon, and there are 250 Knights of the Red Ribbon, bound together by club ties under the presidency of Henry Wilson. They have just fitted up a commodious club room on the second floor of the old Masonic building.

### THE DEUTSCHER

Arbeiter Unter-Stutzungs Verein was organized April 7, 1878, with H. Henreisch as president.

### THE MILITARY.

The Ionia Light Guard, company G, Second Regiment, M. S. T., was mustered into the State service January, 1876. Its original officers, which it still retains, were captain, James H. Kidd; first lieutenant, O. S. Tower; second lieutenant, H. C. Sessions. It has 80 men enrolled; armory on Second street, near the Sherman house.

### THE FIRE DEPARTMENT

used to consist of two hand engines, manned by volunteers, but is now completely disorganized. About two years ago the city bought the mill pond of the extinct woolen factory, at the north end of the city, and put in water-mains along Main street, which are fed by a stream from the pond. The reservoir is forty feet above the street, and pressure enough is afforded to throw a stream over the business blocks. Hose is attached to hydrants along the street and this is Ionia's safeguard from fire. But the water in this pond is from the stream which Mr. Dexter coaxed along the foot of the hills to feed the west stream and give power for his mill. Mr. Frederick Hall bought Dexter's right in the stream, and brought suit against the city to restrain it from diverting the water into the mains above mentioned, claiming that said diversion injured his proprietary rights in the stream. The case has been fought through all the courts, and the Supreme Court has just given its decision against the city. The water is still allowed to flow through the mains, and it is expected that the matter will be settled so as to allow the present system to continue.

## MERCHANTS AND MANUFACTURES.

### *The Merchants.*

One can hear more talk of hard times in Ionia in a day than in almost any other place in the State in a week. The failure of E. Colby & Co., two years ago, was a heavy blow to the town, as it affected directly almost all the leading business men. Other failures followed. The citizens feel that they have had more than their share of bankruptcy, and the merchants are profoundly "blue." Whether they have reason for this feeling may be inferred from this brief summary of the city's business: Fifteen dry goods and general dealers give their aggregate sales for the past year at $375,000; sixteen grocers report aggregate annual sales of $175,000; four houses dealing exclusively in boots and shoes report $65,000; one firm selling only hats, caps, and furs, disposes of $16,000 worth annually. Many of the dry goods houses deal also in groceries, boots, shoes, and hats, so that the sales of those dealing exclusively in those lines do not represent all the business done in them. For the rest, three clothing houses report aggregate annual sales of $85,000; four hardware firms of $95,000; three agricultural implement dealers of $75,000; three dealers in saddles and harnesses of $22,000; one furniture dealer of $8,000; two jewelers of $25,000; four druggists of $30,000; one fancy goods dealer of $6,000; and one confectioner of $7,000. Smith & Smith, and H. & C. S. Lowe, news dealers and retailers of books and stationery, sell $26,000 worth of goods yearly. This gives a total of fifty-eight dealers doing business of $1,010,000 a year.

To complete the business showing, we add the railroad shipments from Ionia during the year 1877, from figures furnished by officers of the railroad companies. During the year there were shipped by the Detroit and Milwaukee road 100,000 pounds of wool, 40,000 bushels of wheat, 800 bushels of barley, 75,000 pounds of fresh pork, 500 barrels of flour, 500,000 pounds of live stock, 400,000 pounds of staves. During the same time there were shipped by the Detroit, Lansing & Northern railroad 43,140 pounds of wool, 447,020 pounds of live stock, 201,284 pounds of pork, 1,647 barrels of flour, 36,623 pounds of butter, 1,214,150 pounds of building stone and brick, 36,550 bushels of wheat, 73,000 pounds of staves, 75,000 feet of lumber, 67,000 shingles; of agricultural products not mentioned above 1,035,181 pounds. In ordinary years about 3,000 barrels of apples are shipped from this point.

## MANUFACTURES, ETC.

But small space need be given to Ionia's manufacturing interests, as they are very slight. The chief manufacturer is, perhaps, W. H. Vanderheyden, who owns two extensive brick-yards, where most of the light colored brick seen in Ionia buildings was made. He furnished the brick for the Ionia prison, and ships largely to Grand Rapids, Lowell, Lansing, and all the cities and towns in this section of the State. He also manufactures drain tile extensively, and employs from fifty to seventy-five men in the summer.

The Ionia pottery manufactures stoneware and earthen flower jars, turning out from $3,000 to $5,000 worth of work per year. J. H. Kidd, and R. Hearsey run planing mills and sash, door, and blind factories, which employ now fifteen men and turn out $20,000 worth of work yearly. Mr. Kidd's manufacture of fanning mills and milk safes is included in this. Dr. T. Fargo's sawmill here cuts 1,000,000 feet of lumber, and makes $22,000 a year. The Ionia City mills make fifty barrels of flour a day, mainly for home consumption.

Two marble works build $9,000 worth of tombstones, etc., yearly. Four carriage and wagon makers produce $20,000 a year. A small foundry completes the list within the city. A large foundry and machine shop is standing idle on Dexter street.

The Detroit, Lansing & Northern railroad has its machine and repair shops here, in which 125 men find work. The trains of this road are made up here, and 100 train men make their headquarters here in consequence. The company pay 225 men here $15,000 a month, and yet some Ionians say "the road is a curse to the town."

There is a chance in this place for some enterprising manufacturers of wooden wares, as all sorts of woods are easily accessible, and there will be a lot of convicts to work on contracts soon.

### BANKS AND INSURANCE.

The First National bank was organized in March, 1864. It has a paid in capital of $100,000; surplus, $22,000. The Hon. Alonzo Sessions is president, and R. P. Sherman, cashier. Its loans and discounts approximate $150,000; deposits, $70,000.

The Second National bank was organized in 1872; paid in capital, $100,000; surplus, $8,000; circulation, $70,000; deposits, $65,000; loans and discounts, $125,000; George W. Webber, president; Virgil VanVleck, cashier.

Page & Wilson do a private banking business, with a capital of $100,000.

The Farmers' Mutual Fire Insurance Company, of Ionia county, is one of the most successful of its kind. It now has a capital of $6,000,000. Officers: President, Alonzo Sessions; vice president, S. A. Yeomans; treasurer. William Sessions; secretary, Oscar Talcott.

### TWO RAILROADS,

the Detroit & Milwaukee and the Detroit, Lansing & Northern, afford means of communication between Ionia and the outside world. These bring it within 123 miles of Detroit, thirty-seven miles of Lansing, and thirty-four of Grand Rapids, and lay the lumber regions at its feet.

### THE HOTELS.

Ionia's hotels will compare favorably with those found in other places of its size. The Sherman House and the Bailey House are the leading ones. The Sherman is a commodious brick structure, corner of Second and Main streets, convenient to the depots, and in the hands of those who will do the best they know to make things agreeable for their guests.

### THE PRESS.

The Ionia local papers are very well conducted and a credit to the city they represent. We are happy to add that they are well supported.

The Sentinel, a staunch republican sheet was founded May 1, 1866, by J. C. Taylor and T. G. Stevenson. In August, 1867, they bought their democratic rival, the Gazette, edited by the veteran E. R. Powell, now of the Montcalm Herald, and merged it in the Sentinel. Stevenson & Taylor now own and edit the Sentinel, and have called in steam to help them in their growing business. To Mr. Taylor we are especially indebted for aid in collecting material for this sketch. He knows how to greet brother journalists in a strange city and help them along in their work.

The Standard was started at Saranac in 1870 and lived there one year. It was removed to Ionia in 1871, and in 1872 was purchased by J. P. Stevenson. Louis E. Rowley bought an interest in it in 1877, and it is now managed by the firm of Stevenson and Rowley. It is straight democratic, with hard money tendencies, but opposes the National banking system.

### IN THE COUNTRY ROUNDABOUT.

The county is a fine one, rolling land, good soil, well wooded and well watered. Wheat is the staple, but the wool and fruit interests are growing rapidly. It produced a surplus of 1,000,000 bushels of wheat last year. Among the largest farmers are the Hon. N. B. Hayes, member of the House for the eastern district, who has a farm of 1,400 acres in North Plains, seven miles northeast of the city, devoted to wheat and blooded stock; Albert VanVleck, who has 1,400 acres in Ronald, cultivated chiefly in the same interests; and the Hon. Alonzo Sessions, who rules over 800 acres in Berlin, four miles west. Mr. Sessions boasts of having a greater variety of forest trees on his farm than any other in the State can show, and raises wheat and cattle. Other successful farmers are the three English brothers of South Boston, and the three Kelsey brothers of Ionia, who are successful stock breeders. In fruit, George Hosford, with his grapery, one mile south of the city, and N. E. Smith, half a mile north, are best known. The Hon. S. A. Yeomans, member of the House for the western district, has a fine farm of 300 acres one mile west.

The census of 1845 gave the county a population of 5,001; that of 1874 credited it with 28,376.

### IONIA SANDSTONE.

About three miles east of the city, on the Detroit, Lansing & Northern railroad, are quarries where the brown sandstone, which is gaining a reputation as the Ionia sandstone, is found. It has a rich, fine color, which makes it desirable for ornament in connection with brickwork, and it has the strength essential to standing alone in solid masonry. It is used to a considerable extent in Ionia and Grand Rapids, and has satisfactorily stood tests subjecting it to a pressure of 128 tons to the square foot. The railroad company is using it exclusively for its improvements, and has enough on its right of way "for its uses for all time to come," says Supt. Milliken. It is claimed for it that it is equal to the best Ohio sandstone, and can be delivered dressed in Detroit for one-fifth less. There is considerable satisfaction in finding that Michigan has at last found good building stone within her borders. The quarry seems well nigh inexhaustible, and only needs some enterprising capitalist to work it up.

## REPRESENTATIVE MEN.

### *Lieutenant Governor Sessions.*

The Hon. Alonzo Sessions was born in Skaneatles, N. Y., August 4, 1810; enjoyed the ordinary educational advantages of the common school, and began teaching when seventeen years of age. He followed that for a few years, and was clerk for a while in a country store. In 1835 he came to Michigan, and in October of that year walked, with his brother Job, from Detroit to Ionia, by about the same route taken by the Dexter colony. After they left the eastern settlements, they lived on bread and raw pork, which they bought at their last shelter, and slept on the ground under the trees. They picked out their land in the township of Berlin, paddled down to Grand Rapids in a boat, and footed it from there to White Pigeon, where they entered their land at the land office. They had no teams and no money, and set about to get means to improve their farms. Alonzo went to Ohio to teach, and his brother went to work on a farm. In June, 1835, they returned to Berlin.

In 1837 Alonzo married Miss Celia Dexter, daughter of the leader of Ionia's band of pioneers. He began to serve his neighbors as justice of the peace in 1836; was elected supervisor in 1838, an office he has filled seventeen years, eight of which he was chairman of the board. He was elected sheriff of the county on the Whig ticket in 1840; representative in the State legislature as a Republican in 1856, and was re-elected twice. In 1862 President Lincoln appointed him assessor of internal revenue for the western district of Michigan, which position he held until retired by President Johnson in 1866. He was a presidential elector in 1872, and was elected lieutenant governor of the State. He was one of the first directors of the first national bank of Ionia, and has been its president since 1866. He gives his chief attention now to his farm of 800 acres, four miles west of the city, in which he takes an honest pride, as the fruit of a great deal of honest, hard work, guided by good business talent.

### *Hon. O. Tower.*

The Hon. Osmond Tower first saw the light in the old Bay State, and left his native county of Hampshire in his early manhood to hunt fortune in Michigan. He settled at Ionia in 1835, and worked several years at the carpenter's trade, when he engaged in the manufacture of fanning mills and milk safes, and finally in the hardware business, in which he still continues. As is usual his neighbors first called him into public life in the capacity of supervisor. He next served a term as county treasurer. He went to the State senate in 1858 as a Republican, and was re-elected in 1860. When the United States court for the western district of Michigan was organized, he was appointed first marshal of the district. He held the position until invited to join the celebrated Bread and Butter Brigade organized by Andrew Johnson. He was on a sick bed when he received the famous "Randall Circular;" but immediately wrote a caustic and defiant reply to the document and gave it to the press. Then his head dropped into the basket. He has done much to develop Ionia, and has a very tangible material reward.

### *The Hon. Frederick Hall.*

Another gentleman who is prominent in this section is the Hon. Frederick Hall. He hails from the Green Mountain State, and came to Ionia at an early day, with very little money in his pocket. Speculation in pine lands has done its work, and he is now one of the wealthiest men in the county. He began to serve the county in 1843 as register of deeds, and was for a time register of the land office. In 1850 he was elected representative in the State Legislature. The road to political preferment in Ionia county is not owned by the democratic party, and having espoused its cause Mr. Hall, as a leading man, has spent his political life chiefly in bearing the brunt of its burdens and defeats. He was its candidate for Lieutenant Governor four years ago, and previous to that went over the course for it once in the race for congress. He is a big owner of pine lands, to the management of which and dealing in real estate he now gives his attention.

### *The Hon. Hampton Rich.*

There is no man in Ionia better known throughout the State than the Hon. Hampton Rich, and probably no man in the city has done more for its advancement or more and better work. He was born in Shoreham, Addison county, Vermont, December 1, 1815, and was named for General Wade Hampton, of Virginia, under whom his father served as an officer in the war of 1812. His parents moved to St. Lawrence county, New York, in his early childhood, and soon after into Canada, opposite Ogdensburg. Mr. Rich lived there until he came to Ionia in July, 1837. He has been engaged in mercantile business most of the time since that date. He served several years as justice of the peace and two terms as county clerk, and held several township, village and city offices. He was elected to the State Senate in 1866 and again in 1868. While serving in that capacity he perfected an act for building the Ionia and Lansing Railroad, organized the company, was elected its president, and served in that capacity until the road was built from Lansing to Greenville, and was largely instrumental in getting the railroad shops located at Ionia, which location, as we have elsewhere shown, was a great boon to the place. His connection with the State House of Correction has been treated of already. He has led the work about it from its inception, and a large portion of the credit for its excellent condition must be given him. He was president of the city school board when the Union school building was erected and superintended the work, and also adopted the plans for the Methodist church and superintended its construction. In short, every undertaking for the growth and prosperity of the city of his adoption has been furthered by his cordial work and liberal purse. If we have spoken a little warmly of him in this sketch, charge it to his fame in his own country. A disinterested citizen says: "Rich has done more for Ionia's material growth and prosperity than any other one man."

## MEMORIAL REPORT.

BY H. H. RICH.

February 4, 1880.

The following persons, among the pioneers of the Territory and State of Michigan, have passed away since the last annual meeting of the State Pioneer Society:

John Tompkins, Esq., died September 27, 1879, aged 73 years; settled in Ionia in 1836.

Mrs. John E. Morrison, Sen., died January 8, 1880. Settled in Ionia county in 1835.

Mrs. Sally Crawford, wife of Robert Crawford, Esq., died January 14, 1880, aged 81 years and 5 months; settled in Oakland county in March, 1825; moved to and settled in Shiawassee county in 1836; thence to Lyons, Ionia county, in 1857.

Mrs. Polly W. Rosecrantz, died January 17, 1880, aged 86 years and 9 months; settled in Ionia county in 1840.

## JACKSON COUNTY.

### MEETING OF THE STATE SOCIETY WITH THE JACKSON COUNTY PIONEER SOCIETY.

The meeting at Jackson in connection with the Jackson County Pioneer Society June 18, 1879 was largely attended, and the proceedings throughout were of a highly interesting character. The weather was sunny and pleasant and the grassy grounds, shaded by the thick foliage of the over-arching trees, seemed never more delightful than during the bright and genial hours that marked this occasion.

Floral hall, in which refreshments were served, was tastefully decorated. Along the aisles on either side of the central platform the double row of pillars supporting the roof were trimmed with evergreen, just above which small flags depended, and the effect of the long and regular array of these miniature banners down the entire length of the hall was highly ornamental. The middle space below the skylight was hung with large flags, and festooned with red and blue bunting. The tables, eighteen or twenty in number, were set in the north end of the building. Their snowy coverings were looped with sprigs of pine and cedar, and surmounted with baskets and vases of fresh and lovely flowers. The contrast of the emerald and the crimson and innumerable dyes of these floral decorations with the snowy linen beneath them, was of course pleasant to the eye, and the long rows of tables thus garnished were a most picturesque feature of the hall. At the front entrance was a banner bearing the words, "Welcome Pioneers."

About eleven o'clock the pioneers and a large crowd of people, headed by the C. C. C. band, marched from Floral hall to the speaker's stand in the front part of the grounds, to witness the opening exercises, and listen to the address of welcome by Judge Johnson, and to such other addresses as might be made.

After the playing of "Auld Lang Syne" by the band, Colonel M. Shoemaker, president of the society, introduced the Rev. Ira C. Billman, who offered up an eloquent and appropriate prayer. Judge David Johnson of this city, was then presented, who delivered the following address of welcome:

*Pioneers of Michigan:*

I am instructed by the Pioneers of this county, whom you have honored this day by your presence at their little social gathering, to bid you a hearty welcome. The few surviving men and women who came to this county fifty years ago or thereabouts, to find for themselves a home, greet you kindly and cordially. The associations of those days recall to their minds many reminiscences of the past, some bright and pleasant, some dark and gloomy. They in common with you endured the toils and privations incident to the settlement of a new country. They in common with you have enjoyed the blessings of a kind Providence in the acquisition of pleasant homes in a delightful country.

The bread that was thrown upon the waters in that day has returned to them more bountifully than the heart can express.

"The Lord has brought us into a goodly land, a land of brooks, of waters, of fountains and depths that spring out of valleys and hills. A land of wheat and barley and wines. A land wherein thou shalt eat bread without scarceness. A land whose stones are iron, and out of whose hills thou mayest dig brass."

Had the inspired prophet who was describing to his people the land of Canaan seen and surveyed Michigan, he could not have described it more happily. He however gave them warning that the enjoyment of the gift of so fine a country was upon one condition, and that condition was that they should not forget the Lord their God, who had brought them up out of the land of Egypt from the house of bondage, and he testified unto them that in the day they should forget their dependence on him they should surely perish.

I think it is a law of our being which stamps itself indelibly upon our minds and consciences that every gift of Providence is held and enjoyed upon the same condition. For to forget our dependence is to forget our obligations; and to forget our obligation is to forget everything that characterizes humanity. The penalty falls upon nations and individuals alike.

But is is not worth our while to indulge in any fears upon this subject, for there is another law equally potent and certain, and that law is the law of progress. The world is growing better and has been growing better day by day since man began to worship the sun as the image of his maker, and for long ages before that time. I know that among a certain class it is a common thing to say, and they believe what they say, that the present aspect of the moral condition of the world is gloomy enough; and they will talk to you about the golden age when men were virtuous and happy. There never was a golden age. The whole thing is a myth, a conception entertained only by the ignorant and uninstructed.

But there was a stone age in the early period of the world, and it was an age of suffering, an age of barbarism, an age when poor human nature groped its way in the dark caves of the earth, living on such fruits as they could gather and on the raw flesh of such beasts as they could conquer. That is the golden age that our progenitors enjoyed, and the only one.

This is not particularly a delightful picture of the condition of our ancestors, but it is well understood what the truth is, and if we do understand it we shall understand that in no age of the world has man retrograded.

History, tradition and everything that can throw any light upon the past teaches us that the law of human life is the law of progress. Man has always been advancing. He has already advanced from a low degraded condition up to a point of civilization at which we now find him. This process of advancement is the bright promise of the future. It will raise us to a point in the moral scale where crime will be impossible.

To prove this proposition to be true, that is, that we are advancing into a higher life, let us for a moment review the history of the past. Two thousand years ago, and in all prior ages, nations at war made no prisoners, with very few exceptions. The Canaanites were extirpated as a nation, men, women and children, by the Israelites. Samuel, their prophet, hewed down Agog in the presence of his king, who had probably saved him as a trophy of his victory. And it must be remembered that these were the chosen people of God, and alone worthy of His care and protection.

The Medes, the Persians, the Assyrians, Chaldeans and other Asiatic nations did the same thing. There was a noble exception to this general rule to be noted in a single instance. It was the captivity of the Jews by the Babylonians. They carried with them not only the men but the women and children, who were not very profitable as slaves; but whether it was because of the humanity of the victors, or because of their belief that their captives were not fit to die is a problem which the history of the times has not solved.

The Greeks and Romans showed the same brutal indifference to life, the same low standard of humanity. Some of the most sanguinary wars on record were among and between the Greeks themselves. They rarely saved prisoners except for slaves. Rome exhibited more legislative ability, and when she crushed a nation she took it into her own embraces, but oftentimes it was the embrace of death. All her prisoners, however, were saved only for slavery or gladiatorial exhibitions; and these exhibitions were typical of the morals of the most advanced nation of the ancient world.

The middle ages represented but a little better state of public morals. The vast Roman empire had crumbled to pieces of its own weight, and it was succeeded by a great many petty governments, more or less liberal, but generally arbitrary and despotic. They were constantly at war with each other. The only organization during that whole period that acted upon any consistent and well defined policy was the church. She encouraged these wars when it was for her interest to do so, but not otherwise, and by a wonderful adaption to the cruel condition of northern Europe she in time acquired a complete spiritual dominion over the Christian world; and when she felt by the union of the crown and tiara, the whole power of Europe in her grasp, she herself became a persecutor; but her persecution was in accordance with the spirit of the age.

The world must be saved or damned. It was the function of the church to save, and the means she resorted to, to effect that object, is now universally condemned by all enlightened nations.

What better evidence can we have that our conception of what is right and wrong is laying its foundation deep in the human heart and which in the end will regenerate all mankind. But perhaps I am following this subject to a tedious length, but I do insist that the world is making rapid advances in its conception of truth, justice and mercy, and from this line I will not swerve one jot or tittle, for upon the truth of the proposition hang all our hopes of the future, and I do believe that the Infinite in His wisdom has created man for some purpose which he has not yet reached, that he has a glorious destiny to which he is slowly but certainly advancing.

Now allow me to occupy a moment's time in calling your attention to the material changes which have taken place in our day and generation. Assuming the fact that some of us have lived out the number of days allotted to man, to such I can say that we have seen changes more marked and more significant in their results than all the generations of men before us. I will only allude to a few leading facts which have so largely contributed to effect these changes, leaving you to complete and fill up the picture at your own leisure.

Seventy years ago, nay sixty, we plowed our ground with a wooden plow. We might say without any very great departure from the truth, that we stirred the ground with a wooden stick. We sowed our wheat broadcast; we cut it with a sickle; we threshed with a flail and cleaned it with a corn fan, and when we got a bag filled we put it on the back of a horse and put a boy on top of the bag and sent him to mill. How we do these things now I need not tell you, for you already know. You know also the thousand and one improvements which have been made in the mechanical departments. To write a list of them would take days; to write a brief description of them would take years. I cannot, however, let the opportunity pass without calling your attention to the subject of electricity and to heat expansion, or the power of steam—two forces of nature which have been mainly utilized in our day. When we use the word electricity we have a vague idea of a certain mysterious imponderable indefinable something, but we know nothing of its nature; we have learned how to generate it, and to a certain extent how to control it; we know it passes through metallic substances with wonderful rapidity, and through some substances it will not pass at all. It was from 1752, when Franklin drew it from the clouds, for almost a century a plaything among the scientific men of the day. In 1844, and about the time that little man, James K. Polk, was nominated to the presidency, it became utilized by our own countryman, S. F. B. Morse, who immortalized himself by giving to a dead world a living messenger, which was to change its destiny. We now send messages to all parts of the world with the speed of thought and with it we talk and sing to our neighbors.

The steam engine is of slower growth. The utilization of steam power cannot be justly given to any one man. James Watt did much to improve the engine a hundred years ago. Robert Fulton first applied it to the propulsion of water crafts in 1807, and George Stephenson to the locomotive in 1829. The locomotive was first used in this country in 1830. It soon came into general use as a mechanical power, and the steam engines now in use in this country for manufacturing purposes alone, are, it is said, performing the labor of fifty million men. The locomotives on the great thoroughfares from the Atlantic to the Pacific are performing an amount of work exceeding the capacity of all the horses in the world. The immensity of this work is beyond all calculation, yet it has just commenced. We can hardly comprehend what a hundred years will accomplish.

This is the way the world is progressing; this is the way it is moving, and he who does not fall into the ranks and move on with it will surely be trodden under foot. And the old nations of the world which have been sleeping for ages, must, like Rip Van Winkle, wake up and march on with it also or be crushed out of existence.

And now the question may be pertinently put, but none can answer it, if we do continue our march onwards and upwards, at what haven shall we arrive?

We may ponder on this, for it is the great problem of life and eternity too, but it will not be solved by this generation. But we can think, and the power to do so is the best gift of God. But I must bring my remarks to a close.

You have my thanks for your attention and my best wishes for your future welfare.

Judge Johnson was applauded on taking his seat, and was followed by Col. Shoemaker, who said:

*Ladies and Gentlemen of the Pioneer Society of Jackson County:*

It is now two years since there has been a meeting of this society. In the meanwhile there has been an active interest taken in all matters relating to the early history of the State in other counties, and by the State Pioneer Society.

I would recommend that hereafter there be held two meetings in each and every year, as provided in the constitution of the society—a winter meeting for the transaction of business, and a summer meeting for social intercourse.

The winter meeting should not be neglected, as the constitution provides that the officers of the society shall then be elected, and the general businss of the society transacted.

The summer meeting is of still greater importance. That should be, in every respect, a social reunion, which every pioneer in the county, and every son and daughter of a pioneer, should attend to renew old acquaintances and make new ones, so that old and young may feel that those are not becoming estranged who should be bound to each other by ties as strong as that of blood or kindred.

The relentless scythe of time is rapidly mowing down the ranks of those who first encountered the hardships and privations, and enjoyed the excitements peculiar to pioneer life, and their sons and daughters should see to it that their names are not buried in oblivion. Every township should have its historian, and a correct history should be written, not only of the first settlement of every township, but also, and more particularly, a brief biography of the first pioneers, giving their lives in full, as well before they came to Michigan, as up to the time of their death, or to the present time of living.

These sketches will add to the interest of our meetings, and furnish material of the most reliable kind for the history of the first settlement of the State. If this is much longer delayed, a large amount of knowledge that can now be obtained will be lost by the death of the few remaining pioneers, who, fifty years ago, stuck their stakes in Jackson county.

We have now something from the townships of Leoni, Grass Lake, and Pulaski, and a few personal sketches of pioneers, but our record is a meager one, and should no longer be neglected. There is now existing ample material for a full history of the first settlement of each township, and for the biography of most of the first settlers, and the preparation of it should no longer be neglected. The sons and daughters of our pioneers should see to it that the record is made and given to the society, so that it may be preserved.

As there was no meeting of the society in the winter, it is now incumbent upon the members to elect officers to act until the next meeting of the society. There should also be provision made for proper books, in which may be placed such histories and biographies as are now in possession of the society, and also those which may hereafter be prepared and presented to it.

There are many members of the society who have but an imperfect record upon its books. It is very desirable that all such should be completed, and members are requested to examine the membership book, and those who have not done so should give the secretary the information necessary to enable him to make their record complete.

The necrology contains not only the names of the members of this society who have gone before us since our last meeting, but also of all persons, so far as can be ascertained, who, at the time of their death, were over sixty years of age, as being entitled to this record; for, if they were not pioneers themselves, they have followed their children or friends, and have spent their last days in this county. I regard all such as entitled to the notice of the society; and in this connection I wish to say that it should be a rule of the society that immediately upon the death of a member, the president and secretary should be notified, and a notice at once published by them asking all members of the society, who can possibly do so, to attend the funeral. No member ought to be allowed to go to his final resting place without this tribute of respect being paid to his memory.

The society is largely indebted to many outside of its organization for their efforts to make this meeting successful and agreeable. This applies to many, in all parts of the county, who have come forward and assisted its members in every possible manner. The daily papers of the city, the Patriot and the Citizen, have generously granted the free use of their columns to give the action of the society the necessary publicity. The Michigan Central, its leased lines, the Fort Wayne, Jackson & Saginaw; and the Lake Shore & Michigan Southern railroads have, with commendable liberality, giving reduced fare from all points in this State on their roads.

To the ladies who have so kindly and so thoroughly given their invaluable aid, is the gratitude of the society particularly due. They have proved themselves worthy wives and daughters of pioneer husbands and fathers. The work done by them is above all praise.

To each and all the society returns its thanks for all favors received, and gratefully acknowledges the many acts of kindness extended to it in the effort made to bring together the pioneers of the county and the State.

All of which is respectfully submitted.

M. SHOEMAKER, *President.*

H. H. BINGHAM, *Secretary.*
Jackson, Mich., June 18, 1879.

Gen. J. W. Brown of Tecumseh, a veteran of eighty-seven years, and one of the heroes of the Black Hawk war, in which he commanded all the troops of the Northwest, was introduced and made a short speech. He recounted his personal experience as a pioneer and gave a short sketch of his early life.

The band played "Hold the Fort" and "Sweet Bye and Bye" in their best manner.

Mrs. N. H. Pierce of Ann Arbor appeared on the stand, and with a clear, distinct voice read the following poem, entitled

### THE BRAVE PIONEER.

"On to the West!" was the earnest cry
Of our people some fifty years ago.
The people were many, and labor was scarce,
And industry crowded our busy marts,
And the eastern markets were glutted and slow.
On to the land where the forests wild
Were standing so lonely with outstretched arms.
The lakes and rivers were broad and free,
And all untrammeled in their rush and flow,
And waiting of human use to be;
There were plains untilled, and mills and factories unbuilt,
And thousands of chances for hearts of steel
To come and appropriate, till and build,
And open a way for humanity's weal.
There were richest mines all unexplored;
There were leagues of iron and salt and coal,
The greatest of blessings on earth to man,
And source of comfort and wealth untold;
It only needed the stalwart arm,
The iron nerve, and the flinty will,
To push straight on, to dig and delve,
And our beautiful State with prosperity fill.
And so, on they come! and the westering trains

Of the emigrant wagons white and slow,
Were circling around hill tops or winding through plains,
Undaunted by menace of half concealed foe,
They startled the deer in their ambushes wild,
As still moving onward the invaders filed;
Dark savages peered at the unwonted sight,
And forgot to resist or seek safety in flight;
But a garden of sweets to the venturous band
Was this wild territory, so new yet so grand.
There were acres of wild flowers of every hue;
Springs, rivers, and landscapes, most charming to view;
There were silvery lakelets with fine, sandy beaches,
And forests of timber with broad, sunny reaches;
There were plaster and lime deeply bedded in earth,
Which have borne no mean part in enhancing our worth;
There were meadows of wild grass, grapes, and wild honey,
And nothing was wanting, indeed, except money;
But the millions still buried in mines and in land,
Was now only waiting the engineer's hand
To prove us enriched with this product unfurled,
Which soon would astonish the rest of the world!
"Seekest thou?" said a voice to the brave pioneer,
"A beautiful Peninsula? Behold it is here!"
And soon through the forest the silence he breaks
With the firm, ringing blows of the engineer's axe,
And humble log cabins soon dotted the plains,
And the spirit of civilization now reigns.
And gardens and orchards next brighten the way,
And deep, tangled wildwoods soon vanish away,
And broad fields of grain with their tassels of gold
Soon laugh in the sunlight, a treasure unfold;
And soon did the wilderness bloom like the rose,
Prosperity followed, their spirits arose;
All nature, exulting, cries out with a cheer;
"Long life and success to the brave Pioneer!"

The years have rolled on, and the young head is old,
And the heart warm and hopeful is fast growing cold,
And the hand once so nimble has finished its toil,
For the work of the laborer in tilling the soil
Has fallen to others still younger in years,
Who walk in the wake of the old Pioneers.
Now behold what a change to the eyes of those
Who were first to lead in the onward way;
Great forests are felled and rivers are bridged,
And towns and cities now stand this day;
All over the country like network spread,
The rail and telegraph routes now lay.
And eager, and longing, and wishing for more,
Our youths are still seeking our western shore,
And then when the uttermost verge is found,
They'll on to the east and the world go round.
Now, looking back through the vanished years,
We're well repaid for our toil and pain;
The trials are over of the Pioneers,
But their grand achievements still remain;
And better facilities none can find,
In search of improvements in morals and mind.

Judge Witter J. Baxter of Jonesville was introduced. He said he was a pioneer rather by virtue of his gray hairs than because of any pioneer work he had ever done. He said he had witnessed the development and growth of the great State of Michigan with pride, and adverted in glowing terms to its religious and moral standing, to its educational advantages, and its political rights and privileges. He declared that she stood among the first in the galaxy of States; and in the course of his remarks made eulogistic allusions to the nation at large. He retired amid enthusiastic applause.

Mr. B. F. Eggleston of this city, followed with the ballad, "Forty Years Ago," which he sang in the happiest manner, and was rewarded by the attention and the applause of the assembly.

Mr. Harrington Hendee of Blackman, read a poem, which we regret we have not space to reproduce.

Hon. Jonathan M. Shearer of Wayne was introduced. He is a genuine gentleman of the old school, and wore his silver hair in a cluster of curls behind, tied with a black ribbon. His speech, which was extemporaneous, was appropriate to the occasion and well received. At the close he sang a song entitled "The Down Hill of Life," with a good deal of spirit. His age is eighty-eight years. His aged but excellent wife was also on the ground. They have been residents of the State for fifty years.

F. A. Dewey, president of the Lenawee Pioneer Society, was presented and made a brief speech. Mr. D., who is sixty-eight years of age, was a drum major under General Brown in the Black Hawk war. He has lived in Lenawee county fifty years, and judging from his appearance has a quarter of a century's lease of life before him.

The president of the society read the following letters from prominent gentlemen who found it impossible to attend the reunion of the society:

### FROM GOVERNOR CROSWELL.

ADRIAN, *June 17, 1879.*

*Hon. M. Shoemaker, Jackson, Michigan:*

MY DEAR COLONEL: I have your kind favor of yesterday, and gratefully thank you for the courtesy and hospitality you proffer. I should like very much to attend the meeting of Pioneers to take place in your city to-morow, but other engagements make it absolutely impossible for me to do so.

Yours very truly, CHARLES M. CROSWELL.

### FROM THOMAS B. CHURCH.

GRAND RAPIDS, *June 16, 1879.*

*Hon. M. Shoemaker:*

I received your postal of invitation. Having resided in your State since 1843, and visited it during several preceding years, I am within the range of your gun. But I am unable to accept and attend, much to my regret. I have such vivid and also pleasant recollections of the old stage travel through your county; the abounding hospitality of the Bothwell tavern, and of many of your pioneer citizens, that I should, I know, very much enjoy myself, and might contribute to the amusement, at least, of others. Yours, etc., THOS. B. CHURCH.

### FROM J. LOGAN CHIPMAN.

*Hon. H. H. Bingham, Secretary Jackson Pioneer Society, Jackson, Mich.:*

MY DEAR SIR: I have received your card of invitation to the County Pioneer meeting on the fiftieth anniversary of the first settlement of Jackson county. The occasion will be one of great interest. To behold in your beautiful city the wondrous growth of fifty years would be alike pleasant and profitable; but my judicial duties will prevent my presence. Born in Michigan in 1830, I am nearly as old as the event you propose to celebrate and have witnessed the transformation of our beloved State from a wilderness to the home of a wealthy and great population. I am glad that our people commemorate the pioneers of their homes and prosperity, the fathers and mothers from whom communities ought to be proud to descend. They stamped intelligence and enterprise upon our business; love and household faith upon our families. Imbued with high personal honor, they infused a spirit of integrity into all our public institutions, which we to-day bless with pride, and preserve as a heritage of State and municipal purity. Michigan, great in territory and varied in resources, was a fitting home for their energy and virtue. Patriotic in war, prosperous in peace, fulfilling her obligations so exactly that she is rich in the respect of the world. She is worthy of the free men who founded her and of the free men who dwell in comfort and security within her borders.

To commemorate the good men of the past is to insure good men in the future. the praise we render to the worthies who have gone before is only gratitude for the blessings we enjoy now. So let us ungrudgingly do honor to our pioneers, the rough men, the strong men, above all the true men, whose hands set Michigan amid the stars of the Union. Yours truly,

J. LOGAN CHIPMAN.

DETROIT, June 5, 1879.

FROM LEVI BISHOP.

DETROIT, *June 1, 1879.*

*Hon. M. Shoemaker:*

I am engaged for Cassopolis on June 18, so I shall not be able to accept your polite invitation for that day. Long life, health and happiness to the pioneers of Jackson county. Yours, &c.,

LEVI BISHOP.

A letter of extreme length was also received from Wm. H. Cross.

The band played the inspiring air, "Hail Columbia," after which the assemblage adjourned for dinner. Upon arriving at the Floral hall the band gave a fine rendition of Lew Hoffman's "Caledonian Quickstep," while the tables were being filled by men and women with silvery heads but with faces beaming with good will and happiness.

The tables were loaded not only with substantial fare, but with luxuries of every kind. Many of the dishes were ornamented with floral wreaths, and it probably does no violence to the fact to sav that there was little about those richly freighted tables to remind the genial pioneers of their modest bills of fare in the days when the country was new and bacon and hominy were standard articles of diet. Two hundred and forty-two persons sat down to dinner, and it was estimated that not less than twelve hundred partook of the sumptuous abundance which had been provided for the occasion. The tables were several times refilled, and we believe of all the multitude that swarmed into Floral hall very few went away unrefreshed. The contributions had been generous and they were right royally dispensed, not only to the pioneers but to the crowd generally.

After dinner the speaker's stand again became the center of attraction. After music by the band, the daughter of Mrs. M. W. Clapp read a succinct history of the latter's pioneer life. In 1837 her husband bought three eighties in Hanover township, upon which she has ever since resided. Her age is 75 years.

Mr. Henry Little, of Kalamazoo, a hale and hearty man of 83 years, read an address entitled "Jacksonburg and Jackson County in 1831 and 1879." Mr. L. made a point by the assertion that "Michigan has better laws and more of them than any other State."

The following reminiscences of pioneer life were presented by Capt. Marvin Dorrill, of this city:

I left Herkimer county, New York, in company with Allen Bennett, Sen., in March 1833. Mr. Bennett came as far as Buffalo, went aboard the steamboat, but sudden changed his mind and returned. I came on to Detroit and there met an acquaintance who traveled with me west. We took the stage and reached Ann Arbor the first day, Jackson the second and Marshall the third day. We then took our knapsacks, traveling westward to Gull Prairie. At Battle Creek there was but one house. We reached Gull Prairie the fourth day and started thence to Grand Rapids in company with a pioneer who was moving thither with his family, and who carried our luggage. We stopped the first day long enough before night to build a bough house of brush, having brush without leaves for our bed and for covering. On the morning of the second day our pioneer, whose team was a yoke of oxen and a single horse, found his horse missing. I started out with him to look for the horse, but after a search, and not finding him, went on to Grand Rapids, and from thence to Ionia. On our way to Ionia we came across our friend who had lost the horse, who himself had been lost and had wandered in the woods seven days. During our travels we camped in the woods or open prairie, wherever night overtook us. My valise was my pillow and a camlet cloak my covering, and in the absence of water we washed our hands in the dew of the grass. During our travels looking for land on which to make a home we were often for long distances without water, and one time dug with our hands a hollow place on the border of a marsh, which filled with water, and muddy as it was it tasted sweet, using an egg shell for a cup. We traveled through Ionia, Clinton, Shiawassee and Oakland counties to Detroit, occupying in our trip through the State over four weeks. I located some government land near Lyons, Ionia county, and returned to Herkimer county, New York.

In the spring of 1837 I started with my family and effects for Michigan, to make a permanent settlement. I drove a team through Canada and reached Jackson April 12, having been four weeks on the journey. We remained in Jackson a few weeks and then went on to my farm in Rives, about ten miles north of the city. For the next ten years we went through all the hardships and privations of a pioneer life. We then moved to the city and resided four years, again upon the farm a few years, and for the last fifteen years in the city.

In the retrospect I have found a great source of enjoyment, whether as a pioneer or otherwise, in an active, busy life.

MARVIN DORRILL.

JACKSON, June 17, 1879.

Mr. Eugene Pringle, of this city made a most eloquent address, in which he urged the necessity of preserving the local history of this county and of all the counties in the State. He said those who were to come after us would not understand the philosophy by which the civilization they will inherit was moulded unless they were made cognizant of the early history of the country. He said the prosperity we enjoyed received impetus from the pioneers who braved every danger and laid the foundations here for thousands of pleasant and happy homes.

H. Bishop, of Kalamazoo, read a paper urging the advisability of preserving all attainable records of the hardy pioneers who came to Michigan when it was a wilderness and made it to bloom with widespread fruitful fields.

Dr. Robinson read a poem abounding in local allusions and pleasant personal references, which was exceedingly well received. Hon. James C. Wood made the closing address, which was made up of anecdote and personal recollection.

The following resolution presented by Morgan Case passed unanimously:

*Resolved*, That the thanks of this city be and they are hereby tendered to the ladies for the bounteous banquet which they have prepared here to-day; and for the ornamenting of the hall, and their kind and successful efforts in entertaining the society and its friends.

This recognition of the service rendered by the ladies was merited and fully deserved. They labored hard to make the occasion what it was, a big success; and all united in according them the praise to which they were entitled. Finally all united in singing the following hymn which was the signal for adjourning:

## JACKSON COUNTY PIONEER ANTHEM.

COMPOSED BY LEVI BISHOP.

*Tune, "Old Hundred."*

Let us aloud our voices raise,
To God above in song of praise;
Let every field and forest high,
Send up the anthem to the sky.

As Moses with the chosen band,
From Pisgah saw the promised land,
So we beheld, from land afar,
Our western home—our morning star.

We early came—a hardy few,
Severe privations then we knew,
We bore, along the weary way,
The heat and burden of the day.

And sorrow often met us here;
And often fell the mourner's tear;
For many sleep,—to future born;
In hope they wait the final morn.

And yet were comforts here in store,
A plenty grew,—enough and more.
The lighter pleasures care beguiled,
The social and the moral smiled.

Then let us now our anthem raise,
In one loud choral song of praise;
Let earth salute the heavenly Host,
The Father, Son, and Holy Ghost.
AMEN, AMEN.

There were but few comparatively aged persons present, although many who had been in the county from forty to fifty years. Everything passed off delightfully, the best of feeling prevailed, and the president's suggestion that these reunions should hereafter be held annually, seemed, after the day's experience, to meet with popular favor.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH OF DAVID ADAMS OF TOMPKINS, AND SUNDRY PARTICULARS CONCERNING OTHER AGED PEOPLE.

It was announced, that since the last meeting of the society death had removed one of our oldest settlers, and honored member and respected citizen, the Hon. David Adams of Tompkins. His biographer writes: He was one of the early settlers in the northwestern portion of Jackson county, where he located, in Tompkins, in the spring of 1835. At that time, in that now prosperous township, there were but a handful of people, and Mr. Adams' nearest neighbors were Avon Lyon, who lived half a mile away, Joseph Wade, one mile, Deacon Townley, two miles. Mr. Adams, J. M. Jameson, Henry Hecox, and D. W. Parshal came into the county together and located lands for future homes. Adams and Jameson were the only ones of the company who had means enough to move their families, and the following fall they made clearings and put up homes. Jameson kept "bachelor's hall," and the next summer Adams' family came on via the Erie canal to Buffalo, whence they took steamboat to Detroit. From the latter place they were conveyed to their future home in a wagon; a three days' journey over rough logways and through almost bottomless marshes, with mosquitoes swarming about them in clouds. They often got "stuck" in the swales, when they were forced to unhitch and double teams to pull them out. One of the drivers on this trip declared that "his team went in out of sight, but he kept whipping and halloing at the hole, and they eventually came out all right on the other side."

Of the many discouragements and hardships of those early days it is unnecessary to speak, as the old settlers have had experience in that direction and know all about them, while the younger generation could not realize how great they were, even if told them. But those early days were not without their pleasures of a social nature. The oxen would be yoked to the large, lumbering ox-sled,—there were no horses in those days,—straw would be used to sit upon, and a buffalo robe or a few bed quilts employed to wrap the women and children, and off would start a family to spend the day or evening at a neighbor's, taking other families on the way along with them. There were no broadcloths, no silks, no fuss in the way of preparation. They were ready at a moment's warning; there was no necessity to notify any one, as they were every day alike, and "went just as they were" as regarded their personal outfits. Nor was it deemed necessary to appraise the family they intended visiting that they were coming, as "pot luck" was the word in those days, there being no luxuries to offer. What was lacking in high living was made up in good feeling. All went in for a good time generally, singing, dancing, telling stories and merry-making; and often an entire night would be thus spent, as it was difficult, seemingly, for the settlers to separate early when they came together on such occasions. They were "hale fellows well met," and ready with a helping hand in time of need.

Mr. Adams was thrown upon his own resources at an early age. While a boy he learned the shoemaking trade, and later learned the jeweler's trade—in the days when spoons were made by hand. He located and opened a shop in Lyons, N. Y., where he became acquainted with and married Hannah Perrine, who proved to be a "help-meet" indeed, cheering and assisting in every womanly way to make their home bright and happy. She was noted for never complaining, but always making the best of everything as it came. In his younger days he was one of those generous, whole-souled men to whom a dollar's worth of fun was worth five dollars in cash any time; consequently he was not overburdened with this world's goods. He often remarked if he hadn't married a prudent wife that he probably would never have laid up anything. When he came west he was not rich, but had enough to keep the wolf from his own door, and some to help his less prosperous neighbors; for he was no niggard, but generous to a fault, often putting himself out to accommodate a friend. He never turned any away hungry from his door. His "latchstring" was always out. His unvarying price for a meal was "fourteen dollars." He was always an earnest politician. He and T. E. Gidley, with a few others of like political faith, met at Slab City, a little west of where Parma now stands, and organized the old whig party in this county. He stayed in that party until it went to pieces, or was merged into the republican party, of which he was an earnest worker. In the earlier days the circuit court consisted of a judge and two associates. Mr. Adams was one of the associates, hence his title of "Judge." In "Woodbridge and Reform" times he was appointed agent of the State prison, then in its infancy, which office he held two years, when the political complexion of the State changed, and he was rotated out for another, returning to his farm. Shortly after this time he joined the M. E. church, of which he remained an earnest and consistent member, every ready with his talent, time, and money to help on the cause he espoused. His temperament was of the nervous, sanguine order, which always made him look on the bright side of events, consequently he was nearly always cheerful and happy, with a good word for all. Although an earnest Christian, he was no bigot. His charity was large, always contending that there was much more good than evil in man. He had many warm friends and but few enemies. The latter never questioned his honesty of purpose nor the purity of his intentions.

When Tompkins was set off as a separate township, some of the townsmen wished to name it for him, but he modestly fell in with the suggestion of Col. R. H. Anderson to have it named for Hon. D. D. Tompkins of New York, of whom he was a great admirer. He built the first farm barn in the township. He was buried the first of March, 1879, in the quiet little grave-yard that he had helped to purchase and beautify. After a long and useful life of seventy-nine years and six months, he has passed peacefully away, leaving, besides his beloved wife, two sons, G. P. and W. H., two daughters, Mrs. G. J. Townley and Mrs. J. Pope; also ten grand-children and three great grand-children, all now living in this county. His death was the first in the family for over forty-seven years. Thus lived and died a good man. Would that there were many more like him.

The following note was received from Isaac Moffatt, one of Michigan's oldest pioneers:

KALAMAZOO, *June 7, 1879.*

*Hon. M. Shoemaker:*

Invitation to Jackson County Pioneer Society reunion received. Would be glad to be with you, but age and infirmities prevent. Don't let the world stop on account of my absence. Hope you will have a good time.

ISAAC MOFFATT, aged 88 years.

At the celebration Wednesday was Mrs. Catharine Hawley, also of Kalamazoo, whose age is 83. She has been a resident of that county for fifty-four years.

J. C. Holmes, of Detroit, where he has lived forty-five years, was also on the ground. His present age is 72, and he pronounced our celebration one of the best he ever attended.

Among others present may be mentioned Judge Witter J. Baxter, of Jonesville, aged 60, and a resident of Michigan for forty-five years; Mrs. A. L. Bolton, aged 70, who, with her family, was the first settler in Napoleon, in this county, where she has lived forty-eight years; Senator Hodges, who has lived in Pulaski and in Concord forty-three years; Mr. Melville McGee, of this city, who came into the county in 1832, when 14 years old, and a resident of forty-seven years' standing; Mr. Tripp, of Hanover, who, although 58 years of age, seems in the prime of life, so well does he wear his years, has lived in his present locality forty-seven years; he came to Hanover in 1832, when 11 years of age, along with his father, Abial Tripp, who located the first farm in that township; John Curtis, aged 79, who has been in Jackson since 1837. It might be well to say that in the fall of the same year Mrs. Bolton settled in Napoleon; Morgan Case and wife settled there also.

## A CHAPTER OF PIONEER HISTORY.

### A BRIEF ACCOUNT OF THE EARLY SETTLERS OF BLACKMAN, RIVES AND HENRIETTA TOWNSHIPS.

Samuel Prescott, whose age is seventy-nine years, and who was one of the earliest settlers of Jackson county, writes as follows to Mr. Bingham, Secretary of the County Pioneer Society, concerning the early settlers of Blackman, Rives and Henrietta townships:

The first family that settled north of Jackson, down the Grand river, was that of Lyman Pease. He arrived in the summer of 1830, and the same season broke ten acres of ground, which he sowed to wheat. The same fall John McConnell came and put in three acres of wheat, and was followed the same season by James Fifield and Osgood Fifield, with their families; also by Stephen Fifield, George Fifield, William Fifield and John Stephens. In June, 1831, Samuel Wing and family, Edward Morrill and Samuel Prescott moved in also. In the spring of 1832, Rosevelt Davis and family settled in the same neighborhood, and early the following year, 1833, Nathaniel Morrill, Stephen Towne and families also became settlers in Blackman.

About this time Samuel Prescott sold his place to Mr. Morrill and bought a farm on section thirty-four, in Rives. He was the first settler in that town. This was in 1834. The same year John Berry and Elizur Clark moved into Rives, and in the fall Isaac Kirby and Charles Evans settled on the east side of Grand River, and Joseph Whitney, William Whitney and Pardon T. Fisher and families took up land north of Grand river on the Grand river road. This was the first surveyed road north of Jackson. About the same time Milton J. Draper, Alfred Draper and Lyman Draper settled in the northwest part of Rives. Robert H. Anderson moved in also in 1835, and Philip Van Horn and family in 1836.

The first settler in Henrietta was John B. Bernard, an Indian trader. He was there in 1831, and that said he had been there fifteen years. His home was on the east side of the lake called the Batteese lake—the French name for it. He had more goods than there were in Jackson. At that time (October, 1831) he was plowing for wheat. John Davison and Robert Davison built a saw mill on the inlet of Batteese lake. John Westren came and bought 1,800 acres of land around Pleasant lake and divided it into six farms and built on them in the spring of 1836. That summer he had families living on them the same season. That year, 1836, Alfred Hall, Sherlock Patrick, Thomas Tanner and James Suylant came with their families, as did also Abram Bunker and E. Daggett. About the same time Job Archer, Rowland Tanner, H. H. Hurd, Atwater Hurd, Edward Southwell and John Snyder came and settled with their families.

Mr. Prescott writes that he was born August 31, 1800, in Sandbornton, New Hampshire, and that he moved from Rives into Henrietta in the winter of 1841-42.

## REMINISCENCES IN RHYME.

### AN ORIGINAL POEM READ BY DR. J. A. ROBINSON AT THE PIONEER SEMI-CENTENNIAL CELEBRATION OF THE EIGHTEENTH.

In joining with you on this festal day,
In trying to amuse you with a lay,
I trust you may not count it misspent time
To listen to the jingle of a rhyme;
And while the inner man has been well fed,
And while so many things have been well said,
Suppose we wander back some fifty years,
To see the pilgrims with their hopes and fears,
As they came plodding through the woods alone,
Or sat to rest them on a quiet stone.
Were Scott or Byron present here to dine,
Or Alexander Pope to pen a line;
Was Lord Macaulay present at this board,
He'd cast aside the title of "My Lord!"

Could all the popes and bishops of the past
Be brought together to this rich repast;
Could all the men the ancient Masons made
Be summoned here to ply their ancient trade;
Each one would be a votary to this shrine,
And bless his God that he was here to dine.

Think, my good friends; only think, I say,
How was it fifty years ago this day?
Then on this stream the otter found a home,
And bears and foxes through the woods did roam.
No white man's foot had ever trod the sod—
Nothing but nature here; and nature's God.

The winding river that so sluggish ran,
Was not inviting to the eyes of man;
No table-land or prairie of pride
Inspired his heart, or did his footsteps guide;
No sound of voices did his advent hail,
He simply followed on the Indian's trail.
And here upon this site, and all alone,
He came to found a city and a home.

Of all the persons who thus early came,
Some eight or ten are all that now remain.
The rest, the last great debt they all have paid:
Their bodies in the church-yard now are laid.
While these, their friends and children, may be seen
Keeping their mem'ry and their good deeds green.

O memory! Thou blessed gift from heaven!
The very best the father yet has given;
For when all else upon the earth has passed,
The everlasting memory will last.
Even afflictions that disturb us so,
Are sometimes the best blessings that we know;
The memory of our struggles dark as night
Are often brightened with a sunny light.
The hardships of these sturdy pioneers
Should teach a lesson to our grumbling seers.

The memory of the fifty years that's gone
Since the first day that Jacksonburgh was born,
Will bring a thrill of joy to many a heart,
And moisten many an eye, as we depart.

The few surviving persons that we know,
Who came to this place fifty years ago,
Are John T. Durand and his faithful wife,
Who came to dwell in Jacksonburgh for life,
And William Thompson, known as William D.,
Whom every day upon the street we see.

Durand surveyed the ground and held the rule,
And his wife Silence kept the village school;
And Mr. Thompson who, since early days,
Has furnished all the money for his trade,
Through all the changes of this changing place,
No change is seen upon his patient face;
To every townsman, whether great or small,
His purse is ready to prevent their fall.
The universal wish of rich and poor
Is that this millionaire had millions more.

Elizur Chapman and his wife are here,
Whose golden wedding was within a year,
They were the parents of the first white child
That saw the light within this Indian's wild.

Down near the Southern depot rises still
A mound on which was built the first saw-mill;
Columbus Darling undertook the job—
As true a man as ever trod the sod.
Darling had framed the timbers on the ground,
But men to raise them could nowhere be found.
He then called all the women, far and near,
And did not stop to say: "Please come, my dear;"
But said: "If you can make the babe lie still,
Give us a helping hand to raise this mill."
They came, as women always come, with grace,
And lifted every timber to its place.

While thus engaged, and very near the end,
A herd of deer came running round the bend
Towards the river; Darling seized his gun,
And, firing quick, he killed the nearest one;
And dressed the carcass; gave the several parts
To all the helpers, who, with grateful hearts,
Took it to cook into their rustic home,
And blessed the Lord that the great work was done.

Detroit was, fifty years ago, a smallish town,
But as a trading post had some renown;
And every person here had come that way,
Unless they from the East had run away.
So every one that came legitimate,
Or came into the territory straight,
Were never questioned as to why they come,
Or asked the reason for their leaving home;
But all who came across the dismal swamp
Of cotton-wood, where it was wet and damp,
Were never raised to an exalted station
Without a very strict examination.
So Doctor Russ, the doctor of the burgh,
And Doctor Backus, too, of whom you've heard,
Were a committee made, to wait upon
All men who came the wrong way into town,
And to examine fairly every one,
And to report why he had left his home,
And every grave offense that he had done.

Some came that in their eastern homes had failed,
And others, fearing that they might be jailed;
And every one who'd murdered in his day,
Or foully robbed upon the great highway,
Were all advised to go still farther west,
And they would find a place of perfect rest.
And so the town was always very pure,
For crimes like these they never could endure.

But all who failed their honest debts to pay,
Or met disastrous fortune in the way;
If they were only honest, and were poor,
Or could not well a change of life endure,
Were welcomed to this quiet western home,
And told to send for all their friends to come.
And so the village grew from day to day,
Each man and woman working in their way,
Some little deeds of kindness to repay.

In coming, then, the yeoman with his load,
Had five long days of journey on the road.
It was the work of every good long day
To travel fifteen miles upon his way;
Over the marshes, through the sloughs he went,
From east to west, his plodding steps he bent;

The patient oxen drew the load along,
Cheered by the goad, or whip, or merry song.
The pebbly stream he forded clear and bright,
To find a place where he could rest at night;
And many a mother journeying that way,
Carried her baby half the live long day.
Soon as the morning lighted up the road,
The traveler roused the sleepers on his load;
The fires that chanced to be still burning low,
With sticks and leaves were brightened to a glow,
The breakfast eaten, dishes put away,
The travelers started on their western way.

Sometimes a dozen watch fires might be seen
Along the path, so shaded and so green,
Where the tired pilgrim stopped to cook his food,
Or rest his weary team along the road.

The morning sun that shimmered through the trees,
The leaves that trembled in the summer breeze,
The crowing of the prairie cock, so near,
Resembling the tame birds they used to hear,
The partridge beating loud his rolling drum,
Reminding the lone wanderer of his home;
And the wild turkey's gobble just begun,
While strutting forth in the bright morning sun;
The bucks and does that wandered o'er the way,
Old bruin with her little cubs at play.
And flocks of pigeons flying overhead
Blackened the oaks whose branches wide were spread;
All these gave greetings to our pilgrim throng,
And helped to cheer them as they passed along,
'Til they had reached the then far distant west,
And found in Blackman's tavern home and rest.

On the north side, near where the Marion block
Has sheltered such a wise and virtuous flock,
The Blackman tavern song of which we sing,
Was goodly kept by honest Paul B. Ring,
Where he with strangers took his daily walk,
Or charmed and held them by his magic talk.
No stranger guest, however rich or poor,
Had ever failed to find Paul's open door;
However great his haste, or his delay,
From Paul B. Ring he never got away.

When Doctor Backus came, 'twas very clear
That he had brought some little money here;
And so Paul gave him up the best front room,
And borrowed all his money very soon.
He told the doctor on a certain day
He had some trifling debts he wished to pay;
And so he did the doctor's money borrow,
With the sure promise, "He would pay to-morrow."
The doctor had about him then in gold
A hundred dollars he gave Paul to hold,
Until the Emmons house should be complete,—
The first frame dwelling built upon the street,
Which he expected for his future home,
Where his small family could be alone.
Three weeks went by and some two days or more,—
The doctor told me it was less than four,—
And then he moved down just across the way,
And wanted back his money, and to pay.
He mentioned this small circumstance to Paul,—
I tell it as the doctor told it all,—
Paul gave a knowing look, and smiled and bowed,
And went behind his bar, and coughed aloud;

Fumbled his papers,—said, "I do declare,
My dearest doctor, our account is square!"
And so the doctor, in his laugh and glee,
Said this was his initiation fee.
This Emmons mansion you would hardly know,
Or think 'twas built near fifty years ago;
But Grandma Emmons tells me it is true,
And Mrs. Gunn will show it to you, too.

The name of Bennett you will see appears
In Jackson all these days and months and years
Since old Isaiah to the village come
To make the town of Jacksonburgh his home.
You'll see the name of Bennett here and there—
In fact, I might say almost everywhere;
The Bennett store, the foundry, the mill—
I wish that I could say it stood there still—
The agricultural works, machine shops, banks;
The people owe the Bennetts many thanks
Since the first mail was brought across the land,
And old Isaiah kept it in his hand;
After the letters numbered ten or more
They were delivered from the office floor.
Twenty-five cents was not so very dear
For those who waited from their friends to hear.
A goodly number had no news to come,
They came here so they might be all alone.
The surging tide of business and of strife
Led them to seek a more secluded life;
Their brains were so fatigued with life's turmoil,
They sought the west, where they could rest awhile.

But soon the charms of this new western home
Roused up the active energies of some;
The young folks worked in earnest, did their best—
Which gave the older animated zest.
The people pushed along at rapid rate;
Men toiled from early morn till it was late,
To make the town the smartest in the State.

It is not possible for me to raise
My voice for all who need the honest praise
And thanks for their good work that was begun,
And many more who toiled till it was done.
There are a few hard workers I will name,
Whose names have gained imperishable fame:

Hibbard and Humphrey ran the early mails,
And Root, and Smith and Loomis laid the rails;
Hayden and Reynolds ran the flouring mill—
With patient industry they do it still;
Old 'Squire DeLand, the Justice, gave the news,
And Mother DeLand gave poor children shoes;
She never was found lying in the lurch,
When work was needed for the village church;
Old William Jackson—one of the kindest men—
Came not at first—he owned Leoni then;
But soon he came along with all the rest,
And said to live in Jackson was the best.
Then there are all the lawyers I could name,
Some of them have a grand, distinguished name,
There's Blair and Johnson, Livermore and Wood,
Perhaps a dozen more nearly as good;
Gibson and Conely, Parkinson, McGee,
And many others we are glad to see.
And when I name the honest name of Peck,
And Pringle without blemish or a speck;

And ponderous Gridley, running with his brief,
And Wilson, bringing criminals to grief,
All these have Jackson very much at heart,
To keep it straight they all have done their part.

And so if I should talk to you all day,
And keep it going in my "sing song" way,
I could not tell you half the good work done
Since Jackson city her grand race begun.
The ministers have come and they have gone;
Most have a noble race most fairly won,
And then the women always did their part,
And always did it with a cheerful heart.
The president and officers of the day
Should have the thanks of every one, I say,
For doing work in such a faithful way.

And now, before I close, I wish to pass
A tribute to that patient, silent class
Of workers who the labor always do
In this and every enterprise that's new.
We find them here; we find them over there;
In fact, we find them always everywhere;
They move the dirt; they shovel on the roads;
They help along with all the heavy loads;
The country all around is with them filled;
The houses, workshops; everything they build;
They sail the lakes, aoross the seas they roam,
To bring the wealth of foreign countries home.
They fire the engine, raise the noisy steam,
And build the bridge that spans the mighty stream;
They tunnel through the mountains, fill the gorge,
Unite the continent so broad and large;
They never in high places can be found,
But, like the gold and jewels, in the ground;
They milk the cows; they furrow all the land;
In harvest fields they are the valiant band.

The women, too, that watch beside our bed,
Or follow on in silence when we're dead;
Care for the children, kindly cook the food,
And what is better, learn them to be good.
All these good people who have done their part
So well and just, and with a cheerful heart,
We'll give them thanks for work so well begun,
And at the close we all will say well done.

## FIFTY YEARS AGO.

### JACKSONBURG AND JACKSON COUNTY—1829-1879—A PAPER READ BEFORE THE PIONEER MEETING OF JUNE 18, 1879.

Mr. Henry Little, a pioneer of Kalamazoo county, and well acquainted with the early history of all this section of the State, read a paper at the Pioneer anniversary meeting of June 18, which was subsequently lost, and to gratify numerous friends he has reproduced it for publication. It will be read with much interest.

*Mr. President, Pioneers, Ladies and Gentlemen:*

It affords me great pleasure to be with you upon this very interesting occasion, to exchange friendly greetings and congratulations with you, and to listen to the recital of your pioneer experience as you passed through those diversified and trying scenes which marked your progress all the way onwards and upwards, from the first log cabin to the crowning glory of the achievements which are now so conspicuously apparent all about us as to excite the admiration, if not the profound astonishment, of every beholder, while seeing your populous county, with its productive farms, manufacturing interests, thriving villages, and this beautiful city, all having sprung into existence within the last fifty years. While Jackson is justly celebrated for the intelligence, morality, thrift and enterprise of its inhabitants, its uninterrupted growth and prosperity, its beautiful public and private buildings, and its excellent public institutions, it is not renowned for its great antiquity. Jackson is a young city, and still in its infancy, but what an infant! There are still some persons remaining with us who well remember when it was born. I distinctly remember the time when that little youngster, which had been christened "Jacksonburg," was being cradled and nurtured in its little rude log crib, or cabin. But that child grew with astonishing rapidity and soon became an active, precocious youth, and the next moment he was a mature man; and after a brief space of time, a few revolutions of our earth, and instead of that feeble, tottering child, a powerful giant walked forth by his own inherent strength, dispensing his favors in all directions, and commanding the respect and admiration of all. I had known many villages in the eastern States which were 150 years old, with but 5,000 or 6,000 inhabitants, and we supposed that a much longer time would be required in this country to reach similar results, but by the magic power of science, when aiding and directing the impelling forces in these modern times, a city, a nation, is born in a day.

In the early days of Jacksonburg the old Washtenaw trail was the only traveled route from east to west through this section of country for many years. Between Ann Arbor and Kalamazoo country (as then called) the log cabins of the early pioneers were located only upon that Indian trail.

The distance between those primitive, solitary dwellings as found by me forty-eight years ago, was fourteen miles in some cases and seven miles in others, with no improvements whatever between them. Mr. Allen was located at Grass Lake, from which place an unbroken wilderness extended all the way (ten miles) to Jacksonburg, where a wide belt of heavy timbered land extended up and down on the east side of the river. When we passed over that route the river had overflowed its eastern bank, and the water extended over that low timbered land about eighty rods, partially concealing many large and small stones and many large roots of trees, which caused our wagons to contort most fearfully as they plunged up and down and rocked from right to left. By much time and careful management three of our wagons passed over without much harm, while two wagons became fast, but by the assistance of Mr. Blackman and his two pairs of oxen, they were brought over. The bridge across the river was a rude structure of logs, and the east end, being much lower than the other, was under water.

At that time (1831) Jacksonburg contained about a dozen log cabins. Among the number was that of Mr. Blackman, the double log cabin used for a tavern by William R. Thompson, that of Hiram Thompson, the postmaster of Jacksonburg, Mr. Hogan, the merchant, Mr. Richie, a school-house, and a blacksmith shop.

While stopping a few days with Mr. Thompson, I learned that he was about to send out teams to White Pigeon prairie for flour and other provisions, therefore two of my teams returned to the east, and Thompson's took their places, the postmaster of Jacksonburg having charge of one team and Mr. Richie the other. Do you still send out ox teams on a three or four weeks' trip for your provisions, and do you now obtain your meat as you did a few months later, when Mr. Thompson bought a drove of one hundred hogs from Indiana? As we had good teams, good weather, and no detentions, we made the run from Jacksonburg to the place now called Galesburg in six days, two full weeks having been required in passing from Detroit to Galesburg. We stopped over night with Allen at Grass Lake; Thompson, Blashfield, and Roberts at Sandstone Creek; Crane and Abbott a few miles west of Rice Creek, where the Rev. John D. Pierce was located, having stayed over night at every cabin on the route from Grass Lake to Rice Creek, except at Jacksonburg. In those good old times the latch string always hung on the outside of every door—if they had a door—and however poor and destitute the inmates might have been, they willingly entertained all travelers, who were then very few and far between. Some of the dwelling places on that route were nothing but shanties, sheds or pens, without doors, window, floor or chimney, and no furniture except such as was made on the premises, the whole outfits being novel apologies for human comforts.

The above picture is not as gloomy and disheartening as some might suppose, but it is a very hopeful and encouraging state of things, for those times.

In 1832, Roswell Crane, formerly of Jackson county, called at my residence on Gull prairie and informed me that he had located near to and on the west side of Battle Creek, and was therefore my neighbor. It was very gratifying to learn that I had a neighbor within fourteen or fifteen miles in an eastern direction, because J. D. Pierce, at Rice Creek, had, thus far, been my nearest neighbor in that direction. Whoever thinks that the movement of the world is slow, let him compare the condition of matters and things of the present time here with those of a few years ago, when it might have been said that ever since the dawn of creation, when the morning stars sang upon that glorious event, the greatest part of Michigan was unoccupied, unknown and avoided, because it was supposed to be a waste, pestilential desert!

It is within the recollection of many persons still living, when Ann Arbor was at the extreme west end of the habitable world, beyond which the sun went down into a boundless, bottomless morass, where the frightful sounds of yelling Indians, howling wolves, croaking frogs, rattling massasaugas, and buzzing mosquitoes added to the awful horrors of that dismal place. But very fortunately for us that silly illusion was dispelled, so that out of that worthless region, there arose one of the most beautiful, productive, and prosperous States in the Union.

Michigan has the largest lakes, which are literally alive with delicious fish; best climate, soil and crops, and best minerals, timber, schools, colleges, churches, better laws and more of them than other States; smarter old men and women, brighter boys and more attractive girls. While we have a grateful sense of rich profusion of the various inexhaustible natural resources of Michigan, I am not at liberty to withhold the merited meed of praise from the hardy, energetic, persevering pioneers, who patiently submitted to great and long continued hardships and privations, while they utilized the great works of nature by converting a waste wilderness, previously the abode of wild beasts and wild men, into fruitful fields and gardens, so that it became a land of corn and wine and of the finest wheat—a land of milk and honey. They beautified the face of nature with the decorative works of art, founded cities, villages, towns, and elegant rural palaces, highways, and railroads throughout our broad domain; caused the light of science to illuminate every corner; gave us laws and educational, religious, and charitable institutions, which would be an honor to the older States, and instead of a territory of less than 30,000 we now have a State containing 1,500,000 inhabitants, in the full enjoyment of all the rich bounties of nature and art. But has Michigan arrived at the zenith of its prosperous progression, and hereafter to remain stationary? No, will be the emphatic exclamation of every one, because the history of the past, and the present indications in regard to the future, are such as to justify the firm belief in the steady and continued onward movement in all the good ennobling characteristics appertaining to a great and prosperous commonwealth. The words progressive improvement are legibly inscribed upon everything appertaining to the affairs of life. Therefore, with an intelligent, energetic, enterprising people, under the sure guidance of science, with machinery for the farmer, mechanic, and for most all kinds of manual labor, and greatly increased facilities for prosecuting business enterprises, nothing short of a frowning Providence can prevent a long and highly prosperous and happy career in the future.

Veteran pioneers, respected fathers and mothers, you do not need monuments of brass or marble to proclaim or perpetuate the remembrance of your glorious achievements to coming generations, because your foot-prints are deeply and indelibly impressed upon this fair land, where the result of the magnificent work of your hands are the best of testimonials for you.

Here you not only hewed out and laid those deep and broad foundations, but you were the architects and builders of a grand superstructure, whose lofty, imposing towers and pinnacles greet the rays of the rising sun, and afford shelter and protection to life and property. Now at this delightful season of the year, when all nature is arrayed in her most gorgeous attire, when the indications from all quarters inspire the most sanguine hopes and expectations of an abundant supply of all creature comforts, it is pleasant and profitable to come together, to review the trying scenes of the long, long past, and rejoice together for the rich abundance now enjoyed. I therefore most heartily congratulate one and all of you on your good fortune in having such a goodly heritage, and your homes in such pleasant places, which is but the just reward of the pioneer. But your ownership of this beautiful domain, for which you devoted your best energies during the best years of your lives, will soon pass from your hands as a rich inheritance to your successors, and it will be with the consciousness of having faithfully guarded and preserved the treasures intrusted to your keeping, and increased its value far beyond the limited powers of human computation. We hope and believe that your successors will imitate your worthy example. Most respectfully and fraternally yours,

HENRY LITTLE.

KALAMAZOO, June 1879.

## THE LONG AGO.

### INTERESTING LETTER FROM A PIONEER.

[The following letter, written by a lady seventy-five years of age, is given just as it was prepared by her, and both in point of composition and penmanship is equally noticeable.—ED.]

In the year 1837, in the month of May, we left my native place (Farmington, Ontario county, New York) in company with Mr. Azariah Mallory and family, of Macedon, Wayne county, who were also bound for the same destination—the then far west—the State of Michigan, my husband having purchased three eighties in the southwest corner of Hanover township, the year previous, where we now reside. Emigration in those days was less expeditious than in these modern times. We went aboard the canal boat and jogged along at a slow rate, but as it ran both night and day, we made considerable progress. Arrived at Buffalo, we took the steamboat for Toledo—not much of a village at that time, there being but a few houses. We made out to climb the bank and then started by team for Adrian, Mr. Mallory having transported his horses and wagon across the lake. We found the roads rough passing through the cottonwood swamp, through mud and muck, where many a wagon had been stuck, Mrs. M. and myself walking four miles on logs and rails. We saw the first locomotive with cars making their first trip in Michigan. My uncle, Darius Comstock, and George Crane, from Farmington, New York, (who were stockholders) were on board. When the train stopped at Blissfield the old gentlemen alighted with buckets in hand and descended the bank of the river Raisin and up again, as sprightly as young men, with their buckets of water to supply the tender. Both men are now dead. We arrived at Moscow plains, put up with an old acquaintance of ours for six weeks, who made our stay very pleasant, until our house was finished, which was built of logs, of course. We then commenced keeping house. We experienced many privations, having to go thirty miles to mill, with an ox team, taking two days for the journey. Our neighbors were few and far between. No roads at that time except the main traveled road, three miles south, known as the "Chicago turnpike." Now and then we came across an Indian trail (though only one Indian called on us). Though our mode of conveyance for a few years was by ox-team, we could expedite by taking a bee-line (nearly) to the different points, as there was no underbrush (the Indians kept them burned down). Afterward, by chipping the trees, or "blazing," the lines became established roads, until clearings obliged us to turn corners.

Jonesville had only one store at that time. Emigration was very great in 1837; it made very hard times, on account of the scarcity of provisions. Many were afflicted with ague, for which Michigan became proverbial. The first fall my husband had forty-nine "shakes" in forty-nine days; our daughter suffered from it at the same time, and none of us escaped it entirely. Mr. Mallory's people seemed like relatives, though living three miles away. On Sunday the old gray horse would bring the wife and youngest child, while he and one or two others trudged on foot. Then we appreciated the face of a friend, and the attachment thus formed has ever since existed. In the spring the fire would run through the woods, which warmed up the ground and caused vegetation to spring up, beautiful to behold. The flowers covered the earth and yielded a fragrant perfume. The wild deer would gambol over the plains, and the turkey was also seen. Now and then a massasauga put in an appearance, but the wolves and screech-owls would sometimes make the night hideous. We soon had a flock of sheep, from which we spun and wove our own cloth, and had to be tailoress and dressmaker too— but clothers were made in plainer style then than now-a-days.

Where the village of Hanover is located, were only two or three residences, and one log school-house—a few rods northeast of where the M. E. church now stands—where we used to attend meetings. The first tombstone in the cemetery marked the grave of our son. It was a brown sandstone, taken from the quarry at Stony Point, some ten years before its inexhaustible stores were developed.

And thus we might extend our review of pioneer life, but perhaps enough has been said. The improvements since "those days that tried men's souls," are before us. Our State being traversed by the numerous railroads, and the facilities we enjoy of communication, enable us to see the progress in civilization. That which fifty years ago was an unbroken wilderness is now dotted with cities and villages, with the advantages of modern improvements, and we truly "can sit under our own vine and fig tree."

MRS. M. W. CLAPP,
Seventy-five years of age.

## SOME FORTY YEARS AGO.

Song sung by B. F. Eggleston, Esq., at the picnic of the Jackson County Pioneer Society, on the fair grounds at Jackson, June 18, 1879.

I've wandered to the village, Tom,
  I've sat beneath the tree
Upon the school-house play grounds
  That sheltered you and me;
But none were there to greet me, Tom,
  And few were left to know
That played with us upon the ground,
  Some forty years ago.

The grass was just as green, dear Tom,
  Bare-footed boys at play
Were sporting just as we did then,
  With spirits just as gay;
But the master sleeps upon the hill,
  Which, coated o'er with snow,
Afforded us a sliding place,
  Some forty years ago.

The school-house is much altered now;
  The benches are replaced
By new ones little like the same
  Our jack-knives did deface;
But the same old bricks are in the wall,
  The bell swings to and fro—
Its music just the same, dear Tom,
  'Twas forty years ago.

The river's running just as still;
  The willows on its side
Are larger than they were, dear Tom,
  The stream appears less wide!
But the grapevine swing is ruined now,
  Where once we played the beau,
And swung our sweethearts, pretty girls,
  Some forty years ago.

The spring that bubbled 'neath the hill,
  Close by the spreading beech,
Is very low—'twas once so high
  That we could almost reach;
And kneeling down to get a drink,
  Dear Tom, I started so,
To see how greatly I had changed
  Since forty years ago.

Near by that spring, upon an elm,
  You know I cut your name,
Your sweetheart's just beneath it, Tom,
  And you did mine the same;
Some heartless wretch has peeled the bark,
  'Tis dying, sure and slow,
Just as that one whose name you cut,
  Died forty years ago.

My lids have long been dry, dear Tom,
  But tears come in my eyes,
I thought of her I loved so well,
  Those early broken ties;
I visited the old churchyard,
  And took some flowers to strow
Upon the graves of those we loved
  Some forty years ago.

Some now are in the churchyard laid,
  Some sleep beneath the sea,
But few are left of our old class
  Excepting you and me;
And when our time shall come, dear Tom,
  And we are called to go,
I hope to meet all those we loved
  Some forty years ago.

## ONE OF THE EARLY SETTLERS.

Rives, *June 22, 1880.*

*To the Pioneer Society:*

We started from Byron, Genesee county, New York, the first Monday in November, 1835. We came to Detroit, staid there over night. Mr. True bought a yoke of oxen, hitched them on his wagon; he brought a new wagon with us; he loaded some things and loaded in the children, six in number, and started. We were five days coming from Detroit. We moved in with Mr. Town; they had four children, we six, only one room and a bedroom; we staid there six weeks. Mr. True built a log house and we moved into it. The next he had to go to Dexter to buy flour. He took his oxen, went to Detroit after our goods; he was gone ten days. In March he went back to Byron to get money to buy a breaking up team; he got back in May with three yoke of oxen and three cows; he had to buy a breaking up plow; he got ready to break the ground; it was late; he broke a piece of ground, planted it to potatoes the 15th of June, then he went to breaking for wheat.

He raised over a hundred bushel of potatoes on what he broke in one day. The price of potatoes that fall was $1 a bushel. You see that would buy eighty acres of land at government price.

The Indians were very plenty. While Mr. True was gone after his cattle they used to come quite often. They came one day to borrow an ax; I dare not refuse them; they wanted to cut a bee tree; they brought the ax back; brought a piece of honey between a couple of chips; they always appeared very friendly. We had a pair of twin boys born the next November after we came here. The Indians would come in very often. One day they wanted to see them; I dare not refuse them. "Oh," Neshin Bucks said. They came one day when I was gone to Mr. Prescott's; there was a ham bone hanging side of the house; they wanted the children to give it to them; they told them they must ask me; they came to Mr. Prescott's; I could not understand a word; they would slap themselves; I did not know what they wanted. Mrs. Prescott asked me if I had a ham hanging up. I told her I had a ham and a ham that was almost used up hanging at the side of the house; they told her they wanted the ham that was almost used up. I told her they might have it; they came and told the children I said they might have it; they gave it to them. Now if they had been dishonest they would have got the whole one. Mr. True bought a two-year old heifer and butchered her, hung the liver close to the outside of the back door; the wolves came and carried it off. We had seven pigs in a board pen between the house and road. The wolves came about ten minutes after the light was blown out. We heard a pig squeal and he jumped out of bed and went to the pen. One pig was gone; all they could find of the pig was a piece of liver about as large as a peach stone; they could not see or hear anything of the wolves but their tracks. They tracked them up the road; they found several tracks. After that Mr. True shut his pigs in a box nights. I was very homesick when we first came here. After we began to raise something to live on I became contented. We always had a plenty to eat. We were scant for clothes sometimes; everything was dear and we had a large family; it was hard getting clothes in a new country. Mr. True died September 13, 1862.

I knew a good many that saw hard times when they first came here. Mrs. Prescott said she had only a pound and a half of sugar the first year she lived in Michigan. I took my little boy, went into the woods and made sugar myself while Mr. True was gone after his cattle. I am over eighty years old and my hand trembles. I was at the pioneer meeting last year and enjoyed it very much; my memory is good; I am sensible I am failing, and the probability is I never shall write much more. My name is Wilbur now; I married after Mr. True died. Mr. Wilbur is my present husband.

LORY WILBUR.

## MR. ANDERSON AND HIS EARLY FRIENDS.

*Mr. President, Ladies and Gentlemen:*

It has become the duty, as well as the exalted privilege, of the pioneers of Jackson county to perpetuate the memories and write briefly the histories of those our cotemporaries who came to our county when a wilderness, to undergo the hardships and to enjoy the hopes and to search out the half hidden possibilities of our future, and to commit such history to the safe keeping of those who have already followed us to those who have been born to us, that they in their turn may again transmit to distant generations, as yet unborn, the hardships we endured, a thousand times repaid by the hopes enjoyed, and the numerous blessings which came as the years went on to comfort and inspire us to duty.

Our experiences have not been unlike the experiences of many of our cotemporaries who entered upon life's journey with us in Michigan. Our difficulties, our dangers, our toils, our hopes, and our fears, joys, and sorrows were common to all. Of the early settlers of the township of Rives, I have come to-day to tell you. Of those whose names I shall give you, who were from necessity in that early day as partners to my experiences, and to some extent of my joys and sorrows, have nearly all passed to the unseen land, and as the servant of Job I may say to you to-day, "I, and only I, am left alone to tell thee."

I arrived in the township now called Rives in the month of August, A. D. 1835, where I found the persons hereinafter named as follows, to wit: Samuel Prescott, who settled here in the year A. D. 1834. In him I found a worthy friend, a good neighbor, industrious, and one generally frugal in his habits, and beloved by his neighbors, and moderately successful in business, and who departed this life in the township of Henrietta in good old age, deeply lamented by his neighbors and friends. The next I will name is John Barry. Henry Fifield, Elijah Clark, and Daniel Fellows all preceded me in Rives. Bradley Freeman, Harry Freeman, Edmund Freeman, and Jared Freeman, Holden L. Albro, and Alva True all settled here in the year A. D. 1835. Settlers who arrived early in the spring of 1836 were as follows: Milton J. Draper, Lyman Draper, Pardon Fisher, Joseph Whitney, Horace G. Cole, Asahel King, Phillip Van Horn, Marcus Whitney, Charles Evens, and James Brown.

I sold the lands first located by me in Rives to Phillip Van Horn and Marcus Whitney, and removed to Tompkins in the month of May, A. D. 1836, where I purchased lands on section number 24.

The first sermon preached in West Rives was preached by the Rev. Mr. Jackson, at the house of Milton J. Draper, in the spring of 1837. The first sermon preached in East Tompkins was delivered at my house in A. D. 1837. Preaching was continued at the above named places for several succeeding years. The settlers were church-going people in those neighborhoods. Women and children were often seen coming to church a distance of several miles in wagons drawn by oxen. Our church appendages were often of the most rural patterns. Seats were made of slabs hauled from a neighboring saw-mill.

All of which is respectfully submitted.

ROB'T H. ANDERSON.

---

# KALAMAZOO COUNTY.

## THE NINTH ANNUAL REUNION OF THE PIONEERS OF KALAMAZOO COUNTY, AUGUST 14, 1879, HELD IN DYCKMAN'S GROVE, IN SCHOOLCRAFT.

Report taken from the Kalamazoo Daily Telegraph of August 15, 1879.

### THE DAY AND THE OCCASION.

Fortune and the weather seem to have always favored the Kalamazoo pioneers in their annual gatherings and reunions, which have been so happy and so full of enjoyment that very justly they are considered the great social event of the year. There has been no apparent decrease in interest regarding these meetings, but on the contrary, each succeeding year has found the number who attend growing larger, and if possible happier in renewing the acquaintances and friendships made at former meetings.

### THE DEPARTURE.

At ten o'clock in the morning a large number of people from this place and vicinity assembled at the Southern depot and it was with difficulty that tickets were procured, so great was the demand for them. When the train came the five coaches were filled full, and notwithstanding the crowded condition of the cars, everybody was good-natured and jolly.

### THE ARRIVAL AND RECEPTION.

The train made a quick run to Schoolcraft, arriving there at eleven o'clock. Here our excursionists found a multitude of people, who had arrived by other trains and by carriages and other modes of conveyance. The Schoolcraft band escorted our people to the grove, and soon, surrounded by a great audience, the oral exercises opened. The meeting was called to order by the president, Hon. S. F. Brown. Rev. Mr. Toof offered a fervent prayer, after which President Brown made the eloquent address of welcome, as follows:

### ADDRESS OF WELCOME.

*Friends, Pioneers of the County of Kalamazoo:*

It is with emotions of pleasure and pride that I greet you to-day, and in the name, and in behalf of the pioneers and other citizens of Schoolcraft, bid you a cordial welcome to our midst. It is peculiarly meet and proper that the pioneers of this county should congregate on this spot, on the "Big island," situated as it is, in the center of the great prairie, a prairie which equals in natural beauty and loveliness, and exceeds in geographical extent any other in the State. Here in Nature's temple, and beneath the outspreading branches of the native forest trees, do we meet to recount the trials, the hardships, the struggles and triumphs of the early days. In priority of settlement, Prairie Ronde stands first in our county. Not far from where we now stand the first bold, adventurous settler pitched his tent, and erected his rude log cabin. It was near here that the virgin earth was first stirred by the plow of civilized man, and golden harvests soon gladdened the heart of the lonly settler.

Pioneers: So far as relates to Kalamazoo county, we have met to-day in joyous reunion near the cradle of civilization. It was on Prairie Ronde that the supremacy of the red man first gave way before the advancing foot-steps of the pioneer. Therefore do I say that it is fitting that we meet near the spot where first began that struggle to overcome the manifold difficulties and dangers in reclaiming a land from the dominion of the wild beasts and the savage, and transforming it into fruitful fields and the abode of civilized man. We meet to-day to live over again the eventful years of our pioneer life; hoping that by an interchange of views and by communicating whatever knowledge we may possess with regard to the first settlers of our county, we may contribute something to the accuracy and completeness of our history; that we may elicit some facts not before presented—facts which, perchance, may seem trivial and unimportant to some, but which are nevertheless of priceless value to the pioneer and his descendants. The most interesting period in the life and history of a country is the one when its history began; that one when the light of civilization and progress first dawned upon it. With what absorbing interest do we read that page of history which records the acts of Romulus and Remus, when they laid the foundations of an empire which in time became the wonder and admiration of the world; so, likewise, the first years of our local history to us surpass in interest those which followed them.

Friends, the word pioneer implies not only a heroic conflict with the hardships, privations and perils of a wild and unsettled county, but also an abandonment or forsaking of the old and cherished land of birth. One of the most eminent of American orators, in enumerating the obstacles in the way of emigrating to a new country said: "Space itself, mountains and seas and rivers, are impediments. When all these are overcome the greatest of all remains—that of being torn from one's natal spot, separated forever from the roof under which the companions of his childhood were sheltered, from the trees which have shaded him from summer's heat, the springs from whose gushing fountains he has drank in his youth, the tombs that hold the precious relics of his venerated ancestors." Such, my friends, have been the trials of the heroic pioneers of Kalamazoo county; they who bade a long, sad adieu to the graves of their ancestors, and the scenes of their childhood, crossed the intervening mountains, rivers, lakes, dales and plains; reached this beautiful land, and laid the foundations of the happy homes and the splendid civilization which surround us. All honor, then, to the pioneers whose labors and sacrifices have blest the land they made their home. Memory goes back to the years, long since past, and we love to dwell on the recollections of other days, on the sincere and unaffected friendships, the kind sympathy, and the warm and boundless hospitality which were ever displayed by the pioneers of our county. Fellow pioneers, at each succeeding meeting our ranks become more broken and diminished. We look in vain to-day for the familiar faces of pioneers which greeted us a year ago. The bent form and faltering step of the aged settler tell us that the end is not distant. Let us then continue to meet in annual reunion, talk over the events of the early times, and rescue from impending oblivion every essential fact which is necessary to their complete history ere the old pioneers have fallen into that dreamless sleep, that ceaseless slumber, which knows no waking. Pioneers of Kalamazoo county: I rejoice to meet so many of you on this interesting occasion. Your presence here to-day inspires and excites an unusual emotion. Companions in trial, privation and hardship, have met to renew those ties of sympathy and fraternal regard, which were born amid the stirring and eventful scenes of pioneer life. Thanking you for your attention and wishing you many years of happiness, of peace and prosperity, I again, in the name of our hospitable people, bid you a fervent welcome to Schoolcraft.

### DINNER.

A recess was then taken for dinner, and under the shade of the Island grove a sumptuous repast was spread which would tempt even an anchorite to forget his vows. The people of Schoolcraft had provided tables, water and all other comforts, so that nothing was wanting.

### JUDGE WELLS.

The president first called on Hon. Judge Wells, who said in rising: "I cannot help contrasting the present day with one back in '33, when I first made my appearance on the great prairie. I would be willing to close my remarks right here with an acknowledgment that for all that I am, for whatever of limited consequence I have been in the world, I am indebted to the old settlers of this prairie." He then read the following address:

What is the object of this assemblage? Why have we an organization called the Pioneer Society of the county of Kalamazoo? Is it solely for the purpose of meeting once each year and extending friendly greeting; of setting aside for a few hours the cares and worry of life, and with pleasant faces and kind words giving to each other the salutation of, How do you do? God bless you! Good-bye! All this is well. If we have jostled each other in the days that are past, if our interests have conflicted, if at any time we have thought harshly of each other, this annual gathering is a good time to forget and forgive, to sink out of sight the dark shadow and to look only on the soft sunshine of life. If we so practice to-day, we shall lift from our remaining hours of life a possible weight that could have no other influence than to make us unhappy. There is another mission, however, connected with these annual meetings of the pioneers—it is to gather in from personal relation, while we are assembled, the incidents connected with the first settlement of the county, the characteristics of the men and women who held a firm reliance in a wise Providence, and had faith in their own planning and every day industrious effort. From these incidents, from these peculiar and marked characteristics of pioneer men and women, thus recorded, the future historian may turn out what will interest those who may follow us during the year 1900, and the century that is then to be opened. There are other topics that might be treated of, the character and surface of the country when first entered upon by the white man; the extent of inland lakes, the size and quality of water discharged by its streams, the capacity of its various soils for the production of grains, fruits and roots; its climate, so as to determine in the future how far it has been changed by the destruction of its forests; the habits, practices and methods of living of the pioneers, so as to determine whether with all his exposure he was not just as likely to live to a vigorous old age as the man of the present day, who passes through life in a well planned house, with gas or kerosene to enable him to read the evening news, a fresh paper collar to put on every morning, and a chance to hold a good paying county or State office, or to go to Lansing or Washington and make a noodle of himself. The growing stock of boys and girls in Michigan, at present, are seemingly different from those of the same age in the years ranging from 1835 to 1840. Then red stockings and base ball were unknown. A ride of fifty miles out and return between breakfast and sundown on a basket picnic was not ventured upon, for the simple reason that we were without a mile of railroad in the country. A "pull back" in a lady's dress, if described to some of the grandmothers of the young ladies present, would have called out the exclamation "did you ever!" and might have caused an arrest on suspicion that it was an attempt to frighten young men who were inclined to marry. It is not my province on this occasion to speak of the past as the best, or as the present one grade inferior to the marked good time that we had in Kalamazoo county forty years ago; then, as now, the people might be classed as good, bad, and indifferent; then, as now, some of the men were ugly looking and ugly acting, when they made special effort in this direction; then, as now, the women were about as near right as the good or bad conduct of the men would allow them to be. Let us all agree to this as the rule: To praise the past, be satisfied with the present, and hope for the future.

My own judgment, for some years past, has led me to the conclusion that there was more of individual character among the people that we associated with in Michigan thirty and forty years since, than we find now. Let each one present, whose history carries him back in this county for that time, call up the men and women of the then past in this vicinity, and compare them with those of the present, and see if this idea is not realized. Is there a man or woman in this assemblage whose residence and recollection runs back thirty years on Prairie Ronde who fails to remember as marked men, with peculiarities never to be forgotton, James Smith, Joseph Addison Smith, Thaddeus Smith, Uncle Billy Smith, Harry Smith, and old Jimmy Smith? I believe I could talk a full hour in describing the good qualities of these pioneer Smiths, and I should dislike to spend five minutes in speaking of their faults, and vices, if they had any. Rev. Benjamin Taylor, and Rev. William Taylor, the first who explained the precepts of the Bible with more rapidity of utterance than any other man of his day and generation; his brother William gave his monitions from the pulpit in fewer words, but always to an audience who had faith in his sincerity; both these men were examples of honest living and integrity. Remember, I am now speaking only of the dead. The Harrisons, I believe, and there was a tribe of them, are all living except Bazel Harrison, who more than rounded out his full one hundred years, and went to his grave, knowing, as he said, no enemy all through life. Over in the northwest neck of the Prairie, among the first settlers were the Fletchers, George and Tommy, Darius Wells, a just man, Josiah Rosecrants, who came from Schoharie county, New York, and who believed that a man must have some Dutch blood in him to approach perfection; then, as his next neighbor, was John Nesbitt, who was a true Irishman all over, and who believed that the "Emerald Isle" at no distant day would get back to its former glory, won from it by the fraud and violence of England. Tommy Barber, James Bates, John Kelly, Joel Clark, Sam Hackett, Alanson Wood, Abner Calhoun, John Cowgill, Christopher Bair, Stephen Hoyt, and Erastus Williams, now recently deceased, were farmers in the same neighborhood; each had peculiar and marked characteristics; they filled well the position in life assigned to them.

I might lead you around the margin of Prairie Ronde and over on Gourd Neck and call up names, familiar to the pioneers present as the names of their own household, for in this early day everybody knew everybody here, and there was that kind of sympathy and community of feeling that led to intimacy and a hearty "God bless you," every time you met your neighbor. We were all neighbors, all friends, and it might be that this bond of union, this seeming disposition to stand by each other and be one big family had its influence in making men, not so good in the country they came from, quite a little better here. I will call up a few other names of pioneer people in this vicinity, whom to overlook and forget would be sinful on our part. There was old Mr. Reuben Edmunds, who had about fulfilled the injunction "be faithful and multiply;" he had sons and daughters, I don't know how many; he stood firm on his feet, for in person he was about as broad as he was long, and in principle and correct action he was as fine as in person. William Duncan, his son Delamore, and Colonel Fellows were known to all of us, and had character for integrity and intelligence. Jonathan Wood, Jonathan Garver and Joe Bair were the three best shots with the rifle in all western Michigan. I hardly need mention the names of Edwin H. Lothrop and Steven Vickery; they were for many years the true representative men of their respective friends over a large part of Kalamazoo county. For a time it seemed as though whatever office of honor or profit was held by any one else, it was because Lothrop and Vickery did not want it. They were both far above the average in culture and business ability, and the confidence of the public was not misplaced. In the northeast part of Big Prairie Ronde was "Virginia Corners," peopled mainly by the Bursons and Browns, from Loudon county, Virginia. "Uncle Aaron Burson" was a man of unbounded energy and great activity. He had great faith in the Bursons, and when he and his boys pushed together they made things move.

Isaiah Burson once started a theory of creating intense heat by the use of water for fuel; he failed to reduce his theory to practice. I suppose it was because there was too much damp in the water. "Virginia Corners" was also the home of Dr. David E. Brown, Dr. Isaac Brown and John Brown, brothers, who were well known to all the people of Prairie Ronde. The first was for many years standard authority in the medical profession over a wide portion of Kalamazoo and St. Joseph counties. He was no bread pill or small dose doctor. If you said you were sick, he took you at your word and made you familiar with calomel and castor oil, to an extent that made you hope you might never be sick again. Robert Frakes, of "Gourd-Neck Prairie," devoted much of his time to fast horses, and at the age of 83 years moved west to Missouri because this country was getting too thickly settled. He was a true friend and always held the confidence of those who knew him. One more name I add to the list, and leave others to be mentioned at future meetings—Abram I. Shaver, in looks and language unlike all others. He could use the English language as no other man ever used it, and yet you never failed to catch his meaning. Once he was offended at one of his neighbors, and said that he behaved in a rantankerous and oblique manner, and that his language was very clandestine.

I have spent some time in Washington city; the men whom I have been telling about might not, in their old-time garments and plain language, shine very conspicuously if there, but as the possessors of much good sense in their walks of life, for honest dealing and integrity of character they would be up and dressed every time, and a little in advance of most of the officials down there on the Potomac.

At the close of Judge Wells' address "The Young Pioneer," a poem written by E. L. Brown for the meeting at Kalamazoo three years ago, was sung by a quartette consisting of Mrs. Gainsley, Miss Isa Smith, Jonas Allen, and Henry Smith, accompanied by Mrs. McLeod on the organ, and Walter Smith on the cornet. A telegram of good wishes from James Taylor and Barney Vosburg, was read. The president announced that Mr. G. V. N. Lothrop was unable to be present, and called on

### GENERAL DWIGHT MAY

as the next speaker. He opened his remarks by saying that he had not come to make a set speech. He attributed the progress of Michigan largely to the character of the settlers, who were descendants of the Plymouth colony pilgrims, the first pioneers of the northern country. He drew a fine contrast between the descendants of this colony, cool headed and large hearted, and the descendants of the Jamestown colony, hot and rash. Michigan has none of the Jamestown blood. He presented the following figures, showing the present prosperity of our State and county, and proving conclusively that the present times are not nearly so hard as some people would have us believe. In 1820 Michigan had a population of only 9,048. In 1830, 32,531. This population has increased rapidly till the year 1874 saw 1,334,031 people within our borders, and the number has probably increased to a million and a half. Kalamazoo county in 1834 had 3,124, and in 1874 32,284. As showing the material prosperity of the State, we note that in 1878 we raised 30,000,000 bushels of wheat, valued at as many dollars. Our mines produced in 1874 (the last available date) $15,000,000 worth of ores, and the same year our forests turned out lumber of three times that value. To-day the press issues in the lower peninsula 20,000,000 copies annually of periodicals,—a strong contrast with forty-five years ago when we could not get enough newspapers to wad our guns for squirrel hunting. In 1878 we had 476,806 children, of whom 359,702 attended school. They were taught by 13,383 teachers, receiving salaries amounting to $1,935,229,91, in 6,154 school-houses, valued at $8,937,091. Mr. May closed with a fine tribute to the people of Schoolcraft prairie. Though many of the residents may have left for other regions, not one of them but would get back if he could.

The president next called for E. Lakin Brown, whose speech was as follows:

### SPEECH BY E. LAKIN BROWN.

*Mr. President, old Pioneers, Neighbors and Friends:*

I will say but a few words, mainly to draw a picture, as accurately as I can, of Prairie Ronde when I first came to it, with a short and running sketch of some leading events which have happened since; all of which are mere remembrances to the pioneer of that day, but are not so familiar to those who have been born since that time.

On the 5th day of November, 1831, I finished a long and tedious journey of over three weeks from Vermont, by riding from Bronson, now Kalamazoo, after sunset, on horseback, in company with H. B. Huston. The road was the old Indian trail, that led from Kalamazoo river to Harrison's lake, and from there to the Big Island.

Schoolcraft was already in existence,—on paper. Stephen Vickery had that week made the plat and run the lines of the principal streets, for the proprietor, Lucius Lyon, under the direction of Dr. David E. Brown.

The log store and dwelling, all in one, stood near where my tenement house now is, and a frame barn, thirty by forty, was raised and being finished, David Hill, carpenter. All this was the property of Smith, Huston & Co. The barn is now the east part of my old barn, and still in good condition. My first labor in Michigan was shingling said barn, and it was the first framed barn on Prairie Ronde. A little frame for a cabinet shop had been raised the day I came, for a young man from New Hampshire named Edwin M. Fogg. It is still standing just north of John Earl's garden. Johnson Patrick had partly finished a small story-and-a-half framed house, a half mile east of the village, where Willie Cobb now lives, and was then living in it. This completes the list of all the buildings at and about Schoolcraft, and the framed buildings I have mentioned were all the framed buildings on the prairie, or in the county, with the exception of Smith, Huston & Co's store at Kalamazoo, built that season. The prairie, seen by the bright sun of Sunday morning, November 6th, seemed wondrously beautiful and grand. It was simply in a state of nature, covered with a pretty rank growth of grass, then dry and sere, no tree except the Big Island grove and one or two other small groves; no roads, no fences, no houses; for the log cabins of the settlers were all at the edge of the timber, and I think not one of them could be seen from the old store at Schoolcraft. The effect of the scene upon one who had lived all his life among the wild and rugged mountains of Vermont was striking and solemn. I never tired of contemplating its unrivaled beauty. Pardon me, if I quote from myself a few lines from a description of the prairie in summer.

"By gay green wood surrounded,
By leafy rim adorned and bounded;
Yet so distant is the fringe
That it wears a purple tinge;

And when the setting sun
  With its softened light is shining,
Its mellow, yellow beams
  With the purple haze entwining,
Ye well may gaze admiring
  At the magic scene before ye,
For the prairie seems encircled
  By a diadem of glory!"

I should be glad to name the settlers who were already established on Prairie Ronde and Gourd-Neck, with a running commentary upon their peculiarities, many of them men of note in various ways, and whose names are connected with the early history of the county. But I have not time to do so, and besides much has been already said and written about them. They were mostly plain, uneducated men, from Ohio, Kentucky and Virginia, five or six from Vermont, about as many from Massachusetts, one or two families from Connecticut, and at least one young man from New Hampshire.

As there were scarcely more than half a dozen who had more than the mere rudiments of education, and many none at all, so there were not more than that number who brought to the prairie any considerable amount of money. A few had a few hundred dollars each, the larger part literally nothing. As the old Smith, Huston & Co.'s store was the only place of resort for the whole prairie, the winter of 1831-2 gave opportunity of witnessing many scenes and characters new, interesting and peculiar, to one just from New England. In general, however, the people were frank, honest and friendly. The Virginians of Virginia Corners, and the Vermonters especially, always fraternized, partly, perhaps, because they were all Henry Clay whigs; and I have always remembered old Aaron Burson, the patriarch of that colony, with affectionate regard. But I cannot stop to particularize. We passed the winter of 1831-2, a long, cold, snowy winter, as merry and jolly as we could be, without fire in the store till late in the winter. But spring came at last, and brought its hopes, its disappointments, and its wonderful panorama of changes in the scenes of nature around us.

Early in March the rank growth of last year's grass, dried by the sun and wind, was set on fire and the whole prairie burned over, leaving it bare and black as midnight. Then in a few days came the beautiful flowers, covering the whole prairie with one uniform kind and color; first, the blue violet; then the purple phlox, and this succeeded by some other color. In July and August a tall, yellow flower, the name of which I do not know, mixed profusely with the tall grass, gave yellow as the predominant color. But all was wild and native to the soil—not a spear of any of the cultivated grasses, not a leaf or flower of red or white clover was to be seen—and the eye and heart used to so long to see them. But all was wild, with a peculiar, rank, sickening smell, that even now almost brings back the shivers of the ague.

Great hopes were entertained of the prosperity of emigration that spring would bring to our new settlement. But with the very opening of spring came the Black Hawk war, and a little later that new and terrible scourge, the cholera. These together gave a total check to the tide of emigration that was expected, and the summer passed drowsily away, doing little but prepare for the abundant supply of fever and ague for the early autumn. But I cannot pass the excitement and stir caused by the first alarm of the Black Hawk war, without mentioning an incident or two connected with it. Of course the powerful militia of the county was at once called out, and the response was in general bold and warlike. A few, however, were greatly frightened, among the number, Josiah Rosecrants, an old Mohawk Dutchman, who lived near the Nesbitts, on the northwest corner of the prairie, started at once with all his stock, bag and baggage, for the east. I well remember that we yarded and milked his cows the first night at Schoolcraft. But the courage of the Rosecrants family was soon to be vindicated. His son, Mortimer, was then a young lad. In due time he was admitted a cadet at West Point, was duly graduated, and entered the army as lieutenant.

The war with Mexico occurred and young Rosecrants carried the colors of his company at the storming of Chapultepec, getting especial notice for his bravery. The northwest corner of Prairie Ronde has since then given a specimen of its prowess, for Corporal Munger was a prominent figure in the capture of Jeff. Davis.

But it was at the battle of Bloody Run, in the Black Hawk war expedition, that cowardice and bravery showed conspicuous. It was there that Pete Wygant, the experienced frontiersman and old hunter, absolutely refused to fall into line when the alarm was given, and vehemently declared that he was not going to stand in the front rank of battle, and his brother Abe shouldn't.

In the meantime, amid all the roar and confusion, could be heard the voice of droll Dan Barber, besieging the commissary wagon, and calling out lustily for ammunition, declaring his intention to "shoot whole bars of lead and kegs of powder."

Such were the scenes at the battle of Bloody Run, so called because there was no battle and no blood was shed.

On one of the hot summer days of 1832, when the news was daily being received of the fatal work of that new and terrible disease, the cholera, many having died in Detroit and Ann Arbor, including a leading business man, a cousin of mine, and some well known persons at Marshall and Nottawascepe, Addison Smith and myself were sitting at the door of the old log store, gloomily discussing the state of affairs, when a man quite advanced in years approached on foot, with a weary, sad, sickly look, and greeting us in a woebegone way, sat down beside us. He was from Gull Prairie, and said he was a Massachusetts man and was on his way to White Pigeon, on some land business. But he was sick, felt terribly, and he believed he was going to have the cholera. Again and again he would say, in his quaint New England dialect—"I vum, I wish I was to hum." We cheered him up as well as we could, gave him all the medicine our dispensary contained, of which peppermint drops was a leading article, and after resting awhile he said he felt better, and started on his way to White Pigeon. The old man said his name was Samuel Brown, and I suppose was no other than Deacon Samuel Brown, the well known pioneer of Richland, whose death occurred not long since.

After this rather dreary year, prospects brightened a little, and from 1833 to 1836 the settlement of western Michigan increased rapidly.

In 1837 hard times came in earnest. The money question was uppermost. The United States bank was broken up and financial anarchy held sway. Then came the wild-cat and red-dog—genuine fiat money. Everybody had enough and more than enough. The difficulty was, it was good for nothing. Business men were ruined, farmers and others became involved in the wreck of worthless banks, and the settlement and prosperity of the country was materially retarded.

The good people of Prairie Ronde, like the rest, thought it highly important that they should have a bank, notwithstanding not a soul of them had a dollar to loan, but all wanted to borrow. So the Farmers' Bank of Prairie Ronde was organized; plenty of beautiful notes were procured, and everything ready to issue money and make no end of trouble. And here you must permit me to take credit to myself and claim to have saved this community from the disgrace and loss and litigation that would have certainly followed the starting of the bank and the issue of the bills. I was cashier, and as such absolutely refused to sign or issue a single note. The whole system was going to pieces, and after a while the stock paid in was returned to the owners, expenses deducted, and that was the end of it.

That whole banking fiasco taught me one simple lesson, but a most important one,—let those bank who have money to loan, not those who want to borrow.

But my time is more than up, and I must leave the thousand things I should be glad to say to a more convenient season.

The following "auld lang syne," written for the occasion by Hon. E. L. Brown and printed on slips for the use of the audience, was then sung, led by quartette, organ and cornet. We omit the first two verses, which follow closely the original, and also the chorus at the end of each verse, which has the refrain of "we'll hae a clasp o' friendship yet for auld lang syne:"

We've come, old friends, with greetings warm
And kindly cheer to join,
And tell the well remembered tales
Of auld lang syne.

We've seen when all the prairie land
Was gay wi' gowans fine,
But we've gathered mony a harvest there
Sin' auld lang syne.

We've toiled in field and forest wild
Frae morning sun till dine,
Now kindly is our evening rest
Sin' auld lang syne.

We came when thirty told the year,
And now 'tis seventy-nine,
But time has fled with eager haste
Sin' auld lang syne.

And mony a friend whose cabin rude
Stood near to mine and thine,
Has gone to try the better land
Sin' auld lang syne.

And here's a hand, my trusty fiere,
And gie's a hand o' thine,
And we'll have a right gude friendly grip
For auld lang syne.
For auld lang syne, etc.

### MR. DEWING'S REMARKS.

The president then introduced Mr. W. G. Dewing, of Kalamazoo, as a pioneer to whom more than to any other we owe the existence of the pioneer society and its pleasant gatherings. Mr. Dewing said he believed this was the ninth annual meeting, and he believed none had been jollier, though all had been larger than the first. That was meant for a mere dinner of friends at the Kalamazoo house and there it had been suggested to form a county society. The annually increasing numbers attending the meeting of this society showed conclusively that the movement was in the right direction and had taken deep root. The pioneers have reason to be proud of their work; they have founded the schools, colleges and churches, but the speaker believed that there is a long afternoon of life left for many of them yet. When fifty years hence their grandchildren reviewed the work of the pioneers' society he wanted them to find results other than pleasant annual meetings and good dinners. He would offer some suggestions as to what that work might be. First we want a good county poor-house. He would like a petition sent from each township in the county to the board of supervisors for a suitable building for this purpose. He had recently visited the county farm and had found it an old wreck of a building with no provision for ventilation, nor for warming. There was no possibility of dividing the inmates, but all had to be crowded into a little room much too small. The sick were even worse off; the new building should be provided with an infirmary. This brought him to his second suggestion, the establishment of a State pioneers' hospital. Every county in England is provided with a hospital where the needy sick can receive competent medical treatment free of charge. He did not expect that the Kalamazoo county pioneers could alone maintain such a hospital; but if they should start the movement by promising one, two, or three thousand dollars, to be paid in as many years, he thought all the other counties of the State would fall into line, in imitation of our county organization, as they did when eight years ago we organized a pioneers' society. All other county societies, and the State organization itself, were the offspring of this society. Could the pioneers of Kalamazoo county accomplish these results, the pioneer Pioneers' Society of the State would have accomplished something.

Dr. J. A. B. Stone of Kalamazoo was called out and said he had not come expecting to speak, but when the president informed him that he would be expected to speak after dinner, it occurred to him that the sufferings of the pioneers would make an interesting topic. We like to recount past sufferings and tell of shipwrecks after we have got safely to land. But now that he was up to tell them he actually could not remember a single hardship. Can any man or woman who has spent forty-five years in this county remember a single evil they have passed through? If so let him stand up and tell it. Have not all these years been years of happiness? But perhaps the past looks pleasant because the present is so good. All over the country we see signs of progress. Everything is better than formerly. Other speakers have recounted the increase in quantity, let me fix your minds on the growth in quality. You raise better wheat than you did thirty years ago, better grass, bigger potatoes and more in the hill, better cattle, and better horses,—think of Barnum trying to buy a span in this county for $2,000; better sheep, better chickens, and bigger eggs; everything to eat is better, better, better. But there has been an improvement in the human family; we have better men and women than forty years ago. He meant no disparagement to those pioneers who have passed away; but a view of the men present and on the platform would show them better and prove the truth of Darwinism, that mankind is developing upward. He used to think some of these men had imperfections, but to-day he thought them nearly perfect. So the women were better and wiser. In proof of this, if he were to call for the best woman here to-day, there would be a general uprising of all the women present. But the coming generations are even better. Our children and grandchildren will be greater in mind and better in heart than the people of to-day.

### HON. N. A. BALCH

said that in 1837 he felt considerable solicitude as to the future which the speakers to-day had pronounced so glorious. The settlers, believing in the saying of the father of our country that "intellect is the mother of liberty," were striving to provide the institutions necessary for the training of their children. The various religious denominations were founding colleges which have since done good work. But the settlers wanted a school undenominational and unpolitical and founded the State university. General May graduated at this school in its second class and had honored it. Paul W. H. Rawls, another Kalamazoo man belonging to the first class, fought bravely and died in the late war. The reputation of this university is good—second to none, the speaker claimed, in the world. Her graduates have taken important places and filled them with honor. Judge Cooley is an honor to the university and a characteristic Michigan man, having received his education, common-school, academic, and legal, in the State. Another of the institutions founded by the pioneers has a good reputation,—the State Insane asylum. For all the disturbance caused recently by hard stories of its management, he thought it could not be in a very bad condition, since the legislative committee finally concluded that everything about the institution was about as it should be, except the lunatics themselves.

The audience were then delighted by a coronet and organ duet from Walter Smith and Mrs. McLeod, which we cannot call anything short of magnificent.

Captain R. F. Judson was introduced and made a jolly, rollicking speech that put every one into good humor. He pointed out that the growth of the past had been largely in physical prosperity; the men of the future would distinguish themselves as pioneers along the line of the great march of intellectual development. The growth of the future will be in connection with the facts and demonstrations of science.

Mr. Van Buren was next called on. He excused himself from the fatigue of a long address, promising the people present the pleasure of reading his address in to-day's Telegraph. He took up a few minutes, however, in pointing out some of the characteristics of the old log school-house days of teaching and learning, and suggested that there was a rich field, as yet untouched, for the future historian of our county. The following is the written address he would have delivered:

### GEORGE L. GALE, FOUNDER OF GALESBURG.

> "Every heroic poem is at bottom a biography—the life of a man; and it may be said, there is no life of a man faithfully recorded, but is a heroic poem of its sort, rhymed or not rhymed."—*Thomas Carlyle.*

If the life of George L. Gale—the founder of Galesburg—was faithfully written it would be, in the Carlylese sense, at least, a prose epic with a hero in it, embodying much of true manliness, with a dash of audacity mingled with a spirit of adventure that often borders on quixotic extravagance. It would be interesting because the nearer we come to nature, in the portrayal of character, the more picturesque and real it becomes. It is true that men, whether in the stone, bronze, iron, or in *this* wonderful age, has, in whatever he has done, written the history of his own life. But so many of his acts have left no trace of themselves, that we find the greatest part of the history of common life unrecorded and unknown. Here and there a brilliant act leaps to light, and becomes a star in the galaxy of the world's achievements. Now and then a man for some great act secures lasting honor, or he wakes up some morning to find that fickle fortune has transferred the glory of his achievement to one of her favorites. Or the trump of fame may herald forth an act, like that single speech of Hamilton's *once*, to the world, and remain silent about it ever afterwards. Again some deeds are merely "the pride and wonder of an hour;" but most of the acts of men are written in sand or water; for the great mass of mankind, the toiling millions who do all the world's hard work, live and die—*unknown*. We are writing of a man who, whatever his talents, faults or merits may have been, has written his name on one of the pages of Kalamazoo county's history. His name and deeds have been chronicled; for the word Galesburg as naturally refers the etymologist or historian to George L. Gale for its origin as the word Rome refers them to Romulus for *its* origin. In gathering material for the biography of pioneer worthies, I find few of the survivors who can give anything more than a very imperfect sketch of life or character. Some recollect physique, color of hair or eyes; some remember moral traits or religious bias; others the political views or social habits, while others merely the eccentricities or faults of the man. Among all the detached and diverse opinions of the friends of George L. Gale concerning him, I find it difficult to select only those which should be given in a faithful portraiture of his character. There is enough ability, both natural and acquired, *conceded* him by all to have made a leading man in public affairs, a man of commanding influence at the bar, hustings or in legislative halls. But, often with Mr. Gale, much of his talent and influence was squandered, or when used, it was at so great a discount that he really passed for less than he was worth; because his indiscretion and unbridled impulse weakened his power and standing as a man. There again he was the reverse of this, although the very Harry Percy who could

> "Pluck bright honor from the pale-faced moon."

Yet he would carry the people and a project through where a man with four times his ability would have failed. It was a power he could use in his sphere, which, at times, like

> "The little Mincio, dribbling to the Po,
> Outdoes all the epics of the Hoang ho."

George L. Gale and William Harris came to Galesburg in 1835. Mr. Gale came from Wilbraham, Massachusetts, at which place he was married to a Miss Merrick, who, with a younger sister, came west with them. At this time he was some thirty years old. He had, after passing through the common school curriculum, his education at the popular old seat of learning at Wilbraham. Hugh M. Shafter of Galesburg, attended school at this same institution, while the Misses Merrick were there as students. Esq. Shafter's brother Oscar, who afterwards became an eminent lawyer and jurist of California, had been a student in this school; so had Governor Epaphroditus Ransom. Mr. Gale, as we have said, came here, a man of decided ability and a lawyer by profession. He had stopped at Marshall and also at Verona, and prospected in both places before he came to Galesburg. While the earlier settlers, who had previously located on or near the new settlement, were in the spring of 1836, busily at work felling trees, making betterments, erecting houses, and enlarging their clearings, they were startled, one day, by the arrival of a shrewd, wide awake, talkative stranger from the east. The founder of the future village had come. This was evident from his first appearance among them. For on the street he began to talk about those things which are indispensable in founding a town, water-power, a mill-race, mills and kindred subjects. And having taken a thorough view of the new settlement, and made the acquaintance of the settlers, he decided to pitch his tent among them. While Mr. Gale was naturally endowed with the practical discernment to see the thing necessary to be done, and had the ability and energy to undertake an enterprise, his imagination was very apt to take him from the regions of practical sense and ability into the realms of Eldorado magnificence. He had a mind full of projects, and, as said, the courage and audacity to start them even where others could not see the way to make the first move. And everything must go with a vim that he started. And if he failed to carry out schemes to completion, many a valuable undertaking and measure would not have been begun had it not been for him. A man who talks about and agitates a hundred different projects in which the community are to be benefited, ought to have the credit of suggesting them, if he does not complete them. It may have been through his endeavors that they finally obtained them. But, as a general rule, the person who "beats about the bush and starts up the game," seldom gets the credit for the good resulting from his labors.

"It appears from the plat on record in the register's office, bearing date January 9, 1837, that the original proprietors of Galesburg were George L. Gale, William Harris, Nathan Cothren, Gideon Matthews, James Reynolds, and Alonzo Matthews, F. J. Littlejohn, surveyor." This village plat, as that sturdy old pioneer, Esquire Shafter, remarked, "is truly characteristic of Gale; he always did things with a rush, and on the grand scale. He included in his village plat an area sufficient for a city of 40,000 inhabitants." Nobody knew how much money Gale had when he came here. He bought some land and erected a house for his family. But he had some money and a rich stock of assurance; with these as capital, he commenced business, and "the wealth of the Ind" could not have started the project of digging the mill race, and erecting the mills quicker than Gale did with pledges from his "bank of assurance." The men were set to digging the race, with a foreman by the name of Burden. Among these men were two round-faced, flaxen-haired Welshmen, who worked on this job all summer. Gale, like an able general, kept his forces in the field as long as he could furnish "the sinews of war"—money. But when he had paid out all the "wild cat" he had, when the last dollar on "Sandstone" was gone, when the last stiver on "Singapore" was counted out, when not even a "shin-plaster" could be raised,—the great project of his life failed. Yet when the sun-browned Welshmen came to him in this extremity, courageous and plucky to the last, he replied. "D—n, it, I am pretty short just now. Work away: I'll have some money soon; you must work till I can 'operate'." But the Welshmen would not wait till he "operated." They had been told that Mr. Gale's money was gone, and they stubbornly refused to work any longer. This was the beginning of the "run" on his treasury. Gale's failure was brought about by the failure of the wild cat banks. 'Tis said that one month more of time would have tided him over all difficulties, and Galesburg would have been a perpetual source of wealth to the town ever after. The work ceased, and the race, half dug, was deserted. Gale built a frame house near the west end of the mill race, where he and his family resided. Martin Turner got out a frame for a saw-mill, which was not raised, and as Gale never paid Mr. Turner for it, he floated it down the river to Kalamazoo and sold it to Luke Whitcomb, who raised it for a saw-mill, where its "clack" for many long years mingled with the murmur of that beautiful stream.

The naming of Galesburg was an event that the old settlers distinctly remember. The denizens of the rude hamlet had assembled in Esquire Cothren's house for the purpose of naming it. Gale and Harris, the two competitors for the honor of the name, were there with their followers at the appointed time. The formalities of an organization being effected, the vote was taken. The counting of the ballots gave the honor to Gale. Hence the young hamlet was called Galesburg. Had Harris received the most votes, it would have been called Harrisburg. Mr. Harris, after having taught school in a log house south of the river, near where Luke Keith now lives, during the winter of 1838, removed soon after to McHenry county, Illinois, and the last we heard of him he was a well to do farmer. 'Tis said Gale gave Harris $100, by which he got the sole claim as to the name of the place. George L. Gale was some five feet ten inches in height, of fair complexion, dark hair and eyes, of erect stature and of brisk and gentlemanly bearing. He was highly social and companionable, fluent in speech, a good entertainer, kind and generous to friends or "the stranger within his gate." His wife and Miss Merrick, her sister, who afterwards married Horace Clark, a well known lawyer of Kalamazoo, were well educated ladies. Gale's law practice at Galesburg was not extensive nor lucrative; it consisted of pettifogging occasional suits before the justice court. He did not go into the courtroom "armed at all points with law cases, with the statute-book doubled down in dog's ears," to defend the cause of his client, but went in relying on his general knowledge of the law, and on his ready talent and shrewdness in handling the case of his client as the trial should develop it. Had he given his attention to the law, he undoubtedly would have made a good lawyer. 'Tis said he managed a case well before a justice, and could make a plea that would move "the stubborn six."

Mr. Gale, after a few years residence in Galesburg, went to Kalamazoo to reside, and gave some attention to his profession there. From Kalamazoo he removed to Paw Paw. Levi Dunning, of Galesburg, remembers meeting Mr. Gale sometime in 1849 or 1850 "on the plains" (now Nebraska), as he was going to California. This is the last record we have of him. The following incidents are given as illustrative of the times, if not of the character of the subject of this sketch. George L. Gale came to Galesburg a democrat, and remained one till 1840, when he was carried away by "the great commotion that swept the country through." It is well known as regards drinking, that Gale had an occasional "spree" and at such times he might get very hilarious. James Wright Gordon said at the log-cabin celebration in 1840 at Kalamazoo, "We are called the hard-cider party, not because we drink hard cider, but because we don't." Gale was in his glory that day. He was a recent whig convert, and the party felt that they must favor him, so he was put down as one of the speakers with Dawson and Gordon. But when he was called on for his speech, he was found at the Kalamazoo house, so happy over hard cider and "whiggery" that he had sought his bed to take it out in quiet slumbers there. He was soon found and went over to the log cabin, where, 'tis said, he made a rousing whig speech. The democrats claimed that Gordon's assertion that the whigs did not drink hard cider was false, for it was hard to find one that did not drink it.

During his residence at Paw Paw he went as a delegate to a whig convention at Jackson, and while there got drunk. When severely rebuked for it by

Willard and Grimps he indignantly replied: "As much as I dislike to disgrace you, *I had to do it;* I had to get drunk here, *in order to represent Paw Paw!*"

One day while Esquire Ransom of Galesburg was conversing with Gale, the latter struck one of his grand schemes and was soon above the small things of earth. While he was inspired with his theme the "'Squire" quoted this maxim of Franklin's: "A penny saved is twopence clear; a pin a day is a groat a year." Gale heard it, and turning to his old friend contemptuously exclaimed, "What a durned old fool that Ben Franklin was!"

His fine span of black horses are well remembered by many of the surviving pioneers, and when Gale sat behind them with the reins in his hands and John Barleycorn inspiring his brain—

> "Kings may be blest, but Tam was glorious,
> O'er the ills of life victorious."

It was in such a mood that he once met Governor Porter at Kalamazoo, and like Dan Phæton, eager to take a "drive," he gave the governor a most pressing and gentlemanly invitation to mount to the seat and he would whirl him about town with a speed and in a style that would eclipse the finest span of horses in Michigan. 'Tis said that the governor, probably remembering the sad result of young "Phæton's drive," declined Gale's polite invitation. We have done the best we could with the little material we had in writing this biographical sketch. We hope it will be the means of calling out facts and information from others concerning the subject of this sketch.

When Mr. Van Buren sat down the quartette sang "For the morn make ready," and were followed by Mr. Asa Stoddard, "the farmer poet," who recited the poem written by himself for the meeting four years ago at Vicksburg and published in the *Telegraph* with the report of that meeting. Mr. Alex. Cameron closed the exercises at the stand by thanking the people from the northern part of the county for turning out in so large numbers.

The president then pronounced the meeting adjourned, and the crowd began slowly to disperse, those who came on the train walking or riding to the depot, and the large number of people who came by private carriages slowly leaving for home. Every one was in good spirits and felt that they had had a good time. In fact they all say that the pioneer meetings are the best of the year. We cannot close without paying a tribute of admiration for the farmer's families who attended. We wandered about among the tables they had spread and we have never seen a more inviting sight. Evidently Kalamazoo county farmers are enjoying a season of prosperity. The train left for Kalamazoo at five o'clock, making the run in about 30 minutes.

## BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH OF THE LATE MRS. D. B. WEBSTER, OF KALAMAZOO.

BY MRS. LUCINDA H. STONE, OF KALAMAZOO.

From the Detroit Post and Tribune of December 8, 1878.

An event has occurred during the last week that induces me to lay aside several subjects to which my attention has been drawn by correspondents to speak of this, which should be a subject of interest to all those for whom these familiar "Talks" are especially designed. I refer to the sudden death, already noticed in these columns, of Mrs. D. B. Webster, of Kalamazoo. It is not to moralize upon sudden death, nor yet to write a common obituary, that I do this. There are those to whom these offices or duties would more appropriately fall than to me. But it is to speak of a rare example of fidelity and devotion to the cause of education such as could be accomplished through a library association and a literary club connected with it, that I make this digression from the usual character of articles to which these columns of the Post and Tribune are devoted.

It is a little more than twenty-seven years ago that a few ladies of Kalamazoo met and formed themselves into a Library association for the establishment of a good circulating library, at that time very greatly needed in that place, as then no public or even school library of any value existed. For this object money was raised by subscriptions, membership fees and in various other ways. Winter courses of lectures were sometimes maintained by the association, sometimes so-called socials were held, with varied literary or musical entertainments for the evening. Occasionally parlor theatricals or dramatic readings were resorted to, for which a small admittance fee was charged or a voluntary contribution received, so that in a short time a well-selected library was gathered. Almost from the first Mrs. Webster has served as librarian and also as treasurer of the association, with the exception of a very few weeks of occasional absence for a summer vacation journey, when some one has filled her place as librarian. With the duties of librarian she also took upon herself the entire care of the library rooms; they were either swept or dusted by herself or by her own servant under her eye, and for the sake of economy for the library and to avoid the careless wear of the carpet she for the most part during all these years lighted her own fires. Every book purchased was covered with thick paper, carefully titled and numbered in a hand as clear as printing, before it was put upon the shelf to be drawn; when this cover was worn it was replaced by a new one; thus the original covers of every book in that library are now almost as fresh as when the book was purchased, be it one, five, or twenty-seven years ago. If a book was noticed with loosening leaves when it was returned, it was withdrawn from the shelves and laid in the repairing pile under the counter, but it was not at once sent to the binder for repairs. Mrs. Webster had, through long and careful practice, herself almost learned the binder's art, and many a half-day during the year was spent in the library rooms, recovering and repairing books. The amount of time she gave to such work was immense. Mrs. Webster was a lady of means; and she chose this way of exercising her benevolence, though I am not aware that it limited her in benevolent giving in other directions. For nearly twenty years she had been a widow, and for a longer time childless. The library took the place of children and family, and she worked for it apparently with the same loving and unselfish interest as she would have done for these. I think it is not too high an estimate of the time she devoted to it, to suppose that for twenty years she must, at least, have given one-fifth of her entire time, for which she would never receive any compensation whatever. Being treasurer she often advanced money for the association when it was needed, and in considerable sums; sometimes waiting many months for reimbursement, but whether the sum were $10 or $100, or more, she could never be persuaded to take a cent of interest.

Such was her care of the rooms, such her nicety and taste that they were always like some pleasant, well-ventilated private parlor or library. Dust was never allowed to gather on the frames of the numerous pictures upon the walls. The glass over the engravings was as clear as over those in her own parlor; casts, busts, and statuettes were carefully covered when the rooms were closed after every club meeting and library day. Such was her care of the books that during the twenty-seven years of the existence of the library but one volume has ever been lost. A few copies have been read so much as almost to wear off the letters from the page and wear through the paper. Such books have been duplicated, and of such Mrs. Webster has kept a mental or written record, so that she knew precisely towards what kind of books the public taste inclined, and how and for what kind of reading it had changed, in the course of the years of her service. Thus, too, she kept trace of many a poor boy or girl in town who had a marked taste for reading, and brought them under good influences in other ways. She seemed never to forget children who had thus interested her, and would recall them with great distinctness when they had grown up, or years after they might have removed from town. In her judgment of books she was very conservative; by some of the members of the association she was sometimes thought narrow. She belonged to the old school, rather than the new, in science and religion, in her judgment of authors and books. But she was so conscientious, so true to her principles, and so unselfish in her recommendation of books, that she inspired those who did not agree with her with a singular respect for her opinions.

The financial books of the association were kept with beautiful accuracy and neatness; no mistakes were ever discoverable in her accounts, so that the committee appointed to audit her accounts every year were accustomed to say that it was mere form to go over all those figures, but it was a form on which she always insisted. Every bill, from the beginning of her service has been kept, I will venture to assert, for she could at any time put her hand on any bill or by-law at a moment's warning. Newspapers containing notices of entertainments given by the association, lectures given under its auspices, or whatever in any way related to its interests, were carefully preserved by her, and could be drawn from files or referred to at any time. Just what a mother would do for a child, she did for the library. She was singularly modest and reticent and very diffident in regard to her own abilities, except in the sphere which she prescribed for herself. She could never be persuaded to write an article for the club, or to take part in any discussion, but there was never a more attentive listener, and no one could better recall the exact form of an expression used than Mrs. Webster.

It had been her ambition for many years to have the association own a building that should be sufficiently spacious to accommodate the library proper, afford room to hang in good light their pictures, of which they have some very valuable and beautiful ones, and also furnish a large room that could be used for club meetings, lectures, and musical entertainments, such as would naturally come under the patronage of a club whose object was purely literary, scientific, or art study, and several years ago she offered to give a valuable lot, adjoining her own residence, on which to erect such a building, but just then the village having erected a new town corporation hall, containing more rooms than were needed, and feeling justly how great a blessing to the town the library association with its excellent library had been for many years, they generously offered, free of rent to the association, some large and beautiful rooms which the association has occupied for ten years, and from which, as these rooms are now greatly needed for the rapidly increasing public library, the ladies have just removed to others temporarily arranged for their accommodation while awaiting the completion of a very beautiful building, towards the erection of which Mrs. Webster had largely contributed, and for which she had longed, seemingly, more than for the accomplishment of any other earthly desire. It was really with a kind of religious enthusiasm that she had hoped for this, and quietly but most perseveringly and unremittingly labored for it during many years. It is such enthusiasm as this, I am persuaded, that has inspired all the efforts which have accomplished the great deeds that have blessed humanity. Our fathers of the age of faith did not overestimate the power of faith; they only misconstrued, misapplied its power. It removes mountains, no less because we do not always see them removed, nor because the miracle is not accomplished within the limits of time we have, in our finite wisdom, prescribed for its accomplishment. In a very few weeks would have been fulfilled all Mrs. Webster's long delayed hopes, the dearest object of her labors during a quarter of a century. To us it seems very sad that having lived and labored and hoped so long, she could not have enjoyed the fruition of all these years of labor and hope. But it is not often thus? How many die with the Mecca of their life-long dreams just in sight!

"And longing eyes and outstretched arms
Tell of the goal unwon."

As nothing walks with aimless feet through this human life of ours, there must be some useful lesson enwrapped in such events or incidents of our real life. And to me it is this: That the greatest recompense of such a life as that so suddenly closed, or, if we may say and hope it, interrupted, is to that life itself in the daily, hourly labor given it to perform. Mrs. Webster's own life was enriched—its enjoyments multiplied a hundred fold—by the very labors her head and heart and hands daily performed. Work, useful work, is the joy of life; its own rich reward, rather than the momentary satisfaction of seeing with the material eye just what that work has accomplished.

On the afternoon of her death, the 27th of the month just closed, she was told by the builder of the new edifice if she would watch from her window that afternoon she would see the first smoke rise from the furnace they were putting in, and which would indicate to her the approaching completion of the building. She did watch, and great was her enjoyment of the sight, and at tea she related the circumstance with cheerful satisfaction to her friends. She was feeble, but friends spent the early evening with her, leaving her in good spirits at eight o'clock. An hour afterwards she was found dead in her chair, her head leaning on the marble slab of her dressing table. A taper was in her hand, and she was evidently proceeding to light the gas in her sleeping-room, when fainting, or weary, or blinded, she sat down, leaning her head for recovery in the position in which she was found.

To those who knew Mrs. Webster intimately, this must seem the most fitting close to such a life as hers had been; just such as suited her character in every way; just such as she would have chosen could she herself have ordered it. Without any marked weakness or decay of her powers, any formal or hardly conscious renunciation of her useful work, quietly, silently, without attracting any attention, disturbing or ruffling the flow of the daily life of others, she sat down a moment to rest and awoke in the hereafter! The lesson of her life was, as I said above, in the life itself, not in its close. It was in the faithful, conscientious, unselfish doing of just what she felt in herself the ability to do well, and for a good purpose. No person ever lived that had less the reward of praise or thanks in view than Mrs. Webster. It was a trial to her friends associated with her in library work, when they by chance learned sometimes what she was doing and had done for an institution in which they were all deeply interested, not to thank her—not at least to speak of it. But she would not allow the bare mention of her gifts, or her sacrifices, or her work. She would allow no allusion to it. But what she did for the atmosphere of those rooms, those delightful parlors where so many ladies, the most intelligent and refined—the best women of the place—were accustomed to meet every week she did for the town. The influence of that association and club was not limited by the walls that enclosed the room. It created the intellectual atmosphere peculiar to that town, moulded the character and manners of the people of Kalamazoo more than any other influence that has ever been exerted there, and to no one member do we owe more for what it has done than to her whose living form has been seen among its members for the last time.

"More light!" said the dying Gœthe when the darkness of death was gathering around him. "More light; more light!" To me it was touchingly prophetic that in search of light our friend rested a moment in the darkness of death. We will hope that in the morning of renewed life she has found, like the reward of the good deeds of her life, a clearer, purer than the material light, in search of which she for a moment slept or groped in the twilight.

In reflecting upon what she did for that association, and through labors not in themselves especially intellectual, yet greatly for the promotion of intellectual culture and social refinement in the place, I cannot forbear to seize the occasion of her death to emphasize the lesson of her life. Few women, perhaps, in this State, have it in their power to do good in the way she did; few have the independent use of the time and means at her command; but in almost every town in the State there are some women who could accomplish in their way what she did in hers, to educate the women of the place, and thus greatly elevate the standard of intelligence and social refinement in families and the community, and thus to supplement or rather complement the work of our public schools. What an effect upon the real civilization of our State—even age—might a little nucleus of such women in every town produce.

## MEETING OF PIONEERS.

From the Kalamazoo Telegraph of August 25th, 1880.

### TENTH ANNUAL REUNION AND PICNIC OF KALAMAZOO COUNTY PIONEERS—THE STATE SOCIETY MEET WITH THEM.

The tenth annual picnic and reunion of the Kalamazoo pioneers came off to-day and was distinguished by the fact that the State society held their annual meeting here with them. On account of the lowery weather the multitude in attendance though large, was not like the meetings which have marked each reunion of the association heretofore. The committee of arrangements had well performed the part assigned them. They had provided tables in the court-yard on the east side for a great many people, and looked after other needs of the multitude whom they expected. The ladies of St. Johns' church had provided seats on the north side, and a tent for preparing meals for such as did not come prepared with lunches. Seats had been arranged in front of the speaker's stand on the west side, enough for a large audience. There were fewer members of the State society from abroad than the committee on invitation had expected. Mr. and Mrs. Levi Bishop and a few others, however, put in an appearance.

At half-past ten o'clock the large speaker's stand was filled with old pioneers. Hon. Stephen F. Brown, president of the county society, called the meeting to order and introduced the Rev. J. T. Robe as the first minister of any denomination who had ever preached in Kalamazoo. The venerable and reverend gentleman, still a sturdy-looking man, with firm step and clear voice, then invoked the blessing of Heaven upon the pioneers now here, and to continue the gifts of his providence and love. When Rev. Mr. Robe had closed his brief address to the throne of grace, Mr. Brown spoke as follows:

*Fellow Citizens and Pioneers of the State of Michigan:*

The pioneers of Kalamazoo county could not have assigned me a more pleasant and grateful duty than that of becoming their organ to congratulate you upon your presence among us, and in their name and in behalf of the whole people of Kalamazoo, bid you welcome to our midst. One year ago in obedience to the requirements of our society, I welcomed the pioneers of Kalamazoo county to Schoolcraft, to the "big island" where green bowers and shady trees are surrounded by the broad and fertile fields of Prairie Ronde. To-day it is my happy privilege to greet you, the pioneers of our beautiful peninsular State, and to welcome you to the "big village" where refined and hospitable people rejoice that you are with us to-day to give increased pleasure and interest to this occasion. It is fitting that the pioneers of our State should come together to narrate the trials, the incidents and advantages of our early history, and the self-denial and dangers which beset the pathway of the pioneer. It is proper and profitable to meet, to the end that a full, accurate, and satisfactory history of our State may be written, for it is from those only who are actors in the work in establishing civilization and of founding homes of peace and happiness within our border that we can learn the facts which are indispensable to the production of a valuable history of our great commonwealth. It is well that the venerable pioneers of Detroit, Jackson, Adrian, Tecumseh, Grand Rapids, and other places in our State should come together to revive the memories of olden times, that we will thereby more fully and intelligently appreciate the blessings of to-day, and the marvelous growth and advancement of our State and county. Fifty years ago Detroit had but a few inconsiderable houses, with a population of 2,222. Now the population is 119,000, with $100,000,000 of taxable property. Within the same period of time nearly every other city and town in our State has been built. Fifty years ago Michigan had a population of 31,639; now its population is 1,638,111. Where was once the unbroken forest, whose dark recesses were then made hideous by the howling of wild beasts and the whoop of the savage, naught now is to be heard but the hum of cheerful industry and the glad songs of contentment and peace. Fifty years ago the spot on which we stand had but just emerged from the undisputed possession of the red man, and the rude tamarack cabin of Titus Bronson was the only evidence that the foot of the white man had ever trodden upon the beautiful plain of Kalamazoo. To-day we meet here in the mart of trade, surrounded by palatial homes, by halls of learning and amid the shadows of temples dedicated to Christianity.

Pioneers of the State of Michigan, it was your patient labor, energy and heroic fortitude which laid the broad and enduring foundation of our prosperity and power as a State, and won for us a commanding position among the States of the great northwest. We rejoice that you are with us here to-day, to inspire us with your presence, to instruct us with your knowledge, and to aid and encourage the work of making a true and faithful history of our State.

Pioneers of Kalamazoo county: Since the last annual meeting, many facts pertaining to the early settlement of our county have been collected and published under the name and title of "History of Kalamazoo County." It is not improbable that additional facts may yet be elicited which will throw light on those already published, and increase our knowledge of the early history of our county. I will leave to other and more competent hands, the task of giving in detail, incidents and events of pioneer life.

Since we last met in annual reunion, many of our old pioneers have been summoned from their earthly labors to the peaceful realm beyond this life, and their places here will remain vacant forever. Time, in its ceaseless flight, will soon terminate the career of those who yet linger behind, and the old pioneers of our county will cease to meet to recount their adventures and their toils.

Pioneers of our State and county, you have borne the heat and burden of the day, and have opened the way for the incoming of that tide of light and prosperity which has made Michigan the happy home of her children. To you belongs the rare honor which attaches to the founders of States. A grateful people recognize the beneficence of your work, and your children and children's children will rise up and call you blessed.

Judge Wells, then in behalf of the State society, responded as follows:

*Mr. President of the Pioneer Society of Kalamazoo County, Ladies and Gentlemen:*

In behalf of the pioneers of the State of Michigan, I extend to you thanks for the kind reception given to us here this day. The Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan was fully organized on the 22d day of April, A. D. 1874, and its officers then elected, among them Judge Albert Miller, of Bay City, as its president, and Mrs. Harriet A. Tenney, of Lansing, as its secretary. The object of this State society is fully set forth in its constitution and by-laws, published in volume one of the Pioneer Collections of the State of Michigan. Membership of the State society is restricted to persons not less than forty years of age, who have resided in Michigan for twenty-five years. I see before me many persons who I am quite sure come up to the forty-year requirement. As to the other provision of twenty-five years residence, in its application to myself, I think I come up to the standard. As a citizen of Michigan, I have looked at the honest faces of all the governors from Stevens T. Mason, in 1832, to Charles M. Croswell, in 1880. I presume that I can say with truth, that they have governed the people intelligently, and I hope they have all been virtuous. Among other objects of the State Pioneer Society, it is expected that it will collect facts from people now living in reference to the early settlement of Michigan, these to be woven into history in the future. If this plan had been adopted a century since, as civilization pressed back from the Atlantic coast, we should now hold authentic and valuable facts which in our rapid advancement are blotted out of existence. History is ever imperfect, because events are not written down when they are fresh in the recollection of observers. Now, before me stands an audience, many individual members of which, I have no doubt, could detail facts and events connected with localities in Michigan which would be noted as invaluable to the historian, fifty years hence, and yet without a record made by the living witness, in less than a quarter of a century they will be lost forever. I would render an important service to rising generations if I could enlist the attention of some of those present with us to-day, and induce them to write out facts and incidents transpiring within and under their observation, that the same might be printed in coming volumes of the "Pioneer Collections" of Michigan, to be used in making up the history of our State. In the two volumes already published and now ready for delivery to all applicants at an expense of $1.25 per volume, much valuable information in reference to the State generally is embraced, and also important matter in reference to counties, towns and particular localities. Every pioneer, man or woman, will read these volumes with interest, and as they pass from page to page, events that transpired in their own neighborhood connected with its first settlement, will come back in memory and may be noted down and passed to the State historical committee,through the hands of Mrs. Harriet A. Tenney, of Lansing, who is now and has been the secretary of the State Pioneer Society from its organization, rendering, every month, valuable service without compensation. The legislature, for four years past, has made an annual appropriation of $500 to bear part of the expense of publishing the volumes, 3,500 copies, the balance of the expense of preparing the matter for publication and printing, binding and publishing, the same to be sustained and paid for by the sale of the books at less than their cost. Matter is now being carefully prepared for the publication of the third volume. It will go into print as soon as funds are realized from the sale of the two volumes already published. The second volume is an improvement on the first, and much of improvement will be manifested in the third volume. The publication of each volume involves careful labor on the part of the corresponding and recording secretaries, and the executive and historical committees, all of whom are required to serve for their love of the cause, the founders of the society having incorporated in the by-laws (sec. 8), which reads as follows: "No officer of this society shall receive any pecuniary compensation for his services." The two volumes now published contain brief sketches in reference to the early settlement of many of the counties, notes of the legislation under which they were organized, notices of many of the earlier settlers, the positions they held as township, State and church officials. As settlements are noticed in the two volumes, you are sure to find that the subject of the education of children is considered at the earliest possible date. If the pioneer had early advantages in an educational way, he was qualified to prize that advantage; if it had been his misfortune not to have become familiar with the school room, he was possessed with a decision that his children should not labor under the same disadvantage. Each neighborhood, if it numbered a half-dozen families within a square of four miles, was sure to have its log cabin where their children centered, and where as a rule (to which there might be an exception), they received careful instruction and kind treatment. As means were acquired, the demand came for better educational advantages, and now within the circle of less than half a century since our State organization, we have set up that ladder on the bottom round of which we see the five-year-old, with his finger on the letters of the alphabet, and on the top round of the same ladder the pupil coming from the normal school, the agricultural college and the university, qualified to commence the battle of life full as well as though he had lived within the shadow of the great universities of England or Germany. All this, we, the pioneers, have dotted down in our "Pioneer Collections" of two small volumes. In matters appertaining to religion, the State of Michigan has made its proper advancement. In our second volume the history of Methodism in the southwest part of

Michigan has been ably written by a minister of that sect whose polish and accomplishment in letters were acquired in our university. We are making efforts to enlist the clergy of other denominations to give us more facts connected with what has been done in the Peninsular State within a half century, and have already something in this direction in manuscript. All that I have presented to you thus far is in the way of encouragement to pioneers to give to the historical committee of the society facts for preservation.

My mission here to-day is about ended: Be brief, is an injunction oftentimes repeated at these pioneer meetings; old people are sometimes garrulous; sometimes they talk without a subject, merely for the purpose of exercising their talking propensity. I am satisfied that I cannot now render a more acceptable service to the historical and executive committees of the State Pioneer Society than to encourage the purchase of the volumes of "Pioneer Collections" already published, thus enabling them to put in press manuscript now in their possession. In lieu of this I might give you some stories of pioneer life in Michigan, which might amuse, but I leave that to others better qualified, and then again I should be taking some risk as against myself, for I own that I have not always been as sober and discreet as a judge ought to be.

If I had stories to tell you this day, the general scope of them would be, that the old people before me have been through life measurably happy. Some of us have seen tough times in the hands of doctors and lawyers, but we have pulled through. Accidental ills in life come, of course, to the pioneer. We have had our days of sadness and disquiet; we may have been at times overtasked with labor, but in summing up the whole account of life, I am sure that the people of a populous city, with all the conveniences of living about them, cannot count more red-letter days, more days of sunshine,than the pioneer in this great State of Michigan. Now, Mr. President of the Pioneer Society of the county of Kalamazoo, as I am about to let up in this talk of mine, I thank you for giving this State Society a kind reception; I thank you for presenting us to so many of your good-looking ladies and well-behaved men—they are evidently the descendants of good stock, coming mainly from New York and New England, with now and then an exception, as in my own case; I am of Maryland parentage, one step behind you, Mr. President, born as you were in the State that "never tires," "Old Virginny," the mother of presidents.

### AFTERNOON.

The gathering after dinner was larger than in the forenoon and the interest in the occasion seemed to be much more manifest, the seats being well occupied and the standing room adjacent to the stand. From 12 to 1 o'clock the tables on the east side of the court yard presented a very animated appearance, being well filled with an endless variety of good things which the farmers' wives had prepared for the occasion. Most of the table room was occupied, and this portion of the reunion seemed to be one that engaged the absorbing interest of old and young, pioneers and those who came after them, even to the present day.

Judge Briggs was the first speaker after dinner, a very large audience being before him. He related his experience and that of his father and neighbors in Allegan county, who settled in the wilds of that section in 1830. He made an interesting statement of the pioneer's life, and contended that, although the times were hard and there were many provocations, yet those old times were good times, were happy times; all were then equal, all were friends, and shared each other's joys. He made an excellent speech, and was loudly cheered at the close.

Levi Bishop of Detroit was then introduced by President Brown, and coming forward assured the audience that this was not what he expected when he came over here, but as he had been put upon the programme, he would give them a talk, not a speech. He was among others who came to Kalamazoo in 1835 to enter land; he gave a number of incidents of that period, of how full the town was of people; the hotels set one table after another as fast as possible all day long and away into the night and every table was full and in every room all the space was occupied by cots and mats, even to the kitchen, to accommodate the vast number of people here who were waiting for the land office then, at the time he speaks of, two weeks behind in making up its records. He said that while there was a great deal of evil done by speculation and speculators, yet it had the effect to bring many people into the State and to make known at the East the beauty and advantages of Michigan.

But it was to the pioneer who actually settled on the lands and converted the wilderness into cultivated farms, that the chief debt of gratitude is due; it is to him that we owe what we now possess. He closed his admirable talk by comparing our country and government with those of other lands, and with a fervent appeal to the young men of our country to foster and stand by the constitution and freedom of the country.

The next speaker was Dr. O. C. Comstock of Marshall. He spoke about ten minutes in a good talk to the people, relating some affecting incidents of his experience as a physician.

Mr. Dewey, president of the Lenawee county society, read a paper regarding Cambridge, of that county.

After Mr. Dewey had concluded his remarks Judge Cross of Centreville was introduced and made a ten minute speech or talk which was well received. In conclusion he paid a noble tribute to the women of the early days of Michigan, the wives and mothers of pioneer times.

The next speaker was Hon. Erastus J. Hussey, of Battle Creek. He gave at some length his experience as a settler in the early day and what he and others had passed through and the grand development which had taken place.

I. N. Wattles of Kalamazoo then read a paper written by H. Eastman of Withington, entitled, "My Native Town." It was written by a relation of Hon. N. A. Balch, and read at a recent centennial celebration in Withington, Vt. Mr. Wattles prefaced it with remarks of a very humerous nature. It was admirably read.

Papers were presented by A. D. P. VanBuren on "Temperance in Pioneer Days," and by Deacon Heydenburk on "The Moral and Religious Culture of Michigan," which will appear at another time. A letter was received from the venerable Jonathan Shearer, who had expected to be present, but as it was his 84th anniversary his friends had prepared for him a reception and would not allow him to leave. Hon. N. A. Balch made a short but pleasant little speech. He thanked divine providence he was permitted once more to meet with the pioneers of this county. Forty years ago there were very few gray haired men to be found in this county. But old age was not an unhappy state, and he said he was never in his life happier than now. He spoke of his efforts made in behalf of education as a teacher and friend of schools; closing with urging upon his hearers the value and importance of education.

Mr. Asa Stoddard, the farmer poet of Cooper, was then called on and read a poem. He stated that he had none prepared for this occasion, but said he would repeat one of his former poems, which he did.

After Mr. Stoddard had concluded his recitation, Judge Hall of Battle Creek was called on, and responded in an interesting talk.

After Mr. Hall had spoken, remarks were made by Rev. J. T. Robe and by Deacon Heydenburk. The exercises closed with a benediction by Rev. J. T. Robe and the meeting was over.

## THE OLD PIONEER, OR FORTY YEARS AGO.

### BY E. LAKIN BROWN, OF SCHOOLCRAFT.

Read at the reunion of the pioneers of Kalamazoo county, July 29, 1871.

How everything is changed, John, there's nothing seems the same;
And yet it was not long ago—the time when first we came.
But the years have passed so swiftly, my hair is white as snow,
And not a white hair when I came; it's forty years ago.

'Twas here I sat my stake, John, when all was wild and new;
We followed up the Indian trail and ours the first team through.
Just there our wagon stood that night; we heard the wolf howl then,
And the first sound heard as morning dawned was the boom of the prairie hen.

Then came days of trial and toil, but we weathered them bravely through,
For your grandmother had a cheerful heart, and was ever brave and true.
And your father and Jake were stout lads then, and Nancy, and Mary, and Kate,
Could lend a hand in cabin or field, and we all worked early and late.

And the Indian seemed half sad, half pleased, as our cabin logs were laid,
For he dreaded the white man's grasping hand, though fond of the white man's aid.
His sullenest moods we ever beguiled with the hand of welcome and cheer;
To his sunniest smile we trusted not, and the loaded rifle was near.

'Twas there we had the first field of wheat, right over behind the barn;
And here, where the garden and orchard are, that spring we planted corn.
'Twas a cheerful thing to see them grow on the new-turned prairie sod,
And never a harvest was gathered in with more grateful thanks to God.

We had never a barn nor a threshing floor, and the mill was far to find,
But we trod the wheat on the prairie turf and cleaned it in the wind.
For the saying is true—"there's always a way wherever there's a will,"
And I threaded the paths and forded the streams between us and the mill.

But neighbors soon began to come, and as soon as the second year,
We could count a dozen cabin smokes from where we are standing here.
'Twas a pleasant sight on the prairie's rim; and sweet as evening fell,
Was the sound of each settler's lowing kine and faintly tinkling bell.

And with settlers came the law, John, for law is the right of all;
And never a man of Saxon blood that held the law a thrall.
I served as well as I knew, John, as juror, squire, and judge;
And never false judgment stained my name through fear or favor or grudge.

I say it not in pride, John, I wanted you to know
I did my duty as I could so many years ago;
And you will be called, as I was called, between the right and wrong;
And wrong upheld will canker a life, though life be never so long.

And I've been greatly prospered in basket and in store;
And have seen such changes in forty years as were never seen before.
The country—you know its grandeur, its glory, and its fame,
And how forever has been removed the shame that stained its name.

And then the mysteries explored—the wondrous things found out—
I do not understand them, John, and yet I cannot doubt.
Two months was the time from Europe, and full two weeks from home,
And now we hear in a single day from London or from Rome.

And the huge and mighty engines, with their long and fire-drawn trains,
That are running forever a thousand ways o'er mountains and o'er plains:—
Such things had never been seen, John, the day that I came here,
And I always see their onward rush with a sense of awe and fear.

And the sun—the mighty painter—one instant and it's done—
A picture that no human hand can paint you such a one.
There's nothing done in the old way, but everything is new;
We neither sow, nor reap, nor thresh in the way we used to do.

The old neighbors who came first, John, and settled here by me,—
Some sold and went, and some have died,—there's only two or three;—
They may have been rough and rude, John, not always just and true;
But, dear old friends, the tear will start whenever I think of you.

And her, the kindest friend of all,—the dearest and the best,—
Not long ago I laid away in everlasting rest.
You'll lay me by her side, John,—the time will not be long,—
Where the oak tree casts its shadow and the robin sings his song.

The old place will be yours, John,—the rest have had their share.
I meant it for your father, who died in Freedom's war.
'Twas my home in early manhood,—'tis my home now I am old,—
The deed was signed by Jackson,—I'd not like to have it sold.

Yes, everything is changed, John, there's nothing seems the same;
And yet it was not long ago,—the time when first we came;
But the years have passed so swiftly, my hair is white as snow,—
And not a white hair when I came,—it's forty years ago.

## MEMORIAL REPORT.

### BY JUDGE HEZEKIAH G. WELLS, OF KALAMAZOO.

February 4, 1880.

Members of the State Pioneer Society:

Thomas C. Brownell died at Kalamazoo March 23, 1879.
Asa Fitch died at Kalamazoo, September 8, 1877, aged eighty-nine years.
John Walker died at Cooper, Kalamazoo county, February 21, 1878.
George W. Winslow died in Kalamazoo December 21, 1878.
General Dwight May died in Kalamazoo January 28, 1880.

Members of the Kalamazoo County Pioneer Society:

Erastus Williams died at Prairie Ronde in November, 1879.
A. E. Parker died at Richland in September, 1878.
John S. Moss died at Portage in April, 1878.
James Armstrong died at Schoolcraft in October, 1879.
Mrs. Nathaniel W. Balch died in Kalamazoo January 29, 1880.
Jonathan G. Abbott died at Keokuk, Iowa, in March, 1878.

## KENT COUNTY.

### A LETTER FROM MR. JOSIAH R. HOLDEN AND MRS. JOANNA R. HOLDEN.

GRAND RAPIDS, *Sept. 8, 1880.*

***Respected Members of the Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan:***

We thank you for your kind notice and friendly invitation to meet with you at Kalamazoo on the 25th of August, and regret that it was not convenient for us to attend, as we had been making a somewhat prolonged visit with our only daughter at Manistee.

Agreeably to your request I will make the attempt to give you an outline of our history. My wife's maiden name was Joanna Reed Danforth; she was born at Londonderry, New Hampshire, on the 10th day of March, 1800. Her parents moved to the town of Dorchester, Grafton county, N. H., when she was an infant. I was born in the town of Groton, Grafton Co., N. H., on the 22d day of February, 1797. We were married January 25, 1825, in the town of Groton, by the Rev. William Rolf, a Congregational minister.

On the first of June, 1832, we left our native State for the far west, as it was then called. We crossed the State of Vermont with a horse team, taking one week to accomplish it. We took a line boat on the canal at Troy, New York, for Buffalo, where we arrived in about one week more. We started for Illinois, but at that time the Black Hawk war was raging, so we put into Ohio, where we stayed two years. One of our children, E. G. D. Holden, was born there on the 18th day of February, 1834. In June of the same year we took passage on the steamboat "Uncle Sam" for Chicago, at which time there was but one steamboat a month from Buffalo to Chicago. The principal settlement on the way, after leaving Detroit, was Mackinac. We remained in Chicago, with a sick child, one week before we could get a conveyance into the country, where we stayed eight years; then moved to New Albany, Indiana, where we stopped two years, and finally, in 1845, we moved to Grand Rapids, Michigan, where we now reside; my wife being 80 years old and myself 83. Now I have given you some of the outlines of more than one-half of our earthly career.

With due respect we subscribe ourselves your most affectionate friends.

MR. JOSIAH R. HOLDEN.
MRS. JOANNA R. HOLDEN.

### THE OLD RESIDENTS' ASSOCIATION.

The annual meeting for 1879 of the Old Residents' Association of Grand river valley was held in the council chamber, in Grand Rapids, President Robert Hilton in the chair, and R. H. Smith at the secretary's desk. There was an unusually good attendance.

The report of the treasurer, W. N. Cook, showed a balance on hand of $73.28.

The society reported that the total number of members of the Association was now about 250; that twenty-seven regular members and eleven honorary members—ten of the latter ladies—had been admitted during the year. The following ten members had died during the same time: Dr. Alva H. Bots-

ford, Mrs. S. O. Kingsbury, Mrs. Maxim Ringuet, Timothy I. Tanner, Mrs. Andrew Ferguson, James Miller, J. Mortimer Smith, Mrs. Antoine Campau, Almon D. Borden.

The names of the twenty-seven regular members admitted to the Association during the year are herewith given, together with the date and place of birth and the year they settled in Grand river valley:

John B. Colton, Conway, Mass., 1827; settled here in 1844.

John Hart, Sligo county, Ireland, 1807; settled here in 1833.

James D. Robinson, Belfast, Ireland, 1822; settled here in 1843.

Abraham J. Whitney, Geneva, N. Y., 1820; settled here in 1834.

James A. Paul, Wigstonshire, Scotland, 1822; settled here in 1852.

George Schroeder, Dannenborg, Germany, 1821; settled here in 1853.

George W. Allen, Enfield, Conn., 1813; settled here in 1853.

John A. Powell, Batavia, N. Y., 1829.

Isaac Haynes, Guilford, England, 1834; settled here in 1846.

Adolphus L. Skinner, Russell, St. Lawrence county, N. Y., 1834; settled here in 1840.

Wm. Laraway, Plymouth, Mich., 1833.

Benj. F. Hanchett, Marcellus, N. Y., 1822; came here in 1845.

Julius Houseman, Bavaria, Germany, 1832; settled here in 1852.

Nicholas Shoemaker, German Flats, N. Y., 1821; settled here in 1839.

Jacob Pease, Oakland county, Mich., 1834.

Hiram Jenison, Canton, N. Y., 1813; settled here in 1834.

Dorr Skeels, Livingston county, N. Y., 1832; settled here in 1852.

George W. Griggs, Princeton, N. J., 1815; settled here in 1838.

Elisha M. Adams, Dutchess county, N. Y., 1802; settled here in 1851.

John Calkins, Sherbourne, N. Y., 1806; settled here in 1850.

Patrick Quirk, Cork, Ireland, 1800.

Carlos A. Able, Essex county, N. Y., 1824; settled here in 1834.

Lee Kelley, Gaines, N. Y., 1833; settled here in 1843.

G. J. Shackleton, Canada West, 1821; settled here in 1854.

James Sawyer, Kent, England, 1814; settled here in 1835.

William Koch, Germany, 1827; settled here in 1853.

J. M. Gorham, Boston, Mass., 1825; settled here in 1845.

The honorary members joining during the past year were: Mesdames Myron W. Sunderland, Harriet M. Hall, Wm. S. Parsons, Jacob W. Winsor, John Friend, Joseph Baxter, Obed H. Foot, Harvey K. Rose, Henry Seymour, Eunice Turner, and Mr. John Heart.

The following regular members were admitted to the Association yesterday: David M. McConnell, born in Newbury, England, in 1827; George H. Pew, born in Cheltnam, England, 1826; settled here in 1852. These honorary members were also admitted: Jared Wells, A. A. Stevens, David Holton, and Mrs. Aaron Sibley.

The Association then elected the following officers for the ensuing year: President, Robert Hilton; vice presidents, Hiram H. Allen and Robert P. Sinclair; secretary, Reuben H. Smith; treasurer, W. N. Cook; marshal, Leonard Covell; assistant marshal, Marshall McCray.

The secretary was instructed to notify all members in arrears for annual dues to pay the same on or before May 1 next.

The Association decided to hold a reunion during the fore part of February next, and the following committee was appointed to fix date and place, and to make all the necessary arrangements for the same: Messrs. L. Covell, R. H. Smith, W. N. Cook, R. C. Luce, Wm. Hake, and L. S. Scranton. The committee was instructed to send invitations to all members.

The following delegates were appointed to attend the annual meeting of the State Pioneer Society, to be held at Lansing on February 4 and 5 next: Messrs. John Ball, R. C. Luce, Hiram H. Allen, Robert P. Sinclair, Henry R. Naysmith, S. L. Withey, Thomas D. Gilbert, John T. Holmes, and W. I. Blakeley.

## MEMORIAL REPORT.

### BY R. HILTON, VICE PRESIDENT.

February 4th, 1880.

Mrs. Malinda Kingsbury, wife of Solomon O. Kingsbury, died at Grand Rapids August 2, 1879, aged 65 years and 10 months. She was born in Castleton, Rutland Co., Vermont, October 2, 1813, and removed to Grand Rapids in June, 1844.

The Grand Rapids Daily Eagle says: "Citizens, and especially the older residents, will be pained to learn of the death of Mrs. S. O. Kingsbury. She was one of the early comers to this city, which has been her home for thirty-five years. A most excellent woman, wife, mother, and neighbor, she had many and strong friendships, and upon her departure a deep gloom settles down upon sweet memories in scores of households, in the hearts of friends who have known her but to love her for her sweet and Christian graces and every way estimatble character. She was a worthy member of the Episcopal church, and in that and other circles of wide acquaintance will be missed and mourned.

Timothy J. Tanner died at Grand Rapids, October 18, 1879, aged 76. He was born March 21st, 1803, in Bristol, Rhode Island; came to Michigan in November, 1846, and settled in the town of Paris, Kent county, but has resided in Grand Rapids since October, 1865.

Hon. James Miller died at his residence in Grand Rapids November 25, 1879, aged fifty-seven years. The funeral, held on the afternoon of November 28, from the family residence corner of Fulton street and College avenue, was very largely attended—many not being able to get into the house. The members of the common council and board of public works, the various city officers, and the members of the Old Residents' Association attended in a body, while the members of the bar, though not so attending, were very largely represented.

The funeral services were conducted by the Rev. G. D. E. Mortimer of St. Mark's church, assisted by the Rev. J. Morgan Smith of the Park Congregational—the former reading the solemnly beautiful Episcopal burial service, and the latter a psalm and offering a prayer. The psalm read—"Though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, yet will I fear no evil"—was one which was greatly admired by the late Mr. Miller, and was read some twenty-five years ago at the funeral of his little son. The funeral music was very beautiful, solemn, and impressive.

After the brief services at the residence, the casket was borne to the hearse, the funeral cortege proceeded to Fulton street cemetery. The hearse was preceded by carriages containing the common council, board of public works, the city officers, and the members of the Old Residents' Association, and was followed by a very large number of others containing the relatives and friends of the deceased. Arrived at the cemetery, the last sad rites were performed by the Rev. Mr. Mortimer, and the remains of an honored citizen were consigned to their final resting place.

The gentlemen who acted as pall-bearers were: ex-Mayor George W. Thayer, John W. Champlin, James B. Willson, S. L. Fuller, Moses Taggart, and Harvey J. Hollister.

### RESOLUTIONS OF RESPECT BY THE OLD RESIDENTS AND THE BAR.

At a meeting of the Old Residents' Association of the Grand River Valley, held November 28, 1879, at the council rooms in the city of Grand Rapids, for the purpose of attending the funeral of the late James Miller, a member of the said society, on motion of Charles C. Rood the Hons. A. T. McReynolds, T. B. Church, and Henry Spring were appointed a committee to present suitable resolutions on the occasion. Col. A. T. McReynolds, on behalf of the committee, reported the following, which, on motion of Leonard Covell, Esq., were unanimously adopted.

WHEREAS, It has pleased Almighty God to remove from our midst, in the apparent prime of life, our esteemed friend, the Hon. James Miller, who departed this life at his residence in this city, surrounded by his sadly stricken family, on the night of the 25th inst., in the fifty-seventh year of his age; and,

WHEREAS, The deceased was an honored and devoted member of this association, who, by his cordial and genial qualities of head and heart endeared himself to all his associates; therefore, be it

*Resolved*, That in his death this association has lost one of its most devoted and cherished members; the bar of Grand Rapids a lawyer that was ever true to his clients, and whose professional character was free from stain or blemish; our city a citizen upright in all his walks, and ever devoted to its growth, progress and prosperity; society a jovial, genial and courteous gentleman; and, above all, a sadly afflicted family, consisting of a wife and two daughters, a kind, affectionate and devoted husband and father;

*Resolved*, That this association, while it will ever hold in affectionate remembrance our deceased friend, who in all his professional and business relations preserved a character above reproach, our heartfelt sympathy is hereby extended to his bereaved family, now so sadly afflicted, and humbly commend them to the guidance of Him who has promised to be a father to the fatherless and a husband to the widow;

*Resolved*, That as a mark of respect to the deceased, and of sympathy for the afflicted living, this association will attend his funeral in a body;

*Resolved*, That the foregoing proceedings, signed by the president and secretary, be published in our city papers, and an engrossed copy be furnished the family of the deceased.

REUBEN H. SMITH,
*Secretary.*

ROBERT HILTON,
*President.*

### THE BAR MEETING.

The adjourned meeting of the Grand Rapids bar was held in the circuit court room at 9 o'clock yesterday morning, Col. T. Foote in the chair, and N. A. Earle, Esq., secretary. The Hon. E. S. Eggleston, chairman of the committee appointed for that purpose Wednesday afternoon, presented the following resolutions:

The bar of the city of Grand Rapids, assembled on the occasion of the decease of James Miller, do

*Resolve*, That, reviewing the professional life of our brother, and recalling his sound learning and judgment, his courtesy to all and especially his kindness to younger brethren; his frequent efforts to avoid litigation and settle controversies upon equitable grounds; his strenuous efforts for and conscientious discharge of his duty to clients when pressed into the forum, and his excellence of character in all civil and domestic relations; we recognize him as an exemplar in private and public life, and commend to others the imitation of his career and conduct;

*Resolved,* That the court of the United States in this city, the circuit court of Kent county, and the superior court of Grand Rapids be requested to order the record of these resolutions on their journals, and the transmission by their clerks of certified copies thereof to the family of Mr. Miller.

On motion of O. H. Simonds, the resolutions were adopted, their publication in the papers of the city requested, and the meeting then adjourned.

John Naysmith of Ada, Kent county, father of Henry R. Naysmith of Grand Rapids, died September 19, 1879, aged eighty-two years. Mr. Naysmith was one of the "old residents," having removed hither from Caledonia, New York, and settled in Ada thirty-three years ago. He was a staunch and reliable man, of unspotted reputation, a good citizen and neighbor, one who will be missed where he has for so many years been a prominent and familiar figure. He had all his life enjoyed a good degree of health, until two or three years ago, when his spine was injured by a fall, since which he had suffered somewhat from aberration of mind. He was born in Scotland, his father being at the time a soldier in the British army. Living far beyond "the allotted age of man," he has passed from earth in the ripeness of years, and a large circle of friends will cherish his memory as that of a good man gone to his reward.

### THE LATE DR. BOTSFORD.

At a meeting of the Old Residents' Association of the Grand river valley, held at the common council room, in the city of Grand Rapids, on the first day of February, 1879, called to attend the funeral of Dr. Alvah H. Botsford, the following resolutions were adopted:

*Resolved,* That we receive with sorrow the intelligence of the death of Dr. Alvah Botsford, one of the members of this association;

*Resolved,* That, bringing to our recollection his long residence in this city, his numerous evidences of personal goodness, his conscientious discharge of professional duties, and his intelligent and beneficial participation in our civil and municipal life, we realize the loss to this community of the man, the physician, and the citizen. Quiet, unostentatious, diligent, and exemplary, he had the love of his domestic circle and the respect of all. Once more we are called to add to that list of real worthies who have built up our county and city, and of this one, as of so many of his predecessors, we are proud and rejoiced that we can say, "His way was the way of the just, and his end is peace;"

*Resolved,* That our president communicate to the press and to the widow of our departed brother, this expression of our feelings.

REUBEN H. SMITH, *Secretary.*

# LAPEER COUNTY.

## PIONEER SKETCHES.

### BY CAPTAIN N. H. HART OF LAPEER.

The Pioneers. What a host of memories are brought before us in this word. The bright anticipations of a new home, almost created, as it were, by the hardships, trials, privations, and industry necessarily encountered before the wilderness could be brought to blossom as the rose. There are many now before me who have not forgotten their exodus from home; the friends and institutions that must be left behind, except as they were carried in their hearts and memories. We have lived to duplicate them, and now our churches and our church-going bell, our school-houses and our many comforts and privileges are equal to those we left behind. But many a heart has ceased to beat, and many a head laid low, before we realized them. How earnestly the preparations were carried on. The stout canvas-covered wagons, the strong draught horses, the necessary apparatus for such a journey, the careful decision made by sire and matron, what must be taken and what might be left. These were all full of interest, and many who are now before us, staid, elderly men and grave matrons, how they, or we, I may say, were impatient for the journey to begin, you all know too well for me to spend any time in relating.

The usual haps and mishaps of such a journey as was usually taken by the pioneers are familiar to you all, and I rejoice that the pioneers of this county and their immediate descendants are assembled here to form a society which shall bring us more often together in a social manner, and that we shall again feel as one family, as we did when a man was looked upon as a brother and neighbor if he lived within ten miles.

The first settlement made in the now county of Lapeer, according to the best data I have, was in the southeast corner, now known as Almont, by James Deneen, in 1828, and by Oliver Bristol, and perhaps others in 1829. I must leave the historical details of this settlement to some one more familiar with the facts than I am.

The next settlement was Lapeer. In 1831 Oliver B. Hart, my father, and Hon. A. N. Hart, my uncle, left the East with the intention of seeking a home in the West.

On arriving at Pontiac, they were induced by Judge LeRoy and Gideon O. Whittemore, Esq., to visit Lapeer. These gentlemen being the owners of northeast quarter of section five, township seven north of range ten east, upon which lands the county seat of said county had been recently established by commissioners appointed by General Lewis Cass, territorial governor. The result was, they fixed on Lapeer as their future home. They returned east for the purpose of making the necessary arrangements to move their families to their new home.

Hon. A. N. Hart and family reached here on his return about the 10th of November, 1831, accompanied by his brother-in-law, George F. Ball, Joel M. Palmer, and Joseph Catout.

About this time Colonel J. R. White decided to locate in Lapeer, and arrived with his family in January, 1832. Alvin M. Master arrived here the last of February, 1832, and his family joined him on the opening of navigation the following spring. O. B. Hart returned with his family (except your humble servant) in March, 1832. I arrived in May, 1832. Dr. Minor Y. Turrill and family arrived here very soon after. Mr. Joseph B. Morse arrived here during the summer of 1832. Mr. Phineas White came on during the season of 1832, and decided to locate here, and in the following spring returned with his mother, brothers and sisters. During the summer of 1832, George Clark settled with his family on the oak openings, five miles south of Lapeer, and this was the nucleus around which has grown the city and surrounding country.

It will not be expected that on this occasion I will narrate the thousand incidents that came within my knowledge, but leave it to every pioneer to tell his own story in his own way. But I flatter myself all will join with me in saying that the happiest recollections of our lives were our pioneer days in

Lapeer. We were all patricians and all plebians. The latch-string of every cabin was always out. If one had pork and beans all had pork and beans. All strangers were greeted with a welcome and cordiality unknown at the present day. To the church or social gatherings we all went in the same vehicle, and it mattered not whether drawn by oxen or horses. The fond anticipations of future improvements, prosperity and grandeur overbalanced and made easy all hardships and privations.

Without going into any further detail of the early settlers, I will state that in 1840 I took the census of the county for the United States, and I kept a copy of that census which I now propose to present to the society as a true record of the names of the heads of every family in the county at that time. From which records it appears that there was a total population of 3,364, as follows:

| | Males. | Females. | Total. |
|---|---|---|---|
| Bristol, now Almont | 444 | 444 | 888 |
| Dryden | 435 | 372 | 807 |
| Lapeer | 401 | 354 | 755 |
| Hadley | 199 | 172 | 371 |
| Metamora | 181 | 170 | 351 |
| Elba | 57 | 43 | 100 |
| Marathon | 52 | 40 | 92 |

The first grist and saw-mill was built by Colonel White and brother, the next saw-mill by Abram McMaster. The first newspaper printed in the county was the Plaindealer, in 1839, edited by Colonel E. H. Thomson.

The inducements to the pioneer to settle in this county were a salubrious climate, a soil unsurpassed in richness and variety, immense forests of valuable timber, numerous valuable water powers, and navigable streams. I say navigable streams because millions of wealth have been floated down its rivers to the markets of the world.

The trials, hardships, and privations necessarily incident to pioneer life cannot be told, and can only be understood by actual experience. I will try to give you one or two examples.

The first battle between a pioneer and a pack of wolves was in this wise: The name of the pioneer was the Hon. A. N. Hart; the names of the wolves I have forgotten. The Judge left Lapeer for Pontiac for supplies. Among other things he put on to his load a quarter of fresh beef. Having arrived within two and a half miles of home, although it was very dark and the road being only underbrushed out, and consequently very winding, he was flattering himself that he would soon be with his family enjoying a delicious beefsteak, when to his utter horror he had the strongest evidence in the world that a pack of wolves were after him or his beef. He urged his team with whip and yells for a short distance when he brought up against a pine tree. The enemy immediately surrounded him and demanded a surrender. Their eyes, like so many fire-balls, were anything but agreeable. The Judge comprehended the situation at once. He had sagacity enough to know that the wolves would prefer the beef to himself, but the beef he determined he never would surrender, for beef in those days was more precious than gold. The Judge resolved to throw overboard flour, feed,—in short the whole load except the beef,—and make one terrible effort to extricate himself from the tree. Having discharged the load, except the beef, with a crack of the whip, a yell, and a haw he broke loose and came through triumphantly. The wolves were so astonished and taken by surprise by the performance that they retired from the field in disgust. The Judge said to me, very confidentially, a few days after, "If you ever undertake to bring fresh beef from Pontiac make your arrangements so as to come through by daylight."

The necessary expenses in obtaining everything, even the necessaries of life, were ten fold greater than dreamed of by the pioneer when he left his eastern home. For instance, I left Lapeer county early one Monday morning with two pair of oxen and fifteen bushels of grain in my wagon to go to mill. I had my choice between Pontiac, Auburn, and Rochester, where grinding could be done. I arrived at Pontiac about sundown the second day out, and was informed that my turn would come in about a week. I then proceeded to Auburn, and was informed that they might possibly reach my case in about four days. I then made for Rochester, and on arriving there received the gratifying intelligence that my grist should be ground within twenty-four hours, provided there was no-break-down. I arrived home Saturday night and was rejoiced to learn that the family had not starved during my absence.

Joel M. Palmer, heretofore mentioned, and the oldest of the pioneers now living, at a very early day put on a freight line between here and Detroit. His charges were very reasonable, only one dollar per hundred pounds, and a small commission for time and trouble in filling your orders. My father sent by him for a barrel of one hog pork; I say one hog pork, for you must recollect that we could not afford in those days so great a luxury as mess pork. The pork was duly delivered, and the bill accompanying the same read as follows:

| O. B. Hart. | *Dr.* |
|---|---|
| To one bbl. one hog pork, | $32.00 |

On opening the barrel we discovered two heads, two tails, etc. My father very dryly remarked that he could plainly see why it cost so much—it was two hog pork.

Politics became an element of interest and excitement at an early day. And as another evidence of the great hardships of a pioneer life, permit me to inform you that the county of Lapeer was originally attached to Pontiac for judicial and representative purposes. For instance, soon after the county seat was established, it became necessary that a route should be selected, and the trees blazed for a road from Pontiac here, and our worthy and venerable citizen Isaac I. Voorheis was one of the commissioners who performed that task.

The first election I have any recollection of was a township election held in Pontiac. Colonel J. R. White having been appointed a justice of the peace by the Territorial government, very naturally wanted a constable in order to make the office a paying institution. He went to Pontiac and secured the nomination of Asahel Hubbard, then a resident here, as one of the constables. I had friends there who, unbeknown to me, put my name uoon their ticket, and the result was, I was elected. The colonel did not exactly like this, so he hastened to Lapeer and immediately called on my mother to ascertain how old I was. She frankly told him I was not yet twenty-one years of age. On being notified of my election I called on the colonel to qualify. He politely informed me that he could not do it, that I was ineligible to the office. Not willing to see the will of the people defeated, I mounted my pony and went to Pontiac to qualify. Judge LeRoy signed my bond, Gideon O. Whillman, Esq., administered the oath of office, and instructed me to go and file my papers with James

A. Weeks, township clerk. I presented my papers to Mr. Weeks and asked him to approve and file them. He said he did not know whether he would or not; that he had received a letter from Colonel White, of Lapeer, that I was a minor and not eligible to the office, and asked me how old I was. I told him to ask my constituents, and again asked him if he could file my papers. He replied, "I suppose I will have to." I discharged the duties of the office during the ensuing year over a district of country including Oakland, Lapeer, Genesee and Shiawassee counties and the Saginaw valley.

The pioneers to this place brought with them their religious principles. They were not unmindful of their obligations to God, in whom they put their trust, and relied for life, health and prosperity. The first religious services within my recollection took place in the open air, near where the Abram house now stands. The church edifice was a pine tree. The congregation was seated on the fallen trees, and a sermon was read by grandfather Turrill. The singing was conducted by Minor Y. Turrill and wife and Hon. A. N. Hart. The first sermon preached in Lapeer by a minister of the gospel was by the Rev. Wells, of Troy, Oakland county. The singing the same as above mentioned, with the addition of Asahel W. Abbott. A long metre hymn was given out, and they sung that good old and familiar tune called Wells. The second hymn was a long metre too, and the minister remarked, "I do not think we can do any better than to try Wells again."

There are many more topics I would be pleased to mention in connection with the early history of Lapeer, but I will not detain you any longer on this occasion, but in the future, while my life is spared, I shall be happy to contribute to the interest of the Society.

---

# LENAWEE COUNTY.

## EARLY SETTLERS IN LENAWEE COUNTY.

BY FRANCIS A. DEWEY OF CAMBRIDGE.

Read February 6, 1880.

We do not wish to omit the record of a few names of our hospitable and generous pioneers who began the first settlement of this county previous to the year 1830. Their pleasant homes and fertile farms are left for others to occupy; the original owners have gone down to the silent tomb. Those who now enjoy and own the highly cultivated and productive farms of this admired county may not readily realize that these lands were, but a short time ago, owned by the red men of the forest, and the wigwams of the Indians have changed into beautiful farm mansions crowned with peace and plenty. What has the independent forest hunter received from civilization in return for his unbounded possessions? No home but contracted hunting grounds with an iron railway through the center, surrounded on all sides by reckless men dealing with fire-water, which is, assuredly, rapidly sinking them into imbecility and wretchedness; and ere long the noble tribes will be swept from the western wilderness.

We will now review a short catalogue of the undaunted men, genuine pioneers, who settled in this county full fifty years ago. A large share of them, I am pleased to say, the writer was personally acquainted with. It brings to mind many social remembrances as we read them over. There was Jacob Ketcham on the banks of Evans Creek, and Jesse Osborn who raised the first wheat and planted the first orchard. His romantic log house was on the bank of the beautiful stream whose musical waters seemed chanting their vespers over the clear, pebbled channel. Luther Rawson built the first best frame barn. Wm. H. Hoag, justice of the peace and judge, Thomas Sisson, Timothy Mitchell, Moses Smith, all reliable farmers; Dr. M. A. Patterson, medical adviser; Abner Spafford, a farmer and mill-wright; Mr. Knaggs, first merchant and Indian trader; Charles Spafford, George and Litch Spafford, farmers and merchants; James T. Borland, tavern keeper; Sylvester Blackmar, first miller; Daniel Pittman, merchant, farmer, and postmaster; Isaac Powers, and Charles Blackmar, tavern keeper on the Chicago road; Wm. Avery, E. P. Champlin, Artunedorus Fuller, David Reed, John Houck, J. B. McCray, Daniel Hixon, Jacob Woodard, Horace Case, George Taylor, Gresham Reed, John Tyrrel, Silas Benson, Jacob Sclosh, Thomas Goodrich, John Roberts, Giles Hubbard, Hugh Hillick, John Grogg, Calvin Brown, Peter Low, Joseph Bangs, Thomas Nelson, Simeon Dewey, Asa Gilmore, Daniel Cross, Simeon Davidson, Don A. Reed, all farmers; Stillman Blanchard, merchant, judge, and built the Globe mills, Tecumseh; Horace Wollcot, fur trader; James Patchin, sheriff; Wm. McNair, farmer, and colonel in the Black Hawk and Toledo wars; Ebenezer Anderson, of literary attainments—a farmer with a good library; Jesse Ballard, carpenter and hotel keeper; Theodore Bissel, bridge builder—first one married in the county; Myron Mudget, hunter—killed by a bear; Asahel Robertson, True Mudget, Daniel Warring, John Penington, farmers; Curtis Page, carpenter; Jacob Arnold, teamster; Silas A. Hollbrook, merchant; Alpheus Kies, farmer and tavern keeper; H. N. Baldwin, postmaster; Rev. Alanson Bangs, Methodist minister; Rev. Alanson Darwin, Presbyterian missionary.

At the "Valley," the Friends' ministers were Daniel Smith, Elijah Brownell. In Logan township we will name a few: A. J. Comstock laid out the village of Adrian; Isaac Dean, tavern keeper, Nathan Pelton, constable, Dr. Ormsby, first physician, Conant Winters, merchant, John Gifford, James Whitney, Allen Chaffee, Robert Smith, Pliney Field, John Walworth, Noah Norton, Joseph Beals, Elias Dennis, Nathan Comstock, David Bixby, all good farmers, with many others. We will not pass over Blissfield without giving a passing notice. They were our neighbors, although fifteen miles apart. They laid the foundation of that most excellent, productive and wealthy farming town over fifty years ago. Harvey Bliss, William Kedzie, Benjamin Clark, Ezra W. Goff, Jacob Lane, George Giles, John Lane, Gideon West, Samuel Randall, Anthony McKay, with many more good farmers in the dense timbered forest land. But a small number of the early settlers were over thirty-five years of age when they came to Michigan. Their average age at death was about sixty years. Their wives, self-sacrificing emigrants, are fully entitled to a chapter in the history of Michigan; their sons and daughters, a share of them, are deserving of the most commendable situations in the State.

Our wish is to get an outline record of the early settlers of the now beautiful and populous county of Lenawee. The first memorial is of Darius Comstock, with whom the writer has ofttimes passed a social hour, full fifty years ago. This memoir we take partly from Whitney and Bonner's book, which to the latest generation of our citizens will be a valuable historic record of the pioneers.

Hon. Darius Comstock was born in Rhode Island, July 12, 1768, and was married to Miss Phebe Smith in 1790. His wife died at Palmyra, New York, April 27, 1820. His second wife, Mrs. Anna Brooks, was married to him in 1821, and about that time he had the superintendence of opening the Erie canal through the large ledge of rocks at Lockport, which was one of the greatest achievements of the age, taking over four years to blast a water channel through the Niagara ledge, and over eight years to dig the canal. On the 26th of October, 1825, the first boat, the Young Lion of the West, went through the canal from Albany to Buffalo. Mr. Comstock moved to Michigan in 1826. General J. W. Brown had previously built a log house for him at the Valley, which had two commodious rooms of good size. Darius Comstock had purchased a large quantity of land in the year 1825, which he called "Pleasant Valley." Here was a flowing crystal spring, which was more conducive to health, happiness, and good cheer than the far-famed Saratoga springs of New York. Here was made large and admirable improvements on this beautiful Pleasant Valley plantation, the home of the generous, plain-spoken pioneer, who was also the founder and main builder of the Friends' meeting house, the first built in the county, and the only one between Detroit and the Pacific ocean, if we except a few Indian missions. His house was always open for the poor and needy, also for hundreds of social friends. He died in his stately monumental home June 2, 1845, aged seventy-seven years. His widow departed this life at the residence of her son-in-law, A. J. Dean, Adrian city, May 25, 1866. She will be remembered by thousands as one of the most worthy citizens of the State.

We will now bring this brief memorial to a close by adding one more of our lamented pioneer friends to this hasty record. The first one who opened the road into this county and led the way for thousands more—Musgrove Evans, a worthy, educated surveyor and gentleman, born in Bucks county, Pennsylvania, in 1793, was married to Miss Abi Brown, sister of General J. W. Brown, in 1814, at Brownville, New York. Mr. Evans and family were the first white settlers of the county, June 2, 1824, cutting and making a road for his team through the wilderness for more than twenty miles. It was a day of unclouded beauty that the first pioneer settlement was begun in this now wealthy, prosperous and healthy county; no cloud, no mist, or stain obscured the rich, deep arch of heaven for a number of days after their arrival at their new forest home. The grounds for miles around Tecumseh were handsomely wooded with tall, majestic oaks, with no underbrush. In the near forest was ash, maple, black walnut, cherry and whitewood. The water of the river Raisin was of a crystalline clearness, and the shore on either side was firm and gravelly; the slopes with the level plateau of land were gay with wild flowers of many varieties. All exclaimed with delight, as they looked over and surveyed this luxuriant scenery. Here by the river's bank the first emigrants pitched their tent, and there the first log cabin was erected and covered with elm bark. On this plat of ground from time immemorial had been a resort of the Indians, their favorite camping place. Here was the grand portage of the river Raisin, the great through route of the trail from Monroe to the western lakes; also the trail from Detroit and Saline Springs to the Wabash. Here was an unlimited field for the Indians, also deer, elk, wolf, bear, wild turkeys, geese, grouse, swans, and all fur-bearing animals. An eminent writer says, more beautiful scenery than the wild domain presented never perhaps greeted the eye of the enterprising home-seeker. Here the emigrant foresaw a prosperous future, grand mill privileges, agricultural industries, with an unlimited scope for domestic enterprise, prosperity and wealth. Mr. Evans' family consisted of wife and five children, viz.: Samuel, Vincent, Hannah, George and William, and Peter Benson and wife as assistants, and several others. It was twenty-three miles to the nearest neighbor. Mr. Evans was appointed postmaster, the first west of Monroe, and with the aid of J. W. Brown and Mr. Spafford, built the first school-house and was part owner of the first saw-mill and grist-mill west of Monroe. In 1825 he was government surveyor on the military road from Detroit to Chicago. Mr. Manor, a Frenchman, now living at Brest, Monroe county, was chainman in these surveys of the military roads. In 1830 he was assistant marshal to take the census, which included territory west to Lake Michigan. In 1832 he was surveyor on the United States military road from La Plaisance Bay to the Chicago road in Cambridge.

The year 1833 brought with it a saddening time. The wife of our esteemed friend and first pioneer died. She was one of the noblest and best of wives and mothers. A dark cloud of deep and prolonged grief seemed to rest on all parts of the county when that devoted woman went down to the tomb. Our unwearied friend, Elijah Brownell, preached the funeral service. (The writer's pleasant home was at Mr. Evan's house for the most of the year 1830.) After the death of his wife he seemed to have a desire to begin a new settlement in the wilderness again. The lone star of Texas was just rising; he sold his possessions in Tecumseh, and left, with his children, for the southern clime, where, for several years, he was engaged in his chosen occupation of surveying. After a useful and active life of twenty years among the low lands and prairies of Texas, he died at his residence, at Cypress Creek, June 7, 1855, aged sixty-two years. Although he died in a southern country, his memory in Lenawee county was well kept, for his unassuming abilities to help hundreds of our first settlers. With them, a virtuous record is left in the hearts of all who knew him.

We will review the roll of pioneers who have left us and their cherished homes in this county, the past year, as far as the record could be learned, viz.:

Lewis Woodard, Clinton, aged eighty.
His wife, Mary Woodard, aged sixty-nine.
Butler Treat, Adrian, aged sixty-eight.
William Colvin, Raisin, aged ninety-two.
Catherine Dibble, Ridgeway, aged ninety-eight.
Anna Heath, Woodstock, aged sixty-eight.
Mary Smith, Woodstock, aged eighty-eight.
Olive Carter, Adrian, aged seventy-three.
Robert Craig, Palmyra, aged seventy-three.
Joseph Jackson, Woodstock, aged sixty-six.
Deborah Myers, Cambridge, aged eighty-eight.
Mary R. Ingersoll, Adrian, aged sixty-four.
Daniel Bugbee, Rome, aged sixty-seven.
Reuben Knapp, Rome, aged seventy-nine.
Mary Daniels, Cambridge, aged forty-seven.
Timothy Hitchin, Clayton, aged eighty-two.
Joseph Decker, Palmyra, aged eighty-six.

Bethsheba Berry, Adrian, aged eighty-three.
Elizabeth Lair, Woodstock, aged seventy-six.
Mary Swartout, Adrian, aged sixty-seven.
Ira Gregory, Adrian, aged eighty-four.
Lewis A. Cook, Adrian, aged fifty-eight.
Polly Higby, Madison, aged sixty-six.
Orsym Salsbury, Rollin, aged seventy-five.
Benjamin Marshall, Adrian, aged seventy-nine.
John Ayers, Cambridge, aged seventy-two.
Ephriam Hicks, Ogden, aged eighty-six.
Elizabeth Hand, Woodstock, aged seventy-three.
David Cole, Addison, aged ninety-four.
Sally Pratt, Cambridge, aged eighty-four.
Dianah Jones, Adrian, aged eighty-one.
Samuel Huntington, Madison, aged eighty-seven.
Timothy Mitchell, Tecumseh, aged eighty-two.

Hon. Henry Hart, Adrian, aged sixty-one, died from injuries received at the fall of the grand stand at Adrian, 1879.

Sarah Blair, Franklin, aged seventy-one.
Dr. William Fisher, Tecumseh, aged fifty.
Isaac Adams, Tecumseh, aged seventy-six.
Sarah Baker, aged eighty.
Joshua Forbes, Macon, aged eighty.
Rachel Linsley, Macon, aged seventy-three.
Mrs. Samuel Kimball, Franklin, aged sixty-seven.
Stephen Hoag, Rollin, aged sixty-seven.
Eliza Vance, Woodstock, aged seventy.
Welcome Teachout, Adrian, aged sixty-five.
Norton Baker, Adrian, aged seventy-seven.
Thiren A. Stockwell, Rome, eighty-two.
John Vedder, Adrian, aged seventy-three.

The persons named below died in 1880, in March and April.

Harriet G. Chatterton, Tecumseh, aged seventy-four.
Sarah J. Strang, Tecumseh, aged forty-three.
Cyrus Whalen, Franklin, aged eighty-eight.
William Hunt, Adrian, aged sixty-seven.
John Blanford, Franklin, aged sixty-nine.
Mrs. Joseph Bennett, Adrian, aged sixty.
E. L. Clark, Adrian, aged sixty-nine.
Morton Eddy, Adrian, aged seventy.
Catherine Lemon, Fairfield, aged seventy.

Hon. D. K. Underwood, first president of the Lenawee County Pioneer Society, died 1875, aged seventy-two.

Dr. T. F. Dodge, Adrian, first treasurer of this society, died 1877, aged seventy-one.

The pioneers who have left us the past year, according to the best record we have, now number fifty-seven, their united ages being 4,144 years, average age seventy-two years. There were thirty-five over seventy years of age, nineteen over eighty, three over ninety. Two youngest born in this county and died here, forty-three and forty-seven; two oldest, David Cole, ninety-four and Catherine Dibble, Ridgeway, ninety-eight.

## MEMOIR OF REV. WILLIAM NARCISSUS LYSTER.

BY FRANCIS A. DEWEY OF CAMBRIDGE, LENAWEE COUNTY.

Rev. William N. Lyster was born at Sion, Wexford county, Ireland, March 5, 1805. He died at Mapleton, Van Buren county, Michigan, September 9, 1877, aged seventy-two years. His ancestors were men of fervent piety and superior intellectual powers in the community of which they were members.

The deceased entered Trinity College, Dublin, in 1822, and graduated therefrom in 1826. He pursued a course of theological studies at the University of Edinburgh, and in 1829 he came to Michigan, where he remained a short time, then returned to his native land. In 1830 he was ordained priest by Bishop Saurin of Dromore. On March 5, 1832, he was married to Miss Ellen Emily Cooper of Wexford county, Ireland. The same year he came to the United States to devote himself to the missionary work. In May, 1833, he came to Tecumseh, and by invitation from Musgrove Evans, J. W. Brown, and George Spofford, he held a meeting in the new court-house. In June following he moved his wife from Cleveland, and took charge of the parish at Tecumseh. On the tenth of October, 1833, he laid the corner stone of St. Peter's church in Tecumseh, which was the first Episcopal church erected west of Detroit. For the completion of that church building, which now stands an honor to the town and county and a monument to its first pastor, Mr. Lyster raised in eastern and southern cities upwards of two thousand dollars, which was gratefully accepted by the people.

In 1837 Mr. Lyster built a log house on his landed possessions, commanding a splendid view of the forest of Eyry, on the banks of Angel's Lake. Here, in this romantic forest home, he enjoyed the secluded and delightful boating and fishing on the lake in Cambridge, Lenawee county.

Here dwelt unaffected piety, and mutual love shed its influence upon the community. There were ever flowing from that delightful home streams of kindness that gladdened many hearts, the stories of which will never be told until the secrets of all hearts shall be revealed.

In 1846 he preached in Christ's church in Detroit for about one year. He also held services in Cambridge and Brooklyn for about twenty-five years of his later life. In both parishes he assisted largely in building two commodious brick churches.

On the first day of May, 1870, he preached his last sermon in the church at Cambridge, at the close of which he said, "I will say unto you what never was said in heaven, farewell." Being unable from delicate health and declining years to publicly officiate, he left Cambridge to enjoy a retired home with his brother at Breedsville, Van Buren county, Mich.

He thought so little of himself, and was so truly modest in everything relating to his fame among men, that it seems as if that kindly face was rising up before me to deprecate words of praise. Long will we miss that face, radiant with goodness, that courtesy that never varied, and that manner void of all pretensions. His memory will be cherished as long as the recollection of his virtue, his faith, and his publicity remains, and these should never perish. We shall no more see his manly form, nor again hear his words of counsel and encouragement. The last days of his life on earth passed gently away in the early morn of his Lord's day, September 9, 1877. On that morn his soul returned unto him who gave it, and there departed from the earth one of the greatest of his generation, great in his labor for Christ and great as an example to the clergy who survive him.

As a pioneer preacher of the gospel in Michigan his name will live when many who now stand higher in the roll of fame will be forgotten.

The remains of this beloved disciple of Jesus were deposited in the beautiful Elmwood cemetery at Detroit beside a wife and daughter who had gone before him; and just as the words of committal were said, a bright rainbow hovered over the grave; an appropriate emblem at such a moment.

The following are his own words on death:

"Oh, death, whose awful and unerring steel
Some dread, some court, but every one must feel,
If 'tis intended I shall never see
The usual time allowed mortality,
Strike when just Heaven commands me hence to go,
With blunted weapon and a lingering blow.
Let failing health, with scarcely felt decay,
Steal my soul gently from the world away;
And let me ponder my approaching doom,
And guess the hour of resting in the tomb:
Then may thy form, so evident, so near,
Wake ere too late, religious hope, and fear,
And teach me justly balancing to see
On this side life, on that eternity."

Hon. Chas. C. Trowbridge says: "It is nearly fifty years since a friendship began with our lamented friend, which was never interrupted by the slightest jar; the more intimately we knew him the more we saw in him to reverence, to admire, to love. Gifted by nature, cultivated by study, enriched by experience, his character was a compounding of the qualities which make up, as far as human infirmity permits, the perfect man."

## LIVINGSTON COUNTY.

### MEMORIAL REPORT.

BY R. FOWLER, OF FOWLERVILLE, VICE PRESIDENT.

February 5, 1880.

I herewith report the names of aged persons who have died in this county since January 1, 1879, as far as I have been able to obtain them. I give the name, age and place of residence:

John C. Britton, aged sixty-nine, died February 16, 1879; residence, Handy.

Miss Lucia Avis, aged fifty-eight, died May 12, 1879; residence, Conway.

Miss Catherine Lawrence, aged sixty-nine, died June 29, 1879; residence, Handy.

Samuel S. Hunt, aged eighty-two, died July 6, 1879; residence, Handy.

Earl Camp, aged seventy-nine, died February 27, 1879; residence, Conway.

George Fisher, aged ninety-one, died September 27, 1879; residence, Handy.

John W. Botsford, aged sixty-nine, died October 19, 1879; residence, Osceola.

Mrs. Margaret Southworth, aged eighty-three, died October 25, 1879; residence, Handy.

Mrs. Hannah Bush, aged eighty-five, died November 17, 1879; residence, Handy.

Mrs. Louisa Miller, aged seventy-four, died November 19, 1879; residence Conway.

Mrs. Charlotte Woodruff, aged eighty-seven, died December 14, 1879; residence, Conway.

John Buntin, aged seventy-five, died December 29, 1879; residence, Handy.

William M. Roberts, aged sixty-four, died January 8, 1880; residence, Handy.

Mrs. —— Miller, aged eighty-five, died January 22, 1880; residence, Conway.

## OAKLAND COUNTY.

### HISTORY OF OAKLAND COUNTY.

BY HON. THOMAS J. DRAKE OF PONTIAC.

**Read before the Wayne County Pioneer Society, March 9th, 1872.**

There is a pleasure as well as profit in reviewing the incidents of our early associations and the circumstances which attended the early settlements of our country. As yet the history of Oakland lies buried in by-gone years. No historian has traced out and collated the facts coincident with its organization, its rise and progress. Of the ingress of its first settlers, the circumstances which induced them there, the privations they suffered, and the eventful life they led in the first settlement of the county there is as yet no record. Over these facts, so full of interest to the statesman, the politician, and historian, time has heaped the rubbish of accumulating years, and it will be for some gifted one hereafter to bring them out from the recesses of olden times and to present them to the public in a more acceptable manner. On this occasion I hope and confidently trust that no more will be expected than a pointing out of a few of the facts connected with the early settlement, and a brief sketch of the circumstances which attended the pioneers of old Oakland.

On the 2d day of December, 1795, General Anthony Wayne, on behalf of the United States, formed a treaty with the sachems, warriors, and chiefs of the Wyandotte, Delaware, Shawnee, Ottawa, Chippewa, Pottowottomie, Miami, Eel River, Wea, Kickapoo, and Piankashaw, and Kaskaskia tribes of Indians. By that treaty, generally known as the "treaty of Greenville," the United States had conceded to them the post at Detroit, and a strip of land between the River Rosine (now known as the Raisin) on the south, and Lake St. Clair on the north and a line the general course of which was to be six miles from the west end of Lake Erie and the Detroit river. On the 17th of November, 1807, General William Hull, then governor of Michigan, on the part of the United States, held a treaty at Detroit with the sachems, chiefs, and warriors of the Ottawa, Chippewa, Wyandotte, and Pottowottomie nations of Indians, at which treaty there was ceded to the United States all the land included in the following boundaries: Beginning at the mouth of the Miami river of the lakes (now known as the Maumee river), thence up the middle thereof to the mouth of the great Anglais river, thence due north until it intersects a parallel of latitude to be drawn from the outlet of Lake Huron which forms the St. Clair river, hence running northeast the course that may be found will lead in a direct line to White Rock in Lake Huron, thence due east until it intersects the boundary line between the United States and Upper Canada, thence southerly down the lake and River St. Clair, through the Lake St. Clair and down the River Detroit, to a point due east of the mouth of the aforesaid Miami river, thence west to the place of the beginning. It is presumed that by this treaty the lands included in the county of Oakland were ceded to the United States.

The first official act relating to the county of Oakland, of which any record can be found, is an executive proclamation issued by Governor Cass, and bears date the 12th day of January, 1819, and reads thus:

"A PROCLAMATION.

"*Whereas*, A petition has been presented to me, signed by a number of the citizens of the said Territory, requesting that the boundaries of a new county and the seat of justice may be established by an act of the Executive, which shall not take effect until the arrival of a period when its population requiring such measure:

"Now, therefore, believing that a compliance with the request will have a tendency to increase the population of such parts of the Territory as may be included within these boundaries, and to prevent those difficulties which sometimes arise from the establishment of counties where settlements are formed and where conflicting opinions and interests are to be reconciled, I do by these presents, and in conformity with the provisions of the ordinance of congress of July 13th, 1787, lay out that part of the said Territory included within the said boundaries, viz.: Beginning at the southeast corner of township one north, of range eleven east, north of the base line, thence north to the southeast corner of township six, thence west to the Indian boundary line, thence south to the base line, thence east to the beginning, into a new county to be called the county of Oakland. And I hereby appoint John L. Seil, Charles Larned, Philip LaCuyer, John Whipple, and Thomas Rowland, Esquires, commissioners for the purpose of examining the said county, and of reporting to me the most eligible site for the seat of justice for said county, to take effect from and after the 31st day of December, 1822."

On the 5th day of November, 1818, the "Pontiac Company" was organized for the purpose of purchasing lands upon the Huron river (then so called) of St. Clair and laying out a town thereon. The company consisted of William Woodbridge, Stephen Mack, Solomon Sibley, John L. Whiting, Austin E. Wing, David C. McKinstry, Benjamin Stead, Henry I. Hunt, Abraham Edwards, Alexander Macomb, Archibald Danaugh, A. G. Whitney, of Detroit, and William Thompson, Daniel LeRoy and James Fulton, of Macomb. On the 12th of February, 1819, a letter was addressed to the commissioners appointed to examine the county and report the most eligible site for the seat of justice, making overtures on the part of the company to give to the county certain lots of land in the village of Pontiac and some money if the seat of justice should be established at Pontiac. On the 15th day of December, 1819, a road was laid out from the city of Detroit to the village of Pontiac.

On the twenty-eighth day of March, 1820, Governor Cass, by proclamation, limited and determined the proclamation of the twelfth of January, 1819, and declared the inhabitants of the county of Oakland entitled to all the privileges to which the inhabitants of other counties were entitled, and by the same proclamation the seat of justice was established at Pontiac.

On the twenty-eighth of June, 1820, the governor, by proclamation, divided the county into two towns, Oakland and Bloomfield.

On the seventeenth of July, 1820, a county court assembled at Pontiac. William Thompson had been appointed chief justice, Daniel Bronson and Amasa Bagley, Esqs., associate justices. William Morris had been appointed sheriff, and Sidney Dole clerk of the county.

On that day a grand jury was organized, consisting of Elijah Willett, Ziba Swan, John Hamilton, Elisha Hunter, William Thurber, Ezra Baldwin, Asa Castle, Elijah S. Fish, Alpheus Williams, Oliver Williams, Alexander Galloway, H. O. Bronson, Nathan I. Fowler, Josiah Goddard, James Graham, Enoch Hotchkiss, and Calvin Hotchkiss. Spencer Coleman and Daniel LeRoy were admitted to practice as attorneys. Of the men that participated in the proceedings of that day but few remain.

At an early day commissioners for the county were appointed by the governor. Ziba Swan, Enoch Hotchkiss, and Jonathan Perrin were appointed and remained in office until the thirty-first day of December, 1825, at which time the term of office of the justices of the county, judge of probate, county clerk, county registers, treasurer, sheriff, justices of the peace, and clerk of the supreme court were made to expire by an act of the legislative council, approved March 30, 1825.

On the twentieth day of September, 1822, a proclamation was issued by the governor altering and defining the boundaries of counties and establishing new counties. By that proclamation the boundaries of Oakland were fixed as they now are. The county was reduced to twenty-five townships, according to the government surveys, cutting off all west of range seven east.

William Thompson was appointed judge of probate, and the first probate court in the county of Oakland was held at the house of David Stanard, in Bloomfield, on the fifteenth day of June, 1822. Application was then made for letters of administration upon the estate of Eliphalet Harding. During the time we were under a territorial government the office of judge of probate was successively held by William Thompson, Nathaniel Millard, Smith Weeks, Gideon O. Whittemore, William F. Mosely, Ogden Clark, and Stephen Reeves.

Sidney Dole was the first county clerk, the first county register, and clerk of the board of county commissioners, and one of the first justices of the peace.

The first case which was brought before him as a justice of the peace, and it is presumed to be the first case brought before any justice of the peace in the county of Oakland, was that of Thomas Knapp, a citizen of Detroit, against Ezra Baldwin, a resident of Oakland county. The summons was issued on the 15th day of June, 1820, and judgment was rendered on the 21st of August. Mr. Dole was a cautious man; he usually carried the papers of each case in his hat from the commencement to the termination, and after hearing the evidence seldom rendered judgment until he had consulted the authorities in Detroit. But few men enjoyed a higher degree of public favor than Mr. Dole. In connection with William F. Mosely, Esq., he represented the county of Oakland in the second legislative council. He died at his residence in the village of Pontiac on the 20th day of July, 1828.

In the beginning of our territorial existence as a separate territory whatever of legislation we had was by the governor and judges of the supreme court of the territory, or by the governor in the form of a proclamation.

By an act of congress, approved January, 1805, Michigan was established as a separate territory, with a government in all respects like that provided by the ordinance of Congress, passed the 13th of July, 1787, for the government of the territory northwest of the Ohio river.

By the ordinance of 1787 the governor and judges, or a majority of them, were authorized to adopt and publish in the district such laws of the original States, criminal and civil, as might be necessary and best suited to the circumstances of the district.

The governor and judges were not authorized to originate any law; they had power only to adopt laws from the original States, and at this day it is difficult to find any warrant for many things which the governor and judges of Michigan did in the way of law making; and the executive proclamation, organizing counties and again altering their boundaries and establishing seats of justice, though they tended to the public good, were wholly without authority.

On the 7th of June, 1824, a legislative council convened at the city of Detroit, consisting of nine members, two of whom, Col. Stephen Mack and the Hon. Roger Sprague, were citizens of Oakland. The act of Congress authorized an election to be held in the territory for members of the council; the people voted for whom they pleased, and the result at the various polls was certified to by the secretary of the territory; a board of canvassers ascertained the number of votes given for each person, and the names of eighteen persons having the highest number of votes were certified to the president of the United States, and from that list he selected nine persons and nominated them to the senate, and after their confirmation they were commissioned members of the council and held their offices for two years. Before the election of the second council occurred the law was amended. The number of members was increased to thirteen, and the territory was divided into districts, and from those having the highest number of votes in the districts the president selected the members apportioned to the district. In the second council Oakland had two members. Before the election of the third council occurred, the law was again altered. The people in the several districts elected the number of members apportioned to the district, and the result, certified by the board of district canvassers, entitled the member to his seat. At the time of the election of members to the third council Oakland county formed a district and was entitled to two members. At that time no political parties had been formed in the county, and the number of candidates was but little less than the number of voters. The candidate most favored received seventy-five votes. Roger Sprague and Stephen V. R. Trowbridge each received forty-four votes, S. V. R. Trowbridge one vote, which by the board of canvassers was added to those given for Stephen V. R. Trowbridge, and he was declared elected.

On the 21st of April, 1825, an act was passed by the legislative council authorizing the election of county commissioners, county treasurer, constables and coroner. At the first election under this act William Thompson was elected treasurer, and Stephen Reeves, William Burbank, and Arthur Power were elected county commissioners. On the 30th of March, 1827, an act was passed authorizing the election of supervisors and other township officers. On the 12th of April, 1827, an act was passed establishing the towns of Oakland, Troy, Bloomfield, Farmington, and Pontiac.

Pontiac became noted and important from the extent of country which was attached to it. The north and northwest part of the county, and all the country north to the county of Mackinaw and west to the lake, was attached to the town of Pontiac. On the last day of May, 1827, an election was held in the several towns and town officers elected. The board of county commissioners was abolished and that of supervisors established, and the finances of the county came under the control of officers selected and chosen from the several towns.

As a means of preserving in our memory the names of some of the first settlers in the various towns in the county, and of ascertaining in some degree its growth, let us turn our attention to the time when the settlements in the various portions now organized into townships began, and as each township in the county is coextensive with the township of land mentioned in the government survey, for convenience as well as certainty, we will take them as they arise in numerical order, commencing with the lowest number of the range and town within the limits of the county.

In town one north, of range seven east, called Lyon, Robert Purdy, of Seneca county, New York, was the first purchaser. On the 6th day of May, 1830, he entered a part of section thirty-five. On the 6th day of December, John B. Thayer purchased. In 1831 Daniel Marlett, Michael Marlett, M. Benton, Elnathan Chatfield and Eli P. Benton made purchases and became settlers.

In town two north, of range seven east, called Milford, on the 27th day of August, 1827, L. Pettibone, of Genesee county, New York, entered a part of section ten. On the 29th day of May, 1830, Amos Mead, of Farmington, entered a part of the same section, and these were the only entries up to that date.

In town three north, of range seven east, called Highland, the first purchase was made by Nathan Curtis, of Oakland county. He formerly resided on the east bank of Silver lake, in Waterford. On the 6th of September, 1832, he entered a part of section thirty-six; he and his brother, Jeremiah Curtis, moved on to the land and improved it. They early became imbued with the spirit of Mormonism, sold out their possessions, and joined the great body of Mormons in the west. In 1832, James Aldrich, Richard Willett, Samuel Myers, Jr., Rufus Tenny and Alvah Tenny purchased and became settlers.

In town four north, of range seven east, called Rose, the first entries were made on the 8th of June, 1835, by J. N. Voorheis and Daniel Hammond.

In town five north, of range seven east, called Holly, the first entry was made by Nathan Herrick. On the 16th of September, 1830, he purchased a part of section one, being near the old Saginaw trail. In 1831 Isaac Parish and William Gage entered a part of section six. Mr. Gage settled on his purchase near where the old Indian trail to Muck-opine-e-koneag and Shiawassee crossed the Swartz creek. In 1833 Alonzo R. Wood, Vincent Runyan, Edwin Edwards, David Husted and Terrence Fagan entered lands and became settlers.

In town one north, of range eight east, called Novi, the first entry was made by William Yerkes. On the 30th of April, 1824, he entered a part of section thirty-six. In the same year James Gould, Joseph Eddy, Pitts Taft, Erastus Ingersoll, Benjamin Bently, Joseph Prentiss and N. Prentiss purchased and became settlers.

In town two north, of range eight east, called Commerce, the first entry of land was made by Joseph Yale, of Monroe county, New York. On the 22nd day of June, 1824, he purchased a part of section thirty-four. On the 30th of May, 1825, Abraham Walrad, of Onondaga county, New York, entered a part of section ten. On the first day of August, in the same year, T. Stocking purchased a part of section ten. These purchases were watered by the Huron river, and the flourishing village of Commerce has grown up near by, and there is situated the beautiful residence of Samuel Leggett.

In town three north, of range eight east, called White Lake, the first entry was made by Harley Olmstead, of Monroe county, New York. On the 7th of October, 1830, he entered a part of section thirty-six. In 1832 Joseph Voorheis, Jesse Seeley, Thomas Garner, John Garner, C. C. Wyckoff and John Rhodes purchased and became settlers. In 1829, while searching for the headwaters of the Shiawassee river, I traveled over most of this town, visited the shores of that beautiful sheet of water from which the town derives its name, and the charming plain on which stands the village of White Lake, then clothed in the gorgeous dye of autumnal flowers, presenting one of the most magnificent views of uncultivated landscape.

In town four north, of range eight east, now called Springfield, Daniel Le Roy made the first entry of land. On the 19th of July, 1830, he purchased a part of section nineteen, including the "Little Springs." This place had a wide renown. It was the resting place of the trader and trapper—of the red man as well as the white—when on his journey to and from Saginaw and other places in the northern wilderness. Immediately after, the purchase was occupied and improved by Asahel Fuller, who was the first settler in that town. In 1838 Giles Bishop, O. Powell, John M. Calkins and Jonah Gross purchased and became settlers.

In town five north, of range eight east, called Groveland, William Roberts, of Oakland county, made the first entry. On the third day of September, 1829, he purchased a lot. On the 29th of May, 1830, John Underhill, E. W. Fairchild and M. W. Richards purchased. In the same year Henry W. Horton purchased, at a point then known as Pleasant Valley. In 1831 Franklin Herrick, Alexander Galloway and Constant Southworth purchased and became settlers. Mr. Southworth settled on the far-famed spot on the old-Saginaw trail, known as the "Big Spring." All who have taken the trouble to descend from the roadside to the spring of water will bear testimony to its great beauty. It was held by the Indians in great veneration, and they seldom passed it without refreshing themselves. Those who have looked into that crystal fountain and beheld the sparkling water as it came bubbling up from the secret chambers of the earth, will not wonder that the red man saw in the aqueous mirror the Chemanito—or Great Spirit.

In town one north, of range nine east, called Farmington, Eastman Colby, of Monroe county, New York, made the first purchase. On the 12th of October, 1822, he entered a part of section 14. In January, 1823, Arthur Power purchased. In the same year George W. Collins, William B. Cogshall, Peleg S. Utley, Benjamin Wixom, Timothy Allen, Leland Green and Abraham Aldrich purchased, and these men were among the first settlers. Arthur Power was an honest and energetic man, beloved by his neighbors. He was the pioneer of the society of Friends in that town, and did much to accelerate and increase its wealth and population.

In town two north, of range nine east, called West Bloomfield, James Harrington, of Cayuga county, N. Y., made the first purchase. On the 15th of May, 1823, he purchased the entire section thirty-six. The same year Rufus R. Robinson, Erastus Durkee, John Huff, Benjamin Irish, Edward Ellerby, Benjamin Leonard and William Annett purchased. John Huff purchased on the south shore of Pine Lake, and erected on his land the first house in that part of the town. William Annett purchased a part of section twenty-two.

His wife died at an early day. Mr. Annett improved and occupied his farm until he died. It is now possessed by his only child, Mrs. Hartwell Green.

In town three north, of range nine east, called Waterford, Maj. Oliver Williams, early in 1819, settled on the west bank of Silver Lake, on section thirteen. His brother-in-law, Alpheus Williams, and Capt. Archibald Phillips settled early at the crossing on the Clinton river, where the village of Waterford now stands, and erected there a saw-mill as early as 1824. These pioneers selected charming places for their residences, and they remained on them until they were called to that country "from whose bourne no traveler returns." David Mayo purchased in 1821, Chesley Blake, Harvey Durfee and Austin Durfee in 1822. Harvey Seeley, John S. Porter, Samuel Hungerford, W. M. Tappan, Taddeus Alvord, Charles Johnson and Joseph Voorheis purchased in 1823.

Previous to the 15th of December, 1819, there were no roads leading from Detroit into the interior. The course of travel, which was not great, was along the river, and such divergence as was made was up the streams which emptied their waters into the Detroit river. In the rear of Detroit there is a strip of land some miles in width, which at that day was covered with a thrifty growth of timber, and through which there are no well-defined water courses. The natural drains were insufficient to carry off the water which naturally fell there. This belt of land had become soft and marshy, and the whole country a few miles back from the river was represented as a continuation of swamps and marshes, and entirely unfit for the purposes of agriculture, and many of the Americans who had gathered at Detroit after the war of 1812 for the purpose of settling had become disheartened, and some had left to seek a home elsewhere. In the early part of the fall of 1818, Major Oliver Williams, Calvin Baker, Jacob Eilett, and some others, among whom, it is believed, was Colonel Beaufait, resolved to penetrate into the interior and ascertain whether the country was or was not inhabitable.

At this time it was known that the Grahams, Hersey and Hartsough, had followed up the Clinton river, penetrated the country as far up as (Rochester) the junction of Paint creek with the river, but of the country about Pontiac nothing was known. Major Williams and his associates prepared for the enterprise as well as they could, employed a guide and interpreter, mounted their horses and set out. They followed the road then being built by the United States soldiers, which is but an extension of Woodward avenue, about four miles from the river. They were then led by their guide into the Indian trail. Following this, while buoyant with hopes and expectations, they passed the most dismal part of the way, and to their great gratification reached the plains beyond Royal Oak. Keeping the Indian trail they passed on to the place where Pontiac stands, and thence on as far as where Waterford stands. We will not undertake to describe the shouts of joy which again and again burst from their lips as they looked upon the lovely landscapes which were presented to their view. Their guide was unwilling to leave the trail. Their divergences were necessarily limited, for they knew not what dangers surrounded them. After the surveyors these were the first white men who had visited this part of the country. They were enraptured with the scenery. The plains and openings were covered with new and brilliant flowers. After making as full an investigation as their means would allow, having gathered as many flowers and shrubs as they could carry, as evidences of the fertility of the soil, they returned to Detroit, after an absence of three or four days. The report which this party made of the beauty and fertility of the country they had seen after passing the belt of wet timbered lands, and the evidences which they adduced, electrified the hearts of the Americans in Detroit, and utterly astounded the Frenchmen whose homes were by the river side, and whose aspirations seldom extended beyond the possession of a canoe, a spear, and a few hooks for fishing, with a rifle, and a half dozen dogs.

The exploration made by this party was the theme of conversation, and it undoubtedly led to the formation of the Pontiac Company. It is not to be presumed that this party was got up without the knowledge of Governor Cass, but it was entirely without his aid or influence, except to wish the adventurers God speed.

And again, in the fall of 1818, before there were any settlers between Detroit and Pontiac, Major Williams, his wife and sister, Mrs. Alpheus Williams, Jacob Eilett, and some other gentlemen took the same trail and passed through to Pontiac, and as far north as the Little Spring, which is in Springfield. Mrs. Oliver Williams was delighted with the prospect at Silver Lake, and Mrs. Alpheus Williams greatly admired the prospect at the crossing on the river at Waterford, and they were instrumental in inducing their husbands to locate where they did. These enterprising ladies, in going out and returning, crossed the Clinton river eight times. During the winter of 1819, the weather was peculiarly bland, and Major Williams spent his time after this second journey in putting up a house at Silver Lake, and in preparing to move his family there. The first fall of snow that season was about the 1st of March, 1819, and on the 13th Major Williams left the city of Detroit with his family in sleighs, and the first day reached Hubbard's place, and stayed that night with Mr. William Thurber, who had emigrated to that place. Dr. Ziba Swan and Sidney Dole, with their wives, had just arrived at Dr. Swan's location, near Birmingham.

Major Williams and his family took dinner, on the second day of their journey, with Major Joseph Todd, at Pontiac. Orrison Allen and William Lester were then at Pontiac with their families, and there were some workmen in the employ of the company getting out timber for the mills. At evening the Major and his family reposed at his home, on the banks of Silver lake. It is due to history, as well as to the memory of Major Oliver Williams, to say that he did as much as any other one to induce settlers into the county, and he was especially successful in making settlers feel happy and contented after their arrival. He was a man of large experience and liberal views, a generous heart and open hand. It was his delight to welcome a new settler, and his doors were ever open to the pioneer and wayfarer.

In town four north, of range nine east, called Independence, Alpheus Williams made the first purchase on the 10th of October, 1823. In 1826 John W. Beardsley purchased on the Chiseban plains, where he now resides. In 1831 Melvin Dorr and Butler Holcomb purchased. Mr. Holcomb purchased the land where the village of Clarkston stands, and there on the east branch of the Clinton river he erected a saw-mill. Henry F. Sanderson purchased in 1833.

In town five north, of range nine east, called Brandon, Elijah B. Clark, Asa Owen, and Jesse Decker made the first purchase. On the 30th of April, 1831 they purchased a part of section twenty-five, being a part of a valuable natural meadow. In 1833 John Perry, Alexander G. Huff, and Mary Quick purchased and became settlers. In 1835 G. M. Giddings, Henry Forbes, and Daniel Hunt purchased. In this town there were but few inhabitants before 1836.

In town one north, of range ten east, organized as Osseway, but from the universal expression of dislike by the inhabitants to the Indian name, it was changed by an act of the legislative council, and is now called Southfield. The first purchase of land was made in May, 1821, by John Wetmore. In the same year Peter Desnoyer and John Monteith purchased. In 1822 Harry Brownson, Samuel Shattuck, and Eli Curtis purchased. These men with Dillucena Stoughton, Elijah Bullock, Edward Cook, Philo Reed, John Davis, and William Lee, were among the first settlers.

In town two north, of range ten east, called Bloomfield, the first entry of land was made on the 28th of January, 1819, by Benjamin H. Pierce. March 16, 1819, Peter Desnoyer purchased a lot. On the 3d of July, 1820, Colonel David Stanard purchased a part of section four. This was the first entry under what was called the ten shilling act. At the opening of the land office in Michigan the public lands were offered at auction. Such as were not bid off were subject to sale thereafter at two dollars an acre, one-fourth of which was to be paid at the time of entry, the balance in one, two, and three years, with interest. All the lands which were sold previous to July 3, 1820, were sold under that rule. On the 23d of April, 1820, Congress passed an act authorizing the sale of all public lands at one dollar and twenty-five cents an acre, full payment at the purchase. This was a great event in the history of Michigan, and indeed of that of the whole western country. It put an end at once to that system of vassalage under which the purchaser of public lands had labored; the purchaser became at once the absolute owner of the soil, every act of improvement was made to benefit him or his children; there was a feeling of security in his labors and in his possessions more valuable than wealth. If death overtook the pioneer in his first efforts, the agony of parting with his wife and children was half removed. When he turned upon them the last dying gaze, and beheld their little forms gathered around his dying bed, he was consoled with the thought that the land on which he had toiled was theirs. No exacting landlord could claim it as forfeited for payments deferred.

From the passage of that act the growth and prosperity of Michigan became a certainty, and the increase of its population surprising. Ezra Baldwin, Job Smith, David Johnson, Oliver Toney, Daniel Ferguson, Ziba Swan, John Hamilton, Sidney Dole, Amasa Bagley, Elijah Willett, Joseph Fairbanks, William Morris, Lemuel Castle, Asa Castle, and Joseph Almy were among the first settlers.

In town three north, of range ten east, called Pontiac, the first entry of lands was made by Colonel Stephen Mack for the Pontiac Company, of which he was the president. On the 6th day of November, 1818, he entered section twenty-nine, and the northeast quarter of section thirty-three, and soon after the north half and the southwest quarter of section twenty-eight, and finally the southeast quarter of section twenty. On these lands the Pontiac company laid out the village of Pontiac in 1818. On the south side of the river, and on the east side of Saginaw street were the famous camping grounds of the Indians, where all were accustomed to stop on their way to and from Detroit. The point was well known to the Indians, and by them called Lapee. The first white settlers in this town were Major Joseph Todd and his wife, Joseph J. Todd, his son, Orrison Allen and his wife. Mrs. Allen was a daughter of Major Todd. She had with her two children, a son and a daughter; the daughter was then about seven months old, and in after years became the wife of Joseph R. Bowman, Esq. She lived in the town until her death, which occurred February 20, 1872.

Major Todd and Mr. Allen migrated from the town of Clarence, in Genesee county, New York. At Buffalo they shipped aboard of the Red Jacket, and after a stormy and perilous passage of —— days, they landed in safety at Detroit. In November, 1818, they reached Mt. Clemens, and on the 16th of January, 1819, they arrived at Pontiac. Soon after that William Lester arrived with his family. In 1819 Calvin Hotchkiss and Jeremiah Allen purchased lands. In 1820 Judah Church purchased. In 1821 Abner Davis, Eastman Colby, Alexander Galloway, Rufus Clark, Enoch Hotchkiss and James Harrington purchased. These men, with George W. Butson, John Edson, Joshua S. Terry, Joseph Harris, Stephen Reeves, and Captain Joseph Bancroft, were among the first settlers.

In town four north, of range ten east, called Orion, Judah Church and John Wetmore made the first purchase. On the 18th of October, 1819, they purchased a part of section nineteen, being the first choice in what was called the "big pinery." This purchase was made for the timber, and not for agricultural purposes. In 1824 Moses Munson, Powell Carpenter, Jesse Decker, Philip Bigler, Jonathan Pinckney and Simson Simmons purchased. These men, with Alexander McVean, David Bagg, John McElvery and Daniel McVean, were among the first settlers.

In town five north, of range ten east, called Oxford, the first purchase of land was made by Elbridge G. Demming, on the 28th of January, 1823, and he was the first settler. There were but few settlers in this town before 1833. In that year Joseph Rossman, Fite Rossman, John Shippey, John Wellman and S. Axford purchased. These men, with Daniel Applegate, Justin Bixley, Jeremiah Hunt and Mr. VanWagoner, were among the early settlers.

The plains in Oxford for many years were passed over by those looking for farms, and places in the far-off forests, less valuable, were settled, under the impression that the Oxford plains were valueless for the purposes of agriculture, and thus one of the best portions of the county remained unoccupied until a late period.

In town one north, of range eleven east, called Royal Oak, L. Luther and David C. McKinstry made the first purchase. On the 6th of July, 1820, they purchased a part of section thirty-three. In 1821 Henry Stephens, Alexander Campbell, Diodate Hubbard, Abraham Noyes, J. Goddard, Hezekiah Gridley, James Lockwood and David Williams purchased, and these men, with Henry O. Bronson, Daniel Burrows, Mr. Chase, Mr. Morse, and that eccentric old lady, Mrs. Chappel, well known by the sobriquet of "Mother Handsome," were among the first settlers. The origin of the name given to this town may not be known to many, and it will soon pass beyond recollection. On the 15th of December, 1819, Governor Cass, by proclamation, established a road which had been previously run out by commissioners which he had appointed for that purpose, from a point on Woodward avenue, in the city of Detroit, to the end of the road built by the United States troops; thence westerly to a large oak tree marked H, near the Indian trail; thence westerly along a line run by Horatio Ball to the Main street in Pontiac village; thence along that to the end thereof. This was the first road leading into the interior. The tree was near the line run by Ball, and probably was marked H on that occasion. It stood on the plains, on the north and east side of the Indian trail which led from Detroit to Pontiac, by Chase's. The tree was of some magnitude, and, after the issuing of the proclamation, became an object of observation and was called, by way of distinction, the "Royal Oak," and soon the name of

Royal Oak was applied to that portion of the country, and was given to the town at its organization.

In town two north, of range eleven east, called Troy, the first purchase of land was made by Castle Hunter, Hamilton and Fairbanks. On the 12th of February, 1819, they purchased a part of section nineteen. On the 22d of October, 1819, Ezra Baldwin purchased part of section eighteen. On the 25th of November, 1819, Michael Kemp purchased a part of section three. On the 7th of December, 1819, Michael Beach purchased a part of section eight. In the years 1820, 1821 and 1822 John Prindle, George Abbey, Joshua Davis, Ebenezer Belding, S. V. R. Trowbridge, Jesse Perrin, Luther Fletcher, Aaron Webster, Stillman Bates, William Wellman, A. W. Wellman, Silas Glazier, Guy Phelps, Johnson Niles, John Waldron, Edward Downer, Ira Jennings, Humphrey Adams and Silas Sprague became purchasers and were among the early settlers.

The second lot which was entered under the ten shilling act, as it was called, was entered by Joel Wellman. He entered a part of section three in Troy. The gently sloping surface of the country, the majestic growth of timber, the dark, rich soil induced many to settle in this town, and the whole town was settled with unrivaled rapidity. And now the nicely painted houses and the well cultivated farms show how accurately the pioneer judged, and how well the earth has repaid him for his labor.

In town three north, of range eleven east, called Avon, the first land was entered on the twenty-ninth of October, 1817. In 1819 Austin E. Wing, T. C. Sheldon, Solomon Sibley, James Abbott, Daniel LeRoy, Alexander Graham, Wm. Williams, J. Baldwin, Daniel Bronson, J. Myers, Ira Roberts, Nathaniel Baldwin, George Postal, William Thompson, John Miller, and Isaac Willett entered lands. In 1821 C. A. Chipman and F. A. Sprague purchased. In 1822 Champlin Green, Gad Norton, William Burbank, and Smith Weeks became purchasers.

In this town the seeds of civilization were first sown in the county. James Graham and his son Alexander Graham, Christopher Hartsough, and John Hersey, with their families, moved into this town on the seventeenth day of March, 1817. In early life old Mr. Graham resided near Tioga Point, in Pennsylvania, on the Chemung branch of the Susquehanna river. About the year 1800 he moved to Oxford, in Upper Canada. In 1816 he moved to Mt. Clemens, in Macomb county. On the seventeenth of March he reached Oakland county. He located upon a tract of land upon the north side of the Clinton river, a mile or two west of the junction of Paint creek with the Clinton river. The lands which Mr. Graham first occupied were in early days known as the Edwards farm, and latterly as the Thompson farm. Mr. Benjamin Graham, a younger son, accompanied his father to Oakland. It is not improbable that he induced his father to move to Oakland county. In the summer of 1816 Mr. Benjamin Graham was employed as a hand under Colonel Wampler in surveying the township of Avon, and perhaps in some other adjoining towns, and must have acquired a good knowledge of that part of the county. He was one of the first settlers, and the first one who entered the county of whom we have any record. He was deeply impressed with the natural advantages of Oakland county, and, without any desire to leave it, he resided in Avon, near his father's first location, until his death.

John Hersey was the first to purchase land in the county. On the 29th of October, 1818, he purchased a part of section ten, in town three north, of range eleven east. On the waters of Paint creek he erected a saw-mill, the first in the county, and put in a run of stones manufactured in the county by a man of the name of Wood, and in that mill he made the first flour ever made in the county. By the exertions of Mr. Hersey the inconveniences and hardships attending a new settlement were greatly relieved and immigration largely induced. The name of John Hersey, whose long life was marked by signal industry and integrity, is deeply engraven on the memory and will be fondly cherished by the pioneers of Oakland.

In town four north, of range eleven east, called Oakland, Benjamin Woodworth and William Russell made the first purchase. On the 16th of March, 1819, they purchased a part of section thirty-three. The history of Father Russell, as he was familiarly called, is truth itself, candid and unassuming. He was an example of sociality and benevolence, upright and just in all his ways. Benjamin Woodworth—"Uncle Ben," as he was known to all who ever stopped at the Steamboat hotel in Detroit—had a heart full of kindness and a hand ever ready to help the distressed. He was the constant friend of Oakland, and he never forgot or forsook her early inhabitants. In 1824 James Coleman and James Hazzard purchased. In 1825 Benedict Baldwin, Horace Lathrop, James D. Galloway, J. Dewey, Samuel Hilton, Ezra Newman, David Hammond and Needham Hemmingway purchased, and were among the early settlers.

In town five north, of range eleven east, called Addison, Henry Connor was the first to enter lands. On the 2d day of January, 1826, he purchased a part of section twenty-seven. Samuel D. Wells purchased in 1830; in 1831 David Tanner and Aristarchus Wiley. In 1832 Semer Glas, James McGregor, Arnold Mack and Francis Hagarman purchased. These men, with John M. Chamberlin and Addison Chamberlin, were among the first settlers in this town.

It is not easy to ascertain and determine with any degree of accuracy at this time, the population of the county in the first years of its settlement. For several years after the settlement of the county commenced there was no enumeration of the inhabitants. By referring to the number of votes cast at a general election we may in our estimate approximate toward the number of inhabitants. In 1825 there was an election for delegate to Congress, and also for members of the legislative council, but no record remains in the county whereby you can determine the number of votes cast in the county, or any part of it, on that occasion. At that time it was required to send the ballots cast at the several polls for delegate, to the city of Detroit, where they were canvassed by a territorial board, constituted of the secretary, treasurer and attorney general. In 1827 there was another election for delegate. At that election there were four hundred and fifty-four votes cast; and if we allow three persons to one vote, which in that stage of society is not unreasonable, the county contained at that time 1,362 inhabitants. In 1854 the county contained a population of 31,824. During the year 1853 there were 249 marriages. In 1854 there were 3,070 unmarried females and 3,287 unmarried males. Of these, 4,732 were over forty-five and under seventy-five years. There were 187 over seventy-five, and one over ninety years of age. There were 10,299 over eighteen years of age and under forty-five. From such a population a large increase might be expected. In 1825 an assessment was made by William Morris, sheriff, and S. V. R. Trowbridge, from which it appears there were at that time 78,900 acres of taxable land within the jurisdiction of the county. More than 2,580 acres lay beyond the limits of the county. There were in the county 282 houses, 47 barns, 2,621 acres of improved lands. Major Oliver Williams, Colonel Stephen Mack and John Shelden each had sixty acres. No other person exceeded fifty acres. In 1854 the taxable land in the county amounted to 489,225 acres. There were 213,728 acres of improved land. There were in the county 8,073 houses, 9,650 head of neat cattle, besides oxen and cows. There were 5,212 oxen, 11,831 cows, 135,000 sheep, 14,878 swine. In 1853 there were raised in the county 478,698 bushels of corn, 779,000 bushels of wheat, 184,361 bushels of other grain, making 1,442,059 bushels of grain.

These few facts and figures are referred to to show the rise and progress of the county in agriculture. The county of Oakland is peculiarly an agricultural one. It may at no distant day become a manufacturing one. The soil is productive and enduring, and the farmer is well repaid for his labor and attention. The surface is most agreeably undulating, well supplied with timber, and the distribution of water throughout the county is a marked feature in its geography. The river Huron and the Clinton rise in this county, and, after many windings, one leaves the county on its eastern border and the other on the west. The Rouge has its highest sources here also, and gathering from the towns of Avon, Troy, Bloomfield, West Bloomfield and Farmington, passing through Southfield greatly increased, it leaves the county on the south. The east branch of the Shiawassee river has its source in this county. The Thread river, the Swartz creek, the Kearsley and Farmer's creeks, which flow northwardly and empty their waters into the Flint river, have their sources in this county. These, with many smaller streams meandering through different portions of the county, fit it in an eminent degree for the purposes of agriculture. These streams, with Paint creek, Stony creek and others, furnish an incalculable amount of water power, and it will be marvelous indeed if it shall remain long unoccupied.

It is a wealth as extensive and far more certain than the gold fields of California.

Besides these numberless streams there are near four hundred lakes, beautiful sheets of water of various sizes, distributed throughout the county, and mostly well stocked with fish. Rapidly is the time approaching when the culture of fish will become a matter of interest as well as pleasure. It has been ascertained beyond a doubt that trout and whitefish thrive well in the waters of Oakland county, and soon these lakes will be sought for with as much eagerness as they were shunned in early days. Their banks will become adorned by men of science and wealth, and Oakland county will be renowned for its many picturesque and lovely landscapes. It may be considered the table-land of the peninsula south of the Saginaw river, and when all its natural sources of wealth and beauty are considered, it stands, and ever will stand, unrivaled by any county in the State. Its geographical position is such as to give it a political as well as commercial importance.

Its commercial relations are inseparably connected with the city of Detroit. Its proximity to the city is not unimportant, and the day is not far distant when it will be seen and acknowledged to afford more sources of wealth and pleasure to the citizens of Detroit than any other county in the State. As soon as this reciprocity of interest is seen and acted upon, it will add to the growth and pleasure of both city and county.

The early history of the county of Oakland is that of an industrious, peaceable people, suffering the fatigue and inconveniences which invariably await pioneers. There were no beasts of prey roaming over the plains to put the people in fear. The Indians were uniformly peaceable and friendly. There were no engagements with furious beasts—no hair-breadth and miraculous escapes from the tomahawk and scalping knife to record. The romance and tragedy which usually heighten the history of border life were unknown to the pioneers of Oakland. They were characterized by intelligence, benevolence and industry. To those who saw the country in its wilderness, how vast the change. Fifty years have not passed since most of them, in the strength and vigor of manhood, were striving to overcome the hardships of a life in the woods—for their bread they were dependent upon the caprice of the foreign speculator—for their meat they looked to the wild beasts of the forest, and to their skins for clothing, and when they laid down the ax they took up the rifle; constantly engaged in the improvement of their farms and the support of their families. Manfully they struggled, and they triumphantly conquered. By their energy and persevering industry the wilderness has been made to bud and blossom; desert plains have become fruitful fields. How glorious the prospect! How mighty the achievement! What a stupendous highway to ease and happiness they have opened up to their successors! What a legacy are they leaving, not only in gold and silver, but a wilderness reclaimed—a land flowing with milk and honey. For fifty years they have borne the heat and burden of the day; their locks are whitened by the storms of winter; their brows are furrowed, and their bodies inclined by accumulating years; but their eyes beam brightly, and rapturous emotions fill the heart as they look around upon the past and contemplate the rich blessings which are unfolding for the future.

Pioneers of Oakland—old associates in days gone by—companions in hunger and fatigue, with whom I have journeyed many years, our task is done.

It only remains for me, in paying this last tribute to their memory, to acknowledge, as I do with gratitude, their numerous acts of kindness, so numerous that time would fail were I to attempt to recount them.

## REMINISCENCES.

BY CAPTAIN HARVEY PARKE, OF PONTIAC.

**Read before the Oakland County Pioneer Society in 1874 and 1876.**

### RECOLLECTIONS OF MY FIRST TOUR IN MICHIGAN IN 1821.

In February, 1821, while returning to my home one evening from the school I was teaching in Camden, Oneida county, New York, the thought of going to Michigan and engaging in government land surveying first occurred to my mind, and in a few minutes I decided I would go. Before leaving my home in Middle Haddam, Connecticut, at the age of eighteen, I had studied surveying in accordance with my father's wishes, who, although an old sea captain, opposed my desire to study navigation, and after coming into the State of New York I continued the study under a competent surveyor. In those days newspapers were few and far between, and comparatively nothing was known of the Territory, and I had not heard of the unfavorable report of the deputy surveyors made in the autumn of 1815.

One of my neighbors said he was in Detroit, and saw one of the deputy surveyors, who assured him Michigan was a poor, miserable country, filled with swamps and marshes, and where potatoes could not be raised. This was not encouraging, I am willing to admit. But I remained firm in my resolution; my friends all opposed my going; my wife only favored the project. Desiring further information, I corresponded with Henry R. Schoolcraft, the historian who had accompanied Governor Cass on an expedition to the upper lakes; but he could give no information in regard to the interior of the country.

However, on the 21st of March, 1821, in company with Samuel Treat Bryant and John Simons, I started on my journey of 500 miles though Canada, carrying a knapsack of over forty-five pounds weight, including surveying instruments. After sixteen days' faithful travel through mud and water, often knee deep, we reached Detroit river, and crossed over to the city in a row-boat, landing at the foot of Woodward avenue. I remember the old market house in the center of the street, which we passed just before reaching Jefferson avenue, at King's clothing store. Passing up the avenue to the stone council house, between which and the street near the river stood the Steamboat hotel, kept by Benjamin Woodworth, crossing Jefferson avenue from the council house, down the avenue, passing Peter Desnoyer's brick two-story store, and at the corner of Jefferson avenue and Bates street a little farther down was the store of Oliver Newberry, in whose employ as clerk I first met our late townsman, Elisha Beach. A little way below was the residence of Governor Cass. The buildings were few on the street; the brick buildings less than one-half dozen. A short distance up Woodward avenue was Major Larnard's cottage residence, near the pickets of the old fort; replaced, probably, since the city was laid in ashes in 1805.

From this point to the north and northwest the commons appeared like an extensive pasture field, with now and then a shade tree. About a half-mile from the present opera house stood a building appearing like a common barn on the farm of General J. R. Williams; from this point to the northwest no buildings were to be seen. In the vicinity of the barn before mentioned I observed four upright large stones of quarried granite, placed in form of a square, five or six rods from each other, said to be for the purpose of starting points for measurements on the angle for the streets. The manner in which the city is laid out was said to have been suggested by Judge Woodward.

On the line of the road as we passed through the wilderness to the interior, we passed three small houses, the last about nine miles from Detroit, and occupied by Mrs. Chappel, more familiarly known as Mother Handsome. Here we found shelter for the night, and slept soundly on a blanket on the floor. About a half mile beyond we reached the causeway built by the troops under Colonel Leavenworth in 1818. The causeway was a little less than a mile in length, and was the worst ever built, as no regard was had to equalizing the size of the logs—the largest and the smallest lying side by side. At the angle of the road, twelve miles from Detroit, we passed the Royal Oak tree, which had nothing remarkable in its appearance, but was known as the point from which Horatio Ball had started the line when surveying the road to Pontiac, known as the Ball line road. This angle also was the point of intersection of Paint Creek road; a Mr. Woodford lived on section —— about a mile beyond. A little south of the line between the towns of Bloomfield and Royal Oak, two families by the name of Keyser and Thurber had settled. Reaching the beautiful table-land where is now situated the village of Birmingham, we found four families; Elisha Hunter, his son John W. Hunter, John Hamilton, and Elijah

Willetts—the latter inn-keeper. Here I got my first glimpse of the lovely land of Oakland county. Three-fourths of a mile this side of Hunter's lived Dr. Swan and his son-in-law, Sidney Dole, who was justice of the peace, register of deeds, and county clerk. The next house was Deacon Elijah Fish, and on the hill just south of where now is Bloomfield Centre, resided Amasa Bagley and his son-in-law, William Morris, the latter being sheriff of the county.

The next settler was —— Ferguson, whose neighbors, if living, may remember him from the remark he made after the nomination of Austin E. Wing as delegate to Congress in 1824 or 1825. Ferguson was a whig, and disputing with a democrat who asserted Wing could never be elected, replied: "He will surely be elected, for the very whippoorwills sing 'vote for Wing, vote for Wing.' " Well, Wing was elected, and took his seat in Congress, and performed his duty nobly for the young territory. Major Joseph Todd lived on the farm since known as the Elliott farm, and near by Asa B. Hadsel. The next house a half-mile further, was Colonel David Stanard, in a small framed house, being the same Joseph J. Todd occupied about forty-five years, having added to its length and height. About one and a half miles through the woods we approached the village of Pontiac, where we found a small framed house on the west side of Saginaw street, nearly opposite where the Methodist church now stands, occupied by Mr. Terry. Crossing the bridge, on the corner of Saginaw and Water streets, was a small log house, the first erected in the village, and a little beyond, and on the east side of Saginaw street (if my memory serves me), O. Bartlett lived in a small framed house. These were the only buildings at this time, June 1, 1821, on Saginaw street. This street being well filled with hazel brush, Water street received the travel to Perry street. On the west side of the latter street, between Pike and Lawrence, were three houses, one occupied by Deacon Orison Allen, and a little beyond and on the east side of Perry street, and nearly opposite the grist mill, stood a double log house called the "Company house," and occupied by Colonel Stephen Mack, agent of the Pontiac company. In addition to the grist mill there was a saw-mill and work shop. On the first Monday in June, my first visit to the village, a militia training was in full blast; John W. Hunter commanded the one and only company north of the base line in Michigan territory. On this day the company was divided, and a new company formed by electing the late Colonel Calvin Hotchkiss captain. Proceeding northwest on the road occasionally traveled to Saginaw, distant about a mile from the village, Captain Stanley lived on what has more recently been known as the Pier farm, on the present White Lake road.

The Indian trail from Detroit to Saginaw, which decided the location of Pontiac, crossed the Clinton at the same point as the present bridge on Saginaw street; turned northerly toward the company house, then bore northwesterly keeping east to the extensive marsh just beyond the residence of the late Governor Wisner, then turned in a northwesterly direction, crossing the Pontiac Creek a few rods northwest of the present crossing on the Saginaw road. Oliver Williams on the southwest side of Silver lake was the next home, three and one-half miles from Pontiac. He had removed to this place from Detroit in 1818; he built the first farm barn in the county, the lumber for enclosing it being manufactured by a couple of Frenchmen from Detroit, with a whip saw. Mr. Wisner kept open house, and in passing and re-passing to Flint river in 1821 I invariably called. He was a real gentleman, social, good natured, remarkably generous and hospitable, and fond of a good story. I well remember late one evening in December, 1821, in returning with our surveying party from Flint, after fording the Clinton at the little pinery, with the thermometer at zero, when nearly off our legs, we reached and were most kindly cared for in this most hospitable home. During one of my calls I inquired if there were many fish in Silver lake; he replied he could not say in regard to numbers, but he once hauled out a mullet that weighed 140 pounds. This rather surprised me, and while reflecting, not wishing to dispute his veracity, he observed my embarrassment as to the remark being somewhat fishy, and explained that a brother of John Mullett, the surveyor, was once fishing there, and falling into the lake was rescued by Mr. Williams. In those days of easy familiarity, he was known by the cognomen of Major Togee, and once at a social party at Dr. Chipman's, Mrs. Chipman desiring to address him by his title, and in the excitement of the occasion becoming forgetful of the same, said: "Major Hot Toddy, Major Hot Toddy!" About four miles beyond O. Williams, and at the crossing of the Indian trail on the Clinton, resided Alpheus Williams and Captain Archibald Phillips, where a saw-mill had been erected, and at this time was in operation.

But I will now return to my temporary home at Captain John Hunter's, of whose kindness, together with that of his excellent wife, long since gone to her reward, I cannot too highly speak. Here I made the acquainance of Horatio Ball, son of Daniel Ball, who lived three-fourths of a mile southwest of Hunter's. He had received a contract for subdividing ten townships of land between Flint and Cass rivers. I arranged to accompany him as assistant, to carry the compass half of the time. He was waiting for the completion of the town lines, which had been assigned to a young man by the name of Hester. We were soon informed he had done nothing after having discovered an Indian wigwam, near a small lake, and as he was accompanied by his dogs, and was otherwise prepared for a winter's hunt, had decided to pass the winter in this pleasant locality and avoid the swamps. In a week's time every man of his party had left him while he was taking lessons of the Indians in hunting, and of the squaws in moccasin making. Here he remained during the winter. The next June he was seen passing through Pontiac on horseback, accompanied by about a dozen natives, of both sexes, to make his report to the surveyor general, at Chillicothe, and also to his father for $600 cash advanced. Hester having thus failed in fulfilling his contract the work was assigned to Joseph Wampler, of Ohio (the surveyor who sub-divided ranges ten and eleven in Oakland county). We set off for our work on the 13th of June, arriving at Flint river before Wampler returned from Saginaw bay. The heavy rains had swollen the river to nearly full banks, and as there was no way of crossing we started up the river to the Kearsley, where we felled a suitable pine, about sixteen feet of which we removed from the main body of the tree and shaped it canoe-like, digging out the same, so far as could be done with axes, and made it answer our purpose, and we floated it down the river and landed it on the north side, where the city of Flint is now located. Here we found Jake Smith, called "Wabaseis" by the Indians, who had been Indian trader for several years, and who had recently received the appointment of Indian farmer. He had built a comfortable log house a few rods below the present railroad bridge. This was occupied by Smith, a white man, with his mother and sister. Also by a man by the name of Doane. The two men at this time (the middle of June) were hoeing corn, with veiled faces on account of the mosquitoes.

After waiting about a week we were furnished with the field notes, and commenced our work in town seven north, of range seven east. After a week's work we returned to the trading house, when soon after Wampler and his party came in, the men utterly refusing to continue longer on account of the suffering they had endured from the mosquitoes, both men and horses being weak from loss of blood and want of rest. Owing to the continuance of the township lines survey, we were compelled to discontinue our work, and we decided to accompany Wampler's party to Pontiac. During the remainder of the season I made my home with Mr. Hunter, and occasionally accompanied a land-looker. I also assisted him in securing his winter's supply of marsh hay, among the massasaugas, where they appeared in great abundance.

Early in autumn Wampler returned to Flint river to finish his work, and our party followed for the purpose of finishing our work, in October.

This occupied about sixty days, and from the inexperience of Ball, and the miserable outfits, we suffered both from hunger and cold. We had no tents, only an old second-hand tarpaulin, which had been laid aside as useless for hatchway service. In the absence of a kneading trough, our cook made use of this piece of canvas to mix his bread. This was unfortunate, for on our first visit to the trading-house some swine, attracted by the adhering dough, nearly devoured and entirely destroyed it, and we had now no cover besides our blankets. Our provisions were inadequate; we were frequently reduced to a short allowance of only buggy peas, and at one time, when weak from want of food, we found a wigwam where a squaw was cooking succotash, which she kindly divided with us. This occurred on the last day of our survey, while meandering the river. Closing our work on the line of the reserve at sunset and following up the river, forcing our way through thick beds of rushes knee high, at about nine o'clock we reached Smith's trading-house, so hungry from several days' short allowance, that we took the potatoes from the kettle half boiled. I must not forget to mention the names of the men who formed this surveying party. Besides Ball and myself, there were Rufus Stevens, Michael Beach, Chester Webster, and a young man from the Emerald Isle, named Pool.

During the sub-division of town nine north, of range six east, we encountered the most terrific gale of wind I ever witnessed in the woods of Michigan. The trees crackled and fell in all directions close around us. It was on the same night the "Walk-in-the-Water" lay off Buffalo, deeply laden for Detroit. When Captain Rodgers, after discovering the open seams of the steamer, and realizing the impending danger, very properly gave the order to slip the cables, releasing her, and she went on shore.

We finished our work on the last of December, and I decided to accompany Mr. Ball to Chillicothe, Ohio, where he made his returns to the surveyor general's office. In addition to letters I already possessed from Governor Clinton, of New York, and from Judge Wright, chief engineer of the Erie canal, I had procured one from Governor Cass, who recommended me from the fact I intended making Michigan my home. Starting on our journey, when a little way below Detroit, we were fortunate in obtaining a passage with an Ohio farmer, who had just made sale of his butter and cheese in Detroit. Landing at Sandusky, we footed it to Chillicothe. Presenting my letters, which proved satisfactory, he promised me future work. The purpose of my visit to Michigan being accomplished, and arrangements for future employment as government surveyor perfected, I immediately returned to my home, where I arrived on the 14th of February, having been absent eleven months.

HERVEY PARKE.

*Pontiac, February 21, 1874.*

In a former paper I related some incidents connected with my first visit to Michigan in 1821, concluding with my introduction by Mr. Horatio Ball to Hon. Edward Tiffin, surveyor general of Ohio, Indiana and Michigan Territories, and the assurance given me that I should have a contract for surveying at the earliest opportúnity.

From this place (Chillicothe, Ohio) I returned to my family and home in Camden, Oneida county, New York. My arrangements were soon made.

All our furniture was disposed of, as it would not do to transport it so great a distance, and there remained two large chests and several trunks in which our bedding and clothing were packed, including, of course my surveying apparatus; also a large strong cask, from which, after removing the chime hoops, I had placed one large seven-pail kettle, inside that a smaller one, then several still smaller, until it was quite filled. A log chain and some other iron articles added, made this cask a weighty affair, and caused many a tough fellow to say hard words, when attempting to move it.

The morning of May 12, 1822, was fixed upon for our departure. A few neighbors assembled; the Rev. Henry Smith, pastor of the Presbyterian church, offered prayer and gave us his blessing, the last good-bye said, and the handshaking over, with my wife and only child, now Mrs. W. M. McConnell, I mounted the wagon standing before our door, and with one last long look at our eastern home, set off for the Erie canal, twelve miles distant.

We proceeded on the canal as far as it was finished, within eighty miles of Buffalo, where I hired a man with team to take me to the latter place.

The "Superior," the only steamer on the lake, was absent on her first trip to Detroit, and I concluded to wait for her return, rather than ship on board a sail vessel.

While waiting for the steamer I met several families on their way to Michigan,—Asa Castle and his son Lemuel, Apollos Dewey, F. Perrin and wife, who were on board the steamer "Walk-in-the-Water," the previous fall at the time she was beached at Buffalo in a severe gale of wind.

During this gale I was encamped in the Saginaw woods, surrounded by the falling and crashing timber, and in as much danger of losing life as if in a naval engagement.

In about a week the steamer returned and we continued our journey.

Putting into Sandusky as usual to receive passengers, I met Judge Burt for the first time, direct from the surveyor general's office. Arriving at Detroit I met John Hamilton, with whom I formed an acquaintance the previous year.

He was provided with an ox-team and being in pursuit of a load, I engaged him to take me to my journey's end.

It was late before we left the city; we did not reach the angle of the road (six miles) until near sunset. At this point begins the causeway, constructed by the United States troops, when garrisoned at Detroit, under the command of Colonel Leavenworth.

I need not describe this piece of road as it is already known by all the pioneers.

When nearly over the causeway, the teamster announced that he must halt and feed his team, as "they would not feed in the heat of the day."

"Very well; we'll walk on slowly,"

Soon, "do you see that cloud?" I said to my wife; "see how it enlarges, and there is no shelter for a long distance." It was growing dark, and we were often saluted with peals of thunder and flashes of lightning, taking advantage of which, we kept as near the center of the road as possible.

The water being of unequal depth, were it not for occasional bars, it would have been excellent canoeing. I cautioned my wife to keep close to me, as having the child upon my back, or in my arms, I was unable to render much assistance.

Soon she sang out: "I've lost one of my shoes."

"Hold on, I will come to your assistance."

"Oh, I've found it."

Approaching her, she was adjusting the sleeve of her dress to the arm, and leading her back to where I had left the little lone pioneer on a hummock above the water, we were once more in close marching order. During all this time the rain was pouring down upon us, and the darkness so great, that we were compelled to proceed with the greatest caution to keep clear of the brush.

Arriving at White's tavern, their beds were occupied, but Mrs. White spread a few blankets on the floor where we slept as soundly as the swarming mosquitoes would permit.

In the morning Hamilton came up and we again mounted the wagon, going smoothly along over the plains to the angle of the Paint creek road, where then stood the famous oak tree.

The numerous pitch-holes made riding so uncomfortable we were glad to get out and walk the remaining five miles to Mr. J. W. Hunter's place of residence.

Here we received such a welcome as only himself and family could give, and we were invited to remain several weeks with them. During this time Mr. and Mrs. Hunter visited their eastern home, leaving us in charge of their family of young daughters.

On their return home he offered me the use of the shop, as he called it, an unfinished log house, built but not used for blacksmithing purposes, which he said I would be quite welcome to occupy. Doors, windows and floors were soon put in, and we moved into our first home in the west. There, in 1823, my only son, John H. Parke, was born.

Our furniture consisted of a table made by myself from a rough board, and chairs which my brother-in-law, Harry Brownson, who came soon after myself, built with his ax out of rough timber.

These articles, with our beds and bedding, several trunks and a small stock of clothing, comprised all my worldly possessions. I will not neglect to add that $8.50 in cash remained, and I was at this time in my thirty-third year. Of course the strictest economy was necessary, but my hopes were bright. I was in perfect health and all the preliminaries for the future work of surveying public lands entered into the previous year.

It being time I was on the move for family supplies, when, with the assistance of a friend, I raised a sum sufficient, added to the above, and set out on foot for Detroit, encountering mud, water, flies and mosquitoes.

Cattle drovers from Ohio were the chief dependence of the pioneers, but finding none at the time, I bought a fine looking new milch cow from a Frenchman, which proved to be so ungovernable as to require two men to hold and milk her, until I made a pen, so constructed that she could neither turn, go ahead or back out, and the milking could be performed by a single person.

After this I made another purchase of a cow at the administrator's sale of the estate of Webster, in the fall of 1824.

Whether Mr. Webster died in 1822 or 1823, I am unable to say. He came as passenger in the steamer Superior in May, 1822, with the mill-irons on board, when it was said that Burtt & Allen, millwrights, were set at work and the saw-mill was put in running order at Auburn, called Smith's mill.

After the death of Mr. Webster the real estate passed into the hands of the father of Captain Isaac Smith.

At the time of my arrival at Hunter's the settlement (now Birmingham) contained four log dwellings, occupied by Elijah Willetts, John W. Hunter, Elisha Hunter, his father, and John Hamilton.

In the fall of 1822 my brother, Dr. Ezra S. Parke, having recently completed his medical studies, arrived with his wife and one child, an infant daughter, who afterward became the wife of M. W. Kelsey. He was an earnest, zealous Christian, member of the Methodist Episcopal church, and soon after his arrival commenced holding occasional religious services in his own house on Sunday afternoon. On these occasions the singing was principally performed by his wife, who was remarkable for her rich, sweet voice, as well as many other lovely, Christian graces. The early settlers and other friends can never forget this excellent woman; her cheerfulness of temper in all circumstances, her kindness and sympathy in sickness and affliction were unsurpassed. She literally went about doing good. These meetings were the first held in the neighborhood, with the exception of a sermon I heard in 1821, in Willett's bar-room, by a Methodist minister who came up the Rouge, and whose name I do not remember.

I could get but little employment during the summer. Occasionally I assisted emigrants in land looking and surveying, but endeavored to wait patiently for the fulfillment of the promise which had been given me.

Early in the winter I received the place of teacher in the school on Swan's Plains, where I continued until February, when a letter from Mr. Mullett, of Detroit, proposed our visiting Chillicothe together, that we might soon procure the promised contract.

I resigned my place in the school to my brother, Dr. Parke, and soon arranged with Mr. M. for our journey. Our outfit consisted of a French pony, a jumper rudely constructed with a crockery crate for a box; this half filled with straw, a couple of blankets, not forgetting a saddle, and we were soon gliding down on the ice of the Detroit river to Sandusky. Here we left the jumper, saddled the pony, and proceeded on our journey—one riding and the other walking. After going a certain distance, the horseman would dismount, hitch the pony to a sapling, and proceed, taking his turn in walking, while his companion after a time would pass him on horseback, and in the proper place, he, too, would dismount and hitch, and the journey was concluded on this ride-and-tie principle.

Our interview with the General was most satisfactory. The oath of office was administered, each received a contract. Mr. M. and myself were the first appointed from this Territory, except Mr. Ball, who filled one contract of ten townships in 1821.

In a year or two Wm. Brockfield, of Detroit, received a contract. Others were furnished work soon after.

I commenced work seven miles south of Fenton (township four north, range eleven east,) the last week in March, completing my work within fifty days from the time of leaving home. Nothing occurred worthy of note, except Chester Ball became frightened at what he called a panther, and ran away from camp, and everything came near being burned up during his absence, and Lucius Hunt broke through the ice in Long Lake, three steps in my rear, when drawing the surveying chain.

Messrs. Lyon & Sibley secured contracts for subdividing towns seven and eight north, extending to range sixteen east to Lake Huron, in the autumn of 1823. Dr. Swan, John Mack, Clark of Toledo, John Mullett, and myself, received contracts for subdividing on the head waters of the Raisin, covering a tract of twenty-five or thirty miles square, and extending east to meet the first surveys in 1815, near Tecumseh.

John Hamilton transported my provisions and camp equipage, accompanied by John Mack's and my own party, from Detroit to Woodworth's grove, where two families had located. This was our supply depot and the most western settlement at this time—December, 1823. An unoccupied log house was standing on the right bank of the Huron about two miles above where Ypsilanti is located. A few weeks later I heard that Rumsey & Allen had settled where now is Ann Arbor. We crossed the Huron the following morning, and steered west over the Poor Oak Barrens, or Dry Oak Barrens, as I have seen them described in the original field books of 1816. Said Wampler to me, "I never signed the unfavorable report made by the first surveyors, but left the matter to older and more experienced men."

We encamped in a snow storm at night with plenty of green oak timber for kindling a fire, while some of the party had just been seriously ducked by falling from a slippery log on which they were crossing a creek.

Our work was in the vicinity of Adrian. The evening previous to commenceing my last township, I received a message from Mullett, requesting me to head his party after finishing my own work, as it was necessary for him to return home for ten days.

My work completed, we took a general shave, having neglected it from the time of leaving home. Converting my blankets into an Indian pack, into which I stowed three days' rations, pork and bread, with ax in hand, I started south and the boys east, for home.

At the usual time for lunch my bread was hard as rocks; this was a common occurrence throughout the winter. With the head of the ax I would convert it into use in quick time. Continuing through the day moderately, plenty of time for thoughts, there being no one with whom to speak, and when the sun was about setting I saw a fallen tree, as I had been on the lookout for one as a wind-breaker, when I immediately made preparations for lodging. Wrapping my blanket around me I turned in, or rather on the frozen ground. Well, I slept some, but was moving before it was fairly daylight. The second night I passed in an Indian hut, and came near being smoked, bacon like, and decided on disturbing no more wigwams.

At five o'clock P. M., intersected white men's tracks going west, and looking east discovered the smoke of the surveyor's camp; it was near dark when I arrived, and I soon heard the cry of "tally sixteen!" by the forward chain man, indicating their return to a corner as well as to camp.

Mullett left for home the second day after my arrival. I was to run a township line, subdividing the same in his absence. We were near Bear creek and not far from the meridian. I finished the township when Mullett returned. Next morning set off for home—course southeast. The first night lay by the side of a fallen tree. As it had been snowing, I banked up my bed with the same and slept tolerably well. Next day intersected the road leading to Detroit, and tarried over night at a Frenchman's house. I passed through Detroit on Sunday just as the citizens were returning home from church, and lest I should meet an acquaintance, avoided the sidewalk and took the center of Jefferson avenue, for my clothes were so worn, that my legs were wrapped in moose-wood bark from my knees to my feet. Dr. Hurd, however, did recognize me in spite of my disguise, and bowed, smiling, as I passed him. I arrived home the next day.

In the year 1825 or 1826, while subdividing some twenty miles east of Battle Creek, I was surprised when returning one night from my work to find Mullett and his party, who had left their camp on the creek, before light, the same morning, in consequence of an encounter with Indians the day previous. The red men in the vicinity, thinking the survey of the land would be likely to interfere with their sugar-making, had for some time manifested displeasure by hindering and obstructing the work, and at one time a sub-chief, while standing near Mr. M. suddenly sprang in front and brought him to a halt. "Had I best hit him?" he asked of John Monroe, his rear chain man, who replied, "I guess not."

The day previous Edwin Baldwin, the packer, and Taylor, the cook, were together in camp. It was the first day of March, and bees were flying and the former were trying to get their line. Two Indians appeared and demanded provisions, which the cook refused, and called Baldwin. One Indian seized a camp kettle, when the cook sprang upon him. The second Indian attempted to assist his comrade, when the packer aimed a blow at him with the fire poker, a big handspike, which failed in effect by striking the tent-pole; then there was a clinch. Baldwin soon quieted his antagonist, and sprang to help Taylor, who was a small-sized man with a crippled hand, and was on the ground with his Indian, holding fast to the handle of his adversary's tomahawk with one hand, while with the other he clinched firmly the fellow's long air. A few blows made him as quiet as the other. The Indian had fired his rifle during the encounter; Baldwin showed me where his clothes were scorched by the powder. Some anxious hours followed, for the party came in later than usual that night. One Indian rallied and desired to leave, but as his comrade was so severely injured they feared he would die, they prudently bound him until morning when they gave him his liberty, and leaving the still insensible Indian the party broke camp and started for home, stopping with me as I have described, the first night out. I finished my work unmolested in three weeks and Mullett returned to his a few weeks later. This originated the name of Battle Creek.

In the autumn of 1823, I purchased of Shubael Conant the southeast quarter of section thirty-three in the township of Pontiac, at a little less than $3.00 per acre. The following year I added thirty-one acres on the north and adjoining the same at $5.00 per acre. The year previous, however, I purchased of the same sixteen and one-half acres to secure building ground, as the line of the road from Detroit had cut off my former building ground and first purchase, the price being $10, with the privilege of one, or as many acres as I chose.

In May, 1824, I was ready to take possession, when Judge LeRoy, who owned and occupied the house in which Joseph J. Todd has since resided about forty years, kindly offered me a room for the use of my family while my own house was building. This required the labor of three men besides myself for two weeks. The roof was covered with boards, battened with slabs, and as the house logs were cut unequal lengths, when raised to their proper place, they formed steps convenient for mounting the roof at the alarm of fire. The interior was quite comfortable and pleasant, the logs being hewn and partially covered with newspapers, the floor of white pine, and two doors, and windows opposite, of seven by nine glass; a wide, open fire-place, one side of which, in the corner, was a ladder for ascending the loft, where our friends found a comfortable bed. And soon after, for further convenience, especially for the aged, as it was difficult to ascend the ladder, and dangerous with all, I added to the rear of the house a room for their accommodation, and a sixteen by twenty room at the south end for a kitchen.

From the year 1824 up to December, 1829, I surveyed twenty-two townships, in addition to the foregoing, extending from the principal meridian to the west boundary of the large Indian reservation extending to Saginaw bay. In the fall and winter of 1826-7 I subdivided six townships on Lookingglass river (Clinton county). This survey extended south and west to the north line of the township in which the State capital is located.

The Stevens family,—father of Messrs. Rufus and Sherman Stevens—resided at Grand Blanc, and from this place I packed my provisions; finishing my district the 15th of January, arriving home in the evening; my wife, on the lookout, having heard of my arrival at the village, met me at the door, welcoming me, presenting to my arms our infant daughter, aged six weeks. This, my youngest child, became the wife of Levi Bacon, Jr. It was a joyful meeting of the family, I having been absent sixty-two days.

The last week in December, 1829, three surveyors, Clark, Thomas, and Christmas, left Pontiac on a surveying tour west from Saginaw, myself following them a day or two after, my work being twelve townships, from eleven to towns eighteen north from the meridian, east to the reservation above mentioned on the Kankanin river, having engaged Philip Bigler to transport my provisions to Saginaw, where I made headquarters. Proceeding on the ice of the Saginaw and Tittabawassee rivers to the line of township twelve on the west side of the Tittabawassee river, the snow full knee deep at every step rendered our work slow and tedious, when before we were aware of it we found ourselves running a line in the Forks reservation, causing much delay in our work in hunting the lines when backing out for this purpose. Succeeding in this, our work went on at the rate of four or five miles a day only, as the lines were to be walked over the second time; continuing at this rate only throughout the winter, not losing a day on account of the weather until the 8th of April, we started out as usual as soon as it was light.

The wind, rising as the sun rose, increased, and as the tree-tops were loaded with snow, filled the air, so that we were compelled to return to camp, where we remained two days. When hearing from Thomas, it was said he was about at the point of discouragement in not being able to find his starting point, this being his first experience in the woods, when he sang out, "I will give any man $50 that will show me my starting point."

"Will you give me that?" said Chester Goodrich, who had been through one surveying tour with Mr. Mullett.

The next I heard was, Christmas had gone to the settlement and had engaged board for himself with Mr. O. Williams for the winter, leaving two men to keep camp at half pay. Thomas had found his corner, had become stimulated with courage, declaring that he would leave his bones in the woods sooner than leave his work. I never heard whether Chester had received the fifty dollars.

The snow disappeared and warm weather succeeded, the men composing the three parties (for Christmas had now returned) suffered so extremely from inflamed and swollen feet that they were obliged to stop work and went to the forks of the river, where there was a trading house which was our base of supplies. A sub-chief soon brought me a letter from Clark, urging me also to discontinue work, in order to make it a general thing. I had already performed the full amount of my twelve townships, for Clark had been unable to reach me with his lines, and I had been necessitated to run several of his township lines. For eight weeks I had carried the compass with a badly crippled foot, the result of a frost bite, and during the breaking up of the ice swamps when we were compelled to wade a good share of the time in ice cold water. I suffered more than my pen can describe. Being in this position, and John Powell, my ax man, just taken lame, I acceded to the request and we were soon on our way to Pontiac. While traveling together Clark said, "Parke, if we are ordered to complete our work, you must finish mine, for I would rather lose all I have done than return here." During this winter we had many hindrances to encounter. When encamped at the northwest corner of township 17 it was necessary to go to the northeast corner of the township to run the line west.

This corner had been previously established on the left bank of the Tittabawassee, when we mistook the Tobacco river for the Tittabawassee river, and sought nearly two days in a blinding snow storm, having passed the junction of the two rivers, when not able to see the corner on account of the brush covered with snow, having passed it several times during the second day. At night I told the boys we must have intersected some other stream, and in the morning we would continue east, when we would find the corner.

My expectations were realized, and we found the corner and a brush-built hut, built by Steinbrook, in which he had been waiting our arrival. Becoming impatient, he had left, probably for Saginaw. On his return, owing to the difficulties of passing through the brush, he rigged a kind of jumper, drawing it on the ice, attaching it to himself in such a manner as to disengage himself when breaking through the ice in deep water; but at one time he came near losing his life.

On another occasion, when returning from Saginaw with his jumper, discovering a pack of wolves feasting on a deer they had just drawn from an ice hole, he decided on sharing a portion of the deer with the wolves; and, when they growled and glared at him, hastily sprang upon them, yelling and waving his hat; they slowly retired a few steps, while he took a portion that was left, and retired.

Early in autumn, 1830, we, the delinquent surveyors of the past year, were notified to go forward and complete our work without delay. When preparing outfits for another campaign in the Saginaw woods, Christmas made his appearance, being on his way to complete his unfinished work.

The two parties, his and my own, left Pontiac together, and when on our way he suggested assisting me in completing the three contracts on my hands. Arriving at Saginaw, the schooner from Detroit, on board of which were our supplies, had grounded on the river bar, causing delay and serious consequences for a time.

Through the kindness of the Messrs. E. F. and Gardner Williams at Saginaw City, we were supplied with sufficient provisions for a single trip, as they were short, their supplies being on board of the same vessel. Dividing with C.

and leaving part of my own for the next trip of the packer, Samuel Steinbrook, the parties proceeded together and recommenced work. The other packer went for supplies first, and as the schooner had not arrived, my provisions were taken for the other party, Steinbrook being provided with two bags of potatoes, being all our friends, Messrs. Williams, could do for us.

I regretted, when too late, that I did not send Steinbrook with a letter demanding a share of the provisions stolen after dividing with the party. Potato diet, working twelve hours a day, was hardly sufficient. The third day, as we were running a line east, met the packer, and never did the pony obtain relief so sudden as then. Every man had his pocket knife in requisition, sharpening sticks for broiling pork.

After this occurrence our work went on regularly, as there was no further delay for some time. Steinbrook, on his return, brought a letter from Christmas, desiring to know what I would give for the privilege of completing his work. I answered him briefly: as for giving for this privilege it was out of the question, and respecting the finishing his work no encouragement could I offer.

On the next return trip of the packer this surveyor had taken passage, leaving two men at camp, Eli Sawtels being one of them, C. renewing his application for my assistance in the further fulfillment of his contract.

He had become broken down, discouraged, home-sick and sick of the woods, to the shedding of tears, as he was pleading for assistance.

When out of pity to him I said: "if you will finish the township in which you are engaged, I will complete the remainder (two townships) of your work." It is not for me to say how I found his work had been performed, having but two men left to assist, the others having left for home.

The following year I received a letter from him stating his expenditures during the two trips exceeded the amount of his receipts $90.

I never heard from Thomas after his leaving the Saginaw woods. Clark dropped dead from apoplexy, with the compass under his arm, while extending a range line in the western part of the State in 1836 or 1837.

I will mention here that I finished the work of the two last named surveyors in the Saginaw woods and marshes.

In the autumn of 1832 I left home for the purpose of subdividing fifteen townships in the lead mine district in Wisconsin.

This is remembered as the cholera year, and also the one which closed the Black Hawk war. A little cluster of whitewashed houses at the mouth of the Chicago river marked the site of the present great city. A little distance from this point we discovered fresh wagon tracks diverging from the main road which had been made by General Scott's little army in pursuit of Black Hawk and his warriors, which with the aid of a pocket compass for general course, we mainly followed. Our troops must have made about eleven miles a day in their march, as was indicated by their camping grounds, where we found traces of their fires, cast-off clothing and frequent new-made graves. Half a mile east of Rock river we first discovered where Black Hawk and his warriors had encamped three weeks previous, and took possession for one night only. In addition to the tent-poles were six or eight brush heaps twelve or fifteen feet in diameter, three or four feet high, the use of which, considering their mode of warfare, we could not comprehend.

At sunrise we were by the river which was filled by new made, sharp, cutting ice, and the depth of water was midride to the pony. The poor animal had a hard time taking us all over. Erwin Tyler, the cook, being the smallest man, was selected as ferryman, and crossed and re-crossed, carrying one man behind him each trip. From this point the character of the country changed from level to hilly, and reaching the height of ground we could distinctly see, looking ahead, three Indian trails, apparently six feet apart, indicating that the warriors marched in single file. The second day after crossing the river, we came across an Indian trader, rebuilding, the Indians having burned his house, and from him obtained a fresh supply of provisions. Arriving at Mineral Point, met a son of General Dodge, from whom I engaged a good supply of smoked side pork, not needed for the troops, as the war had closed. I engaged flour at $14 per barrel. During our journey the weather had been warm and smoky, but the night of our arrival a terrible snow storm occurred, continuing thirty-six hours, with drifts fifteen to twenty feet high. This was discouraging, for in a prairie country the corners are made by raising mounds of earth two and one-half feet high; in the top a stake is driven and inscribed with marking-iron, denoting town, range and section. The weather was bitter cold and our labor severe, but with a spade and two-edged axe, we overcame all difficulties. The month of February was pleasant and the honey bees out flying in the air.

One morning I discovered honey-comb near the foot of a hollow tree, from which we took two camp kettles' of as beautiful honey as I ever saw, and from this time forward we were constantly supplied with honey. There was occasionally much excitement caused by the movement of the Indians, although after the battle of Bad Ax, on the Mississippi, where General Dodge gave them a terrible whipping, some of the principal warriors succeeded in crossing the Mississippi. Black Hawk was soon after captured, having left his warriors after crossing Rock river. One day, sitting there in camp, copying field notes to transmit to the officers, having sent the boys out to complete a couple of lines, I was a little startled in hearing the crack of a rifle close by, and rapidly approaching footsteps, followed by an Indian greatly excited, who pointed in the direction of the gun shot; then stooping to the ground he picked up a piece of bark which he threw in the same direction. Shaking my head he saw I was determined not to understand him, and he looked sullen, mad, and much disappointed. Of course, I thought he had an accomplice, and had I left would have robbed the camp. In a few minutes two more Indians appeared and when within six feet of the tent placed the butt of their rifles upon the ground. I felt quite relieved. We exchanged the usual salutation of "boo shoo," at their first appearance. I invited them to lunch with me as was always my custom in Michigan, after which we parted good friends.

I finished this work the last of April, and my men returned home, with the exception of my nephew, M. B. Smith, who accompanied me to Cincinnati, as the surveyor general's office had been removed to that city.

I had waited at Galena three weeks for the arrival of the first steamer going south. During my stay at Galena great excitement existed in regard to Indians, as rumor said they were assembling by hundreds at Dixon's ferry, on Rock river. One day a great scare occurred as a horseman appeared on the opposite side of the river, shouting "to arms! to arms!" All the inhabitants were fleeing from Dixon's ferry to Galena in great terror. He plunged his poor, panting horse into the stream, rapidly urging him over. The poor animal feel dead soon after reaching the opposite shore. Laying aside my papers I set off for the ferry, where drums and fifes were playing and fifty or more men and boys had assembled. About the time I was leaving the assembled multitude fifteen or twenty young men mounted on horseback were crossing the river to assist the women and children on their way. But as usual it proved a false alarm.

While making returns at this time, the surveyor general suggested my entering into contract for surveying the exterior lines of townships in Indiana, and proceeding to the work as soon as I could make the necessary arrangements. Owing to the ill health of my wife when last heard from, I chose to defer giving an answer until I arrived home, when it was suggested my leaving a blank contract, to which I assented. The work in Indiana was afterwards given to Sylvester Sibley and another Michigan surveyor. For this act of the government agent the Indiana surveyors were much displeased, so much so as I was told, it was carried into Congress at the next session. During the following autumn orders were received by the surveyor general to cause that part of the territory lying between Saginaw bay and township 9, on Lake Huron, to be surveyed. The chief clerk was instructed to fill the blanks in the abovementioned contract and forward the same to me. This work had been given to Joseph Wampler in the fall of 1822, embracing about eighty township exterior lines, extending south to township 6, and from range 8 east to Lake Huron, he (Wampler) having surveyed about twenty-four townships, leaving the north line of township 10 unsurveyed, such being his anxiety to leave the swamps. It was the most dreaded portion of the lower peninsula, and would have been objectionable at the most favorable season of the year, but as there was one deputy surveyor, Wm. A. Burt, Esq., at work near the Lake, and another on his way, it was necessary the survey of the township lines should be continued or the subdivision must cease.

### HEADQUARTERS AT LAPEER.

I was on the ground with a full party on or about the 1st day of January, 1834, at the northwest corner of township ten east, and therefore nearly forty miles east of township line (nine of town ten) left unsurveyed by Wampler. To commence surveying it was necessary to cross the townships by ranging with pocket compass to intersect just south of quarter section corner, it being necessary to measure from said corner a half mile, at which point the town corner was established in readiness to run the line west. This operation was necessary to perform in every range of townships. The snow being eighteen inches deep, and the evergreen underbrush bent to the ground, it was extremely difficult ranging to keep our course, which occasioned our falling two miles short of camp when overtaken by night, and the going of this, our first day without supper, tent, or blankets. In running long lines among swamps, where it is impossible for horses to pass, it was a common thing for each man to shoulder and carry throughout the day a pack containing a blanket and several days' provisions. Continuing my work for a few weeks under great disadvantage, I concluded to return home, wait until the frost should bridge the streams, which would enable us to extend our lines into the interior.

In six weeks I entered the second time, after having obtained the field notes of a survey in town nine, where the timber, beech, denoted hard land, indicating that pack horses could be used. With this view I made a deposit of provisions at Mill creek in addition to that made at Lapeer, and Burch's mill on Black river, six miles north of Port Huron. In addition to the horses, I engaged an extra pack-man, and proceeded by way of Romeo to Mill creek. Crossed the creek early in the morning, but soon plunged into almost an unpenetrable swamp, where I had expected being able to proceed with the horses, but they repeatedly sank, were unpacked, dragged out through mud and water, repacked, but soon down again, until night overtook us, when we chanced to find a section corner by which we learned we had progressed one and one-half miles. Finding it impossible to get the horses through, I sent them with two men, back to Romeo, with orders to proceed to Port Huron, then up to the lake shore twenty miles, thence northwest to the point designated. The axman, two chainmen and cook, headed by myself, each with a blanket and two weeks' provisions, pocket compass in hand, course northeast, set off through the marsh, readily finding the corner left in my first trip. We commenced work, continuing two weeks, our provisions much reduced, and not hearing from the pack men, I decided we would go in pursuit. Taking an east course, we intersected Black river, followed down stream, boarded a shingle shanty, and were informed by the men that the men and horses had crossed the river and gone west. Turning back in our course we followed their tracks, and in due time met together. When running west I dispatched our new pack man, directing him to go southwest by the pocket compass and when eight miles look sharply for an east and west line I had surveyed, follow it until he found what I had described on paper, handing it to him, and he would find provisions in a basswood trough covered with a like made trough, secured by heavy logs for safety.

Finding the provisions he made a full pack from the deposit and set off to meet the surveying party. But his return was long delayed. Fortunately the other packer, Steinbrook, was returning from my other deposit—Burch's mill—and met the lost and bewildered man, when the two returned to camp the following day. Of course he had a long story to tell of his adventures and sufferings during his two weeks' solitude in the wilderness. For six or eight weeks the land in the vicinity of the heads of Cass and Black rivers (the English of the Indian name is "Big Marsh") was under water from knee to waist deep, and we were obliged to dispense with our horses while extending range and township lines, while each man carried on his back his own blanket and provisions.

Our progress, of course, was slow, making two and one-half to three miles per day. We were frequently obliged to lay down poles and pile on them hemlock boughs to keep out of the water while we slept. I remember we built one camp-fire on the earth-covered roots of an overthrown hemlock, after driving center-poles to scaffold up to the fire. The difficulty of transporting provisions caused us to be on short allowance, and I well remember, at one time, when our hunger had not been satisfied for days, and while establishing a corner on the bank of Lake Huron, a couple of the boys killed a coon when starting for camp, and not being able to reach it before night, we roasted one quarter of the coon for supper, and lay down blanketless for our night's repose. The remainder of the little animal, with the last pint of flour at camp, was quickly disposed of on our arrival.

In April, finding I was accomplishing so little after two months' hard work, I decided to return home and await a more favorable season. When making returns of the work performed I was offered twelve townships' subdividing, with privilege of selecting my own location. This I accepted, and early in the autumn started on my third trip. When re-commencing my work on Lake Huron another surveyor was landing his provisions, preparatory to commencing subdividing where I had already surveyed the township lines, and another party was said to be on his way for like purposes. It seemed as though the government was determined the survey of this part of the Lower Peninsula should be completed, twelve years having passed by since Wampler commenced the township lines. I found the condition of the country more favorable, the water having passed off. We found plenty of game, elk, deer, and indications of moose.

Trappers had marked their lines with numerous dead-falls for martin and other animals, valuable for their furs, having coasted along the lake shore, as we found their boats well secured at the mouth of one of the streams.

My work subdividing lay partly on Saginaw Bay. I completed it and returned home in February.

In the autumn of 1836 I received a contract for surveying the exterior lines of about sixty townships in Iowa, extending from the south boundary of the territory to a point five miles north of Rock Island, being equal to about one-third of the Black Hawk reservation.

Arrived on the left bank of the Mississippi, opposite Burlington, the 23d day of December, 1836. The river nearly filled with thick cakes of ice, it was with great difficulty that a ferryman, with my assistance, could take me over in a small boat. The party, excepting the packer, crossed over next morning with my assistance in throwing a line to them from shore, by which they hauled the boat to land, having floated with the current far below the city. The packer going down the river twelve miles, was able to cross over with the pack horses, returning to the party in about two weeks. During this two weeks we were extending lines, putting up at night with the settlers.

During the time required for the performance of this work up to June following, the party suffered extremely with the severity of the weather, it being an open tract of country, principally prairie. The great wonder among the "squatters" was, why we came to survey in winters. Why, they say, you cannot survey half the time, as you cannot endure the cold. In addition to this, the snow was sixteen inches deep for eight weeks.

Much time was lost daily in travel to and from timber, for camping. We continued many days working, while the "squatters" were sitting by the firesides. I well remember one rainy morning during this month, entering the open, wide-spread prairie, six miles west of Burlington, when running a range line (the packman with the horses turning to the right for wood shelter), my nephew, M. B. Smith, said, "uncle, your face is frozen." This was about the middle of the day. Such was the sudden change of weather in three or four hours time, and increasing, that were it not that we had reached the town corner, and running east with our backs to the wind, we should have been compelled to flee to the timber to avoid freezing.

One terrible cold night the prairie winds blew out all our fires, and our full supply of blankets seemed to afford no protection. Some of the boys started on a bee line for the nearest house, going in their stocking feet, as the fire had been insufficient to thaw hard frozen boots. The remainder soon followed and I remained alone in camp until sunrise, when I was glad to follow, the entire company's blankets being insufficient protection from such terrible cold and wind. During the month of March the reflection of the sun on the snow was extremely painful to our eyes, and notwithstanding we adopted the Indian custom of blacking our faces, it was unsuccessful, and I was compelled to send a long distance for green glasses, giving relief at once.

After the middle of April our work went on finely. Approaching the western boundary of the reservation, we were anticipating some trouble with the

Indians, as they had manifested some dissatisfaction regarding the line as surveyed near their encampment. But the only annoyance we received from them was stealing the only remaining pack pony, and as I had sent his mate off with the packman during his raising mounds, compelled the party to carry packs when extending lines. This was the fourth horse stolen by the Indians during my surveys. Completed this work the first of June, having been absent from home about six months.

Receiving another contract for subdividing twelve townships, also in Iowa, extending from Dubuque to Turkey river, and two range west to an extensive prairie, I left home on the 22d day of August, 1837, it being the second day of election under the territorial law. Arrived at Dubuque the 6th of September, and before the first township was completed three of the party were taken down with the ague and fever, causing much delay with our work. Nevertheless we finished the subdivision in due time, and commenced the survey of the islands in the Mississippi, and when about two-thirds completed the January thaw breaking up the ice compelled us to discontinue our work, the only contract I ever failed to fulfill. After waiting a week in vain for a change of weather we crossed the river with much trouble, for home via Galena, as there was no road open further north. Arriving at Chicago the principal topic was the Michigan wild-cat money, followed by the Canadian patriot war. We frequently met sleighs overloaded with families fleeing from their Canadian troubles.

Arrived home the latter part of February. I then intended discontinuing the survey of public lands. However, in the autumn of 1844, I received a letter accompanied by a contract for re-surveying the township of Salem. (T. 1 S., R. 7 E.) The county surveyor declined making further surveys. It furthermore was enjoined on me to pay strict regard to the instructions transmitted, they having emanated from the hand of the commissioner of the land office. This work required three weeks.

Early in the year 1845 the office of the surveyor general was removed from Cincinnati to Detroit, when one of the early pioneer surveyors, the late Hon. Lucius Lyon, received the appointment of surveyor general. Up to this time there had been no material change in the instructions to the deputy surveyors, and as one surveyor general succeeded another, by the change of administration, the instructions for subdividing remained the same, or with very little addition up to the time of the above mentioned new appointment. There had been a doubt in my mind for many years whether the instructions to the deputies were full and complete, as required by act of Congress, that every interior full section should be eighty chains square, and to contain 640 acres, consequently each quarter section would be forty chains square, containing 160 acres, and this should be divided by corners placed equidistant from section to quarter section corner, in the same manner as dividing a section in the absence of the evidence of a quarter section corner, so it has appeared to me the jog of the section corners should never have been made. The corners established on the township lines would, and as I think, should have been also the corner for the adjoining townships, that the remaining thirty-five miles of unconverted lands, twenty-five miles having been converted, should have been converted also, saving the necessity of the jogs. It required a practical and experienced surveyor to have drawn the instructions to the deputies by which the jogs would have been avoided, when no jogs and no portions of an acre would appear, except on the fractional one-half sections.

### RECAPITULATION OF THE FOREGOING.

The number of miles of established lines which I surveyed in Michigan, Wisconsin, and Iowa, from March, 1822, up to the middle of January, 1838, including the survey of township 1 S., R. 7. E., Washtenaw county, if performed in subdividing, would be equal to more than three times the size of Oakland county, amounting to 5,400 miles, the ground twice walked over, amounting to 10,800; to this add the daily walking from and return to camp, about equal to thirty miles to the township; to this add the travel to and from my districts, sometimes several hundred miles from home, and the whole number would not fall short of 20,000 miles.

I have not penned the foregoing as being anything extraordinary, as there are thousands of men in Michigan who could go through the same fatigue if they would form a resolution to do so. We suffered much from frozen feet, the painful effects of which I am still hourly reminded, after a lapse of forty years.

It was not uncommon to carry packs of blankets and provisions, camping when overtaken by night.

In the prairie country we occasionally carried poles from two to three inches in diameter, from which to cut posts to set in mounds every half mile, when raised in the spring. These posts we marked with the marking iron—township, range, and section. I have occasionally entered a prairie with three poles, equal to nine posts, with compass and staff in hand.

Our food was healthy, highly relished, and never gave us dyspepsia. Our breakfast was eaten before daylight, from October to June, that we might reach our work before sunrise, traveling three or four miles in prairie or open country. This meal consisted of strong tea, fried or cold boiled pork, and shortcake yellow with saleratus and rich with pork drippings. For lunch, finished by 10 or 11 o'clock, and eaten while walking, for we never stopped in winter, consisted of a bit of cold pork and a piece of bread, the latter often frozen too hard for use, until the ax was used to cut it into small pieces. We worked until near dark, and, arriving late in camp, the hot bean soup with bread and tea was eaten with great relish.

Before leaving the subject I would like to record the names of some of the men who assisted me in this work. They were the following: Samuel F. Bryan, Oliver Torry, Lucius Hunt, David Wilcox, Calvin and Chester Ball, Moses Peck and brother, John Powell, C. P. Webster, Wm. Phillips, M. B. Smith, Pliny Skinner, Geo. Case, Jed Van Wagoner, Samuel Steinbrook, Marvin Tyler, I. Welch, Davis, George Galloway, C. Killicut, Hannibal, Sawtells, Pike, Gould, Phipps, Hart, Meacham, Dixon, Walter Ostrander, Allen, Michael Van Buren, E. J. White, and others I do not remember.

I will mention the name of Clark O. Risden, United States surveyor, who published the first map of the surveyed part of Michigan Territory, and had several contracts. I hear he is still living, and must be near my own age, eighty-six in April next. We are probably all that are left of the pioneers employed by government in surveying the lands of Michigan.

HERVEY PARKE.

PONTIAC, *February 26, 1876.*

## OBITUARY.

Captain Hervey Parke died in Pontiac, at the residence of his son-in-law, W. M. McConnell, October 3, 1879, aged eighty-nine years and six months. He was born in Middle Haddam, Connecticut, in April, 1790, and first visited Michigan in 1821, coming and returning on foot. He removed with his family from Oneida county, New York, the next year, and in 1824 bought a farm and settled near Pontiac. Coming to this young territory for the purpose of engaging in the survey of public lands, he was one of the first deputies appointed from Michigan, and continued in the business until 1837. He was a compeer of John Mullet, Sylvester Sibley, Lucius Lyon, Clark O. Risden and Judge Burt—a goodly company, of which he was the last survivor. His contracts extended over portions of Wisconsin and Iowa, and in Michigan included parts of the counties of Livingston, Lenawee, Jackson, Calhoun, Clinton, Midland, Bay and Genesee. He ran all the town and many of the subdivision lines from Lake Huron and Saginaw bay on the west, and from Black river to Point aux Barques on the north. Possessing great energy, an indomitable perseverance and a most remarkable physical endurance, he was admirably fitted for the hardships incidental to the surveyor's life.

In his character was combined the highest integrity, the strictest truthfulness, great sweetness of temper and the most amiable deportment; and the profession of religion and union with the M. E. church, at the age of seventy-six, could make but little apparent change in one so pure and noble.

Hopelessly afflicted with paralysis for twelve years, his intellect was scarcely clouded, his patience and faith unwavering, and coming to the close of his long and useful life, he met "the inevitable fate" with saintly fortitude and Christian dignity, leaving to his friends the blessed assurance of "all is well."

## SOME EARLY HISTORY OF OAKLAND COUNTY.

The following was read by Mr. Drake before the Oakland County Pioneer Society, February, 1864:

Mr. President: With your permission I will present a few old papers to the society, which contain some remarks relative to the early history of old Oakland. It will be remembered by some that in the year 1860 a Pioneer Society was formed in this county. After some preparatory meetings, it was resolved to hold a meeting of the society on the 22d day of February, and a request of the society was communicated to Gov. Woodbridge, and to the Hon. B. F. H. Witherell, of Detroit, desiring them to visit Pontiac and address the society at the meeting on the 22d. Neither Governor Woodbridge nor General Witherell could attend, and I received the request of the society to address the old Pioneers, on the day appointed. What ability I possessed I gave with feelings of pride to the consideration of the subject during the time allotted me. An address was prepared, but the pleasure of reading it was not allotted to me; I was called to attend the funeral of my mother on the 22d, the day of the meeting of the Pioneers, and I got Mr. Francis Darrow to convey to the society the cause of my absence, and to read the address to the society. Fourteen years have now passed since that occurrence; many of those who participated in the pleasures of that day are now enrolled with the dead. The society held several meetings thereafter, but circumstances prevented me from meeting with the society, and thus many of us have been set apart and separated forever.

Mr. President, I hold in my hand a paper which contains the address written by me and read by Mr. Darrow fourteen years ago. I present it to the society, believing that to be the best mode of preserving the historical facts therein contained.

Mr. President, in reciting these few facts, fond memory brings up the form as well as the name of Francis Darrow. I pray you to indulge me for a few moments. I have a request to make of the Society. In justice to the dead I cannot omit it. Francis Darrow was an early settler and pioneer of the county; he came to Pontiac in 1829; from that time till his death, which occurred at Ionia on the night of April 11, 1873, he made Oakland county his home. He was educated a merchant, received early instructions from the accomplished merchant and salesman Lodowick C. Fitch, of Ontario county, New York. Mr. Darrow came to Pontiac in the employ of Horatio N. Howard, one of our early settlers, and the first permanent merchant in Pontiac, and as a pioneer he has remained with us. Mr. Darrow's acquisitions and mercantile accomplishments soon gained for him an unusual celebrity. At an early day he married Augusta, the second daughter of the Hon. Daniel LeRoy, one of our early pioneers, whose name is inseparably connected with the history of Oakland county. Mr. Darrow was an agreeable, social and intelligent man, admired and esteemed by all. And when the office of register of deeds was first filled by an election, he was the first choice of the people; with the records of the county his name will be transmitted to future ages. In memory of our early associations and grateful acknowledgement of his kindness through life I ask that the name of Francis Darrow be placed upon the roll of departed pioneers.

Mr. President, I present to the Society also a paper containing a brief sketch of a journey made by Major Oliver Williams and two or three others from Detroit to the place where Pontiac is located, and as far north as where Waterford now stands, in the fall of 1818. Mr. Williams and his party were the first white men that penetrated into the country around about Pontiac after the government surveyors left. And there is also a review of the journey of one Jennison from Detroit to Saginaw and back, in which he essays to give a description of that part of Oakland through which he passed.

Mr. President, I have but a word further to say to the Society, and, sir, I feel that it may be the last that I shall ever address to the pioneers of old Oakland—old associates in days gone by.

It is known to many, now here, that for about seven years I was in Utah among the Mormons in the employment of the government. I not only felt anxious to do my duty to the government, but I felt anxious—being the only representative of the government that was, or ever had been from Michigan—that the pride of the State and especially of Oakland should not suffer any subsidence from the conduct of her representative. I met without fear and trembling all the hardships incident to my position. When I was ordered out of the territory by that impudent scoundrel who claims to be God's vicegerent and as such to own all Utah—when the ladies of the Danite Band had orders for my destruction, and the general government, paralyzed, so demented as to yield to the fanaticism and malignity of the Mormons, and to remove the governor and to suffer my judicial assistants to depart, I stood alone, and as far as I could, I upheld the government. Wherever I went, through the valleys and over the mountain tops, I clasped to my heart the staff and unfurled the flag of freedom, and held in utter contempt and scorn Brigham Young, the chief cause of all the troubles, all the dishonor which the nation endures from that disgusting and murderous people. I have devoted some time to the consideration of the evils which the nation endures from its great leniency to that people. Since my return, at the request of old friends, I gave a short sketch of the advent of the Mormons into the valleys of Utah. A paper containing the address as delivered to the pioneer society in Detroit, is now presented to this society for preservation.

Mr. President, I know that many may think that this paper is not germane to the objects of this society, but the day may come when a wider view will arise of the hardships and dangers which attend pioneers than you have hitherto taken. Mr. President, we are all pioneers, and when my actions as a pioneer, in whatever capacity and wherever I have been, shall be scrutinized, may God shield me from the charge of being a coward. Comrades, we are fast passing from these fair fields and scenes made clear by early associations. On many occasions I have been your delegate, your representative, and I should feel that I had but illy repaid you for the trust, the confidence so often reposed in me, if the circulation of your heart's blood had ever been chilled by fear that I was a coward. God bless and protect you all.

## JONATHAN HUBBARD AND FAMILY.

### PAPER BY DIODATE HUBBARD.

**Read before the Oakland County Pioneer Society in February, 1874.**

My father, Jonathan Hubbard, and my mother, Sarah Hubbard, were both born and were married in Old Haddam, Connecticut. They moved from there to Harpersfield, N. Y., which was at that time a small and new place. Father kept a store and a tavern at Harpersfield, and was doing a successful business, when he entered into partnership with a man who soon proved to be a villain. A large drove of horses was bought, principally with father's means, and the partner took them to Boston to dispose of them, and father never heard from him again. This caused father's failure, and, I think, was about the year 1790. While my parents lived at Harpersfield, four children were born to them, three older than myself, two brothers and a sister. The brother next older than myself died when about six months old.

We moved from Harpersfield to Durham, Schoharie county, but father not prospering here still moved farther west, stopping at Cayuga Lake, Kidder's Ferry, and from there on to Buffalo. From Buffalo we went to Walnut Creek, Cataraugus county, Pennsylvania, and from there to Cuyahoga, the present site of the city of Cleveland, which at that time was different from the surrounding forest only in its being occupied by three or four log and pole houses. At this place every member of the family was taken sick with fever and ague, and there were none able to assist another even to giving them a drink of water.

From Cleveland we moved to the mouth of Grand river, and lived in an old log storehouse upon the site now occupied by Fruitport and Spring Lake. There were plenty of cat-fish and muskrats, and occasionally the dogs would run a deer into the lake and we would catch it. From this place we moved to where Painesville now stands, where there were then two or three log houses. Father made a trip from there to Detroit with some butter, cheese, tobacco, and whisky, which he traded for wool. While there he bought the fruit in orchards and made cider, and also fished at the head of Grosse Isle, and when he returned home he brought a load consisting of apples, cider, wool, and fish.

We moved from Painesville to Detroit in the spring of 1810; working along the shore in a small sail boat we arrived at Detroit, which at that time was only a small collection of houses on a low, wet, muddy place about eighty rods back from the river, and where, after my father's death, my mother was offered by old Dr. Brown three acres of land at one hundred dollars per acre. The Russell House now occupies a portion of this land. In 1811 my father settled upon a farm on Grosse Point, Detroit river, and died there in March, 1812, leaving mother with eight children, a brother and sister older than myself.

In June, 1812, the war between Great Britain and the United States broke out, and my brother Edward volunteered and joined a cavalry company commanded by Captain Smith, and was taken prisoner at the time of the surrender of General Hull, but soon after made his escape with his horse and succeeded in returning home, and joining with several others they started down Detroit river in an open boat, and, passing the shores and islands of Detroit river, covered with thousands of Indians, they worked their way with poles and oars to Cleveland, there joining an organization known as Colonel Ball's squad, attached to General Harrison's army, engaging in the battle at Moravian Town, on the Thames. My brother's term of enlistment having now expired, he was discharged soon after being transferred to Sackett's Harbor, and started for home, but we have never heard anything of him since.

In the fall, about the time of General Hull's surrender, my mother sent myself and a younger brother down the river in a boat, with a load of pumpkins, to Detroit. We sold the pumpkins to Henry J. Hunt. It was dark before we got started for home, and, while pushing our boat along the shore with a pole, we ran into the grass and rushes at the mouth of Conner's creek, and lost our way. After working almost all night, we finally at early morning landed at our home. Upon entering the house, we found no one there, and an examination showed us that most of the things had been taken away. There was a straw bed-tick lying on the floor, and being so completely tired out, we both lay down upon it and slept.

We found mother and brothers and sisters had been frightened away from home by a band of Indians, who had carried off clothing, bedding and provisions, leaving but very little in the house. The family had taken shelter at Michael Rivard's a neighbor and Frenchman. We held a council and concluded that as we had corn and potatoes growing on the farm, we would return home and gather the crops. About three weeks after, the same band of Indians landed their boats in front of our house and came rushing up the banks. Mother and my eldest sister took the children and fled, carrying the youngest ones in their arms. I remained. It seems to me now as though I could see my mother, with her cap flying back from her head, with the youngest child in her arms, followed by my brother and sisters, fleeing from those merciless savages, leaving our home and its contents to the ravages of those heartless wretches.

The Indians came up to the house and jamming open the doors, crowded in, the chief flourising a war club over my head. I stood my ground, and as I could speak French and Indian I told them them that I was a French boy and claimed the things in the house. The Indians were friendly with the French, and on this account left the few things we still had in the house, but while some of them were in the house others had gone to the barn and taken away two horses, one of them a splendid Chickesaw which my brother had in the army when he was taken prisoner, and escaped and came home upon, and the other a beautiful Philadelphia horse which my father gave me just before he died. I laid claim to my horse, but a big Indian picked me up and threw me against the side of the house, and they then commenced packing the remaining household goods on the horses. The two horses were worth $300. When I saw the Indians loading up the things that I thought I had saved, upon our own horses, I gave way to my feelings for the first time and cried.

The Indians finally left, taking all, and I followed them about a mile, in hopes of getting some one to help me recover the horses and goods. The Indians went up the lake four or five miles and stopped at a place called Milk River Point. During the night a Frenchman came and told us that the Indians had whisky and were getting drunk, and had concluded that we were Yankees and that they had determined to return and butcher the whole of us, and the best thing we could do was to get away as soon as we could. At that time the Indians swore death to all Shemokoman, or big knife, as they called the Americans still. I thought if I could get the assistance of three or four men as resolute as I was, that we could go and retake our property, but I could not get the men, and in the night we gathered what few things were left together and my mother with eight children got into a boat and we made our way to Detroit, which we reached just at daylight, and crowded into a house which was already full to overflowing, and we had but very little besides the clothes we wore. It immediately became a question how we were to live; there were eight or ten families already in the house in about the same condition as ourselves, and there was a very poor chance to beg.

By this time nearly all the families of Americans in the surrounding country were driven into the village by the Indians, and the only way for the British, who held the place, to do, was to issue rations or send us to Ohio. They promised to issue "short rations" of meat and bread, or Indian rations, consisting of bull beef, or horse flesh, and lime bread, and situated as we were, we were glad to get that. My mother had some flax which she spun into thread and I peddled it.

There were many thousands of Indians collected at this point from all over the Lake country, and they began to leave the place to again scatter over the country for plunder, and by their leaving we were able to get into a log house containing only five families, and strove hard to get along the best way we could, and getting a small amount for the crops on the farm we got along more comfortably. The Indians were now making a business of capturing persons and bringing them to Detroit and getting a ransom for them, in some cases as high as $100 or $200. My mother used all means she could get in redeeming these poor unfortunates, and four or five were thus liberated by her at a cost of $100 each. After the retaking of Detroit by the United States forces we got along very well, and I joined the army to serve out as a substitute the unexpired term of a drafted man from Ohio. I served three months.

On the 19th of December, 1818, I married Polly Freeman, and we kept a tavern on the main street of Detroit, which is now Jefferson avenue. On October 12, 1819, our first child, a daughter, was born, and we named her Sarah.

## HISTORY OF AMASA BAGLEY.

### PAPER BY MRS. NANCY G. DAVIS.

**Read before the Oakland County Pioneer Society in 1880.**

Being the only remaining member of the family of Amasa Bagley, better known as Judge Bagley, who was one of the earliest pioneers of Oakland county, I have often felt inclined to relate what I remember of pioneer life. My father came to the territory of Michigan in the winter of 1817-18. He started from his home in Massachusetts, upon runners with wheels and running gear lashed on the sleigh, with box and seat, so if the snow left him he could still proceed upon his journey. He came all the way with that rig, changing to wheels as occasion required, arriving at Detroit at a time when there were but eleven frame houses in that city. In the following summer, 1818, he went out on the River Rouge and bought some land near where Mr. Buckland then lived (referred to by Mr. P. Dean Warner in his address before the Pioneer Society), and succeeded in putting in some crops. Not satisfied with his present location he, with eleven others, formed an exploring company, starting northward and slept the first night under a tree, where our present city of Pontiac now stands. Being favorably impressed with the land in this county he abandoned his farm on the River Rouge, and in company with William Morris, bought a farm at Bloomfield Center under the two dollar act, where he resided for ten years.

In the summer of 1819 father wished mother to join him at the west. She was then living near Boston, Mass. At that time there was no other mode of traveling than by private conveyance. She accordingly hired a man to bring her and her five little girls through to Black Rock, where the boats left, instead of Buffalo. The man was to bring 1,000 pounds for $200; accordingly we were all weighed up and brought by the pound, and what we lacked in weight was made up in household goods. Arriving at Black Rock my mother was much perplexed at not meeting father as he had arranged to do, but never daunted, she hired the man, Mr. George, who had brought us through, to remain at Black Rock until the return trip of the boat, so if she did not find her husband she should have some way to return to her old home. Arriving in Detroit she was met by her husband, who had been sick some time and was just able to get down to the boat. We came on the old "Walk-in-the-water," (Indian name) the first steamboat on Lake Erie, and on its third trip. When my father first moved out on his farm in Bloomfield Center, he had to take his pork from the barrels and put it in bags and bring it in that way, but when the family came, there was a wagon road cut through and we were two days going from Detroit to Bloomfield Center, a distance of about 18 miles.

I would like here to pay a tribute to the ladies of pioneer life. Though my mother had been brought up in a home of refinement and plenty, she never hesitated to leave the east and her friends, who much opposed her going, and follow her husband to the west. I never heard her complain or say she expected to see her daughters brought up under such disadvantages, but bore everything with perfect heroism. I have often heard father speak of telling her that she would have to drink tea without sugar, and she being quite sure she should not. While in Detroit mother gave one of the girls a dollar and told her to get some sugar. The three pounds of brown sugar this bought was all put into the sugar bowl and that was the only sugar used in our tea in our family for years. My father was poor at that time and could not afford such expensive luxuries. We came to Bloomfield Center before a saw-mill was completed and were obliged to take the door off its wooden hinges to use as a table, but in a few days father obtained some boards and made a table, from which the dignitaries of Wayne and Oakland counties have eaten many substantial meals. The crops father had put in on his little place near the River Rouge, added much to the comfort of the family, for the first year, as everything of the kind was very expensive, and the crops were brought through in the winter with very little trouble. By spring the "Mack saw-mill" was completed, and in the fall the first grist mill was built and ready to run by the time the grain was ready to grind, and all the early settlers from fifteen to twenty-five miles around brought their grain to this mill. My father was appointed associate judge of this county in 1820, and continued to serve until Michigan became a state. I here present to the pioneer society of Oakland county one of the oldest documents of the county—the appointment of my father as judge by Lewis Cass.

LEWIS CASS,

GOVERNOR IN AND OVER THE TERRITORY OF MICHIGAN.

*To all to whom these presents may come, greeting:*

KNOW YE, That reposing special trust and confidence in the integrity and ability of *Amasa Bagley, Esquire*, I have appointed him *an Associate Justice of the County Court in and for the County of Oakland*, AND DO HEREBY AUTHORIZE and empower him to execute and fulfill the duties of that office according to law: To have and to hold the said Office, with all the rights, privileges and emoluments thereunto belonging, during the pleasure of the Governor of the said territory for the time being.

IN TESTIMONY WHEREOF, I have caused these letters to be made Patent, and the great Seal of the said Territory to be hereunto affixed.

[Seal.] GIVEN under my hand at Detroit, this twenty-eighth day of March, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and twenty, and of the Independence of the United States of America the forty-fourth.

BY THE GOVERNOR, LEW. CASS.
*Secretary of Michigan Territory.*

At the same time William Morris, father of Orvil C. Morris, Zeolide B. North and Sylvia C. Flower, was appointed high Sheriff; he was associated with my father and married my eldest sister in the winter of 1820, if not the first, nearly the first wedding in this county. Mr. Morris established a tannery in the spring of 1822, at the foot of the long hill, at Bloomfield Center, and George Morris, still living at Bennington Station, had charge of it. William Morris also started a small store and shoe shop on the hill farm, as early as 1825. In 1823 my father moved down to the Center on the farm known as the "Hagerman farm," and there he kept what will be remembered by the oldest settlers as the log house tavern.

Up to this date I have written from what father and mother have told me, but from this time on I will write from my own recollection.

The 4th of July, 1825, was celebrated in Pontiac by a menagerie. The two corners of the tent were at the back part of the old yellow tavern that stood where Mrs. Boyd's millinery store now stands. I well remember the lion, leopard, and many other animals, especially the monkeys, and in order that I might obtain a better sight of their pranks, father elevated me upon his shoulder. The 4th of July, 1826, was celebrated at our house in Bloomfield

Center. A green bower was built to dine under, and we had a dance at the house in the evening. I well remember of hearing of the death of John Adams and Thomas Jefferson two weeks after, and hearing father say they died about the time that we had dinner under the bower, and it made a lasting impression upon my mind.

I remember the first murder in this county, that of Mrs. Utter and her daughter, by Emir Fish. It was brought fresh to my mind by Mr. P. D. Warner's letter. The night of the murder, while Fish was still at large, my father was keeping watch over us little ones, (mother having gone to lay out the unfortunate ladies) he heard footsteps approaching the house, and called out, "Who is there?" There was no answer to his inquiry, and father again repeated his demand, saying that if not answered he should fire, when Mr. Warner answered, and then such a joyous hand-shaking. My father and Mr. Warner each felt that they had escaped a great danger—one of killing, the other of being killed. At that time there was not enough cambric in Pontiac to make two shrouds, and they had to be pieced down with cotton cloth.

In 1882 a Mr. Germane opened the first store in Pontiac, and Mr. Levi Cook, uncle of Judge Taft, established the second store, and the third was opened by Oliver Newberry, who was succeeded by Elisha Beach, in a building built in an early day, on the corner of Pike and Saginaw streets, known at the present day as the Dawson block, which was burned about four years ago. Mr. Beach continued in the business there for many years.

For a long time after we removed to Bloomfield Center, thousand of Indians used to pass our house in a week, going to and from Detroit for their bounty from the Britons. When I was about six years old I remember one Indian coming into our house and demanding whisky of my father, and being refused, drew a knife; in an instant the Indian was upon the floor, his knife across the room, and father's foot upon his chest. He seemed as much pleased as possible, and told father he was "nisli-ie-shing," that is "brave white man," and this act established my father's reputation for bravery among the Indians, and he was never afterwards molested. A few years later, one Sabbath day, there were perhaps 150 Indians in front of our house, and the room was full of them, when one Indian stepped up to mother and demanded whisky. She refused him; but he, seeing the whisky on the shelf, for this was before the temperance times, attempted to take it, when my mother, with her usual decision, gave him a push and told him it was "che-mo-ke-man," that was "whiteman" or "husband." All the Indians applauded her for her bravery, and shamed him because a "white squaw" had struck him. He went off as ashamed as if he had been whipped. We were taught never to be afraid of the Indians, and so were never molested, although I presume we have seen 300 in a day, while going to and from school. One chief took a great fancy to the writer and wished her to be his young chief squaw, and was much disappointed that it was not agreeable to both parties.

Among my early recollections was a great excitement over a man that was found dead very near our house—a Mr. Warner Lee, brother to William and Horatio Lee, of Farmington, a very respectable man, supposed to have died in a fit. I am sure it was the first case of its kind in this county. I know our house was thronged all day.

The oldest house that I now recollect is the one where Alfred Judson now resides. It was built by David Stanard, and successively occupied by him, Judge LeRoy and G. O. Whittemore. The house where Adam Shaft now lives was owned by D. C. Buckland's father. The house now occupied by Edward Peck was built at an early day by R. T. Merrill, brother-in-law to S. T. Murray. It was the house in which the first paper in the county was printed, called the Oakland Chronicle, in 1831, and where the writer resided in 1832, afterwards the residence of William Draper, father of Charles Draper. I looked after an old land-mark the other day, the house of Rev. Isaac Ruggles, but it was destroyed, and here I would like to pay tribute to Mr. Ruggles and Elder Comstock, father of E. B. Comstock. They were our first resident missionaries. I know Mr. Ruggles came here as early as 1825. They worked hard with very small pay, going from place to place, looking up the lost sheep, forming churches, and keeping alive the love of Christ in many hearts. I remember Mr. Ruggles baptized me when I was nine years old. His house was the only place where the young people could receive any advantages above a log school-house training, as Mrs. Charles Draper, Mrs. Willard McConnell, myself and many others can testify. I always think of these gentlemen of the Methodist itinerancy with the greatest respect and veneration. The first church building in Pontiac was the Congregational church, built by a company of twenty persons giving $100 each. I remember many of the names of the contributors, but not all. They were Judge Daniel LeRoy, Dr. William Thompson, Judge Amasa Bagley, Solomon Close, Schuyler Hodges, Governor O. D. Richardson, G. O. Whittemore, J. J. Garland, David Paddock, Stephen Reeves, Frank Darrow, Horatio N. Howard, Amasa Andrews and A. M. Hastings. There were not more than three church members among the number, but many of them became members thereafter. The church was built as an honor to the locality, and a speculation, they intending to rent the pews so as to give an ample return for the money expended. About the time the church was completed twenty ladies contributed $5.00 each for the purpose of buying a bell. They bought the present Congregational church bell from the First Presbyterian church of Detroit, and it was the first bell that was ever rung in a Protestant church in Michigan. Among the earliest Christian workers was a Mr. Birge, who was an earnest and zealous advocate of the cause of Christ. His good works followed him, and he was always remembered with the kindest approval. The first public building in Pontiac was the old yellow jail and court-house, both built in one, where justice was dispensed, religious services held, and Emri Fish, the first and only criminal for many years, was confined. The first building for educational purposes was the academy, now the Catholic church of Pontiac. The first military company was called the Rifle company, commanded by Captain Edwards, a relative of Mrs. Schuyler Hodges. Their uniform was a blue blouse, belted down, trimmed with red fringe, the pants of the same material, trimmed up the sides and around the bottom with red fringe. I think their caps were made of black bear skin.

I well remember my father's telling an anecdote related to him by Mr. Buckland when father was on the River Rouge. It seems Mr. Buckland was in the war of 1812, and just previous to a battle near the river Raisin he took his pocketbook, containing about $1,500, and hid the same in a hollow stump. Pending the engagement that followed, Mr. Buckland was taken prisoner and conveyed to Detroit with other prisoners. After much pleading and entreaty he persuaded his keeper to let him out one night by promising strictly to be back to the prison by light the next morning, when he started on a run some fourteen miles, to find the hollow stump and his treasure. He came in sight of the location and found the Indians encamping there, and the stump on fire, but managed to get to the stump, and much to his delight secured the pocket-book before it was seriously damaged, and ran back to Detroit, appearing at the prison quarters just as day was dawning. My father remained in Bloomfield Center ten years, then bought and moved upon the "Mud Lake farm," and the succeeding year moved into the "yellow tavern," on the corner of Saginaw and Lawrence streets. It was while living here that the circumstance which Charles Sumner spoke of in a lecture about eleven years ago, occurred. "That our city had been honored by a visit from one of the world's noblest writers and statesmen, 'De Tocqueville.'" His visit to our house is very fresh in my mind. He came during a severe storm, remaining several days. There was a great mystery surrounding him and his servant, (the most important of the two in appearance). They took their meals alone and claimed a good share of my father's attention, seeking from him information of the then new territory of Michigan. Mr. Sumner said "De Tocqueville" spoke to him of his sojourn in a public house in the wilds of the west, referring to his visit to our house. Many other recollections of pioneer life crowd themselves upon my memory, but I will weary you no more at present, and simply subscribe myself, Truly yours,

NANCY G. DAVIS.

## LETTER FROM MRS. M. A. HODGES.

PONTIAC, *February 23, 1874.*

My friends, I am made most happy to meet so many of the old pioneers of Oakland county, a county that once embraced a much larger territory than now, and contained many, very many, less inhabitants. I came here in March, 1819, at which time there was but one house in Pontiac, a little log house which was built by the Pontiac company; it afforded shelter for three families, and also made room for our family, which numbered about fourteen, men, women, and children, eight being children, myself being one of the number, then being eleven years old. My father, Oliver Williams, left Detroit March the 13th with his family, and arrived here the 14th at two o'clock, and took dinner at this house by invitation of the occupants, Major Todd, Edgar Lester, and the late Orrison Allen, and that evening we arrived at Silver Lake, where my father settled and lived the remainder of his days, and where I lived until January 28, 1828, when I married Schuyler Hodges, the then sheriff of the county, and settled in Pontiac, where I have since resided. I hope my friends will bear with me in expressing my preference for Oakland county; it is endeared to me by the holiest ties and associations. I feel identified with its past history, and more especially Pontiac, which I have seen grow from its one little log house, to its present incorporated city. Yes! I have seen it in its infancy, youth, and maturity. My experiences have been many and varied, and at some future meeting I shall be most happy to give you some reminiscences that may entertain or amuse you. Of our large family many are living, but none are here. I alone represent the Williams family and my own, therefore I beg to be excused from saying more. "I feel like one that treads alone some banquet hall deserted," but my heart and best wishes will ever remain with Oakand county, where I have lived almost sixty years.

M. A. HODGES.

## MEMORIAL REPORT.

### BY ELIAS S. WOODMAN.

February 5th, 1879.

Phillip Shaw was born March 9, A. D. 1781, in Dighton, Mass. Had three brothers and one sister, all of whom are dead, and lived to be over 80 years of age each. His father died when Phillip was nine weeks old. His mother remarried and moved to Bristol, Ontario county, New York, when the subject of this sketch was in the eighteenth year of his age. Her son was "bound out" to a Dighton farmer by the name of Phillips, who at the same time moved to Bristol, N. Y. Phillip served his master faithfully until he was twenty-one years of age, when he began life for himself at the foot of the ladder, without a finger's lift from "Hercules." Taking the French motto, "Help yourself and Heaven will help you," he braved the storms of toil until he stood before the world in the beauty and majesty of manhood. In the 27th year of his age he married Chloe Foster, who bore him eleven children, only three of whom are living. In 1830, being possessed of about $800, obtained by industry and economy, he came to Michigan and located 160 acres of land on section 21, township of Novi and county of Oakland, and returned to western New York. In September of the same year with his wife and seven children he removed to Michigan and located on his land in Novi. He came from Buffalo to Detroit on the steamer "Superior," and from Detroit to Novi with an ox team by way of Dearborn, Swartzburg, Plymouth, and Northville, taking three days to make the journey of 25 miles. At this time Novi was part of East Farmington, the first township meeting being held in 1831. When Mr. Shaw got his family on his land and his rude log house erected he had but a few dollars in money left, but with the help of his boys, all brought up to industry and economy, he soon succeeded in converting the wilderness into productive fields, producing bountiful crops. In December, 1831, his wife died, and he never remarried. About 25 years ago, having acquired a competency by industry and strict attention to business as a farmer, he sold the farm upon which he first located to his son Riley, now one of the ablest and best farmers in the township. During the remaining years of this venerable man's pilgrimage on earth he made his home with his children. Up to the day of his decease he retained in a remarkable degree his mental and physical faculties, walking about at his leisure.

He left five grandchildren and three great grandchildren. He never was sued or sued a man in his life. The same can be said of his children and his grandchildren—a man of strict integrity, and whose "word was as good as his bond." He cast his first vote for Thomas Jefferson and has voted the democratic ticket at every presidential election since that time up to 1872, being a democrat of the Jefferson-Jackson school, and a firm believer in the universal salvation of mankind. He served three months in the war of 1812, for which he received a land warrant for 160 acres. Being a farmer in the strictest sense of the word, he took a deep interest in all that pertains to the interests and welfare of agriculture. He gave special attention to the breeding and care of stock, of which he was a good judge.

This venerable man departed this life on the fourth day of October, A. D. 1876, in the 96th year of his age,

> "Like one who wraps the drapery of his couch around him,
> And lies down to pleasant dreams."

# SAGINAW COUNTY.

## PIONEER LIFE IN THE SAGINAW VALLEY.

### BY W. R. MC CORMICK, OF BAY CITY.

**Read February 5, 1880.**

The early settlers of Saginaw, in 1834, as near as I can recollect, were as follows: The Messrs. G. D. and E. S. Williams, agents of the American Fur Company, Alpheus F. Williams, Thomas Simpson "alias" Lixaboga, Judge Davenport, Abram Butts, and two or three other families whose names I have forgotten. Albert Miller, now Judge Miller, of Bay City, and the late Judge Jewett lived two miles above, at Green Point. Judge Davenport had just removed from Grand Blanc, and had come down the Flint river with his family, in canoes, as there were no roads from Flint to Saginaw at that time. Judge Davenport commenced keeping tavern (the first one in Saginaw) in an old block house, on what is now the northeast corner of Court and Hamilton streets; it was a long building, built of logs, for the benefit of the soldiers in 1823, while they were building the fort. The entire attic was the sleeping apartment with a row of beds on each side, having a passageway through the entire length of the center, wide enough for persons to pass through until they got to the beds they were to occupy, and if there were any lady guests, they had to go to bed first. Opposite Judge Davenport's hotel was the old stockade fort, which comprised the ground on which the "Taylor house," now stands and part of the block east of it. At that time it was quite an elevation, but has since been graded down for the purpose of building those beautiful blocks that now cover the spot. This was all that comprised the beautiful city of Saginaw at that time.

The ground where the city of East Saginaw now stands was then in a state of maturity, as it had been hundreds of years before. The Indians called it Me-te-Guab-o-Kee, meaning "the land to get hickory for bows and arrows." At this time Bay City consisted of but one house. In 1835 a few more settlers came to Saginaw, among them James Fraser, Wm. Mosely, and some others. James Fraser went back to Detroit to purchase some cattle for his farm on the Tittabawassee, which he had commenced, and while driving in on foot between Flint and Saginaw, his cattle got wild and would not keep the trail. He chased them until he got tired, when he took off his coat, and after carrying it a while, and getting near the trail once more, as he supposed, he hung it in a tree in order to head off some cattle. In doing so he lost the location where he left his coat, and he could never find it. Mr. Fraser used to say in after years, when he was worth nearly a million, that "this was the greatest loss he ever had in his life, as his pocket contained $500. All the money he had in the world was in that coat pocket." There was a great hunting for that coat but it was never found. Undoubtedly the wolves pulled it down and destroyed it. Here let me give some little reminiscences of early days in Saginaw, now Saginaw City. The old settlers used to get up several dances during the winter to while away the long months. When it was all arranged, then Mrs. G. D. Williams, Mrs. Judge Davenport, Mrs. James Fraser, or Mrs. Judge Jewett was appraised that on such an evening they would trip the light fantastic toe at her house. Then a boy or man was dispatched through the woods on an Indian pony some thirty miles to the residence of James W. Cronk to notify him that his services were required at the residence of Judge Jewett, Judge Williams, or Judge Davenport, as the case might be, at such a time. Not but what there were other persons nearer by who could be got to play, but the old citizens of Saginaw were too aristocratic to have any one to play for them except it was their old friend and pioneer, James W. Cronk. When the time came you would see "Uncle Jimmy" (as we used to call him) put in an appearance with a fiddle-box under his arm and his rifle over his shoulder. These were the only parties he would condescend to play for, but when his old friends sent for him he was always on hand and no one contributed so much to the enjoyment of the evening as he.

James W. Cronk afterwards volunteered in the Mexican war and received a captain's commission. He died some time after, together with his son, Norton, of yellow fever, at Vera Cruz, Mexico, deeply regretted by all the early pioneers, for none knew him or loved him better than they. He was a man of more than ordinary ability, and one of the most genial of companions, as well as a great favorite among the early pioneers. Peace to his ashes.

And now let me tell the reader about some of those parties who composed them; and also some incidents which had something to do with them. The American Fur Company had a small sloop called the "Savage," which brought in goods to trade with the Indians, and other articles for the few settlers, and to carry out the furs. There was an old lawyer by the name of Major M———, who had been appointed custom house officer, and who lived in one of the old block houses inside the fort; I lived with him at the time and went to school, and did chores night and morning for my board. This little sloop of twenty-eight tons burthen would leave Detroit and touch at several points up the St. Clair river, where she would load in such goods as they wanted, among the rest some demijohns of very fine whisky, brandy, rum, gin, etc.

When she arrived at the Saginaw, the old major would go aboard of this mighty craft with all the pomposity imaginable. When he would be going down into the little cabin, he would say in an authoritative way: "Nothing must be touched until I examine the cargo." When the captain would give him a glass of brandy, he would return on deck and tell the owners "it was all right; no smuggled goods aboard." One night the old Major said to me, "I don't want you to go to bed very early to-night. Something will be left for me at the back door, and when you hear a knock, you and Amanda—the hired girl—go and get it and carry it up stairs." Sure enough, about eleven o'clock we heard a knock at the back door, and on going there found three sailors with three or four demijohns of different kinds of liquors. So it was every time that little vessel arrived. The old Major got the same consignment until the close of navigation. I recollect counting, in the winter, twenty-one demijohns in the old major's garret.

One would naturally ask what became of so much "good things?" I say good things, for it was the very finest quality of liquors. Well, I will tell you. Winter had come, and Saginaw had become isolated from the rest of the world, except by an Indian trail through the woods.

It was then that the inhabitants sought some recreation to while away the long winter months. A party would be given, perhaps at the residence of Judge Williams, Judge Davenport, James Fraser, Judge Jewett, or some of the other old settlers, and it was at some of these aristocratic parties that James W. Cronk was always the invited guest.

About four o'clock in the afternoon a sleigh would drive up to the back door of the old block house of Major M—, in the fort; the man knocked, I went to the door, when he said, "I want a demijohn of whisky, one of rum, one of gin, for the party at Judge Williams' to-night." I told him I had no authority—he must see the Major. "That is all right," says he; "the Major furnishes all the liquor for the parties, and what is left is always brought back in the morning." So I went over to the tavern and saw the Major, and he said, "Yes; only tell them to bring back what is left in the morning." The next week there would be another party, perhaps at James Fraser's, when that sleigh would come around again for its supply, the same as before.

They all knew how the Major got his liquor, and as they were all one family it was no more than right that it should be equally distributed to be enjoyed. So you can account for the number of empty demijohns in the Major's garret.

Such enjoyment at parties I have never seen since; whether it was owing to the kindly feelings that existed among those few families, isolated from the world, or the good effects of that good old liquor of the Major's, or everything combined, I am unable to tell. I am inclined to think it was owing to the kindly feelings that existed among those "early pioneers," and will continue to exist as long as memory lasts.

Blackbirds were so plenty at an early day in the Saginaw valley, the farmers had to build scaffolds in their cornfields where the children would have to sit and halloo at the birds to keep them from destroying the crops. The writer hereof, when a boy, has sat many a day on a scaffold driving off the birds. They would come in flocks of thousands. The Messrs. Williams had a small field of oats behind the American fur company's store. They had cradled it and were preparing to get it in to keep the blackbirds from taking it off when Mr. Williams' brother, B. O. Williams, now of Owosso, Mr. Abbott of Detroit, and some other persons came to make them a visit, so the oats were forgotten, while the blackbirds came heavily reinforced that day to finish the oats. As they came by the store door some of the party proposed to see how many they could kill with one shot. Mr. Ephriam S. Williams had a fine, large single-barreled duck gun which he loaded with mustard seed shot and commenced firing from the store door as the other parties drove them from the oats. Mr. E. S. Williams fired ten shots and his brother, B. O. Williams, one shot, making eleven shots in all. After each shot the boys and all hands would pick up the dead and wounded and put them in a pile at the store. They gathered as the result of eleven shots, 545 birds, and for days after, in the road and at the edge of the river, there were hundreds that had crawled to the river for drink and died there. You may think this a good many birds, nevertheless it is strictly true.

About the year 1835 or 1836, and soon after the Saginaw county fair became organized, the board of supervisors passed a law giving a bounty of two cents per head for blackbirds. We had to present the heads to any justice of the peace, whose duty it was to destroy them and give you a certificate so that you could go and get a county order. County orders were worth in those days about fifty cents on the dollar, and that in store pay. Well, there was one old justice who lived in one of the old block houses inside the fort, and the boys used to take their heads to him. He was in the habit of throwing the heads into his back yard, after counting them, for the hogs to eat, instead of destroying them according to law. After the boys would get their certificate, they would ask the old justice if he would not go down to old Captain Malden's and take a smile. This he was never known to refuse, when one of the boys who had kept out of sight, would slip into the old justice's back yard, pick up the heads and put them into a bag, and by the time the old justice got back again they would have the heads at his door to get another certificate from him. The boys exonerated themselves by saying, as county orders were worth only fifty cents on the dollar, they had to sell them twice in order to get what the law contemplated they should have. The consequence was that this old justice got all the business in blackbird heads. I have not said that the writer was one of those boys, but at any rate he was death on the blackbirds.

## MEMORIAL REPORT.

### BY WILLIAM A. CLARK.

Read February 6, 1878.

The undersigned respectfully reports that it is his sad duty, as the member of your memorial committee residing in Saginaw county, to place on record the death, since the last annual meeting of the Society, of one of the noble pioneer women of the west, Mrs. A. M. Richman, one of the best known and most highly esteemed of all the pioneer ladies of Saginaw. She died at her home in Saginaw city on the 16th day of March, 1877, aged seventy years and upwards. She moved to Saginaw with her husband, the late Charles L. Richman, in the year 1836, and her history is the history of Saginaw. She endured and beheld the sufferings and privations of its early settlement, and was witness to its subsequent wonderful growth and prosperity. No woman was ever more beloved for mental and moral excellence than was the deceased by all who knew her. For

> "None knew her but to love her,
> None named her but to praise."

If "good words" would of themselves build a monument to her memory no sculptured or marble monument was ever half so costly or half so beautiful. Among the many things she witnessed that now seem hardly credible was the building of the Webster House at Saginaw City, for many years the only hotel worthy that name in the valley, with pine lumber shipped from Detroit, and she lived to see hundreds of millions of feet of such lumber thereafter made at Saginaw and sent to all parts of the world.

She was born in Canandaigua, New York, and her brother was that eminent lawyer, the late Mark H. Sibley, who was the contemporary and peer of Dudley Marvin, John C. Spencer, Francis Granger, and other legal luminaries, some of whom acquired a national reputation. Mrs. Richman would have proved herself the equal of her talented brother had she enjoyed like opportunity to make manifest her mental ability. I can best illustrate the character of this remarkable woman, and also what Saginaw was when she came here, by an extract from her diary, dated April 24, 1870, to wit:

**Mrs. Richman was a daughter of Mr. James Sibley, one of the earliest settlers of Ontario county, New York. She was born in the beautiful city of Canandaigua, New York, January 9, 1807.**

In search of facts for an obituary notice of the deceased, Mr. George F. Lewis found for us in the files of the Saginawian a leaf from the note book of Mrs. Richman, which was written by herself and read by Mr. Lewis, at meeting of the Saginaw Valley Pioneer Society, in this city, in the summer of 1874. It will be interesting in this connection and very appropriate:

* * * * * * * * April 24, 1870.

BURNED—The building formerly owned by the late James Fraser, known as the old block house. An ordinary, casual notice of not much note, but to some of us old residents the memories of that old block house and surroundings are pleasant as the echo of music in our youth; for we are now old, our hair is whitened by the frosts of many winters, but more with the sorrows that have fallen upon us when our hopes were the brightest, our love the strongest. In the summer of 1836 a party of gentlemen on board the old steamer, Governor Marcy, made the first trip ever made by any steamboat upon these waters to old Fort Saginaw, the present site of Saginaw City, where years before Dr. Little, of Avon, New York, with others made large purchases, with a far-seeing eye to the future of this valley, which was felt by them to be only a question of time. Among the passengers on that steamer were Norman Little and Charles L. Richman, who were prospecting, with a view of permanent settlement. They found a few white settlers here, who gladly gave them "the right hand of fellowship." Among them were G. D. and E. S. Williams, with their families, Mr. Jewett and family, Judge Davenport, James Fraser, Mr. Busby, Butts, Bullock and Barber, Tibbetts, McCardell, Spare, Gotse, Mosely, Malden, Hayden, Stevenson, Hill, Simpson, besides a few others who passed from memory. Under the firm name of Charles L. Richman & Co., a mercantile business was established; made large contracts for building, then returned for their families. We took a last lingering look at our dear old home in Canandaigua aptly called "Sleeping Beauty," bade adieu to the friends of childhood, youth and young married life; gave up the blessings of our well beloved church privileges of an advanced society; embarked at Buffalo on the steamer Governor Marcy, for Saginaw, leaving, as we then thought, all that is desirable in life, save the novelty (Robinson Crusoe like) of making a new home in the wilderness. Among the emigrants were T. L. Howe, of Genesee, New York, with a large hardware stock, with Cynthia the "long," B. Hammet, W. L. P. Little, L. M. Callum, with many others, as the steamer was heavily laden with human freight. We had a pleasure trip to Detroit, then a small village, but met with rough weather in Saginaw bay, and were obliged to put back to St. Clair three days. We improved and enjoyed it in rambling about the beautiful region, visiting Fort Gratiot and so on. When effort was again made to reach the tempestuous bay, we succeeded, and arrived at old Fort Saginaw and the "embryo city" on Saturday morning, October 1, 1836, in a drizzling rain, amid the cheers of the assembled multitude and the waving of a tablecloth, which to us, who came up on the last day on an allowance of pork and hardtack, was at least suggestive. We were very kindly and hospitably received and entertained by Mr. and Mrs. H. L. Miller, who had been here a short time; came down the Flint river in a canoe. Things in general seemed the newest of the new, and the prospect was dreary in the extreme, but then we reflected on poor "Robinson" and took heart and went into the store to write back my "first impressions," and met my old friend Peyton R. Morgan, of Avon. He thought I had better wait till the "sun shone" before writing, but I didn't. They preserve that letter home as a gem of the west. The question now arose, where were we all to find shelter? Very fortunately, yea a kind and over-ruling Providence sent us to that same old block house, and to the kindness, friendship and unwearied attention of Major Mosely and his dear wife. The morning after our arrival, which was Sunday, a good part of our colony met at the house of H. L. Miller, who was a Presbyterian minister. He assisted us in returning thanks to our loving Father for our safe passage after our many perils. It was thoughtful and kind in him to suggest and carry out the religious services. It formed a bond of union between us all that has never been dissevered. The old block house stood inside the fort, partially surrounded by the original pickets. But few buildings left of the old fort; this the best. They were all occupied, as was every available nook and corner, even to standing boards from the pickets, as we, when children, made play houses. One of the buildings was used as a hotel, kept by Mr. Tibbetts, with the modest name of Saginaw City Exchange. That same old block house has welcomed many a pleasant gathering, for they were the very souls of hospitality, and the way we feasted on wild game, on trout, sturgeon and whitefish, which were brought from the bay, corded as they do wood. Cranberries were so plenty that vessels on their return trip were ballasted with them. Neither did we sweeten them with Indian

**sugar—ah, no. During the ever remembered and pleasant winter we passed in the old block house there were many arrivals in town, so that our society was good and intelligent, and, as in our isolated condition we were dependent upon each other for our mutual comfort and happiness, the memory of that winter is a "green spot." On the 1st of January, 1837, we introduced the eastern style of calls—with "hot coffee and cake." The calls were not so numerous as to be oppressive, although the constant repetition gave a sameness. The gentleman had a sleigh, and as they laughingly expressed it, they "called and returned it." Some thought they were called for, but the finale was at the place of pleasant memories, the old block house, one of 1836, February, 1874.**

But few remain among us of her fellow pioneers. In this city, that during her sojourn in it sprang forth from the wilderness, and in the church (St. John's) therein, which under God, to her mainly, owed its beginning and after growth she was ever a "Mother in Israel." By none can this last tribute of respect to her memory be better rendered than by the writer.

Farewell, friend of our friends; friend of our children; friend of ours; whose Christian life and example has left a legacy far richer and more enduring than purest gold or precious gems.

*Saginaw, February 5, 1878.* WM. A. CLARK,
Of Memorial Committee.

### MEMORIAL REPORT BY C. W. GRANT OF EAST SAGINAW, FEBRUARY, 1880.

The following memoir, published at the time of his death, of an old and well known pioneer of this State, is deemed worthy of a place in the third volume of the "Pioneer Collections" for the truthfulness of its statements, and for the remembrances which it calls up in the minds of our old settlers, and not because his life or example commends itself to the public favor:

It is with a feeling of sincere pain and regret that we sit down to pen an obituary notice of one of the oldest and best known citizens of Saginaw—Curtis Emerson—who died a peaceful death at nine o'clock last night.

Mr. Emerson was born at Norwich, Vermont, on the 4th day of February, 1810.* He was the youngest offspring of a peculiar family, destined to live a peculiar life, be known as a peculiar man, but happily to die a natural and peaceful death. His boyhood was spent in his native village, where his father was a leading merchant and banker—a man of eccentric character, of violent temper, of kindest heart and bitterest prejudices, a man of unbending integrity and purpose, but of many hard traits and personal faults. His mother was a meek, quiet, pious, and uncomplaining woman, who bore the crosses and burdens of a disappointed life but a few years, but who blended in the son's nature many of her virtues and fine feelings, which went far, through life, to offset the peculiar and unpleasant traits of the father. Mr. Emerson was educated in the best schools of New England, and entered into business under his father's patronage; but feuds and dislikes soon arose between them, and the young man came west, arriving in Detroit in the spring of 1836. He soon became the agent of a large land company, and traveled extensively through this State, and what now comprises Wisconsin, and even west of the Mississippi. His first visit to Saginaw was in 1839, and in 1846 he became a permanent resident of Saginaw City, and has been identified with our history since that time. He engaged at once in the lumber business, but not prospering in that to his expectations, he removed in 1847 to the west side of the river, erecting a building near the foot of Bristol street. At that time there was a saw-mill, one dwelling, one boarding house, a barn, and a small blacksmith shop there. These had been built by Mr. Atwater, a brother-in-law of Mr.

---

***Curtis Emerson was the son of Thomas Emerson of Vermont.**

Emerson, but were deserted. In the spring of 1848, Mr. C. W. Grant brought some men from Flint, and, with Emerson, commenced the manufacture of lumber. A store was opened and a settlement begun, which was called Buena Vista. A town was organized the same year, and Emerson chosen supervisor, and Mr. Grant town clerk, each receiving five votes, all that were cast. This was the starting point where now rests a flourishing city of many thousands.

In 1840 Mr. Emerson erected a two-story frame house, and used it as a residence. In those days the pioneers were a convivial as well as a hardy set, and Emerson was the leader, and many are the traditions of "good old times" that were witnessed in the famous "Halls of the Montezumas," as this place was called. It was destroyed by fire in 1866, and Emerson mourned the loss perhaps more sincerely than any other event except the death of his favorite dog "Cæsar." The old mill was dismantled in 1854, and was also burned in 1864. Mr. Emerson loaded the first schooner with lumber, built the first ferry boat, the Eastern, and was for years foremost in all that promised to develop his home and promote the public prosperity. His conviviality was noted far and wide, his venomous manner of speech surprised and astounded a stranger at first; his thoughtless blasphemy was dreaded by his best friends, but under all his faults was a kind heart, a generous disposition, a true spirit of chivalry, a strictly honorable intent and purpose.

The writer's acquaintance with Mr. Emerson began in 1848, and was casual and not such as to leave a pleasant impression. Later, on a visit to Saginaw in 1855, it was renewed under circumstances more favorable, and included a thorough initiation into the mysteries of the ways and Halls of the Montezumas. Upon our removing here in 1865, to aid in establishing the first daily paper in northern Michigan, Mr. Emerson extended a cordial greeting, and though he "did not like a d—d black republican" as he said, he always acted the part of a sincere friend and supporter. Our last interview was in December last, when he called at the Herald office, and sat for two hours conversing with the vivacity of youth, and going over much of the ground so briefly sketched in this article.

Mr. Emerson was a man of small and peculiarly slight physique to look at, but of wonderful energy, vital power, and physical and mental activity. Had his life habits been regular, he might have lived many years longer. His fondness for the social glass was his only serious fault, and that was not an acquired habit, but was inherited. His command of language was wonderful at all times, but under the influence of liquor he became a volcano of mingled wit, sarcasm, vituperation, and blasphemy. He was a strong democrat, and many of the early conventions and legislatures of the State were witnesses of his fitful outbursts and lingual extravagances. When he was in easy circumstances he was a prince in his lavish expenditure of money. His last twenty years were embittered by losses, law suits, and poverty, and his last few years were eked out upon actual charity; and yet under all arose constantly the strong individuality, the masterly spirit of independence and defiance, the untamed demon of inherited habit and desire. A man of mark, he was also a marked man, and above his clay, with all his sad faults in full review, we are not ashamed to say that the eye moistens and the strong right hand trembles in sorrow and grief at the loss of our old, honest, and true friend. Curtis Emerson was of the true stuff for a pioneer. Born of ill-matched wedlock, he lived and died single. Full of quick, hateful, untamed desires, eccentricities, and faults, he fairly overflowed with charity, kindness, warm hearted love for his friends, and the soft-hearted meekness of a gentle and pious mother. No one who ever knew him can forget, and not one can find in their inmost being a single trace of unforgiving hate. A strange compound, an unfathomed essence, a wonderful medley of humanity, an unparalleled mixture of matter and mind, an anomaly of soul and sense, spirit and tongue, life and practice, feeling and action, desire and restraint; shunned, dreaded, despised, and in turn petted, honored, and loved by all; a demon fiend now, and anon in a trice a man of sense, humor, and business, his character was penciled in finer lines of light and shade than any other we have ever seen or known.

The King of Terrors came gradually, with the least pain, and his quiet and easy death, February 11, 1880, was the complete calm that follows life's fiercest tempests. Not a relative to smooth his pillow, but friends, true friends, stood at that bedside, and the last breath brought no struggle. Gone. Over his clay speak of his virtues; into his grave lower all his faults. "*Semper paratus*" was his motto; to the all wise Judge and Creator his life being is returned. What His verdict will be, none can tell; but we know that Mercy and Truth are there to attend the judgment.

# ST. JOSEPH COUNTY.

## SEMI-CENTENNIAL ANNIVERSARY OF THE SETTLEMENT OF ST. JOSEPH COUNTY.

The St. Joseph county Pioneer Society met at Centreville, June 13, 1877, and celebrated the fiftieth anniversary of the settlement of the county.

### REPORT OF THE PROCEEDINGS.

At 11:30 o'clock A. M. the meeting was called to order by the president, John W. Fletcher, Esq., and the following order of proceedings was observed:

1. Report of the proceedings of last meeting read and approved.
2. A full, lengthy and able report of Henry W. Laird, chairman of the committee to give a history of the removal of the Nottawa Indians, was presented and filed.
3. On motion of Alvin Hoyt, seconded by John Hull, the preamble to our constitution was so amended as to declare all persons who have been settlers of the county thirty years eligible to be members of our organization, upon signing our constitution.
4. Election of officers of the society for the ensuing year being next in order, was proceeded with and the following officers elected:

President—George Thurston, of Sturgis.

Vice Presidents—Edward K. Wilcox, Leonidas; Lorancie Schellhouse, Colon; Josiah F. Livermore, Burr Oak; James Johnston, Fawn River; Hiram Wakeman, Mendon; Jonathan Engle, Nottawa; Stephen Cade, Sherman; David Knox, Sturgis; John Lomison, Park; Jonas Fisher, Lockport; Norman Roys, Florence; John Hotchin, White Pigeon; Leander Weinberg, Flowerfield; Benjamin King, Fabius; Franklin Wells, Constantine; Edward Gray, Mottville.

Secretary—Wm. B. Langley, Nottawa.

Treasurer—Edmond Stears, Centreville.

Executive Committee—Edmond Stears, Centreville; Wm. M. Watkins, Leonidas; John Hull, Florence; Isaac Runyan, Sturgis; Thomas Cuddy, Nottawa.

After the election of officers, the Constantine cornet band being with us, the meeting was treated to some splendid music.

5. After the election of officers and music by the band, adjournment was made for the picnic dinner, to reassemble at 1.30 o'clock P. M.

6. At 1.30 o'clock the assembly again gathered, and the band discoursed some sweet music to cheer the hearts of old and young.

List of pioneers who have died since our meeting in June last, or whose deaths were not then reported, so far as we could obtain the names:

Isaac F. Ulrich, Asel Clapp, Alfred Todd, Isaac Major, William Major, Elijah Purdy, Joseph Jenett, George Blanchard, Richard Fulcher, Abel Belote, Rensselaer Strong, William F. Bowman, Robert K. McMillen, Lemuel O. Hammond, William Braginton, Henry Bittenbender, Eli Bebee, Ralph Taylor, Wm. Allison, Sheldon Williams, Joseph Miller, Sumner Taylor, Henry Dean, Robert Dougherty, Cyrus J. Cross, Peter Bittenbender, Louis Wachterhauser, Joseph Wachterhauser, Jehial B. Dimmick, Mrs. Edward S. Moore, Mrs. Sally Williams, Mrs. Comfort Tyler, Mrs. Isaac Major, Mrs. Lorencie Schellhouse, Mrs. C. B. Hoffman, Mrs. Mary Gilchrist, Mrs. Wm. Ferguson, Mrs. Lydia Harrington, Mrs. Mary Cochran.

7. The blessing of the Almighty was invoked upon the pioneers and all their friends by our brother, David Knox, of Sturgis.

8. The soul-stirring ode, "My Country, 'tis of thee we sing," was most beautifully and artistically sung by our friends of the quartette club.

9. The interesting report of the secretary was then read, and commanded the undivided attention of the audience. It was as follows:

### SECRETARY'S REPORT.

In the summer of 1826, fifty-one years ago, our president, John W. Fletcher, with Captain Moses Allen, soon after a settler on Allen's prairie, Hillsdale county, and a Mr. Hubbard, of Wayne county, in this now State of Michigan, came through this southwestern part of the Territory of Michigan to see what there was in it to induce settlers to make it a home. Then there was not a settler west of Washtenaw and Lenawee counties, and on the line of the Chicago trail, almost the exact line of the military government road from Detroit to Chicago; there was no settler west of Ypsilanti, except one on the St. Joseph river, near Bertrand, in Berrien county. These are the first men we find as intended settlers in this valley. They returned east to near Detroit, and within a short time Allen and Fletcher became settlers of the St. Joseph valley. In 1827, just fifty years ago, John Winchell, Leonard Cutler and Arba Heald came on to Pigeon prairie and were the first settlers of St. Joseph county. That year one or two persons also settled in Mottville, and George Thurston and John Sturgis on Sturgis prairie. In 1826, on the 14th of June, Ezekiel Metcalf became owner of the first land in St. Joseph county, purchasing the east half of the northeast quarter of section one in town eight, south of range ten west (Sturgis). The same year Asahel Savery, Robert Clark, Jr., and John Anderson, on October 24, entered lands on White Pigeon prairie. In November, on the 11th day, George Buck and Truman Bears entered eighty acres of land, each in Sturgis, and were the only land-holders by absolute title in St. Joseph county in 1828. These and all other lands in this and adjoining counties were purchased at the United States land office at Monroe, Michigan Territory, until June, 1831, when a U. S. land office was established at White Pigeon.

Fifty years ago the extreme western farming settlements of the northwest were Dexter on the Huron and Tecumseh on the Raisin. Then not a family nor an individual settler, except the Indian traders or the Catholic or the Protestant missionary, or the camp followers in or about the military post of the government, was to be found west of the line of Lenawee and Washtenaw counties, and now, in fifty years, we see the great northwest with its 10,000,000 of active, energetic laborers, supplying almost one-quarter of the world with their meat and bread, and with a great iron band extending from the Atlantic ocean over the Alleghany and Rocky mountain ranges to the western Pacific coast, and with its arms and connecting links extending to almost every hamlet in our wide land, and into the mountain gorges with their untold wealth of gold, silver, iron, copper, and coal; and all this has been done since your president, secretary, and chaplain and most of you here present have toiled up from boyhood's days through the vigor of manhood, to that time when they are gently passing down life's decline, may be to that time when it will be said of us "once a man, twice a child."

Two years ago next October was organized this St. Joseph county pioneer society, one of the leading objects of which was to secure a record of the early settlement of our county, and now within the last year have been found the men who have taken in hand the task of getting the early incidents of those years and as far as the earnest, faithful work and persevering effort could do, it has been done, to gather as many of the important events and changes from the early days as was possible, and while we know there are many things that have gone down to the grave and can never now be known, yet we should rejoice that we have found so many and placed them in the page of a written history, and we are very certain that our future citizens will be thankful that so much has been done and done so well; and the great changes that have been made within that time, from the Indian hunting grounds of this lovely valley to the home of the intelligent and educated white man, are so well portrayed, and the late changes from the pioneer's log cabin to the fine mansion of the prosperous farmer. And yet the old hunter as he remembers and thinks back to the time of the illy lighted log cabin with its few panes of 7x9 glass, and compares it with the brick mansion, like a Norman castle, or the painted and polished wooden building, covering a large spot in his old eighty acre lot, is not entirely happy. He enters the carpeted halls with their plate glass windows blinded, curtained, and laced, to keep the sun out and save the bright colors on the sofa, and the ottoman, and the *tete-a-tete*, and the piano, and as he stumbles over the fashionable rocker when he enters the ornamented and darkened room from the bright, dazzling sunlight, it does not gratify him as much as did the old log cabin with the light of the open door, fifty years ago. But then, his thoughts may go back to the times when he heard from the old home in two or three weeks after the date of the letter, and paid that eighteen and three-fourths or twenty-five cents postage, and now realizes that for three cents he can send as large a letter from one end of the union to the other, he has to own up that the world does move onward; and when he remembers that instead of cutting his wheat, and his rye, and his oats with a sickle or his cradle, and threshing it out with his flail, he cuts it with his self-binding reaper, and has it threshed and cleaned ready for market with his steamer, he must admit that the world advances, although he declines; and when he looks about him for the old friends of the early years and sees few left, and of that few so many yearly passing to join those old companions in that land beyond the river.

And now many of us feel that most of our work is done, and we ask that you now place in the care of younger, more active, stronger, and firmer hands the care of the future interests of the St. Joseph pioneer society, and the continuation of that history of our much loved county; and we ask that the coming fifty years of the first century may be as happy, as satisfactory, and as prosperous to those who succeed us as it has been to us of the earlier years, and that we may all meet again in that brighter, happier land, where there is no sickness, no suffering, no parting, no death. WM. H. CROSS, *Secretary.*

### AN ORIGINAL POEM.

BY COLONEL ISAAC D. TOLL, OF ST. JOSEPH.

Hail, Pioneers! welcome, comrades all!
From cottage whether, or from vaulted hall,
We gladly greet you here this day;
Happy thrice, while yet we may.
For you the cornet peal, the trumpet and the voice
Unite to swell the triumph. We rejoice
And to the chorus add a nobler part,
The silent, richer melody of the heart.
Veterans, all hail! men well tried;
Founders of all we have, who defied
The ills of frontier life,
We crown thee victors in the strife.
Hither came these men of worth,
Far distant from their place of birth,
By slow approach, like Patriarch Howe,
Skirting the ice-bound lake, or from the prow
Straining the eye, Utopia to behold,
The locked wilderness of plenty, with its gold
Of mine and tree and soil, ready to yield
To sturdy muscle and to thews of steel.
For them no iron horse
To speed them on their venturous course,
Nor the lightning flash of man
To tell of journey lone, or how the race was run;
Not e'en post-boy's welcome blast was heard,
Nor Jehu's whip the echoing forest stirred.
All things were slow, but gallant heart and brain
Brought for the world's progression, and all the smiling train.
Aye, in their own strong arms, through God,
In fearless confidence they trod,
With willing feet a virgin sod,
Their direst foe miasma's scourging rod.
Here met New England and the Old,
One purpose now their lives unfold.
Far in the past old enmity resigned,
In rivalry of mutual progress now combined.

One of old England's scions oft declared
    His surname blunt "was Dick Wade,
    Nor proud was he nor yet afraid;"
And in his humor many shared.

Old Scotia's son, from land o' cakes,
Beheld his wood embowered lakes,
To memory dear, mirrored anew,
As from Sherman's heights they broke upon his view.

Pennsylvania solid swelled the tide,
The stalwart German, side by side,
Also from glorious Hudson's hills,
Romantic Watkins' recessed rills,
Or from the Mohawk's gentler stream,
And the broad Ohio, with her silver sheen;
Potomac's banks gave forth her sons,
Southron and Northron mingled now as one,—
Men from the land of Emmett, Burke had come,
And thus the early field was won.
Who was the leader then, fifty years ago,
This very month the half century, I trow?
Circling, behold him, winding the deer,
(Poor child of the wildwood!) the quarry is near,
The eagle eye of the explorer ne'er missed its aim,
And savory the cabin air from bold Fletcher's game.
There sits he now—elastic his step,
And blithsome his laugh, and long may he yet
Among loving subjects their chieftain remain,
O'er silver grays happy, supremely to reign.

Soon direful rumors filled the air,
The red man springing from his lair—
See Hogan's ready palisade,
A cheap defense from Indian raid.
'Twas for the savage well he turned his back,
Strong limbed Calhoun was close upon his track;
A tender child when forced from Raisin's banks;
A leader fit was he for yoeman's ranks,
Stern vengeance nursed in his youthful breast
And chased the intruder to his woodland nest.
Gone is the dusky warrior, and his yell
Affrights no more the maiden in her forest dell;
No more in Mendon, on the banks of old St. Jo,
May the embers of his fires glow.
Apollo of the wilderness! lithe Cha-a-quet!
No more in council may his brethren meet.
Where is the foam of ocean? where is echo's swell?
There hath the red man vanished, there doth the Indian dwell.
Turn we from Black Hawk's frontier war
To Mexico's crimson fields afar.
Buena Vista's gorges, Molino's leaden rain,
Cherubusco's well fought plain.
Then burst the giant conflict's bloody strife,
Renewing the great nation's life.
In each and all well done, where'er the foe,—
At home, abroad,—your prowess laid him low.
In arts of peace as well as war, combined,
You served your country and you loved your kind;
Behold your schools, of liberty the shield,
The waving grain of fertile fields
With plenty laden. See the spires
Of temples, glaring with celestial fires,
Inspiring grander aim than Greek or Roman lyre.

These altars by you made,
With firm foundation laid,
The pillars high and strong,—
Firm as your liberty,—as long.
Your children's children true
Your work will ne'er undo.
The demagogue, to scent by intuition,
To damn him then a sacred mission,
Thus walled against the canker and the worm
Of all republics, their best interests learn.

**Then with prophetic Berkeley they may boast**
**"Time's noblest empire is his last."**
**Long is the list of builders gone before,**
**In recollection fond, in history's lore,**
**They are recorded, and their influence bright**
**Will gladden all, until the light**
**Of setting sun be cast,**
**In mild effulgence, on the last.**

Appropriate music was again discoursed by the band.

Volunteer remarks were called for, and on being called out, our pioneer Sturgis boy, Hon. Orange Jacobs, now delegate to congress from Washington territory, gave a most pleasing, interesting and excellent address, which was received with great pleasure, and we rejoiced that we had such a boy to send out to the Pacific coast.

John Hull followed with a fine history of the progress of musical science in our county, and its first bursting out in the woods.

S. C. Coffinberry, in his genial, eloquent way, lauded and praised our loved and absent departed pioneers, and set up some of the living ones pretty strong, as he is apt to do in his estimate of loved friends.

Samuel P. Williams, of Lima, being called for, would not take the speakers' stand, but from his place in the crowd talked good, straight pioneer talk, relating facts and incidents to us until all wished he was on the stand and would not soon stop.

Then we were regaled with a splendid song entitled "A Hundred Years Ago," by our vocalist, after which a few right good remarks from our old president, Alvin Calhoun, and another grand piece by the band. At 4:30 o'clock the pioneers separated with an earnest hope and purpose to again meet at this place, should life and health permit, and with thankful hearts that we had met this 50th year of our county's settlement.

One of the noticeable features of this large meeting was the lessening numbers of the "heads silvered o'er with age" of the first settlers, and the increasing proportion of the fast becoming "silver grays" of the boys of early years, and the greatly increased number of the rosy faces and the buoyant, elastic step of the second generation, giving us promise and assurance that the old pioneers were not now, and would not in the future, be forgotten.

## MEMORIAL REPORT.

### BY COLONEL ISAAC D. TOLL, OF FAWN RIVER, VICE PRESIDENT FOR ST. JOSEPH COUNTY.

**February 5, 1880.**

Sketch of the life of Patrick Marantelle, who died at Mendon, May 23, 1878.

Hon. Patrick Marantelle, son of Dominique Marantelle and Archange Marie Louise Navarre, was born at Sandwich, Canada, March 11, 1807, and died at his beautiful home on the St. Joseph river, in Mendon, May 23, 1878. In 1823, when sixteen years old, he superintended the Indian trading post, at Coldwater, for Peter and James Godfrey, the former having married his sister. This post was established in 1821. In 1825, with an Indian guide, he went to Fort Wayne by the way of Sturgis and Mongoquinong prairies, on the business of his employers, and in 1833 succeeded his father-in-law, Colonel Francois

Moreton, in charge of the trading post at Nottowa, near his mansion and farm in Mendon, Nottowa Sepee, and the Indian reservation therein, formerly embracing a large portion of that township. By his honorable treatment of the Indians, his well known intrepidity and personal magnetism which affected both white and red, he was of great service to the government in the removal of the Pottowottomie Indians, of the Nottawa reservation, in 1840. Indeed it is authenticated that without him the attempt proved a failure. He purchased a section of most valuable land and showed great energy in developing its fine agricultural resources, and being a superior equestrian, raised many horses noted for speed and endurance. In 1835 he married Frances, daughter of Colonel Moreton, and niece of Governor Gabriel Moreton, of Illinois. In 1847 he served with credit as a member of the House of Representatives of the Michigan legislature, and was one of the committee of Internal Improvement. The office was unsought and he only accepted it by severe urging of his influential friends. For several terms he was elected supervisor of the township of Mendon, serving against his wishes, and carried with him the same devotion and judicious energy in public affairs as he had shown in the management of his own. For over forty years his home was noted for the unstinted hospitality and refined courtesy of its occupants, and for many years religious services were held in his capacious mansion. Mr. and Mrs. Marantelle, in early life, became members of the Catholic church, to which they were devotedly attached, and by lives of most noteworthy examples of all the cardinal virtues, were an honor to their religion and an ornament to society. Patrick Marantelle was connected by marriage with the Brevoorts, Godfreys and De Quindres. His mother traced her lineage to the princes of Navarre, but irrespective of ancestry he was a peer by virtue of his exalted character, his stainless integrity, his noble bearing; for by the graces of his mind and manners, to say nothing of his manly figure and handsome features, he was without a superior in the wide country round. He left the consort, the partner of his pioneer life, four sons and four daughters (one married Captain William McLoughlin, an eminent citizen of Sturgis), and an estate valued at over $100,000. The writer knew him from boyhood to the date of his death.

Thomas Cade, of Sturgis, St. Joseph county, was born in Yorkshire, England, January 7, 1786, and died at Sturgis, March 9, 1879, having lived over ninety-three years. He emigrated in July, 1830, going directly to Sturgis, where he purchased 320 acres of prairie land. He always was engaged in agriculture; was successful, and was of most honorable and honest character. He was noted for his remarkable health and the habitual exercise he took, riding on horseback daily, even to the day before the close of his long life. He rode on horseback Saturday, took supper at Mr. Bloss' same evening, next day said he felt tired and would take a little sleep; but it proved a sleep that knew no waking, for his life went out then, and in an hour his family saw from the calm features that for him death had no pain. He left three sons. Of these Stephen W. is known for his generosity and high character. He served as supervisor for many years with great credit, and dispenses a liberal hospitality at his new and large brick mansion two miles north of the village of Sturgis. Another son, Joseph, has a handsome farm and excellent buildings near his brother. Cade, Lanrick, Mortimer, the Wrens, Morris, were all worthy types of solid, stalwart English character, who settled nearly the same time in the township of Sturgis.

William Hazzard, Sr., was born in Berkshire, Massachusetts, February 10,

1798. He settled in the township of Nottawa, two miles northeast of Centreville, in 1829, on Christmas day, in company with that most excellent gentleman, John W. Fletcher, and others. At the age of twenty-five he married Cassandra Coon, of Monroe, Michigan, and fourteen children were the fruit of this union, of whom eleven survive. In 1875 he married again, his former wife having died in 1871. She was a most worthy woman, and with her husband, the Fletchers, Howes, Powers and others, in 1830, formed a social and religious circle noted for refined courtesy and a Christian influence which pervaded the new settlement and gave results that are visible to-day. William Hazzard was the last survivor of the first Methodist class formed in St. Joseph county in 1830. He died at Mendon, Michigan, September 29, 1878, loved and regretted by all who knew him.

---

# SHIAWASSEE COUNTY.

## MEMORIAL REPORT.

### BY B. O. WILLIAMS, VICE PRESIDENT FOR SHIAWASSEE COUNTY.

February 5, 1878.

Owosso, *February 5th, 1878.*

Colonel Ebenezer Gould, a pioneer of Shiawassee county, died on the seventh day of September, 1877, aged sixty years, the direct cause of his death being apoplexy, induced by much suffering and pain from wounds and disease contracted in the army during the Rebellion, from the effects of which he never recovered. Colonel Gould was born at Heming, Cayuga county, New York, April 10, 1817, and removed to Michigan in 1836, and to Shiawassee county in 1837, just forty years previous to his decease. In 1862, while in the practice of law, with a lucrative business, he left all private considerations and helped to recruit the 5th Michigan cavalry regiment, with the appointment of first major, and was subsequently promoted to colonel of the regiment. He was wounded at the battle of Hagerstown, after the battle of Gettysburg, while pursuing the retreating forces of Lee's army, and was carried from the field by his men. He was honorably discharged on the tenth of November, 1864, for disability caused by wounds and disease. He returned to his home in Owosso, and to the practice of law, with a shattered constitution. Like most of those who went into the service, to bravely fight and serve their country to preserve the Union, and with unstained hands and garments, except from blood of foes and their own, so freely shed, are one by one passing away into premature graves. The final summons was in accordance with his wish. In my last conversation with him, he expressed the wish that when the change came, which would probably be before long, that it might come quickly.

### PROCEEDINGS OF THE SHIAWASSEE COUNTY PIONEER SOCIETY AT THEIR SEMI-ANNUAL MEETING, AUGUST 17, 1878.

WHEREAS, Under the dispensations of a wise Providence, Colonel Ebenezer Gould, late a member of this society, has been removed from among us by death:

Most truly can it be said that Mr. Gould was not only one of the early pioneers of this county, but a representative man, having emigrated here from central New York in 1837, at the early age of 19 years, and settled in the then village of Owosso; and by that native energy and force of character incident to the early pioneers of this county and State, has set a worthy example for the rising generation. Mr. Gould first entered into mercantile business after locating at Owosso, and a few years subsequently he embarked in the then laudable enterprise of felling the native forests of the township of Antrim, in this county, and making a new farm. Soon after, he took up the profession of law, and by his untiring industry and studious habits, soon rose to a high position in that profession and became one of the leading members of the bar of this county. At his country's call, when foul rebellion threatened the perpetuity of the Union, he at once volunteered his services to that country, and each and all can point with pride to his military record, for on his final discharge he carried to his home the most tangible evidence of his prowess and gallantry as a soldier in his maimed and battle-scarred physical frame. Therefore,

*Resolved*, That in the death of Colonel Ebenezer Gould this society has lost one of its most able, worthy, and efficient members; his family a kind, affectionate and indulgent husband and father; and society a worthy and upright business man;

*Resolved*, That the foregoing be spread upon the journal of this society, and a copy of the same, attested by the secretary, be presented to the family of our deceased brother.

EBENEZER F. WADE,
S. R. KELSEY,
J. B. WHEELER,
*Committee.*

*To the President and Secretary of the State Pioneer Society of the State of Michigan, assembled at Lansing, February 4, 1880:*

The undersigned, one of the vice presidents of the Society, presents the following obituary notices from the county of Shiawassee as a labor of love and respect for those who as pioneers of our State have been removed from their useful and laborious occupations and callings among us, let us hope, to a nobler and higher enjoyment in the many mansions promised by Him who is able to fulfill, and before whom those of us still permitted by His blessings again to assemble at our annual gathering must soon, by nature's laws, appear; and may we not be permitted to hope that we may meet again those that have gone before, and be permitted to enjoy higher and nobler pursuits of knowledge that will satisfy our more refined and glorified existence.

I have, let me here say, in the short space of time that it has been possible for me to devote to this subject (and that time only comprising the last two days) gathered up such data as was within my reach, and am fully conscious of my unfitness to properly discharge such duties as seem to be expected by the officers of the society from the vice presidents, viz.: that of keeping and gathering throughout the year suitable obituaries of the pioneers of a county. The fear of being considered obtrusive upon so delicate and such tender subjects ought to deter one from making extended remarks upon the characteristics of deceased persons, and not unlikely there may be many cases not within my reach, in my researches, whose surviving friends will feel disappointed at not finding recorded or mentioned. To such, if any, I can only say that the vice president whom you may appoint for the coming year will no doubt most gladly make amends in future reports, to be, I hope, more justly and fully made by a more competent person. In this connection it occurs to me that a much more suitable person may be found in our fellow pioneer, Mr. Ebenezer F. Wade, of Corunna, who is, I believe, the secretary of the county Pioneer or Old Settlers' Society of Shiawassee.

Let me now return you my sincere thanks for the honor I feel you have conferred upon me in the past, and close with the hope that in the next annual reports we may be spared the pain of having to read obituaries of any present at this meeting.

Mr. Cephas Stewart died at his residence in the township of Bennington, September 23, 1878, aged sixty-four years, from rheumatic affection that culminated in disease of the heart. He was born in Ridgfield, Connecticut, in 1814, and with his parents removed to Seneca county, New York, in 1831, at the age of seventeen. He married Miss Mary J. Barnes, November 11th, 1840, at Romulus, in said county and State. They removed and settled upon his farm in the township of Bennington, county of Shiawassee, in 1843, upon which he has since resided, with the exception of five years in the city of Owosso. In the year 1876 he became a member of the Congregational church of Owosso, the society of which his estimable wife had for many years been an exemplary and consistent member and communicant. He was a man of urbane manners and uncompromising integrity.

Mr. Ora Cook was born January 14, 1811, in Bloomfield, Ontario county, New York. Removed to Pontiac, Oakland county, Michigan, in 1825, and into Shiawassee township and county in 1838. Married Miss Hannah E. Ackley in that township May 9, 1847. Died September 17, 1878, aged sixty-eight years, at the city of Owosso, where with his wife, he had resided for several years, working a farm just outside the city. He was an industrious, unobtrusive, temperate, honorable man, universally respected by all his acquaintances.

Mr. Daniel Lyon was born at Middleton, Somerset county, New Jersey, January 7, 1808. In 1816 his parents removed with him to Seneca county, N. Y. In May, 1831, at the age of 23, he was baptized into the fellowship of the Baptist church of Romulus, Seneca county, N. Y. He married at that place Miss Elizabeth Banister, and removed to Ypsilanti, Washtenaw county, Michigan, where he resided ten years. From thence to Ann Arbor, where he remained till 1851, when he removed to Owosso, where he resided until his death, the 18th day of January, 1879, which ensued after a long, painful illness caused by kidney affections, aged 71 years. His last illness was borne in great resignation, with a deep reliance in the Savior and a firm conviction of the correctness of his faith. He was tolerant of the opinions of others in religious matters, was an active deacon in his church, charitable in his intercourse with all, a builder and mason by trade, aided in the construction of the arsenal at Dearborn, and the State University. He was ever ready to advise and aid in every useful and laudable public or private work. He will long be missed by the public and friends, and mourned by those who have lost a loving companion and indulgent and faithful parent.

Mrs. Mary Ann Freeman died July 4, 1879, aged sixty-nine years. Mrs. Freeman was born in Warwickshire, England, January 23, 1810. She was married to Richard Freeman, March 27, 1831. Two years later they came to Michigan and settled in Northfield, Washtenaw county, where they resided until 1836. At that time Mr. Freeman and family moved to Shiawassee county. They were three days coming from Northfield to Owosso.

At that time Owosso was nearly a wilderness; but three or four families comprised the population of the town. These were men with families hired by Deacon Comstock to chop for him. Upon Mr. Freeman's arrival, their first night was passed under the hospitable roof of Deacon Comstock. By dint of four days' hard labor, Mr. Freeman cut a road from Owosso to his land, six and a half miles north of Owosso, in the township of New Haven, at that time there being no road north of Owosso except an Indian trail. Their nearest neighbor lived in Owosso. Mrs. Freeman was the first and only white woman living in New Haven township for two years and a half. She did not see the face of another white woman for a year.

In the fall of 1836, in October, a very severe snow storm occurred, obstructing roads and breaking limbs from trees, etc. Many of the pioneers of Shiawassee county well remember this severe storm. Mr. Freeman's family were deprived of either school or church after their arrival. After several years a log school-house was erected on the State road, where occasionally a preacher would stop and preach for the few settlers. In 1861 Mrs. Freeman was converted to the Methodist faith, and for eighteen years—up to the time of her death—she was a consistent member of that church.

Mrs. Freeman was the mother of twelve children, all of whom were born in Michigan with the exception of the oldest daughter, who was born in England. Ten of these children are living, seven sons and three daughters. The eldest son, Mr. Chas. Freeman, for several years held the office of township supervisor, and has efficiently held other positions of trust and responsibility. The other six sons are living on the old homestead. The homestead was divided between the sons several years ago, each receiving the possession of a good sized farm. The daughters, Mrs. Samuel Shuster, Mrs. Camp, and Mrs. Louis Goodell, are all living near the homestead, and all are prospering.

Mr. and Mrs. Freeman returned to England in 1867, where Mrs. Freeman saw her mother alive after an absence of thirty-four years.

Mrs. Freeman has closed a life of patient toil and hardship. For a long term of years she has been an invalid, suffering severely. All that could be done by a kind husband and children to relieve her sufferings was done. But she has at last obeyed her Savior's injunction of, "Come unto me all ye that are weary and heavy laden, and I will give you rest." After aiding her husband in the accumulation of a large property and rearing a large family of sons and daughters, all of whom are esteemed by all who know them, it seems fitting that she should close the labors of a long and well spent life by having all her children around her in her dying hour. Her labors are finished, and the best eulogy that can be spoken or written concerning her life is the fond memories of a kind and good mother laid up in the hearts of her children.

Mrs. Mary Covert was born in the town of Phelps, Ontario county, New York, in the year 1823, and removed to Palmyra, Lenawee county, Michigan, in 1837; was married in 1843 to Andrew Covert at Tecumseh, and removed to Owosso in 1856, where she has since resided. The following obituary notice was published at the time of her death:

Mrs. Mary Covert, wife of Andrew Covert, died in this city, July 21, 1879, aged fifty-six years. She was born in Phelps, Ontario county, New York, was a resident of Ohio for several years, also of Adrian in this State, and has lived in Owosso eighteen years. Mrs. Covert was a remarkably devoted wife and mother, a kind neighbor, generous and open hearted, ever ready to do for others, even at a sacrifice to herself, a consistent Christian—in fine, a woman whose life was a blessing to all around her. She bore a distressing illness with patience and resignation, anticipating her departure as a welcome release from suffering. She is lamented in Owosso as a truly good and worthy woman.

whose loss will be felt and whose cheerful presence will be sadly missed. She leaves a husband in a desolate home, and a daughter, Mrs. B. O. Williams, Jr., to whom she has been a most devoted mother. During her illness she received the tender and affectionate care of her sister, Mrs. Bortles, who feels deeply the loss of her beloved sister.

Funeral services were held yesterday afternoon at the family residence. Rev. L. B. Stimson, of the Episcopal church, of which church the deceased was a communicant, conducted the services, and paid a just and fitting tribute to the deceased as wife, mother, neighbor, and Christian. A large procession of sympathizing neighbors accompanied the mourning relatives to deposit the beloved form in Oakhill cemetery. "So he giveth his beloved sleep."

Mrs. Covert suffered from a very distressing disease of the stomach, and one of her last requests was that when it was all over with her an examination should be made. Accordingly, a post mortem examination was made by Drs. Perkins, McCormick, and Barnes, which revealed nothing of a malignant nature. There was a great thickening of the muscular walls of the left extremity of the stomach, together with adhesions of its external surface with the surrounding tissues. Its capacity for holding food was very much reduced, and this, together with the condition of the mucous membrane, accounted for the persistent and distressing dyspeptic symptoms which characterized the case.

Mr. Abel Beers was born in Fairfield, Connecticut, in the year 1822. His family was among the earliest settlers in Fairfield, one of the oldest settlements in Connecticut, and was distinguished from generation to generation for those qualities of mind and character that make up a noble race of energetic men. In early life he followed the sea for several years. About a quarter of a century ago with his wife and a young family he came to Michigan and settled in the township of Bennington, Shiawassee county, and with untiring energy, single handed, improved a farm of 300 acres of wild land to the highest state of cultivation. Wherever Mr. Beers was known he was respected as a man of sincerity, honesty, and kindness of heart. He was ever ready to adopt any improvement in agricultural affairs or business matters of public interest to the community. Severe labor and injudicious exposure soon told on his health and mind, once remarkable for vigor. Both were impaired. Though for many years a man of clear religious convictions, he became subject to periods of deep melancholy, and was often impressed with the idea that he must die. In one of those attacks he died by his own hand December 3, 1879, aged 57 years. The loss of a beloved daughter several years ago added to the malady. On the 7th of December a large circle of friends and neighbors, together with the Masonic bodies of which he was a member, assembled at his residence in sadness, to perform the last rites of duty and respect, with the verdict that he was not morally responsible for the manner of his death. The family had the sympathy of all in their deep affliction, and his memory will be cherished by all who knew him. He was a worthy member of the Episcopal church of Owosso city.

Mr. Ira W. Rush died in Owosso, April 29, 1878, aged fifty-eight years. He was born in Wyoming county, State of New York, in 1822; came to Michigan in 1834; resided in Oakland county five years, and removed to the township of Rush, Shiawassee county. In 1845 he removed to his farm, situated in Owosso and Bennington townships. In 1846 he married Miss Angeline Hall, of

Owosso. He was a member of the pioneer society of this county; an energetic, intelligent, patriotic, industrious and good farmer. Although possessing by inheritance an iron constitution, too much hard labor, together with the faithful performance of many public duties, executed with unsparing pains, thoughtless of the strain upon himself, induced paralysis and death. He was an exemplary member of the Methodist Episcopal church, of Owosso, and one of its strongest pecuniary supporters, and constant in attendance with his devoted family.

Mr. Jonah Fuller, of the city of Corunna, Michigan, died May 31, 1878, aged fifty-eight years. He was born in the State of Massachusetts in 1820; has been a resident of Michigan since 1836, and of Shiawassee county since 1845. He was universally esteemed, an honorable, upright man. He was elected sheriff of the county, discharging the duties of the responsible office with delicacy and kindness to all, unostentatious by nature. His innate modesty obscured from public view much that was valuable, and surrounded him with numerous personal friends. He was buried with the honors of the Masonic fraternity, regretted by all.

Mr. Ephriam Wright died in Vernon township, October 8, 1879, aged ninety-three years and ten months. He settled upon a farm in the township of Vernon, near the village of Newburg, county of Shiawassee, about the year 1835, that township having but few settlers, and a farm was where the village of Newburg now is situated. He was a very industrious, hard-working man, and cleared up a heavily timbered farm at that point. That accomplished, he was restless until he could be felling the giants of a still more densely timbered forest, and bringing under perfect subjection its virgin soil. Although at times somewhat nervous, caused by an impediment of speech, his iron will and strong good sense always commanded the respect of associates. The deceased was probably the oldest man in the county and a pioneer of Michigan. His funeral drew out a large number of the citizens whose white hairs and tottering steps showed that they were fast following this neighbor and friend to his last resting place.

**DIED.—In this city, on Wednesday morning, December 31, 1879, Mr. Joseph Thayer, aged 64 years. Mr. Thayer was an old resident of this city, and was much esteemed by a wide circle of relatives and friends for his many excellent qualities as a citizen and neighbor. His funeral took place on Friday under the supervision of the Knights Templar, of which the deceased was an honored member.**

This paragraph, or obituary, is taken from the Shiawassee county Atlas, published at Corunna. Mr. Thayer is said to have resided in the township of Caledonia for many years. He resided with his daughter, Mrs. Phelps, in Corunna, and is said to have been a quiet, intelligent, unobtrusive gentleman. The writer did not have the pleasure of his acquaintance, although a brother of the mystic tie.

John Dunning died February 3, 1879, aged 82 years, 6 months, 7 days. He was born in 1796 in Orange county, New York. In 1823 he moved to Seneca county, N. Y., and then, at the age of 23 years, married Miss Sarah Depew, who survives him. They came to Michigan in 1835 and settled in Washtenaw county, near Ann Arbor, Mich., and in 1847 settled in the township of Perry, Shiawassee county, in the new forests, and cleared and improved a farm, where they have since resided. Since he was 18 years of age he has been a consistent member of the Presbyterian church, and for 55 years he and his beloved and highly respected wife have journeyed through life in harmony and loving kindness, in the full faith of eternal happiness, the reward of those who faithfully serve their Heavenly Master and Lord.

Mrs. Ensa Simpson died at the home of her daughter, Mrs. George Hall, the 1st day of April, 1879, in the township of Owosso, county of Shiawassee, Mich., aged 69 years, 10 months, and 6 days. Mrs. Simpson came with her husband, Mr. Lewis Simpson, in the year 1842, and settled in the west part of the township of Owosso, then with scarcely any road or settlers in the vicinity. Since the death of her most estimable husband, which occurred several years ago, she has resided on the old homestead with her son, Edward Simpson. She was a worthy Christian woman, a member of the Baptist church, prayerful and cheerful, though of feeble health, and was universally respected.

The following obituary notice, taken from the Shiawassee American, published at the city of Corunna, requires no further comments from the writer, who was not personally acquainted with the deceased:

Mr. Enos Merrill died at his residence, a mile east of this city, on Friday, January 23, 1880, aged seventy years. The funeral took place on the following Sunday from the family residence, Rev. S. S. Chapin, Episcopal clergyman from St. Johns, officiating, and was attended by a large concourse of citizens.

Mr. Merrill was born in the State of New York in the fall of 1810, living there until 1850, when with his family he came to Michigan and located at Fentonville, where for some years he engaged in hotel business. From there he went to Grand Rapids, but after a short time removed to Perry, in this county, where he remained until some fourteen years ago. At that time he purchased the farm east of this city, and there he continued to reside until his death. We have not learned the direct cause of his illness, but for the past two years his strong constitution has seemed to be gradually giving way to age and the effects of many years of industrious labor. His wife, Mrs. Laura M. Merrill, son Fred, and daughter Agnes, wife of Mr. Edward F. Kay of Detroit, with a large circle of close and attached friends, mourn the death of this good man. Mr. Merrill was attached to the Episcopal church, the faith in which he was reared. Our community did not possess a man of nobler qualities of head and heart, or of keener sympathy in the cares and responsibilities of those about him. Strong integrity of purpose supported him in the active duties of life, and did not fail him as the shades of night gathered round and death quietly loosed the silver cord. He died as the just die, and in his departure the world has lost a true exemplar of his race. "After life's fitful fever he sleeps well."

Mrs. Sarah Dunning, widow of the late John Dunning of the township of Perry, county of Shiawassee, died the 27th day of September, 1879, aged seventy-four years and ten months. She was universally beloved by a large circle of friends and loving children. She had lived for fifty-five years with the beloved of her youthful days, and was so fitly reunited to him on whom she could always rely in the journey of life. The blessing of Him on whom both so firmly relied had ever surrounded them. Their influence left behind will never die.

Joseph Howe, youngest son of Joseph and Abigail Thompson Howe, was born in Cheshire county, New Hampshire, May 28, 1790; married Miss Tamson Austin Mead in Arlington, Vermont, September 25, 1811; emigrated to

Michigan in 1832, and settled in the township of Superior, Washtenaw county. Was supervisor of the township and a member of the committee on construction of the county buildings when they were erected. He was a most conscientious and devout member of the Universalist church of Ann Arbor. He removed to Bennington, Shiawassee county in the year 1841, and cultivated a farm. He died in the city of Owosso May 16, 1876, aged eighty-six years, composed and in full faith in his Redeemer. He was ever cheerful, and possessed of most remarkable conversational powers. He suffered for years from lameness, resulting from sciatica and injuries received while upon his farm. Strong in his convictions of right and justice, he held in high veneration the constitution of the United States, and was jealous of anything that tended to innovation of its principles, as he believed them. He was a Jeffersonian democrat, charitable and liberal.

## TUSCOLA COUNTY.

### MEMORIAL REPORT.

BY WILLIAM JOHNSON, SECRETARY OF TUSCOLA COUNTY PIONEER SOCIETY.

February 5, 1880.

The following is a brief memorial of our late esteemed townsman, Mr. James Johnson of Vassar, Tuscola county, Michigan, who departed this life at his residence in Vassar on Monday, March 10, A. D. 1879, in the 45th year of his age. Mr. James Johnson was born in the town of Pittsford, Monroe county, New York, on the first day of September, A. D. 1834. He resided at that place until the autumn of 1844, when his father's family emigrated to Armada, Macomb county, Michigan, with whom he lived till the year 1853, when he came to Vassar. After serving as a clerk in the principal dry goods store of the place for two or three years, he purchased a drug store, and soon worked up a good and profitable business and became a careful and competent druggist, which business he closely pursued until his death. In the year 1863 he married Miss Mary E. North, eldest daughter of Hon. Townsend North of Vassar, who survives him, and by whom he had four children, two sons and two daughters, all now living. He was a person of excellent moral character, and of the strictest integrity, respected by all his acquaintances, and held in the highest esteem by his neighbors and numerous friends. His death was a severe loss to his beloved wife and children, as well as to the community in which he was so well known. Mr. Johnson was a member of Tuscola county Pioneer Society.

### THE CHAMPION WOLF TRAP OF MICHIGAN.

From the Vassar Pioneer.

At the pioneer meeting in this place on Thursday, January —, 1881, Mr. L. Hart, of Tuscola, exhibited a steel-trap with this history:

The trap was made by a brother of Mr. Hart while residing in the State of

New York, some forty-five years ago, and is considered a fine piece of workmanship, strong and made of the best steel. It was given by the maker to his brother, L. Hart, when soon after he removed to Michigan, thinking it might be of service in the wilds of the West. Mr. Hart located on a farm in the township of Tuscola, where he now resides, over forty years ago. The country was then a wilderness and infested with wolves. Mr. Hart caught in his trap the first wolf caught in Tuscola county, and several afterwards about the same time. He had again set the trap for another of those pests of the early settlers in the woods not far from his house, on the spot where now stands the residence of E. W. White. It was fastened to a heavy clog of wood, but it disappeared suddenly, and nothing more was heard or known of it until about forty years afterwards, when it was discovered by a man chopping in the forest near Mt. Morris, Genesee county, some thirteen miles distant, suspended in the crotch of a tree thirty-six feet from the ground. When the tree was felled, the trap was discovered, released from its long captivity, and borne home in triumph by the sturdy axman as a lawful prize.

When found, the chain attached, and which was wound around the tree, was concealed from sight, being completely grown over and embedded in the growing wood and bark. The trap hanging on one side of the crotch, and the ring at the other end of the chain dangling on the other side, were all that was exposed to view. Speculations as to the manner in which it came there may have ample scope; but the most natural theory seems to be that some powerful animal must have carried the trap and clog up the tree to the crotch, passed around the tree and through the crotch again, thus winding the chain completely around the body of the tree, and shortening it so as to be unable to extricate itself from its perilous situation, and there hung until it died of starvation, and its flesh and bones decayed and dropped from their imprisonment, or were devoured by ravenous beasts or birds. When discovered, some months ago, no traces of its victim remained, save some little bits of hair between the jaws of the trap. The clog must have perished in like manner.

The astonished discoverer cut off a section of the tree containing the crotch and imprisoned trap, and took it home for exhibition, but its history was involved in mystery. At length it came to the knowledge of Mr. Hart, who recognized it at once as his trap, which he had set near his house forty years before; and his brother, who had also come to Michigan, knew it to be the identical trap that he made in New York State, as already stated, and gave to his brother.

What kind of an animal it was that was caught in it, and carried it off bodily, with the heavy clog attached, and to so great a distance, is mere conjecture. It must have been one of great strength, and may have been a lynx, wild cat, or some other powerful beast.

The section of the tree exhibited by Mr. Hart, and containing the trap, shows it to be beech, and the main trunk is about five inches in diameter, while the branch is some two inches across. A hole is cut in the body which reveals the chain embedded an inch or more beneath the outer bark. Mr. Hart proposes to prepare a more full account of this most singular relic of the past, to be attached to it.

# VAN BUREN COUNTY.

## HISTORICAL SKETCH OF VAN BUREN COUNTY.

BY JUDGE GEORGE W. LAWTON OF LAWTON.

Read February 6, 1880.

That portion of the State of Michigan embraced within the county of Van Buren lies south of the base line and west of the principal meridian, and the twelfth range of townships. It includes sixteen full and two fractional townships, being all those numbered one, two, three, and four south of the line and west of the twelfth range, excepting towns three and four of the seventeenth and eighteenth ranges, which constitute a portion of Berrien county.

The drainage of Van Buren county is westward to Lake Michigan, and the general slope of its surface is in that direction. There are a few marked elevations of land, one in Covert, on the shore of Lake Michigan, called "Thunder Mountain," on account of subterranean noises heard in its vicinity, and another called Prospect Hill, near Paw Paw village, and now enclosed in its cemetery. Upon this latter hill has been recently erected a wooden tower a hundred and twenty-five feet in height, through the liberality of Mr. Isaac Willard, one of the original proprietors of the soil, for the purpose of an outlook. Both of these hills afford pleasing prospects to the observer, and around each linger various traditions of Indian lovers and camp fires.

Generally the surface of the country is rolling, well watered by lakes and rivulets, and was originally covered, with little exception, by a dense growth of valuable timber among which was found in profusion black walnut, whitewood, hickory, and ash. Pine also was found more abundant on some sections than on others, scattered among forests of maple, beech, oak, and other hard woods, or in rare instances forming small groves nearly exclusive of other varieties. But so lightly, in the earlier days of the settlement of the county, was this wealth of choice timber esteemed that rail fences, log shanties, old corduroy roads are found, of which black walnut constitutes the major part, and scaffolding of old barns exist laid with choice whitewood

"That cuts like cheese."

Our pioneers were prone to take the best the land afforded.

There are many lakes, some of marked beauty, and two considerable rivers, the South Black and the Paw Paw, within its limits. The former drains the townships nearer the base line and makes its way westward, through the shore bluffs of mixed clay and gravel, into Lake Michigan, forming the excellent harbor of South Haven. The Hon. A. B. Copley, in an interesting address delivered before the citizens of Decatur, on occasion of the centennial anniversary, July 4, 1876, pictured Father Marquette resting at the mouth of South Black river, on his return journey down the eastern shore of Lake Michigan to the mission at Mackinaw, and kindling the first fire lighted by white men on the territory of Van Buren county.

This incident, so probable, must have occurred, according to Mr. Copley, in May, 1675; and the original pioneer of Michigan, Pere Marquette, may have chosen the grove of native oak, yet wisely preserved on the northern bluff of the harbor, for his camp; and from beneath its green canopy, after a long day's journey, skirting the lake in his birch bark canoe, from the mouth of the St. Joe, and past Thunder Mountain, whose reverberations he may have heard, looked out upon the blue horizon and the western sun glinting behind it. It is said he was then in frail health, and while he saw all the western shore of Michigan bursting its winter's tomb and springing into joyful and useful life, his own gifted spirit was wrestling with its earthly enthrallments to break away into the new and broader life of Eternity. He died a few days after, it is supposed, near Ludington, but the location of the grave is disputed:

"Let the lifeless body rest,
He is gone who was its guest;
Gone as travelers haste to leave
An inn, nor tarry until eve."

The South Black, a non-navigable river, is the outlet of Bear Lake, near the northern center of the county, and affords some water power in a slow descent to its mouth, but it has served very effectively as a water highway, to float the great wealth of timber stripped from the section which it drains, to South Haven, where it was cut up and shipped to distant markets. This depletion has gone on very rapidly since 1853, and has been materially aided by the improvement of the harbor. In 1864 the legislature authorized the townships adjoining the river to vote aid in the form of bonds, to be used in constructing piers and breakwater, and in dredging at its mouth. This work was undertaken by the enterprising people in that vicinity, and much was done; but subsequently the general government included the mouth of South Black river among its provisions for internal improvement, and permanent piers, breakwater, light-house, collectors, and other federal works and offices give national importance and attendant prosperity to that busy port. Pere Marquette looking down from his camp in the oak grove, upon the meeting of the black waters of the river with the blue waters of the lake, would miss now, with sadness, doubtless, the peaceful wilderness of two hundred years ago.

The Paw Paw river is composed of several branches, two of which unite in the vicinity of Paw Paw village, and form the main stream. It drains a large section of country and affords many mill-sites, and generally abundance of water. It empties into the St. Joe through marshy banks about a mile east of the bluffs, on the shore of Lake Michigan. It is not navigable above Benton Harbor, nor below were it not for the untiring energy of the citizens of that locality. Probably French traders or voyagers who followed Pere Marquette, and made the mouth of the St. Joe a rendezvous, explored the Paw Paw, ascending to the old Indian landing, or forks, as it was called, and built their camp fires on Prospect Hill—a natural outlook—caught sturgeon and other fish which in their season used to swarm the river, affording abundance of food, easily obtained, to these forest invaders.

For a considerable period in the early settlement of the State, the Paw Paw was regarded as a navigable river, and supplies were brought in and shipped out upon it. The "landing" on the Paw Paw was looked upon as a favorable point for "commerce," and a log house was built there to receive goods and produce in transit. At that time large canoes were used, or flat bottomed batteaux; and the authorities of the territory, in order to open up the advantages of the river to as great a section of country as possible, authorized in the spring of 1833 a series of roads, one connecting Schoolcraft and Big Prairie Ronde with "the landing," and also the mouth of the South Black river;

another connecting it with Adamsville and Little Prairie Ronde; and another to connect Gun Prairie and Barry county with the "forks of the Paw Paw," and some other roads, so that the first settlers about the "landing" declined to "farm it," for the reason that they could buy grain from the Prairie cheaper than they could raise it. In 1840 the "Big Mills" at Paw Paw were making flour, and Mr. Willard constructed two large flat-boats to send the flour down the Paw Paw. One of them, named the "Daniel Buckley," was commanded by Captain A. R. Wilder; the other, "The Wave," by Captain William H. Hurlbut, who subsequently served with honor to himself and his constituents in the State legislature. The Daniel Buckley was once loaded with 300 barrels of flour,—an unprofitable effort at navigation, as Mr. Willard now states it. These boats were loaded near the bridge over the river on Main street of Paw Paw. Subsequently other parties, among the Rev. Joseph Reynolds, purchased two river boats at St. Joe for use on the Paw Paw, a venture that brought grief to the pockets of these enterprising gentlemen, and the boats afterwards with their keels in the air, gave significant warning to all over sanguine river men to let the Paw Paw flow unvexed by their paddles and poles to the marshes of the St. Joe.

All these efforts at a navigation of the Paw Paw, were made long before the advent of the Central railroad, or even of good highways; but such was the rage for internal improvement, and so great was the amount of land at the disposal of the legislative power of the State, that no scheme could be named that land might not be appropriated to. In 1848 the Legislature appropriated ten thousand acres of land for the improvement of the Paw Paw, with a view to make it navigable, at least for flat-boats, and Mr. John R. Baker, late of Paw Paw village, took the job—of securing the land to himself and his associates—but not by the concurrent voices of the captains, pilots, boatmen, and all the country besides, of improving the navigation of the Paw Paw river. The tradition is that

**"John, the subtle navigator**
**Of the crooked Paw Paw river,"**

as the "local poet" of that day expressed it, took a canoe, three men, a few axes, paint pot, and certain refreshments, and proceeded to fill the expectation of making the Paw Paw navigable. With the axes they cut into pieces the trees they found fallen into the stream, and let them float away; with the paint they made signs, *"shallow water here,"* and stuck them upon the sand bars; and with the refreshments they kept themselves in heart until they got to the St. Joe, where they shouldered their implements and took the "trail home."

But tradition may not do Mr. Baker justice. The difficulty was with the river, and want of care on the part of the legislature in making appropriations. The river is very crooked, with plenty of "slack water" and "broad spreads" over shifting bottoms, and with the advance of settlements and clearing of lands the supply of water became irregular, which changed the bottom in flood time and left it shallow at other times. All who attempted to use the river for the purposes of commerce lost money, whether by private enterprise or by State donations; and when appropriations are loosely made for such purposes, the shrewd and active representatives of our race are quite certain to turn it to their own advantage and end their days ranked among the "solid" men of the town.

The Dowagiac river makes an outlet for some of the lakes in Decatur and

Hamilton townships, but the stream flows almost entirely within Cass and Berrien counties, and suggests little or nothing connected with the history of Van Buren county. There has not been discovered in this county, as yet, any mineral except bog ore, not even ledges or rock in place. Boulders, some of great size, are found in many places in the county, notably on the base line. Indurated quicksand exists in places, but of little value. There are also beds of peat and marl to a considerable extent, the former affording good fuel, the latter excellent lime. Clay, suitable for brick, is found in every township.

The political organization of the county may be traced briefly as follows: The ordinance of 1787 for the government of the Northwest territory provides that the territory should be divided into towns and counties by the governor or the Territorial legislature. In 1805 the territory of Michigan was organized, with the seat of government at Detroit. Wayne county was first laid out, and then in 1817 Monroe county, with Monroe village as the county seat. The boundaries of that county extended westward to the "present Indian boundary running to the western line of the first range" of townships, which was not far from the land now included within the limits of the city of Jackson. In 1822, by proclamation, Gov. Cass laid out Lenawee county and attached it to Monroe county, and also "all the country within the territory to which the Indian title was extinguished by the treaty of Chicago," which embraced the territory of Van Buren county. This section, then, was for a time a part of Monroe county, but immigration pouring in along what was then known as the "Chicago road," in November, 1826, Lenawee county was organized, reserving all suits pending in Monroe county to be completed there. All southwestern Michigan was attached to it, making the broad territory of a dozen or more counties a part of Lenawee, among them Cass, Berrien, Kalamazoo, and Van Buren, which were organized into a township called St. Joseph, with the first town meeting to be held at "Timothy Smith's." The place of town meeting may not have been then as indefinite as the direction on the letter, "To my darlint mither in America," for it is said to the credit of the postoffice officials that the "old lady" got the letter by presenting herself at the office delivery and inquiring, "Have ye a letter from me son?" which suggested that she might be the mother meant; still, it may well be doubted whether any one from Kalamazoo or Van Buren counties attended that town meeting.

Still, the tide of emigration flowing in, new counties had to be laid out (with proper reservations of suits pending in Lenawee county.) Another omnibus bill erected a large number, among which were Cass, Berrien and Van Buren. Cass county was organized and Berrien attached to it, as Niles township, and Van Buren was attached to it, or, rather included in a township consisting partly of territory in Cass as well as all of Van Buren and the region north of it, by the name of Penn. Kalamazoo and Barry had the honor of being attached to St. Joseph county as the township of Brady. In March, 1833, the township of Volinia, Cass county, was organized, and Van Buren county was attached to it for township purposes, the first election being held at the house of Josephus Gard; and in March, 1835, Van Buren county was organized into one township —Lafayette—with the first township meeting to be held at "Paw Paw Mills," and finally, March 11, 1837, the county was organized with seven townships and no foreign territory allotted to it. The townships were Antwerp, Decatur, Lafayette, (now Paw Paw), Lawrence, South Haven, Covington and Clinch. Of these names Covington and Clinch have disappeared by new townships being carved out of them, and Lafayette was dropped for Paw Paw. The county now consists, as before stated, of eighteen townships all told. On March 18, 1837, the Legislature organized Van Buren county, reserving all suits pending in Cass county to be prosecuted to judgment there, and directed the circuit court to be held at such place as the board of supervisors shall designate, until after November, 1838, then at the seat of justice, the terms of the court to commence the first Monday in June and December. It was also ordered that the several townships shall, on the first Monday of April, 1837, or in case of failure to do so, then on the first Monday of May following, elect their township officers. The townships complied with the act of organization and the first board of supervisors of the county met May 27, 1837, in the school-house,—the first public building erected in the county,—in Paw Paw, and designated that place for holding the circuit court. On June 6, 1837, the first term of court was opened in the county, by Epaphroditus Ransom, judge; J. R. Monroe, Wolcott H. Keeler, associate justices. The only business done was to swear and organize a grand jury, which soon returning that no business was before them were discharged, and the court adjourned.

In December following, the court again convened, and one judgment was rendered in some small matter, which being about all the court was called upon to do, the judge resumed his journey over his widely extended circuit. There seems to have been a scarcity of lawyers and of business in these early days, and the judge had to bring his bar with him. With "the court" used to come Hon. C. E. Stewart, and D. D. Webster, and later came Miller, DeYoe, Balch, and Moore from Kalamazoo, and Muzzy, Fitzgerald, and sometimes Judge Bacon from Niles. After the Central railroad opened to New Buffalo, and before the opening of the Paw Paw railroad, an extra coach would take these gentlemen from Lawton to Paw Paw, and during the slow drive through the deep sand many a joke, cracked without regard to the dignity of any one aboard, relieved the tedium of the otherwise weary passage. The Hon. Benjamin F. Graves did very much as circuit judge to reduce the judicial business of the county to order, and give it character and dispatch. He opened his first term September 1, 1857, and finding no grand or petit jury in attendance, nor a prosecuting attorney, appointed William N. Pardee to fill the latter position for the term and disposed of the other matters in such a way that afterward juries were in attendance, and the business of the court effectually prosecuted.

In 1838, a board of county commissioners elected by a general vote, took the place of the board of supervisors, and continued to do so until 1842, when the supervisors of the county constituted a board in their place. Jay R. Monroe, Charles M. Morrill and B. F. Chadwick were the county poormasters, but they had very little to do, although nearly every one was poor. Judge Monroe generally took care of such indigent persons as needed public assistance, and it is related of him, that one day, as he was at work in a ditch, wearing the poorest clothing he possessed, he was accosted by a strapping fellow with a small bundle, and asked, "where might be the poormaster's house?" The judge pointed it out, it being in sight. "Are you stopping there," asked the fellow. "Yes," said the judge. "Does he make ye work?" continued the stranger. "Yes," replied the judge. "What does he give ye for working," persisted the indigent. "Give me," said the judge, looking up, "just what he has himself—pork and beans, potatoes and johnny-cake, and his old clothes," added the judge, indicating those he had on him. "Well," said the fellow, picking up his bundle, "I'll be gol darned if I'll stop with the old hedge-hog," and marched off, saving the county some expense on his account, and giving the judge a good thing to laugh over.

The settlements in western Michigan followed the great roads laid out by the territory or general government. The latter constructed for military purposes what was known as the "Chicago" road, which gave ready access to the southern tier of counties of the State. Subsequently the territorial road running from Detroit by a route nearly parallel to that followed by the Michigan Central railroad, opened Van Buren and other counties to settlements. The first settlers, however, came in by the way of Cass county, and made their homes upon the southermost tier of the sections of the county.

The first of these settlers was Dolphin Morris. He came from Ohio and was attracted by the beauty of Little Prairie Ronde and built his house on a northern section of the prairie, and just within Van Buren county, being section thirty-five of Decatur township. Prairie Ronde being a French name or designation the spot must have been known before the advent of Morris; indeed, probably long before Michigan became a territory of the United States, and while it was the unrestricted range of French trappers and hunters. Morris built his house in March, 1829, and H. D. Swift was his assistant and companion. For nearly two years Mr. Morris was the only settler within the limits of Van Buren county, although he had neighbors on the prairie who were within Cass county—Prairie Ronde being partly in each county. "Morris' house," says Mr. Copeley in the address before alluded to, "not only sheltered the first white family resident in this now prosperous county, but under its roof the first school was taught by Wm. Alexander, a Virginian, in the winter of '34 and '35. Here was born the first white child, Lewis Creighton Morris, August 4, 1830, who died December 30, of the same year; and here, too, was born Elias Morris, the oldest living white person born in the county; and here it was that Daniel Alexander and Margaret (Peggy as she was familiarly known) Tittle spent their honeymoon. A building that served to shelter the first family was the first hotel, church, school-house, and bridal chamber, where the first birth and death occurred, where the first domestic altar was set up, deserves more than a passing notice, and its site should be marked as a reminder of our early history." But Elijah Goble and Eliza Tittle were the first couple marrying in the county. This took place September 28, 1833, the ceremony being performd by John Shaw.

The trials of the early settlers afford many very interesting incidents. There was the failure of seed corn, and messengers sent the long journey to Ohio to obtain a further supply; there were late spring frosts cutting down the corn flat with the ground; there were excessive cold and snow in winter; floods and heat in the summer, a want of the simplest medicines, of mills to grind grain for food, of salt to preserve their meat; while there was abundance of malarial diseases to break down their strength, of pestiferous wild animals to destroy their flocks, and rumors of Indian horrors and Indian wars, to keep them fearful in day time and awake at night. One who truly weighs the courage and fortitude with which these men, women and children met the dangers and hardships of their pioneer life will hardly after attribute to the soldier a monopoly of those qualities. The difference in awarding praise seems to be that the latter receives his promptly, on the arrival of the courier announcing a great battle fought, lost or won; while the former sends off no courier and leaves to tradition the memory of all he endures and wins. Yet the dangers of the pioneer has its humorous side, which none appreciate more than he. The following as illustrating their often dangers, and a pleasant issue out of them, is worth preserving:

Young Covey, who afterwards served in the federal army and died a soldier, while a lad possessed a great tooth for tamarack gum, and would often steal away in search of it. Once he found a large tamarack nearly uprooted and leaning almost prone against other trees, having upon it the coveted exudation in abundance. Dropping on his hands and knees he commenced nipping off the crystallized gum, while working his way slowly towards the top of the tree. He was dressed after the fashion of those times, with a shirt, pants and coon skin cap—the tail of the coon forming the apex of the cone-shaped cap, which bobbed with the motion of the boy's head as he crept, all attention to his gum, up the trunk of the tree. When he had reached the main limbs, a loud vicious snarl, accompanied by a rush of a sharp-clawed animal over his head and back, down the tree, struck terror into his heart, and losing his balance he rolled, more dead than alive, down upon the mossy ground below. The concussion did not harm him but brought him to his senses, and springing to his feet he fled with his utmost speed to his home. The animal was a wildcat that had seated itself in the tamarack, and astonished at the singular object creeping up the trunk towards her had maintained silence until fully alarmed for her own safety, she broke with a series of terrifying snarls and cries down over the body of the boy, clawing him with vicious energy in her flight, and got away into the depths of the forest. No wonder the boy was frightened and rolled from the tree.

The efforts of the pioneers to educate their children are worthy of the highest praise. Their means were limited, and yet they would share them with the pedagogue; their homes were small, yet to eke out the expense of the school they would have the teacher in and share their bed and table with him, —or even surrender up the much needed room, as in Morris' case, to school purposes. The following incident illustrating the narrowness of their quarters, and the shifts they resorted to for the sake of the school, and having a ludicrous side that has kept it in memory, is in point: The teacher was from York State, and the patron he boarded with possessed one of the smallest houses in the district,—or rather of those who were employing him. There was but one room in it, and no loft; the bed was in the corner and a children's, or trundle bed under it; when night came either the men would go out doors until the wife retired, or she would absent herself until the teacher turned his face to the wall. He slept with the good man of the house and she with the children. Things moved along comfortably enough, and one morning the teacher having overslept, found on waking, the whole household up and about their duties, with the sun streaming a flood of warmth and light full into the room. The wife was sweeping the floor, and had pushed the bench on which his clothing lay to the other side of the room. Beneath the bench the house cat, with her back erect, was nervously watching the great wolf dog, who lay with his nose between his paws, ready to spring at her. The good lady observing the teacher was awake, withdrew from the room, and our young friend was directly out of bed and dressing himself. He paid no attention to the cat and dog, but setting one of his legs into his pants he was proceeding with the other, when whisk! the cat flew out from beneath the bench, and the great dog darted under it after her, throwing it strongly against our friend, and him at full length flat upon the floor. The concussion shook the building and brought the woman in alarm back into the house; with one glance she took in the accident and darted out. Our friend disentangled and completed his dressing with nervous speed, which, when done, things resumed their wonted way, the wife merely asking, in a quiet sympathetic tone as she resumed her broom, "Did you feel the jar?" The report of the *contretemps* spread through the neighborhood and beyond it, and our young friend bore manfully the sly allusions, and even the coarser ones made by the rougher members of the society, but it is said he never after dressed near a bench without noticing whether a cat at war with a big dog was beneath it.

Schools went hand in hand with the pioneers, and their support was at an early day regulated by law. The old territorial law enacts, "That every township of fifty or more householders shall be provided with a good school-master of good morals, to teach children to read and write, and to instruct them in English or French language, as well as in arithmetic, orthography and decient behavior." It also provides that school inspectors should be elected who should examine the teachers and give them certificates of qualification to teach as well as to visit the schools and supervise their management. A well preserved anecdote of the times will not be amiss here. In Pine Grove township, William Adair, being considered a scholar, was chosen one of the school inspectors, and was the only one of the board that qualified, and he had very crude ideas of the duties he was to perform. One morning, shortly after his election, while Billy was at work in his saw-mill, it was announced that a young lady was at the house, who wanted to see him. 'Eh," said Billy, "for what?" To be examined for a certificate to teach school, was the reply. Billy looked aghast, and doggedly turned to his work. "Tell her to kim agin," said he. No, was the reply, you are sworn in and must examine her now. Billy hesitated, but finally stripped off his wampus, washed and shaved himself, combed his bushy, neglected hair, and getting into his best clothes and new moccasins, presented himself before the applicant. "You are Mr. Adair, the school inspector," began the young lady. "Indade, mum," said Billy, reaching up and pulling at the "cow lick" that graced the top of his head. "I have come to be examined for a certificate to teach school," continued the lady. "Certificate," echoed Billy. "Yes, sir," returned the lady. "Nade it be a paper—a writ'n," groaned Billy. "I think it should be," said she. "Ken ye rite," asked Billy. "Yes sir," she replied. "I must certify ye ken," inquired he. The lady nodded assent. "Will, then," said Billy, "jest ye write it out—the surtificate—and let me see you do it." The applicant wrote what she deemed to be a certificate. "Rade it if ye will," said Billy, authoritatively. She complied. "Now," said Billy, "let me see ye write William Adair on it, if ye plase." The lady hesitated, but finally did as he directed. "Now," said Billy, as if relieved of a great burden, "will ye take that as yer surtificate and go yer way?" "No," said the lady, "that will not do—you must sign it, or it will do me no good—they will dispute it." "They will," said Billy, swelling with natural resolution, "let me see the mon and I'll tache him better manners." But the young lady persisted, and Billy finally set to work to write his name; commencing well at the left hand to have abundant room, he spelled W. ADAIR, in letters that nearly obliterated the finer calligraphy of his petitioner. But he would have much preferred she had asked him to "tackle" the largest whitewood in that section, or thrash a school-house full of doubters of the regularity of his certificate. It was the only one Billy ever gave; it served well its purpose; he directly after resigned his office. The development of schools in the county has been rapid, and always towards the highest proficiency. There are now seven union or graded school districts, and the single districts have generally excellent houses built and maintained with a high degree of culture and taste.

The Indians which inhabited the county before the advent of white men, belonged to the Miamis, who were expelled by the Pottawottomies. The latter came from the north, being impelled by the Menominees, a courageous and powerful tribe. The Ottawas also seem to have had a foothold here as late as 1845, when they moved west of the Mississippi. Families of both tribes, Pottawottomies and Ottawas, even now linger in the county, claiming an "inalienable right" to possess the fisheries, the huckleberry and cranberry swamps, and a monopoly of the basket business. He who meets these "native Americans," fresh from reading Campbell's "Gertrude of Wyoming," has descended a high hill with wild and startling prospects to a dirty swamp, from which he draws back, refusing to enter. There are some traces of a race older than the Indian tribes known to white men found within the county, but they are of little value as compared with those found in other sections.

In 1836 a stage line was in operation between Kalamazoo and St. Joseph. As this line followed the territorial road by the way of Lawrence, it passed through the center of the county, and distributed the mail and passengers with considerable regularity to the different settlements, and until the construction of the Michigan Central westward from Kalamazoo, this line was the main reliance for outward communication. From Kalamazoo westward several routes were surveyed for the Central railroad. One nearly on the south line of the county was opposed by the settlers for reasons that appeared then of great importance, one of which was that oats would then be a drug in market, as railroads would do away with horses. This seems a singular argument to be advanced by men who, in those times, were often compelled to draw their wheat to St. Joseph with teams, occupying several days on the trip, and take their pay out of the store and bring all they got out of the store for it back in a hat, unless they took a barrel of salt.

These men lived to see themselves made wealthy through their proximity to a railroad, and to learn that an intelligent use of mechanical powers neither impoverishes men nor renders them unhappy; but rather enriches them, and enlarges their field of enjoyment. The road was, in 1847-8 laid on the line that has given rise to the villages of Mattawan, Lawton, and Decatur, in this county. Other railroad projects costing citizens of the county interested in their construction considerable time and money, might be enumerated, as the project to extend the Grand Trunk to Paw Paw and St. Joseph, but a notice of those actually constructed will suffice for this sketch. The next road built in the county is the Paw Paw, connecting the village with the Central at Lawton. This company was organized in 1857, and secured and graded a road bed substantially the whole distance from Paw Paw to a point on the Central about midway between Lawton and Mattawan. A junction at that point was refused by the managers of the Central, and the work went to waste. So much of the labor expended upon this abortive undertaking being paid for by "store orders," it was nick-named the "Calico Branch." But in 1866-7 the company was reorganized, and Paw Paw township having in the meantime voted to bond itself in aid of the road, it was constructed and put in operation during the summer of 1867. It was while the grading of this road was being done that the marshal of the village of Lawton levied war against the laborers employed upon it, and entered upon a vigorous campaign. These laborers were mostly Irish, and they took great delight in visiting the village saloon after nightfall. Their conduct there occasioned that official great anxiety, and made him watchful and nervous long after his accustomed bedtime. It was useless for him to put in an appearance to remonstrate and order the fellows off and the shop closed, for with his approach

**"The mirth and fun grew fast and furious."**

If he attempted by arrest or other measures, to enforce his orders, these fellows, however, they were minded among themselves, united to discomfit him, and by means of their numbers and resolution were uniformly successful. It happened at this juncture that a peripatetic vendor of condemned United States muskets, complete in equipments, appeared in the village, with a goodly supply of these weapons. Our marshal laid his plans brilliant, comprehensive and easy of execution. He would capture, in broad day, the whole riotous gang and place them in "durance vile" and sleep again from sun to sun, undisturbed by their vagaries. He arranged with this vendor of "small arms" for a loan of the requisite number of "stand" and then summoned "the highest and the lowest" of those capable of field duty within the village and after no little effort, succeeded in getting into line some of the younger members of the community, emulous of the exploits of their fathers in the war then recently closed. With "fixed bayonets," himself at their head, a start was made for the camp of the malcontents, located about half a mile beyond the village limits. It was a straggling, halting column at the best. The Irishmen, espying the approach of the enemy, reconnoitered, and discovering the posse to be novices in the art of war, and judging from the flash of bayonets that no cartridges had been issued, prepared themselves with sods and stones and gave the marshal and his force such a "rattling welcome" that the column was instantaneously and utterly demoralized.

It broke and beat a precipitous retreat to the village,—all except the marshal who, with heroic spirit, leveling his bayonet for a charge shouted to his men, "come on, run 'em down, the bloody—" when a sod hitting him in his open mouth brought his cheering cries to a sudden end, and throwing him off his guard, he was disarmed and captured. Not one of his men had followed him, but reaching the village they spread marvelous tales of the assault and repulse, the prowess of the marshal, and his valiant death. This sent some of the less warlike citizens to the scene of the conflict. The found the humiliated marshal sound in wind and limb, but himself instead of the foe in "durance vile." In the evening the mischievous Irishmen brought him over to the saloon where he was released without conditions. The last act in the affair was a "bill" presented by the peripatetic vendor of musketry to the railroad contractors for damages done to the guns.

In 1877 the gauge of this road was reduced to three feet in order to run it in connection with a division of the Toledo & South Haven road, that season built between Paw Paw and Lawrence. Together the two roads make a line of nearly thirteen miles in length,—being the first narrow gauge road built in Michigan, depending wholly upon local business for support. The success of the enterprise occasioned more than local interest.

In 1870-1, the Kalamazoo & South Haven railroad was laid through the northern portion of the county. Most of the townships on the line voted aid to its construction, but only Pine Grove in this county has been compelled to pay, the decision of the supreme court invalidating such bonds not having been announced until after the delivery of bonds of that town to the parties advancing the money for the road. Several new towns sprang up on the line of this road, Kendall, Gobleville, and others of lesser note. Also in 1870-1, the Chicago & Michigan Lake Shore railroad was built through the western towns, much to the advantage of the villages of Hartford and Bangor on its route, and giving rise to the village of Grand Junction.

At Bangor a blast furnace, the second in the county, for the manufacture of pig iron, was located, followed at a later day by a company that entered upon the manufacture of wood alcohol and acetate of lime from the smoke of the charcoal kilns belonging to the furnace. There are two furnaces in the county for manufacturing pig iron from Lake Superior ore by the use of charcoal, which the heavy timber lands of the county afford. The first built is located at Lawton, and commenced operations in 1867. This company is composed mostly of army officers, and Maj. Gen'l Q. A. Gillmore is president, and among the stockholders is ex-President Grant. The other is the Bangor furnace before alluded to. Two plank road companies were formed in the county, one operating the road between Lawton and Paw Paw, and the other between Paw Paw and Lawrence. Both companies went out of existence, or ceased to operate their roads prior to 1860. The former company fell under the management of Mr. Willard, and the other stockholders procured a repeal of its charter; thereupon Mr. Willard, perhaps to secure unpaid dividends due upon his stock, took out planks in *spots* along the road and built them into a fence of his own. The other stockholders were indignant, and the public not less so; but Mr. Willard, with a pertinacity peculiar to himself, carried the day, and the road was finally abandoned, such of the stockholders as were able to do so, paying themselves in "plank," Mr. Willard securing to himself the toll houses.

Van Buren county was named in honor of the distinguished member of Jackson's administration, who afterwards became the eighth president of the Union. The townships and villages in the county generally bear the names of familiar towns or of historical personages. The few exceptions consist of Paw Paw, the Indian name of a fruit that grew abundantly in the vicinity of the river; Pine Grove, named from that variety of timber found in places in the township; Breedsville, a village named from Silas Breed, Esq., the first settler in Columbia township and among the first in the county. He was an influential and energetic citizen, to whom the county is much indebted for its advancement; Keeler, named after Wolcott H. Keeler, one of the first associate justices of the county. He with Jay R. Monroe sat with Judge Ransom, to open the first term of the circuit court in the Paw Paw school-house; Lawton, named after Nathan Lawton, Esq., at this writing of Auburn, N. Y. This village sprang into existence at the crossing of the Little Prairie Ronde and Paw Paw road, laid out under the territorial laws, with the Michigan Central railroad, and was originally called Paw Paw Station, or South Paw Paw. But with the establishment of a postoffice there and the appointment of Col. Andrew Longstreet postmaster, another name was sought. The gallant Colonel being a warm friend of the proprietor of the soil, named the growing village, with the concurrence of the postoffice department, Lawton. Mr.

Lawton was not a pioneer of Michigan—never having resided in the State—but he sprang from a very hardy race of pioneers. They came from England in 1630, and being Quakers, sought refuge with Roger Williams in Rhode Island, and took an active part in the formation of that colony. The records of the Rhode Island plantations from the earliest date have fortunately been preserved, and they inform us by what independent steps our forefathers settled themselves into organized communities. The following extracts from those early documents which the name of Mr. Lawton connects with this sketch may be found interesting. The first paper in the formation of Newport is the following, and it assuredly shows the independent spirit of the signers:

*April 30, 1639.*

> "We whose names are under written doe acknowledge ourselves the legall subjects of his Majestie King Charles and in his name doe hereby binde ourselves into a civil body politick unto his laws according to matters of justice."

This document was signed by twenty-six persons, among which are Thomas and George Lawton. The next entry of the same date is: "According to the intent of the foregoing instrument wee whose names are above particularly recorded do agree joyantly or by the major voice to govern ourselves by the ruler or judge amongst us in all transactions for the space and term of one year—— he behaving himself according to the term of the same. We have freely made choice of—to be ruler or judge among us." What the pioneers of Michigan would have done without the ordinance of 1787, the territorial governor, council and laws is left to conjecture. Probably as they were composed, excluding the French families, to no small extent of descendants of those who first landed on the Atlantic coast, they would have followed the example and traditions of their fathers, and Michigan would, in due course, have taken its place among the sister States of the union, with institutions differing in no fundamental principle from them. Mr. Lawton was born in Fairfield, Herkimer county, New York, to which place his father and grandfather, leaving Rhode Island in 1788, emigrated.

The village of Kendall is named after one of the proprietors of the soil, a gentlemen well known in political and editorial circles; Gobleville takes its name also from the proprietor of the soil. The name is found early among the settlers of the county. Indeed the first wedding recorded to have taken place within its limits was solemnized between Elijah Goble and Eliza Tittle. Antwerp received its name from Deacon Van Antwerp, the oldest settler. The deacon came from the Genesee valley, New York, and his father was a body servant of Sir Wm. Johnson, of whom the deacon could relate many anecdotes.

There are many reminiscences worthy of record touching men prominent in the affairs of the county from an early day down to their deaths, that are worthy of collection and preservation, but there seems to be no room for them in this sketch. Among these names not already appearing here are Philotus Hayden, A. W. Broughton, J. H. Simmons, and, indeed, a long list of them. And there are many matters touching the townships that ought to be collected and preserved before they pass beyond recovery. Those capable of the good work ought not to neglect it.

There yet remains of general interest to mention here, and that is all that can be done, the part the citizens of the county took in the several wars in which the nation has been engaged since the settlement of the county. The Indians within the county gave very little trouble, and at no time was there a call made to take the field against them. What part the early settlers took in the Indian wars outside the county, there is left neither record nor tradition to disclose. But on war being declared against Mexico the county was in no way laggard in its patriotism or duty. Col. Andrew Longstreet, then a commander of a regiment of State troops, promptly offered his services, which were accepted by the governor, and a regiment of volunteers was ordered to be recruited. This was done to a considerable extent from this county, but Longstreet failed for some reason, now unknown, to be commissioned its colonel.

Very few of those who went from Van Buren county into the Mexican war are now alive. On the breaking out of the rebellion this county fully shared in the hot patriotism of the country. Over a thousand of its strong young men enlisted, and they took no inconsiderable part in the fortunes of the field in every department and arm of the service. Its representatives were in at the opening of the war, and even at the immediate disrobing of the chief of the rebels in his female disguise in the pine woods of Georgia. It is a painful and yet an ennobling fact, that bones of soldiers dying for the union may be found in every one of the southern States—descendant of the pioneers of Van Buren county—like father, like son.

Here this sketch must close, but in laying down the pen with which it has been written, only what is written is ended. The record opened by the pioneers, who to break up the wilderness of Van Buren county slept with bark roofs above their heads, cooked their food on coals or heated stones, toiled with the sun, and with the moon at night, until a solemn tone from a church tower brought together a throng of mourners to bury them one after another, where they had toiled, is continuous; and hereafter some descendant of theirs under whose eye this may fall shall say, lo, it is old and time has passed since it was written, and much there is that should not be forgotten, and retaking the pen write continuing with what may not now be recorded.

## WASHTENAW COUNTY.

### MEMORIAL REPORT.

BY E. D. LAY, VICE PRESIDENT FOR WASHTENAW COUNTY.

Deaths of pioneer settlers of Washtenaw 1877-1880:

Abiel Hawkins died in Ypsilanti, February 8, 1878, aged eighty-one years. He came to Detroit in the summer of 1818, remained there a few months and returned to western New York, and remained there until 1834, when he again returned to Michigan, and settled in Ypsilanti in 1835, and for the most part of the time until his death was the proprietor of the Ypsilanti house, afterwards called the Hawkins house.

Mrs. Mary A. Slingerland, an early resident of Ann Arbor, died January, 1878, aged seventy-three years.

Chester F. Parsons, a resident of Ann Arbor for twenty-five years, died December 26, 1877, aged sixty-five years, one month and thirteen days. Mr. Parsons removed to Ann Arbor from Moravia, New York.

Aaron B. Vannata died December 27, 1877, in Northfield, Washtenaw county, aged seventy-three years. He came to that town forty-five years ago, and selected the farm that he resided on at the time of his death.

Mrs. Nancy Conlin died in the township of Webster, Washtenaw county, January 10, 1878, aged seventy years. She removed to Webster from Ireland, forty-five years ago.

David Coon died September 12, 1877, at Buck's station, Fairfax county, Virginia, aged seventy-two years. He was born in Livingston county, New York, and was a resident of Ypsilanti for over forty years. He was the leading cabinet dealer and undertaker in the city for a number of years.

Mrs. Sabrina Wescott died in Ypsilanti, December 13, 1877, aged seventy-six years. She was born in Rome, Oneida county, New York, and came to Plymouth, Wayne county, in 1836, and has resided in Ypsilanti for the last seventeen years.

Peter Davidson died in Pittsfield, Washtenaw county, February 9, 1878, aged seventy-eight years. He came to Michigan in 1837, and settled in Calhoun county, and remained there until 1862, when he removed to Pittsfield, where he spent the remainder of his life.

Joseph Wycoff died in Superior, Washtenaw county in 1878, aged eighty-five years. He settled in Superior over fifty years ago.

Mrs. Solon Cook died in Ann Arbor in 1878, where she had resided since 1831.

Deacon Alvah Pratt died in Ann Arbor, November, 1878, aged seventy-eight years. He came from Paulet, Vermont, in 1832, and settled in Pittsfield, Washtenaw county, where he resided until three years ago he removed to Ann Arbor where he died.

Calvin T. Fillmore, brother of the late President Fillmore, died January 14, 1879, at his home in Scio, Washtenaw county, of which township he had been a resident for the past forty-two years. Mr. Fillmore was born July 9, 1810, in the town of Sempronius, Cayuga county, N. Y., and was therefore in his sixty-ninth year.

Wm. E. Anderson of Pittsfield, Washtenaw county, for forty-six years a resident, died in 1879, aged sixty-one years.

James Wicks died in Ann Arbor the 11th day of February, 1878, in the seventy-ninth year of his age. He was born at Rouse Point, New York, and emigrated to Ann Arbor in the spring of 1829, and resided upon the same place where he died, with the exception of one year.

Charles Tripp died in Ann Arbor, January 16, 1878, aged sixty-five years. He was born in Epson, New Hampshire, and settled in Ann Arbor in 1843, when he formed a partnership with Volney Chapin in the foundry business, and continued in that business until the time of his death. He has held the offices of supervisor, alderman, member of the school board, chairman of the republican county committee, and State senator in 1854. At the time of his death he was president of the Ann Arbor gas company, trustee of the Congregational church, and director of the national bank of Ann Arbor.

Lewis Barr died in September, 1878 in the town of Pittsfield Washtenaw county, aged eighty-seven years. He had resided in Pittsfield fifty-two years.

Charles H. Crane, a member of the State Pioneer Society, died in Ypsilanti, Washtenaw county, October 25, 1878, aged fiftv-nine years and eleven months. He was born in Penn Yan, Yates county, New York, November 26, 1818, and had been a resident of Ypsilanti over forty years.

Watson Gillett, a member of the State Pioneer Society, died December 11, 1878, in Ypsilanti, Washtenaw county, aged seventy years. He was born in Seneca, New York, May 24, 1808, and settled in Saline, in October, 1829.

Dr. Bennett F. Root died in Manchester, Washtenaw county, January 16, 1879, aged seventy-five years. He had been a resident of Manchester for over forty years.

Mrs. Sophia J. Sears, widow of the late Dr. Thomas Sears, died on the 16th of January, 1879, at the residence of her son, Thomas S. Sears, in the township of Lima, Washtenaw county, aged eighty-seven years. She was born in Goshen, Massachusetts, November 18, 1791.

Sylvester D. Noble died in Ann Arbor, January 28, 1879, aged seventy-four years, ten months and four days. He had been a resident of Ann Arbor nearly forty-five years.

Hon. Andrew Robison died in the township of Sharon, Washtenaw county, January 27, 1879, aged seventy-six years. He had been a resident of that town over twenty-five years, had served as supervisor of that town several terms and was a member of the Legislature in 1859.

Wm. A. Jones, (a member of this society), died about the 21st of March, 1879, in the township of Dexter, Washtenaw county. Mr. Jones was born in New Lisbon, Otsego county, N. Y., October 2, 1811, and removed with his parents from Monroe county, New York, in the spring of 1833 to Michigan, and during the summer following settled upon the farm on which he died, in Dexter township, Washtenaw county. At the age of twenty-five years he married Elizabeth Skidmore and soon after succeeded to the title of the farm where the labors incident to pioneer life, together with that of raising a family, were such as to occupy the time of himself and wife until the death of the latter, which occurred in 1858. About the years 1843 or '44 he was elected supervisor of the township—an office which he held for thirteen years, and nine years in succession. He was once elected State senator, and was seldom free from the duties of some township office until failing health obliged him to resign. Mr. Jones had a great love for reading, together with a remarkably retentive memory, which enabled him to acquire a fund of general information possessed by few. Only a few hours before his death he sat in his chair and read his favorite paper, the Free Press,—a paper he had taken every year since its first publication in 1834. He could also give from memory the names of the opposing candidates for president of the United States, and those for governors of Michigan and State of New York from the foundation of the government to the time of his death; also the several platforms of the political parties for the same time. His health gradually declined for several years, although for the most part of the time he was comfortable until during the last two years of his life, when he suffered at times intensely. The disease that terminated in his death was consumption.

Lemuel Clark died January 22, 1880, in Pittsfield, Washtenaw county, on the farm he settled on in 1836. Mr. Clark was one of those persons of a quiet retiring disposition, seldom from home unless business called him away, attending always to his own affairs, beloved and respected by his neighbors and all who knew him. His age was about seventy-seven years.

Lyman Graves died in the township of Ypsilanti, January 30, 1880, aged eighty-five years and seven months. Mr. Graves was a native of Massachusetts, from which State he emigrated with his family to Michigan in the spring of 1825, and purchased of the government 160 acres of land in the township of Ypsilanti, where he spent the remainder of his life. Having lived upon the same farm for over fifty-four years, together with his companion who survives him, they endured the hardships of a pioneer life in improving the land and raising a family of children who are all well settled in life. He died as he lived, respected by all who knew him.

Hiram Arnold died at his residence in Scio, Washtenaw county, on the 21st of January, 1880. He was born in Ontario county, New York, in 1799, and came to Washtenaw county in 1825, where he purchased government lands in Scio. Two years later he removed his family to that township, and has ever since been engaged in farming and business. Some thirty years ago he built planing mills at Dundee, and for many years he was a director of the First National bank in Ann Arbor, which position he held until a short time since, when sickness prevented him from attending to the duties of the place. Mr. Arnold was well known through the county. He has always been a prosperous and successful business man, and had a large circle of friends. He left two children, Eugene B. Arnold and Mrs. Byron Green, to whom his large estate will pass. It is said that he left, in manuscript form, his early remembrances of his pioneer life in Michigan, and that they will be presented to the pioneer society of Washtenaw county.

Mrs. Aurilla S. Goodell died in the township of Superior, Washtenaw county, on the 25th of January, 1880, in the seventy-eighth year of her age. Mrs. Goodell was born in Sangersfield, New York, August 14, 1802, being the eldest of a family of twelve children, all of whom, save one, a brother, have crossed the river before her. In 1825 her father moved to Ypsilanti, and a year later she was a party in a double wedding, one of the first marriages ever held at Woodruff's Grove, now Ypsilanti. With her husband, Gotham Goodell, who died some nine years since, she went upon a farm where was spent the remainder of her life. Nothing of the land was cleared up save a place large enough for a house, and together the industrious pair made the wilderness a garden. To them were born nine children, of whom seven are now living; one in Missouri, the remainder living in the vicinity where she died.

Hon. A. M. Clark (a member of this society) died in Saline, Washtenaw county, December 21,1879, aged sixty-nine years. He leaves a wife and four children,—two sons and two daughters,—to mourn his loss. Mr. Clark was born in New Jersey, November 1, 1810, and removed to the State of New York in his boyhood and resided there until April, 1837, when he removed on to a farm in Saline, Washtenaw county, and by his industry accumulated a large property. He was a man respected by all who knew him, and at various times held offices of trust both in the town and church to which he belonged. He was a member of the legislature in 1875, where he gained the esteem and respect of all his fellow members.

Memorial of Albert Mitchell Clark, by his son:

Father was born November 1, 1810, in Jersey City, State of New Jersey, and moved to the town of Tyre, Seneca county, New York, at the age of six years. His opportunities for obtaining an education were very limited. He was obliged to labor to help support the family during the summer, and to support himself while at school winters by doing chores wherever he could find such opportunities. The poor health of his father and the large family of ten to provide for made it necessary for him to render what assistance he could for their support. Thus the avails of his labor went to his father until he was eighteen years of age, when he was "bound out," or apprenticed to learn the trade of carpenter and joiner. Twenty-five dollars a year were given to my father out of his earnings, with which to clothe himself. At the end of the three years' apprenticeship he had good clothing, quite a sum of money earned over and above his allowance of twenty-five dollars. This he earned by working over time, making chests, cupboards, etc., evenings and odd hours. These found ready sale, because in those days there were no trunks and few pantries, and because whatever father did was *well* done.

His father being at this time over sixty years of age, and poor in health and in this world's goods, my father felt it to be his duty to provide a home for his parents in their declining years, in which they could spend the remainder of their days in comfort and peace, and this he did with his first earnings.

He then turned his attention to obtaining a competency for himself, and with that in view came west. On his first trip he located lands near Lake Michigan, and worked at his trade in what are now the city of Grand Rapids and the village of Kalamazoo. He then returned to Seneca county, New York, his home, married Martha Stevenson (whom he leaves to mourn his loss) on the 9th of November, 1836, and immediately returned to Michigan, purchased 120 acres of the farm( added to by subsequent purchases) which he has owned and where he has made his home up to the time of building the residence which he occupied at the time of his death.

He made a profession of religion in his early youth, and united with the Presbyterian church in the village of Saline on the 4th of June, 1840. On the same day his wife united on the profession of her faith in Christ. He always had in view one distinct and well-defined object, that of honestly, steadily and with a consistency of purpose seldom equaled, to live in the fear of his God, and to obtain an honorable competency for himself and family. Whatever property he had acquired was entirely the result of his own labor and industry. He never sought to increase his wealth by speculation. The following, though by no means an isolated case, will illustrate the energy which characterized his whole life:

On his arrival in Saline in the spring of 1837, he had no cellar under his house. He took a job to build a house for a neighbor. At this he would labor during daylight, and dug the cellar under his own house nights. He cleared much of his land by moonlight and the light of fires kindled by burning brush and log heaps. It was not an uncommon thing for him to travel six or eight miles on foot to do a day's work at his trade.

By precept and example has he ever striven to teach his children to be industrious, true and honest, and faithful to every trust. He has bequeathed to them an inheritance better than that of silver and gold—that of a good name and an unblemished character.

Mr. Clark was elected to the State Legislature in the fall of 1874; performed the duties of his office with credit to himself and with satisfaction to his constituents. He has also honorably filled other offices of trust and responsibility. He was naturally conservative, cautious, prudent and energetic. A friend of peace and unity; he always sought to promote the public welfare. The poor and needy found in him an ardent friend, and never went from his door unaided. The sick and sorrowing found him ever ready to minister to their necessities and sympathize in their sorrows. He was an advocate and supporter of all public enterprises. The cause of education and of evangelical religion lay very near his heart.

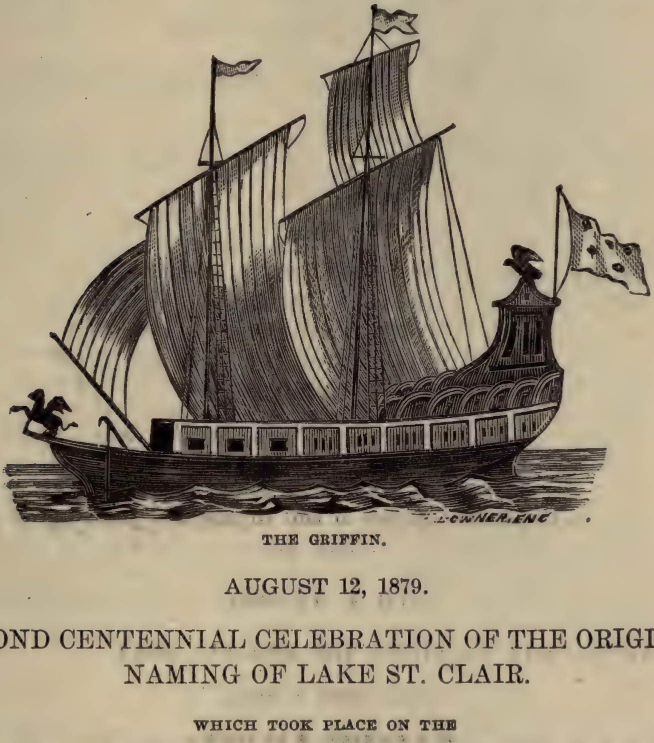
Toward the close of his life his suffering was at times intense; but no murmuring word ever fell from his lips. He waited patiently the Master's summons. At nine o'clock on Sabbath morning he passed into the heavens. Of him it may truthfully be said, "Blessed are the dead that die in the Lord from henceforth, yea, saith the Spirit, that they may cease from their labors and their works do follow them."

## WAYNE COUNTY.

### THE NAMING OF LAKE ST. CLAIR.—ITS SECOND CENTENNIAL CELEBRATION AT GROSSE POINTE, MICHIGAN, AUGUST 12TH, 1879.

The second centennial anniversary celebration of the naming of Lake St. Clair took place at Grosse Pointe, Michigan, on August 12, 1879. The first page of the printed circular programme of the centennial exercises contained a cut of the Griffin and the following announcement:

**France, 1679.** **United States, 1879.**



THE GRIFFIN.

AUGUST 12, 1879.

SECOND CENTENNIAL CELEBRATION OF THE ORIGINAL NAMING OF LAKE ST. CLAIR.

WHICH TOOK PLACE ON THE

Twelfth day of August, 1679, on board of the Schooner "Griffin," of Grosse Pointe, by Robert Cavelier Sieur de la Salle.

---

REGATTA WITH ACQUATIC SPORTS.

Yachts will start from the pier at Grosse Pointe promptly at 2 P. M.. to be followed by other "Ancient Mariners" in their "Bumboats."

THE EXERCISES ON SHORE WILL BEGIN AT 4 P. M., AT THE
GROVE KINDLY GRANTED BY ALFRED BRUSH, ESQ.

The list of exercises was as follows:

**Music.**

**Prayer.**

**Address, by Bela Hubbard, Esq.**

**Song, "Men of Ye Olden Time," written for the occasion by D. Bethune Duffield, Esq., to be sung by the "Sisters, Cousins and Aunts."**

**Poetical Sketches, Historical and Descriptive, Hon. J. V. Campbell.**

**Music by the Band.**

**Brief and Extempore Addresses from Volunteers.**

**Music and Fireworks.**

**Chorus by the Grosse Pointers.**

The following report of the doings is taken from the Detroit Post and Tribune:

August 12, 1879, was the two-hundreth anniversary of the discovery of Lake St. Clair by Robert Cavelier, le Sieur de la Salle, commander of the Griffin, the first sailing vessel that ascended the Detroit river. The second centennial of any notable event is a rare thing in this new country, and as so much of historic interest centers round the discovery of this lake, associated with the discovery of the place where Detroit itself now stands, the residents of Grosse Pointe resolved to celebrate the occasion. Accordingly a suitable programme was arranged, and that it was successful and appropriate, as well as creditable to its promoters, may be seen by the following report of the proceedings. The two fast-sailing and elegant private steam yachts, the Lillie and the Truant, the most commodious and well furnished yachts on all the lakes, were brought into requisition to carry a large number of Detroiters to the Point. The Scotia brought a delegation from Grosse Isle, and a large number came in carriages. To those who made the trip in the yachts, the difference between the surroundings of the voyage 200 years ago and those of yesterday could not but force itself upon the mind, and was the subject of universal remark. But the primeval forest, the stillness of the waters, unruffled by the agents of commerce which now so thickly cover the river, can be better imagined than described.

The trip to the Point was rapidly and pleasantly made.

### WHO WERE THERE.

Among the large number of residents of Detroit and vicinity who were present were the following: Judge James V. Campbell, Mrs. Campbell and Miss Campbell, Dr. Morse Stewart, Mrs. and Miss Stewart, A. H. Dey and Mrs. Dey, Alfred Russell, Mrs. Russell and Miss Russell, J. C. D. Williams, Colonel Sprague, Mr. and Mrs. Phillip J. D. Van Dyke, Judge Douglass, Dr. Isaac S. Smith and Mrs. Smith, Mr. and Mrs. D. Bethune Duffield, George Duffield, Bethune Duffield, Thomas Lewis, George Peck, Cleveland Hunt, B. Wight and Mrs. Wight, W. K. Muir, Mrs. Muir and the Misses Muir, Professor Alvah Bradish, Hon. J. D. Weir, Mrs. Weir, L. P. Campau, L. C. Watson and Mrs. Watson, Dr. Russell, Paulo Guoin, W. B. Moran and family, Joseph H. Berry,

R. H. Connor, Mr. and Mrs. W. G. Thompson, Mr. Alfred E. Brush and Mrs. Brush, Mr. James McMillan and family, Hugh McMillan, John S. Newberry and family, Charles B. Lothrop, Mr. and Mrs. G. V. N. Lothrop, George H. Lothrop, Henry B. Lothrop, George Hendrie, Miss St. Aubin, Miss Moross, Miss Beaubien, Colonel Sylvester Larned and Mrs. Larned, Dr. Anderson and Mrs. Anderson, W. S. Biddle and the Misses Biddle.

### THE YACHT REGATTA.

The first part of the exercises of the day was the third annual regatta of the Grosse Point yacht club. The life of so large a number of young people during nearly half the year of the breezy shores of one of the most beautiful of the northwestern lakes has developed among the younger portion of the summer residents of the Point a great fondness for boating. The entries on this occasion were numerous, and the result was looked forward to with great interest.

The judges were James McMillan, Hugh McMillan and W. K. Muir. The prizes were, in the first class, a purse of $25 in gold; second, a purse of $10 in gold; in the second class, first prize, a silver pitcher; second, a silver cruet stand. These were all presented by Detroit gentlemen. There were two classes of entries, the difference between the first and second class being based on size only.

There were five entries in the first class, viz: The Allie, George Lothrop; Wayward, William McMillan; Shiela, William McGraw; Volante, A. R. Newberry; Adelaide, Captain Allen. The entries in the second class, were the Annie, Charles Lothrop; Grace, Jimmie McMillan; Rowena, Alfred Brush; Gipsie, Truman Newberry.

The course was, for the first-class boats, two miles to windward and return, three times round, or twelve miles. For second-class boats one mile to windward and return, four times round, or eight miles. The wind was fresh and a heavy sea was running. The race was advertised for 2 o'clock, but owing to some unavoidable delay the last gun was not fired till 2:39. Of the first-class boats the Adelaide, sloop-rigged, was the first to cross the line, at 2:40, closely followed by the Wayward, a "cat-rigged" yacht. These two boats were the only ones of this class really in the race. The Shiela got a bad start, owing to an unfortunate capsize in the morning, which hindered preparations. She crossed the line at 2:51. The Allie was anchored far to the leeward, and at the firing of the last gun was not ready. She was disqualified, not starting till 2:58¼.

In the second class all four boats started, the Gipsie being first, at 2:41½, the Grace second, at 2:42, the Rowena third, at 2:42¾, and the Annie fourth, at 2:44½. The contest, the first time around the stake, in this class, was between the Gipsie and the Rowena.

The Gipsie was sloop-rigged, and the Rowena fore-and-aft, a style of rigging having some advantages for quick turning. The Gipsie rounded the outer stake first, and coming down the two boats were within an oar's length of each other most of the way. The Rowena sailed "wing and wing," and on the first turn round the starting stake had the inside, rounding the boat very closely, followed by the Gipsie. On the second trip out the Rowena showed her powers for sailing close to the wind, and rounded the outer stake and completed her second turn far in the lead, the Gipsie second, Annie third, Grace fourth.

By this time the large boats were well on their first home trip, the Wayward completing her first round in 51½ minutes. The Adelaide followed with an immense spread of extra canvas 1:03 from her start. The Shiela, which was so far behind as to be out of the race, nearly filled and lowered her sails at the outer stake. The Allie came in third in 1:16¾. These relative positions of the boats were not changed for some time. The Annie lost her rudder and withdrew from the race on the second turn. This boat was also unfortunate in shipping heavy seas, sixteen pails of water being bailed out at one time. Her mainsail halyards also broke, and clearly the fates were badly against her. The Rowena, during the entire race, took advantage of every chance, and her sailors, Wetmore Hunt and Robert Gray, showed that they thoroughly understood her. She started on her last round first, the Gipsie closely following. The Wayward now led the Adelaide by at least half a mile. As the boats started on their last round the wind, which had died down, again freshened, and the race was thus made more interesting. The Rowena, which had twice unshipped her rudder, seemed to lose her grip on the last tack to windward, as her rudder again unshipped and the Gipsie went by like a rocket, gaining twenty lengths in five minutes. The Rowena continued almost stationary in the water, and it was evident that unless something was done the race was lost to her. But at last she righted again. The Gipsie went too far to starboard, and lost much of the time gained by the accident to her opponent, the superior skill of whose crew enabled them to tack close to the stake boat. The Gipsie rounded the stake boat a length or two in advance, and "wing-and-wing" down they came on the home stretch. The crowds on the Lillie and the Truant, which followed them, cheered lustily. On came the Gipsie, ahead by three lengths, under the influence of an unusually strong puff of wind gained every minute. But the time lost by the Rowena on the start was yet to be counted in. Not twenty rods from the finish the Rowena shipped a heavy sea, but on she came, and the boats rounded and crossed the line at 5:12¼, abreast.

The following is the official record of the time made:

FIRST CLASS—TWELVE MILES.

| Name. | Time of start. | Time of finish. | Time of race. |
|---|---|---|---|
| Allie | 2:58¼ | 6:02 | 3.03¾ |
| Wayward | 2:41 | 5:17¾ | 2.36¾ |
| Shiela | 2:51 | drawn | ..... |
| Adelaide | 2:40 | 5:40 | 3.00 |

Wayward first, Adelaide second, Shiela withdrawn, Allie disqualified.

SECOND CLASS—EIGHT MILES.

| Name. | Time of start. | Time of finish. | Time of race. |
|---|---|---|---|
| Annie | 2:44¼ | disa. | ..... |
| Gipsie | 2:41½ | 5:12¼ | 2.30¾ |
| Rowena | 2:42¾ | 5:12¼ | 2.29½ |
| Grace | 2:42 | 5:24 | 2.42 |

Rowena first, Gipsie second, Grace third.

An allowance of forty-eight seconds was made in favor of the Rowena on account of differences in measurement, and three minutes fifty-two seconds was allowed the Wayward.

The prizes were accordingly distributed: in the first class, first prize, the $25 gold purse, to Wm. McMillan, of the Wayward; second prize, $10 gold purse, to Mr. Brush, of the Adelaide; in the second class, first prize, silver pitcher, to Wetmore Hunt, of the Rowena; second, silver cruet stand, to Truman Newberry, of the Gipsie. Master Newberry was also made happy by receiving a special prize which had been guaranteed him by his father in case his boat won either first or second prize.

### THE CELEBRATION ITSELF.

At the conclusion of the race the assemblage transferred itself from the boats and dock to the pleasant grounds of Mr. Alfred E. Brush. These rise gradually from the road that circles the beach. There music of an excellent character and appropriate to the occasion was discoursed by Spiel's orchestra. When the people had seated themselves on the broad balcony, the graceful and easy rustic seats, or the soft glass, Mr. G. V. N. Lothrop addressed himself to them as follows:

LADIES AND GENTLEMEN: The people of Grosse Point, dwelling on the shores of Lake St. Clair, greet you with a welcome to-day as free and as hospitable as the breezes that sweep over us, or the beautiful waters that spread out before us and by which we stand. It is my office only to give you the preface words of that welcome. Our young tars, who, I have no doubt, are the direct descendants of the crew of the Griffin, have done so much to-day that those words must be brief. But before we go further, and listen to those wise and instructive lips who will tell us of the events that have made these shores historical, it becomes us on this occasion as on all others, to invoke the divine blessing. Father DeBroux will offer prayer.

Father DeBroux then said in French, that as La Salle, the discoverer of the waters before them was a religious man and accustomed to address the Throne of Grace, it was eminently fitting that they, the residents and occupiers of these shores, should follow his illustrious example. He then offered the prayer of the Roman Catholic church for Ste. Claire's day.

Mr. Lothrop then introduced Bela Hubbard, Esq., who gave

### THE HISTORICAL ADDRESS,

as follows:

It is good for us to look back into the past. The custom of celebrating the anniversaries of events that have had important influence upon a nation's history, or the welfare of mankind, is justly honored in the observance. That which we are met to commemorate has remained unhonored for 200 years. Yet two centuries ago today occurred an event which has mightily influenced the destinies of our race and proved an epoch in the history of this continent! It was the launching at Niagara and the arrival at this Point of a little vessel —not so large as many of our pleasure yachts—but the precursor of a long line of craft, of every size and character, which, passing through these waters, has swollen into a commerce that has become the wonder of the world.

I have undertaken to relate the story of this achievement and of the naming of Lake Ste. Claire, in the default of those whose superior local knowledge and research would have entertained us with "Outlines" of far greater interest and value. I propose to engraft upon the story of the Griffin some memories of the extraordinary man with whom the conception originated.

Of all whose names are associated with enterprise and discovery in New France, the Sieur de la Salle is the most illustrious. The history of his various undertakings is drawn mainly from the writings of Hennepin, Joliet, and Membré, and the details have been collected into a fascinating volume by

Parkman. I trust that a brief recital will not be uninteresting. He was of an honorable family, a burger of Rouen, where he was born in 1643, and named Robert Cavelier, better known as the Sieur de la Salle, from the name of his estate near Rouen. He was educated among the Jesuits, but, preferring science to theology, and being of a daring spirit and eager for adventure, he sailed for Canada—that paradise of adventure—being then twenty-three years of ago.

According to an unpublished memoir, we first find him, in 1669, making his way with a Seneca guide to the Ohio, which he descended as far as the rapids at Louisville. Here, abandoned by his men, he retraced his steps alone. The following year, according to the same authority, embarking in a canoe on Lake Erie, he reached the straits of Detroit, coasted Lakes Huron and Michigan, and descended the Mississippi to the 35th degree of latitude. Assured that the Father of Rivers discharged not into the gulf of California, as had until then been supposed, but into that of Mexico, he returned to provide means for more extended exploration. Unfortunately, La Salle's journals, and a map which he is known to have made, and which existed in 1756, are lost. If the accounts be correct, these would have given to the world the first knowledge of the Ohio, if not of the Mississippi.

It is certainly known that the latter stream was explored in 1673 by Father Jacques Marquette, accompanied by Louis Joliet, an adventurous merchant, and the subsequent associate of La Salle. These did not, however, go far enough to solve the problem of its terminus.

That these straits were visited by the white man at a much earlier period is matter of history. The usual route of the French from the lower settlements to their missions and trading posts on the upper lakes was by the Ottawa, being the most direct route. Champlain himself had in 1611 and 1612 ascended that river as far as Lake Huron. There he visited the country of the Sacs, near Saginaw bay, returning by way of the straits and Lake Erie, as is shown by his book published at Paris in 1632. Accompanying La Salle's first expedition (1669) were two priests of the order of Sulpitians—Dollier and Galinee—who, on arriving at Niagara, were diverted from their purpose, and resolved to carry their spiritual succor to the Pottowottomies of the upper lakes. After various misadventures, resulting in the loss of a great part of their baggage, including the altar service—a mishap that they attributed to the malice of the devil—they reached the Detroit in the spring of 1670. Here they relate: "At the end of six leagues we found a very remarkable place, in great veneration among all the savages of these regions, because of an idol of stone which nature has formed there, to which they say they owe the good fortune of their navigation on Lake Erie, and which they propitiate with presents of skins, provisions, etc.' The stone was hideously painted, and bore a rude resemblance to humanity. They were convinced that this was the devil, to whom they owed their ship-wreck. The relation proceeds: "I leave you to think whether we avenged on this idol (which the Iroquois had greatly recommended us to honor) the loss of our chapel. We also attributed to it the scarcity of provisions we had been in up to this time. In fine, there was not a person whose hatred it had not incurred." The priest tells that he consecrated one of his axes to break this stone god; then "having lashed two canoes together, we carried the fragments to the middle of the river, so that no one should hear of it again." "God," he says, "immediately rewarded us for this good action, for we killed the same day a buck and a bear."

This place being, as the narrative tells us, "full of the lodges of those who had come to render their homage to this stone," it seems incredible that such a deed could be done in the very presence of its savage worshipers, if it were indeed a manitou. Whether the savages were restrained by the audacity of the act, or the huge proportions of one of the reverend friars, or whether they attached less importance to the "idol" than these zealous iconoclasts supposed, does not appear. Sacred stones were not uncommon in these parts. I have seen several such altars, sometimes in the most wild and lonely situations, invariably covered with bits of tobacco and other petty gifts, which cost little sacrifice. Several years had passed since these adventures, but La Salle had lost neither energy nor purpose. Means only were lacking. But he had rich relatives, and he was aided, so far as authority could go, by the most energetic and astute governor that had yet administered the affairs of Canada. Together they planned a post on Lake Ontario, far beyond the settlements of the St. Lawrence, which might overawe the Iroquois and turn to France the stream of wealth that was inuring to the Dutch and English from the fur trade. Twice La Salle visited France, where his influence at court obtained for him permission to pursue his plans at his own expense for five years. He received from the king a patent of nobility and a grant in seigniory of Fort Frontenac, as the new post was called.

But the ardent nature of the man was not content with the prospect of fortune now secured. To him it was only a base for operations of vaster extent and bolder enterprise. The object which he had in view was most comprehensive. If the project of a passage to China across the continent proved delusive he would anticipate the Spaniards and the English in their occupation of the great west. He would colonize it with Frenchmen, develop its resources, make friends of the Indian tribes, and, by controlling the mouth of the Mississippi, secure an outlet for a vast trade in the future. As necessary to his scheme he proposed to build a vessel for the navigation of the lakes, above the Niagara, where only canoes had been seen before, sufficiently large to carry the material needed for so vast an enterprise. In the corps organized for this expedition were two noted men afterwards famous in Canadian annals. Henry De Tonty, his lieutenant, was a young Italian officer who had lost a hand in the Sicillian wars, and whom political troubles had driven to the new world. For the lost member he had substituted one of iron, which gained him the sobriquet of the "iron hand." It was symbolic of his indomitable character. The other adventurous spirit was the bold, audacious, and hardy friar, Pere Louis Hennepin, who had more taste for wild and romantic travel than for the spiritual part of his mission. He became the historian of the expedition, but is too little trustworthy and is inclined to magnify his own exploits at the expense of others of greater merit.

The place where was built the first vessel that sailed the upper lakes is the mouth of a small stream, the Cayuga, about six miles above the cataract, on the west side of Niagara river. Hennepin says, "most of the Iroquois were gone to wage war on the other side of Lake Erie," so, though exposed to occasional alarms, the party were in little danger. Two Mohegan hunters prepared lodges and supplied game. The vessel was finished early in the spring of 1679. She was, according to Hennepin's first account, of about forty-five tons burden. He afterwards reports it as sixty tons, which is much more probable, considering the number of men and munitions she carried. Accompanying Hennepin's volume is an engraving representing her in an unfinished state. The drawing made by Judge Campbell and printed on the programme of to-day's exercises, gives a clear idea of its character. It was a two-masted schooner, but of a fashion peculiar to that day, having double decks, and a high poop projected over the stern, where was the main cabin, and over this rose another and smaller cabin, doubtless for the use of the commander. The stern was thus carried up, broad and straight, to considerable height. Bulwarks protected the quarter deck. She bore on her prow a huge figure, skillfully carved in imitation of an heraldic monster—the arms of Count Frontenac—"and above it an eagle." This, in the representation, adorns the top of the stern. La S. bore no good will to the Jesuites, who hated him, and he often boasted that he would make the Griffin fly above the ravens, meaning that he would triumph over the black-coats. The ship "carried five small cannon, three of which were brass, and three harque-busses, and the rest of the ship had the same ornaments as men-of-war used to have." "It might have been called," adds the historiographer, "a moving fortress." In fine, it "was well equipped with sails, masts, and all other things necessary for navigation," besides arms, provisions, and merchandise.

The previous autumn La Salle had sent fifteen men up the lakes to trade for furs, and open his way to the Illinois. He also despatched Tonty to the mouth of the strait to intercept these should they be returning. There with much difficulty the vessel was urged up the two and one-half leagues that remained between the building site and the lake. On the 7th of August the thirty-four voyageurs embarked, spread their canvas to a favoring breeze, and having sung Te Deum, set forth on their voyage. The ship proved a good sailer. On the 11th they entered "a strait thirty leagues long and one broad," called in the language of the French, the Detroit, where they were joined by Tonty, and the next day reached the beautiful expanse which spreads before us.

Tradition says that on reaching the lake they were wind-bound for several days, and this is rendered probable by the fact that they did not reach Lake Huron until the 23d. Here, too, let us stop, and inquire whence was derived the name which the lake bears. On Champlain's map (1632) no name appears. Sanson's map, published officially 1656, calls it "the lake of salt waters;"* Huron being designated at that period as "le mer douce," or the fresh water sea. Galinee, the hero of the stone idol, who passed here nine years before, says "we saw no mark of salt in this lake." The notion probably originated from the brackish springs which exist at the mouth of the Clinton river. Hennepin tells us that "the Iroquois who pass over it frequently, when upon their warlike designs, call it Otsi-Keta."† It bore, also, according to Judge Campbell, the Indian names of Kandekie and Ganatchio. Many suppose that the lake was called after Patrick Sinclair, who was lieutenant governor at Mackinaw in 1783. But this is altogether too modern.

It was a custom of French voyageurs in new regions to bestow upon any prominent feature of the landscape the name of the saint to whom the day of the discovery was dedicated in the church calendar. There was a saint who bore the present modernized name and who was one of the headless saints, a martyr to his virtue, but his calendar day is November. The saint whose name was really bestowed, and whose day is August 12, is the female "Sainte Claire," the foundress of the order of Franciscan nuns of the thirteenth century, known as "Poor Claires." Clara d'Assisi was the beautiful daughter of a nobleman of great wealth, who early dedicated herself to a religious life and went to St. Francis to ask for advice. On Palm Sunday she went to church with her family dressed in rich attire, where St. Francis cut off her long hair with his own hands and threw over her the coarse penitential robes of the order. She entered the convent of San Damiano in spite of the opposition of her family and friends. It is related of her that on one occasion when the Saracens came to ravage the convent she arose from her bed, where she had been long confined, and placing the pyx, which contained the host, upon the threshold, she kneeled down and began to sing, whereupon the infidels threw down their arms and fled. Sancta Clara is a favorite saint all over Europe, and her fame in the new world ought not to be spoiled—like the record of the dead in a battle gazette—by a misspelt name!

---

*On Sanson's map it is marked "Lac des Eaux de Mer."

†Hennepin writes: "In the middle this strait is enlarged by a lake much smaller than the others, which is of circular form six leagues in diameter, according to the reckoning of our pilot, Lucas. We gave the name of Sainte Claire to this lake."

The interest of the subject will, I know, with my present auditors, pardon the introduction of a few further researches into the history of the Lady Claire. She was one of the most celebrated foundresses of orders in the Roman church. Besides the Clarisses instituted in 1212, she is said to have founded the Capucines, the Annonciades, the Cordolieres or Gray Sisters, the Nuns of the Ava Marie and of the Conception, and the Recollettes. At a time when all the communities were extorting from the popes the authorization to possess property, she solicited from Innocent IV, in favor of her order of Franciscans the privilege of perpetual poverty! F. Way, in his work on Rome, published in 1875, says: "Sancta Clara has her tomb at the Minerva, and she dwelt between the Pantheon and the Thermæ of Agrippa. The tenement she occupied at the time of her decease still exists, but is not well known. In a little triangular place on or near Via Tor, Argentine, lodged the first convent of the Clarisses. If, crossing the gateway, you turn to the left of the court, you will face two windows of a slightly raised ground floor. It was there Innocent IV visited her, and there on the 12th of August, 1253, listening to the reading of the Passion, in the midst of her weeping nuns, died the first abbess of the Clarisses and the founder of 4,000 religious houses."*

We are not told with what imposing ceremonies the christening was performed, but surely some inspiration was derived from the beautiful scenes of nature through which the voyageurs had just passed, which then surrounded them, and which to our eyes this day are no less lovely and inspiring. The natural beauties of the region lying between Lakes Erie and Huron had been recorded by all the early travelers, with words of admiration. Many of the islands were low, and some of the river margins scarcely above the water. But all was green and peaceful. Dark forests extended to the river edge, and many a tall monarch of the wood waved its gigantic arms over the brink, and was reflected in a glassy surface which no tide or flood ever disturbed. The marshes were luxuriant with wild rice, that furnished a sumptuous repast to a great variety of birds and water fowl, and even a welcome supply to the

---

*I copy from the Detroit Post of November, 1880, the following item, not vouching for its authority. The date given of the decease of the blessed Clara certainly conflicts with the statement of Mr. Way:

THE BODY OF THE BLESSED CLARA.—A Catholic paper has the following: "In the monastery of St. Clare at Montefalco is preserved the body of the blessed Clara, who died in 1308. The body has all this time been preserved incorrupt and also flexible, even to the cartilages of the ears. At the request of the archbishop of Spoleto, the holy see ordered the authentic verification of this fact; and for this purpose sent the promoter of the faith and the judge of sacred rights, who were assisted by two physicians, by some skillful lawyers, the archbishop of Spoleto, and others. Then in presence of all the religious of the monastery, the truth of the fact was investigated. All were forced to acknowledge that the wonder which had existed for more than five centuries still continued, and could not be ascribed to natural causes. The process was instituted upon the spot, and the affirmation of all present taken; and thus it is hoped that the decree now sought from the sovereign pontiff may be hastened."

Indians. Occasional villages and bark wigwams enlivened the shore, surrounded with gardens and corn fields, and the most elevated points were crowned with burial mounds. Most of the shores had high banks and were covered with timber. Especial notice is bestowed upon Grosse Isle, and forest-crowned Isle au Cochon—Belle Isle—lay like an emerald gem, in its setting of bright waters.

The chroniclers all allude to the abundance of wild game and fruits. There were "apples as large as the Pommes d' Api," or Lady Apples, and nuts "like moderate sized oranges." L' Hontas says "the pears are good but rare." The apples were probably crabs, though one writer speaks of the trees as set methodically; but who can tell us what were the pears? Can it be that the famous French pear trees, whose origin no man living knows, existed here as natives at that day? The beauties of the passage filled our voyageurs with rapturous delight. Hennepin records the loveliness of the shores, the prairies, and the forests. The Griffin was covered with game and fruits which had been gathered in great abundance and with little effort. The fruit consisted of chestnuts, walnuts, and butternuts, apples, pears, plums, and grapes; the game of deer and many smaller animals, and flocks of swans, ducks, and turkeys, and they had feasted on the meat of a bear they had killed. The Father adds, "They who shall have the happiness some day to inhabit this pleasant and fertile country will remember their obligation to those who first showed them the way."

The chronicles are silent as to Indian settlements on the straits, which is not singular, considering that they seldom recorded such things unless there was special occasion. The white occupation followed closely upon this period. A fort was established, as we know, near where Port Huron now is, in 1687; and it would appear from a memoir of the Sieur de Tonty, then on his way down from the Illinois, that something of the kind existed in the same year between Lakes Erie and St. Claire. He says, "We came on the 19th of May to Fort Detroit. We made some canoes of elm, and I sent one of them to Fort St. Joseph on the high ground above Detroit, thirty leagues from where we were, to give the Sieur du Lud (also commanded there) information of my arrival."

I shall follow very cursorily in the path of La Salle and his party. The Griffin, which hitherto had been favored with prosperous winds, encountering off Saginaw bay a furious storm, which sorely tried the skill and courage of the voyageurs. Nor did it calm until they had called after St. Anthony of Padua —the patron of mariners—to whom, says Membré, "they made a vow, which delivered them by a kind of miracle." Hennepin narrates that during the height of the gale "everybody fell on his knees to say his prayers and prepare for death, except our pilot, whom we could never oblige to pray, and he did nothing all the while but curse and swear against M. de La Salle, who had brought him thither to perish in a nasty lake and lose the glory he had acquired by his long and happy navigation of the ocean." At length, escaped the tempest, they reached Point St. Ignace, the center of the Jesuit missions and the Indian trade.

A very slight sketch must here suffice as of the further fortunes of La Salle, and the fate of the Griffin will command our interest. Brave, adventurous and successful as were the early explorers of New France, there was but small recognition of their services, either by the government at home or in the new world. A deep jealousy of La Salle's designs pervaded the fur traders as well as the Jesuits, and made them hostile to his enterprise, since it threatened injury to their private gains. Had Jesuit and Recollet, merchant and officer, constituted a band of brothers, all would have gone well for France in the new world. Unhappily it was far otherwise. The clashings of interests could never be reconciled, and it often happened that the meetings of white men in the far wilderness were those of enemies in disguise. Of the fifteen men sent out by LaSalle the year before, a few who remained faithful had collected at Green Bay a store of furs, which he resolved to send back with the vessel to satisfy his creditors, while he, with his stores, his Mohegan, and his three friars, should continue up Lake Michigan. After completing her errand the Griffin was to return to St. Joseph, where a fort should be built, and preparations made for the descent of the Mississippi.

But the Griffin was never heard from again. Whether she foundered or was burned by the Ottawas is not known. La Salle believed she was treacherously sunk by the pilot to whom he had entrusted her. Whatever was her fate the salt-water hero of the storm on Lake Huron was doomed to perish in "the nasty fresh water" which he so detested.

The loss was vital. Yet the brave hearted cavalier, undeterred by a misfortune so great, pushed on to St. Joseph and to Illinois. Leaving Tonty and Hennepin to occupy the fort, and in the midst of a savage winter, he made his way back on foot to his far distant Fort Frontenac. The path led through wilds unknown, across the Michigan peninsula. He crossed the Detroit on a raft, and almost alone, for his men were worn out, reached his seigniory, Thence he hurried to Montreal, giving no rest to his ardent spirits and iron nerve. Here the intelligence met him of the desertion of his men and the destruction of his fort on the Illinois. Tonty and Hennepin must be rescued. With their aid and with fresh supplies he might yet save the vessel which was on the stocks, and make good the descent of the Mississippi. He returned to Ottawa and reached his destination, only to find a solitude. The dreaded Iroquois had driven off or murdered his friendly Illinois, the plain was strewn with mangled corpses, and no tidings could be learned of Tonty.

We are told of new schemes which now occupied his fertile brain, among which was that of a grand confederacy of the tribes against the common foe. We are told of the recovery of his two companions in the spring, with whom he paddled back to Fort Frontenac; of his commutation with his creditors, by the loss of half his seigniory, and of his third journey to Illinois to recover the lost ground. Abandoning the building of a vessel, and dragging their canoes on sledges, they embarked, and on the 6th of February, amid floating ice, issued forth on the majestic Mississippi. With his small party, and amid new and strange scenes they reached the outlet of the great river, and on the 9th of April, 1682, La Salle planted his standard and took possession of Louisiana, "in the name of the most high, mighty, invincible, and victorious prince Louis the Great, by the grace of God king of France and Navarre." What did not such zeal and enterprise deserve of his country, for which he had obtained an empire so boundless? But what availed this success to a prince who, though so "high and mighty," had not contributed a sou to the enterprise, and who could write thus to the governor of Canada: "I am convinced, like you, that the discovery of the Sieur de la Salle is very useless, and that such enterprises ought to be prevented in future, as they tend only to debauch the inhabitants by the hope of gain and to diminish the revenue from beaver skins!"

Need I recount how this great man, ignorant of the change in the government and filled with bright visions of the future, retraced his steps to the Illinois, where his influence had assembled thousands of Indian warriors friendly to his cause; how that here he learned not only that the new governor, Le Barre, turned a deaf ear to his appeals, but that under a frivolous pretext he had seized and wasted his property and reduced him to poverty, and how nothing remained but for him to again cross the seas and lay his cause before his sovereign in person?

It must suffice me to say of this personal appeal to the throne that truth and eloquence once more gained for La Salle a just recognition of his great services. Having thus recovered his influence he was enabled to carry out a scheme worthy his character and fame,—the colonization of Louisiana. He was granted four vessels and one hundred soldiers, beside ship builders, mechanics, and laborers, and many so called "gentlemen of condition." Poor material these, for a colony in the wilderness, but a more prudent addition was made in a number of girls, who joined the expedition with the prospect of becoming wives to the colonists. Alas, that of this well concerted project we have to record only the most bitter failure! From lack of harmony between the leader and his captains, ignorance of the coast, or design on the part of the pilot, the fleet sailed past the mouths of the river, and in attempting to land the store ship was wrecked, with the loss of most of her cargo. The naval commander spread his sails and returned to France, leaving on a wild and desolate shore a forlorn hope,—the infant colony who were to conquer for France a territory half as large as Europe. After a winter spent in vain attempts to find the fatal river, a settlement was begun. But two years of suffering and disappointment reduced their numbers to less than one-fourth. La Salle now attempted to make his way, with a trusted few, across the country to the river and thence to Canada, to obtain succor for the colony. With this party were two men who had sworn vengeance upon their leader. On the morning of May 16, 1687, they killed his three servants, including his faithful Indian hunter, and as La Salle himself approached where the murderers lay, a bullet pierced his brain and he fell dead.

Thus perished at the age of forty-four years a man of whose like there have been few examples. In his active nature and determined energy a close resemblance may be found in our own youthful Houghton. He had spent twenty years in incessant activity, and, in pursuit of his grand scheme, as he himself says, had "traversed more than 5,000 leagues of new and unknown territory, among savage and cannibal nations, often on foot, through snow and water, without escort, without provisions, without bread, without wine, without recreation, and without repose." And now nothing remained of all his labors.

It would be too much to say that no selfish motive actuated him. He hoped to make for himself an abiding fame, and, doubtless he looked for the time when wealth and power should reward his toils. But he was essentially a man whose heart was in the work of discovery, and in this field there is no brighter name in American annals.

It is for us, who share the benefit of his life, to perpetuate his memory. But where or how shall we erect his monument? A few years ago there was in the city of Detroit a street called by his name; a petty tribute, but even this has disappeared in the demand for a new nomenclature. Another street, recently opened in the western suburb, alone bears evidence of his honored memory. Let me add a suggestion. On the outer walls of the beautiful edifice which Detroit has erected as her hotel de ville, or city hall, are four niches designed for statues. They are now empty. Let them be filled with marble images of men whose names and fame are indissolubly associated with this region.

Foremost will be that of the Sieur de la Salle. An engraved portrait of him is given by Hennepin, from which his features may be modeled; and we have a sufficiently accurate description of his tall figure and manly and somewhat austere bearing. On the occasion of his visit with the Griffin he donned, when it seemed advisable to make some display, a scarlet coat with gold trimmings. The dress of a gentleman of that period in Canada is well known, and there should be no difficulty in sufficiently distinguishing him.

The other pedestals may be filled with men of noble fame, whom France gave to America and who belong to us. I need only mention De la Motte Cadillac, the founder of Detroit—a portrait of whom is known to have existed, for which search is being made, and (as Hon. Levi Bishop assures us) with promise of success. The devoted and self-sacrificing Jesuit, Pere Marquette, than whom none is more deserving; and lastly, though of later time, the Catholic priest whom all loved, and who first* represented this territory in congress, Father Richard. Of him an excellent portrait is extant. The flowing yet diverse robes of the two priests will contrast strikingly with the rich official vestments of the nobleman and the courtier.

And now, as we look back upon the past that we have recalled with its wild surroundings, its hopes, and its disappointments, and note the changes two centuries have wrought, let us take heart, and hope that the future of this great country will be more glorious than the discoverer's wildest dreams!

MUSIC BY THE CHORUS.

At the conclusion of Mr. Hubbard's address, Mr. Lothrop said:

"Our orator has told us that this charming sheet of water is named in honor of Lady St. Claire. For my part, I am delighted that our patron saint is a woman. It is a kind of saint that I have never failed to believe in. [Applause.] And I believe that the line has come down unbroken from Lady St. Claire to the saints that sanctify our homes to-day. [Applause.] And now, my friends, our excellent neighbor, Mr. Duffield, has written a commemorative ode that is to be sung, as he says, 'by our sisters, our cousins and our aunts;' but I translate it to be sung by our saints, and I hope you will all rise and sing."

Mr. Newberry—"I hope all the sinners will sing too; otherwise the chorus might be weak."

Mr. Lothrop—"Mr. Newberry could not have sung if they had not been included."

Mr. Newberry—"And the orator of the day would have been left out." [Laughter.]

The whole assemblage then joined in singing the following commemorative ode, entitled "The Men of Auld Lang Syne," written by D. Bethune Duffield:

Bold were the men of Auld Lang Syne,
  Who first braved ocean's breeze;
But bolder still the men whose will
  First sailed these silent seas!
First broke the waters of Ste. Claire,
  And gave our lake its name;
Here's honor to their bright career,
  And an enduring fame.

---

*Father Gabriel Richard was the third—not the first—delegate to congress. The first delegate was William Woodbridge and he was succeeded by Solomon Sibley.

The years have roll'd and flags have changed
  Since that far distant day,
When off our shore, with cannon's roar
  "The Griffin" anchored lay.
Lonely the little vessel lay
  In wildest wilderness,
With none to cheer her own her way,
  With none her flag to bless.

But men have come, and men have gone
  And carved heroic path,
Thro' thorny woes and savage foes,
  And winter's stormy wrath;
Till round the silent lake of old
  Fair states now smiling rise
Whose happy songs to-day ascend
  The same o'er-spreading skies.

So when those ancient trees are gone,
  Which these old heroes set,
These noisy waves shall chant their praise
  Tho' men their names forget.
So here's a health, and here's a cheer
  From out this grove of pine,
To brave La Salle, the Cavalier,
  And the men of Auld Lang Syne.

The music of "Auld Lang Syne," so much sung at historical gatherings, never fails to awaken a lively enthusiasm, and its full effect was felt and appreciated on this occasion.

At the conclusion of the singing Mr. Lothrop said:

"We are honored, my friends, with the presence here to-day of one, who, in addition to his many other gifts, has an extraordinary knowledge of all that relates to the history of this region. I have the honor of presenting to you Chief Justice Campbell." [Applause.]

Judge Campbell said the poem was not written for "grown up" people, and proceeded to read the following, the many happy hits of which were fully appreciated by his audience:

### A LEGEND OF L'ANSE CREUSE.

A woodpecker sat on a oaken stump,
Pecking away with a ceaseless thump,
And now and then as he cocked his eye,
Darted a glance so keen and sly,
You'd have thought, had you seen him that summer day,
Old Greenback has something queer to say.
When that stump was a stately tree,
Sturdy in trunk and sound in knee,
Forward a little from the wood,
Close by the edge of the bank it stood,
And acorns dropped where the ripples break
Over the brim of the smiling lake.
When that tree was at its best,
An emerald bird with crimson crest,
All through the summer, from dawn till dark,
Hopped and tapped on its ridgy bark;
The limbs have dropped, the trunk is dead,
But the plumes are shining on back and head,
And the restless eye is clear and keen
As when the old oak's leaves were green;
But under his throat, perhaps you'd say,
Rubytop shows a spot of gray.

Orchard and field for many a rood
Cover the dust of the buried wood,
And low-roofed houses, old and quaint,
Browned by the weather and bare of paint,
Shelter a people—so they say.
Brown and quaint and old as they.
The urchin tumbling in the grass,
The merry youth and the blooming lass,
The farmer who tills the teeming soil
When hunting and fishing leave time for toil,
And the jolly old man who sits and drones
Of the winter signs in the wild-goose bones,
Seem living over as in a trance,
The old, old life of sunny France.
This restless age,—this age so fast—
There fights at odds with the hoary past;
Vainly it matches its eager will
With those who win by sitting still,
And hears an adage old and worn,—
Who goes for wool may come back shorn.
There kindly nature spreads her stores
In rich profusion out of doors;
Bright gleam the apples, pears, and cherries,
The brambles bend with luscious berries;
The bullfrog, with his croaking harsh,
And the fat muskrat, haunt the marsh;
The wild duck floats among the reeds,
The red deer in the woodland feeds,
The grouse, the partridge, and the quail
Their bounteous larders never fail;
And, yielding more etherial fare,
The daintiest creatures swarm in air.
But, if your feet are ever found,
O muses, on such level ground,
Come hither from Parnassus' hill,
Of melting whitefish eat your fill;
And from your lubricated throats
Will glide such smooth and pleasing notes
As never yet the pipes did follow
Of your precentor—bright Apollo.
In the fall weather, cool and hazy,
When the slow sun is getting lazy,
And from his cold bath in the river
Comes out all red with many a shiver.
With feet too chilly as they pass,
To melt the hoar frost on the grass,
Northward his yearly journey takes,
The shining "white deer of the lakes."
Swift through the lymph, in countless herds,
Thicker than the thickest flight of birds,
The living shapes of silver dash,
Till all the rustling waters flash,
As when beneath the breeze of June
Their myriad waves reflect the moon.
Then all the dwellers in the land
Came trooping gaily to the sand;
Through day and night the populous shore
Echoes the clanking of the oar.
The meshes of the spreading seine
Are tried by many a grievous strain,
And the gay crowd, with jovial din,
Hail the rich harvest gathered in.
Then comes the kindly winter's reign;
Then mirth and pleasure scour the plain.

The rapid pacers come and go
Like phantoms o'er the beaten snow,
And where the summer shallops ride,
Swiftly the painted carioles glide.
Not Hector o'er the Trojan field
By his illustrious coursers wheeled,
In his mad circuit whirling round,
Thus saw his steeds devour the ground;
Nor Pindar, yielding loud acclaims
To the great victor of the games,
E'er saw upon the Olympic plain
Such ponies of heroic strain.
And should they meet at break of day,
Fresh baited with ambrosial hay,
The sun's team climbing up the cope,
They'd beat him half way down the slope.
But oh, my colts, too swift ye pace,
You've borne me past my stopping place;
Backward return in slower mood,
And while you whinny o'er your food,
Again upon the bank I'll stray,
And if he has not flown away,
Hear what the old bird has to say.

High on the stump the old woodpecker sat,
Twisting his neck this way and that,
And soon as he found an ear to listen,
He bristled his crest, and his keen eyes glisten,
On his breast feathers he wiped his beak,
Opened his mouth and began to speak.
Hearken, stranger, while I tell
Wondrous things that once befell
The people of this drowsy land.
Here on this pulpit where I stand
Preaching my sermon to only one,
Long ago I sat in the sun,
And saw a sight that shook with fear
The hunter fierce, and the trembling deer.
The bright warm rays of an August noon
Hushed each sound but the locust's tune;
But a gentle wind blew from the west,
Dimpling with ripples the water's breast,
And catching the swans' wings where they float,
Drove each one on like a well-trimmed boat,—
A stately boat, with canvas white
As a sheet of snow in a starry night.
Now here, now there, the great fish rise
To snap at the gaudy dragon flies;
The loon like a porpoise rolls and dives,
Screaming as if for a hundred lives,
And solemn bitterns stand and think,
Each on a leg, by the rushy brink.
Just as the sun in his path on high
Stayed his course in the middle sky,
Speeding along with a foaming wake
A great ship sailed upon the lake;
And the loon dove down, and the white swans flew,
Scared at the sight of the wonder new;
For never had vessel along this shore
Cleft these quiet waves before.
No better craft was ever seen
Than brave La Salle's stout brigantine:
Out from the prow a griffin springs,
With scales of bronze and fiery wings,
And the ship that earned so wide a fame
Bore on its scroll the Griffin's name.

For when the cunning robes of black
Troubled the zealous Frontenac
And strove his venturous hands to keep
From reaching out to the western deep,
The wrath of the sturdy Norman rose
At the jealous arts of his patron's foes,
And the ship he built for his dangerous quest,
He named from the valiant noble's crest,
And vowed he would make the Griffin fly
Over the crows in the western sky.
A gilded eagle carved in wood
On the crown of the quarter-deck castle stood,
And from the staff astern unrolled,
Floating aloft with its lilies of gold,
The great white flag of France is spread,
And the pennon decking the mainmast head
Bears the chieftain's arms on a field of red.
Three black-nebbed falcons gaping wide
Scowl through the ports on either side.
And the old sergeant says they speak
Each for a common day in the week,
While the great bow gun with its heavy knell
Rings as loud as a Sunday bell.
But another standard is seen to-day
As the gallant cruiser wins the bay,
For the cross is waved, and the censer swings,
And the seamen kneel as the mass bell rings,
For to-day is the feast of the Abbess Claire;
And the corded priests, with chants and prayer,
Sprinkling the lake with holy water
Name it after the Church's daughter.
Then in a trice the gunners catch
Each in his place the blazing match,
And the flame leaps out, and the trembling shore
Quakes at the terrible cannon's roar,
And stout La Fleur with chuckling grin
Said as he patted his culverin—
In my church there's never a friar
Sings like the Abbot who leads the choir!

* * * * * *

Out in the lake the Griffin lay
Wind-bound at anchor many a day,
While the ship's company explore
The novel wonders of the shore;
And as they reach upon the way
The bend at Pointe a Guignolet,
Before them spread a lovely bay;
Its limpid waters softly glide
Like the slow creeping of the tide,
Upward and backward on the beach,
But ne'er beyond one margin reach.
And in its lonely beauty there,
So still, so smiling, and so fair,
To their charmed eyes it seemed to be
A sunny strip of Normandy,
Where mermaids in the moonlight play,
And happy children all the day,
Beside the shore a cross they plant,
The reverend priests an anthem chant,
And the stern soldier, as he went,
To seek the shelter of his tent,
Cast backward many a yearning look,
Made homesick by that fairy nook.
The ship sailed on, but the friendly shore
Saw it returning nevermore.

And many a day had come and fled
And many a fall the leaves had shed,
Before the early morning dews
On the white clover by L'Anse Creuse
Were dashed by footsteps from their cup
Ere the dry sun had drunk them up.
But when I grew to my chagrin
A little baggy about the chin,
And could not find sufficient cause
For a wrinkle or two around my claws,
The pleasing scene I daily viewed
No longer was a solitude.
Neat farms and gardens lined the strait
From Erie up to Huron's gate,
While on the narrow strips of land
The cottage homes so closely stand,
Their numbers stretching up and down,
Appear like one continuous town.
In front of each upon the bank,
A narrow wharf of single plank
Stretched out to where a steady hand
Might fill a bucket to the brim,
Sinking it down below the rim,
Yet never touch the bottom sand,
While to this simple jetty tied
Canoes float safely by its side.

Whenever Monday's morning ray
Brings to the world its washing day,
The busy housewives and their daughters
There with their labors vex the waters.
The garments in their fingers gathered,
With vigorous rubbing drenched and lathered,
And paddled with a cunning knack
Resound with many a rousing whack,
While the fair laundresses at work
In no Carthusian silence lurk,
But skilled alike to wash and speak,
Gossip enough for all the week.
In the small hamlet of L'Anse Creuse
One Monday buzzed the stirring news
That the old Seigneur of Beauvais
Was busy all the previous day
Devising how his daughter fair—
The arch and graceful Lady Claire—
Might find ere long an honest mate,
Of gentle blood and good estate,
Who by some valiant feat at arms
Might prove him worthy of her charms.
He was a man whose antique blood,
Traced backward to the very flood,
Had with such notions filled his brain
As once disturbed the knight of Spain.
He passed the vigor of his years
Roving among his gallant peers,
Exploring widely to advance
The glory of his native France,
And oft a pleasant hour had spent
With gallant Tonty in his tent,
And he was first who found his way
To dwell beside the cross and bay.
He mingled reading and the care
Of watching o'er his darling Claire,
And soothed his fatherly alarms
With chronicles of deeds of arms.

As up she grew to womanhood,
Merry and bright, as well as good,
He dreamed of noble cavaliers
Bearing her colors on their spears,
And jousting on the meadow's green
To win the smile of Beauty's queen;
And a great tournament he planned,
The prize to be his daughter's hand.
The damsel having mother wit,
And some small will for using it,
Had been enabled to discover
She need not languish for a lover.
And though she knew that young Beauclerc
Was prompt enough to do or dare,
She was not anxious for her sake,
That he another's head should break,
Nor would it suit her views at all
Should others profit by his fall.
So, with a smile upon her face,
And many a blushing maiden grace,
She met her honest father's question
With a more practical suggestion.
The Greeks, in that heroic time
Which all the poets call sublime,
Instead of carving up a friend,
In public games did oft contend,
And deemed a vegetable crown
And name by Pindar handed down,
More likely to adorn the State
Than if they earned a broken pate.
When the hard winter's frost shall make
A slippery ice-field of the lake,
No ancient circus could compete
With such a course for flying feet;
And if no youth my hand may claim
But him who pleads a victor's name,
Then let his honors be my price
Who wins a race upon the ice.
The sire approved, and gave command
To publish it through all the land
That on the coming Christmas day
A horse race o'er the frozen bay
Should by its fair results decide
What lucky hand should claim the bride.
Then to the shore in state he went,
Where the good dames on work intent,
Their weekly store of clothes did scrub
In the great common washing tub,
And sought their willing aid to bear
His festive message through the air.
Swiftly it traveled toward the south,
Leaping from ready mouth to mouth;
And while its echoes still did play
In broken murmurs round the bay,
Past Windmill Point, on pinions quick,
It reached the mouth of Tremble's creek;
And like a bullet from a gun
Crossed the ravine at Bloody Run;
Thence like the west wind on the main,
Shook the great flag at Ponchartrain;
Then like a brightly falling star
Gleamed on the household of Navarre,
And shot along its flashing way
Around the bend of Godfroy's bay,
Startling the ghost that lingered still
Sighing in Gobeye's haunted mill.

The violet banks of Bellefontaine
And the cool shades of Lover's Lane
Hear a low murmur, as of bees
Humming among the linden trees.
As up the Rouge the story sped,
Old Va-de-bon-Cœur, as he shook his head,
Marveled that any other place
Was chosen for a Christmas race;
But cracking all his knuckles bony,
Forthwith began to train his pony.
Beyond this region of the horse
The message reached the broad Ecorse,
Rousing the herdsmen as they roam
O'er the wide acres of St. Cosme.
Across the channel to Grosse Isle,
Shouted with sympathetic zeal,
And thence beyond, the tidings go
To the rich islands dark with shade
By the gigantic lindens made,
Within whose woods the Wyandot
Had built his town in a charming spot,
Guarding Lake Erie's open door:
In the rough sailor pilot's lore
'Tis known as the island of Bobalo.
In the short passage of an hour,
Sped by this tireless motive power,
The news had entered at the gate
Of every household on the strait.
And the gay bachelors all prepare
To struggle boldly for the fair,
While pouting maidens—half offended—
Wish that the day had come and ended,
That they who fail to win the prize
Might find a better use of eyes;
Yet none the less they toil and fluster
To look their prettiest at the muster.
And, sooth to say, the gallant wrong
Would find his journey very long,
Who traveled till he found the graces
More prodigal of charming faces.
The summer into autumn glides,
The mellow autumn long abides,
The dark December claimed a part in
The unruffled season of St. Martin;
And many a lovely bosom fluttered,
And many a savage youngster muttered,
As the sun neared his last decline,
While winter yet had made no sign.
But when the dreary solstice came,
The morning sky was all aflame,
And from the polar deserts vast
The wind came howling fierce and fast.
All day the clouds their snowflakes shed,
The sighing waves were dark as lead,
Sounding upon the gloomy shore
Like the dull plash of melted ore.
But in the night no vapor mars
The luster of the burning stars,
High in the firmament the moon
Shines dazzling as the sun at noon,
And the cold beams the waves congeal
Like a great floor of glimmering steel.
All through the night from shore to shore
The imprisoned waters moan and roar,
But vain are all their throes to break
The dungeon walls that hold the lake.

On Christmas eve the drowsy heads
Went early to their downy beds,
That all from sweet repose might borrow
More blooming roses for the morrow;
While even the watchful chanticleer
Forgot to blow his clarion clear,
And sitting snugly on his perch,
Was silent as the village church.
But when the rays of morning creep
Down the gray spire of St. Philippe,
And cast its shadows o'er the way
Just at the foot of Grand Marais,
The wooden cock that at its peak
Stood opening wide his gilded beak,
Thought surely there was something wrong
To make his brothers mute so long.
Uprising on his sinewy toes,
Far out his gorgeous breast he throws,
While of the bracing air he quaffed
A deep exhilarating draught;
Then from the bottom of his throat
He crowed so fierce a trumpet note
That all the country stared aghast,
Astounded by that sudden blast;
And every rooster, roused to feel
A rival worthy of his steel,
Met the fierce chapel-guardian's crow
With a defiant *coquerico!*
Up from their beds the slumbering people
Sprang at that summons from the steeple,
And every bachelor and maid
In rustic garments neat arrayed,
With sparkling eyes and glowing face,
Prepared to figure at the race.
Too far from Fashion's halls to get
The work of Ma'm'selle Tond Minette,
The blooming damsels managed still
To show the power of taste and skill.
And when they all had met together,
Rose tinted by the bracing weather,
They made philosopher and dunce
Fall swift in love with all at once.

The mass was over, and the sleighs
Came sliding o'er the crystals ways,
As shining birds from flower to flower,
Dart swiftly in the summer hour.
The swan-necked carioles make the scene
Lively with scarlet, gold, and green,
The bright-eyed pacers, roan and bay,
Caper like little boys at play,
And toss their heads, as if they knew
As much as human horses do.
The Lady Claire, with courteous mein,
Beams like a radiant fairy queen;
But while she swiftly moved her eyes
O'er the contestants for the prize,
She turned a moment pale as snow,
Then blushed with such a ruddy glow
That all the maidens then and there
Owned there was none so good and fair,
And wished success to lovely Claire.
For well, with ready wit, they guessed
She had a purpose in her breast
That none from her devoted swain
The triumph of the course should gain;

And each with sympathizing face
Hoped that her own true lover's place
Would be the second in the race.
Then forth advancing in his sleigh
The stately form of old Beauvais
Appeared among the shouting throng,
And with a voice like Stentor's, strong,
Taught by his daughter's shrewd device
Who knew the mysteries of the ice,
Announced the scrupulous rules to guide
The contest for the peerless bride.
In a straight run the course shall reach
From where the trending of the beach
Rounds into Pointe a Guignolet,
To Huron Point across the bay;
Thence turning at the blasted elm,
The limit of Maconse's realm,
Back to the starting point again
Across the white and slippery plain.
And he whose steed's returning feet
Shall first upon the margin beat,
Shall take my mansion and my land,
And, if she will, my daughter's hand.

The graybeards shrugged their shoulders wide
At such a long and freezing ride;
Eight miles across the raven's flight
Must reach before his feet can light;
And when upon the glassy floor
That space must twice be traveled o'er,
The horse that wins without a founder
Must be as hard as an eighteen pounder.
But the swift pacers cocked their ears
In scorn at such unworthy fears;
And, ranged in order on the shore,
The friendly rivals reached a score,
Waiting the signal to begin
The race that only one could win.
Each in such sliding carriage placed
As suits his money or his taste,
Jumper and cutter, train and pung
Behind the nimble pony swung,
While the trim cariole's graceful wedge,
With its shafts hung low at the runner's edge
Was decked in the spoils of the shaggy bear,
Ready to cleave the frozen air.
But what has troubled the Sieur Beauvais,
And what the cause of the long delay?
The course is long and the day is brief,
The night comes on like a stealthy thief,
And woe to the Knight who rides astray,
Far from the land on the wintry bay.
Alas, the old man's eyes are dim;
For under his features hard and grim
His soul is soft and spirit mild,
And his heart is aching for his child;
He knew her love for young Beauclerc,
And marveled why he was not there.
He was a youth of manly heart,
Lithe as a panther, straight as a dart,
And loved to share the hunter's toil
More than he cared for his costly spoil.
Changing their names with one another,
The Swan creek chieftain called him brother,
And a sturdy man he saw who met
The tawny or white Eshtonaquet.

The chief just come from a prairie trail,
Brought home a horse like a spotted quail,
With long slim neck and Arab head,
But a back that sloped like the roof of a shed,
And legs that raised his ample chest
Up to the height of an Indian's breast.
And he gave a hint to young Beauclerc
That none with this strange beast might cope,
Though he should train an antelope,
To run the race for his lady fair,
He framed a jumper of ironwood tough,
Limber and stout, but rude and rough;
His harness strong and his reins to guide
He made from thongs of bison hide.
And there he sat with the jeering racers,
Proud of themselves and their well groomed pacers,
Wrapped in the shaggy robes of skin
That his red brother clad him in;
And many a scoff and scornful laugh
Greeted the sleigh with the brown giraffe.
A whisper from the Lady Claire,
And the old man with dubious air
Shouted the signal. Off they fly,
Skimming like swallows across the sky.
But far behind, with drooping tail,
And swinging his legs like a clumsy flail,
The prairie beast goes steadily on
As if there were never a race to be won,
While the neat ponies their sinews strain
To reach the verge of the frozen plain.
But when they turn at the blasted tree,
Panting and foaming, lo, they see,
Jogging along as fresh and stout
As when from the shore they first set out,
The clumsy brute whose movements seem
Like the measured sweep of a walking-beam.
And as the home-bound rivals ride
Just in the midst of the basin wide,
The shambling nag with his terrible stride
Passes them all, and in his eyes
Gleams of a conscious triumph rise.
Wider and wider he spreads apart
His hoofs, and shoots like a fiery dart,
Till his nimble limbs so swiftly fleet,
He seems like a body without any feet
Shot like a ball through the midst of the air;
And he reaches the goal when there's nobody there,
For they thought it was safe to sit long by the fire,
Not dreaming this monster, with sinews of wire,
And never within a decent stall
Would thus so horribly beat them all.
But the boys when they saw the meek young men
Moodily driving back again,
Shouted a mocking *mange l'avoine!*
And the merry maids with smiling lip
Welcomed them back from their leisure trip.
But they looked more blithe when the jolly priest
Asked them in to the wedding feast;
And never since that Christmas-day
Have the good dwellers by the bay
Danced at the bridal of lady fair,
Sweeter and brighter than lovely Claire.

It may be of interest to the readers of this report to know that Judge Campbell is in the habit at each Christmas of writing a story or poem for his children. The above charming narrative was written for such an occasion.

At the conclusion of the poem Mr. Lothrop said:

"The approach of evening admonishes us that we must bring our meeting to a close. We shall therefore be compelled to dispense with the extemporaneous addresses. But I will extend an invitation to all those who would have spoken, and all others, to attend our next centennial festival. [Laughter.] And now my friends, we will close the pleasant exercises of to-day by singing what should be the expression of all our hearts, 'Praise God from whom all blessings flow.'"

The gathering was then dismissed with singing, after which a large number of young people tripped the light fantastic on the smooth, grassy lawn for some time, and as the shades of evening settled over the clear lake, as they did 200 years ago, the people dispersed to their homes.

# INDEX.

# INDEX.

A.

PAGE.

Address of President John J. Adams, Annual Meeting 1879 1
  E. Lakin Brown, Kalamazoo County Society 523
  S. F. Brown, Ninth Re-union of Kalamazoo Society 518
    Tenth Re-union of Kalamazoo Society 537
  Bela Hubbard, the naming of Lake St. Clair 647
  David Johnson to County and State Pioneer Societies 491
  Henry H. Riley, The Mound Builders 41
  M. Shoemaker, President, at Annual Meeting, 1880 101
  Hezekiah G. Wells, Constitutional Conventions 37
    Kalamazoo Pioneer Society 519
Agriculture in the Upper Peninsula 263
  Ancient Mining at Isle Royale 206
  Apple trees in Saginaw Valley in 1837 199
Allegan County, history of—Don. C. Henderson 270
  Township, history of—G. A. Morgan 276
  Autobiography of Hugh Brady 84
    William Brockway 158
  Paper by Mrs. J. V. Rogers at Pioneer Meeting, Otsego 299
  Settlers in Allegan Township 280-86
Attorney Generals, State, from 1815 to 1834 122
  1836 to 1881 117

B.

Bates, George C., letter from 244
Battle Creek, its early history and present condition 347
Bay County, its Pioneer female doctor—Mrs. Elizabeth Rogers 336
  its Pioneer record—B. F. Partridge 316
Bishop, Levi, Loss of the Griffin, by 98
Blackman, early settlers of 503
Brady, Hugh, Autobiography 84
  Funeral sermon of—Dr. George Duffield, Sr 87
  Lines on death of—D. Bethune Duffield 91
  Death of his brother James 92
    John 93
    Samuel 93
  Death of his father 92
Branch County, early banking in—C. D. Randall 339
  Fiat experiment of Lewis Goddard 345

| | Page. |
|---|---|
| Biographical sketch of David Adams | 501 |
| Amasa Bagley | 596 |
| Martin S. Brackett | 399 |
| Asahel Beach | 375 |
| Almon M. Chapin | 468 |
| Charles M. Cobb | 378 |
| Stephen Collier | 377 |
| Henry Howland Crapo | 465 |
| Charles Dickey | 371 |
| Curtis Emerson | 607 |
| William M. Fenton | 466 |
| Ebenezer Gould | 616 |
| Martin Heydenburk | 152 |
| Isaac E. C. Hickok | 407 |
| Josiah R. Holden | 544 |
| Jonathan Hubbard | 593 |
| Henry Hughes | 395 |
| James Johnson | 623 |
| Mrs. Malinda Kingsbury | 546 |
| Arza Lewis | 374 |
| Flavius J. Littlejohn | 310 |
| Rev. William N. Lyster | 557 |
| Patrick Marantelle | 614 |
| John Norvell | 140 |
| Hervey Parke | 591 |
| John Roberts | 222 |
| Philip Shaw | 601 |
| Robert Stuart | 52 |
| Asahel Warner | 375 |
| Mrs. D. B. Webster | 532 |

C.

| | |
|---|---|
| Canal, Sault Ste. Mary's, freight passing | 258 |
| Charlotte, its business and leading men | 414 |
| Church, alliance of churches in Detroit—Methodist | 234 |
| History of Episcopal church in Michigan—C. C. Trowbridge | 213-21 |
| History of Methodism in Detroit—J. M. Arnold | 225 |
| Pastors of Methodist churches in Detroit conference | 235 |
| city | 238 |
| Paying debts of churches in Detroit—Methodist | 232 |
| Presiding elders of churches in Detroit—Methodist | 237 |
| Seventh Day Adventists | 352 |
| Coal discovered in central Michigan 1837 | 192 |
| Congress, representatives | 123 |
| Senators in | 123 |
| Territorial delegates | 122 |
| Copper, consumption of, in different countries | 257 |
| Shipments of | 257 |

D.

PAGE.
Detroit, climate of—Bela Hubbard 67-83
  Great fire in 1805 97
  Headquarters of Indian department in 1779 34
  Indian troubles in 594
  In 1796—Post and Tribune 96
  Methodism in 225
Donations to society in 1878 6
  1879 109

E.

Eaton County, Agricultural Society of 422
  Business and prominent men of Charlotte 414
  Early days of 378
  Eaton Rapids, its springs 427
  Olivet college 408
  Patentees of land in 430
    Bellevue 401
    Kalamo 404
    Vermontville 425
  Settlement of Bellevue 386
    Kalamo 403
    Walton and patentees of land 405
Emigrant's song 265

G.

Galesburg, founded by George L. Gage 528
Genesee County, Agricultural 462
  Institutions for deaf and dumb and the blind 443
  Its first railroad 439
  Ladies' library association 448
  Manufactures 458
  Religious organizations 451
  Representative men 465
  Schools 450
  Secret and benevolent associations 453
  The city of Flint 431
  The lumber interest 455
  The mercantile interest 460
Governors, another list of, by W. Leslie Thom 117
  Feudal company of 100 associates 118
  Grand Senechals of New France 118
  Of Canada 114
  Of Michigan territory—William M. Evarts 121
    William Jenney 119
  Of Upper Canada 115
  Royal government 118
  Secretaries acting as 115
  State 120
  Territorial 115
  Under English dominion 119

PAGE.
Governors, under French dominion........ 114
  Vice royalty, from 1612 to 1627—W. Leslie Thom........ 117
Griffin, loss of—Levi Bishop........ 98

H.

Hillsdale County, memorial report........ 468
Historian's report of February 5, 1879........ 9
  4, 1880........ 112
History of Bay County........ 316
  Olivet College........ 408
  the Northwest during the Revolution........ 12
Hubbard, Bela, geographical expedition by........ 189
Hubbard, Gurdon S., journey of—Montreal to Chicago in 1818........ 125
  Paper by—Administration of Indian justice........ 127

I.

Indians, capital punishment by........ 127
  Chippewas in Eaton County........ 383
  Church and mission house at Mackinac—Heydenburk........ 157
  Col. Dickey's correspondence relating to........ 367-371
  Feast of, at mouth of Grand river........ 126
  Hold a pow wow at Flint........ 435
  In Allegan County........ 271
  In Detroit, 1812........ 594
  In Eaton County........ 379-383
  In Jackson County........ 515
  In the Northwest during the Revolution........ 12-36
  In Saugatuck........ 309
  In Van Buren County........ 633
  Missions—Martin Heydenburk........ 154
  Moravian........ 30
  Col. John Mullett's fight with........ 348
  Officers, etc., in Detroit department of, 1779........ 34
  Punishment for wife-killing........ 381
  Removal of Pottowottomies in Calhoun County........ 367
    Eaton County........ 381
  Robert Stuart's experience with........ 57-62
  The Brady family's experience with........ 92-96
  Treaties with........ 559
Ingham County, memorial report—O. M. Barnes........ 468
Ionia City, representative men........ 489
  settlement and history........ 470
  State House of Correction........ 476
Ionia County, memorial report—H. H. Rich........ 490
  settlement and history of Ionia City........ 470
Iron, exports from Marquette........ 255
  Strength of, in different countries........ 253

J.

Jackson County, a chapter of Pioneer history........ 503
  Address of Daniel Johnson at........ 491
  Address of Col. Shoemaker at........ 494

PAGE.

- Jackson County, David Adams and other aged people 501
  - Fifty Years Ago, by Henry Little 509
  - Hymn by Levi Bishop, sung at 500
  - Letters of regret read at 498
  - Meeting of County and State Pioneer Societies 491
  - One of the Early Settlers, by Mrs. Lory Wilbur 516
  - Poem by Mrs. N. H. Pierce at 496
  - Poem by Dr. J. A. Robinson 504
  - R. H. Anderson and his early friends 516
  - Some Forty Years Ago, song by B. F. Eggleston 514
  - The Long Ago, by Mrs. M. W. Clapp 513
- Judges, from 1805 to 1836 122
  - Supreme court under constitution of 1835 115
    - 1850 and 1858 116

K.

- Kalamo Township 403
- Kalamazoo County, action of bar on death of Judge Littlejohn 315
  - Address by N. A. Balch 528
    - E. Lakin Brown 523
    - S. F. Brown 518
      - at Re-union of Pioneers 537
    - W. G. Dewing 526
    - Dwight May 522
    - J. A. B. Stone 527
    - Judge Hezekiah G. Wells 519
      - at Re-union of Pioneers 538
  - Biography of George L. Gale 528
    - Mrs. D. B. Webster, by Mrs. Stone 532
  - Memorial report by Judge Hezekiah G. Wells 543
  - Ninth session of Pioneers 517
  - Tenth reunion of Pioneers 536
  - The Old Pioneer—poem by E. Lakin Brown 542
- Kent County, a letter from Mr. Josiah R. and Mrs. Joanna R. Holden 544
  - Delegates to State society meeting 546
  - Meeting of old residents association of Grand River Valley 544
  - Memorial report—Robert Hilton 546
  - New members of 545

L.

- Lake Superior, the west tributary to 262
- Lansing, Early Days of—O. A. Jenison 48
- Lapeer County, battle of A. N. Hart with wolves 550
  - Pioneer sketches 548
- Lenawee County, Darius Comstock—Francis A. Dewey 554
  - Death roll of Pioneers in 1879—Francis A. Dewey 555
  - Early settlers in—Francis A. Dewey 553
  - Meeting of County and State societies 5
  - Memoir of William N. Lyster—F. A. Dewey 557
- Littlejohn, Judge F. J., action of Kalamazoo bar 315
  - Memorial report—Edwy C. Reid 310
- Livingston County, death of Pioneers in 1879—R. Fowler 558
- Lord, Henry W., Builders of States, by 161

M.

PAGE.
Mackinac, old Church and Mission House 157
Meeting of Allegan County Pioneer Society, May 29, 1878 270
Grand Rapids bar on death of James Miller 547
Ninth reunion of Pioneers of Kalamazoo County 517
Old residents of Grand River Valley Association 544
Shiawassee County Pioneer Society 616
State and Jackson County Societies 491
State Pioneer Society, May 29, 1879 2
1880 101
St. Joseph Pioneer Society, fiftieth anniversary, June 13, 1877 609
Tenth reunion of Pioneers of Kalamazoo County 536
Membership, additions to Pioneer Society in 1878 7
Additions since publication of Vol. 2 266
Memorial notice of Ashahel Beach—O. C. Comstock 375
James Brady—Hugh Brady 92
John Brady—Hugh Brady 92
John Brady, Jr.—Hugh Brady 93
Samuel Brady—Hugh Brady 93
Almon M. Chapin and Isaac Carl—O. M. Barnes 468
Albert M. Clark 641
Deceased persons in Livingston County—R. Fowler 558
Shiawassee County 617
Washtenaw County—Lay 637
Charles Dickey—Dr. O. C. Comstock 371
Curtis Emerson—Charles W. Grant 607
Ebenezer Gould—B. O. Williams 616
Martin Heydenburk—O. C. Comstock 152
Isaac E. C. Hickok 407
James Johnson—William Johnson 623
Mrs. Solomon O. Kingsbury, Timothy J. Tanner, James Miller—Robert Hilton 546-7
Arza Lewis—O. C. Comstock 374
Flavius J. Littlejohn—Edwy C. Reid 310
Patrick Marantelle—I. D. Toll 614
Hervey Parke 591
Persons deceased in Hillsdale County—E. O. Grosvenor. 468
Ionia County—H. H. Rich 490
Kalamazoo County—Hezekiah G. Wells 543
Mrs. A. M. Richman—William A. Clark 605
Phillip Shaw—Elias S. Woodman 601
Robert Stuart—Charles C. Trowbridge 53
Ashahel Warner—O. C. Comstock 375
Memorial report on death of Dr. Asahel Beach—Dr. Edward Cox 375
Martin S. Brackett 399
Hon. Zachariah Chandler—Hezekiah G. Wells. 139
Charles M. Cobb 378
Stephen Collier—V. P. Collier 377
Charles Dickey—Dr. Comstock 371
Ebenezer Gould 617
Arza Lewis—Dr. Comstock 374

PAGE.
Memorial report on death of Judge Flavius J. Littlejohn—E. C. Reid 310
Mrs. Joseph Trombley and Aaron Oldfield—Judge Albert Miller 339
Asahel Warner—Dr. O. C. Comstock 375
Michigan, ancient mining at Isle Royale—Henry Gillman 206
Controversy with Ohio and organization as a State—Freeman Norvell 140
First State fair of—Henry Raymond 245
Governors and judges 114, 117, 120
History of Episcopal church in—Charles C. Trowbridge 213
Methodism in Detroit—Rev. J. M. Arnold 228
Mound builders in—Henry Gillman 202
Rabbit river mounds and circles in—H. D. Post 296
Territorial delegates to Congress 122
Governors of 119
Officers of 121
Upper Peninsula of, soil, resources, etc.—Campbell 247
U. S. Senators and Representatives of 123

N.

Names of Detroit appointments of M. E. Church in Detroit city 235
district 238
Early settlers in Lenawee County 553
Employes in Indian department at Detroit, 1779 34
Officers of Eaton County Agricultural Society 425
St. Joseph Pioneer Society 609
Officials of 286
Officials in Michigan from 1612 to 1880 114-124
Patentees of lands in Bellevue 401-2
Eaton Rapids 430-1
Kalamo 404-5
Vermontville 425-6
Walton 405-6
Persons deceased in Lenawee County 555-6
St. Joseph County 610
present at Grosse Pointe celebration 644
uniting with State Pioneer Society 7, 111, 266, 268
Settlers in Allegan township 280-1
Northwest, British presents to the Indians 25
Capture of Gen. Henry Hamilton 22
During the Revolution 12
In 1763 13
Norvell, John, and Lucius Lyon first U. S. Senators for Michigan 145
His appeal for admission of Michigan to the Union 144
History and times of—Col. Freeman Norvell 140
United States district attorney 147

O.

Oakland County, Gov. Cass, appointment of Amasa Bagley judge 597
History of—T. J. Drake 559, 591
Obituary of Hervey Parke 591
Proclamation of Gov. Cass to organize, in 1819 560
Reminiscences of—Hervey Parke 572-590

PAGE.
Officers of Pioneer Society in 1879 ... XI
1880 ... 100
Olivet College, corporation of ... 413
Early history of ... 408
Ore, exports of copper ... 255, 257

P.

Papers at meetings of State Society—Administration of Indian Justice—Gurdon S. Hubbard ... 127
A geological expedition in 1837—Bela Hubbard ... 189
Autobiography—William Brockway ... 158
Builders of States—Henry W. Lord ... 161
Constitutional conventions—Judge Hezekiah G. Wells ... 37
Death of Senator Chandler—Judge H. G. Wells ... 139
Early banking in Branch County—C. D. Randall ... 339
Early days of Lansing—O. A. Jenison ... 48
Early settlers in Lenawee County—F. A. Dewey ... 552
History of Bay County—B. F. Partridge ... 316
Incidents in life of Robert Stuart—Martin Heydenburk ... 56
Indian missions—Martin Heydenburk ... 154
Journey from Montreal to Chicago—G. S. Hubbard ... 125
Law and the legal profession—H. G. Wells ... 129
Life of Robert Stuart—Charles C. Trowbridge ... 52
Life and times of John Norvell—Col. Freeman Norvell ... 140
Loss of the Griffin—Bela Hubbard ... 98
Old church and mission house at Mackinac—Martin Heydenburk ... 157
Resources of the Upper Peninsula—Alex. Campbell ... 247
Sketch of Martin Heydenburk—Dr. O. C. Comstock ... 152
Sketch of Pioneer life—Abraham Edwards ... 148
The mound builders in Michigan—Henry H. Riley ... 41
War sketch—Col. Michael Shoemaker ... 166
Papers on other occasions—by Robert H. Anderson and his early friends ... 516
Mrs. M. W. Clapp, Some forty years ago ... 514
Mrs. Nancy G. Davis, History of Amasa Bagley ... 596
Thomas J. Drake, History of Oakland County ... 559-591
Edward A. Foote, Early days of Eaton County ... 379
Henry Gillman, Mound-builders in Michigan. 202
Don Henderson, Allegan County ... 270
Bela Hubbard, The climate of Detroit ... 67
Diodate Hubbard, Jonathan Hubbard and family ... 593
Henry Little, Fifty years ago ... 509
W. R. McCormick, Pioneer life in Saginaw valley ... 602
G. A. Morgan, Allegan township ... 276
Hervey Parke, His first tour in Michigan in 1821 ... 572
Mrs. N. H. Pierce, The brave pioneer ... 496
H. D. Post, Rabbit river mounds ... 296

PAGE.
Papers on other occasions—by Dr. J. A. Robinson, Reminiscences in Rhyme. 504
  Charles I. Walker, The northwest during the Revolution ... 12
  Mrs. Lory Wilbur, One of the early settlers.. 515
Pine Plains, historical sketch—G. A. Morgan ... 293
Pioneer Life, an incident of—Mrs. J. V. Rogers ... 299
  Sketch of—Abraham Edwards ... 148
Pioneer Society, State, annual meeting, 1879 ... 2
  1880 ... 101
  New members of, in 1878 ... 7
  New members since publication of Vol. 2 ... 266
  Officers in 1879 ... XI
  Officers of, 1880 ... 100
Poetry, A Legend of L'Anse Creuse—Judge James V. Campbell ... 656
  A Michigan emigrant song ... 265
  An original poem—Isaac D. Toll ... 612
  Auld Lang Syne—E. Lakin Brown ... 526
  Auld Lang Syne—D. Bethune Duffield ... 655
  Loss the Griffin—Levi Bishop ... 98
  Pioneer anthem—Levi Bishop ... 500
  Reminiscences in rhyme—Dr. J. A. Robinson ... 504
  Some forty years ago—B. F. Eggleston ... 514
  The Brave Pioneer—Mrs. N. H. Pierce ... 496
  The death of General Hugh Brady ... 91
  The death of Robert Stuart—D. Bethune Duffield ... 66
  The Old Pioneer—E. Lakin Brown ... 542

R.

Report of Corresponding Secretary, 1879 ... 8
  1880 ... 111
  Historians, 1879 ... 9
    1880 ... 112
  Recording Secretary, 1879 ... 2
    1880 ... 106
  Treasurer, 1879 ... 8
    1880 ... 112
Revolution, British presents to the Indians at Detroit ... 25
  Capture of Gen. Henry Hamilton ... 22
  Indians in the Northwest ... 16

S.

Saginaw County, Pioneer life in ... 602
  The autocrat Major M— ... 603
St. Joseph County, death of Pioneers in 1879 ... 610
  Officers of county society ... 609
  Poem by Isaac D. Toll ... 612
  Secretary's report ... 610
  Semi-centennial of anniversary of settlement ... 609
Saugatuck, notes on—Donald C. Henderson ... 301
Secretaries, Territorial, acting as governors ... 115
  from 1805 to 1835 ... 121
Settlement in Illinois ... 14
  Upon the Wabash ... 13

PAGE.

**Shiawassee** County, meeting of county society.......... 616
  Memorial report—B. O. Williams.......... 616
  Report of committee .......... 617
Sketch, biographical, of John Roberts.......... 222
  Of a prisoner in Rebel hands—Col. Michael Shoemaker..........166-188
  Of history of Methodism in Detroit—Rev. J. M. Arnold.......... 225
  Life of Martin Heydenburk—Dr. O. C. Comstock.......... 152
  Pioneer life—Major Abraham Edwards.......... 148
Stuart, Robert, incidents in life of—Martin Heydenburk.......... 56
  Life of—Charles C. Trowbridge.......... 52
  Lines on death of—D. Bethune Duffield.......... 66
  Sermon by Dr. Duffield, Sen., at funeral of.......... 61

T.

Tuscola County, memorial report of James Johnson—William Johnson.......... 623
  The champion wolf trap—L. Hart.......... 623

U.

Upper Peninsula, agricultural resources.......... 250
  Comparative strength of iron.......... 253
  Cost of manufacturing iron ore.......... 252
  Its copper mines .......... 255
  Railroad statistics in 1860 .......... 255

V.

Van Buren County, Billy Adair inspecting the teacher.......... 632
  Descendants of Rhode Island Quakers.......... 636
  Early settlers in .......... 630
  Historical sketch of—Gen. W. Lawton.......... 625
  Improving navigation .......... 627
  Judge Monroe's interview with a tramp in 1842.......... 629
  Mutual fright of Covey and the wild cat.......... 631
  Named in honor of President Martin Van Buren.......... 635
  Organization of .......... 628
  Rivers in .......... 626
  Supposed visit of Father Marquette.......... 625
Vermontville, settlement and patentees of land.......... 425

W.

Walker, C. I., address of, before Historical Society of Wisconsin.......... 12
Walton township, organized .......... 405
Washtenaw County, memorial report—E. D. Lay.......... 637
Wayne County, A Legend of L'Anse Creuse—Judge James V. Campbell.......... 656
  Building of the Griffin in Niagara river in 1679.......... 649
  Centennial celebration of naming Lake St. Clair.......... 643
  Historical address—Bela Hubbard .......... 647
  Hymn, Auld Lang Syne—D. Bethune Duffield.......... 655
  The last of the Griffin.......... 653
  Yacht regatta .......... 645
Wells, Hezekiah G., conventions of 1835 and 1850, by.......... 37
  Death of Senator Chandler, by.......... 139
  Law and the legal profession, by.......... 129

# NAMES OF PERSONS WHO HAVE CONTRIBUTED MATTER FOR THIS VOLUME.

Adam, John J., 1.
Anderson, Robert, 516.
Arnold, J. M., 225.
Balch, N. A., 528.
Barnes, O. M., 468.
Bates, George C., 244.
Brady, Hugh, 84, 92, 93.
Brockway, William, 158.
Brown, E. Lakin, 523, 542.
Brown, S. F., 518.
Campbell, Alex, 247.
Campbell, J. V., 114, 656.
Clapp, Mrs. M. W., 512.
Collier, V. P., 377.
Committee of Historians, 9, 112.
Comstock, Dr. O. C., 52, 152, 371, 378.
Cox, Edward, 375.
Cross, William H., 610.
Davis, Nancy G., 596.
Dewey, Francis A., 552, 557.
Dewing, W. G., 526.
Dickey, Charles, 367.
Drake, Thomas J., 559, 591.
Duffield, D. Bethune, 66, 91, 655.
Duffield, George, 61, 87.
Edwards, Abraham, 148.
Eggleston, B. F., 514.
Evarts, William M., 121.
Foote, Edward A., 379.
Fowler, Ralph C., 558.
Gillman, Henry, 202.
Grant, Charles W., 607.
Greene, George H., 111.
Grosvenor, Ebenezer O., 468.
Hart, N. H., 548.
Henderson, Donald C., 270, 301.
Heydenburk, Martin, 56, 154, 157.
Hilton, Robert, 546.
Hobart, N. P., 368.
Hodges, Mrs. M. A., 600.
Holden, Josiah R., 544.
Hubbard, Bela, 67, 189, 655.
Hubbard, Diodate, 593.
Hubbard, Gurdon S., 125, 127.
Jenison, O. A., 48.
Jenny, William, 119.
Johnson, William, 623.
Ketcham, Seth, 422.
Lee, George W., 367.
Little, Henry, 509.
Lord, Henry W., 161.
McCormick, W. R., 602.
Miller, Albert, 339.
Norvell, Freeman, 140.
Parke, Hervey, 572.
Partridge, B. F., 316.
Pierce, Mrs. N. H., 496.
Pioneer, Vassar, 623.
Post, H. D., 296.
Post and Tribune, 96, 122, 265, 347, 470.
Prescott, Samuel, 503.
Randall, C. D., 339.
Raymond, Henry, 245.
Reid, Edwy C., 310.
Rich, H. H., 490.
Riley, Henry H., 41.
Roberts, John, 222.
Robinson, J. A., 504.
Rogers, Mrs. J. V., 299.
Shoemaker, Michael, Col., 101, 166.
Stone, Lucinda H., 532.
Telegraph, Kalamazoo, 517, 536.
Tenney, Harriet A., 2, 106.
Thom, W. Leslie, 117.
Thompson, Edward H., 431.
Toll, Isaac D., 612, 614.
Trowbridge, Charles C., 213.
Van Buren, A. D. P., 528.
Walker, Charles I., 12.
Wells, Hezekiah G., 37, 129, 139, 519, 538 543.
Wilbur, Mrs. Lory, 515.
Williams, B. O., 370, 616.
Woodman, Elias S., 601.

# INDEX OF NAMES

OF PERSONS MENTIONED IN THIS VOLUME EXCEPT CERTAIN CLASSES WHICH MAY BE FOUND BY REFERENCE TO THE GENERAL INDEX UNDER THE TITLE, NAMES.

A.

Abbey, George, 569.
Abbot, Elizabeth S., 281.
Abbot, Theophilus C., 5, 109.
Abbott, ——, 388, 511, 604.
Abbott, Gov., 16, 20.
Abbott, Asahel W., 552.
Abbott, and Finchley, 17.
Abbott, James, 26, 141, 142, 215, 216, 569.
Abbott, Jonathan G., 543.
Abbott, Miss L. V., 446.
Abbott, Nirum, 280, 281, 283, 285.
Abbott, Robert, 228, 342, 343.
Able, Carlos A., 545.
Acker, Thomas L., 369.
Ackley, Hannah E., 618.
Adair, William, 632.
Adam, John J., 1, 3, 4, 49, 103, 106, 148.
Adams, Augustine W., 273.
Adams, C. H., 292.
Adams, David, 501, 502.
Adams, Elisha M., 545.
Adams, G. P., 503.
Adams, Humphrey, 569.
Adams, Isaac, 55, 687.
Adams, John Quincy, 224, 598.
Adams, Oscar, 451.
Adams, Rev. R. S., 356, 357.
Adams, Rev. Robert, 348.
Adams, W. H., 503.
Adams, William, 360.
Adhemar, Antoine, 22, 27.
Adrien, Alex, 7.
Agan, J., 281.
Agnew, John, 54.
Agrell, C., 292.
Aillebout, Louis d' de Coulonge, 114, 118.
Alberts, A., 319.
Alberts, W. A., 281.
Albro, Holden L., 517.
Alden, Dr. Hiram, 342.
Alden, Isaac, 341.
Aldrich, A. L., 447, 454, 464.
Aldrich, Abraham, 564.
Aldrich, James, 563.
Aldrich, P. S., 281.
Aldrich, Stephen H., 8, 266.
Aldrich, Sylvester, 285.
Aldworth, J., 281.
Aldsworth, ——, 280.
Aleny, John, 474.
Alexander, Daniel, 630.
Alexander, J. B., 281.
Alexander, William, 630.
Allard, John P., 286.
Allen, ——, 149, 200, 510, 511, 590.
Allen, Capt., 645.
Allen, Rev. A. B., 413.
Allen, Rev. Benjamin, 239.
Allen, C., 401.
Allen, Rev. C. T., 226, 231, 236, 237.
Allen, D. B., 292.
Allen, Miss E., 292.
Allen, G. S., 422.
Allen, G. W., 292, 362.
Allen, George W., 545.
Allen, Hiram H., 111, 266, 545, 546.
Allen, J. B., 281, 291.
Allen, James, 426.
Allen, Jeremiah, 568.
Allen, Jonas, 522.
Allen, Joseph, 285.
Allen, Capt. Moses, 610.
Allen, Deacon Orison, 566, 567, 568, 574, 600.
Allen, Mrs. Orison, 567.

Allen, Seneca, 217.
Allen, Timothy, 564.
Allen, W., 280, 281.
Allett, Henry, 280, 302, 309.
Allett, John, 280, 284, 290.
Alley, J., 281.
Alling, D. C., 280.
Allison, William, 610.
Almy, Joseph, 567.
Alvord, Taddeus, 565.
Ambler, J., 291.
Ames, Bishop, 452.
Ames, J. W., 415.
Amherst, Gov., Jeffrey, 119.
Ammerman, D., 280, 283, 294.
Amsden & Smith, 291.
Amsden, Supt., 315.
Anderson, Dr., 645.
Anderson, Mrs. Dr., 645.
Anderson, Lt. Col. Benjamin, 169, 170.
Anderson, Ebenezer, 553.
Anderson, Rev. J., 203.
Anderson, John, 285, 610.
Anderson, Col. Robert H., 503, 504, 516, 517.
Anderson, W., 291.
Anderson, William E., 638.
Andrews, Amasa, 599.
Andrews, G. W., 422.
Andrews & Meldrum, 26.
Andrus, Rev. E., 289.
Andrus, Frank, 362.
Angell, Abiah, 111, 266.
Angell, Nedebiah, 348, 356.
Angell, Mrs. Nedebiah, 356.
Annett, William, 564, 565.
Annis, H., 280.
Anson, Admiral, 118.
Anthon, Dr. George Christian, 26, 213.
Anthon, Rev. Henry, 27.
Anthon, John, 27.
Anthony, David, 285.
Anthony & White, 249.
Aplin, Henry H., 337.
Applégate, Daniel, 568.
Apthorp, Rev., 289.
Archer, Job, 504.
Archibald, D., 425.
Archibald, P. W., 425.
Argenson, d', Pierre de Voyer, Viscount, 114, 118.
Armstrong, James, 543.
Armstrong, Rev. James, 238.
Arnold, ——, 405.
Arnold, A. P., 481.
Arnold, C., 406.
Arnold, Miss Anthilda P., 471, 481.
Arnold, Judge Dan. J., 273, 286, 292, 312, 314.
Arnold, Eugene B., 640.
Arnold, George T., 306.
Arnold, Hiram, 640.
Arnold, Jacob, 553.
Arnold, James, 465.
Arnold, Rev. John M., 225, 226, 228, 235, 236, 237.
Arnold, Oliver, 470, 474, 481.
Arnold, Mrs. Oliver, 481.
Arnold, Silas D., 481.
Arnold, W. D., 485.
Artault, F. A., 257, 258.
Askin, John, 26.
Askins, George L., 274.
Askins, John, 280, 283.
Astor, John Jacob, 53, 54, 55, 56, 57, 60, 61.
Atchinson, Rev. J. B., 236.
Atheran, B., 401.
Atkins, B., 280.
Atkins, Dr. H. A., 6, 7.
Atterbury, Rev. J. G., 438.
Atwater, ——, 607.
Atwater & Garrison, 292.
Atwater, Reuben, 121.
Atwell, C., 281.
Atwell, F., 281.
Atwood, Aldro, 422.
Atwood, J. B., 441.
Atwood, J. B. & Co., 457.
Aubey, Capt., see Aubrey.
Aubrey, Capt. Thomas, 21.
Aunger, Henry, 36.
Austin, Mrs., 175.
Austin, A. B., 405.
Austin, C., 280.
Austin, Charles, 361, 362, 363.
Austin, F. D., 275.
Austin & Hoffmaster, 362.
Austin, J. P., 280.
Avangour, d', Pierre du Bois, Baron, 114, 118.

Averill, J. K., 439.
Avery, Albert, 392.
Avery, E., 402.
Avery, E. W., 362.
Avery, Ebenezer, 385, 390.
Avery, Fanny L., 111, 266.
Avery, George, 392.
Avery, Noys L., 111, 266.
Avery, William, 553.
Avis, Miss Lucia, 558.
Axford, S., 568.
Axford, S. M., 438.
Ayers, John, 556.

B.

Baazau, J. B., 34.
Babant, Sergt. Francis, 34.
Babbitt, J. E., 281, 292, 294.
Babcock, Anna, 484.
Babcock, Rev. Charles, 241, 242.
Babcock, William, 481.
Babcock, Mrs. William, 481.
Baby, Duperon, 27, 34.
Baby, Henry, 34.
Backus, Dr., 506, 507.
Backus, Major, 92.
Backus, Mrs. (Major), 92.
Backus, Electus, 321.
Bacon, ——, 273.
Bacon, C., 406.
Bacon, Rev. David, 228.
Bacon, E., 406.
Bacon, Leonard, 228.
Bacon, Levi, Jr., 582.
Bacon, Marshall J., 143.
Bacon, Judge Nathaniel, 131, 639.
Bader, B., 401.
Badger, Rev. A. S., 375.
Bagg, D. A., 459.
Bagg, David, 568.
Bagg, John S., 147.
Bagley, Amasa, 561, 567, 574, 596, 597, 599.
Bagley, Gov. John J., 121.
Bailey, ——, 58, 483, 488.
Bailey, J. B. & Son, 291.
Bailey, Jacob B., 280, 286, 287.
Bailey, L., 280.
Bailey, Norman, 8, 266.
Bair, Christopher, 521.
Bair, Joe, 521.
Baird, Col., 171.
Baker, ——, 383, 390, 406.
Baker, C., 281.
Baker, Calvin, 565.
Baker, Enoch S., 280, 285.
Baker, Garrett H., 280, 285.
Baker, George, 305.
Baker, Rev. George D., 413.
Baker, Mrs. H. H., 292.
Baker, John R., 627.
Baker, Norton, 556.
Baker, Robert, 342.
Baker, Rev. Samuel, 235.
Baker, Sarah, 556.
Baker & Spaulding, 292.
Balch, ——, 629.
Balch, Nathaniel A., 136, 137, 138, 315, 528, 541.
Balch, Mrs. Nathaniel W., 543.
Balch, Smiley & Balch, 398.
Balch, Walter O., 136.
Baldie, John W., 476.
Baldwin, ——, 45.
Baldwin, Augustus C., 3, 108, 109, 124.
Baldwin, Benedict, 570.
Baldwin, Edwin, 581.
Baldwin, Ezra, 561, 567, 569.
Baldwin, Gov. Henry P., 121, 123.
Baldwin, H. N., 553.
Baldwin, J., 569.
Baldwin, M., 281.
Baldwin, Nathaniel, 569.
Ball, Col., 594.
Ball, Byron D., 117.
Ball, Calvin, 590.
Ball, Chester, 579, 590.
Ball, Daniel, 575.
Ball, George F., 549.
Ball, Horatio, 568, 573, 575, 576, 577, 579.
Ball, John, 111, 266, 546.
Ballard, Jesse, 553.
Ballou, Dexter A., 323.
Ballou, O. A., 323.
Ballou, O. A. & Co., 323.
Ba-mos-ceya, 196, 197.
Banbury, Lt., 27.
Bancroft, Rev. J. O., 5, 8, 266.
Bancroft, Capt. Joseph, 568.
Bancroft, William L., 449.
Bangs, Rev. Alanson, 553.

Bangs, Prof. Egbert L., 445.
Bangs, Rev. Francis B., 3, 7, 356.
Bangs, Joseph, 553.
Bangs, Rev. Nathan, 214, 228, 235, 238.
Banks, ——, 332.
Bannister, Elizabeth, 618.
Barber, ——, 283, 426, 606.
Barber, Dr., 284.
Barber, Benjamin, 472.
Barber, D., 425.
Barber, D. L., 304.
Barber, Dan, 525,
Barber, D. & R., 425.
Barber, E. H., 425, 426.
Barber, E. H. & D., 425.
Barber, E. W., 416.
Barber, J., 402.
Barber & Ladd, 425.
Barber, Tommy, 521.
Barclay, J. S., 323, 326.
Barker, Rev., 482.
Barker, Joel, 402.
Barker, L., 281.
Barleycorn, John, 532.
Barlow, N., 294.
Barnes, ——, 160, 370, 380.
Barnes, Dr., 620.
Barnes, Charles E., 350.
Barnes, George W., 387.
Barnes, Lucius, 279.
Barnes, Mary J., 618.
Barnes, Orlando M., 3, 100, 107, 430, 468.
Barney, Cromwell, 319, 320, 324, 325, 326.
Barney, Elizabeth, 326.
Barney, Nathaniel, 348, 349.
Barnhart Bros., 273.
Barnum, ——, 527.
Barnum, L. B., 483.
Baron, Judge Nathaniel, 116.
Barr, Lewis, 639.
Barre, Antoine Joseph Lefevre de la (see La Barre).
Barry, Edmund D., 288.
Barry, John, 517.
Barry, Gov. John S., 38, 103, 120, 135, 311, 466.
Barry, Kate, 446.
Bartlett, Rev. A. R., 237.
Bartlett, Charles, 359.
Bartlett, Prof. E. N., 411.
Bartlett, O., 574.
Barton, Mrs., 356.
Barton, Edwin, 447.
Baskett, ——, 173.
Bassett, Charles, 459.
Bassett, Col. Chauncey J., 281, 286.
Bassett, Elisha B., 273, 281, 285, 286, 287.
Bassitt, Hiram, 280, 285.
Bates, Rev., 437.
Bates, Judge Frederick, 122.
Bates, George C., 5, 7, 11, 244, 245.
Bates, Harriet A., 482.
Bates, J., 430.
Bates, James, 521.
Bates, Morgan, 273, 464.
Bates, Stillman, 569.
Bates, W. R., 334.
Bates, William R., 464.
Battey, R., 402.
Baughman, A. D., 415.
Baughman, Rev. John A., 236, 237, 238.
Baughman, John C., 324.
Baw-bees, 369.
Baxter, Mrs. Joseph, 545.
Baxter, Judge Witter J., 2, 3, 4, 5, 107, 497, 503.
Bayard, ——, 487.
Bayliss, Rev. J. H., 226, 227, 232, 236.
Beach, Dr. Asahel, 375, 376.
Beach, Cholet Cady, 376.
Beach, Elisha, 573, 598.
Beach, Martha A., 376.
Beach, Mary, 375.
Beach, Mary A., 376.
Beach, Michael, 569, 576.
Beach, Dr. Thomas, 375.
Beach, Thomas S., 376.
Beach, Wait, 433, 434, 436, 437.
Beahan, Charles C., 441.
Beals, A. W., 280.
Beals, Joseph, 553.
Beaman, Fernando C., 124.
Bean, J. G., 406.
Beard, Alex., 334.
Beardslee, Gillies & Co., 459.
Beardsley, Ezra, 150.
Beardsley, John W., 566.
Bears, Rev., 288.
Bears, Truman, 610.
Beaubien, Miss, 645.
Beaubien, Charles, 26, 149, 192.
Beauclerc, ——, 661, 664, 665.

Beaufait, Col., 565.
Beauharnois, Charles de la Boische de Marquis, 114, 118.
Beauvais, Sieur, 664.
Bebee, Eli, 610.
Beckwith, Dr., 474.
Beecher, Charles H., 438.
Beehunter, ——, 307, 308.
Beers, Abel, 620.
Beers, J., 401, 402.
Beers, Marcus, 268.
Beesmer, Milton, 346.
Begole, Fox & Co., 441, 457.
Begole, Gov. Josiah W., 100, 111, 124, 266, 431, 446, 457, 463, 467.
Begole, Mrs. Harriet A., 111, 266, 449.
Belcher, Elisha, 131, 133, 136.
Belcher, Rev. Joseph, 356.
Belding, Benjamin F., 405.
Belding, Ebenezer, 569.
Bell, ——, 174, 175, 176.
Bell, A. F., 474, 475, 476.
Bell, D. V., 350.
Bell, R., 401.
Bellinger, O. B., 281.
Belote, Abel, 610.
Bement, Rev. R. B., 356.
Benedict, Nathan, 425.
Benedict, W. U., 422, 423, 426.
Bennett, ——, 24, 498, 508.
Bennett, Lieut, 24.
Bennett, Allen, 499, 508.
Bennett, Frank, 376.
Bennett, Rev. Isaac. 242, 243.
Bennett, Isaiah, 508.
Bennett, Mrs. Joseph, 556.
Bennett, Maggie, 446.
Bennett, Mrs. Mary A., 376.
Benson, G., 280.
Benson, Peter, 555.
Benson, Silas, 553.
Bentley, B. L., 422.
Bentley, Benjamin, 563.
Benton, E. H., 425.
Benton, Eli P., 563.
Benton, M., 563.
Benton, O., 425.
Benton, Thomas H., 146.
Bergeron, Joseph, 35, 36.
Bergeron, Simon, 35.
Berkeley, ——, 614.
Bernard, John B., 504.
Berrien, John M., 319.
Berry, Bethsheba, 556.
Berry Brothers, 478.
Berry, John, 504, 517.
Berry, Joseph H., 644.
Berthiaume, Andre, 34, 36.
Bertiaume, Andrew, see Andre.
Bertram, Rev. G., 289.
Besley, William, 3, 106-108.
Betts, Otis, 468.
Bickford, Rev. L., 289.
Biddle, Misses, 645.
Biddle, Maj. John, 37, 103, 123, 143, 216, 246.
Biddle, Nicholas, 37.
Biddle, W. S., 645.
Bidwell, Mrs. Helen, 360.
Bierce, Eleanor, 295.
Bigelow, George, 281.
Bigelow, Dr. R. M., 281, 284.
Bigler, Philip, 568, 582.
Bigsby, George, 281, 294.
Bigsby, John, 294.
Bigsby, S., 294.
Billette, Ignace, 35.
Billings, Rev. Alvan, 236, 239, 242, 243, 356.
Billings, Rev. Alvin, see Alvan.
Billings, C., 295.
Billings, C. L., 295.
Billings, C. T., 295.
Billings, E. G., 306.
Billings, J., 280.
Billings, John H., 305.
Billman, Rev. Ira C., 491.
Bills, W. H., 292.
Bingham, Rev. A. J., 289.
Bingham, Rev. Abel, 5.
Bingham, Elijah G., 280, 282, 285, 286.
Bingham, E. J., 286.
Bingham, Henry H., 100, 496, 498, 503.
Bingham, Gov. Kinsley S., 103, 121, 123, 438.
Bingham, Luvia, 287.
Bingham, Stephen D., 266.
Bird, Captain, 28, 29, 35.
Bird, Rev. Robert, 236.
Birdsall, Adelaide, 466.
Birdsall, James, 438, 466.
Birge, ——, 599.
Birney, David B., 322.
Birney, James, 324, 326, 327.

Birney, James G., 321, 322, 324, 329, 332.
Bishop, D., 251.
Bishop, Giles, 564.
Bishop, Henry, 4, 100, 500.
Bishop, Levi, 5, 98, 107, 406, 499, 500, 537, 541, 655.
Bishop, Mrs. Levi, 537.
Bissel, Theodore, 553.
Bissell, Rev. William A., 219.
Bittenbender, Henry, 610.
Bittenbender, Peter, 610.
Bixby, David, 553.
Bixley, Justin, 568.
Black Hawk, 584, 585, 613.
Blackman, ——, 507, 510.
Blackman, Henry E., 7.
Blackmar, Charles, 553.
Blackmar, Sylvester, 553.
Blades, Rev. F. A., 236, 237.
Blair, Gov. Austin, 121, 124, 398, 508.
Blair, Sarah, 556.
Blake, Col., 176.
Blake, Chesley, 565.
Blakeley, W. I., 546.
Blanchard, George, 610.
Blanchard, J. C., 476.
Blanchard, Rev. Jonathan, 236.
Blanchard, L. G., 8.
Blanchard, S. G., 266.
Blanchard, Stillman, 244, 553.
Blanchard, W. H., 291.
Blanford, John, 556.
Blashford, see Blashfield.
Blashfield, ——, 386, 389, 511.
Blay, Joseph, 35.
Bligh, Theodore M., 330.
Bligh, Thomas M., 332.
Bliss, ——, 282.
Bliss, Harvey, 553.
Bliss, T., 280.
Bliss, W. A., 280.
Bliss, Rev. W. H. C., 280, 288, 314.
Blodgett, Cephas, 396.
Blood E. F., 7.
Bloss, ——, 615.
Blowers, Rev. R. L., 242, 243.
Bodine, William H., 350, 426.
Bohm, H., 291.
Boies, John R., 413.
Bolte, Rev. C. G., 483.
Bolton, Mrs. A. L., 503.
Bond, ——, 284.
Bond, Elial, 392.
Bond, J. W., 280.
Bond, Samuel, 405.
Bonsal, Lieut., 180.
Boodys, ——, 386.
Booher, F., 283.
Booher, H., 283.
Boone, Capt., 84.
Boone, Daniel, 19.
Booth, Judge Henry H., 280, 285, 286, 287, 289.
Booth, Norman S., 392.
Booth, Z., 280.
Borden, Almon D., 545.
Borland, James T., 553.
Born, E. B., 281, 291.
Bortles, Mrs., 620.
Bostwick, Mrs. 296, 297.
Bosworth, B., 401.
Bosworth, Joseph, 405, 406.
Botsford, Dr. Alva H., 544, 548.
Botsford, John W., 558.
Boturini, ——, 46.
Bouchon, ——, 308.
Boult, ——, 363.
Bourasso, M. D., 333.
Bourns, Rev. Alfred F., 237.
Bours, A. L., 4, 11, 109.
Bovee, S. C., 292.
Bowen, D., 404.
Bowen, Hannah, 396.
Bowen, Rossell, 397.
Bowman, Col., 23, 24.
Bowman, Joseph R., 567.
Bowman. William F., 610.
Boyd, Ensign, 93.
Boyd, Mrs., 597.
Bracelin, D., 281.
Brackett, Martin S., 397, 399, 400, 401.
Braddock, H. D., 325.
Bradford, E. N., 333.
Bradish, Prof. Alvah, 107, 644.
Bradley, Edward, 123.
Bradley, Rev. George, 243.
Bradley, Henry M., 326, 328, 330.
Bradley, Nathan B., 124, 328, 337.
Brady, Capt., 29.
Brady, Hannah, 87.
Brady, Gen. Hugh, 84, 87, 88, 90, 91, 92, 93, 94, 95, 96, 367, 368, 370, 371, 382.
Brady, James, 84, 92, 93, 96.
Brady, Jane, 87.

Brady, Capt. John, 84, 92.
Brady, John, Jr., 84, 85, 93, 96.
Brady, Mrs. Mary, 84, 85.
Brady, Preston, 87.
Brady, Robert, 96.
Brady, Capt. Samuel, 84, 85, 87, 93, 94, 95, 96.
Brady, Sarah, 87.
Brady, William P., 87, 96.
Bragg, Gen. Braxton, 169, 170, 172, 174, 177, 185.
Braginton, William, 610.
Brakeman, Rev. Josiah, 242, 243.
Branch, R. W., 430.
Brant, Chief, 32.
Brasseur de Bourbourg, Abbe, 46, 47.
Braubin, Charles, 34.
Brayman, James, 346.
Brazau, Babt., 36.
Breckenridge, Rev. G. W., 242, 243.
Breed, Silas, 635.
Breeze, ——, 315.
Brevoorts, ——, 615.
Brewer, Mark S., 124.
Breze, Duc de, 118.
Bridgman, Charles T., 460.
Briggs, Daniel B., 3, 7, 100, 108.
Briggs, Judge Hervey C., 286, 540.
Briggs, Mrs. H. C., 287.
Briggs & Lehman, 291.
Briggs, N., 280.
Brigham, Dr., 160.
Bristol, Oliver, 549.
Britain, Calvin, 103.
Britain, Rev. Flavel, 242, 243.
Brittain, Capt. R. C., 304, 305.
Brittain, Rev. William, 482.
Britton, John C., 558.
Broad, Charles, 476.
Broca, ——, 203.
Brockett, Prof. G. L., 445.
Brockfield, William, 579.
Brockway, S., 281.
Brockway, Rev. William H., 4, 5, 158, 159, 160, 240, 241, 242, 243, 437.
Brodhead, Col., 24, 29, 31, 93.
Brogger, Father, 357.
Bronson, ——, 149.
Bronson, A., 430.
Bronson, Rev. Alfred, 235, 238.
Bronson, Daniel, 561, 569.
Bronson, Henry O., 561, 568.
Bronson, Titus, 537.
Brooks, A., 405.
Brooks, Mrs. Anna, 554.
Brooks, Nathan, 403.
Brooks, R. W., 280.
Brooks, William, 350.
Brouex, Father De, see De Brouex.
Broughton, A. W., 636.
Brouwer, ——, 297.
Brown, ——, 344, 521.
Brown, Dr., 594.
Brown, Miss Abi, 554.
Brown, A. H., 360.
Brown, Rev. Arza, 236, 239.
Brown, Charles, 362.
Brown, Charles S., 451, 453.
Brown, Rev. Daniel E., 438, 482.
Brown, Dr. David E., 522, 523.
Brown, Calvin, 553.
Brown, Egbert, 4.
Brown, E. Lakin, 522, 524, 526, 542.
Brown, F., 404.
Brown, Rev. G. C., 242.
Brown, Rev. G. W., 243.
Brown, H., 404.
Brown, Rev. H. N., 237.
Brown, Rev. H. W., 237.
Brown, Rev. Henry H., 351, 362.
Brown, Dr. Isaac, 522.
Brown, J., 404.
Brown, James, 517.
Brown, James W., 7.
Brown, John, 522.
Brown, John T., 4.
Brown, Gen. Joseph W., 4, 6, 142, 244, 488, 496, 554, 555, 557.
Brown, P. W., 406.
Brown, Ruth, 397.
Brown, Rev. S. S., 482.
Brown, Deacon Samuel, 525.
Brown, Stephen F., 518, 537, 541.
Brown, T. H., 422.
Brown, Thomas L., 446.
Brown, W. F., 280.
Brown, W. H., 280, 288.
Brown, Watson, 281.
Brown, William, 359.
Brown, Rev. Z. C., 243.
Browne, L., 449.
Brownell, E., 280.
Brownell, E. Jr., 280.
Brownell, Rev. Elijah, 553, 555.

Brownell, J., 280.
Brownell, Thomas C., 543.
Browning, George, 384, 391.
Browning, Mrs. George, 391.
Browning, George S., 426.
Brownsberger, S., 355.
Brownson, Lieut., 56.
Brownson, C. C., 281.
Brownson, Harry, 567, 578.
Brucher, Gustav, 361.
Bruner, J., 293, 294.
Brunnell, Asa, 473.
Brunson, William, 268.
Brush, Alfred, 645, 646.
Brush, Alfred E., 26, 644, 645, 647.
Brush, Mrs. Alfred E., 645.
Bryan, Samuel F., 590.
Bryant, Samuel Treat, 573.
Bryant, William Cullen, 307.
Bryce, J. C., 361.
Buchanan, James, 134, 136.
Buchanan, John L., 446.
Buck, ——, 315.
Buck, Rev. D. D., 236.
Buck, George, 610.
Buckingham, ——, 406.
Buckingham, Lewis, 431, 435, 436, 437.
Buckland, ——, 596, 599.
Buckland, D. C., 599.
Buckles, Rev. A., 240.
Buckles, Rev. James M., 236.
Buckley, George W., 350.
Bucks, Neshin, 515.
Buel, Alexander W., 123.
Buell, Gen., 167, 168, 172.
Buell, Rev. J. I., 356.
Buell, Samuel, 356.
Bugbee, Daniel, 555.
Bullock, ——, 606.
Bullock, D. F., 426.
Bullock, Elijah, 567.
Bullock, John, 334.
Bunker, Abram, 504.
Buntin, John, 559.
Burbank, William, 562, 569.
Burch, ——, 586, 587.
Burden, ——, 530.
Burdon, John, 326.
Burges, H., 292.
Burgess, Rev. Oliver, 242.
Burhans, W. P., 476.
Burke, ——, 613.
Burlingame, Anson, 346, 347.
Burlingame, Joel, 346, 347.
Burnet, ——, 388.
Burnett, Capt., 27.
Burnett, Rev. W. Q., 237.
Burns, Daniel, 326.
Burns, Rev. David, 241, 243.
Burns, I. D., 134.
Burns, James, 229.
Burr, C., 430, 431.
Burrington, Capt. R., 325.
Burroughs, ——, 379.
Burroughs, Hiram, 409.
Burrows, Daniel, 568.
Burrows, Julius C., 124.
Burson, ——, 521.
Burson, Aaron, 521, 524.
Burson, Isaiah, 522.
Burt, Judge William A., 577, 586, 591.
Burtch, Jonathan, 326.
Burton, Dr. Charles S., 351.
Burtt & Allen, 579.
Bury, Rev. Richard, 216, 217.
Busby, ——, 606.
Busenbark, ——, 457.
Busenbark & Stowe, 457.
Bush, ——, 274.
Bush, A. P., 281.
Bush, Rev. Augustus, 357.
Bush, Mrs. Charles P., 7.
Bush, Mrs. Hannah, 559.
Bush, J., 280, 281.
Bush, J. D., 284.
Bush, John J., 3, 8, 106.
Bush, T., 281.
Bush & Thomas, 49.
Bush, W., 431.
Bushnell, F. 406.
Bushong, ——, 296.
Buskirk, Lt., 85.
Butler, ——, 303, 308, 309.
Butler, A. S., 313.
Butler, Mrs. A. S., 310, 313.
Butler, Benjamin F., 141, 142, 145.
Butler, Charles W., 313.
Butler, H., 404.
Butler, Maj. James G., 301.
Butler, William G., 301, 303, 305, 308, 309.
Butson, George W., 568.
Butterfield, Rev. Horatio Q. 411, 413.
Butterfield, Ira H., Jr., 268.

Buttolph, Rev. H. D., 482.
Button, Jesse, 244.
Butts, Abram, 602, 606.
Byington, Rev. Joel, 356.
Bylair, Francois, 35.
Byng, Admiral, 118.
Byron, Rev., 288.
Byron, Lord, 504.

C.

Cade, Joseph, 615.
Cade, Stephen W., 609, 615.
Cade, Thomas, 615.
Cadillac, De La Motte, 655.
Cadle, Rev. Richard F., 215, 216.
Cady, Gen. Cholet, 376.
Cady, L. Y., 292.
Cady, Walter, 362.
Caldwell, Captain, 21.
Caldwell, J. M., 351.
Calhoun, Abner, 521.
Calhoun, Alvin, 613, 614.
Calhoun, John C., 53, 146.
Calkins, Dr. A. B., 284.
Calkins, A. E., 281, 286, 290, 291.
Calkins, A. R., 281.
Calkins, B., 294.
Calkins, C. W., 281, 287.
Calkins, Mrs. Dr., 313.
Calkins, Dr. F. M., 274, 292.
Calkins, John, 545.
Calkins, John M., 564.
Caller, Rev. David, 237.
Callieres, Bonnevus, Louis Hector, Chevalier de, 114, 118.
Callum, L. M., 606.
Calvert, H., 292.
Cameron, Alex., 532.
Camp, Mrs., 619.
Camp, Earl, 558.
Campau, Mrs. Antoine, 545.
Campau, Miss Cecile, 213.
Campau, Charles, 35.
Campau, Francis, 433.
Campau, Jacques, 27.
Campau, L. P., 644.
Campau, Louis, 279, 308, 470.
Campbell, ——, 633.
Campbell, Miss, 644.
Campbell, Miss, 390.
Campbell, Alex., 247, 568.
Campbell, Henry M., 216, 217.
Campbell, J., 292.
Campbell, James, 393.
Campbell, Judge James V., 4, 7, 50, 114, 116, 213, 364, 644, 650, 656.
Campbell, Mrs. James V., 644.
Campbell, Lawrence, 384, 385, 389, 390, 393, 394, 402.
Campbell, Mrs. Lawrence, 394.
Campbell, P., 401.
Campbell, Robert, 405.
Campbell, Judge Sidney S., 320, 324, 332, 333.
Campbell, V. V., 274, 275.
Campbell, Rev. W. J., 237.
Campbell, William M., 350.
Carl, Isaac, 6, 469.
Carleton, Sir Guy, 15, 16, 18, 21, 32, 114, 115, 119.
Carlyle, Thomas, 528.
Carmel, ——, 425.
Carpenter, ——, 385.
Carpenter, Dr., 389, 391, 394.
Carpenter, Mrs. Dr., 389.
Carpenter, A., 281.
Carpenter, A. B., 281.
Carpenter, Abner, 389, 395.
Carpenter, Powell, 568.
Carpenter, William, 389.
Carpenter, William R., 384.
Carr, A. F., 471.
Carrie, Corp. Joseph, 34.
Carrier, A., 430.
Carrier, Joseph, 35.
Carroll, C. H., 406.
Carter, ——, 291.
Carter, C., 292.
Carter, Emma S., 418.
Carter, H., 281.
Carter, Mrs. H., 292.
Carter, O. S., 439.
Carter, Olive, 555.
Carter, William, 356, 418.
Carter, Mrs. William, 356.
Case, A., 281.
Case, A. D., 281.
Case, George, 472, 590.
Case, H. G., 281.
Case, Horace, 553.
Case, Morgan, 500, 503.
Case, Rev. William, 228, 235, 237, 238.
Cash, ——, 250.

Caskey, J., 291.
Cass, Gov. Lewis, 51, 53, 103, 115, 119, 120, 121, 123, 139, 142, 190, 194, 215, 222, 223, 225, 348, 432, 549, 560, 566, 568, 573, 576, 597, 628.
Cassida, T., 401.
Caster, Rev. Elisha E., 236, 237.
Castle, Asa, 567, 577.
Castle, Lemuel, 567, 577.
Catherwood, ——, 46.
Catlin, Elijah, 332.
Catlin, Israel, 324, 328, 333.
Catout, Joseph, 549.
Cha-a-quet, ——, 613.
Chabert, Capt. Louis Jeancaire, 27, 28. 34, 35.
Chaddock, J. W., 291.
Chadwick, B. F., 629.
Chaffee, ——, 274, 279, 292.
Chaffee, Mrs., 229.
Chaffee, A., 280.
Chaffee, Allen, 553.
Chaffee, Ira, 278, 280, 282, 284, 291.
Chaffee, P., 280, 291.
Chamberlain, Dr., 223, 224.
Chamberlain, Addison, 570.
Chamberlain, Harmon A., 328.
Chamberlain, John M., 570.
Chamberlain, William, 100.
Chambers, Nelson, 286.
Chambers, Mrs. William, 436.
Champe, Melvin D., 8, 266.
Champs, des Antoine, see Des Champs.
Champion, J. B., 281.
Champion, R. J., 342.
Champlain, Samuel de, 114, 118, 648, 650.
Champlin, E. P., 553.
Champlin, John W., 547.
Chandler, Rev. D. M., 241.
Chandler, Zachariah, 109, 123, 139, 140, 465.
Chanon, Baubautt, 35.
Chapin, Almon Morris, 2, 3, 6, 107, 468, 469.
Chapin, D. C., 285, 286.
Chapin, Levi, 468.
Chapin, Rev. S. S., 622.
Chapin, T., 285.
Chapin, Volney, 639.
Chaplin, Rev. Jonathan E., 236, 242.
Chapman, D. P., 484.
Chapman, Elizur, 505.
Chapoton, Alex., 111, 266.
Chapoton, Sophia, 339.
Chappel, Mrs. (Mother Handsome), 568, 573.
Chappel, A. E., 422.
Chappel, Joseph, 405.
Chapu, Benjamin, 35, 36.
Chapue, Benjamin, see Chapu.
Charleboy, see Touissant Charleboy.
Charleboy, Touissant, 35, 36.
Charles, King, 636.
Charon, Sergt. Anton, 34.
Chartier, Jacques, 35.
Chase, ——, 568.
Chase, Lieut., 180.
Chase, Charles P., 413.
Chase, Joseph, 402, 405.
Chase, N., 402.
Chaste, Eymard de, 117.
Chasteaufort, Marc Antoine de Bras de Fer Sieur de, 114, 118.
Chatfield, Elnathan, 563.
Chatfield, J. L., 425.
Chatfield, Rev. Larmon, 240, 241, 242, 243.
Chatham, ——, 18.
Chatterton, Harriet G., 556.
Chauvin, Captain de, 117.
Chauvin, Jacques, 35.
Checum-quassy, 369.
Cheeney, A., 281.
Chene, Capt., 19, 28, 35.
Chene, Isadore, 27, 34.
Cheney, Rev. R., 239.
Chesne, Isadore, see Cheney.
Chichester, Abijah, 279.
Chichester, Ira, 292, 313.
Child, Lieut. George E., 454.
Childs, T., 281.
Chilson, Calvin C. C., 326, 332.
Chinchett, Pierre, 36.
Chipman, Dr., 575.
Chipman, Mrs. Dr., 575.
Chipman, A. B., 7.
Chipman, C. A., 569.
Chipman, Judge Henry, 122, 224.
Chipman, Judge J. Logan, 498, 499.
Chipman, John S., 123.
Chisholm, Mrs. Lucy Whittlesy, 153.
Chisholm, Peter, 153, 393, 404.
Choate, Rufus, 130.
Choate, Rev. Samuel, 237.

Chobart, Louis Jeancaire, see Chabert.
Chochack, see Chochuck.
Cho-chuck, 369, 370, 371.
Christmas, ——, 582, 583, 584.
Christiancy, Judge Isaac, 49, 116, 123, 364.
Chubb, E. A., 484.
Church, ——, 426.
Church, C. H., 402.
Church, D., 291.
Church, Dan H., 446.
Church, Earl T., 414, 417.
Church, Judah, 568.
Church, P. H., 274.
Church, S. S., 404, 425.
Church, Thomas B., 498, 547.
Clapp, Asel, 610.
Clapp, Benjamin, 54.
Clapp, E., 361.
Clapp, Mrs. I. F., 314.
Clapp & Lilly, 291.
Clapp, Mrs. M. W., 499, 514.
Clark, ——, 328, 368, 580, 582, 583, 584.
Clark, Lieut., 180.
Clark, A. K., 641.
Clark, A. L., 362.
Clark, Albert Mitchell, 641, 642.
Clark, Gov. Alfred, 119.
Clark, Benjamin, 553.
Clark, Rev. Calvin, 153, 356.
Clark, D., 402.
Clark, Daniel, 349.
Clark, Mrs. Daniel, 349.
Clark, Dr. Daniel, 449, 451, 454.
Clark & Daniels, 402.
Clark, Darius, 390.
Clark, E. L., 556.
Clark, Elijah, 517.
Clark, Elijah B., 566.
Clark, Elizur, 504.
Clark, F., 405.
Clark, Franklin S., 266.
Clark, George, 549.
Clark, Maj. George Rogers, 20, 21, 22, 23, 29, 30, 32.
Clark, Horace, 531.
Clark, I., 406.
Clark, Joel, 521.
Clark, Capt. John, 38.
Clark, Lemuel, 640.
Clark, Lewis A., 351.
Clark, M., 406.
Clark, Martha S., 641.
Clark, Ogden, 561.
Clark, Robert, Jr., 610.
Clark, Rufus, 568.
Clark, S. W., 430.
Clark, Samuel, 39, 124, 134.
Clark, Dr. Samuel, 392.
Clark, Theodosia, 349.
Clark, W. F., 313.
Clark, Mrs. W. F., 313.
Clark, Walter, 136.
Clark, Walter, (Battle Creek), 362.
Clark, Webb, 292.
Clark, William A., 605, 607.
Clarke, F. S., 111.
Clarke, Hovey K., 273, 280, 284, 285.
Clarke, Lt. William, 85.
Clarkson, Mrs. M. E., 446.
Clash, J. E., 430.
Clavigero, ——, 46.
Clay, Mrs., 229.
Clay, Henry, 524.
Clement, J., 281.
Clements, Rev. S., Jr., 236, 237.
Clemons, Erastus, 403.
Clenchette, Pierre, (clerk), 35.
Cleveland, B. F., 404.
Cleveland, P. F., 451.
Clifford, T., 292.
Clifford, William, 440.
Clinton, Gov., 263, 576.
Close, Solomon, 599.
Cloud, ——, 308.
Clute, H. E. J., 275.
Clute, Lemuel, 476, 481.
Clute, Nelson M., 275.
Coates, Boyd, 273.
Coates, Dr. L. B., 284.
Coates, T., 295.
Coates, Tim, 295.
Coates, T. S., 295.
Coats, John L., 304.
Cobb, Charles M., 378.
Cobb, James, 378.
Cobb, Marshall N., 361.
Cobb, Willie, 523.
Coburn, Judge John, 122.
Cochran, Mrs. Mary, 610.
Cocker, Rev. B. F., 236.
Coder, D. S., 415.
Coeur-Va-de-bon, 662.
Coffinberry, S. C., 4, 614.

Coffinberry, T. C., 359.
Coffinberry, Wright L., 111, 266.
Cogshall, B., 454.
Cogshall, William B., 564.
Colburn, B., 280.
Colburn, J., 280.
Colby, E. & Co., 486.
Colby, Eastman, 564, 568.
Colclazer, Rev. Henry, 236, 239, 240, 241, 242, 243.
Colclazer, Rev. Hiram, 394.
Colclazer, Rev. J., 243.
Cole, ——, 94.
Cole, David, 556.
Cole, H., 281.
Cole, Horace G., 517.
Coleman, James, 570.
Coleman, Spencer, 561.
Coleman, William H., 348, 349.
Collier, —— 361.
Collier, E. P., 378.
Collier, Hattie M., 360, 361.
Collier, Miss Jessie, 361.
Collier, R., 292.
Collier, Stephen, 377.
Collier, Stephen, Sr., 366, 377.
Collier, Victory P., 351, 366, 367, 378.
Collins, ——, 345.
Collins, B., 281.
Collins, George W., 564.
Collins, Morgan L., 342, 343.
Collins, Rev. Wellington H., 236, 237, 238.
Colton, H., 402, 404.
Colton, John B., 545.
Colvin, William, 555.
Columbus, ——, 41.
Comstock, Deacon, 618.
Comstock, Elder, 599.
Comstock, A. J., 553.
Comstock, Anna B., 554.
Comstock, Darius, 513, 553, 554.
Comstock, E. B., 599.
Comstock, Horace H., 272.
Comstock, Levi, 281, 283.
Comstock, Nathan, 553.
Comstock, Dr. O. C., 3, 4, 11, 53, 100, 103, 106, 107, 108, 109, 113, 152, 371, 377, 378, 541.
Comstock, Phoebe S., 554.
Conant, Shubael, 581.
Condé, Henry II de Bourbon, Prince of 117.
Cone, Rev. Spencer, 141.
Conely, ——, 508.
Conger, James L., 123.
Conger, Omer D., 124.
Conlin, Mrs. Nancy, 638.
Connor, Henry, 570.
Connor, R. H., 645.
Conolly, Dr. John, 17.
Convis, Ezra, 348.
Convis, Mrs. Ezra, 356.
Convis, Samuel, 348.
Conviss, E., 401.
Conway, John, 348.
Cook, A., 281.
Cook, Edward, 567.
Cook, Frank P., 274.
Cook, H. J., 281.
Cook, Mrs. Hannah E. A., 618.
Cook, Deacon Henry, 374.
Cook, J., 280, 281.
Cook, John P., 443.
Cook, Levi, 598.
Cook, Lewis A., 556.
Cook, M., 281.
Cook, Ora, 618.
Cook, P., 281.
Cook, Peter J., 306.
Cook, Mrs. Solon, 638.
Cook, W. N., 544, 545, 546.
Cooley, Rev. E. H., 356, 481.
Cooley, John, 342.
Cooley, Judge Thomas M., 116, 528.
Coon, Miss Cassandra, 616.
Coon, David, 638.
Cooper, Gen., 178.
Cooper, Rev. Benjamin, 239.
Cooper, Ellen Emily, 557.
Cooper, George B., 124.
Cooper, George S., 476, 481.
Cooper, Harris, 425.
Cooper, Rev. James, 452.
Cooper, James Fenimore, 271, 307, 310.
Copeland, Judge Josiah T., 116.
Copley, Alexander B., 100, 625, 630.
Corbin, J. H., 422.
Cordley, Rev., 452.
Cornell, A., Jr., 472.
Cornell, Rev. Alfred, 472, 480, 482.
Corner, William, 304.
Cornings, Sherman, 348.
Cornwallis, Lord, 30, 32.
Corson, Rev. L. H., 375.

Cortez, ——, 45, 47.
Cosart, Rev. John, 242, 243.
Coston, Rev. Zarah H., 236, 237, 238, 239.
Cote, Joseph, 35.
Cothren, Nathan, 530, 531.
Cottrell & Babcock, 275.
Cottrell, C. B., 331.
Cottrell, Mrs. C. B., 331.
Cottrell, E. W., 268.
Cottrell, J. F., 331.
Courcelles, Daniel de Remy, Chevalier, 114.
Cousins, J. C., 292.
Covell, Leonard, 545, 546, 547.
Covert, Andrew, 619.
Covert, Mrs. Mary, 619, 620.
Covey, Young, 631.
Cowgill, John, 521.
Cowles, Albert E., 8, 266.
Cowles, Ed., 464.
Cowles, H., 342.
Cowles, Joseph P., 8, 266.
Cox, Mrs. C., 360.
Cox, Edward C., 100, 375.
Cox, Rev. R. G., 357.
Craig, Robert, 555.
Cramburn, Rev. M. B., 356.
Cramahe, Henry T., (President), 119.
Cranage, Thomas, Jr., 337.
Crandall, William, 434.
Crane, Judge A. D., 160.
Crane, Charles H., 639.
Crane, Rev. Elijah, 236, 237, 240, 241, 242, 243, 356.
Crane, George, 513.
Crane, H. D., 292.
Crane, Rev. J. B., 481.
Crane, I. M., 430.
Crane, Roswell, 348, 511.
Crapo, ——, 463.
Crapo, David, 466.
Crapo, Gov. Henry H., 121, 435, 438, 439, 440, 441, 449, 454, 456, 465, 466.
Crapo, Mrs. Lydia, 466.
Crapo, W. W., 456, 466.
Crapsey, D. W., 406.
Crary, ——, 281.
Crary & Hughes, 398.
Crary, Isaac E., 103, 123, 145, 387, 389, 393, 398, 401, 406.
Crawford, ——, 179.
Crawford, H., 3.
Crawford, Capt. John, 32, 85.
Crawford, Rev. Riley C., 237, 266, 356.
Crawford, Robert, 491.
Crawford, Mrs. Sally, 491.
Cray, J. S., 281.
Creswell, A. J., 131.
Crippen, B., 342.
Crippen, Lorenzo D., 342, 343, 345, 346.
Crippen, Philo H., 342, 343, 346.
Crissey, T. W., 450, 451.
Crittenden, Wallace, 279.
Croghan, Col. George, 13, 14.
Cronk, James, 436.
Cronk, James W., 603, 604.
Cronk, Norton, 603.
Cronk & Osborn, 291.
Crook, Ramsay, 53, 125.
Crosby, ——, 309.
Crosby, R. R., 306.
Cross, Judge, 541.
Cross, Cyrus J., 610.
Cross, Daniel, 553.
Cross & Holbrook, 342.
Cross, Japheth, 7.
Cross, William H., 342, 343, 499, 612.
Crossman, Col., 434.
Crossman, Mrs. A. T., 448.
Croswell, Gov. Charles M., 121, 498, 538.
Croswell, J. R., 483.
Crouse, James, 304.
Crowsfeather, ——, 308.
Crowl, Capt. Lyman, 323.
Crutchfield, A. J., 325.
Cuddy, Thomas, 610.
Culver, Alvin N., 334.
Culver, J. C., 426.
Cuming, Rev. Frances H. 219, 356.
Cummings, Charles, 402, 403.
Cummings, William, 304.
Cunningham, A. T., 422.
Currey, E. J. R., 274.
Curtis, A. B., 291.
Curtis, E. W., 473.
Curtis, Eli, 567.
Curtis, J. B. F., 453.
Curtis, Jeremiah, 563.
Curtis, J. S., 453.
Curtis, John, 503.
Curtis, John J., 342, 346.
Curtis, Nathan, 563.
Curtis, Newton, 409.
Cushway, Benjamin, 318.

Cutler ——, 150.
Cutler, Andrew, 370.
Cutler, Leonard, 610.
Cutler, P., 279.
Cutter, Stephen S., 266.

D.

Daggett, E., 504.
Daglish, William, 319, 333.
Daily, Mike, 322.
Daly, E., 292.
Damville, Frances Christopher de Levis, Duc de, 118.
Danaugh, Archibald, 560.
Dane, ——, 214.
Danforth, Joanna Reed, 544.
Daniels, David H., 348, 349, 356.
Daniels, Rev. Joseph L., 413.
Daniels, L. M., 476.
Daniels, Lyman I., 131, 132.
Daniels, Mary, 555.
Daniels, T., 401.
Darling, Columbus, 506.
Darling, S., 430.
Darrow, Mrs. Augusta, 592.
Darrow, Frances, 591, 592, 599.
Darrow, Frank, 359, 483.
Darwin, Rev. Alanson, 553.
D'Assissi, Clara, see St. Claire.
Daugherty, Thomas, 342, 343.
Davenport, Judge, 602, 603, 606.
Davenport, Mrs., 602.
Davidson, Rev. James F., 236, 237, 239, 240, 241, 243, 356, 394.
Davidson, Peter, 638.
Davidson, Simeon, 553.
Davies, John, 403.
Davis, ——, 192, 590.
Davis, A. L., 111.
Davis, Abner, 568.
Davis, Alonzo C., 266.
Davis, Rev. Alpheus, 235.
Davis, D. Doane, 280, 283, 285, 286.
Davis, Dan D., 280.
Davis, E. A., 454.
Davis, Rev. E. L., 356.
Davis, Jefferson, 2, 139, 286, 525.
Davis, John, 567.
Davis, Joshua, 569.
Davis, Rev. L., 240, 241, 242, 243.
Davis, Rev. L. P., 237.
Davis, Mrs. Nancy G., 596, 600.
Davis, Perry J., 280, 286, 290.
Davis, Mrs. Perry J., 313.
Davis, Phineas, 321.
Davis, Rosevelt, 504.
Davis, S., 291.
Davis, Willard, 383, 422, 423.
Davison, J., 280.
Davison, John, 504.
Davison, M., 461, 462.
Davison, Robert, 504.
Dawe, Rev. William, 226, 227, 236.
Dawson, ——, 531.
Dawson, George, 273.
Dawson, J., 280.
Day, A., 401, 402.
Day, F., 281.
Dayton, John, 463.
Dean, A. J., 554.
Dean, Henry, 610.
Dean, Isaac, 553.
Dean, Rev. L. H., 237.
Dean, T. L., 281.
De Brouex, Father, 647.
Decker, Abram, 470.
Decker, Grant, 438.
Decker, Jesse, 566, 568.
Decker, Joseph, 555.
Dedrick, Ab. I., 285.
Degagne, Joseph, 35.
Dejean, Philip, 17, 22.
De Land, Mother, 508.
De Land, Squire, 508.
De Lud, Sieur, (see Lud de).
De Langlade, Capt. Charles, 17, 21, 24.
De Lano & Co., 291.
Delany, Rev. Mark, 241.
Della, Carey, 468.
Demerk, Pierre, 35.
Deming, Elbridge G., 568.
Deming, John J., 215.
Deneen, James, 549.
Denman, Henry B., 351, 359.
Dennis, B. W., 453.
Dennis, Elias, 553.
Denonville, James René de Brisay, Marquis de, 114, 118.
Densmore, Rev. George W., 235.
Depew, Miss Sarah, 621.
De Peyster, Maj. Arent S., 16, 17, 21, 24, 25, 27, 31, 32.
Dequindre, Fontenoy, 26, 34.

Dequindres, ——, 615.
De Rocheblave, Sir, 16, 20.
Desaunier, Louis, 35, 36.
Des Champs, Antoine, 125, 126, 128.
Desnoyer, Peter, 567, 573.
De Tocqueville, ——, 194, 600.
De Tonty, Henry, 649, 650, 652, 653, 660.
Dewey, Apollos, 597.
Dewey, Francis A., 3, 4, 5, 100, 106, 107, 108, 498, 541, 552, 557.
Dewey, George M., (Hastings), 268.
Dewey, George M,. (Flint), 438, 445.
Dewey, Mrs. G. M., (Flint), 449.
Dewey, H., 278.
Dewey, J., 570.
Dewey, J. H., 405.
Dewey, Simeon, 553.
Dewing, W. G., 526.
De Wolf, Prof. A. P., 481.
Dexter, ——, 489.
Dexter, Judge, 160.
Dexter, Celia, 489.
Dexter, I., 281.
Dexter, Samuel, 470, 471, 472, 486.
Dexter, Warner, 470.
Dexter, Windsor, 470.
Dey, A. H., 644.
Dey, Mrs. A. H., 644.
De Yoe, ——, 629.
Dezonier, Louis, see Desaunier.
Dibble, C. P., 404.
Dibble, Catherine, 555, 556.
Dibble, L. D., 359, 400.
Dickens, ——, 407.
Dickens, Ashbury, 142, 145.
Dickenson, C., 280.
Dickenson, D., 404.
Dickenson, E., 280.
Dickenson & Fenn, 291.
Dickenson, J. C., 404.
Dickenson, N., 280.
Dickenson, Rev. W. C., 356.
Dickenson, W. R., 280.
Dickey, Charles, 3, 6, 107, 367, 368, 370, 371, 372, 373, 374.
Dickinson, ——, 426.
Diel, Francis, 34.
Dimmick, Jehial B., 610.
Divine, Westbrook, 3, 100, 108, 476, 477.
Dix, Gen. John A., 184, 187.
Dixon, ——, 585, 590.
Dixon, Rev. A., 240.
Dixon, Rev. Freeman, 235.
Doane, ——, 575.
Doane, Bishop, 217.
Dodge, Gen., 585.
Dodge & Fitch, 402, 406.
Dodge, Manly C., 414.
Dodge, Maj. P. R., 187.
Dodge, Dr. T. F., 556.
Dole, Sidney, 561, 566, 567, 574.
Dole, Mrs. Sidney, 566.
Dollier, Father, 648.
Dolson, Isaac R., 477, 480.
Donahue, Rev. James F., 238.
Donaldson, F. S., 292.
Donivan, Prof. John, 451.
Donnelly, Rev. S., 482.
Doran, Michael, 441.
Dorchester, Lord (Carleton), 115, 119.
Dorrill, Capt. Marvin, 499, 500.
Doty, J., 280.
Doty, Judge James D., 122.
Doty, William B., 325.
Doud, D. & H., 292.
Dougherty, E., 350.
Doughtery, Lt. John, 84.
Dougherty, Robert, 610.
Dougherty, Lt. Samuel, 84.
Doughty, Dr. B. F., 483.
Douglass, ——, 159.
Douglass, C. C., 189.
Douglass, Judge Samuel T., 116, 644.
Dow, John, 415.
Dow, Melvin, 566.
Dow, Peter, 100.
Downer, Edward, 569.
Downing, Maj. Jack, 218.
Downs, David J., 362.
Dowsman, Michael, 157.
Doyle, Capt. John, 93.
Drake, ——, 325, 591.
Drake, John, 324, 331.
Drake, Thomas J., 559.
Draper, Alfred, 504.
Draper, Charles, 599.
Draper, Mrs. Charles, 599.
Draper, L. C., 21.
Draper, Lyman, 504, 517.
Draper, Milton J., 504, 517.
Draper, William, 599.
Dressler, ——, 304.
Driggs, John F., 124.
Drouilliard, Piere, see Pierre.

Drouilliard, Pierre, 26, 34.
Drouilliart, Joseph, 35.
Drury, S. F., 7, 412.
Dryden, S. S., 287, 291.
Dubois, P., 401, 402.
Dudley, Rev., 437.
Duffield, Bethune, 644.
Duffield, D. Bethune, 66, 91, 452, 644, 655.
Duffield, Mrs. D. Bethune, 644.
Duffield, Rev. George, D. D., 5, 6, 61, 87, 109, 452.
Duffield, George, 644.
Duffield, Prof. Samuel P., 428.
Du Lud, Sieur, (see Lud du).
Dullam, R. W., 451.
Dumont, H., 292.
Dumont, Mrs. H., 287.
Dumont, J. B., 292.
Dumont, P., 283.
Duncan, Delamore, 521.
Duncan, William, 521.
Dunmore, Gov., 17.
Dunnell, William, 11.
Dunning Brothers, 292.
Dunning, A. D., 280.
Dunning, Mrs. H. P., 313.
Dunning, John, 621, 622.
Dunning, Levi, 531.
Dunning, Mrs. Sarah, 621, 622.
Duplessis, ——, 34.
Duquender, Fontenoy, (see Duquindre).
Duquinder, D., 34.
Duquesne, de Menneville le Marquis, 114. 119.
Durand, George Harmon, 124, 438, 467.
Durand, John T., 505.
Durand, Mrs. Silence, 505.
Durfee, Austin, 565.
Durfee, Erastus, 564.
Durfee, Harvey, 565.
Durrie, Daniel S., 109.
Dwight, Miss Cornelia P., 413.
Dwinell, Benjamin T., 356.
Dwinell, Mrs. Benjamin T., 356.
Dye, Araminta, 481.
Dye & Carr, 471.
Dye, Rebecca, 481.
Dyer, J., 281.
Dyer, R., 281.
Dyer, Warren A., 274.

E.

Eager, Ben., 280, 285.
Eager, J., 280.
Eager, L., 280.
Earl, John, 523.
Earl, Rev. L. M., 356.
Earle, N. A., 547.
Earll, David, 396.
Earll, Hannah, 396.
Eastman, H., 541.
Easton, J., 401.
Eaton, Jerome B., 108, 266.
Eberts, Rev. O., 481.
Ebmeyer, ——, 274.
Eddy, Jerome, 438, 441, 454, 459.
Eddy, Joseph, 563.
Eddy, Morton, 556.
Eddy, Rev. Zachary, 413.
Edgar, ——, 48.
Edgar, William, 26.
Edgerton, Alanson, 268, 280.
Edmonds, Ed. E., 274.
Edmunds, Rev. L. M., 288.
Edmunds, Reuben, 521.
Edsell, Wilson C., 412.
Edson, John, 568.
Edwards, Capt., 599.
Edwards, Alexander A., 150.
Edwards, Maj. Abraham, 148, 151, 560.
Edwards, Rev. Arthur, Jr., 237.
Edwards, Edwin, 563.
Edwards, T. A. H., 150.
Eggleston, ——, 281.
Eggleston, B. F., 498, 514.
Eggleston, E. S., 547.
Eilett, Jacob, 565, 566.
Eldred, Rev. A. G., see A. J. Eldred.
Eldred, Rev. A. J., 236, 238, 288.
Eldridge, Robert P., 103.
Ellerby, Edward, 564.
Ellinger, D., 281, 284, 292.
Ellinger, J. G., 291.
Ellinger, S., 281.
Elliott, ——, 31, 574.
Elliott, Judge, 216.
Elliott, Rev. A. B., 239, 240, 241, 242.
Elliott, Rev. G. W., 288.
Elliott, Dr. J. C., 281, 284.
Elliott, Matthew, 18, 20, 23, 26, 31, 34.
Ellis, ——, 280.
Ellis, Mrs. Charles, 175.

Ellis, H. R., 276.
Ellis, John T., 392, 401.
Ellsworth, Charles C., 124.
Ely, (New York), 282.
Ely, Alex. L., 270, 273, 280, 281, 283, 284, 285, 286.
Ely, D., 281.
Ely, E. D., 280.
Ely, E. L., 406.
Ely, E. N., 405.
Ely, Elisha, 272, 279, 280, 285, 286.
Ely, George, 280.
Ely, Heman B., 255.
Ely, J., 281.
Ely, J. F., Jr., 283.
Ely, John F., 280.
Ely, Dr. John F., 273.
Ely, L., 406.
Ely, M., 406.
Ely, Ralph, 3, 100, 108.
Emerson, ——, 194.
Emerson, Curtis, 607, 608.
Emerson, D., 280.
Emerson, Thomas, 607.
Emmett, ——, 613.
Emmons, ——, 507, 508.
Emmons, Mrs., 508.
Engle, Jonathan, 609.
English Bros., 488.
Ensign, C. A., 302.
Ericsson, ——, 186.
Errett, Rev. Isaac, 481.
Essex, ——, 329.
Essex, John, 329.
Essex, R. P., 329.
Estabrook, A., 294.
Estabrook, B. F., 294.
Evans, Mrs. Abi B., 554, 555.
Evans, Charles, 504, 517.
Evans, Eli H., 402, 403, 404.
Evans, George, 555.
Evans, Hannah, 555.
Evans, Musgrove, 554, 555, 557.
Evans, Samuel, 555.
Evans, Vincent, 555.
Evans, William, 555.
Evarts, William M., 121.
Evens, Charles, see Evans.
Everett, Prof., 473.
Ewing, Dr. Alex., 166, 167.
Ewing, J. W., 415.

F.

Fagan, Terrence, 563.
Fairbanks, Joseph, 567, 569.
Fairchild, E. W., 564.
Fairchild, G. W., 281.
Fairchild, R., 281.
Fairchilds, B. F., 360.
Fairfield, Rev. M. W., 411.
Fairfield, Dr. W. J., 355.
Fall, Prof. Delos, 451.
Fansler, J., 281.
Fargo, ——, 472.
Fargo, D. P., 480.
Fargo, Dr. T., 487.
Farley, ——, 222, 472.
Farmer, John, 319.
Farmer, Silas, 228.
Farmer, Roxanna, 229.
Farnham, Russel, 53, 54.
Farnsworth, Elon, 103, 115, 116, 131, 135, 217, 443.
Farnsworth, Joseph, 348.
Farnsworth, William, 362.
Farrand, Jacob S., 413.
Fassett, Rev. N. S., 356.
Faverau, J. B., 36.
Fay, B. M., 443, 445.
Fay, W. L., 326, 328, 331, 332.
Fech, ——, 370.
Feek, ——, 280.
Felch, Gov. Alpheus, 5, 6, 103, 115, 120, 123, 341.
Fellows, Colonel, 521.
Fellows, C., Jr., 465.
Fellows, Charles F., 464, 465.
Fellows, Daniel, 517.
Felton, Rev. Erastus, 239.
Fenn, Albert H., 286, 292.
Fenton, Miss Addie, 468.
Fenton, Joseph S., 466.
Fenton, William M., 438, 449, 453, 466, 467, 468.
Ferguson, ——, 574.
Ferguson, Mrs. Andrew, 545.
Ferguson, Daniel, 567.
Ferguson, Mrs. William, 610.
Fero, Dr., 392.
Ferry, ——, 156.
Ferry, D. M., 413.
Ferry, Thomas W., 56, 121, 123, 124, 152.
Ferry, Rev. William M., 3, 54, 56, 58, 108, 152, 155.

Field, C., 280.
Field, H. W., 406.
Field, Moses W., 124.
Field, O. A., 292.
Field, Pliney, 553.
Field, Scott, 362.
Field, W., 280.
Fifield, George, 504.
Fifield, Henry, 517.
Fifield, James, 504.
Fifield, Osgood, 504.
Fifield, Stephen, 504.
Fifield, William, 504.
Fillmore, Calvin T., 638.
Fillmore, Millard, 638.
Finch, William, 396.
Finchley, Thomas, 27.
Finley, Rev. James B., 237, 238, 239.
Finn, William, 280, 283, 286.
Fish, Elijah S., 561, 574.
Fish, Emir, 598, 599.
Fish, Emri, see Emir.
Fish, Dr. George W., 439.
Fish, H., 425.
Fish, L., 280.
Fisher, ——, 222.
Fisher & Ely, 283.
Fisher, George, 558.
Fisher, H., 281.
Fisher, Jonas, 609.
Fisher, Pardon T., 504, 517.
Fisher, Dr. William, 556.
Fisk, ——, 292.
Fisk, Joseph Allegan, 280.
Fisk, Joseph, 3, 108, 280, 283, 284, 285, 286, 292, 313.
Fisk, Mrs. Joseph, 280.
Fisk, Lyman, 285.
Fisk, O., 280, 283.
Fiske, Rev. Lewis R., 236.
Fitch, Rev. Andrew M., 236.
Fitch, Asa, 543.
Fitch, George A., 275.
Fitch, Lodowick C., 592.
Fitzgerald, ——, 629.
Fitzgerald & O'Brien, 398.
Fitzgerald, Capt. Reuben, 384, 387, 389, 390, 391, 393, 394, 401, 404, 422.
Fitzgerald, Sarah, 384, 390.
Fitzgerald, Thomas, 103, 123.
Fitzhugh, C. C., 324.
Fitzhugh, Dr. D. H., 319, 321, 322, 324.
Fitzhugh, H. M., 323.
Fitzhugh, W. D., 324.
Flagg, W., 294.
Flandermeyer, ——, 342.
Flannegan, E., 280.
Fleming, Rev. Alanson, 242, 243.
Fleming, Sampson, 34.
Fletcher, ——, 613, 616.
Fletcher, George, 521.
Fletcher, John W., 609, 610, 616.
Fletcher, Luther, 569.
Fletcher, Rev. O. O., 289.
Fletcher, Tommy, 521.
Fletcher, Judge William A., 103, 115, 116, 134.
Fleury, John, 34, 36.
Flower, Sylvia C., 597.
Flurry, John, see Fleury.
Fogg, Edwin M., 523.
Follett, E., 402.
Follett, E. D., 281, 291.
Follett, J. D., 274, 281.
Folsom, Alexander, 323.
Folsom, Arnold & Co., 323.
Fonda, W. C., 385, 389, 393, 401.
Fonda, W. H., 362.
Foot, Mrs. Obed H., 545.
Foote, D., 430, 431.
Foote, Edward A., 379, 422.
Foote, George, 7.
Foote, Luman, 379.
Foote, Col. T., 547.
Forbes, Henry, 566.
Forbes, Joshua, 556.
Forbes, William, 286.
Ford, ——, 387.
Ford, Chandler, 350.
Fordham, F., 402, 406.
Fordham, Silas, 402, 405, 406.
Forman, Rev., 397.
Forster, John H., 7.
Forsyth & Pierson, 316.
Forsyth, William, 27.
Foster, ——, 45, 204, 208, 247.
Foster, Chloe, 601.
Foster, D. K., 368.
Foster, F. M., 453.
Foster, George, 345.
Foster, George H., 273.
Foster, J. M., 281.
Foster, Mrs. Mary E., 6, 107.
Foster, Thomas, 454, 456, 463.

Foster, Wilder D., 124.
Fowler, Nathan I., 561.
Fowler, Ralph C., 3, 100, 108, 558.
Fox, Maj., 166.
Fox, Rev., 400.
Fox, David S., 438, 457.
Fox, Dorus M., 483.
Fox, Patrick M., 470.
Fox, Robert, 229.
Frakes, Robert, 522.
Fralick, Henry, 373, 413.
Franchere, Gabriel, 53, 54.
Francis, Saint, 651.
Francis, William, 273.
Franklin, Rev., 107.
Franklin, Benjamin, 247, 494, 532.
Franks, H., 281, 292.
Fraser, Mrs., 602.
Fraser, James, 321, 322, 323, 324, 326, 329, 330, 331, 602, 603, 604, 606.
Frasier, James, 194.
Fray, Ensign, 27.
Frazee, Rev. Bradford, 239, 240, 242, 437.
Frazee, Rev. J. H., 242.
Frazer, A. D., 224.
Fredenburg, Daniel, 44.
Freeman, Bradley, 517.
Freeman, Chester H., 327, 329, 333.
Freeman, Charles, 619.
Freeman, Rev. Daniel, 228, 437.
Freeman, Ed. W., 352.
Freeman, Edmund, 517.
Freeman, F. S., 472.
Freeman, Harry, 517.
Freeman, Jared, 517.
Freeman, Rev. L. N., 289.
Freeman, Mary Ann, 618, 619.
Freeman, Polly, 595.
Freeman, Richard, 618, 619.
Freeman, Rev. Silas C., 216, 217.
Fremont, John C., 376.
French, J. B., 292.
French, Theresa A., 359.
Friend, Mrs. John, 545.
Frontenac, Louis de Buade, Count de Palluan, 114, 118, 650, 659.
Frost, J., 281.
Fulcher, Richard, 610.
Fuller, Alvah, 280, 283, 286.
Fuller, Artunedorus, 553.
Fuller, Asahel, 564.
Fuller, E. G., 7, 342.
Fuller, J. E., 292.
Fuller, Rev. James M., 235, 237.
Fuller, Jonah, 621.
Fuller, Rev. Osgood E., 219.
Fuller, S. L., 547.
Fulton, James, 560.
Fulton, Robert, 494.

G.

Gage, Gen., 17.
Gage, Rev. Franklin, 356.
Gage & Hughes, 385, 389.
Gage, R., 425.
Gage, Dr. Seneca H., 392, 397.
Gage, William, 563.
Gainsley, Mrs., 522.
Gale, George L., 528, 529, 530, 531, 532.
Galinee, Father, 648, 650.
Gallery, P., 430.
Galloway, Alex., 561, 564, 568.
Galloway, George, 590.
Galloway, James D., 570.
Gamard, Peter M., 468.
Gantt & Barton, 351.
Gardner, ——, 196, 348.
Gardner, Addison, 364.
Gardner, Prof., 455.
Gardner, J. P. & Co., 291.
Garfield, Rev., 356.
Garfield, W. F., 362.
Garland, J. J., 599.
Garner, Col., 171.
Garner, John, 564.
Garner, Thomas, 564.
Garnsey, Daniel G., 347, 348.
Garnsey, J. J., 347.
Garrison, Lyman, 326.
Garver, Jonathan, 521.
Gates, ——, 322.
Gates & Fay, 322, 332.
Gault, David T., 453.
Gault, L. R., 481.
Gautius, Lt., 21.
Gavit, Rev. E. C., 240.
Gavit, Rev. E. S., 239, 240.
Gay, Stephen R., 253.
Gearing, Rev. Hiram, 240, 241.
Geddes, A. H., 359.
Geddes, James, 395.
Generau, 470, 473.
George, ——, 596.
George, The Third, 15.

George, W. S. & Co., 3.
Gerber, ——, 302.
Gering, Rev. H., see Gearing.
Germane, ——, 598.
Germaine, Sec'y, 18, 19.
Gibault, Father, 20, 22.
Gibbs & Bradley, 397, 399.
Gibbs, G. C., 401.
Gibbs, Isaac, 404.
Gibson, ——, 508.
Gibson, Col., 20, 23, 28.
Gibson, C. W., 328.
Giddings, G. M., 566.
Giddings, Marsh, 137.
Giddings, W. P., 281.
Gidley, T. E., 502.
Gifford, Bill, 319.
Gifford, John, 553.
Gilbert, Josiah, 348.
Gilbert, Thomas D, 3, 5, 7, 100, 108, 546.
Gilchrist, Mrs. Mary, 610.
Giles, George, 553.
Gillespie, Rev. George de Normandie, 219.
Gillett, Rev. D. D., 356.
Gillett, Rev. J. K., 243.
Gillett, Shadrach, 246.
Gillett, Watson, 639.
Gillman, Henry, 44, 202.
Gillmore, Asa, 553.
Gillmore, Gen. Q. A., 635.
Gilpin, Gov. Henry D., 121.
Gilruth, Rev. James, 160, 237, 239, 240.
Girthy, James, See Girty.
Girthy, Simon, See Girty.
Girty, ——, 18.
Girty, George, 18, 26, 28, 33.
Girty, James, 18, 34.
Girty, Simon, 18, 31, 32, 34.
Gladstone, William, 2.
Glass, — 470, 471.
Glass, Semer, 570.
Glazier, Silas, 569.
Goble,——, 285.
Goble, Elijah, 630, 636.
Goble, Mrs. Eliza, 630, 636.
Goddard, Rev. Curtis, 237, 239.
Goddard, J., 568.
Goddard, Josiah, 348.
Goddard, Josiah (Oakland), 561.
Goddard, Lewis, 342 343, 344, 345.
Godfrey, James, 614, 615.
Godfrey, Peter, 614, 615.
Godfroy, Col., 51, 149.
Goethe, 536.
Goff, Ezra W., 553.
Goff, W., 280.
Gold, George R., 441.
Goodale, Rev. O. M., 243.
Goodell, Mrs. Aurilla S., 640.
Goodell, Gotham, 641.
Goodell, Mrs. Louis, 619.
Goodrich, A., 280.
Goodrich, Allen, 109.
Goodrich, Chauncey, 383.
Goodrich, Dr. Chauncey B., 306.
Goodrich, Chester, 582.
Goodrich, Dr. E., 292.
Goodrich, H. C., 386.
Goodrich, Judge John S., 116.
Goodrich, M. H., 3, 4, 11, 100, 106, 108, 113.
Goodrich, Dr. Osman Dewey, 111, 266, 280, 284, 292, 313.
Goodrich, Thomas, 553.
Goodspeed, O., 281.
Goodwin, Alice P., 413.
Goodwin, Judge Daniel, 39, 103, 115, 122.
Goodwin, Rev. Henry M., 413.
Goodyear, H. A., 3, 108.
Gordon, J. W., (Eaton), 404.
Gordon, Gov. James Wright, 120, 531.
Gorham, Charles T., 7.
Gorham, J. M., 545.
Goss, William, 401.
Gotse, ——, 606.
Goudy, John, 275.
Gould, Col. Ebenezer, 616, 617.
Gouin, Charles, 26, 34.
Gould, 590.
Gould, James, 563.
Gould, Zena, 359.
Grafton, John J., 477, 480.
Graham, ——, 464, 565.
Graham, Alex, 569.
Graham, Benjamin, 569.
Graham, James, 561, 569.
Granger, Bradley F., 124.
Granger, Francis, 605.
Grant, ——, 392.
Grant, Captain, 27.
Grant, A. A., 405.
Grant, Amos, 392.
Grant, C. W., 100, 607, 608.

Grant, Robert, 392.
Grant, Gen. U. S., 137, 139, 635.
Grant, William, 392.
Grattan, Capt., 86.
Grauchin, ——, 17.
Graves, Mrs. A. E., 360.
Graves, Judge Benjamin F., 116, 285, 364, 629.
Graves, Lyman, 640.
Gray, Edward, 609.
Gray, Robert, 646.
Gray, Thomas, 304.
Gray, Capt. William, 87.
Gray, Mrs. William, 87.
Green, ——, 422, 426.
Green, Albertus L., 412.
Green, Archibald H., 433.
Green, Mrs. Archibald H., 433.
Green, Mrs. Byron, 640.
Green, Champlain, 569.
Green, H., 281.
Green, Mrs. Hartwell, 565.
Green, I. N., 292.
Green, J., 281.
Green, Leland, 564.
Green & Lowe, 292.
Green, Judge Sanford M., 115, 116, 329.
Greene, ——, 422.
Greene, Chauncey W., 373.
Greene, George H., 100, 106, 108, 109, 112.
Greenleaf, Prof. Simon, 129.
Greenly, Gov. William L., 120.
Gregg, Sergt. William, 35.
Gregory, ——, 388.
Gregory, Mrs., 388.
Gregory, Charles, 468.
Gregory, Ira, 556.
Grey, W., 425.
Grice, M. P., 292.
Gridley, ——, 403, 509.
Gridley, Hezekiah, 568.
Gridley, James H., 360.
Grier, B. J., 415.
Griffin, Capt., 167.
Griffin, G. B., 403, 404.
Griffin, Judge John, 122, 223.
Griffith, Charles E., 351.
Griggs, George W., 545.
Grimard, Joseph, 35.
Grimps, ——, 532.
Grinnell, C. S., 402.
Grinnell, H. S., 404.
Grist, James T., 422.
Griswold, D., 422.
Griswold, G. S., 425, 426.
Griswold, R. W., 404, 426.
Griswold, Mrs. R. W., 426.
Griswold, Stanley, 121.
Griswold, Z. L., 280, 283, 313.
Gritz, J., 281.
Gregg, John, 553.
Grosenover, J. R., 402.
Grosvenor, E. O., 3, 100, 108, 468.
Gross, Jonah, 564.
Grover, Andrew P., 286.
Grover, Jacob, 283, 286.
Gruet, Pierre, 196, 197.
Guilbeaux, Joseph, 36.
Guild, Edward, 470.
Guild, Egbert F., 268.
Guild, Joel, 470.
Guion, Charles, see Gouin.
Gundrum, Dr. F., 485.
Gunn, Mrs., 508.
Gunn, C. K., 229.
Guoin, Paul, 644.
Guotin & Merrill, 337.
Gurley, Rev. Leonard B., 239.

H.

Hackley, E. G., 281, 286.
Hackett, Samuel, 521.
Hadsel, Asa B., 574.
Hagarman, Francis, 570.
Hage, Conrad, 324, 332.
Hagerman, ——, 597.
Haire, Father, 451, 452.
Hake, William, 546.
Haldimand, Gen., 21, 24, 25, 115, 119.
Hale, Rev. A. J., 481.
Hale, David B., 7.
Hale, H., 203.
Hale, William, 117.
Half-King, 32.
Hall, ——, 426.
Hall, Alfred, 504.
Hall, Miss Angeline, 620.
Hall, B. K., 319, 324.
Hall, C. W., 291.
Hall, Mrs. Emma A., 446.
Hall, Frederick, 471, 483, 486, 489, 490.
Hall, Mrs. George, 622.

Hall, Harriet M., 545.
Hall, Harry, 464.
Hall, Judge J. P., 422, 426, 542.
Hall, L. R., 425, 426.
Hall, Moses, 348, 356.
Hall, Mrs. Moses, 356.
Hall & Rudd, 291.
Hall, Tolman W., 348, 350, 356, 404.
Hallock, Henry, 321.
Haloway, Rev. H. H., 356.
Halsted, Lorenzo D., 266.
Ham, Dr., 284.
Hamblin, A. C., 351, 352.
Hamilton, ——, 529, 569.
Hamilton, Mrs. Belle, 5.
Hamilton, Col. Henry, 16, 17, 18, 21, 22, 23, 115, 119.
Hamilton, J. B., 453.
Hamilton, John, 435, 561, 567, 569, 573, 577, 578, 579, 580.
Hamilton, Oliver, 435.
Hamilton, Mrs. O., 448.
Hamilton, William, 435, 438, 441, 463.
Hammet, B., 606.
Hammond, Charles G., 367, 369.
Hammond, Daniel, 563.
Hammond, David, 570.
Hammond, Lemuel O., 610.
Hampton, Wade, 490.
Hamtramck, Col., 86.
Hanchett, Benjamin F., 545.
Hanchett & Holbrook, 342.
Hanchett, James H., 342.
Hand, Col., 93.
Hand, Elizabeth, 556.
Handsome, Mother (Mrs. Chappel), 568.
Hannibal, ——, 590.
Harbeck, Charles, 362.
Harbeck, Eugene, 362.
Hardee, Gen. W. J., 170, 171, 172, 185.
Harding, Eliphalet, 561.
Hare, Oscar, 274.
Hargrave, Rev., 288.
Harmon, Ellen G., 365.
Harmon, J. C., 415.
Harmon, S. W., 415.
Harnden, S., 281.
Harrington, ——, 297, 356.
Harrington, Daniel B., 3, 6, 107.
Harrington, George S., 296, 297.
Harrington, James, 564, 568.
Harrington, Mrs. Lydia, 610.
Harris, C. H., 275.
Harris & Johnson, 275.
Harris, Rev. John, 356.
Harris, Joseph, 568.
Harris, Rev. Samuel Smith, 221.
Harris, William, 529, 530, 531.
Harrison, ——, 521, 523.
Harrison, A., 4.
Harrison, Bazel, 521.
Harrison, Rev. James S., 236, 243.
Harrison, Gen. William H., 115, 209, 594.
Hart, ——, 590.
Hart, A. N., 5, 549, 550, 552.
Hart, B. B., 323, 326.
Hart, H., 292.
Hart, Henry, 556.
Hart, J. B., 323, 333.
Hart, J. H., 292.
Hart, Jesse, 386, 422.
Hart, John, 545.
Hart, Jonathan, 348, 377.
Hart, L., 623, 624.
Hart, Capt. N. H., 548.
Hart, Oliver B., 549, 551.
Hart, Thomas, 348, 377.
Harter, Benjamin, 476.
Hartson, A. P., 425.
Hartson, J. W., 291.
Hartsough, Christopher, 565, 569.
Harvey, Matilda, 483.
Hascall, Charles C., 433, 438, 439 443, 464.
Hascall, John, 131, 132, 133.
Hascall, Volney, 136.
Haskell, ——, 392.
Haskell, F., 402.
Haskell, George T., 405.
Haskell, Timothy, 392, 402.
Haslett, Joseph, 416.
Hastings, A. M., 599.
Hatch, H. H., 329.
Hatch, Reuben, 413.
Hathaway, Eli, 294.
Hathaway, P., 402.
Hathaway, R. C., 483.
Hatton, Frederick, 346.
Havens, Mrs. A. S., 360.
Havens, J. L., 286.
Havens, Menzo, 334.
Haviland, Catherine Ferry, 268.
Haviland, Roger, 111, 266.

Hawes, Judge Josiah L., 111, 266, 312, 315.
Hawkes & Castree, 459.
Hawkins, Abiel, 637.
Hawks, Charles M., 273, 274.
Hawks, Frank E., 274.
Hawks, Morgan B., 274.
Hawks, Moses, 273, 274, 281.
Hawley, Mrs. Catherine, 503.
Hay, Major, 22.
Hay, William, 286.
Hayden, ——, 508, 606.
Hayden, Elzey, 416, 417.
Hayden, Philotus, 636.
Hayes, Dr. John A., 439.
Hayes, N. B., 488.
Hayes, Rutherford B., 146.
Haynes, Harvey, 7, 100.
Haynes, Isaac, 545.
Haynes, W. C., 281.
Hays, John, 325.
Hayt, Capt. John T., 383, 384, 386, 387, 388, 389, 390, 391, 392, 402.
Hayt, Mrs. John T., 387, 406.
Hazleton, George, 457.
Hazleton, Porter, 438.
Hazzard, Mrs. Casandra C., 616.
Hazzard, James, 570.
Hazzard, William, Sr., 615, 616.
Heald, Arba, 610.
Hearsey, Mason, 472.
Hearsey, R., 487.
Heart, John, 545.
Heath, A. H., 484.
Heath, Alfred H., 472.
Heath, Anna, 555.
Heath, Clarence, 294.
Heath, George P., 294.
Heath, Maj. J. M., 281, 291, 294, 295.
Heckewelder, ——, 20, 30.
Hecox, Henry, 501.
Heinzmann, Christopher, 327, 330, 331.
Helm, Capt. Moses, 22.
Helmer, ——, 297, 298.
Hemmingway, Needham, 570.
Hendee, Harrington, 498.
Hendershot, Miss Addie, 446.
Henderson, A., 280.
Henderson, Alex., 274, 284, 286, 309.
Henderson, Donald C., 109, 111, 114, 119, 121, 266, 270, 273, 274, 276, 281, 286, 287, 290, 301.
Henderson, Eden F., 372.
Henderson, H. M., 437, 438.
Henderson, Mrs. H. M., 449.
Henderson, J., 280, 283.
Henderson, James D., 274, 280.
Henderson & Reid, 274.
Hendrie, George, 645.
Hendryx, J. R., 3, 108.
Hennepin, Louis, 647, 649, 650, 652, 655.
Henreisch, H., 485.
Henry, ——, 94.
Henry, Governor 21.
Henry, Prof., 202.
Henry, John V., 348.
Henry, Patrick, 20, 179.
Henry, Samuel, 329.
Henry, W. C., 404.
Henry, W. G., 426.
Henshaw, M. C., 291.
Hentig, George, 246.
Hermon, Dr. August, 183.
Herr, Rev. William, 236, 237, 240, 241.
Herrick, Franklin, 564.
Herrick, Nathan, 563.
Herron, D., 404.
Herron, Sam., 404.
Hersey, John, 565, 569, 570.
Hess, Henry, 324, 329.
Hester, ——, 575.
Hewitt, Francis E., 426.
Hewitt, G., 281.
Heydenburk, Hannah, 152.
Heydenburk, John, 152.
Heydenburk, Mrs. Lucy W., 153.
Heydenburk, Mrs. Martin, 153.
Heydenburk, Martin, 56, 152, 153, 154, 157, 541, 542.
Hibbard, Dan., 49, 508.
Hickey, Rev. Manasseh, 236, 237.
Hickok, Mrs. Eliza Wood, 384, 393, 406, 407.
Hickok, Isaac E. Crary, 380, 384, 393, 406, 407, 415, 418.
Hickok, Capt. James W., 380, 381, 382, 384, 393, 405, 406, 407, 409.
Hickox, Rev. Joseph, 235.
Hicks, Ephriam, 556.
Hicks, J. W., 404, 405.
Hicks, Will, 362.
Higby, Frank W., 415.
Higby, Pitt M., 415.
Higby, Polly, 556.

Higgins, Franklin J., 274.
Higgins, Henry, 453.
Higgins, Mrs. H. I., 448.
Higgins, J., 280, 284.
Higgins, Rev. J. C., 237.
Higgins, J. N., 402.
Higgins, Willard, 286.
Higinbotham, C., 280.
Higinbotham, H. S., 277, 278, 281.
Higinbotham, Mrs. H. S., 281.
Higinbotham, J. B., 280.
Higinbotham, P. N., 280.
Hill, ——, 606.
Hill, Rev., 289.
Hill, David, 523.
Hill, G. H., 280, 294, 295.
Hill, Rev. Jacob, 239.
Hill, John, 391.
Hill, Rev. Leonard, 239, 240, 242.
Hill, O., 295.
Hill, R. S., 291.
Hill, Robert F., 315.
Hill, S., 295.
Hill, Stephen, 266.
Hill, William, 392.
Hillick, Hugh, 553.
Hills, Charles T., 476.
Hilton, Robert, 3, 7, 100, 107, 108, 110, 544, 545, 546, 547.
Hilton, Samuel, 570.
Hinchman, Mrs. Thomas, 349.
Hinchman, Thomas, 349.
Hinckley, W., 281.
Hinds, Philander, 483.
Hinman, ——, 385, 395.
Hinman, B. F., 426.
Hinman, Mrs. B. F., 360.
Hinman, Charles H., 362.
Hinman, J., 426.
Hinman, John F., 351.
Hinman, Mrs. J. F., 360.
Hinsdill, Mitchell, 135, 136, 137, 287.
Hinsdill, Miss, 287.
Hitchcock, C., 294.
Hitchcock, Homer O., 413.
Hitchcock, Horace, 227, 235.
Hitchcock & Tabor, 471.
Hitchin, Timothy, 555.
Hixon, Daniel, 553.
Hoag, Stephen, 556.
Hoag, Judge William H., 244, 553.
Hoaxie, H., 280.
Hobart, Bishop, 215, 218.
Hobart, N. P., 368, 369, 370, 371.
Hodges, ——, 503.
Hodges, Mrs. M. A., (Schuyler), 599, 600.
Hodges & Pike, 291.
Hodges, Samuel P., 482.
Hodges, Schuyler, 371, 599, 600.
Hoffman, Mrs. C. B., 610.
Hoffman, I. O., 291.
Hoffman, Lew, 499.
Hoffman, Michael, 433.
Hoffmaster, Peter, 363.
Hogan, ——, 510, 613.
Hogle, Isaac, 409.
Holcomb, Benjamin, 369, 370.
Holcomb, Butler, 566.
Holcomb, John L., 349.
Holden, Addale, 397.
Holden, E. G. D., 544.
Holden, George, 392.
Holden, Mrs. Joanna R., 7, 544.
Holden, Josiah R., 7, 544.
Holland, S., 406.
Hollbrook, Silas A., 553.
Hollister, C., 280.
Hollister, G., 280.
Hollister, Harvey J., 547.
Holman, ——, 298.
Holmes, ——, 283.
Holmes, J. C., 3, 4, 5, 11, 100, 105, 106, 108, 109, 113, 157, 503.
Holmes, John C., (Allegan), 274, 283, 289, 290.
Holmes, John T., 546.
Holmes, Rev. Ninian, 228, 235.
Holmes, Judge S. T., 329.
Holstock, Rev. Enoch, 356.
Holt, ——, 370.
Holt, D. R., 302.
Holt, H. H., 3, 100, 108.
Holt, Rev. Joseph W., 237.
Holten, J. & J., 431.
Holton, David, 545.
Hontan La, (see La Hontan).
Hooker. C. S., 483.
Hooker, Frank A., 415, 417, 418, 419.
Hooker, H. H., 404.
Hooker, James Sedgwick, 417.
Hooker, Rev. Thomas, 417.
Hooker, William S., 286.
Hope, Gov. Henry, 115, 119.
Hopkins, Pomeroy & Frazer, 322.

Hopkins, Rev. Silas, 235.
Horley, I. D., 346.
Horn, Peter, 422.
Horner, Gov. John S., 115, 120, 122.
Horr, Roswell G., 124.
Horton, Henry W., 564.
Horton, William H., 268.
Hosford, George, 488.
Hosford, Oramel, 408, 409, 411, 413, 419.
Hosford, William, 412.
Hotchin, John, 609.
Hotchkiss, ——, 377, 388.
Hotchkiss, Mrs., 377.
Hotchkiss, Col. Calvin, 561, 568, 574.
Hotchkiss, Enoch, 561, 568.
Hotchkiss, Isabella, 141.
Houck, John, 553.
Houdon, ——, 178.
Houghton, Douglas, 107, 189, 194, 654.
House, George H., 274.
Houseman, Julius, 545.
Hovey, ——, 281.
Howard, George H., 413.
Howard, Henry, 379.
Howard, Horatio N., 592, 599.
Howard, J. E., 485.
Howard, Jacob M., 117, 123.
Howard, John, 475.
Howard, Mars, 8, 266.
Howard, Sumner, 463.
Howard, William A., 124, 413.
Howe, ——, 612, 616.
Howe, Gen., 18.
Howe, Abigail Thompson, 622.
Howe, H., 294.
Howe, Joseph, 622.
Howe, Joseph, Sr., 622.
Howe, T. L., 606.
Howe, Mrs. Tamson A. M., 622.
Howell, Andrew, 268.
Howell, S., 294.
Howes, Mrs. George, 360.
Howgate, Capt. Henry M., 6.
Howland, Mrs., 229.
Howland, E. K. & P., 401.
Hoxie, J., 283.
Hoyt, Alvin, 609.
Hoyt, J., 279.
Hoyt, Rev. Melancthon, 482.
Hoyt, Quincy, 485.
Hoyt, Stephen, 521.
Hoyt, Rev. Urias, 243.
Hoyte, Daniel O., 342, 343.
Hubbard, ——, 566, 610.
Hubbard & Co., 401.
Hubbard, Asahel, 551.
Hubbard, Bela, 4, 67, 189, 644, 655, 647.
Hubbard, Diodate, 568, 593.
Hubbard, Edward, 594.
Hubbard, George W., 454.
Hubbard, Giles, 553.
Hubbard, Gurdon S., 125, 127.
Hubbard, Henry H., 362.
Hubbard, Jonathan, 593.
Hubbard, Mrs. Polly F., 595.
Hubbard, Russel, 404.
Hubbard, S., 401.
Hubbard, Sam., 279.
Hubbard, Samuel M., 275.
Hubbard, Sarah J., 595.
Hubbard, Sarah, 593.
Hubbard, Willis, 446.
Hubbell, Jay A., 124.
Huddleston, L., 280.
Hudson, H. B., 292.
Hudson, J., 280.
Hudson, Mrs. John S., 155.
Hudson, John S., 155.
Hudson, Rev. Jonathan, 242, 243.
Hudson, Joseph, 227, 329.
Hudson, Polydore, 348, 349.
Hudson, T. N., 281.
Hudson, W. O., 278.
Huff, Alex G., 566.
Huff, John, 564.
Huggins, Z., 280, 281.
Hughes, Mrs., 392.
Hughes, Amanda Celestia, 397.
Hughes, Mrs. Caroline Hannah, 397.
Hughes, Mrs. Cynthia Caroline, 397.
Hughes, David Darwin, 397.
Hughes, Electa, 396.
Hughes, Elitha Elpha, 397.
Hughes, Freeman, 395.
Hughes, Mrs. Grace, 395, 396.
Hughes, Mrs. Hannah, 396, 397.
Hughes, Capt. Henry, 395, 396, 397.
Hughes, Henry C., 396, 401.
Hughes, Henry Freeman, 395.
Hughes, Laura, 396.
Hughes, Lucretia, 396.
Hughes, Maria, 396.
Hughes & O'Brien, 398.
Hughes, O'Brien & Smiley, 398.

Hughes, Polly, 396.
Hughes, R. H., 398, 453.
Hughes, Richard, 405.
Hughes, Rossel Bowen, 397.
Hughes, Mrs. Ruth Brown, 397.
Hughes, Sally, 396.
Hughes, Sally Triphena, 396.
Hughes & Wooley, 398.
Hulburt, Judge, 134.
Hulburt, E. J., 108.
Hulburt, John, 321.
Hull, G. H., 280.
Hull, James, 446.
Hull, John, 8, 266, 609, 610, 614.
Hull, Prof. L. C., 359.
Hull, General William, 97, 115, 119, 121, 122, 559, 594.
Humphrey, ——, 508.
Humphrey, J. B., 286, 292, 313.
Humphrey, Jeremiah, 131, 132.
Humphrey, L., 292.
Hungerford, Samuel, 565.
Hunsiker, C. H., 401.
Hunsiker, H., 402.
Hunsiker, Sylvanus, 387, 389, 390, 391, 393, 394, 401, 402.
Hunsiker, Mrs. Sylvanus, 393, 394.
Hunt, Cleveland, 644.
Hunt, Daniel, 566.
Hunt, E. W., 266.
Hunt, Henry I., (See Henry J.)
Hunt, Henry J., 560, 594.
Hunt, James B., 103.
Hunt, Jeremiah, 568.
Hunt, Judge John, 122.
Hunt, Lucius, 580, 590.
Hunt, Samuel S., 558.
Hunt, Wetmore, 646, 647.
Hunt, William, 556.
Hunter, Castle, 569.
Hunter, Elisha, 561, 573, 579.
Hunter, Rev. Isaac C., 236.
Hunter, John W., 573, 574, 575, 576, 578.
Hunter, Mrs. J. W., 578.
Hunters, ——, 574.
Huntington, Samuel, 556.
Huntington, Judge Samuel, 122.
Huntley, M., 292.
Hurd, Dr., 581.
Hurd, A., 281.
Hurd, Atwater, 504.
Hurd, H. H., 504.
Hurd, H. L., 281.
Hurd, Rev. Philo R., 413.
Hurlburt, H. H., 110.
Hurlburt, Capt. William H., 627.
Hussey, Erastus J., 350, 351, 541.
Hussey, Mrs. Erastus, 360.
Husted, David, 563.
Huston, H. B., 523.
Hutchins, H., 280.
Hutchinson, Hepsibeth, 383, 390.
Hyatt, Mrs. F. F., 466.
Hyde, A., 431.
Hyde, H., 288, 356.
Hyde & Jackson, 425.
Hyde, Mrs. Oliver M., 224.
Hynes, F. R., 292.

I.

Ingersoll, E. S., 422.
Ingersoll, Erastus, 563.
Ingersoll, Mary R., 555.
Ingersoll, Robert, 58.
Ingham, A., 402.
Ingham, B., 292.
Innocent 4th, 651.
Insleman, C., 406.
Ion, L. H., 416, 423.
Irish, Benjamin, 564.
Irish, David, 472, 483.
Irkenback, Rev., 288.
Irvin, Judge David, 122.
Irvine, Gen., 30.
Irving, Paulus Aemilius (Pres.), 119.
Irving, Washington, 55.
Isham, Gileo, 474.
Ives, A. E., 401.
Ives, A. E. & L. L., 402.
Ives, C. P., 402.
Ives, L. L., 401, 402.
Ives, Lewis, 390.
Ives, Mrs. Lewis, 390.

J.

Jackway, Rev. T. S., 242, 243.
Jackson, ——, 473.
Jackson, Rev., 517.
Jackson, Andrew, 38, 141, 142, 224, 349, 543, 601.
Jackson, Prof. C. T., 427, 428.
Jackson, Rev. I. E., 357.
Jackson, J. B., 406.
Jackson, Joseph, 555.

Jackson, N., 425.
Jackson, Rev. Washington, 240, 241, 242. 243, 356.
Jackson, William, 508.
Jacksone, (Whetsone), 369.
Jacobs, Orange, 614.
Jacokes, Rev. D. C., 236.
Jacokes, Rev. T. H., 356.
Jadot, Miss, 27.
James, Rev. C. H., 356.
James, Rev. John, (See John Janes).
Jameson, J. M., 501.
Janes, Rev. John, 238.
Jay, John, 15.
Jefferson, Thomas, 23, 29, 141, 179, 598, 601.
Jenett, Joseph, 610.
Jenison, Hiram, 545.
Jenison, O. A., 4, 6, 48, 107, 110.
Jenison, W. F., 111, 266.
Jenner, ——, 274.
Jenner & Northrup, 292.
Jenner, T. C., 280.
Jenner, W. B., 280, 287, 292.
Jenner, William C., 280, 285, 288, 290.
Jenney, William, 119.
Jennings, Ira, 569.
Jennings, Rev. Joseph, 356.
Jennison, ——, 592.
Jennison, Charles E., 323.
Jennison, William, 189, 193.
Jenny, Royal W., 439, 464, 465.
Jenny, Mrs. R. W., 448, 449.
Jerome, Edwin, 3, 100, 106, 107, 108.
Jewett, Judge, 318, 602, 603, 606.
Jewett, Mrs Judge, 602.
Jewett, George E., 277, 278, 280, 281
Jewett, Mrs. George E., 282, 287.
Jewett, N., 278, 281.
Jewitt, G., (See G. E. Jewett).
Jipson, Henry, 48.
Jitter, Amable, 35.
Johannot, A., (See Johannott).
Johannott, A., 280, 283.
Johonnot, A., 280, 283.
Johonnet, Edward, 309.
Johnes, John, 36.
Johnny, Capt., 28.
Johnson, ——, 306, 379, 508.
Johnson, Alex, 35, 36.
Johnson, Andrew, 170, 489.
Johnson, Charles, 565.
Johnson, Charles G., 447.
Johnson, D., 430.
Johnson, Judge David, 116, 491, 494, 567.
Johnson Ethan S., 471.
Johnson, G. E., 275.
Johnson, James, 415, 623.
Johnson, Mrs. Mary E. N., 623.
Johnson, M. R., 292.
Johnson, O. R. & Co., 302.
Johnson, Phebe, 356.
Johnson, Reverdy, 131.
Johnson, Prof. Walter R., 253.
Johnson, Sir William, 14, 16, 623, 636.
Johnston, James, 609.
Joliet, Louis, 647, 648.
Jones, Alex., 421.
Jones, C., 294.
Jones, Rev. Charles, 356.
Jones, Cynthia Caroline, 397.
Jones, Dianah, 556.
Jones, Mrs. Elizabeth S., 639.
Jones, Enoch, 342.
Jones, Rev. Ezra, 482.
Jones, George W., 123.
Jones, Rev. J., 243.
Jones, John, 34.
Jones, John, 326.
Jones, John, Sr., 326.
Jones, John J., 280, 281.
Jones, Livingston, 346.
Jones, Lizzie A., 421.
Jones, Mary, 222.
Jones, Nelson B., 5, 7.
Jones, Sarah R., 446.
Jones, Rev. T. Z. R., 289, 394.
Jones, W., 280.
Jones, William, 483.
Jones, Rev. William, 281, 288, 356.
Jones, William A., 639, 640.
Jonquiere, James Peter de la, (See La Jonquiere).
Joslin, Perry, 326, 439.
Joslyn, Rev., 289.
Joslyn, Rev. T. J., 237.
Joy, H. M., 106.
Joy, Myron H., 359.
Joy, Mrs. Myron H., 361.
Judd, F. W., 460.
Judd, Rev. H., 289.
Judson, Alfred, 598.
Judson, D., 402.
Judson, R. F., 528.

K.

Kaiser, A., 333.
Kay, Mrs. Agnes, 622.
Kay, Edward F., 622.
Kedzie, R. C., 8, 266, 428, 429.
Kedzie, William, 553.
Keeler, Wolcott H., 629, 635.
Keep, ——, 280.
Keifer, Dr., 229.
Keightley, Edwin W., 124.
Keisler, Fred., 327.
Keith, Luke, 531.
Kellam, Rev. J. A., 242, 243.
Kelley, Lee, 445.
Kelley, Rev. William, 356.
Kellogg, ——, 292.
Kellogg, Rev., 288.
Kellogg, Andrew J., 7, 266, 273.
Kellogg, Rev. E., 243.
Kellogg, Rev. E. L., 375.
Kellogg, Francis W., 124.
Kellogg, Dr. J. H., 354.
Kellogg, J. N., 354.
Kellogg, Rev. Jason W., 237.
Kellogg, John R., 280, 284, 286.
Kellogg, Loyal C., 350, 376.
Kellogg, P. P., 404, 405.
Kelly, John, 521.
Kelsey Brothers, 488.
Kelsey, E. P., 485.
Kelsey, M. W., 579.
Kelsey, S. R., 617.
Kelsey, W., 294.
Kemp, Michael, 569.
Kemper, Bishop, 217.
Kendall, ——, 636.
Kendall, Amos, 322, 384.
Kennard, G., 280, 284.
Kennedy, James, 476.
Kennedy, Renselaer W., 396.
Kent, Rev. John P., 235.
Kent, J. W., 281.
Kent, William A., 342.
Kercheval, Benjamin B., 103.
Kerr, J. E., 404.
Ketcham, George, 375.
Ketcham, Jacob, 553.
Ketcham, Seth, 415, 422, 425.
Ketchum, ——, 288.
Ketchum, Sidney, 283, 288, 393.
Keyes, George W., 6, 405, 413.
Keyser, ——, 573.
Kibby, B. W., 281.
Kidd, J. H., 476, 485.
Kidd, James M., 476, 487.
Kiefer, Dr., 229.
Kies, Alpheus, 553.
Kile, F. C., 304.
Killian, J. M., 292.
Killicut, C., 590.
Kimball, A. W., 481.
Kimball, Mrs. Samuel, 556.
Kimberly, Harry, 396.
Kimberly, Israel, 395.
Kimberly, James, 389, 391, 393, 394.
Kimberly, Mrs. James, 389, 394.
Kindell, William, 402.
King, ——, 573.
King, Asahel, 517.
King, Benjamin, 609.
King, Rev. George, 242, 243.
King, Dr. John W., 439.
Kingsborough, Lord, 45.
Kingsbury, Capt., 86.
Kingsbury, Arthur, 273.
Kingsbury, D., 281.
Kingsbury, F. A., 6.
Kingsbury, Lansing, 393.
Kingsbury, Mrs. Malinda (S. O.), 545, 546.
Kingsbury, Solomon O., 546.
Kingsland, ——, 406.
Kingsley, ——, 160.
Kingsley, G. W., 294.
Kingsley, George (Chicago), 304.
Kingsley, James, 103, 160.
Kingsley, N., 294.
Kinnear, Rev. John, 240, 241, 242.
Kinnie, Amos, 381.
Kinnie, Stephen, 380, 381.
Kinney, Orin, 325.
Kinzie, John, 125.
Kipp, Charles, 476.
Kirby, Isaac, 504.
Kirby, John, 213.
Kirchner, Otto, 117.
Kirkham, ——, 390, 391.
Kirkland, Miss Olive, 413.
Kirkpatrick, Captain, 167, 168.
Kirsheman, J., 291.
Kish-kaw-ko, ——, 224.
Knaggs, ——, 192, 553.
Knapp, E., 281, 284.
Knapp, Jules A. & Co., 477.

Knapp, L., 281.
Knapp, Reuben, 555.
Knapp, Thomas, 561.
Knapp, W. A., 280.
Knappen, Rev. A. A., 356.
Knappen, Rev. M., 356.
Knight, Emma, 447.
Knight, George W., 415.
Knight, Nathan, 327.
Knott, (LL. D.), 136.
Knowlton, J., 281.
Knox, David, 609, 610.
Koch, William, 545.
Koepner, Herman, 447.
Konigsbury, Lieut., 180.
Konkel, P., 294.
Koprogli, Vizier Achmet, 118.
Krum, Lieut., 171, 174, 175.

L.

Labadee, J. B., (See Labady).
Labady, J. B., 35, 36.
Labady, J. B. Jr., 35.
Labar, S., 402.
La Barre, Antoine, Le Fevre de, 114, 118, 654.
Labutte, Julian, (See Julien).
Labutte, Julien, 35, 36.
Labutte, Pierre, 35.
Lacey, Edward D., 417.
Lacey, Edward S., 413, 414, 415, 416, 418.
Lacey, Martha Pixley, 417.
La Chapelle, 362.
Lackey, ——, 174.
Laclede, ——, 15.
La Cuyer, Philip, 560.
Ladd & Barber, 425, 426.
Laduke, Bapt., 36.
La Fayette, 179.
La Fleur, 659.
Laforest, Joseph, 36.
La Galissoniere, Rolland Michel Barrin, Count de, 114, 118.
La Hontan, 652.
Laible, Eugene, 111, 266.
Lair, Elizabeth, 556.
Laird, Henry W., 609.
Lajeunesse, Jean B., 35.
La Jonquierre, James Peter de Tafenell, Marquis de, 114, 118, 119.
Laliberte, Joseph, 35, 36.
Laliberty, (see Laliberte).
Laluette, Pierre, 36.
Lamond, Dr. Robert D., 439.
La Mothe, Captain, 22, 23.
Lamson, Miss Dr. P. M., 355.
Landis, Rev. R. W., 482.
Lane, ——, 389.
Lane, Jacob, 553.
Lane, John, 553.
Lane, Rev. Marcus, 451.
Lanehauts, J., 281.
Lang, Lt., 180.
Langley Brothers, 348.
Langley, H., 280, 284.
Langley, William B., 609.
Laning, Rev. Gideon, 235.
Lankenaw, ——, 325.
Lanman, ——, 146.
Lanrick, ——, 615.
La Potherie, James Leneuf Sieur de, 118.
Lapont, Joseph, 34.
La Roberval, Jean Francois de la Roque, Sieur, de, (See La Roque).
Laraway, William, 545.
Larivier, (see Lariviere).
Larviere, Bonavanture, (see Bonaventure).
Lariviere, Bonaventure, 35, 36.
Larmour, W. W., 351.
Larned, Charles, 560.
Larned, Col. Sylvester, 573, 645.
Larned, Mrs. Sylvester, 645.
Larnoult, Maj., 21, 23.
La Roche, Troillus de Mesgouet, Marquis de Vicomte de Trevarez, 117.
La Roque, Roberval Jean Francis, Sieur de, 117.
Lasaline, Paul, 35.
La Salle, Robert, 98, 307, 643, 644, 647, 648, 649, 650, 652, 653, 654, 655, 656, 658.
La Seuexe, 34.
Lathrop, Armenia E., 378.
Lathrop, Horace, 570.
Latta, P. A., 292, 313.
Latta, Rev. Samuel A., 239.
Lauson, Charney, Charles de, 114, 118.
Lauson, Jean de Chevalier, 114, 118.
Lauson, Charles Joseph de, 118.
Law, A. B., 404.
Lawrence, Mrs. Catherine, 558.
Lawrence, Judge Edwin, 116.
Lawrence, Henry N., 4, 7.

Lawrence, Horatio A., 425.
Lawrence, J. H., 4.
Lawrence James R., 399.
Lawrence, Rev. Richard, 240, 241, 242, 356.
Lawton, Judge George W., 107, 109, 625, 636.
Lawton, Nathan, 635.
Lawton, Thomas, 636.
Lay, Ezra D., 3, 100, 106, 107, 108, 637.
Lay, G. T., 291.
Lay, Dr. H. S., 281, 292.
Lazon, Pierre, 36.
L'Coellie, Francis, 34.
Leach, Dewitt C., 124.
Leach, M., 404.
Leathernose, 367, 369, 370.
Leavenworth, Col., 573, 577.
Leavenworth, E. C., 293.
Le Barron, L. C., 288.
Lebeau, Etienne, 35.
Lebhart, Henry B., 474.
Leblanc, Charles, 35.
Le Bourdon, ——, 308.
Le Cerp, Jean Marie, 35, 36.
Ledaux, J. B., 35.
Ledue, J. B., 35.
Lee, Gen., 616.
Lee, C. M., 405, 406.
Lee, George, 367, 368.
Lee, Horatio, 598.
Lee, Warner, 598.
Lee William, 567, 598.
Leech, ——, 280.
Le Fleur, G. A., 278.
Leggett, D., 280.
Leggett, Samuel, 564.
Leiter, Fred E., 415.
L'Lerf, L. M., (See La Cerp).
Le Moyne, Charles 1st, Baron de Longueuil, 114.
Le Moyne, Charles 2nd, Baron de Longueuil, 114.
Lemon, Catherine, 556.
Lennox, Rev. L. E., 237.
Leonard, Benjamin, 564.
Leonard, Philander, 278, 280, 282, 291.
Lernoult, Maj., (See Larnoult).
Le Roy, Miss Augusta, 592.
Le Roy, Judge Daniel, 117, 122, 549, 551, 560, 561, 564, 569, 581, 592, 598, 599.
Le Roy, John, 443.
Lester, Edgar, 600.
Lester, William, 566, 568.
Levington, Rev. John, 237.
Leweke, Fred B., 290.
Leweke & Krumbein, 291.
Lewis, A., 107.
Lewis, Arza, 374, 375.
Lewis, Ezra, 374.
Lewis, George, 323.
Lewis, George F., 606.
Lewis, H., 430.
Lewis, H. M., 476.
Lewis, Henry C., 268.
Lewis, James, 53.
Lewis & Peters, 323.
Lewis, Thomas, 644.
Lillibridge, N. W., 333.
Lilly, Alanson, 281.
Lilly, Augusta, 281.
Lincoln, Abraham, 134, 489.
Lincoln, Luther, 387, 401.
Lincoln, Dr. William B., 470, 471, 472, 473.
Linsday, Mrs. Dr. Kate, 355.
Linsley, Rachel, 556.
Little, ——, 195.
Little, Dr., (N. Y.), 431, 606.
Little, Charles D., 453.
Little, Henry, 499, 509, 512.
Little, J. H., 334.
Little, Norman, 194, 322, 606.
Little, W. L. P., 194, 606.
Littlejohn, Bishop, 311.
Littlejohn, A., 280.
Littlejohn, Rev. Abraham H., 219.
Littlejohn, DeWitt C., 311.
Littlejohn, Eliza, 287.
Littlejohn, Mrs. F. J., 313.
Littlejohn, Flavius J., 5, 50, 270, 273, 280, 284, 285, 286, 290, 292, 310, 311, 312, 313, 315, 530.
Littlejohn, J., Jr., 281, 313.
Littlejohn, John, 280, 283.
Littlejohn, P. B., 280.
Littlejohn, Philetus O., 281, 286, 313.
Littlejohn, Silas F., 280, 283, 284, 286.
Littlejohn, Rev. W. H., 289.
Littlejohn, Wolcott, 313.
Livermore, ——, 508.
Livermore, Josiah F., 609.
Livermore, Nat., 285.
Livingston, C. L., 362.

Livingston & Stern, 291.
Lixaboga, (Thomas Simpson), 602.
L'Lerf, J. M., (See Le Cerp).
Lloyd, John, 471.
Lochhead, Oscar F., 454.
Lockwood, Alanson, 468.
Lockwood, James, 568.
Lomison, John, 609.
Long, Dr. O. R., 483.
Longite, Joseph, 36.
Longstreet, Col. Andrew, 635, 637.
Longton, ——, 325.
Longueuil, Charles Le Moyn 1st Baron de, 114, 118.
Longueuil, Charles Le Moyne 2nd Baron de, 119.
Longueuil, Charles Le Moyne 3d Baron de, 119.
(See Le Moyne).
Longuiel, Joseph, 35.
Longyear, Ephraim, 3, 9, 100, 106, 107, 112.
Longyear, Judge John W., 124, 131.
Lonsbury, G. W., 278, 292.
Lonsbury, H., 281.
Loomis, ——, 508.
Loomis, Charlotte, 396.
Loomis, Rev. Ebenezer, 356, 472.
Loomis, J. W., 485.
Loomis, Levi, 111.
Loomis, Lew., 266, 280.
Loomis, Lucy, 339.
Loraine, Nicholas, 34.
Lord, George, 326, 331.
Lord, Henry W., 111, 161, 266.
Loson, Jacques, 35, 36.
Loson, Pierre, 34.
Lothrop, Charles, 645.
Lothrop, Charles B., 645.
Lothrop & Duffield, 137.
Lothrop, Edwin H., 103, 521.
Lothrop, George H., 645.
Lothrop, George V. N., 117, 522, 645, 647, 655, 656, 666.
Lothrop, Mrs. G. V. N., 645.
Lothrop, Henry B., 645.
Louis the Great, 653.
Louis 15th, 119.
Lounsbury, Rev. E. W., 356.
Love, D., 404.
Lovelace, George, 281.
Lovell, Cyrus, 131, 133, 473.
Lovell, Henry R., 451, 454.
Lovell, L. S., 476.
Lovell, Mary S., 482.
Low, Peter, 553.
Lowe, Charles S., 477, 480.
Lowe, Edward, 274.
Lowe, Rev. G. W., 226, 227, 237, 452.
Lowe, H. & C. S., 486.
Lowe, J., 281.
Lowe, Peter, 7.
Lowell, Asa, 356.
Lozen, Jacque, (see Loson).
Lubutte, Claud, 34.
Lucas, Gov., 142.
Lucas, David, 381, 382, 402.
Luce, R. C., 546.
Lud, Sieur de, 652.
Ludington, J., 6.
Ludlow, Col. Thomas H., 184, 187.
Luscomb, J., 401.
Luther, L., 568.
Lutts & Martin, 292.
Lyell, ——, 209.
Lyman, Fred, 273.
Lyneburner, ——, 15.
Lyon, ——, 194.
Lyon, Avon, 501.
Lyon, Rev. D. B., 357, 482.
Lyon, Daniel, 618.
Lyon, Mrs. Elizabeth B., 618.
Lyon, Rev. G. G., 236.
Lyon, Rev. L., 288.
Lyon, Lucius, 103, 123, 145, 147, 523, 589, 591.
Lyon & Sibley, 580.
Lyon Truman H., 473.
Lyons, George, 27.
Lyons, L., 280.
Lyster, Rev. William N., 107, 557.
Lyster, Mrs Ellen Emily Cooper, 557.

M.

Mabbs, R., 281.
Mabley, C. R., 227.
Macard, Gren, 362.
Macauley, Lord, 504.
Mack, Col., 223.
Mack, Andrew, 142.
Mack, Arnold, 570.
Mack & Conant, 223.
Mack, John, 580.

Mack, Col. Stephen, 560, 562, 567, 571, 574.
Mackay, John, 34.
Mack-e-moot, 370, 371.
Maclay, Capt. W. D., 175, 176, 177.
Macomb, Gen., 222.
Macomb, Alexander, 26, 560.
Macomb, Edgar & Macomb, 25.
Macomb, William, 26.
Macsaubee, 271, 272, 282, 309.
Macy & Driggs, 465.
McAlester, C. E., 454.
McAlister, S., 402.
McAphie, James, 35.
McAteer, Lieut., 180.
McBride, Charles S., 446.
McCall, William R., 108.
McCamly, Samuel, 356.
McCamley, Judge Sands, 347, 348, 349, 350.
McCardell, 606.
McCartney, Fannie, 361.
McCarty, Rev. J. H., 236.
McCarty, Thomas, 34.
McClelland, Robert, 120, 123, 148.
McComber, ——, 281, 404.
McConkie, J. J., 292.
McConnell, David M., 545.
McConnell, John, 504.
McConnell, Rev. Richard, 237.
McConnell, W. M., 591.
McConnell, Mrs. Willard M., 577, 599.
McCord, Rev. J. D., 288.
McCormick, ——, 306.
McCormick, Dr., 620.
McCormick, Elizabeth, 325.
McCormick, James, (Bay), 320.
McCormick, James, (Manistee), 304.
McCormick, James J., 320, 326, 330.
McCormick, J. P., 281.
McCormick, Sarah, 325.
McCormick, W. R., 318, 335, 602.
McCoskry, Rev. Samuel A., 217, 219, 221. 356.
McCosland, William, 471.
McCoy, Benzern, 285.
McCoy, G., 280.
McCray, Marshall, 545.
McCray, J. B., 553.
McCreery, William B., 438, 467.
McCulloch, Major, 19.
McCune, J. N. M., 234.
McCutcheon, Isaac D., 414.
McDermott, ——, 441.
McDermott, Col. John, 331.
McDonald, ——, 319.
McDonald, Duncan, 53.
McDonell, A., 329.
McDonell & Mann, 329.
McDougal, Lt., 27.
McDuffie, H. C., 292.
McEldowney, Rev. J., 236.
McElvery, John, 568.
McEwan, Alex., 323.
McEwan & Bro., 323.
McEwan, John, 323, 324, 328.
McEwan, William, 323, 324, 330.
McFarlan, Alexander, 438, 457, 462, 463.
McFarland, Miss Betsey, 155.
McGann, Hattie, 445.
McGee, Melville, 503, 508.
McGowan, Gen., 171, 175, 176.
McGowan, Jonas H., 124.
McGraw, Hattie, 446, 447.
McGraw, John, 332.
McGraw, William, 645.
McGregor, Rev. D., 240, 243.
McGregor, Gregor, 27, 34.
McGregor, James, 570.
McIntosh, Gen., 20, 23.
McIlvaine, Rev. Charles P., 217.
McKain, Gov., 95.
McKay, Alex., 53, 327, 330.
McKay, Anthony, 553.
McKee, Capt. Alex., 18, 20, 26, 31, 32, 34.
McKelvy, John, 472.
McKinstry, David C., 560, 568.
McKnight, James A., 337.
McLaughlin, James, 304.
McLaughlin, Mrs. James, 305.
McLean, ——, 324.
McLean, Dr. J. B., 418.
McLeod, William Norman, 40.
McLeod, Mrs, 522, 528.
McLoughlin, Capt. William, 615.
McMartin, Duncan A., 111, 266, 280, 286, 313.
McMartin, Mrs. Maria T., 111, 266.
McMaster, Abram, 550.
McMath, Judge J. W., 329.
McMillan, Hugh, 645.
McMillan, James, 645.
McMillan, Jimmie, 645.

McMillan, Robert K., 610.
McMillan, William, 645, 646.
McMullen & Yeomans, 471.
McNair, William, 553.
McPhee, James, 35.
McQueen, J., 431.
McQuigg, Mrs. E. H., 449.
McQuigg, Turner & Co., 465.
McReynolds, Andrew T., 321, 547.
McRoberts, Minos, 108.
McSmith, Rev. John, 357.
McVean, Alex., 568.
McVean, Daniel, 568.
McWilliams, ——, 296, 297.
Madison, James, 141.
Maentz & Franks, 292.
Magrath, Rev. J. T., 357.
Mahon, Rev. W., 236.
Major, Isaac, 610.
Major, Mrs. Isaac, 610.
Major, William, 610.
Malden, Capt., 605, 606.
Mallett, Guillaume, 34.
Mallory, Azariah, 513.
Mallory, Mrs. Azariah, 513.
Man-a-to-corb-way, 50.
Mandel, ——, 342, 345.
Mandoka, ——, 370.
Manitou, ——, 98, 99, 199, 308.
Mann, A., 280.
Manning, Judge Randolph, 103, 115, 116, 131, 364.
Manor, ——, 555
Manson, Hiram S., 273, 274.
Manson, N., 281.
Marantelle, Archange Marie Louise Navarre, 614.
Marantelle, Dominique, 614.
Marantelle, Patrick, 614, 615.
Marantelle, Mrs. Patrick, 615.
Marchia, ——, 370.
Marcho-no-qua, 369.
Marcy, Governor, 318, 321, 606.
Marion, Jean Marie, 34, 36.
Markham, Byron, 276.
Marks, Rev. Samuel, 218.
Marksman, Peter, 333.
Marlett, Daniel, 563.
Marlett, Michael, 563.
Marquette, Father Jacques, 5, 6, 7, 13, 110, 126, 307, 625, 626, 648, 655.
Marsac, Joseph F., 322, 330.
Marsh, ——, 369.
Marsh, H. & Co., 366.
Marsh, H. F. Jr., 292.
Marsh, Rev. Justin, 356.
Marsh, Lorin, 342, 343,.
Marsh, Spencer, 280, 287.
Marshall, Benjamin, 556.
Marshall J., 430.
Marshall, John, 130.
Marshall W., 281.
Marston, Judge Isaac, 116, 117, 329.
Martell, Antoine, (See Martelle).
Martelle, Antoine, 35, 36.
Martin, ——, 364, 426.
Martin, Judge George, 115, 116, 131, 364.
Martin, James, 426.
Martin, Luther, 130.
Martin, Lydia, 426.
Martin, Wells R., 426.
Martin, Mrs. Wells R., 426.
Marvin, Dudley, 605.
Marvin, John, 348.
Mason, Daniel, 383.
Mason, H., 386.
Mason, Gov. John Thompson, 115, 119, 122, 142.
Mason, Rev. O, 236, 356.
Mason, Stephen, 356.
Mason, Stevens T., 103, 115, 120, 122, 142, 143, 319, 321, 372, 358.
Mason, William H., 360.
Master, Alvin M., 549.
Mather, H. N., 465.
Matthews, ——, 388.
Matthews, Alonzo, 530.
Matthews, Gideon, 530.
Matthews, W. W., 53.
Mattoon, C., 291.
Maw, Andre, 35.
Maxwell, Andrew C., 326, 327, 329.
Maxwell & Wisner, 326.
May, ——, 292.
May, Judge, 17, 21.
May, Gen. Dwight H., 117, 137, 138, 522, 523, 528, 543.
May, Rev. F. W., 236.
Mayo, ——, 309.
Mayo, David, 565.
Meach, A., 401.
Meacham, ——, 590.
Mead, ——, 258, 259, 260.
Mead, Amos, 563.

Mead, Mrs. A. H. & E., 292.
Mead, George, 350.
Mead, Miss Tamson Austin, 622.
Meech, Joseph U., 334.
Meigs, Judge Return Jonathan, Jr., 122.
Mellen, Harvey, 268.
Mellett, Guilliame, 36.
Membré, ——, 647, 652.
Mendel, J. M. & Co., 291.
Merrick, Misses, 529, 531.
Merrill, Agnes, 622.
Merrill, Enos, 622.
Merrill, Fred, 622.
Merrill, Jennie, 361.
Merrill, L., 426.
Merrill, Mrs. Laura M., 622.
Merrill & McCourtie, 292.
Merrill, R. T., 599.
Merrill, Rev. T., 6.
Merritt, Mrs. Charles, 360.
Merritt, Nelson, 329.
Messinger, A. W., 290.
Messinger, W. C., 281.
Messinger, W. M. & T. C., 291.
Mésy, Augustin de Saffray de, 114, 118.
Metcalf, Ezekiel, 610.
Metcalfe, A. T., 483.
Mettez, Theophilus, (Fon-Fon), 214.
Michabou, ——, 98, 99.
Miles, Judge George, 115, 131.
Miles, Harriet, 467.
Miles, Dr. Manly, 449.
Miles, S., 281.
Militzer, Rev., 289.
Millard, Nathaniel, 561.
Miller, ——, 629.
Miller, Mrs., 559.
Miller, Judge Albert, 2, 3, 4, 100, 103, 108, 318-323, 326, 327, 332, 338, 339, 538, 602.
Miller, Angus, 334.
Miller, Rev. Fred, 483.
Miller, Gunder, 327.
Miller, Rev. H. L., 606.
Miller, Mrs. H. L., 606.
Miller, Hiram, 194.
Miller, J. M., 329, 333.
Miller, Rev. J. T., 323.
Miller, J., 405.
Miller, James, 134, 545, 546, 547, 548.
Miller, John, (Eaton), 405.
Miller, John, (Oakland), 569.
Miller, Joseph, (Eaton), 405.
Miller, Joseph, (Kalamazoo), 134.
Miller, Joseph, (St. Joseph), 610.
Miller, Joseph, Jr., 134.
Miller, Mrs. Louisa, 559.
Miller, W. H., 326, 337.
Milliken, Supt., 488.
Mills, Major, 86.
Mills, A. M., 401.
Mills, L. F., 480.
Mills, Rev. Louis, 482.
Mills, Morgan B., 274.
Milnes, Sir Robert Shore, 119.
Miner, C., 280.
Miner, J. J., 280.
Minette, Tond, 663.
Miney, Pierre, 35.
Minnis, Rev. Adam, 242, 243.
Misee, Pierre, 35.
Mitchell, Rev. Oren, 240, 242.
Mitchell, Timothy, 553, 556.
Mitchell, W. W., 476.
Mitchell, William, 334.
Mitchell, William T, 100, 111, 266.
Mix, C. L., 329.
Mixer, Capt. C. S., 284.
Mizie, Pierre, 36.
Moes, ——, 386.
Moffatt, C. T., 404, 425, 426.
Moffatt, Isaac, 503.
Moguago, John, 360, 369.
Moine, Louis, 35.
Monette, Rev., (Ohio), 481.
Monnette, Rev. O., 240.
Monroe, ——, 322.
Monroe, E., 279.
Monroe, J. R., 629, 635.
Monroe, John, 581.
Monteith, John, 567.
Monteith, Rev. John, 214, 215.
Montgomery, J., 431.
Montgomery, M. V., 430.
Montgomery, Stewart, 413.
Montgomery, W. H., 8, 266.
Montmagny, Charles Huault de, 114, 118.
Montmorency, Mgr. de Laval de, 118.
Montmorency, Marshall, Duc de, 117.
Monts, Peter de Guast, Sieur de, 117.
Moody, Elisha, 280, 283, 285.
Moon, William, 434.
Moore, 308, 629.
Moore, Mrs. Edward S., 610.

Moore, H. B., 302.
Moore, Horace D., 302, 309.
Moore, Henry, 325.
Moore, Mary Jane, 375.
Moore, Robert M., 302, 303, 306.
Moore & Smith, 332.
Moore, Thomas F., 477.
Moore & Voce, 325.
Moore, William D., 472, 473.
Moors, Jeremiah, 482.
Moran, Bazil, 34, 36.
Moran, W. B., 644.
Morehouse, Mrs. Catherine, 7.
Morehouse, Harvey, 7.
Morell, Judge George, 103, 115, 122, 131, 434.
Moreton, Miss Frances, 615.
Moreton, Col. Francois, 614, 615.
Moreton, Gov. Gabriel, 615.
Morey, Peter, 117.
Morey, Rev. Platt B., 235.
Morgan, Col., 21.
Morgan, Gustavus A., 275, 276, 293.
Morgan, Rev. Harrison, 236.
Morgan & Hartt, 275.
Morgan, Peyton R., 606.
Morley, Lieut., 180.
Morley, Emma, 361.
Moross, Miss, 645.
Morran, Capt., 36.
Morran, Louis, 36.
Morrill, Charles M., 629.
Morrill, Edward, 504.
Morrill, Nathaniel, 504.
Morris, ——, 615, 631.
Morris, Dolphin, 630.
Morris, Elias, 630.
Morris, George, 597.
Morris, Gouverneur, 3, 108.
Morris, Lewis Creighton, 630.
Morris, Orvil C., 597.
Morris, William, 560, 561, 567, 570, 574, 596, 597.
Morrison, Rev. J. H., 482.
Morrison, John E., 473.
Morrison, Mrs. John E. Sr., 490.
Morrison & Leland, 302.
Morrison, Rev. N. J., 411.
Morrison, Stephen A., 303, 305, 309.
Morrison, W. A., 439.
Morrow, George C., 362.
Morse, ——, 494, 568.
Morse, A. B., 476.
Morse, Asa, 280, 281, 284.
Morse, Joseph B., 549.
Morse, O., 402.
Morse, S. F. B., 222, 494.
Morse, W., 426.
Morse, Capt. William R., 454.
Mortimer, ——, 615.
Mortimer, Rev. G. D. E., 546, 547.
Morton, ——, 204.
Morton, G., 280.
Morton & Meigs, 204.
Mosely, William F., 561, 602, 606.
Moses, Mrs., 284.
Moses, J., 281.
Moss, John S., 543.
Motley, E., 291.
Mott, Mrs. Horace, 356.
Mott, Isaac C., 350.
Mouinerel, J. B., 35.
Moulthrop, Clark, 331.
Mower, Horace, 136.
Mowry, Ad., 325.
Moxom, Rev. Job, 356.
Moyers, Gilbert, 281, 286.
Muckatah, 271, 282.
Muckie, 370.
Mudget, Myron, 553.
Mudget, True, 553.
Muir, Miss, 644.
Muir, Helen B., 358.
Muir, W. K., 644, 645.
Muir, Mrs. W. K., 644.
Mullett, Col. John, 348, 575, 579-582, 591.
Muma, ——, 295.
Muma, Alfred, 281, 293, 294.
Muma, E. B., 294.
Muma, George, 280, 294.
Mundy, Judge Edward, 103, 115, 117, 131.
Munger, Corporal, 525.
Munger, A. S., 331.
Munger, C., 430.
Munger, Curtis, 323, 327, 331.
Munger, Rev. H., 287, 288.
Munger, L., 430.
Munson, Moses, 568.
Murphy, E., 286.
Murphy, John (Allegan), 286.
Murphy, John, (Calhoun), 361.
Murphy, William W., 7.
Murray, Bredett C., 274.

Murray, E. A., 280.
Murray, Sir James, (Gov. Gen.), 114, 119.
Murray, John, 35, 36.
Murray, S. T., 599.
Murry, John, (See Murray).
Musgrave, Joseph, 415-418.
Muzzy, ——, 629.
Myers, Deborah, 555.
Myers, J., 569.
Myers, Matthew, 175.
Myers, Robert, 175.
Myers, Samuel Jr., 563.

N.

Navarre, Miss, 27.
Navarre, Archange Marie Louise, 614.
Navarre, Mariana, 213.
Naysmith, Henry R., 266, 546, 548.
Naysmith, John, 548.
Neale, William F., 350.
Neale, William H., 359.
Neasmith, James N., 447.
Ne-aw-ta-naw, 369.
Ne-aw-to-beer-saw, 369.
Needham, William A., 334.
Neemah, 381, 382.
Neiffert, F., 291.
Nelson G., 280.
Nelson, Thomas, 553.
Neome, ——, 432.
Nesbitt, ——, 525.
Nesbitt, John, 521.
Newberry, A. R., 645.
Newberry, Rev. E. D., 482.
Newberry, John S., 124, 645, 655.
Newberry, Oliver, 573, 598.
Newberry, Rev. S., 288.
Newberry, Truman, 645, 647.
Newell & Co., 459.
Newell, George E., 454.
Newman, Ezra, 570.
Newnham, R. L., 312.
Newton, W. H., 7.
Newton, William, 463, 466.
Nichols, Dr., 160.
Nichols, C. F., 281, 282, 283.
Nichols, Clark, 290.
Nichols, Don C., 274.
Nichols, E. C., 351, 359.
Nichols, Rev. E. N., 8, 266.
Nichols, George, 342, 345.
Nichols, Horace G., 274.
Nichols, John, 351.
Nichols, Moses, 306.
Nichols, Shepard & Co., 361, 363.
Nichols, Stephen D., 301, 305, 309.
Niles, Johnson, 569.
Ninde, Rev. W. X., 226, 231, 236.
Noble, Alonzo, 349, 351.
Noble, Charles, 103.
Noble, David A., 124.
Noble, Sylvester D., 639.
Nobles A., 294.
Noe, Jacob, 468.
Nolan, J. P., 280.
Norris, L. B., 5.
Norris, Maria M., 5.
Norris, Col. P. W., 43.
Norris, Mrs. R. B., 5.
Norte, W., 292.
North, Mrs Almira Buck, 111, 266.
North, Henry H., 111, 266.
North, Rev. O. F., 241, 437,
North, Miss Mary E., 623.
North, Townsend, 100, 108, 623.
North, Zeolide B., 597.
Northrop, Rev. H. H., 413, 438.
Northrop, Mrs. Harriet B., 413.
Northrop, J. O., 281.
Norton, Gad, 569.
Norton, John, 319.
Norton, Mary, 484.
Norton, Noah, 553.
Norton, S. M., 476.
Norvell, Col. Freeman, 140.
Norvell, John, 103, 123, 140, 141, 143, 144, 145, 146, 147, 148.
Norvell, Lipsocomb, 140.
Noyes, Abraham, 568.
Noyes, Kirke W., 268.
Nye, H. D., 463.
Nye, Ira M., 463.

O.

Obey, Bishop, 217.
O'Brien, Rev. John, 217.
O'Brien, Thomas J., 398.
Odell, Rev. Jacob, 356.
O'Donoughue, Washington, 434.
O'Keefe, Judge, 223.
Okemos, ——, 49-52, 110, 383.
Okemos, John, 52.

Oldfield, Aaron, 339.
Oldfield, Mrs. Lucy, 339.
Olds, Rev. C. C., 236, 238.
Olds, Jane, 111, 266.
Olds, Martin, 342.
Oliver, Andrew, 281, 289, 290.
Oliver Bros, 283.
Oliver & Co., 291.
Oliver, G., 281.
Oliver, Geo., 435.
Olmstead, Benjamin, 346.
Olmstead, Harley, 564.
Onderdonk, H. W. W., 217.
Ormsby, Dr. L., 7, 553.
Osborn, Cornelius, 369, 370.
Osborn, G., 402.
Osborn, Jesse, 553.
Osgood, C., 405.
Osgood, N. A., 362.
Osmer, Miss Eunice, 155.
Ostrander, Walter, 590.
Ouilmett, A., 125.
Ould, Com'r, 184.
Ousterhout, Henry, 7.
Overhiser, Dolly B., 482.
Overton, Miss, 436.
Owen, ——, 229.
Owen, Asa, 566.
Owen, John, 227, 233.
Owen, T. C., 226, 232.
Oxenstierna, ——, 339, 347.

P.

Paddock, Rev. Benjamin N., 219.
Paddock, David, 599.
Padgham, J. H., 292.
Padgham, Philip, 286.
Page & Bean, 472.
Page, Curtis, 553.
Page, R. J. S., 438.
Page, S. F., 476.
Page, Thomas, 447.
Page, W., 430.
Page Rev. W., 288.
Page, W. C., 476.
Page & Wilson, 487.
Palmer, ——, 309.
Palmer, B., 406.
Palmer, Charles H., 443.
Palmer, J., 294.
Palmer, Joel M., 549, 551.
Palmer, Rev. L. D., 356.
Palmer, Mrs. Mary A., 229.
Palmer, Thomas W., 268.
Pamptepe, John, 368, 369.
Pamptopee, (see Pamptepe).
Pamp-to-pee, Phineas, 369.
Pardee, William N., 629.
Pardington, Rev. R. S., 237.
Parish, Isaac, 563.
Park, ——, 291.
Park, Edwin, 323, 331.
Parke, Dr. Ezra S., 579.
Parke, Capt. Hervey, 8, 266, 572, 576, 583, 590, 591.
Parke, John H., 578.
Parker, Lt., 180.
Parker, A. S., 543.
Parker, Ed., 362.
Parker, F. C., 281.
Parker, Fred B., 362.
Parker, Prof. J. W., 445, 446.
Parker, Rev. Orson, 437, 438.
Parker, Rev. Roswell, 243, 356.
Parker, Thomas J., 281, 286.
Parker, W., 291.
Parkhurst, Ebenezer, 280, 285, 286, 287.
Parkhurst, Mary, 287.
Parkinson, ——, 508.
Parkinson, A., 280.
Parkman, Francis, 33, 648.
Parks, George W., 275.
Parks, Henry, 266.
Parks & Hubbard, 275.
Parmely, Rev. Levi, 482.
Parmeter, ——, 426.
Parshál, D. W., 501.
Parsons, Gov. Andrew, 121.
Parsons, Rev. Benjamin, 482.
Parsons, Chester F., 638.
Parsons, Philo, 268, 373, 413.
Parsons, Mrs. William S., 545.
Partridge & Baugham, 329.
Partridge, B. F., 316, 322, 324, 325, 327, 329, 330, 333, 334.
Partridge, Olive M., 268.
Partridge, William, 281, 291.
Patchin, ——, 304.
Patchin, James, 553.
Patrick, Johnson, 523.
Patrick, Sherlock, 504.
Patrick, W. S., 438.
Pattee, Dr., 276.

Pattee, Rev. Elias, 235, 239, 240.
Pattee, Frank, 276.
Patterson, Dr. M. A., 553.
Patterson, William A., 438, 458, 459.
Pattison, S. W., 434.
Patton, Rev. James L., 413.
Paul, James A., 545.
Payne, Chauncey S., 433, 438, 448.
Payne, Mrs. C. S., 448.
Payne, John S., 302.
Peabody, J., 280.
Peale, ——, 402.
Pearce, Mrs. L. H., 361.
Pearce, Rev. L. H., 356.
Pearce, Rev. W. H., 236, 452.
Pearson, ——, 435.
Pearson & Burrows, 435.
Pease, C. N., 350.
Pease, Jacob, 545.
Pease, Jane, 469.
Pease & Lewis, 350.
Pease, Mrs. Lurenda, 378.
Pease, Lyman, 504.
Pease, Lt. W. H., 167, 168, 170, 171, 176, 177, 178, 180, 182, 183, 187, 188.
Pease, William S., 349.
Peck, ——, 287, 508.
Peck, A. M., 405.
Peck, Edward, 599.
Peck, George W., 124, 644.
Peck, H. B., 289, 292.
Peck, H. M., 292.
Peck & Harding, 292.
Peck, Moses, 590.
Peebles, Rev. J. M., 357.
Peek, S., 281.
Peet, George, 281, 293, 294.
Peet, Rev. Stephen D., 109.
Peet, W., 294.
Peltier, J. B., 35.
Pelton, Nathan, 553.
Pendill, E. W., 350.
Penfield, J., 281.
Penfold, J., 430, 431.
Penniman, Ebenezer J., 124, 426.
Pennington, John, 553.
Pennock, J. M., 281, 292.
Pennock, T. J., 281.
Pennoyer, Henry, 100, 111, 266.
Percy, Harry, 529.
Perkins, ——, 337.
Perkins, Dr., 620.
Perkins & Bond, 284.
Perkins, G., 281.
Perkins, Samuel B., 431.
Perkiser, Rev. M. G., (see Perkizer).
Perkizer, Rev. M. G., 240, 241.
Perrin, F., 577.
Perrin, Mrs. F., 577.
Perrin, Jesse, 569.
Perrin, Jonathan, 561.
Perrin, Joseph, 133.
Perrine, Hannah, 502.
Perrine, Rev. W. H., 236, 238.
Perrott, Mrs. Elizabeth, 336.
Perrott, P. J., 336.
Perry, E. W., 276.
Perry, Hermon, 287.
Perry, Mrs. Hermon, 287.
Perry, John, 566.
Perry, Rev. Joseph S., 236.
Peso, S., 404.
Peters, ——, 325.
Peters, Charles, 405.
Peters, William, 323.
Pettibone, L., 563.
Pew, George H., 545.
Pfeiffner, Joseph, 274, 281.
Phaeton, Dan., 532.
Phelps, Mrs., 621.
Phelps, Miss Abigail Emeline, 377.
Phelps, Asa, 349, 392.
Phelps, Calvin, 387, 389, 391, 393.
Phelps, Mrs. Calvin, 389.
Phelps, Guy, 569.
Phelps, Rev. Josiah, 357.
Phillips, ——, 601.
Phillips, Capt. Archibald, 565, 575.
Phillips, D. B., 405.
Phillips, J. P., 337.
Phillips, T. C., 337.
Phillips, William, 590.
Phipps, ——, 590.
Phipps, A. F., 402.
Phipps, G., 406.
Pier, ——, 574.
Pierce, ——, 393.
Pierce, Capt. B. F., 322.
Pierce, Benjamin H., 567.
Pierce, Edward O., 461.
Pierce, F. H. & E. O., 461.
Pierce, Frank H., 461.
Pierce, Franklin, 273, 466.
Pierce, J. D., 404.

Pierce, Rev. John D., 39, 103, 385, 387, 388, 389, 511.
Pierce, Mrs. John D., 388.
Pierce, Nathan, 39.
Pierce, Mrs. N. H., 496.
Pierpont, L., 402.
Pierson, Rev. Arthur T., 413.
Pierson, Benjamin, 443.
Pierson, Rev. J., 482.
Pierson, Mrs. J., 484.
Pike, ——, 590.
Pike, J., 284.
Pike, S. N., 291.
Pilcher, Rev. Elijah H., 236, 237, 239, 240, 242, 243, 356.
Piltier, Bapt., 36.
Pinckney, Jonathan, 568.
Pinkney, Charles Cotesworth, 130.
Piper, W. A., 292.
Pitezell, Rev. J. H., 242, 243.
Pitkin, Rev. S. D., 356.
Pittman, Daniel, 553.
Pitts & Cranage, 324.
Pixley, Miss Martha, 417.
Plant, Jean Mary, see Plante.
Plante, Jean Marie, 34, 36.
Platt, Rev. D., 281, 289.
Platt, D. G., 294.
Platt, Fred A., 447.
Platt, Zephaniah, 117, 136.
Plimpton, Miss, 292.
Plum, William, 396.
Plummer, Benjamin, 309.
Plummer, Daniel A., 281, 286, 309.
Plutarch, 46.
Plympton, Rev. Billings O., 235.
Pogue, James, 484.
Pokagon, Chief, 368.
Polk, James K., 147, 494.
Pollard, Rev. Richard, 214.
Pomery, J., 279.
Pond, George H., 447.
Pond, J., 392.
Pond, S. D., 290, 292.
Pon-seek-man, 370.
Pontiac, Chief, 33, 52.
Pool, ——, 576.
Poole, Rev. W. H., 226, 237.
Pope, Alexander, 504.
Pope, H. H., 281, 292.
Pope, J. D., 281.
Pope, Gen. John, 183, 184, 188.
Pope, Mrs. J., 503.
Porter, ——, 104.
Porter, Capt., 86.
Porter Augustus S., 103, 123, 147.
Porter, Camilla, 417.
Porter, Gov. George B., 115, 120, 121, 142, 532.
Porter, George S., 284.
Porter, James B., 281, 286.
Porter, John S., 565.
Porter, Reuben, 417.
Porter, W., 280.
Porter, Judge William A., 131.
Post, H. D., 296.
Post, J. W., 7.
Postal, George 569.
Potter, Allen, 124.
Potter, Dr. Hazard A., 376.
Potter, Henry, 352.
Potter, H. & Sons, 352.
Potter, Rev. Laurens B., 4, 8, 108, 266.
Powell, A. B., 359.
Powell, E. R. 474, 488.
Powell, John A., 545, 583, 590.
Powell, O., 564.
Power, Arthur, 562, 564.
Powers, ——, 616,
Powers, H. 401.
Powers, Isaac, 553.
Powers, T., 292.
Pratt, Capt., 33.
Pratt, Judge Abner, 115, 116, 131, 285, 364.
Pratt, Alvah, 638.
Pratt, Ben., 280, 286.
Pratt, E., 294, 295.
Pratt, H. R., 2.
Pratt, L. K., 280.
Pratt, Sally, 556.
Pray, Esek., 425.
Prentice, Walter W., 342, 343.
Prentiss, Joseph, 563.
Prentiss, N., 563.
Prescott, ——, 46.
Prescott, Oliver, 465.
Prescott, Gov. Robert, 119.
Prescott, Samuel, 503, 504, 515, 517.
Prescott, Mrs. Samuel, 516.
Preston, David, 225, 226, 227, 228, 230, 231, 232.
Preston, James, 286.
Preston, S. H., 404.

Preston, W., 292.
Price, J. B., 281.
Price, Rev. Lorenzo D., 236.
Price, O. F., 430.
Prickett, ——, 282.
Priest, O., 281.
Priest, S. H., 281, 291.
Priest, W., 281.
Priest, W. S., 281, 291.
Prindle, John, 569.
Pringle, Eugene, 500, 508.
Pris, S., 294.
Pritchard, Gen. Benjamin D., 281, 286, 292.
Pritchette, Kintzing, 319.
Prouty, Andy, 279.
Prouty, Jeanette E., 280.
Prouty, Leander S., 279, 280.
Prouty, Mrs. Leander S., 279, 280.
Prudhomme, Jacques, 35, 36.
Prudhomme, Francois, 35.
Pullen, W., 280.
Purdy, Elijah, 610.
Purdy, P., 304.
Purdy, Robert, 563.
Putnam, John W., 324, 327.

Q.

Quimby, H., 406.
Quick, Mary, 566.
Quirk, Patrick, 545.

R.

Raby, Capt., 323.
Ragan, T., 292.
Ramezay, Chevalier Claude de, 118.
Ramsdell, J. G., 3, 100, 108.
Randall, ——, 280, 489.
Randall, A., 430.
Randall, Caleb Dwinell, 107, 111, 266, 339.
Randall, Samuel, 553.
Randall, Samuel C., 451, 453.
Rankin, Franc H., 464.
Rankin, Francis H., 431, 438, 441, 449, 453, 464.
Rankin, Mrs. F. H., 448, 449.
Rankin, George H., 464.
Ranney, Rev. J. A., 288.
Ransom, ——, 532.
Ransom, Gov. Epaphroditus, 103, 115, 116, 120, 131, 135, 136, 285, 385, 466, 473, 529, 532, 629, 635.
Ransom, Rev. H. W., 243.
Rawley, J., 281.
Rawls, Paul W. H., 528.
Rawson, Luther, 553.
Raymond, Henry, 246, 323, 324, 327, 331.
Raymond, Col. Henry S., 325, 331.
Reade, Lyman, 350.
Reagh, Joseph, 35.
Redfield, B. S., 374.
Redfield, George, 103, 347.
Redfield, Mary, 374.
Redpath & Campbell, 292.
Reed, Capt., 86.
Reed, Carlo, 412.
Reed, David, 553.
Reed, Don A., 553.
Reed, Fitz L., 412, 413, 415, 422, 425.
Reed, Gersham, 553.
Reed, Philo, 567.
Reed, Rev. S., 236.
Reed, Wilbur F., 480.
Reese, Rev. Joseph, 243.
Reeves, J. D., 7.
Reeves, Stephen, 561, 562, 568, 599.
Reid, Edwy. C., 274, 275, 289, 310.
Reid, Robert, 304.
Reilly, ——, 362.
Revoir, Michael, 594.
Reynolds, ——, 280, 508.
Reynolds, Caleb, 35, 36.
Reynolds, J., 401.
Reynolds, James, 530.
Reynolds, Rev. John, 627.
Reynolds, William, 342.
Reynolds, Rev. William, 238.
Rhines, J., 430.
Rhodes, John, 564.
Rice, H. G., 406.
Rice, H. M., 264.
Rice, Samuel, 434.
Rich, Hampton H., 3, 100, 108, 476, 477, 490.
Richard, Claude, 34, 36.
Richard, Father Gabriel, 123, 215, 655.
Richards, C., 281.
Richards, M., 281.
Richards, M. W., 564.
Richards, Rev. R. R., 236, 241, 243.
Richman, Mrs. A. M., 605, 606.
Richman, Charles L., 605, 606.
Richman, Charles L. & Co., 606.
Richie, ——, 510.

Richardson, David M., 413.
Richardson, Gov. O. D., 103, 599.
Richelieu, Cardinal, 118.
Ridgway, Rev. Robert, 241.
Rigby, J. A., 281.
Riggs, Judge, 194.
Riley, Henry H., 5, 41, 107.
Riley, John, 321, 324.
Riley, Stephen V. R., 321.
Ring-Nose, 271.
Ring, Paul B., 507.
Ringuet, Mrs. Maxim, 545.
Ripley, William L., 286.
Risden, Clark O., 590, 591.
Ritter, Rev. Charles, 357.
Rix, John, 36.
Robbins, Rev. Daniel, 357.
Robe, Rev. J. T., 288, 537, 542.
Robert, Pierre, 35.
Roberts, ——, 430, 511.
Roberts, Ira, 569.
Roberts, John, Jr., 222, 223, 224, 225.
Roberts, John, (Lenawee), 553.
Roberts, John, (Detroit), 222.
Roberts, L. H., 455.
Roberts, Mary Jones, 222.
Roberts, William, 564.
Roberts, William M., 559.
Robertson, Asahel, 553.
Robertson, Rev. Charles F., 219.
Robertson, George, 268.
Robertson, Gen. John, 109.
Robertson, John (Bay), 326.
Robertson, Dr. T. W., 362.
Roberval, Jean Francois de la Roque, Sieur de., see La Roque.
Robinson, Capt., 305.
Robinson, C., 404.
Robinson, David G., 8, 100, 266.
Robinson, Emily, 426.
Robinson, H. S., 425.
Robinson, J., 280.
Robinson, Dr. J. A., 500, 504.
Robinson, James D., 545.
Robinson, Reuben, 232.
Robinson, Rix., 40, 470.
Robinson, Rufus R., 564.
Robison, Andrew, 639.
Roche, Troillus de Mesgouet, Marquis de la, see La Roche.
Rocheblave, Sieur de, see De Rocheblave.
Rockway, S., 284.
Rockwell, George, 362.
Rockwell, James R., 7, 281.
Rodgers, Capt., 576.
Roe, A. T., 415.
Rogers, ——, 15, 280.
Rogers, Lieut., 22.
Rogers, Major, 13, 24.
Rogers, Miss, 331.
Rogers, Mrs., 378.
Rogers, A. W., 402, 404.
Rogers, Elizabeth, 336.
Rogers, Esther, 325.
Rogers, Hiel, 325.
Rogers, Mrs. J. V., 299.
Rogers, Peter, 325.
Rogers, R., 281.
Rogers, Thomas, 321, 322, 327, 331, 335, 336.
Rogers, Mrs. Thomas, 321.
Rolf, Rev. William, 544.
Ronte, F., 281.
Rood, Charles C., 547.
Roof, Adam L., 473.
Roosvelt, Cornelius, 435.
Root, ——, 508.
Root, Dr. Bennett F., 639.
Root, Ira, 476.
Root, L. Q., 482.
Rosa, H. M., 291.
Rose, E. L., 346.
Rose, Mrs. Harvey K., 545.
Roseau, Charles, 35.
Rosecrants, Josiah, 521, 525.
Rosecrants, Mortimer, 525.
Rosecrantz, Mrs. Polly W., 491.
Ross, J., 281.
Ross, L., 280.
Rosseau, ——, 199.
Rossman, A., 280, 283.
Rossman, Fite, 568.
Rossman, Joseph, 568.
Row, Harriet, 7.
Row, Samuel H., 7.
Rowe, W. C., 280.
Rowell, Capt. George H., 350.
Rowland, Thomas, 560.
Rowley, B., 401.
Rowley, Louis E., 488.
Rowley, Rev. J., 482.
Rough, Joseph, see Reagh.
Roys, Norman, 609.
Rudger, T. T., 430.

Ruggles, Rev. Isaac, 599.
Rumery, S., 281.
Rumsey & Allen, 580.
Runyan, Isaac, 610.
Runyan, Vincent, 563.
Rush, Ira W., 620.
Russ, Dr., 506.
Russell, Dr., 644.
Russell, Miss, 644.
Russell, Alfred, 644.
Russell, Mrs. Alfred, 644.
Russell, H. M., 8, 266.
Russell, Rev. John, 236, 237.
Russell, L., 401.
Russell, Miller & Co., 323.
Russell, T. M., 280.
Russell, William, 570.
Rutsan, G., 281.
Ryan & Furber, 274.
Ryan, Rev. Henry, 237.
Ryan, Martin T., 274, 276.

S.

Sabin, Father, 396.
Sabin, Rev. Benjamin, 243.
Sabin, H., 280.
Sabin, Rev. Peter, 241, 242, 243.
Sackrider, ——, 384, 390, 391.
Sadler, J., 281.
Safford, Rev. H., 357.
Sage, L., 281, 283.
Sage & McGraw, 332.
Sage-enaster, ——, (English King), 53.
St. Anthony, 652.
St. Aubin, Miss, 645.
St. Clair, Gov. Gen. Arthur, 115.
St. Clair, Major, 24.
St. Clair, Lt. Gov. Patrick, 650.
Ste. Claire, 647, 650, 651, 655, 659, 660, 663, 665.
St. Etienne, Amable, 35.
St. Louis Chrisostome, 35.
St. Louis, Pierre, 35.
Sailor, Rev. J., 288, 289, 314, 315.
Salien, Peter, 356.
Sales & Cash, 250.
Salter, David, 348.
Sampson, Dr. A. B., 418.
Salsbury, Orsyn, 556.
Sanbar, ——, 392.
Sanborn, Rev. O., 236.
Sanderson, Henry F., 566.
Sands, T., 280.
Sanford, Rev. Miles, 242, 243.
Sanford, R., 425.
Sangster, Rev. A. C., 472, 482.
Sanson, ——, 650.
Sapp, Rev. Resin, 242, 356.
Saunders, B., 422.
Saurin, Bishop, 557.
Savery, Asahel, 610.
Sawba, ——, 383.
Sawtelle, Dr., 284.
Sawtels, Eli, 584, 590.
Sawyer, Henry R., 321.
Sawyer, James, 545.
Sawyer, Rev. Joseph, 237.
Sayler, Scott W., 333.
Scales, George, 275, 276.
Scheifflein, Lt. Jonathan, 22, 28, 34, 35.
Schellhouse, Lorancie, 609, 610.
Schellhouse, Lorencie, see Lorancie.
Schillinger, Meek & Co., 459.
Schoenburg, Rev. A., 289.
Schoolcraft Family, 282.
Schoolcraft, Henry R., 103, 321, 435, 573.
Schortz, Capt., 180.
Schroeder, George, 545.
Schuyler, Montgomery, 356.
Sclosh, Jacob, 553.
Scotford, Rev. John, 241, 243.
Scott, ——, 173.
Scott, Major, 167, 168, 169, 170.
Scott, Capt. H. C., 323.
Scott, Thomas, 402, 405.
Scott, Rev. Walter, 288, 289.
Scott, Sir Walter, 301, 407, 504.
Scott, Gen. Winfield, 89, 177, 584.
Scout, ——, 388.
Scovell, David W., 468.
Scoville & Co., 425, 426.
Scoville, G., 431.
Scranton, L. S., 546.
Seaborn, Rev. F. A., 240, 241.
Seamon, D. D., 281.
Seamon, H., 281.
Searles, Samuel, 386, 394.
Sears, Mrs. Sophia J., 639.
Sears, Dr. Thomas, 639.
Sears, Thomas S., 639.
Seba-qua, ——, 369.
Seeley, Daniel H., 434.
Seeley, Harvey, 565.

Seeley, Jesse, 564.
Seifer, W., 292.
Seil, John L., 560.
Selden, C., 425.
Selden, S., 425.
Seldon, C., 425.
Seldon & Fairfield, 425.
Sellick, Charles, 447.
Semple, Father, 27, 32.
Sergeant, John, 130.
Sessions, A., 401, 405.
Sessions, Alonzo, 473, 474, 487, 488, 489.
Sessions, H. C., 484, 485.
Sessions, J. Q. A., 7.
Sessions, Job., 489.
Sessions, William, 487.
Severans, ——, 315.
Sewall, John L., 413.
Seymour, Mrs. Henry, 545.
Seymour, H. P., 454.
Shackleton, G. J., 545.
Shaft, Adam, 598.
Shafter, Hugh M., 529, 530.
Shafter, Oscar, 529.
Shaler, Gov. Charles, 122.
Shank, S., 281.
Sharp, Rev. Peter, 241.
Sharpe, Rev. John, 243.
Shathuck, Samuel, 567.
Shattuck, Lemuel, 215.
Shaver, Abram I., 522.
Shaw, Mrs., 229.
Shaw, Cheeney, 429.
Shaw, Mrs. Chloe F., 601.
Shaw, Daniel, 333.
Shaw, Henry A., 2, 3, 6, 108, 422, 429, 430.
Shaw, Rev. James, 237, 241, 242, 243.
Shaw, John, 429.
Shaw, John (Van Buren), 630.
Shaw, Phillip, 601.
Shaw, Riley, 601.
Shaw, Rev. Samuel P., 242.
Shearer, George, 337.
Shearer, J. L., 280.
Shearer, James, 111, 266, 324, 326, 327, 328, 337.
Shearer, Jonathan M., 103, 244, 498, 541.
Shearman, J. H., 422.
Shehe, Edward, 34, 36.
Shelden, John, 571.
Shelden, T. C., 569.
Sheldon, John P., 215.
Sheldon & Reed, 224.
Sheldon, T. C., 149, 151.
Sheley, Alanson, 413.
Shemokoman, ——, 595.
Shepard, David, 351.
Shepard, T. F., 329.
Shepard, Warren B., 348, 349.
Shepherd, A., 431.
Shepherd, A. M., 292.
Shepherd, E. & J., 415, 416.
Shepherd, Elisha, 416.
Shepherd, J., 401.
Shepherd, J. S., 402.
Shepherd, James, 415, 416.
Shepherd, L. & E., 416.
Shepherd, Leroy, 416.
Shepherd, W. R., 401.
Sherkick, J., 425.
Sherman, R. P., 487.
Sherman, W. L., 326, 327, 329.
Sherwood, A. W., 292.
Sherwood, Eber, 279, 280.
Sherwood, George & Co., 276.
Sherwood & Griswold, 291.
Sherwood, Hull, 286.
Sherwood, Lizzie, 314.
Sherwood, T. R., 315.
Shier, Miss, 292.
Shier, Rev. William H., 237.
Shiffling, Jonathan, see Scheifflein.
Shipherd, Rev. J. J., 408, 409, 410, 412.
Shipherd, Mrs. J. J., 409.
Shipman, P. H., 361.
Shippey, John, 568.
Shirley, W. H., 294.
Shirley, W. J., 296.
Shirmer, J., 292.
Shoemaker, Col. Michael, 3, 4, 5, 100, 101, 106, 108, 110, 148, 166, 181, 182, 187, 244, 373, 491, 494, 496, 498, 499, 503.
Shoemaker, Michael, Jr., 188.
Shoemaker, N., 483.
Shoemaker, Nicholas, 545.
Shuart, Mrs., 378.
Shuler, Henry F., 334.
Shultz, Sophia, 304.
Shumway, Benjamin, 380, 381, 405, 406.
Shumway, Parley P., 405, 409.
Shuster, Mrs. Samuel, 619.
Sibley, Mrs. Aaron, 545.
Sibley, James, 605.
Sibley, Mark H., 605.

Sibley, Judge Solomon, 103, 122, 123, 131, 560, 569.
Sibley, Sylvester, 586, 591.
Sides, Dr. Isaac, 453, 484.
Sikes, O., 294.
Silsby, Spicer Montgomery & Johnson, 430.
Simcoe, Gov. Gen. John Graves, 115.
Simmons, J. H., 636.
Simmons, Simson, 568.
Simmons, Rev. William, 236, 237, 238.
Simon, Philip, 321.
Simon, William, 332, 333.
Simonds, O. H., 548.
Simonds, Rev. Samuel D., 236.
Simons, John, 573.
Simons, John A., 418.
Simpson, Edward, 622.
Simpson, Mrs. Ensa, 622.
Simpson, Lewis, 622.
Simpson, Thomas (Lixaboga), 602, 606.
Sinclair, ——, 326.
Sinclair, Patrick, 650.
Sinclair, Robert P., 545, 546.
Sirrine, A., 294.
Sisson, Thomas, 553.
Skeels, Dorr, 545.
Skidmore, Elizabeth, 639.
Skillman, A. H., 455.
Skinner, ——, 359.
Skinner, Adolphus L., 545.
Skinner, Pliny, 590.
Skinner, T. B., 351.
Slader, R., Jr., 401.
Slater, Dr. Z. T., 376.
Slingerland, Mrs. Mary A., 637.
Slites, Israel, 468.
Sloan, Ed., 342.
Slocum, Giles B., 111, 266.
Slocum, May A., 465.
Sloman, L., 342.
Smack, George W., 332.
Smart, Rev. James S., 236.
Smiley, Mitchell J., 398.
Smith, ——, 278, 334, 426, 484, 508, 575, 576, 579.
Smith, Capt., 594.
Smith, Dr. A. G., 375.
Smith, Addison, 525.
Smith, Andrew J., 117.
Smith, (Uncle Billy), 521.
Smith, Bridgman & Co., 460, 461.
Smith, Charles, 464.
Smith, Clement, 415.
Smith, Cornelia M., 7.
Smith, Daniel, 553.
Smith, David, 325.
Smith, E., 359.
Smith, Eli T., 460.
Smith, Ellis R., 362.
Smith, G. C., 281.
Smith, Rev. George, 237, 242, 243.
Smith, Dr. George E., 324, 325, 327, 333.
Smith, H. C., 281.
Smith, Harry, 521.
Smith, Henry, 522.
Smith, Capt. Henry (Hank), 302.
Smith, Rev. Henry, 577.
Smith, Henry M., 334.
Smith, Hiram, 374.
Smith, Hiram (Hardwood), 458.
Smith, Huston & Co., 523, 524.
Smith, Miss Isa, 522.
Smith, Capt., Isaac, 579.
Smith, Dr. Isaac S., 644.
Smith, Mrs. Isaac S., 644.
Smith, J., 280, 294.
Smith, Rev. J. Morgan, 413.
Smith, J. W., 362.
Smith, Jacob, 432, 433.
Smith, Jake, (Wabesis), 575.
Smith, James, 521.
Smith, Jimmy, 521.
Smith, Job, 567.
Smith, J. Morgan, 43, 546.
Smith, J. Mortimer, 545.
Smith, Joseph, 296.
Smith, Joseph Addison, 521.
Smith, L. B., 281.
Smith, Rev. L. M. S., 481, 482.
Smith, Lewis, 472.
Smith, Rev. Lewis, 240, 241.
Smith, Lovina, 425.
Smith, Rev. M., 400.
Smith, M. B., 585, 588, 590.
Smith, Marion L., 472.
Smith, Mary, 555.
Smith, Mortimer L., 476.
Smith, Moses, 553.
Smith, Rev. Moses, 413.
Smith, N. E., 488.
Smith, O., 281, 292.
Smith, P., 281.
Smith, Peter, 92.

Smith, Phebe, 554.
Smith, R. H., 544.
Smith, Ralph C., 96.
Smith, Reuben H., 545, 546, 547, 548.
Smith, Robert, 464.
Smith, Robert, (Lenawee), 553.
Smith, S. A., 405.
Smith, Rev. S. M. S., 356.
Smith & Smith, 486.
Smith, T. R., 401, 404, 405, 406.
Smith, Thaddeus, 521.
Smith, Thomas, 96.
Smith, Timothy, 628.
Smith, Rev. Uriah, 355, 363.
Smith, Walter, 522, 528.
Smith & Wesson, 478.
Smith, Willard, 464.
Smith, William, 334.
Smith, William L., 108.
Smith, William L. (merchant), 460.
Snedeker, J., 278, 292.
Snow, Rev. William T., 239.
Snyder, J. H., 425.
Snyder, John, 504.
Soissons, Charles de Bourbon, Comte de, 117.
Somlers, Louis, 34.
Sotham, ——, 463.
Soules, Nathaniel L., 472.
Southwell, Edward, 504.
Southworth, Constant, 564.
Southworth, E. C., 280.
Southworth, Mrs. Margaret, 559.
Southworth, S. A., 401.
Southworth, Sophia, 356.
Sowersly, J., 291.
Spafford, Abner, 553, 555.
Spafford, Charles, 553.
Spafford, D., 294.
Spafford, George, 553, 557.
Spafford, Litch, 553.
Spalding, ——, 404.
Spare, ——, 606.
Spaulding, John A., 384, 390.
Spaulding, P. S., 401, 402, 403, 404.
Spaulding, Phineas, 403.
Spaulding, Mrs. Sarah, 390.
Spears, T., 430.
Spence, ——, 422.
Spencer, A., 431.
Spencer, Asa, 471.
Spencer, C. H., 476.
Spencer, H. C., 463.
Spencer, John C., 397, 423.
Spencer, John C. (N. Y.), 605.
Spencer, Michael, 356.
Spencer, Mrs. Michael, 356.
Sperry, G. F., 292.
Sphon & Vanderhook, 292.
Spicer, William C., 333.
Spindler, Rev. W. R., 481.
Spofford, George, see Spafford.
Sprague, Col., 644.
Sprague, C., 401.
Sprague, F. A., 569.
Sprague, Roger, 562.
Sprague, Silas, 569.
Sprague, Dr. W. B., 355.
Sprague, William, 123.
Sprague, Rev. William, 239, 240, 241, 242, 243.
Sprigg, Judge William, 122.
Spring, Henry, 547.
Squier, ——, 46.
Squier, M. L., 425.
Squires, W. J., 426.
Stafford, S., 281.
Stage, Robert F., 436.
Stage & Wright, 434, 435, 437, 456.
Stalker, Rev. Thomas, 237.
Stanard, Col. David, 561, 567, 574, 598.
Standart, Carrie K., 446.
Stanley, Capt., 574.
Stanley, Rev. G., 288.
Stanley, S. P., 281.
Stanton, Col., 187.
Stanton, Dr., 284.
Stanton, Alice, 484.
Stanton, E., 324.
Stanton, Elizabeth C., 376.
Stanwood, ——, 289.
Staples, Rev. Allen, 241, 242, 243, 356.
Staring, H., 281.
Stead, Benjamin, 215, 560.
Stears, Edmond, 609, 610.
Stebbins, ——, 404.
Stebbins, C. B., 7.
Stebbins, Charles, 362.
Stebbins, F. R., 8, 266.
Stebbins, Lewis, 403.
Stebbins, P. A., 403.
Stebbins, T. T., 403, 422, 426.
Stedman, E. A., 291.
Steele, Rev. Ebenezer, 243.

Steele, Rev. Salmon, 242.
Steevens, F. H., 321.
Stegeman, A., 291.
Stegeman, G., 281.
Stegeman, J., 281.
Stegeman, M., 281.
Steinbrook, Samuel, 583, 584, 587, 590.
Steininger, I. W., see J. W.
Steininger, J. W., 294.
Stellberger, David, 480.
Stephens, F. H., 321.
Stephens, Henry, 568.
Stephens, John, 504.
Stephenson, George, 494.
Stephenson, William, 451.
Sterling, Joseph M., 100, 268.
Steuben, Baron, 86.
Stevens, ——, 46, 47.
Stevens, A., 405.
Stevens, A. A., 545.
Stevens, A. C., 433.
Stevens, Appleton, 333.
Stevens, Hester L., 124.
Stevens, John, 504.
Stevens & Pearson, 435.
Stevens, Robert L., 399.
Stevens, Rufus W., 434, 435, 436, 460, 576, 582.
Stevens, Sherman, 582.
Stevenson, ——, 606.
Stevenson, Edward, 472.
Stevenson, F. W., 476.
Stevenson, J. P., 488.
Stevenson, Miss Martha, 641.
Stevenson, & Rowley, 488.
Stevenson, & Taylor, 488.
Stevenson, T. G., 488.
Steward, L. H., 360.
Stewart, Miss, 644.
Stewart, Cephas, 618.
Stewart, D., 292.
Stewart, Mrs. E. M. S., 148, 268.
Stewart, Harvey, 327.
Stewart, John, 348.
Stewart, Leon H., 349.
Stewart, Mary J. B., 618.
Stewart, Dr. Morse, 644.
Stewart, Mrs. Morse, 644.
Stiles & Cook, 291.
Still, William, 286.
Stillson, Leonard, 350.
Stilson, Thomas, 447.
Stimpson, Ira, 371.
Stimson, H., 281.
Stimson, Rev. L. B., 620.
Stockbridge, F. B., 306.
Stocking, T., 563.
Stockton, John, 103.
Stockton, Mrs. T. B. W., 448.
Stockwell, John, 35, 36.
Stockwell, Thiren A., 556.
Stoddard, Asa, 532, 541, 542.
Stone, G. R., 281, 292.
Stone, G. W., 281.
Stone, Prof. I. L., 359.
Stone, Mrs. I. L., 361.
Stone, J., 280, 281.
Stone, Dr. J. A. B., 527.
Stone, J. D., 280.
Stone, James B., 273.
Stone, John W., 124, 272, 286.
Stone, Mrs. Lucinda H., 532.
Stone, S. L., 281.
Stone, William H., 288.
Story, Judge Joseph, 130, 272.
Stoughton, Dillucena, 567.
Stoughton, William L., 117, 124.
Stout, D. B., 280, 286.
Stowe, Judge Lyman, 434, 436.
Stowe, Merrick, 436.
Stowe, Rev. Timothy, 399.
Strahan, ——, 11.
Strang, Sarah J., 556.
Strange, Rev. John, 237.
Streeter, A. L., 280.
Streeter, B., 280.
Streeter, Elias, 280.
Streeter, H., 280.
Streeter, J. B., 280, 291, 292.
Streeter, T. E., 280.
Strickland, Randolph, 100, 124.
Strong, Renselear, 610.
Stuart, Charles E., 103, 123, 134, 137, 138, 139, 443, 629.
Stuart, David, 52, 53, 54, 61.
Stuart, Mrs. David, 54.
Stuart, John, 52.
Stuart, Mary Buchanan, 52.
Stuart, Reed, 356.
Stuart, Robert, 52-66, 125.
Stuart, Mrs. Robert, 54, 55, 58, 60.
Stupps, ——, 95.
Stupps, Mrs. Jane, 95.
Sturgis, ——, 149.

Sturgis, John, 610.
Sullivan, Miss Catherine, 58.
Sullivan, Daniel, 436.
Sullivan, F., 281.
Sullivan, Rev. W. M., 239, 240, 241.
Summers, A., 430.
Sumner, A., 425, 426, 430.
Sumner, Charles, 600.
Sunderland, Mrs. Myron W., 545.
Surphlit, Robert, 34.
Sutherland, Jabez G., 124.
Sutphin & Schuler, 292.
Suylant, James, 504.
Swan, Dr. Ziba, 561, 566, 567, 574, 580.
Swan, Mrs. Dr., 566.
Swartout, Mary, 556.
Swartz, ——, 211.
Swearingen, Miss, 85.
Sweet, Gen. B. J., 7.
Sweet, Jerome B., 334.
Sweeting, Mortimer F., 396.
Sweezey, J. H., 280.
Swick, John, E., 8, 266.
Swift, H. D., 630.
Swift, John M., 476.
Swift, Rev. M., 239, 240.
Swift, R., 401.
Swift, W., 402.
Sydmore, ——, 405.
Sykes, Jared F., 397.

T.

Taft, Judge, 598.
Taft, Alphonso, 135.
Taft, Peter R., 135.
Taft, Pitts, 563.
Tagg, B., 281.
Taggart, Moses, 547.
Talbot, Rev. Joseph C., 219.
Talbot, Thomas T., 275.
Talcott, Oscar, 487.
Taney, Roger B., 130.
Tanner, C. J., 281.
Tanner, David, 570.
Tanner, Rowland, 504.
Tanner, Thomas, 504.
Tanner, Timothy I., 545, 546.
Tappan, Francis W., 429.
Tappan, W. M., 565.
Tarbox, M. V., 276.
Tavuan, J. B., 35.
Taylor, ——, 150, 488, 581, 602.
Taylor, Rev. Benjamin, 521.
Taylor, C. R., 483.
Taylor, Rev. Charles C., 219.
Taylor, Charles H., 443.
Taylor, E. O., 482.
Taylor, Rev. George, 236.
Taylor, George, (Lenawee), 553.
Taylor, G. W., 405.
Taylor, J. C., 484, 488.
Taylor, J. R., 289.
Taylor, James, 522.
Taylor, Leonard, 342, 346.
Taylor, Levi, 483.
Taylor, Ralph, 610.
Taylor, Sumner, 610.
Taylor, William, 521.
Taylor, Zachary, 137, 141, 147.
Teachout, Welcome, 556.
Tecumseh, Chief, 382.
Ten Broeck, Rev., 356.
Ten Eyck, ——, 149.
Tenney, Mrs. Harriet A., 3, 4, 8, 11, 100, 105, 106, 108, 111, 113, 370, 538, 539.
Tenney, J. E., 4, 5.
Tenny, Alvah, 563.
Tenny, Rufus, 563.
Terry, Joshua S., 568, 574.
Tessier, Francois, 35, 36.
Tessier, Pierre, 34, 36.
Te-tese, ——, 369.
Thayer, Mrs. A., 448, 449.
Thayer, Artemus, 454.
Thayer, George W., 547.
Thayer, John B., 563.
Thayer, Joseph, 621.
Thayer, S., 294.
Thayer, & Smith, 457.
Themines, Ponce de Cardaillac de, 117.
Thew, Joseph, 281, 286, 292.
Thom, W. Leslie, 117.
Thomas, ——, 582, 584.
Thomas, Gen., 187, 188.
Thomas, Aranthus, 349.
Thomas, Charles E., 350, 359.
Thomas, Daniel, 348, 349.
Thomas, Mrs. Daniel, 349.
Thomas, Rev. E., 242.
Thomas, Eli, 346.
Thomas, Erastus, 346.
Thomas, Dr. Henry F., 286, 292.
Thomas, Isaac, 348.

Thomas, J. A., 404.
Thomas, J. H., 226.
Thomas, J. M., 280.
Thomas, Jonathan, 348, 349.
Thomas, Parthenia, 349.
Thomas, Rev. W. H., 482.
Thompson, ——, 325, 511.
Thompson, Bishop, 237.
Thompson, C. O., 480.
Thompson, D., 281.
Thompson, Rev. Edward, 236, 241.
Thompson, G., 281.
Thompson, Hiram, 510.
Thompson, Isaac, 473.
Thompson, L., 281.
Thompson, R., 281.
Thompson, W. O., 430.
Thompson, William, 560, 561, 562, 569.
Thompson, Dr. William, 599.
Thompson, William D., 111, 266, 505.
Thompson, William G., 645.
Thompson, Mrs. William G., 645.
Thompson, William R., 510, 511.
Thomson, Col. Edward H., 3, 106, 108, 431, 438, 443, 453, 550.
Thomson, William, 431.
Thurber, ——, 573.
Thurber, William, 561, 566, 573.
Thurston, George, 610.
Tibbetts, ——, 606.
Tibbits, Allen, 246.
Tibbitts, Jonathan, 472.
Tibbs, ——, 167, 168, 170, 171.
Tiffany, Alexander R., 40.
Tiffin, Gov., 101.
Tiffin, Edward, 577.
Tilton, C., 402.
Tillotson, L. C., 484.
Tillotson, W., 402.
Timby, ——, 291.
Tindall, Rev. G. P., 437, 452.
Tittle, Eliza, 630, 636.
Tittle, Margaret (Peggy), 630.
Tizzier, Francis, 36, see Tessier.
Tizzier, Pierre, 36, see Tessier.
Tobey, Dr. S. D., 287.
Todd, Prof. A. L., 481.
Todd, Alfred, 610.
Todd, Col. John, 21, 32.
Todd, John, 433, 434, 436, 440.
Todd, Maj. Joseph, 566, 567, 568, 574, 600.
Todd, Mrs. Joseph, 567.
Todd, Joseph J., 567, 574, 581.
Todd, Mrs. M. E., 292.
Todd, Rev. W., 288.
Toddy, Major Hot, 575.
Togee, Major, 575.
Toll, Isaac D., 3, 4, 100, 108, 612, 614.
Toll, Nancy De Graff, 266.
Tomlinson, & Heath, 283, 291.
Tomlinson, J., 278, 291.
Tompkins, D. D., 503.
Tompkins, John, 490.
Toney, Oliver, see Torry.
Tonty, de, see De Tonty.
Toof, Rev., 518.
Torberts, ——, 160.
Torquemada, ——, 46.
Torrey, Clark, 447.
Torrey, Jason, 280, 284, 285, 286.
Torry, Oliver, 567, 590.
Tower, Osmond, 476, 481, 489.
Tower, O. S., 485.
Town, ——, 515.
Town, Oka, 111, 266, 287.
Towne, Stephen, 504.
Townley, Deacon, 501.
Townley, C., 430.
Townley, Mrs. G. J., 503.
Toynton, J., 227.
Tozer, A. B., 350.
Tracy, I., 136.
Tracy, Marquis Alexandre de Prouville de, 114, 118.
Tramblay, Etienne, 35.
Tramblay, J. B., 35.
Tramblay, Michel, 35.
Tramble, Jean B., Jr., 36.
Traver, Charles, 446.
Treadway, Alfred, 453.
Treat, Butler, 555.
Tressey, James, 36.
Triggs, Rev. R., 240, 241, 243.
Tripp, ——, 503.
Tripp, Abial, 503.
Tripp, Charles, 639.
Tripp, J., 401.
Tromble, Etienne, 36.
Trombley, Benoit, 318, 325, 332.
Trombley, Elizabeth, 336.
Trombley, Job., 337.
Trombley, Joseph, 317-319, 321, 332, 339.

Trombley, Mrs. Joseph, 321, 339.
Trombley, Leon, 316, 317, 318, 320, 326, 336, 337.
Trombley, Lewis, 318.
Trombley, Lucy, 326.
Trombley, Medore, 325, 330.
Trombley, Mrs. Sarah McCormick, 325.
Trombley, Mrs. Sarah Chapoton, 339.
Trotter, Rev. Alex., 356.
Trottier, Antoine, 36.
Trouillier, Corp. Joseph, 35.
Trowbridge, Mrs. Catherine W. S., 221.
Trowbridge, Charles C., 11, 52, 103, 213, 217, 279, 558.
Trowbridge, Rowland E., 124.
Trowbridge, Stephen V. R., 55, 562, 569, 570.
Trudell, Francis, 34, 36.
Trudell, John B., 318, 337.
Trudell, Mrs. John B., 318.
True, Alva, 515, 516, 517.
True, Mrs. Alva, 515, 516.
Truttie, Antoine, 34.
Tubah, C. F., 290, 291.
Tuckamin, ——, 382.
Tucker, William, 34.
Turner, Capt., 179, 181, 182, 183.
Turner, Clark B., 464.
Turner, Mrs. Eunice, 545.
Turner, Judge Josiah, 116, 435.
Turner, Loren H., 415.
Turner, Martin, 530.
Turney, J., 431.
Turrill, Dr. Minor Y., 549, 552.
Turrill, Mrs. Minor Y., 552.
Turrin, Chaplain, 213.
Tussy, James, 35.
Tuttle, ——, 50.
Tyler, Erwin, (Taylor), 581, 584.
Tyler, Marvin, 590.
Tyler, Mrs. Comfort, 610.
Tyrrel, John, 553.

U.

Ulrich, Isaac F., 610.
Underhill, John, 564.
Underwood, D. K., 556.
Underwood, Samuel, 281, 301.
Updyke, G., 281.
Updyke, R., 281.
Upson, Charles, 117, 124.
Upton, James S., 350.
Utley, Peleg S., 564.
Utter, Mrs., 598.

V.

Vahue, P., 281.
Van Alstyne, J. C., 425.
Van Antwerp, Deacon, 636.
Vanbogart, F., 281.
Van Brunt, John S., 356.
Van Brunt, Mrs. John S., 356.
Van Buren, A. D. P., 528, 532, 541.
Van Buren, Michael, 590.
Vance, Eliza, 556.
Van De Mark, Edward, 350.
Vandenburg, ——, 388
Vandenburg, Mrs., 388.
Vandercook, M. C., 291.
Vanderheyden, W. H., 486.
Van Deusen, H. C., 454, 463.
Van Dyke, Phillip, J. D., 644.
Van Dyke, Mrs. Phillip J. D., 644.
Van Horn, Philip, 504, 517.
Vankeuren, P., 280.
Vannata, Aaron B., 638.
Van Nest, Rev. P. S., 438.
Van Norman, M., 280.
Van Ostran & Stanley, 292.
Van Tiffin, Reuben, 450.
Van Vleck, Albert, 488.
Van Vleck, Virgil, 481, 487.
Van Vleck, Mrs. Virgil, 484.
Van Waggoner, Dan., 480.
Van Waggoner, Jed., 568, 590.
Van Winkle, Rip, 244, 494.
Van Wormer, Jennie, 447.
Van Zile, P. T., 417, 418, 420, 421.
Varnum, Richard S., 111, 266.
Vaudreuil, Phillippe de Rigaud, Chevalier de, 114, 119.
Vedder, John, 556.
Ventadour, Henry de Levy, Duc de, 117.
Vernon, Col., 23.
Vickery, Stephen (Steven), 521, 523.
Viger, Andre, 35.
Villiers, Neyon de, 15.
Voorheis, Isaac I., 551.
Voorheis, J. N., 563.
Voorheis, Joseph, 564, 565.
Vosburg, A., 278, 283, 289, 293.
Vosburg, Barney, 522.

Vosburg & Barnett, 293.
Vosburg, Edward, 327.
Vosburg, H., 281, 292.
Vosburg, Mrs. S. B., 292.
Vosburg, W. W., 292.
Vosper, Benjamin, 476.

W.

Wabaseis, (Jake Smith), 432, 433, 575.
Wah-ba-sins, see Wabaseis.
Wachterhauser, Joseph, 610.
Wachterhauser, Louis, 610.
Wade, Maj., 253.
Wade, Dick, 612.
Wade, Ebenezer F., 7, 100, 617.
Wade, Joseph, 501.
Wakefield, D., 425, 426.
Wakefield, Stephen B., 268.
Wakelee, C., 351.
Wakeman, Hiram, 609.
Walbridge, David S., 124, 305.
Waldo, C., 406.
Waldo, Rev. E. F., 288.
Waldo, Rev. L. F., 287, 289.
Waldron, Henry, 124.
Waldron, John, 569.
Walker, Charles I., 8, 12, 266.
Walker, George L., 451, 457.
Walker, Rev. George W., 238, 239.
Walker, Henry N., 117.
Walker, James B., 438, 443.
Walker, Mrs. J. B., 448, 449.
Walker, John, 543.
Walker, Levi, 438.
Walker, M. W., 392.
Walker, Theodore, 321.
Walkley, Judge Ellsworth, 435, 465.
Wall, William, 386.
Wallace, ——, 31, 45.
Wallace, William, 53.
Wallace, Capt. William, 349, 366.
Wallin, ——, 307.
Wallin, A. C., 274.
Wallin, Franklin B., 301, 302, 306, 307.
Wallin, C. C. & Son, 302, 309.
Wallingford, Samuel, 150.
Walrad, Abraham, 563.
Walton, ——, 345.
Walworth, John, 553.
Wamet-a-goshe (French Monarch), 53.
Wample, Col. Joseph, 569, 575, 576, 580, 586, 588.
Wap-ot-asko, 369.
Ward, Charles A., 362.
Ward, G., 431.
Ward, J. M., 351.
Wardell, C. B., 485.
Ware, J. S., 342, 344, 345.
Wareham, Rev. Philip, 241.
Waring, Rev., 482.
Warner, A., 404.
Warner, Ashael, 375.
Warner, George Y., 280, 281, 284, 286, 287.
Warner, H., 2, 3, 108.
Warner, Harvey, 342.
Warner, Miss Huldah W., 152.
Warner, Mrs. Mary Jane, 375.
Warner, P. Dean, 596, 598.
Warner, Rev. S. P., 237.
Warner, W. W., 292.
Warner, Wareham, 375, 426.
Warren, Asa, 420.
Warren, Dr. Asa K., 413, 420.
Warren, B. E., 328.
Warren, B. W., 415, 416, 418, 425.
Warren, Elisha, 346.
Warren, Joseph, 268.
Warren, Robert L., 464.
Warren, Rev. Squire E., 237.
Warriner, Rev. Levi, 242, 243.
Warring, Daniel, 553.
Washburn, Rev. W. W., 226, 227, 237.
Washington, George, 16, 23, 24, 29, 30, 32, 84, 90, 93, 178, 179, 343.
Wasson, Charles M., 276.
Waterbury, Chauncey, 481, 483.
Waterman, David, 346.
Waters, David R., 275, 276.
Waters, O., 360.
Waters & Son, 362.
Watkins, L. W., 280, 291.
Watkins, Thomas, 326.
Watkins, William M., 610.
Watson, ——, 194.
Watson, Eli, 281.
Watson, Mrs. Eli, 281.
Watson, J. & J., 323.
Watson, James, 318, 323, 332.
Watson, Rev. James V., 236, 238.
Watson, L. C., 644.

Watson, Mrs. L. C., 644.
Watt, James, 494.
Wattles, I. N., 541.
Way, A. B., 292.
Way, F., 651.
Way, R. B., 402.
Wayne, Anthony, 85, 86, 93, 95, 213, 368, 559.
Weare, J., Jr., 280.
Weare, J., Sr., 280.
Weare, Mary, 281.
Weare, Richard, 285.
Webb, W., 292.
Webber, A. J., 476.
Webber, Dyer F., 415.
Webber, George W., 487.
Webber, William L., 108.
Webster, ——, 578, 579, 605.
Webster, A., 402.
Webster, Aaron, 569.
Webster, C. P., 590.
Webster, Chester, 576.
Webster, Judge David B., 137, 629.
Webster, D. D., see Judge David B.
Webster, Mrs. D. B., 532, 533, 534, 535, 536.
Webster, Mrs. G. W., 484.
Webster, Lucretia, 482.
Webster, O. H., 477.
Webster, S. D., 404.
Webster, W. D., 485.
Webster, W. O., 476.
Webster, W. R., 290.
Wedthoff, Albert, 327.
Weed, ——, 404.
Weed, Joshua, 304.
Weed, N. & H., 401, 404, 405, 425.
Weeks, Alanson S., 278, 280, 284, 286.
Weeks, C., 280.
Weeks, H. C., 278.
Weeks, Lt. Harrison S., 286.
Weeks, J., 281.
Weeks, Dr. J. G., 292.
Weeks, James A., 552.
Weeks, Smith, 561, 569.
Weeks, William C., 278, 286.
Wehn, Lt., 180.
Weinberg, Leander, 609.
Weir, J. D., 644.
Weir, Mrs. J. D., 644.
Welch, Mrs., 292.
Welch, I., 590.
Wellman, A. W., 569.
Wellman, Joel, 569.
Wellman, John, 568.
Wellman, William, 569.
Welles, Rev. Edward R., 219.
Welles, Gideon J., 186.
Wells, Rev., 552.
Wells, C. E., 304.
Wells, Darius, 521.
Wells, Franklin, 609.
Wells, Hezekiah G., 3, 5, 11, 37, 100, 103, 106, 107, 108, 110, 113, 129, 139, 148, 213, 221, 244, 315, 519, 522, 538, 543.
Wells, J. H., 280.
Wells, Jared, 545.
Wells & Johnson, 309.
Wells, Rev. Noah M., 229.
Wells, Samuel D., 570.
Wells, Rev. Wesley J., 241.
Welsh, Roger, 36.
Welton, Rev. Alanson, 215.
Welton, M. H., 290.
Wentz., Mrs. John, 349.
Werstein, Leopold, 361.
Wescott, G. N., 362.
Wescott, Mrs. Sabrina, 638.
West, A., 280, 283.
West, C. P., 343.
West, Gideon, 553.
West, N. B. & A., 283.
West, N. B., 280, 283, 289, 291, 294, 313.
West, Mrs. N. B., 313.
West, T., 280.
West, T. M., see T. N.
West, T. N., 280, 294.
Westren, John, 504.
Wetherell, J. B., 324.
Wetmore, A. D., 291.
Wetmore, C., 283.
Wetmore, J. H., 278, 289, 291.
Wetmore, John, 567, 568.
Whalen, Cyrus, 556.
Whaler, Daniel, 36.
Wheaton, R. D., 415.
Wheaton, R. M., 422.
Wheaton, Capt. William G., 376.
Whedon, ——, 396.
Whedon, Augustus, 395.
Whedon, Sally, 395.
Wheeler, Col., 170.
Wheeler, J. B., 7, 617.
Wheeler, J. C., 109.

Whetstone, (Jacksone), 369.
Whillman, Gideon O., 551, see Whittemore.
Whipple, Judge Charles W., 39, 103, 115, 116, 131, 143, 435.
Whipple, John, 560.
Whitcomb, James L., 349, 350, 351.
Whitcomb, Lot, 342.
Whitcomb, Luke, 530.
Whitcomb, R., 430.
Whitcomb, R. W., 430.
White, ——, 578.
White, Mrs., 578.
White, Bishop, 217.
White, Aaron, 396, 402.
White, D., 281.
White, Mrs. E. G., 355.
White, E. J., 590.
White, E. W., 624.
White, J. B., 402.
White, Col. J. R., 549, 550, 551, 552.
White, Rev. James, 352, 354, 357, 364, 365, 366.
White, Mrs. E. G., 355.
White, Deacon John, 364.
White, Prof. John, 364.
White, O. K., 100, 108.
White, Orlando, 464.
White, Peregrine, 364.
White, Peter, 3, 100, 108.
White, Phineas, 549.
Whitehouse, Rev. Henry I., 217.
Whiteside, Rev. Henry F., 218.
Whiting, Gen. Henry, 55, 217.
Whiting, Mrs. Henry, 55.
Whiting, John L., 560.
Whiting, J. T., 49.
Whiting, S. C., 480.
Whitmore, J. N., 291.
Whitmore, Rev. O., 236.
Whitney, ——, 247.
Whitney, Abraham J., 545.
Whitney, Andrew G., 122, 560.
Whitney, Edwin H., 111, 266.
Whitney, James, 553.
Whitney, Joseph, 504, 517.
Whitney, Rev. Luther D., 239, 241, 243.
Whitney, Leroy C., 453.
Whitney, Marcus, 517.
Whitney, Thomas, 324, 325.
Whitney, Thomas & Co., 325.
Whitney, William, 504.
Whitney, William A., 8, 266.
Whittemore, Gideon O., 549, 561, 598, 599.
Whittemore, Joseph P., 326.
Whitwam, Rev. Samuel, 243.
Wicks, James, 638.
Wight, B., 644.
Wight, Mrs. B., 644.
Wight, J., 404.
Wilber, Mark D., 286.
Wilbor, Rev. A. D., 236.
Wilbour, Miss, 388.
Wilbur, ——, 516.
Wilbur, G. R., 401.
Wilbur, Mrs. Lory, 516.
Wilcox, ——, 406.
Wilcox, Dr., 336.
Wilcox, David, 590.
Wilcox, Edward K., 609.
Wilcox, G., 406.
Wilcox, Ira, 295.
Wilcox, J., 406.
Wilcox, L., 280.
Wilder, A., 425.
Wilder, Capt. A. R., 627.
Wilder, D., 281.
Wilder, E., 281.
Wilder, E. B., 286.
Wilder, Ira H., 454.
Wilder, Oshea, 273, 286, 290.
Wilder, Oshea & Son, 306.
Wiley, Aristarchus, 570.
Wiley, Rev. Thomas, 239, 240, 349.
Wilkes, C. R., 281.
Wilkins, Judge Ross, 38, 103, 122, 131, 147, 244.
Wilkins, Col. William D., 184.
Willard, D., 281.
Willard, George, 124, 351, 357, 366.
Willard, H. H., 430.
Willard, Isaac W., 135, 532, 625, 627, 635.
Willard, J. W., 281.
Willard, Levi, 333.
Willett, Elijah, 561, 567, 573, 579.
Willett, Isaac, 569.
Willett, Richard, 563, 579.
Willetts, T. A., 484.
Williams, ——, 190, 192.
Williams, Mrs., 281.
Williams, Capt., 22.
Williams, Judge, 315.
Williams, Rev., 288.
Williams, A. L., 371.

Williams, Judge Albert, 110, 117.
Williams, Alpheus, 561, 565, 575.
Williams, Mrs. Alpheus, 566.
Williams, Alpheus F., 602.
Williams, Judge Alpheus S., 124.
Williams, B. O., 3, 5, 50, 52, 106, 108, 110, 367, 370, 371, 604, 616.
Williams, Mrs. B. O., Jr., 620.
Williams, C. K., 453.
Williams, Daniel, 333.
Williams, David, 568.
Williams, E. F., see E. S.
Williams, E. S., 434, 438, 583.
Williams, Elias, 458.
Williams, Ephraim S., 602, 604, 606.
Williams, Erastus, 521, 543.
Williams, F. A., 281.
Williams, Judge Gardner D., 371, 583, 584, 602, 604, 606.
Williams, Mrs. G. D., 602.
Williams, Harvey, 223, 326, 422, 423.
Williams, J. C. D., 644.
Williams, J. R. (Eaton), 426.
Williams, James, 455.
Williams, Gen. John R., 38, 103, 213, 573.
Williams, Joseph R., 39.
Williams, O., 406.
Williams, Maj. Oliver F., 561, 565, 566, 571, 574, 575, 582, 592, 600.
Williams, Mrs. Oliver, 566.
Williams, Roger, 636.
Williams, Rev. S. S., 243.
Williams, Mrs. Sally, 610.
Williams, Samuel P., 614.
Williams, Sheldon, 610.
Williams & Son, 304.
Williams, Thomas, 26, 27, 213.
Williams, W., 292.
Williams, W. B., 281, 286, 292.
Williams, William, 569.
Williams, Hon. William B., 124.
Williams, Rev. Wolcott B., 413.
Williamson, Col., 31, 33.
Williamson, J. A., 109.
Willis, C. C., 281.
Willis, N., 404.
Willis, T. J., 404.
Willits, Edwin, 124.
Willson, J. C., 454.
Willson, James B., 547.
Wilson, ——, 509.
Wilson, Andrew, 8, 266.
Wilson, C. G., 281.
Wilson, Charles, (Allegan), 283.
Wilson, Charles, 484.
Wilson, Judge E. H. C., 116.
Wilson, F., 281.
Wilson, Rev. George W., 357.
Wilson, George W., 483.
Wilson, Henry, 485.
Wilson, Horace, 280, 283.
Wilson, Mrs. Horace, 280.
Wilson, Capt. Isaac, 302, 306.
Wilson, Capt. J. S., 322.
Wilson & Kennedy, 471.
Wilson, Matthew C., 307.
Winchell, ——, 150.
Winchell, Jerome, 275.
Winchell, John, 610.
Winder, John, 147.
Winder, Gen. John H., 175, 178, 179, 180, 181, 182.
Windsor, Darius, see Winsor.
Winegar, William, 111, 266.
Wing, Austin E., 103, 123, 131, 147, 560, 569, 574.
Wing, Nelson H., 160.
Wing, Samuel, 504.
Wing, Judge Warner, 103, 115, 116 397.
Winn, R. G., 281.
Winslow, C. M., 275, 276.
Winslow, D. A., 3, 108, 306.
Winslow, George W., 543.
Winslow, L., 280.
Winslow, Milo, 280, 284, 286.
Winsor, Darius, 470, 474.
Winsor, Eugene, 474.
Winsor, Jacob, 471.
Winsor, Mrs. Jacob W., 545.
Winterhalter, Michael, 327.
Winters, Conant, 553.
Winthrop, Robert C., 203.
Wirt, Rev. D., 289.
Wirt, William, 130.
Wishard, Rev. S. E., 356.
Wisner, Gov. Moses, 121, 574.
Witherbee, A. B., 438.
Witherell, Judge Benjamin F. H., 103, 116, 131, 591.
Witherell, Mrs. B. F. H., 224.
Witherell, Judge James, 97, 122, 131, 223, 224.
Withey, Solomon L., 272, 546.
Wixom, Benjamin, 564.

Wolcott, Rev. W. W., 289.
Wolfe, ——, 12.
Wollcott, Horace, 553.
Wood, ——, 508, 570.
Wood, A., 277, 281.
Wood, Alanson, 521.
Wood, Alonzo R., 563.
Wood, Eliza, 406, 407.
Wood, James C., 500.
Wood, Jonathan, 521.
Wood, M., 295.
Wood, Reuben, 422.
Wood, Rev. Robert, 482.
Woodard, Jacob, 553.
Woodard, Lewis, 555.
Woodard, Mary, 555.
Woodbridge, Gov. William, 38, 60, 103, 120, 122, 123, 142, 147, 222, 560, 591.
Woodbury, Caleb, 390, 392.
Woodbury, J. P., 402.
Woodbury, Rev. Silas, 288, 356.
Woodburys, ——, 385, 394.
Woodford, ——, 573.
Woodhouse, ——, 297.
Woodhull, Mrs. Lena, 276, 306.
Woodman, Elias S., 111, 266, 601.
Woodruff, ——, 641.
Woodruff, Mrs. Charlotte, 559.
Woodruff, Judge George, 418, 419.
Woodruff, Henry, 268.
Woodward, Judge Augustus B., 97, 103, 122, 131, 223, 573.
Woodward, T., 430.
Woodworth, Benjamin, 222, 570, 573, 580.
Woodworth, Wilber F., 326.
Woolen, Dr., 183.
Woolen, W. W., 183.
Wooley, Justin D., 398.
Woolnough, Walter W., 350, 351.

Worden, Capt. John L., 49, 187.
Wormer, G. S., 228.
Wortley, Rev. J. C., 236.
Wrens, ——, 615.
Wright, Judge, 399, 576.
Wright, A. G., 405.
Wright, Ephraim, 621.
Wright, G., 406.
Wright, Ira D., 436.
Wright, Phoebe, 446.
Wright, Stephen P., 327, 333.
Wright, W., 406.
Wycoff, Joseph, 638.
Wyckoff, C. C., 564.
Wygant, Abe, 525.
Wygant, Pete, 525.
Wyley, Ann, 17.
Wyman, R. H., 203, 204.

Y.

Yale, Joseph, 563.
Yax, Simon, 35.
Yax, J. P., 35.
Yates, Dr. Andrew, 155.
Yelden, J., 281.
Yeomans, Erastus, 470, 471, 472, 473.
Yeomans, S. A., 487, 488.
Yerkes, William, 563.
Young, Brigham, 592.
Young, Carrie, 447.
Young, J. J., 295.

Z.

Zane, Elizabeth, 19.
Zeisberger, David, 30, 31, 32.
Zimmerman, Lieut., 180.
Zyumarraga, Bishop, 45.

F
561
M47
v. 3

Michigan. Historical
Commission
Michigan historical
collections

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY